







Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2016

<https://archive.org/details/someprominentvir02pecq>











ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 06588 9419

GC  
975.5  
P39S  
V.2A

# Some Prominent Virginia Families

---

IN FOUR VOLUMES

---

VOLUME II







Some  
Prominent Virginia  
Families



Gr  
975.5  
P392  
V.2

V. 2

P. 1. 2

By Louise Perquet du Bellet

Granddaughter of Henry W. Moncure, of Richmond, Virginia,  
and Great-Granddaughter of Col. John Ambler,  
of Jamestown, Virginia

Copyright, 1907  
BY LOUISE PECQUET DU BELLET

J. P. BELL COMPANY (INC.),  
PUBLISHERS,  
Lynchburg, Virginia.

# CONTENTS

Volume II

1128219

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. History of the Ambler Family.....	1
II. Letters of Mrs. Edward Carrington and Extracts from a Sermon by Rev. John Buchanan.....	18
III. Cary Family .....	39
IV. Cary Family Genealogy.....	55
V. Randolph Family .....	129
VI. Fairfax Family .....	135
VII. Carter Family .....	192
VIII. Lee Family .....	249
IX. Willis Family .....	267
X. Nicholas Family .....	310
XI. A Narrative of My Life for My Family (Francis T. Brooke) .....	343
XII. Barbour, Green, Fleming, Coleman, and Henry Families .....	393
XIII. Moncure Family .....	426
XIV. Marshall Family .....	458
XV. Harrison Family.....	485
XVI. Fitzhugh Family.....	551
XVII. Mason Family .....	581
XVIII. Lewis Family.....	620
XIX. Armistead Family.....	651
XX. Johnston, Moore, Steptoe, Callaway, and Thornton Families .....	686
XXI. Taliaferro Family.....	731
XXII. Barton Family.....	746
XXIII. Fisher History.....	752



# ILLUSTRATIONS

## Volume II

---

	PAGE
Coat-of-Arms of Amblers of England.....	x
John Jaquelin Ambler.....	2
Philip Saint George Ambler.....	12
Dr. James D. Moncure.....	14
St. John's Church, Richmond, Va.....	22
Right. Rev. Richard Channing Moore, D. D.....	32
Rev. John Buchanan, D. D.....	33
Cary Coat-of-Arms of England.....	38
Col. Archibald Cary.....	70
Richard Channing Moore Page, M. D.....	77
Monticello .....	81
Dr. Edward H. Cary, of Dallas, Texas.....	118
Randolph Coat-of-Arms .....	129
Gov. Thomas Nelson.....	148
John Randolph of "Roanoke".....	160
Fairfax Coat-of-Arms.....	165
Carter Coat-of-Arms .....	192
Robert ("King") Carter.....	198
Judith A. Carter.....	200
General Robert E. Lee.....	222
Fitzhugh Lee.....	226
Landon Carter .....	240
Mrs. Landon Carter.....	243
Willis Coat-of-Arms .....	267
Nicholas Coat-of-Arms .....	310
Wilson Cary Nicholas .....	318
John Smith Nicholas, Jr.....	326
Elizabeth Byrd Nicholas.....	328
Mrs. Jerome Bonaparte.....	336
Charles J. Bonaparte.....	340
Berkeley Coat-of-Arms .....	374
Brooke Coat-of-Arms.....	388

	PAGE
Barbour Coat-of-Arms.....	393
Henry Coat-of-Arms.....	417
Moncure Coat-of-Arms.....	426
Aquia Church, Stafford Co., Va.....	428
Henry Wood Moncure.....	446
Chief Justice John Marshall.....	460
Rev. James Blair, A. M., D. D.....	492
Christian Coat-of-Arms.....	531
"Kenmore".....	539
Gordon Coat-of-Arms.....	548
Fitzhugh Coat-of-Arms.....	551
Chatham—Home of William Fitzhugh.....	557
McCarty Coat-of-Arms.....	560
Mason Coat-of-Arms.....	581
Grymes Coat-of-Arms.....	596
Chandler-Dinwiddie-Fowke Coat-of-Arms.....	603
Lewis Arms.....	620
Johnston Coat-of-Arms.....	686
Charles Johnston.....	691
Moore Coat-of-Arms.....	701
Steptoe Coat-of-Arms.....	715
Taliaferro Coat-of-Arms.....	731
Barton Coat-of-Arms.....	746



## VOLUME II





COAT-OF-ARMS OF AMBLERS OF ENGLAND  
Not quartered with the Jaquelin and Cary Arms

# Some Prominent Virginia Families

---

## CHAPTER I

---

### HISTORY OF THE AMBLER FAMILY.

Copied from the records of the family, written by John Jaquelin Ambler, of Glen Ambler, Va., and continued by his nephew, Dr. James D. Moncure:

#### INTRODUCTION.

As it is agreeable to all persons to be acquainted with the character and fortunes of those individuals from whom they are descended, providing they can look back upon the conduct of their ancestors with feelings of satisfaction and contentment, I have determined to secure this gratification to my posterity by committing to paper (in a form in which with care they can be preserved to the most remote generations) all those facts and anecdotes relating to the family which have been handed down by tradition from father to son until they have reached me; and which must otherwise in a generation or two to come have been lost forever.

To perform this task I feel impelled by the respect and veneration in which I hold the memory of the late Jaquelin Ambler, Esq., of the City of Richmond, who was my great uncle (after whom it pleased my parents to have me named).

This excellent man commenced a family tree and brought it down to his own times, founded upon information obtained from his intelligent and estimable aunt, Miss Martha Jaquelin, who lived to the advanced age of eighty-one years, and died in the year of our Lord 1792.

It may be well to mention that I have derived all the facts which will be hereinafter mentioned from my much loved and much respected father which do not rest upon the authority of Jaquelin Ambler, Esq., or Miss Martha Jaquelin.

My object is not to attempt fine writing, but to record in a plain, simple and concise manner such facts and anecdotes as are certainly true; for I am well aware that they will possess no interest for any other persons than members of my own family (for whom alone they are intended), and even with them their greatest recommendation will be the conviction that they may rely with certainty upon the *truth* of every thing they will find here recorded.

[A portion of the original manuscript was omitted.—J. D. Moncure.]

## THE NAME.

The accounts of the first of the Amblers which I have met with mention that there were some families bearing the name settled in Yorkshire, in England, as respectable and opulent country gentlemen.



JOHN JAQUELIN AMBLER

Of Glen Ambler, Amherst Co., Va.; son of Col. John Ambler, of Jamestown

There is reason to believe that the name of Ambler was originally spelt *Ombler*, but there are some persons among the ancient writers in the County of York in England who maintain that *Ombler* is only a corruption of Ambler.

The following is the copy of a letter written to John Jaquelin Ambler, then residing in London, by Edward Ambler, Esq., of Camerton, near Hull,

in Yorkshire, in answer to one containing some inquiries, with respect to the present state and the history of the Ambler family, in that county; which is the same in which his ancestors originally dwelt.

[Inserted here by Dr. James Dunlop Moncure, but transferred from page 5 of appendix in original manuscript.]

CAMERTON, Dec. 6th, 1825.

SIR:—I regret it has been totally out of my power to reply to your polite letter sooner, but must assure you my late apparent neglect was unavoidable.

The similarity of name, I have no doubt, gives us reason to believe ourselves descended from the same family, which idea you will agree with me is corroborated by the exact resemblance of our arms; with the exception of the crest, ours being a lion proper paws. reg.—

These are what have been transmitted down to us. For the difference of the crests I cannot account, not being a sufficient herald to know whether the crest may be adopted or changed at pleasure.

I am surprised that neither of our names is upon record at the Herald College, since several authors have not thought them beneath their notice. Edmondson, in his "Complete Body of Heraldry," London, 1780, 2 Vols., makes mention of the arms of Ambler, as does Whitaker in his "History of Yorkshire," first number, where you will no doubt find the information you desire. Extracts would be too long for epistolary communication.

We believe our name to have been once *Ambler*; which again is supposed by some to be a corruption of *Ombler*, which last name we have borne for five generations.

There is some plate belonging to us marked R. A. which is corrected to O., thus—R. °A.

We have understood our families suffered much in the troubles of James the Second's reign, since which period they have been respectably settled in this part of Yorkshire.

The last four generations having had only one male heir each, and were it not for my own family this branch would have now been extinct—none to whom we can trace the slightest relationship bearing our name.

Should you again think of visiting Yorkshire, may I beg you will consider Camerton as your headquarters, and I can promise you a hearty welcome, though our late domestic affliction in the loss of my poor father renders our continued abode here uncertain.

I am, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

EDWARD OMBLER.

There is no difficulty in explaining why there should be a difference in the crest of Mr. Ombler and that now borne by the Ambler family in Virginia, which is the Jaquelin crest, the arms of which family form one of the quarterings in the Ambler coat. As the body of Mr. Ombler's coat



exactly resembles that borne by the Virginia Amblers, there can be no doubt but that they are descended from the same family.

That the number of persons bearing the name of Ambler has been very limited in England as well as the United States of America in all ages there is no reason to doubt. On our own Continent I have not met with or heard of a single person out of my father's family who bore the name. And in England during my visit to that country in the year 1825. I was unable to hear of any family of the name of Ambler, any member of which was then living. And it is not once to be found among the many hundreds of thousands of names which fill the London Directory or Court Calendar for that year.

[Dr. Richard Cary Ambler calls attention to the fact that some Amblers settled in New England as shown by the following extract, page 10 of the appendix in John Jaquelin Ambler's manuscript.—James D. Moncurc.]

The following is an extract from a genealogical directory of the first settlers in New England, who came before May, 1692, by James Savage, published in Boston, 1860:

Abraham Stanford Ambler, son of Richard, married (26th of December. 1662) Mary, daughter of Robert Bates. Had daughter Mary, sons Abraham, Joshua, and another daughter Sarah, who married John Mehitable. Abraham Stanford Ambler was a freeholder and property holder at "S," A. D. 1686. He was chief town officer and representative of "S" in 1674.\*

There is no reason for believing that the Amblers mentioned above are related to the Virginia family, the first of whom came over in 1716 from the City of York in England.

Col. John Ambler, the second of the name, always said after the death of his uncle Jaquelin Ambler, that there was no male of his name in America, except himself. It is probable, however, that Abraham Stanford Ambler came from the same stock in England.

[A foot note, page 23 of J. J. Ambler's MS., mentions that the Philadelphia directory contains several Amblers. In 1860 there was an Ambler who had emigrated from the north and settled in Richmond. During the war, from 1861-1865, I saw the name of a William Ambler registered in a hotel at Charlottesville, Va., as a soldier from Mississippi, Barksdale's brigade. In 1867, Mrs. Robert C. Nicholas informed me that she boarded in Baltimore with a guest whose maiden name was Ambler and who came from Boston. The Court Calendar of London, 1880, contains the names of two Doctors Vincent Ambler.—J. D. M.]

---

\*There is nothing to explain anything about "S."

I (Louise Pecquet du Bellet) will give some letters received recently:

AMBLER, S. C., October 29, 1903.

MY DEAR MISS DU BELLET:—If I had written to you as often as I have thought of you, since the receipt of your letter to father during the summer, you would be overstocked with letters. My grandfather's name was James Ambler, from Virginia. He came down here when quite a young man. Am told he was from the Eastern Shore, which is now the counties Accomac and Northampton.

Grandfather died a few years after my father married, and mother or aunt says he often talked of the Eastern Shore and the James River. He was a very highly educated man, a graduate of William and Mary College, and when he first came to this State he taught in Judge O'Neal's family. I looked over several catalogues of William and Mary College, saw one or two James Amblers, but if I am not mistaken, think the dates were too recent to have been my grandfather. I will, however, look up the dates I have with those of the Quarterly. My father started a correspondence with Col. John Ambler in this way. During the Revolutionary War, one day at the Court House, where slaves were being bought and sold, father, in passing one, who was then for sale, stopped and began to question him as to where he was from, and when he told he was from the Amblers in Virginia, of course father became much interested and got his address. I will send you a copy of the letters, if they have not been destroyed.

Father is now ninety and is very active.

Very sincerely,

ANITA AMBLER.

I have written to Dr. Lyon G. Tyler, of William and Mary College, in hopes of learning something about Mr. James Ambler, but have had no reply.

UPPER MARLBORO, Md., Aug. 30, 1904.

M<sup>lle</sup> Louise Pecquet du Bellet,

DEAR MADEMOISELLE:—You will, I hope, pardon my delay in answering your letter when I explain to you that I waited to write to my brother and sister before answering. They were both quite interested and I think both possible subscribers to the book. I am a daughter of the Hon. Jacob A. Ambler, of Salem, Ohio. My grandfather, Henry Ambler, did not come to this country from England until 1828, I think. I am sorry not to be able to give you any information about the South Carolina or the Maryland Amblers. If they came from Yorkshire, they must be of the same family, as there is but one Ambler family there. Some years since I visited my grandfather's old home and while there I traced the name in the great register of the Old Parish Church at Halifax to the year 1554. I am very sorry now that I did not make any record, as I only looked it up for pastime. Should you care to know more of our branch of

the Ambler family, I think the most accurate information could be obtained through my brother, Hon. Ralph S. Ambler, of 117 East Lake Street, Canton, Ohio. He and my sister, Mrs. Melvin Cary McNab, of 210 Arlington Street, Youngstown, Ohio, would, I believe, like to subscribe to the book. My other brother has just returned from the Philippines, where he recently resigned a Judgeship, so I have not had an opportunity of telling him of your project. However, I have little doubt that he will be much interested, if our branch of the family is to be represented. His address is for the present 400 Lincoln Ave., Salem, Ohio. His name is Bryon S. Ambler.

Should I be able to be of service to you, in any way, I shall be glad. Perhaps you would like addresses of my cousins; if so, I can send them. My unele, Hon. Henry Ambler, who is very old and at present very ill, would otherwise be interested, I am sure. Should he recover sufficiently, I shall take pleasure in bringing the matter to his notice.

Most sincerely yours,

MAUDE AMBLER McMANUS.

I have had no further information about the above family.

### PENNSYLVANIA AMBLERS.

AMBLER, PENNSYLVANIA, October 8, 1904.

Richard Ambler, a native of Lincolnshire, England, born 1609, came to the colonies and finally settled in Stamford, Conn., where he died. (Perhaps he was the father of Abraham Stanford Ambler, given above.) His descendants number three-fourths of all the Amblers in this country.

Richard Ambler, son of John Ambler, the sheriff of York, came to Virginia about 1716 and founded the Virginia family of Amblers.

Joseph Ambler, born somewhere in Wales, came to the Colonies and finally settled in Montgomery County, Pennsylvania, 1723. He is the founder of the Pennsylvania Amblers.

John Ambler, of Barbadoes, but a native of England, came to Wrentham, Mass., about the time of the Revolution. His descendants all live in Eastern Massachusetts.

An English sea-captain, — Ambler, settled in Maryland the early part of last century. This family moved to Ohio, where most of them now live in Belmont County.

The Ambler Coat-of-Arms is given in Burk's Heraldry, and other standard works of this sort.

The name of Ambler was frequently spelled Aumbler and Ombler in England.

The six brothers were all six feet tall, and went by the name of thirty-six feet of Ambler.

I remain, very respectfully,

DAVID J. AMBLER,

Vice-President the First National Bank of Ambler,  
Ambler, Pennsylvania.

MENDOTA, ILL., March 23, 1906.

Miss Peequet du Bellet,  
Wytheville, Va.

DEAR MISS PECQUET DU BELLET:— . . . . As you no doubt know, there are five Ambler families in this country, not counting those that came from the Revolution. Of these, only two are known to be connected—the Connecticut and the Virginia families. . . .

Very respectfully,

CARLOS H. AMBLER.

AMBLER, Montgomery Co., Pa.

MY DEAR MISS DU BELLET:— . . . . I searched for any information that we might have [in regard to the Pennsylvania Amblers], and from the papers that I have so far found I find the following: D. Ambler Leedom (myself) is grandson of David J. Ambler, whose father was Andrew Ambler, whose father was Edward Ambler, whose father was John Ambler, whose father was Joseph Ambler, who was born somewhere in Wales. The latter came to the Colonies and finally settled in Montgomery County, Pa., in 1723. He is the founder of the Pennsylvania Amblers. His brother was Richard Ambler, son of John Ambler, the sheriff of York, who came to Virginia about 1715 and settled.

The following is an extract from the life of David J. Ambler, my grandfather, published in "The History of Montgomery County" (Pennsylvania), in 1884:

"David J. Ambler, of the village of Ambler, in Upper Dublin township, is descended from an ancestor named Joseph Ambler, of Montgomery township, who (as is shown by the Philadelphia County records) purchased a certain tract of ninety acres of land in that township of William Morgan, May 1, 1723. Among the children of this Joseph Ambler and Ann, his wife, were Edward and John Ambler. The ninety-acre tract in Montgomery township above mentioned was sold by Joseph Ambler, in 1768, to his son Edward, who, in 1770, devised it by will to his brother John, who was great-grandfather of the present David J. Ambler. In 1794 John Ambler sold the same tract for two hundred pounds to his son Edward, who was by trade a weaver. The present residence of Mrs. Mary Ambler, in Montgomery township, is the place where Edward Ambler lived, and where he died on the 1st of January, 1838. His wife, Ann Ambler, died October 15th, 1827. Their son Andrew, the father of David J. Ambler, was married (May 14, 1829) to Mary Johnson, daughter of Benjamin and Abigail Johnson, of Richland, Bucks County. The Johnson family was of German descent. Andrew Ambler settled in Lower Dublin township, on eighty acres of land, which he purchased in 1832 of Mary Davies, and on which he built and occupied a house which is still standing in Ambler village [a borough now], and owned by Chas. O. Yoeum. He was a fuller by trade, and soon after his settlement he built a fulling-mill on his land, on the site of a small mill of the same kind which had stood there more than seventy years, having been sold, in 1759, by the executor of Daniel



Morris, to Arthur Broades, father of the Mary Davies from whom Andrew Ambler had made the purchase. The Ambler fulling-mill remained in use many years, and was finally destroyed by fire December 31st, 1869. Andrew Ambler died March 7, 1850, at the age of fifty-six years. His widow, Mary J. Ambler, died August 18, 1868, aged sixty-three years. It was for her that the station (and from it the village) of Ambler received its name. During her widowhood (in 1856) a very serious railroad accident occurred near Fort Washington by the collision of a school excursion train going north with a local passenger train going south. On receiving the intelligence Mrs. Ambler, without a moment's delay, gathered lint, bandages and other necessary materials, and went on foot two miles to the scene of the disaster, where she remained through the day till all the wounded were cared for, rendering such conspicuous service to the suffering victims as elicited the warmest gratitude and high commendation from the officers of the railroad company, who, after her death, honored her memory by changing the name of the station from Wissahickon to Ambler. David J., son of Andrew and Mary (Johnson) Ambler, was born March 22, 1837, at his father's place, in what is now Ambler."

The old Ambler mansion, which was occupied by Joseph Ambler, the first Ambler settler in Pennsylvania, is still standing, about five miles from here.

The name of Ambler was frequently spelled Aumbler and Ombler in England. . . . .

Now, if you think that the above account has any relation to the Virginia family of that name, and if possible, can have it incorporated within the book which you are now preparing, you will do me the greatest favor. . . . . I am

Very truly,

D. AMBLER LEEDOM.

January 31, 1907.

I shall now return to J. J. Ambler's MS.:

#### WILLIAM AMBLER.

1548.

The first individual of the family whose name is found in the ancient chronicles of England is William Ambler, a bold and enterprising man who distinguished himself by heading a rebellion in the second year of the reign of his Majesty Edward the Sixth, and in the year of our Lord 1548.

We find the following account in a folio work in the London Institution Library, Moorfields, City of London, entitled, "Eboracum," or the history and antiquities of the City of York, from its original to the present times, together with the history of the Cathedral Church; and the lives of the Archbishops of that Sec, from the first introduction of Christianity, into the northern parts of this island, to the present state and condition of that magnificent fabrick.

Collected from authentic manuscripts, public records, ancient chronicles, and modern historians, and illustrated with copper plates.—In two books, by Francis Drake, of the City of York, Gent. F. R. S. and member of the Society of Antiquarians in London.

Nee manet est fuerat, nec formam servat candem.

God tamen ipsa cadem est. Oved inet. Lib XV.

London, printed by Wm. Bonager for the Author, MDCCXXXVI.

1548 A. D.

In the year of our Lord 1548, and the second of the reign of his Majesty Edward the Sixth, a rebellion commenced at Seamour, near Scarborough, in the County of York; which had as its leader Wm. Ambler, of East Haslerton, who it appears before he appeared before the publick in this capacity was living in obscurity and in quiet as an honest farmer.

The object of the rebellion was to reform the abuses which had crept into religion. The names of Thomas Dale and Stevenson, of Seamour, are mentioned as being engaged in the same affair. They set the beacon on fire at Stanton in the night and gathered together the neighbouring yeomanry to the number of three thousand. Unfortunately for poor Ambler, he had not sufficient authority over the army thus collected to restrain their fury when the sight of their numbers made them feel their power. Such is ever the case, where men with inflamed minds (who have risen to redress what they consider their wrongs) are suddenly embroiled.

"A part of this rabble," says the author, which Drake quotes, "went to Mr. White's house, and took him and Clapton, his wife's brother, one Savage, merchant of York, and Berry, a servant of Sir Walter Mildway, out of their beds and carried them upon the wolds near Seamour, and there murdered them, and left their bodies stark naked for the crows to feed on."

This ill judged and savage conduct blasted the whole design, and involved all parties concerned in the disgrace, including, amongst the number, the daring but unfortunate Ambler, who appears to have been a clever, bold, enterprising, intrepid individual. "The Lord President sent out a detachment against them from York, and a general pardon to all that would immediately submit; most of them disbursed upon this, but Ambler and the above named rebels refused the mercy." But for what cause the old Chronicles do not mention, but in continuation state:

"1549. They were soon taken, brought to York, and executed on the twenty-first day of September, 1549. Along with whom suffered Henry Barton, John Dale, Robert Wright, Wm. Peacock, Witherell and Buttery, all busy stirrers in this sedition."

#### CHARLES AMBLER.

Charles Ambler was solicitor to Queen Anne and wrote a book of Law Reports. Whether he was ever married or left any descendants, I have never been able to discover.

## AMBROSE AMBLER.

Ambrose Ambler has a very handsome monument erected to his memory in the yard of St. Peter's Church, Leeds, in Yorkshire, England, which the writer visited in the year 1825. Ambrose Ambler died in the year 1704, aged 56 years.

## THOMAS AMBLER.

In looking over the *Ducatus Liodiensis* of Ralph Thousby, by F. R. S., published in England in the year 1715, I find it mentioned that Captain Thomas Ambler made a donation of £30 sterling to the poor of the town and parish of Leeds in Yorkshire, England. The same author records a remarkable instance of longevity in the Ambler family, attending a married pair jointly and in consort. He says: "Thus George Issot and Katherine, his wife, parents of Mrs. Ambler of Leeds, were forty years married and never buried one of their family."

The above is copied from appendix in J. J. Ambler's MS. by Dr. J. D. Moncure.

## VIRGINIA AMBLERS.

## RICHARD AMBLER.

1690.

Richard Ambler was the first member of the family who ever emigrated from England to Virginia. He was the son of John Ambler and of Elizabeth Burkdike [spelled in *William and Mary College Quarterly*, Vol. 5, No. 1, July 1896, Biekadike], of the City of York, England. Richard Ambler was born on the 24th of December, 1690 (or 1688); came over to Virginia in 1716, and located in the town of Little York, a place of the greatest commercial importance in the Colony of Virginia. Richard Ambler followed the fortunes of his uncle Burkadike. As an addition to this, I may mention the depositions of Arthur Burkadike and John Gibbons, of Yorktown, who testified that Michael Dewiek, dying at John Gibbons' house, requested that the burial service should be read over him, his particular friends invited, but to be served with nothing but a sprig of rosemary, and to attend him to his grave, requiring that the ring on his finger be given to Arthur Burkadike, to be conveyed to his wife, then in the city of York. In 1720, Richard Ambler qualified as administrator of Arthur Burkadike (York County records, and *William and Mary College Quarterly*, p. 53).

Richard Ambler was about five feet eleven inches high and inclined to be fat. He held for many years the office of Collector of the Port of York, which at that time was lucrative as well as honorable. He was remarkable for his honesty and integrity to a proverb. He was most particular in everything he said or did, so that when he died it was mentioned in his obituary "that he owed no man a penny." He was very shrewd, prompt, and facetious.

He told an anecdote as well and enjoyed a joke as much as any man in the world. He lived in excellent style, drank always the best wines, and was extremely hospitable.

Some years after his arrival in this country he became acquainted with the family of Edward Jaquelin, Esquire, of James Town.

A mutual attachment took place between Richard Ambler and Miss Elizabeth Jaquelin, which resulted in their marriage the year 1729, from which union sprang all the Amblers now living in Virginia. During the thirteen years which elapsed between his arrival in Virginia and his marriage, Richard Ambler had accumulated a very considerable fortune, which was greatly augmented by his wife's portion; for Mr. Jaquelin was unquestionably one of the richest, if not the very richest man then living in the Colony, and all his wealth had been inherited by him and brought to Virginia from England.

[See Chapter I, Volume I.]

It is probable that Mr. Richard Ambler inherited considerable property from his maternal uncle, Mr. Burkadike, who was the first of the Ambler connection who came to Virginia, where he died.

Dr. James Dunlop Moncure says the following is on page 88 of John Jaquelin Ambler's manuscript:

In the year 1839, Philip St. George Ambler and Richard Cary Ambler went to Europe as well as their sister, Catherine Cary Moncure (the author's grandmother), and her daughter Sarah Ann Elizabeth. All returned to Virginia in October, 1840, except Philip St. George, who remained and made some enquiries about the Ambler family in England, which resulted in his writing the following letters to Virginia at the latter part of the year 1840, to his brother Richard Cary Ambler and his sister, Mrs. Gabriella B. Brooke:

LONDON, Nov. 1st, 1840.  
Fenton Hotel.

To Doctor Ambler.

MY DEAR BROTHER:—I cannot make my letter more acceptable than by continuing the history of my efforts to trace the connection between the English and American families which bear the name of Ambler. In answer to the letter addressed to the Misses Ambler mentioned in my letter to Catherine, I received one from their brother, the Rev. George Ambler, which I copy:

WAKEFIELD, YORKSHIRE, October 13th, 1840.

SIR:—Yours of the 9th inst. from Worcester, addressed to my sisters, has been by them handed to me, with a request that I would write in reply. I am 64 years of age, a graduate of the University of Cambridge, a clergyman living in my native town upon my private means, and descended from John Ambler of the City of York, who was sheriff of the

county in the year 1721. I assume to be his solitary representative, all traces being lost of any living male person of my own name and family in England, since the death of my father 45 years ago. My great-grandfather, the aforesaid John Ambler, had a son Richard, who followed the fortunes of a relative in Virginia. That son had a family of nine children, of which I happen to possess a list. Should your account be correct, you are descended from one of these children; and it might lead to a future correspondence, if you would favor me with a reply, and give me any particulars, respecting your grandfather's marriage, his name, and



PHILIP SAINT GEORGE AMBLER

Of St. Moor, Amherst Co., Va., and son of Col. John Ambler of Jamestown

the lady's name, and also those of the marriage of the seventh child (a son), his christian name, and the name of the person he married. In letters which I have by me, the name of Fairfax is mentioned, of which possibly you may know something. There is a descendant of the said John Ambler, by female line, with whom it is perhaps my fault that I am not acquainted, who in addition to another dignity is at this moment one of Queen Victoria's most honorable Privy Council.



As to the arms of the Ambler family, I know of none to which I can lay claim. In a book of coat-of-arms, I have seen those of some of the name of Ambler, described thus:

"Sable on a Fesse, or, between three pheon heads argent, a lion passant gardant gules."

I am, Sir, very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

GEORGE AMBLER.

In a subsequent letter from the same to the same, he says:

Yours of the 20th [20th October, 1840—J. D. M.] from Fenton's Hotel is so satisfactory, and fills my mind with such a flood of recollections, that I scarcely know how to begin by way of reply. The right Honourable Charles Shaw Lefevre, speaker of the House of Commons, is the son of C. S. Lefevre, Esq., many years member of Parliament for Reading, and previously Charles Shaw, Esq., Fellow at Trinity College, Cambridge, and Barrister at Law. His father, born in 1723, became after the year 1767, successively Vicar of Wormsley, Yorkshire, and Rector of Seaton, Rutlandshire, and died 1811 at 21 Queen Ann Street, West London; where he lived many years, and was buried in Marybone Church. The father of said Rector [namely, the Rev. George Shaw] was William Shaw, and his mother Mary Ambler, daughter of John Ambler, sheriff of the City of Ainsty of York in the year 1727. The said John Ambler was also father of Richard Ambler, who went to Virginia, and of George Ambler, my grandfather.

He concludes thus after inviting Philip St. George Ambler to come to see him:

I lost my only child, a daughter, who left a son, now eight years old (1840), named George Ambler. She married a man of the name of Steads, of the house of Steads and French at Leeds.

I have discovered the tie of blood connecting the English and American families. It is acknowledged, and I have documents to prove it, if it were not, etc., etc.

I am your affectionate brother,

PHILIP ST. GEORGE AMBLER.

In a letter dated 23rd December, 1840, from Paris, Philip St. George Ambler goes on to say:

I proceed now to copy the last letter received from our kinsman, George Ambler. I prefer copying in full, because he writes far better than I do, because every part is interesting—and because in the event of accident to me or my papers, you will be in possession of all information I have collected:



WAKEFIELD, YORKSHIRE, December 17, 1840.

MY DEAR SIR:—My father unfrequently referred to the subject of his relations in England, and I can but very indistinctly remember the substance of his conversations about them and the country they live in.



DR JAMES D. MONCURE

Of Williamsburg, Va., son of Henry Wood Moncure  
Superintendent of Asylum, Williamsburg, Va.

He spoke of his cousins, John and Edward, who came to England for their education, but doubt whether he ever saw them, as they would quit England about the time he removed to Wakefield in 1753. His observations, however, whatever they might amount to, made a great impression upon my youthful mind and have caused me to read with eagerness all

publications that fell in my way, respecting that part of the world, and its inhabitants, and I have scarcely ever failed to enquire of every human being, supposed to come from North America, as to the part they came from, in the hope of hearing of my relations in Virginia. I have been successful only in two instances:

The first, in a newspaper of the date of 1807, where mention was made of the movement of the troops under the command of Major Ambler [Col. John Ambler, of Jamestown.—James D. Moncure.]

And next to the last leaf of the first volume of the life of Jefferson, two ladies of the name of Ambler [Mrs. Edward Ambler, and her daughter Sarah—J. D. M.] are spoken of as contributing valuable rings, or some such things to some great national object. [Here a passage is omitted, as it refers to steam navigation.—J. D. M.]

I am indebted to Mr. Shaw, the Rector, for a list of the American part of the family, made out by Mr. Jaquelin Ambler, down to 1773. It states that Richard Ambler, born in 1688 [or 1690—J. D. M.], came to Virginia in 1716, and we once had amongst our archives a letter now lost, which gave an account of his succeeding about the year 1719, in consequence of the early and unexpected death of his uncle Burkadike, to the estates, and other valuable property of that gentleman in that Colony. I have but a faint recollection of the letter and its contents. I think it was not in the handwriting of Richard Ambler, which was large and round; but by whom written, or when dated, I do not remember. The paper had changed its color, and was something the worse for wear; but had been carefully preserved by some one. In the list above alluded to mention is made of the birth of your father, 1763.

Your account of the death of John, your grandfather's brother, may be correct. Mr. Shaw's account of it was this: His health had been declining for some time, and in hope of improving it he was advised to go to Barbadoes. He arrived there just at the point of time when Bridgetown was destroyed by an accidental fire; lodgings were not to be procured, and the chilling dews of the climate, to which he was unavoidably exposed, hastened his end. Mr. Shaw also informed me that your uncle Jaquelin was Treasurer of the State.

Richard Ambler's uncle, Burkadike (sometimes written Bickadike), I am inclined to think, came from York, and was probably *the first of our relations* who settled in Virginia in 1694. My grandfather's brother, Richard, was the person who followed his fortunes, and they were probably each in his turn general merchants. The correspondence between us and his descendants seems to have ceased about 1776. I presume it is the family of Jaquelin, which connects us with the County of Kent.

[The rest of the letter refers to efforts made to procure an introduction to Speaker Lefevre, with whose father George Ambler was not on pleasant terms.—J. D. M.] He concludes thus:

I fully intend accompanying you to York in June or July and pointing, that may be worth your notice, in that ancient city.

Mrs. Ambler begs her best compliments, and my sisters their kindest respects. I remain, dear sir,

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEORGE AMBLER.

P. S.—I saw Mr. Lefevre in June last. He is a fine looking gentleman, and so is his father.

[Philip St. George Ambler goes on to give an account of a futile effort to meet Mr. Lefevre. Mr. P. St. George Ambler's letter indicates that he failed because his republican friends prevented him from pursuing his usual course in such matters.—J. D. M.]

The Church plate of Monumental Church is as follows:

The massive baptismal basin placed in the Antique Marble Font for the service of baptism is very old, and was used in the old Church of Jamestown, where our fathers planted our first church in America. It is of English manufacture and solid silver. By the terms of the gift, this curious shape of the basin can never be changed. The old Church at Jamestown is gone, nothing remains but the base of the ruined tower; but Monumental Church holds a silver link which connects the present with the hoary past.

A mahogany case has been made for it, of proper size, and at present (July, 1905) it is kept in an iron safe, in the vestry-room of the church.

I must give a portion of a letter received from one of the descendants of Edward and Martha Jaquelin:

MOUNDSVILLE, W. VA., June 9, 1904.

Mlle Louise Peequet du Bellet,

DEAR COUSIN:—When my little girl was baptized, I sent to Richmond for water taken from the Jaquelin font, to be used on the occasion. I believe quite a good deal is realized by selling water which has been placed in the above mentioned font. The charge is only a dollar a bottle, and proceeds devoted to the church.

MRS. CHARLES RUSSELL OLDHAM.

All the windows in the Monumental Church are memorials; the upper window in the southwest commemorates the zeal and piety of Mr. George D. Fisher and his two sons, Robert H. and Edward H. Fisher, for many years prominent in the work of the church; the window above the gallery on the southeast side represents "Moses the Lawgiver," and stands to the memory of the great Chief Justice, John Marshall.

## THE MONUMENTAL CHURCH.

The Monumental Church was in process of building during the years 1812-13-14, when it was completed in the early part of 1814. It is located on what was called, a hundred and sixteen years ago, "The Theatre Square."

The second theatre was burned to the ground on the night of Thursday, December 26, 1811. On that fatal night the theatre was filled with the most brilliant representatives of Virginia's social, political, and intellectual life. Two plays were to be enacted, namely, "The Father or Family Feuds," to be followed by "Raymond and Agnes."

During the second play the scenery took fire from a chandelier. Laughter and applause were hushed at the alarming cry of "Fire."

A holocaust of horror followed. Seventy-two stricken men, women, and children were burned to ashes. Among them was the Governor of the Commonwealth. Their names are on a monument in the south portico of the church.

Public sentiment called for a suitable monument to those who perished, and pious thought suggested the erection of "The Monumental Church," which was finally consecrated to God "to be forever devoted to the sacred purpose of divine worship."

Our forefathers attended the church: Col. John Ambler, his wife and children; Chief Justice Marshall and family. His name is still on his pew, and his granddaughters, Misses Anna and Emily Harvie, are devoted workers of this church. On the records, names of the family are found to this date [July, August, etc., 1905].

I, Louise Pecquet du Bellet, enjoyed the privilege of visiting this church, June, 1904.

## CHAPTER II

---

LETTERS OF MRS. EDWARD CARRINGTON  
AND EXTRACTS FROM A SERMON  
BY REV. JOHN BUCHANAN.

Elizabeth Jaquelin Ambler, b. March 11, 1765; d. February 15, 1842. Married, first, William Brent, Esq., who soon died; second, Col. Edward Carrington, and died without issue, February 15, 1842. Mrs. Carrington was a member of Monumental Church, Richmond.

Colonel Carrington entered early into the army of the Revolution, and afterwards served his country in the American Congress. He was a great favorite of Washington, and endeared himself to Generals Green, Marion and Sumpter, while rendering important services in the Southern campaign, as their letters amply show.

Mr. and Mrs. Carrington were on a visit at Mount Vernon not long before General Washington's death.

In one of Mrs. Carrington's letters to her sister, Mrs. Fisher, she describes the chamber of a Virginia lady.

After speaking of the hearty welcome given them by the General and his lady, and the extension of the retiring hour of the former from nine to twelve on one night, when he and Colonel Carrington were lost in former days and scenes, and in the company of Pulaski and Kosciusko, she comes to Mrs. Washington, who spoke of her days of public life and levees and company as "her lost days":

Let us repair to the old lady's room, which is precisely in the style of our good old aunt's—that is to say, nicely fixed for all sorts of work. On one side sits the chamber-maid, with her knitting; on the other, a little coloured pet, learning to sew. An old, decent woman is there, with her table and shears, cutting out the negroes' winter-clothes, while the good old lady directs them all, incessantly knitting herself. She points out to me several pairs of nice coloured stockings and gloves she had just finished, and presents me with a pair half done, which she begs I will finish and wear for her sake. It is wonderful, after a life spent as these good people have necessarily spent theirs, to see them, in retirement, assume those domestic habits that prevail in our country.

If the wife of General Washington, having her own and his wealth at command, should thus choose to live, how much more the wives and mothers of Virginia with moderate fortunes and numerous children! How often have I seen, added to the above mentioned scenes of the chamber, the instruction of several sons and daughters going on, the churn, the reel, and other domestic operations, all in progress at the same time, and the mistress, too, lying on a sick-bed. There are still such to be found, though I fear the march of refinement is carrying many beyond such good old ways.

Mrs. Carrington writes thus of the religious character of her mother:

Often when a child have I listened to my mother's account of her early devotion to her Maker, heard her describe how, at the age of thirteen, deprived of earthly parents, she, with pious resignation, turned her heart to God, and, in the midst of a large family sought a retired spot in the garret, where she erected a little altar at which to worship. There, with her collection of sacred books, she gave her earliest and latest hours to God. Her character, in the opinion of her giddy companions, was stamped with enthusiasm. But who would not wish to be such an enthusiast? In after years, she made it her meat and drink to do the will of God, and never, in one instance, do I recollect her to have shrunk from it. Her whole life was a continued series of practical Christian duties, and her example can never be effaced from the hearts of those who knew her.

The following is an extract from a letter to Mrs. Fisher, part of which was given in Chapter I:

As a great mark of favor, I was permitted at the age of fourteen to accept an invitation of our aunt A. in Hanover. Before I finished my journey, I received a letter from my father, telling me he now considered I had arrived at an age when I might, in some degree, be left to myself. "Remember, my child,"—these were his words—"this is the first time you have left the wing of tender parents; it behooves you to be watchful over your conduct; to be affable and courteous to all around you. Much depends upon your first entrance in the world; but, above all, never neglect your daily duty to your Great Benefactor. He demands your warmest gratitude."

This was the first time he ever called my attention to religious duties. No doubt, he felt perfectly satisfied with what our mother did for us in this particular, but his own constant example was of itself sufficient and of far greater weight than precept. Never did man live in more constant practice of religious duties; early and late we knew him in the performance of them. It was his daily habit to spend his first and latest hours in prayer and meditation. Every Sunday that his church was open he was the first to enter it, and often would be almost a solitary male at the table of God. [Most of the men were engaged in war.]



It is not remembered whether he considered days of fasting as necessary, but his frequent abstinence led us to believe that he felt the necessity for it, and perhaps his constitution also induced him often to practice it; nevertheless, he was never religiously gloomy. His temper was not gay, but his seriousness was generally the effect of a continual devotion to business and a remarkably reflecting mind. However, there were seasons when he enjoyed society and would often use exertions to amuse his young friends. The company of children, when quiet and playful, was delightful to him, and I have often known him to seek it, to avoid those of larger growth; with them he used to say he always found innocence.

Benevolence in its utmost extent marked the character of our much loved father through every period of his life, and the pecuniary sacrifices for it made by him are beyond calculation. His secret charities have often been repeated in my ears from grateful lips that dared not, from delicacy for his feelings, repeat them abroad.

From your affectionate sister,

E. J. C.

There was living in Richmond a poor Scotch clergyman named John Buchanan, whom he invited to make his house his home until he should be able to support himself. The invitation was accepted. The excellent Parson Buchanan lived with him till he died, officiated when he was consigned to the grave, and preached his funeral sermon, from which the following extract is made:

And when can we more seasonably apply to these duties than when we are warned by the loss of our friends to remember our latter end, and apply our hearts unto wisdom? We have, my brethren, been lately paying the last sad tribute to a departed brother. He whose loss we now lament had passed the fifty-fifth year of his age without a blemish to his reputation, without an enemy, with numerous friends. Adored by his family, he has almost consoled them for his loss by the conviction that he has not gone too early for himself, and that he was mature in character, notwithstanding the constant exposure of an official man to the displeasure of others by the impartiality of his conduct. Even those who went away from him unindulged in their applications were satisfied by a confidence in the purity of his motives.

His public career, for nearly twenty years, was a series of testimony to his truth. Drawn from the peaceful walks of private life into public action, with but a solicitation or a wish previously expressed, he was chosen by the Legislature to their important offices during the Revolution and since the peace. His last, that of treasurer, presented for thirteen years to malice, envy, or enmity, had they existed against him, an annual opportunity for gratification. And yet was he annually re-elected, because he had unremittingly shown his fitness for the office. His fatal disorder

put human nature on the rack, but he bore his agonies with every firmness of which human nature was capable, cherished, strengthened and animated by the divine glow of Christianity, and foreseeing, with a smile, the prospect opening to his view. The poor scarcely knew the hand from which they so often received relief. And those who were his dependents could not but own how much their condition was softened by the kindness of their master. To this fair transcript of his character, drawn by one who knew him well, but in his public and private life, I might from a fourteen years' knowledge of him (ten whereof I spent in his family) add many private traits which characterize him as the good man and sincere, pious Christian. I could set before you innumerable instances of kind attention and kind solicitude to alleviate the distresses, bear the infirmities, provide for the wants, nay even anticipate the wishes of her to whom he was united. Of the constant care and unremitted assiduity of the fond but judicious parent, training up his own children, as also the fatherless, and those who had none to guide and direct them in the path of religion and virtue, not merely by daily precepts, but by what is infinitely more efficacious, by daily example, conscientiously discharging that most important of all trusts, and securing their temporal as well as eternal interests. I might bear honourable testimony to his being as tender of the reputation of another, repelling every report circulated by envy or malice against his neighbor's fame, and like "Christian charity, thinking no evil." I might adduce repeated proofs of his delicacy and purity of manners and conversation, and of his temperance and self-government.

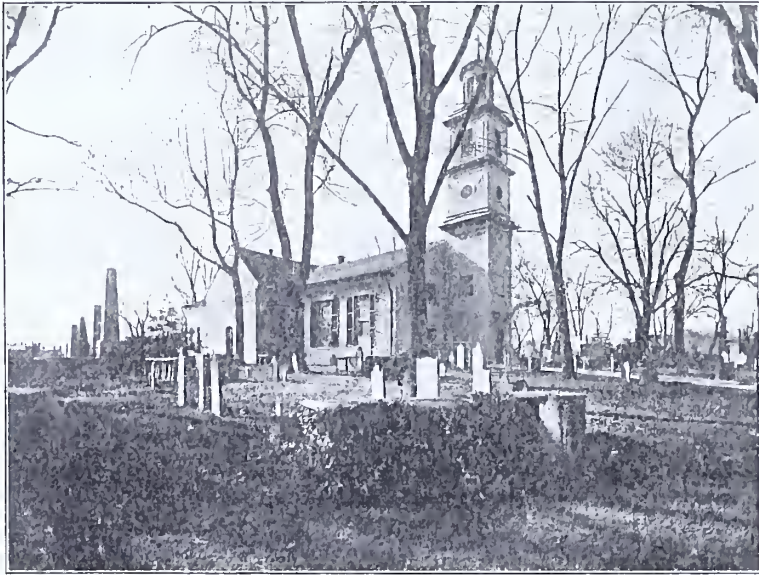
He may, however, have been thought by some too reserved and too much of a recluse, and that he separated himself more than was necessary from scenes of cheerful and innocent sociability. But it may be truly said that his greater enjoyment was in his family and the private circle of his friends, whenever the state of his health would permit, and that he was sufficiently conversant in the world to present to it a fair model of integrity and a constant attention to his duties as an officer, though not enough to be seduced and contaminated by its follies and vices.

To sum up all, I might lead you to his private retirement, and present to you the devout Christian, prostrate in humble supplication before his Almighty Creator, which they only who follow his example can justly estimate, and which they know proves their greatest consolation in the various trials and calamities of life. In fine I might conduct you to the altar of God, where you would hear him making a public profession of his faith, and, regardless of the scoffs of the infidel and the ridicule of a vain and inconsiderate world, giving an open and solemn testimony, that he was not ashamed of the Cross of Christ, which was to him both the wisdom and power of God to his salvation. These and many more features of his character I might exhibit to your view; but though a minute and particular detail would still appear to myself as falling short of his merit, yet to those less acquainted with him, than I was, it might seem to be drawn by the flattering pencil of a friend. I therefore forbear a further recital, and make one reflection naturally arising from the subject, that



whenever the eye of man is disgusted and shocked by scenes of impiety, rapine, cruelty and bloodshed, let him cast in on such a fair and pleasing picture as the present, which does so much honor to human nature, and he will not fail to conclude that man, the prey of furious and malignant passions, resembles an infernal spirit; but when actuated by the sacred dictates of religion and devoted virtue, he claims kindred with the angels in heaven.

"Mark, therefore, the perfect man, and behold the upright, for the end of that man is peace."



ST. JOHN'S CHURCH, RICHMOND, VA.

Built between 1739 and 1741.

Mrs. Carrington's mother pointed out to her, many years before her death, the spot in St. John's Church burying-ground in which her grandmother and grandfather Ambler were interred, but no tombstones were erected over them, and I believe at their request should not be done. But the ground is now all levelled and turfed over, so that it is impossible to point out the spot, which was still there about sixty years ago. (George D. Fisher.)

St. John's Church is situated on Church Hill, one of the most commanding of the seven hills upon which Richmond is built, and overlooks the James at a point where Powhatan held his court. Four acres of beautifully kept grounds surround it, into

which the dead for more than a century and a half have crowded. There have been as many as four interments in a single grave, and one cannot set one's foot upon a gravel walk without treading above human remains. From these, flowers spring with hopeful significance, and overhanging trees, casting their leaf vesture at God's appointment, clothe themselves with new beauty in the springtime of Nature's resurrection.

The following information of St. John's Church is copied from the *Baltimore Sun* of Sept. 25, 1904:

#### THE PROPOSED CHANGES.

The proposed addition is, indeed, not the only one that has been made to the original structure, another having supplied the precedent, and the public will now have to content itself with the reflection that the line has been drawn there, and that no subtractions have as yet lessened its value. The oblong building, erected between the years of 1739 and 1741, which echoed to Patrick Henry's voice, still remains, as does the antique sounding-board which gave back his winged words to a breathless audience. In 1830, however, a second structure, similar in shape to the original one, and running at right angles from it, was annexed to its center. This gave to the whole the form of a T, while the present addition, designed to accommodate an organ, with robing rooms for a vested choir, being on the other side of the horizontal line, and opposite the perpendicular one, will change the T into a cross.

Partially protecting the historic portion from the weather, and replacing an excrescent vestry room which has for eighteen years disfigured its side, the annex has something to commend it even to the antiquarian, and is perhaps chiefly to be regretted because of its projection (although raised above them) over interesting graves in the churchyard. Most notable among them is that of the Rev. William Graham, the founder of Washington Academy, now Washington and Lee University, the first institution of learning chartered in Virginia, and at that time, with the exception of William and Mary College, the only high school in the State. Graham, who died in Richmond in 1779, was a native of Pennsylvania, born near the site of the present town of Harrisburg, and was a classmate at Princeton of "Light Horse Harry Lee," the father of General Robert E. Lee.

History repeats itself, and in 1781, nearly 100 years before the Virginia military cadets gathered undying laurels on the field of Newmarket, the students of Washington Academy, with Graham at their head, marched to Rockfish Gap to defend it against Tarleton's troops.

Going to the left and turning the corner of the building, we look upon the last resting place of Chancellor George Wythe, member of the House of Burgesses and of the Continental Congress and signer of the Declaration of Independence, whose life was, to its close, interwoven with the history

of Virginia. He was a vegetarian, and more than a century in advance of his time, emancipating his slaves and furnishing means for their subsistence.

Jefferson and Bishop Madison, the first Episcopal Bishop of Virginia, studied law with him in Williamsburg, and afterward filled the law chair at William and Mary College, occupying it until 1789, when he was made Chancellor of the High Court of Equity and removed to Richmond. His Williamsburg home, adjoining Bruton churchyard, still stands, and is an object of interest to the thousands who annually visit the historic town; but his residence on East Grace street, in Richmond, situated on what was then the highest point in the city, as ascertained by Mr. Watkins, the town surveyor, has been pulled down, the residence of the Hon. Beverley Munford now occupying its site.

Chancellor Wythe's only child died in infancy, and sharing his home was a great nephew, his prospective heir, who, impatient to come into his inheritance, poisoned the coffee being prepared for breakfast. Several of the servants of the household drank of it, a negro boy dying, while the Chancellor only survived long enough to summon a neighbor and alter his will, thus frustrating the murderer's design. When his death was announced the bells of the city were set tolling, a procession was formed, and the Hon. William Munford, his ex-pupil, the ancestor of the prominent Richmond family of his name and branches of the same scattered elsewhere, delivered the funeral oration of one John Randolph had pronounced "an incarnation of Justice." Nearly 100 years have passed since then, but his grave, shaded by an elm tree and identified by a piece of iron driven in at the head, is still unmarked—a mute reproach to the Republic whose infancy he cherished.

#### INTERESTING MEMORIALS.

Near the opposite end of the historic portion, its branches extending over the spot upon which Henry stood, was a sycamore tree, which must have been of considerable size in his day. Its shade was injuring the building, however, and in 1892 it was removed, its roots disclosing a human skull, face downward, held in their meshes. The tree was converted into souvenirs, which were sold to tourists. Not far from it, beneath what was once the eastern window, is the grave of Col. Edward Carrington, the brother-in-law of Chief Justice Marshall and the intimate friend of Washington, who appointed him quartermaster general in 1798, when a war with France seemed pending. In 1775, when the Virginia Convention met in St. John's, Carrington, who was a member of it, was unable from the press to get into the building. He placed himself, therefore, near the open window, afterward expressing the wish, which was respected, that he might be buried in the spot upon which he had heard Henry's electrical outburst. Near him lies John Page of Rosewell, the Governor of Virginia, and ancestor of Thomas Nelson Page. He was a fellow student, at William and Mary, of Jefferson, and his confidant in his love affair with Rebecca Burwell, the Williamsburg belle who has become historic as having rejected in embryo the author of the Declaration of Independence.

To the left is the keeper's lodge, an examination of the record to be seen there with the names of thousands of tourists crowding its pages, some of whom registered from England, France and Canada, suggesting the material results to the city from the presence of this interesting landmark.

I append two letters of Mrs. Carrington to her sister, Mrs. Fisher, in 1810, which I am sure readers of this book will derive pleasure from, in her delineation of the character of her brother-in-law, Chief Justice Marshall, as well as her experience in early life of the difficulties attending female education. They are dated 1810, and are as follows:

MY DEAR NANCY:

If anything can supply the place of early education, it is being thrown into a society where the infant mind may tend to future improvement. I cannot say that this was precisely our situation, when left as we were in Winchester. Our female relation was truly amiable, but young and inexperienced, and almost as childish as ourselves. Her husband, though a man of sterling worth and one whom I still love and venerate beyond most of my friends, was too much occupied or too negligent to bestow those attentions upon us that we required. Thus my sister, my cousin, a little older than myself, and I (most of us unmanageable), were left entirely to our own wayward humours, and but for the remarkable discretion of my sister, who was only twelve years of age, my cousin and myself would have been perpetually involved in difficulties. As it was, the absurdities of my conduct can never be thought of but with regret, nor would I, for any consideration, have our Janetta, or any girl that I love, placed in a similar situation. A girl of thirteen, left without an adviser, of a gay and frivolous temper, fancying herself a woman, stands on a precipice that trembles beneath her. The society of Winchester consisted of all descriptions of persons who seek a new country to better their fortunes; thus you may suppose there could be little refinement, and of course little improvement gained among them. There were however a few genteel and respectable families, English, Irish and Dutch, but the chief population was Dutch. During our stay we often met with genteel travellers, and not unfrequently made acquaintance with agreeable men, who were condemned in various parts to banishment to this dreary place on account of disaffection, as it was called, to the great cause of liberty. In this remote corner they were entirely precluded any intercourse with Britain or British agents; of course unable, if they had the disposition, to enter into any plans with them.

Amongst those proscribed, genteel Quakers from Philadelphia were numerous, and I also remember with much affection a Colonel Elligood, from Norfolk. Added to these were many charming young officers, who had been prisoners in Canada, and just then liberated; such were Heth, Bruin, McGuire, etc., etc. Here was a fine field open for a romantic girl to exhibit in, and here I could tell you many pretty stories of sighing divans, tender billets, love-inspiring sonnets, etc., etc., etc., but that they



would be blended with so many childish absurdities, that I will not venture to repeat them. Fortunately, nature blessed me with that versatility of temper, that at that time, it would have been impossible to have fixed my attention to any one object, so that consequently I escaped an entanglement that might have eventuated in regret. Early in the spring our good father returned and withdrew us from scenes that were so truly improper, and though he treated us himself as children, yet it was evident he saw that we had been considered of an age to attract too much attention. The only consolation I have ever felt for these youthful follies was that in a subsequent visit to Winchester I found that my temper and deportment to those of my acquaintances who remained there had been such as to inspire them with an affection for me, which had induced them to throw a veil over my youthful follies, and that they continued to love me with unabated affection.

It is not a pleasant thing to retrace the follies of youth, but I have determined, by a candid representation of different periods of my life, to guard our dear little sister against errors that I have fallen into. If our lives are prolonged, probably she may not be exposed or placed in similar situations, and now certain it is that another Revolution can never happen to affect and ruin a family so completely as ours has been. The only possible good from the entire change in our circumstances was, that we were made acquainted with the manners and situation of our own country, which we otherwise should never have known. Added to this necessity taught us to use exertions which our girls of the present day know nothing of. We were forced to industry, to appear genteel, to study manners to supply the place of education, and to endeavour, by amiable and agreeable conduct, to make amends for the loss of fortune, which by this time was reduced to a pretty low ebb. See us at this period reduced to the necessity of travelling in a common wagon, which to be sure was fixed comfortably with swinging seats, etc., etc. Like the good old vicar's family, we were rather ashamed of our cavalry, but the constant attention we received from all who knew the virtues and independent spirit of my father rendered our change most supportable.

One little mortification I must, however, relate. We arrived at Fredericksburg rather at a late hour in the evening, and our equipage was safely lodged. We passed the next day with our friends there, and had much attention paid us; were invited to a ball in the evening, that we declined going to, not having ball dresses with us (which by the way were not to be found elsewhere), and besides we were to take our departure at a very early hour in the morning, having prevailed on our father to let us walk to the outskirts of the town, where our vehicle would be in readiness for us. When lo and behold! just as we were stepping into it several genteel and elegant officers appeared, who had encamped with their regiment the preceding night at this very spot. Here was a terrible blow to our fancied consequence; like the Miss Primroses, we began to bridle, and perhaps would have glanced at better days and talked of the coach we had lately passed, that way in our journey up, but our vicar-like father cut the matter short

by shaking hands with the gentlemen, all of whom he had known before, saying he was carrying his children (for he still treated us as such) to join their mother, and wished them a good journey. The commanding officer proved to be Colonel Carrington, afterwards the friend of all others most respected, and ultimately the husband of my choice.

Yours sincerely,

E. J. CARRINGTON.

MY DEAR NANCY:—Had I talents or the necessary information for writing the history of my country, the period of my life mentioned in my last would afford an ample opportunity to distinguish myself; but possessing neither the one nor the other, it is impossible to give you an idea of the interesting state of the Colonies at that time. That eventful war, which I so often had occasion to dwell on, was at that period carried on in the northern states with the utmost vigor; our own, however, for some time was exempt from its ravages, and we returned to our dear York—not, indeed, to our former mansion, but to a small retired tenement that had long been occupied by others.

My imagination frequently recurs to the enchanting spot, situated on a little eminence in the environs of the town overlooking a smiling meadow where a gentle stream, meandering round the sloping hill, was lost in one of the noblest rivers in our country. Here my sister and myself often wandered, gathering wild flowers to adorn our hair, till we almost fancied ourselves heroines. The charm, however, only lasted during our rambles, for on returning to the house, we always found employment sufficient to convince us that much of the comfort of the family depended upon our personal exertions. My father at this time accepted an appointment which kept him almost constantly at Williamsburg. Our own town had now become a garrison; of course we should have been left to experience repeated alarms, had we not been fortunately next-door neighbor to the commanding officer, Colonel Marshall, with his "suite," composed of several of his young relations, one of whom was often our immediate guard. It was at this time we became acquainted with our much loved brother, then called Captain Marshall, who, being without a command just then, left the Northern army to visit his father and friends. Perhaps no officer that had been introduced to us excited so much interest. We had been accustomed to hear him spoken of by all as a very paragon. We had often seen letters from him fraught with filial and fraternal affection; the eldest of fifteen children, devoted from his earliest years to his younger brothers and sisters, he was almost idolized by them, and every line received from him was read with rapture. Our expectations were raised to the highest pitch, and the little circle of York was on tiptoe on his arrival. Our girls, were particularly emulous who should be first introduced. It is remarkable that my sister, then only fourteen and different beyond all others, declared that we were giving ourselves useless trouble, for that she, for the first time, had made up her mind to go to the ball, though she had not even been at dancing-school, and was resolved to set her cap for him and eclipse us all.

This in the end proved true, and at the first introduction he became devoted to her. For my own part, I am free to confess, that I felt not the slightest wish to contest the prize with her. In this, as in every other instance in life, my sister's superior discernment and solidity of character has made me feel my own insignificance. She, with a glance, developed his character, and understood how to appreciate it, while I, expecting an Adonis, lost all desire of becoming agreeable in his eyes, when I beheld his awkward figure, unpolished manners, and total negligence of person (which, by the by, did often produce a blush on her cheek). Nevertheless, how trivial now seem such objections! Under the slouched hat there beamed an eye that penetrated at one glance the inmost recesses of the human character, and beneath the slovenly garb there dwelt a heart replete with every virtue. What his superior mind and knowledge are capable of exhibiting belongs to a more able biographer than myself; it is only his domestic character that I have attempted feebly to sketch. None ever knew him in that particular better than myself. From the moment he loved my sister he became truly a brother to me (a blessing which before I had never known), and the reciprocal interest which we have each felt for the other has never known abatement. During the short stay he made with us, our whole family became attached to him, and though there was then no certainty of his becoming allied to us, we felt a love for him that can never cease. And how could it have been otherwise where there was no circumstance, however trivial, in which we were concerned, that was not his case. Much, indeed, do I owe him in every respect, and if I claim any consequence in life, it may be ascribed to my early intimacy with so estimable a friend. Certain it is, whatever taste I may have for reading was entirely gained from him, who used to read to us from the best authors, particularly the poets, with so much taste and pathos as to give one an idea of their sublimity, without which I should never have had an idea of. Thus did he lose no opportunity of blending improvement with our amusements, and thereby gave us a taste for books, which probably we might never otherwise have had.

Soon after this we learned with pleasure that he was determined to attend the law studies in Williamsburg during his absence from his regiment of about three months, and at the end of that time, after obtaining a license, he rejoined his regiment, gaining as much in that short time as would have employed many the same number of years. On our way to Richmond, where we had been induced to remove in consequence of my father's appointment to council, when the government was removed to that place, we had the pleasure of seeing him in Williamsburg—we found him still the kind, attentive friend as in York. Notwithstanding his amiable and correct conduct there were those who would catch at the most trifling circumstances to throw a shade over his fair fame. Once, in particular, I remember an observation of one of his envious contemporaries, when allusion was made to his short stay at William and Mary College, that he could have gained but little there, and that his talents were greatly over-rated. How far he has left this wise observer behind him, might be



easily shown were I at liberty to describe this distinguished personage. The same spirit of envy and detraction has followed him more or less through life, and though no man living ever had more ardent friends, yet there does not exist one who has had at one time more slandering enemies.

One remarkable trait, however, in his character is, that he was never known to make, even to his most intimate friend, an invidious or malevolent retort, though slanders were propagated and whispered in the ear of those with whom of all others he wished to stand well, insidiously representing the most trifling failings into crimes of blackest dye. Yet has he always preserved the same amiable, unsuspecting temper which so remarkably distinguished him, and he has wisely shown that nothing can so completely blunt the shaft of envy and malice as a life spent in virtuous and noble usefulness.

The year after the war his marriage took place at the cottage in Hanover, to which place we had been invited by our relation, John Ambler. It has been ill-naturedly said that my father made objections on the score of fortune, but nothing was ever less true, for though I have heard Mr. Marshall a hundred times declare, that after paying the parson he had but one solitary guinea left, yet, had that been lacking, my father would have considered him the best choice his daughter could have made. Certainly the event has proved so, for no man in my estimation has ever, save one, stood so high in our country. What his conduct has been in the tender relations of domestic life you have had as good an opportunity of knowing as myself—his exemplary tenderness to our unfortunate sister is without parallel; with a delicacy of frame and feeling that baffles all description, she became, early after her marriage, a prey to extreme nervous affection, which more or less has embittered her comfort through life, but this has only served to increase his care and tenderness, and he is, as you well know, as entirely devoted as at the moment of their first being married. Always and under every circumstance an enthusiast in love, I have very lately heard him declare that he looked with astonishment at the present race of lovers, so totally unlike what he had been himself. His never failing cheerfulness and good humor is a perpetual source of delight to all connected with him, and I have not a doubt has been the means of prolonging the life of her he is so tenderly devoted to.

Instead of wearying you with my own trifling concerns and an account of my unimportant life, I will occasionally give you a sketch of characters who have been interesting to me, but for the present will transcribe letters of old friends and select some of my own: they may serve to amuse you on rainy days.

Yours,

E. J. C.

Prof. Raleigh C. Minor, of University, Charlottesville, Va., has a sister who has Mrs. Carrington's complete MS. (July, 1905).

The strength as well as tenderness of Judge Marshall's attachment to Mrs. Marshall will appear from the following affecting tribute to her memory, written by himself, December 25th, 1832:

This day of joy and festivity to the whole Christian world is, to my sad heart, the anniversary of the keenest affliction which humanity can sustain. While all around is gladness, my mind dwells on the silent tomb, and cherishes the remembrance of the beloved object which it contains.

On the 25th of December, 1831, it was the will of heaven to take to itself the companion, who had sweetened the choicest part of my life, had rendered toil a pleasure; had partaken of all my feelings, and was enthroned in the inmost recesses of my heart. Never can I cease to feel the loss and to deplore it. Grief for her is too sacred ever to be profaned on this day, which shall be, during my existence, marked by a recollection of her virtues.

On the 3rd of January, 1783, I was united by the holiest bonds to the woman I adored. From the moment of our union to that of our separation, I never ceased to thank heaven for this, its best gift. Not a moment passed in which I did not consider her as a blessing from which the chief happiness of my life was derived. This never-dying sentiment, originating in love, was cherished by a long and close observation of as amiable and estimable qualities as ever adorned the female bosom. To a person which in youth was attractive, to manners uncommonly pleasing, she added a fine understanding, and the sweetest temper which can accompany a just and modest sense of what was due to herself. She was educated with a profound reverence for religion, which she preserved to her last moments. This sentiment among her earliest and deepest impressions gave a colouring to her whole life. Hers was the religion taught by the Saviour of man. She was a firm believer in the faith inculcated by the Church (Episcopal) in which she was bred.

I have lost her, and with her the solace of my life! Yet she remains still the companion of my retired hours, still occupies my inmost bosom. When alone and unemployed, my mind still recurs to her. More than a thousand times, since the 25th of December, 1831, have I repeated to myself the beautiful lines written by General Burgoyne, under a similar affliction, substituting "Mary" for "Anna:"

Encompassed in an angel's frame,  
 An angel's virtues lay;  
 Too soon did Heaven assert its claim,  
 And take its own away!  
 My Mary's worth, my Mary's charms,  
 Can never more return!  
 What now shall fill these widowed arms?  
 Ah me! My Mary's urn!  
 Ah me! Ah me! My Mary's urn!

As to the religious opinions of Judge Marshall the following extract from a letter of the Rev. Mr. Norwood may be entirely relied on:

I have read some remarks of yours in regard to Chief Justice Marshall, which have suggested to me to communicate to you the following facts, which may be useful should you again publish anything in relation to his religious opinions. I often visited Mrs. Gen'l Harvie during her last illness. From her I received this statement. She was much with her father during the last months of his life, and told me that the reason why he had never communed was that he was Unitarian in opinion, though he never joined their society. He told her, that he believed in the truth of the Christian revelation, but not in the divinity of Christ, therefore he could not commune in the Episcopal Church. But during the last months of his life, he read Keith on Prophecy, where our Saviour's divinity is incidentally treated, and was convinced by his work, and the fuller investigation to which it led, of the supreme divinity of the Saviour. He determined to apply for admission to the communion of our Church—objected to commune in private, because he thought it his duty to make a public confession of the Saviour—and while waiting for improved health to enable him to go to Church for that purpose, he grew worse and died without ever communing. Mrs. Harvie was a lady of the strictest probity, the most humble piety, and of a clear, discriminating mind, and her statement, the substance of which I give you accurately (having reduced it to writing), may be entirely relied upon.

I remember to have heard Bishop Moore repeatedly express his surprise (when speaking of Judge Marshall), that, though he was so punctual in his attendance at church and reproved Mr. ———, and Mr. ———, and Mr. ——— when they were absent, and knelt during the prayers and responded fervently, yet he never communed. The reason was that which he gave to his daughter, Mrs. Harvie. She said he died an humble, penitent believer in Christ, according to the orthodox creed of the Church.

Very truly your friend and brother in Christ,

WILLIAM NORWOOD.

Anyone visiting Monumental Church, Richmond, Va., will notice the window above the gallery on the southeast side represents "Moses, the Lawgiver," and stands to the memory of the great Chief Justice John Marshall. He was one of the original pew holders, and his name is still on pew twenty-three. I saw the name when I visited the church (June, 1904) and his granddaughters, the Misses Harvie, attend this church to this day (July, 1905). In 1824 La Fayette worshipped here and sat in the Marshall pew.

From the "History of the Monumental Church," by George D. Fisher, page 53:

A special convention was held at the capitol on Wednesday, the 4th of May, 1814. Present of the clergy: the Rev. John Buchanan, D. D., John Cameron, D. D., John Dunn, Wm. Meade, Oliver Norris, Andrew Sym, Wm.

K. Wilmer. Of the Laity: Messrs. John Adams, Wm. Broadus, John Burford, Wm. Cameron, Daniel Carmichael, Edmund J. Lec, Edward McGuire, George Thornton. Afterwards increased by the admission of James McClurg, D. D., and John Marshall.

On Thursday, May 5.

RESOLVED:—That the appointment of a bishop for this diocese is highly expedient, and necessary for the maintenance and support of this church.

On motion, made and seconded—

RESOLVED:—That the convention proceed immediately to the election of a person to fill the Episcopate in this State.



RIGHT REV. RICHARD CHANNING MOORE, D. D.,  
Bishop of Virginia

Dr. James McClurg then presented a certified extract from the vestry-book of the Monumental Church in Richmond, showing the appointment of the Rev. Richard Channing Moore, D. D., of the city of New York, to the rectorship of that church.

On motion, ordered that the Secretary read sundry letters exhibited by members of the standing committee, from Dr. Moore and the Right Rev. Bishop Hubart, which was accordingly done.

Dr. Moore was nominated to fill the office of bishop in this State. No other person being in nomination, the convention proceeded to ballot for a bishop.



The Hon. John Marshall and Mr. Edmund J. Lee were appointed to count the ballots, who reported that there were twenty-three votes for the Rev. Richard Channing Moore, D. D., and one vote for Dr. John Buchanan, whereupon Rev. R. C. Moore was declared duly elected to the Episcopate in the diocese of Virginia, and the members of the convention proceeded to subscribe the testimonial required by the constitution of the General Church of the United States.

RESOLVED:—That the President be requested to apprise Dr. Moore of his election to the Episcopate, and that the Secretary do furnish forthwith a certificate of that appointment.



REV. JOHN BUCHANAN, D. D.

I must add a few notes about Rev. John Buchanan, D. D., rector of Henrico Parish:

On the 19th of December, 1822, died in the city of Richmond, the Rev. John Buchanan, D. D., Rector of Henrico Parish. For many years prior to the erection of the Monumental Church he was the only Episcopal minister in Richmond. To the congregation of that church on Richmond Hill (now called St. John's) he was as familiar as the Bishop himself, and was second only to him in their affectionate regard. He was at one time engaged as a private tutor to the children of Mr. Jaquelin Ambler, in whose family he had a comfortable home for ten years of his life.

From the *Richmond Enquirer*, December 21, 1822:

DIED:—At 1 o'clock on Wednesday night, the Rev. John Buchanan, a minister of the Episcopal Church, and for forty years a resident of this city. He was faithful to the duties of a minister and a man.

"Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind; this is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it: Thou shalt thy neighbor as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets."

This excellent man seemed to have these two laws written on the tablets of his heart. But we forbear: a biographical sketch is promised us for Tuesday, by one who knew and can describe him well. He was buried within the old church (St. John's), to the right of the altar.

(This biographical sketch is to be found in the "History of the Monumental Church.")

When Dr. John Buchanan first came to Richmond he was poor, but under the will of his brother James he inherited a handsome property. Mr. James Buchanan's residence was in a house facing James River, on a large lawn between Cary Street and the river, below Fourteenth Street, and above the old rock landing, through which the dock and Dock Street now pass, and kept refreshments there for himself and friends. When he died his property was estimated at about \$80,000.

It is some evidence of his character that he evinced his gratitude towards an early friend and benefactor, Mr. Jaquelin Ambler, or "Treasurer Ambler," as he was commonly called, by leaving the bulk of his estate to Mr. Ambler's four daughters, viz.: Mrs. Mary Willis Marshall, the wife of Chief Justice Marshall; Mrs. Elizabeth Jaquelin Carrington, the wife of Col. Edward Carrington; Mrs. Lucy Nelson Call, the wife of Daniel Call, Esq., and Mrs. Ann Fisher, the wife of Mr. George Fisher, all of whom were conspicuous members of the Monumental Church congregation.

The following account of Richmond, at the time of the removal of the seat of government there, is from the papers of Mrs. Colonel Carrington, from which I have already borrowed so largely, and I am sure so acceptably, to my readers:

It is indeed a lovely situation, and may at some future period be a great city, but at present it will afford scarce one comfort of life. With the exception of two or three families, this little town is made up of Scotch factors, who inhabit small tenements here and there from the river to the

hill, some of which looking,—as Colonel Marshall (afterwards Judge Marshall) observes—as if the poor Caledonians had brought them over on their backs, the weaker of whom were glad to stop at the bottom of the hill, others a little stronger proceeded higher, of which, a few of the stoutest and boldest reached the summit, which, once accomplished, affords a situation beautiful and picturesque. One of these hardy Scotchmen has thought proper to vacate his little dwelling on the hill, and though our whole family can scarcely stand up all together in it, my father has determined to rent it as the only decent tenement on the hill.

The following letter to Miss Caines, of London (who had lived in Virginia), will show what was the state of things at this time, in the year 1792, the date of the letter:

1128219

This evil (the want of public worship) increases daily, nor have we left in our extensive State three churches that are decently supported. Our metropolis even would be left destitute of this blessing, but for the kind offices of our friend Buchanan, whom you remember well, an intimate of our family. He, from sheer benevolence, continues to preach in our capital (Richmond), to what we now call the New School—that is to say, to a set of modern philosophers, who merely attend because they know not what else to do with themselves. But blessed be God, in spite of the enlightened, as they call themselves, and in spite of Goodwin, Paine, etc., we still, at times, particularly on our great Church-days, repair with a choice few to our old church on the hill (St. John's), and, by contributing our mite, endeavor to preserve the religion of our fathers. Delightful hours we sometimes pass there, etc., etc.

The Rev. Mr. Warrington was the grandfather of Commodore Warrington. From his birth the latter became an object of peculiar interest to a lady in Williamsburg, whom I am unable to name or identify except that she was the aunt of Miss Frances Caines, the intimate friend of Miss Ambler, afterward Mrs. Edward Carrington, of Richmond, from whose papers I have often quoted. Both the young ladies had been companions of the mother of young Louis Warrington and took a lively interest in him on that account. Miss Caines and Miss Ambler corresponded for a long time after the former returned to England, as she was only a temporary sojourner in Virginia. The following extracts from one of Mrs. Carrington's letters to her old friend, Miss Caines, in 1820, will, I am sure, be gratifying to my readers, not only on account of what refers to young Warrington, but what relates to other subjects:



At our advanced age, my respected friend, it would seem incredible that a renewal of intercourse should take place between us. Years have passed since I have had the pleasure of hearing from you, and but for the visit of my cousin (John Jaquelin Ambler) to England, I might probably have gone to my grave without knowing what had become of you. Who can tell, but it may be a foretaste of a reunion in a better world that a merciful God has in store for us? The little book you presented to my cousin brought to my recollection the one you presented to me some forty years ago, entitled, "Sacred Dramas." It was a precious gift to me, and led me to peruse every succeeding work of that excellent author (Miss Hannah Moore) with delight and, I hope, with advantage. What a woman she is, and what a gift have her writings been even to our remote corner of the world! Whenever England is brought to my mind, I somehow or other so connect the names of Frances Caines, Hannah Moore, and the hallowed spot of Barley Wood, that altogether it seems a paradise. In one of your last letters you say, "Can it be possible that the Captain Warrington I have seen announced in the Liverpool papers, as lately arrived in England with despatches from America, is our dear little Louis?" It was the same little Louis that we fondly doted on. His conduct through life has been distinguished—has raised him to high standing in our navy—and no doubt some future historian will do him ample justice in his naval character. In private life he has been alike deserving.

Mrs. Carrington then mentions, in proof of his generosity, his dividing a thousand pounds, which had been left him by the aunt of Miss Caines, with two half sisters, who were in need. She speaks also of his having married a Miss Cary King, a sprightly and amiable girl, an old schoolmate of hers:

They are now living in great comfort near Norfolk, he holding some office in the navy-yard and standing high in the confidence of his country. It has been some years since I saw him, and on his last visit to Richmond my health was too bad to admit of my inviting him. It was, however, a visit of great interest to many, and produced an excitement that is rarely experienced. How would you have felt, my dear friend, had you seen him hailed as one of the choicest guardians of his country, called by the united voice of Virginia to receive a splendid sword as a token of her love and gratitude to him? It is impossible for me to describe the emotions produced in my mind, when I heard every voice united in commendation, and in rapture describe his modest manliness as he entered the Senate Hall to receive his merited reward. In an instant my thoughts flew back to your aunt's room, where you first saw the lovely boy; and busy recollection carried me still further back—two years previous—when on a visit to Williamsburg I was ushered in to see your aunt, who laid him on my lap, and in agony left the room.

Mrs. Carrington adds a passage from a projected novel of her Aunt Jaquelin, in which Louis Warrington was to be the hero:

"This must ever be the lot of our poor clergy—a scanty subsistence while living, and at their death poverty and misery is children's only inheritance." In which, however, we must beg leave widely to differ from this excellent lady; and must class this sentiment and assertion among many others in novels, projected or executed, as we believe the descendants of pious clergymen have many special blessings entailed upon them. The prayers and example of Commodore Warrington's pious grandfather may have been among the means appointed by Providence for promoting the future greatness, and, what is infinitely better, the future piety, of Commodore Warrington.

My residence in Norfolk, as a Minister of Christ Church, for two years, enabled me to form a just estimate of his character. Though his station was at the navy yard in Gosport, and his residence there, he was a most punctual attendant on the Sabbath in Christ Church, Norfolk.

Mrs. Carrington speaks of the modest manliness, admired of all, with which he entered the Senate Chamber to receive the sword which was voted him by the Legislature of Virginia:

I have seen him on every succeeding Sabbath for the greater part of two years in a much more desirable and honorable place, when walking up the middle aisle of Christ Church with the same "modest manliness." There was in him the dignity of the soldier and the modesty of the Christian blended together. He was not then in full membership with the Church, though all thought he might with propriety have been. But even then, his devout behavior and reputable use of the prayer-book was an example to all others. As through life he had always, so far as I know and believe, been the friend of religion, and manifested it in those public ways required of naval officers, so, in his latter days, he sealed that testimony by entering into full communion with the church of his choice and of his ancestors.

P. S.—I have since discovered that the lady who patronized Louis Warrington was Mrs. Riddle, sister of the Rev. Thomas Warrington and great aunt of Commodore Warrington.

(This last article was taken from Bishop Meade's book, "Virginia Churches and Families," pp. 233-34.)



CARY COAT-OF-ARMS OF ENGLAND

## CHAPTER III

## THE CARY FAMILY.

[Taken from the records of the family written by John Jaquelin Ambler, of Glen Ambler, Va., and his nephew, Dr. James D. Moncure, of Williamsburg, Va.]

## COCKINGTON.

The following account of Cockington, the old family seat of the Carys in the County of Devon, is extracted from a work written about the commencement of the seventeenth century, found in the London Institution, having for its title: "Collections towards a Description of the County of Devon," by Sir William Pole, of Colcombe and Shute, Knight, who died A. D. 1635. Printed in London by J. Nicholas, anno MDCCXCI.

From the autograph in the possession of the lineal descendant of Sir William Pole, Sir John William de la Pole, Baronet of Shute in Devonshire, copied at the Library of the London Institution on the 10th December, 1825, by J. J. Ambler.

Cockington was given by Robert Fitzmartin, Lord of Dertington, unto his youngest son, Roger, on condition that his posterity "tooke their name of their dwellings. Roger de Cockington succeeded hyne in King Henry II tyme."

The following is copied from the *British Museum*, Nov. 7th, 1825, by John Jaquelin Ambler:

Roger de Cockington had issue:

Sir Roger, unto whom succeeded,

Sir Roger, unto him:

Sir James Cockington, being the last of that name, and dyed about the beginning of the raigne of King Edward III, without issue.

After hyme, Sir Walter de Woodland had Cockington; he was usher of the chamber of Black Prince, and Knighted by hyme Anno 24 of King Edward III, at what tyme the said Prince gave unto hym the manors of Mokesby, Tywornall, and Penmagne in Cornwall, and promisiike unto hym

a hundred marks of land yearly unto hym and the heirs of his bodie; in convenient tyme for ye mayntenance of his estate. This grant was dated ye 26 of April, Anno 24, King Edward III. He marryed Katheryne, daughter of coheire of William Polglas, but died without issue; and his wife had Cockington for her inheritance.

Robert Cary, sonne of Sir John Cary, had Cockington in King Henry IV tyme; he marryed Margaret, daughter of Sir Philip Courtenay, of Poderham, and had issue:

Philip, which by Thomazine, one of ye daughters of William Orchard of Orchard, nere Taunton, had issue:

William Cary of Cockington, by first wife Anne, daughter of Sir William Powlet, had issue:

Robert Cary.

His second wife, Alis, daughter of Sir Baldwyn Fulford, and had issue:

Thomas Cary, from whom are descended the famylyes of Cary in this part of England.

Robert Cary of Cockington first marryed daughter of Sir Nicas Carew, and had issue:

I. John Cary.

II. Thomas Cary of Cockington.

His second wife was Agnes, daughter of Sir William Holey, and had issue:

William Fokeray of Dartmouth.

Robert Cary.

Diggorg.

Thomas Cary of Cockington, second sonne of Robert Cary, by his first wife, marryed Mary of Southcot of Indeho, and had issue:

I. Sir George Cary of Cockington.

II. Robert Cary.

III. John Gregory Cary.

IV. Arthure Cary.

Sir George Cary of Cockington had first marryed Wilmot, daughter and heire of John Giffard of Yeo, the divorced wife of John Byry of Colaton, and had issue:

George Cary, which dyed without issue.

His second wife was Luce, daughter of Robert, Lord Rich, Earl of Warwick, but what issue there was I cannot write. He adopted George Cary, third sonne of his brother Robert, unto whom he gave Cockington. George Cary marryed Elizabeth, the daughter of Sir William Leanson, of Byry Pomeroy Baronet, and had issue.

"Baronage of England, etc.," by William Dugdale Narvoy, King of Arms; printed 1615.

## LORD HUNSDON CARY.

## (I ELIZABETH.)

Of the family (anciently seated at Cockington in Devonshire) was the same William Cary, who being in the battle of Tewksbury in the tenth year of Edward IV, on the part of the Lancastrians, upon the loss of that day was taken in church, whereunto, with others, he fled for sanctuary and, notwithstanding promises of pardon, lost his head.

This William Cary had two wives: First, Anne, the daughter of Sir William Pawlet, Knight, from whom those of Cockington did descend; second, Alice, the daughter of Sir Baldwin Fulford, Knight, by whom he had issue:

I. Thomas Cary, and he had issue:

I. Sir John Cary, Knight.

II. William Cary.

Sir John Cary, Knight, by ———, his wife, sister of Sir Anthony Denny, Knight, left issue:

I. Sir Edward Cary, Knight, who by Katherine, his wife, daughter of Sir Henry ———, Knight, and widow of Henry Lord Paget, had issue:

I. Henry Cary, afterwards created Viscount Falkland and made deputy of Ireland; which Henry Cary departed this life in 1633, left issue by Elizabeth, his wife, daughter and heir to Sir Lawrence Tanfield, Knight, Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer Lucius Cary, his son and heir, who married Lettie, the daughter of Richard Morrison, of Tooty Park in County Leicester, whose great-grandson, being the only one of his father, emigrated to Virginia according to the traditions of the family, and was the father of Colonel Wilson Miles Cary, of Williamsburg (and sometimes of Cary's Brook), Virginia, and of Miss Mary Cary, who married Edward Ambler, Esq., of James Town, consequently this Lucius Cary is the progenitor of the Ambler family now in Virginia (1825).

[We think all this is a mistake.—J. D. Moncure and Louise Pecquet du Bellet.]

Lucius Cary, being a person eminently learned, was made choice of by the late King Charles of blessed memory, for one of



his principal Secretaries of State. Shortly after which, out of the great zeal to His Majesty's service in the rebellious times, adventuring himself in the battle of Newberry, 20th September, anno 1643, he then lost his life.

The younger branch of the family was more happy, the history of which the same old chronicle gives in these words. Having said thus much touching the descendants of Sir John Cary, the eldest son of Thomas, I now come to William Cary, his second son.

This William Cary, being Esquire of the body of King Henry the Eighth, took to wife Mary, daughter of Thomas Bullen (sometimes spelled Boleyn), Earl of Wiltshire (sister of the Lady Anne, second wife of King Henry the Eighth), by whom he had one son :

- I. Henry Cary.
- II. Catherine Cary, a daughter, married Sir Francis Knolles, Knight of the Garter and died of the sweating sickness in anno 1528, being then of the bed chamber of that King.

Henry Cary (his son), in regard to his near alliance to Queen Elizabeth (being her mother's sister's son), was knighted soon after her coming to the crown, and upon the 13th of January next following, advanced to the dignity of a baron of the realm, by the title of "Lord Hunsdon," and took his place in Parliament, upon the 25th of the same month accordingly. Later Queen Elizabeth sent him with the order of the garter to the King of France, then at Lyons. And in 10 Elizabeth, being made Governor of the town and castle of Barwick, upon that insurrection of the Earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland (which happened shortly after), marched there and had a skirmish with them at the river belt, being then General of the Horse; nevertheless, they got from him into Scotland whereupon he prevailed with the Queen to proclaim pardon to all those, whom they had drawn unto them, in that desperate adventure. And in the next ensuing year accompanied the Earl of Sussex in making divers inroads into that realm [the North]. Also about two years after (being still Governor of Barwick), having by promise of money to some of the Scots got the Earl of Northumberland into his hands, he sent him to York, where he was shortly after beheaded.

In anno 1582 (25th of Elizabeth's reign), upon the return of the Duke of Anjou, who had stayed here three months, as a suitor to Queen Elizabeth (with some other of the nobility), he attended him to Antwerp by Her Majesty's command, and in 29 of the reign of Elizabeth he was made General Warden of the Marches toward Scotland, as [also about that time] Lord Chamberlain of the Queen's household. In 30. of Elizabeth's reign, upon putting the Queen of Scots\* to death in England (continuing at Barwick), he was employed unto King James, her son, to pacify him therein and in anno 1592 (35 Elizabeth), upon the charge laid to Sir Thomas Perrot, Deputy of Ireland, was one of the commissioners assigned to consider thereof. He was also Captain of the Pensioners and Knight of the most noble order of the Garter, and having married Anne, daughter of Sir Thomas Morgan, Knight, by her had issue, four sons and three daughters:

- I. George Cary.
- II. John Cary
- III. Sir Edward Cary, Knight.
- IV. Robert Cary, afterwards Earl of Monmouth.
- V. Catherine Cary. Married Charles, Earl of Nottingham.
- VI. Philadelphia Cary. Married Thomas, Lord Scrope.
- VII. Margaret Cary. Married Sir Edward Hoby, Knight.

Henry Cary, Lord Hunsdon, departed this life upon the 23rd of July, anno 1596 (38 of Elizabeth), being then seventy-one years old. He was buried in the Chapel of St. John Baptist, within the Collegiate Church of St. Peter at Westminster, where there is a noble monument erected to his memory.

To whom succeeded George Cary, his eldest son, who being also Knight of the most noble order of the Garter, Governor of the Isle of Wight, Lord Chamberlain of the Queen's Household and one of her privy council, departed this life, September 9, 1603 (1 James),

---

\*NOTE.—There is a ring in the possession of John Ambler Brooke, said to have been sent or taken by a Cary to announce to the Regent Murray of Scotland, as a token announcing that Mary, Queen of Scotland's, death warrant had been signed by Elizabeth. [This ring was made into a mourning ring for John Ambler, first.]

leaving issue by Elizabeth, his wife, daughter of Sir John Spencer, of Althorpe in com. North, Knight, one sole daughter and heir:

I. Elizabeth. Married Sir Thomas Berkley.

Whereupon John Cary, his next brother and heir, male, succeeded him in the honor. Which John, during his brother's life, seil. in 43 Elizabeth was constituted Warden of the East Marches towards Seotland, being then a Knight, and departed this life April —, 1617 (15 James), left issue by Mary, his wife, daughter of Leonard Hyde of Shrogkin in com., Hert., Esquire, two sons and two daughters:

I. Henry Cary.

II. Charles Cary.

III. Anne Cary. Married Sir Francis Lovell, of East Har-lyng, in County Norf., Knight.

IV. Blanche Cary. Married Sir Thomas Woodhouse, of Kimberley, in the same County, Knight.

Which Henry Cary, succeeded as Lord Hunsdon, was advaneed to the dignity of Viscount Roekford 6th July (9 James). Likewise to the title of the Earl of Dover, and having married Judith, the daughter of Sir Thomas Pelham, of Lofton, in County Suffolk, Baronet, by whom he had three sons and three daughters:

I. John Cary, made Knight of the Bath, at the Coronation of Charles I.

II. Pelham Cary, who died without issue.

III. George Cary.

IV. Mary Cary. Married Sir Thomas Wharton, Knight of the Bath, brother of Lord Wharton.

V. Judith Cary, died unmarried.

VI. Philadelphia, departed this life, anno 1668.

John Cary succeeded to his father, Henry Cary, and was his heir. He married, first, Dorothy, daughter to Oliver, Earl of Bolingbroke, and by her had no issue; second, Abigail, daughter of Sir William Cokain, Knight, Alderman of the City of London, by whom he had issue, only one daughter:

I. Mary Cary. Married William Heveringham of ——— in County ———, Esq.

Having finished with the elder branch, I lastly come to Robert, third son of the first Henry, Lord Hunsdon, in 40 of Elizabeth.

This Robert, being then a knight, was made Warden of the Marches towards Scotland and in (19 of James) 6th February, was created Lord Cary of Lexington, in County Ebor, also Earl of Monmouth, and departing this life at Moor Park in Hertfordshire 12th April anno 1639, left issue by Elizabeth, his wife, daughter of Sir Hugh Trevanian, of Cæsriheigh in County —, Knight. Issue:

I. Henry Cary, made Knight of the Bath in 1616, at the creation of Charles, Prince of Wales.

II. Thomas Cary.

The only daughter and heir of Thomas Cary married John Mordaunt, Earl of Peterborough and their eldest son, Charles the third Earl, was created Earl of Monmouth and afterwards Earl of Denbigh.

Robert Cary had one daughter, Philadelphia, married to Sir Thomas Wharton, Knight, son and heir to Lord Wharton. Which Sir Henry succeeded him in his honors. Married Martha, eldest daughter of Leonel, Earl of Middlesex, by whom he had issue, two sons and eight daughters:

I. Leonel Cary.

II. Henry Cary. Both died in their father's lifetime without issue.

III. Anne Cary. Married James Hamilton, Viscount Claveby and Earl of —.

IV. Philadelphia Cary, died single.

V. Elizabeth Cary.

VI. Mary Cary, wedded to William, Earl of Desmond.

VII. Trevaniana Cary, died unmarried.

VIII. Martha Cary. Married John, Earl of Middleton, in Scotland.

IX. Theophila Cary, died single.

X. Magdalena Cary, died single.

Sir Henry Cary died June 13, anno 1661, and was buried at Rickmansworth in Hertfordshire.

["Historical Description of Westminster Abbey," published 1824. Appendix, p. 20 of MS.]

In the chapel of St. Edmunds there is a monuiment: "To the Right Honourable, the Lady Katherine Knollys, chief lady of the bed chamber of Queen Elizabeth and wife of Sir Francis

Knollys, Knight, treasurer of the household. She died January 15th, 1568." This Lady Knollys and Lord Hunsdon, her brother, were the only children of William Cary, Esq., by Lady Mary, his wife, one of the daughters and heirs of Thomas Bulleyn, Earl of Wiltshire and Ormond, the sister to Anne Bulleyn, Queen of England, wife to Henry VIII, father and mother to Queen Elizabeth. What is remarkable, Lady Knollys' only daughter was mother to the favorite Earl of Essex.

The following is taken from "Extinct Peerage of England," etc., by the late Solomon Bolton, etc.:

### HUNSDON.

The ancestors of this family took their name from Castle Carey, in Sommersetshire, anciently written Karey, a Lordship in their possession.

[Nottingham, p. 325, Volume I.]

Charles, second Lord Effingham, was constituted by Queen Elizabeth, April 24, 1574, Lord Chamberlain of Her Majesty's household, and in 1585 Lord High Admiral, of England, Ireland and Aquitaine. He was commander-in-chief of the fleet by which the Spanish Armada was defeated, in the year 1588, and of another squadron which sailed against Cadiz, in the year 1595, having on board a number of land forces under the command of Robert Deveran, Earl of Essex. He was created on the 22nd of October in that year Earl of the County of Nottingham, and was a principal leader of the party that effected the ruin of the gallant Earl of Essex.

It was his countess, Catherine, daughter of Henry Cary, Lord Hunsdon, to whom that unsuspecting nobleman is said to have delivered the ring that had been given him by Queen Elizabeth, as a pledge of her perpetual favor.

This ring was intended, by the Earl, then under sentence of death, to be carried to the Queen, accompanied by a request of Her Majesty's pardon, but was concealed from political motives by the Countess of Nottingham, at the instigation of her husband. She is said to have confessed the suppression, with great penitence, upon her death bed, to Queen Elizabeth, who furiously shook the dying countess, exclaiming:

"God may forgive you but I never can;" and who from that time was seized with a melancholy and despair that put an end to her life.

Lord Nottingham's issue by this marriage was:

I. Charles, second Earl of Nottingham.

By a second wife he had issue:

II. Charles, third Earl of Nottingham, upon whose death the 26th of April, 1681, the title became extinct.

John Jaquelin Ambler has several more extracts from other books and authors, but they were mere repetitions of the above with slight variation in the wives' names and in spelling them, when they are the same, so I did not copy them.

### ARMORIAL BEARINGS.

In the armorial drawings have been found the armorial bearings of England and France, from whom are descended those branches of the Cary and Jaquelin families who have intermarried with the present Ambler family of Virginia and whose arms Col. John Ambler and his descendants are entitled to bear, quartered with the Ambler arms, by the laws of heraldry.

The whole has been carefully and accurately marshaled and blazoned by a person intimately acquainted with the science of heraldry.

#### No. I.

##### THE ARMS OF THE AMBLER FAMILY IN ENGLAND.

Blazoned according to the terms used in heraldry.

Sable on a fess or between three pheons' heads argent, a lion passant regardant gules.

(Sa. on a fess between three pheons as a lion passant regardant gu.)

Translated thus:

A black shield with a stripe of a golden color across the centre, exactly on one third of the shield in width, containing a red lion, passive, and looking at something, with three silver arrow heads of equal size, two being placed above the golden stripe and one below it.

#### No. II.

##### THE ARMS OF THE JAQUELIN FAMILY IN FRANCE.

Sa. three horses' heads coupé ar.

Crest.—Horse's head coupé argent.

Black shield with three silver horses' heads cut evenly off, being exactly the same size and two placed side by side in top part of the shield and



looking the same way. The third is placed in the centre of the lower part of the shield, and looks in the same direction in which the other two are looking.

Crest—A silver horse's head, cut evenly off and looking to the left, with his mane flowing, his nostrils expanded, his mouth sufficiently open to show his tongue and teeth.

### No. III.

#### CARY FAMILY IN ENGLAND.

Argent on a bend sable, three roses of the field (or silver).

Translated:

A white or silver shield with a black belt drawn from the top left-hand corner to the bottom of the right-hand corner of the width of one-third of the base of the shield. The belt contains, at equal distances, three full-blown roses, white or silver.

### No. IV.

#### AMBLER FAMILY IN VIRGINIA.

Quarterly first and fourth. Sable on a fess ar, between three pheons argent, a lion passant regardant gules for Ambler.

Second quarterly: Sable three horses' heads coupé argent for Jaquelin.

Second: Argent on a bend sable three roses silver.

Third: Argent on a bend three roses silver.

Fourth: Sable three horses' heads coupé argent.

Third Quarterly:

First: Sable three horses' heads coupé argent.

Second: Argent on a bend sable, three roses silver.

Third: Argent on a bend sable three roses silver.

Fourth: Sable three horses' heads coupé argent.

Crest—Upon a wreath horses' heads coupé argent.

Motto—"Audaces fortuna jurat timidos que repellit." Borne under and around the shield.

Motto—"Comme je trouve." Borne upon a small scroll placed over crest.

### No. V.

#### WILLIAM FERDINAND CARY, LAST LORD HUNSDON, DIED IN 1768.

No. 1. Argent on a bend sable three roses of field or silver for Cary.

No. 2. Sa two bars inb. by ermine, for Speneer.

No. 3. France and England quarterly, a bordure goborie arg. and azure for Beaufort.

No. 4. Gules a fess between six cross crosslets or, for Beauehamp.

No. 5. Cheeky or and azure, a chevron ermine, for Warwiek.

No. 6. Gules a chevron between ten crosses pater argent, for Berkeley.

No. 7. Gules a lion passant guardant crowned for Gurard.

No. 8. Argent, a chevron gules between three bulls' heads coupé sable, Bullen or Boleyn.

- No. 9. Quarterly sable and argent for Hov.
- No. 10. Or a chief indented Azure, for Butler.
- No. 11. Argent a lion rampant sable crowned gules.
- No. 12. A fess between six cross crosslets.
- No. 13. Azure three sinister hands coupé argent, for Malmaius.
- No. 14. Ermine on a chief sable three crosses pater argent, for Wick-  
ingham.
- No. 15. Azure on a fess argent a chief crosses, for Hankford.
- No. 16. Argent two hands wavy sable.

Over all in an escutcheon of pretence or a bend azure between three leopards' faces gules—being the arms of his Lady, daughter and heir of Sir Edward Wadloe, of London, Knight, and relict of Sir Nicholas Wolstoneholme, of Forty Hill, in the parish of Erefield, in Middlesex, Baronet.

Crest—Upon a wreath, a swan rising, a argent beaked, and membered sable.

Supporters—On the right a ram argent, spotted gules and azure, armed ducally gorged with chain d'or. On the left a male griffon argent collared, chained.

Motto—Comme Je Trouve.

### WILSON CARY OF "CEELYS" AND HIS FAMILY

[Compiled by Wilson Miles Cary, of Baltimore, Md., with extracts from *Virginia Historical Magazine*, Vol. IX, No. 1, July, 1901, and a few notes from Goode's "Virginia Cousins."]

In 1868, I (Wilson Miles Cary) made a horseback trip to the Peninsula of Virginia and travelled over all that section of country, with the purpose, if possible, of reconstructing the genealogy of my family, which, as embodied in a fine old vellum record, had been destroyed, together with the family Bible, etc., etc., at the burning of our Fluvanna residence, Carysbrooke, November 26, 1826. In the clerk's office at Hampton, I found not only the original will of Col. Wilson Cary, of which I already had obtained a copy in 1866, but that of his brother Miles Cary, of "Ceelys," as he styles himself, and which I then transcribed.

The then clerk of the court offered to permit me to appropriate both of these wills, but I considered such a pillaging of the public archives as indefensible in me (though a direct descendant of the testator) as it was in the Yankees, whom we have so deservedly castigated ever since the war of their wholesale pilfering.

I rode to "Ceelys," on the banks of the James, three or four miles from Hampton, to visit the mansion so long the residence of my ancestors. The whole estate, containing some two thousand

acres in Colonel Cary's time, lay along the river and adjoined the present Newport News. It was then occupied by a settlement of negro squatters, a section of "Butler's Contrabands." There was searee a vestige of the old mansion remaining—the very foundations were obliterated—not a tree left standing, and the garden, which once ran in terraces to the river's edge, now a wilderness of weeds. I found the dispossessed proprietor, a young Mr. Smith, quartered in a most primitive shanty, on the edge of the estate, almost despairing of ever enforcing his rights and ejecting the darkies, but still awaiting with what patience he might the outrageous dilatory proceedings of the reconstruction period. Mr. Smith informed me that the negroes, after burning the fine old brick mansion to the ground, had entirely dismantled its walls, using them for the chimneys of their hovels. The original building was of large dimensions, two stories, with wings. Its age had been discovered by his father, who, on removing the portico to make some repairs, had found the figures 1706 on the lintel. The records of Elizabeth City inform us that the nucleus of the estate called "Ceelys" consisted of two tracts of two hundred and fifty acres each, at the mouth of Saltford Creek, on the banks of James River, which were acquired by Colonel William Wilson in 1691 and 1695 from one Thomas Ceely—who represented Warwick County in the House of Burgesses, from 1629 to 1639. Colonel Wilson was for many years the presiding justice and most prominent personage of Elizabeth City County, being long the Royal Naval Officer of the Lower James, and a very wealthy planter. He it was who built "Ceelys" in 1706. He died in 1713, but his will was doubtless recorded in the General Court, whose archives were destroyed in the conflagration of 1865, so that a detailed disposition of his large estate can not now be had. His only son, Captain Willis, had died without issue in 1701. His daughter Mary (1675-1741) had first married William Roscon, with whom she lies buried under a handsome monument at Blunt Point, in Warwick. After his death, which occurred November 27, 1700, she did not long remain in weeds, but in April, 1702, commiserating the equally sad lot of a near neighbor, she bestowed her hand upon Colonel Miles Cary, of "Riehneck," who had been bereaved at the same time, his wife, Mary Milner, having left him, "issueless," as her tombstone states, October 27, 1700. And just here,

there is a romantic episode, which I intend writing up, growing out of the frantic proceedings of one Captain James Moody, of Her Majesty's man-of-war, Southampton, who madly, though a married man, contested the hand of the fair widow, with Colonel Cary. The latter, having the inside track, treated the would-be bigamist with contempt, and so overwhelmed him with ridicule, that in a bloody rage he sailed around to Yorktown, where the Governor and Court were in session, and despite the Governor's threat of irons, undertook to post Colonel Cary. The Governor and Council took down the proceedings and promptly complained of his outrageous conduct to the home government, and the reckless villain was forthwith removed to appease the indignation of the entire colony.

Col. Miles Cary died intestate, but from his tomb we learn the names of his children.

To the younger of his two sons, Miles, his grandfather Wilson's estate of "Ceelys" descended, while he, dying a bachelor in 1756, willed it to his only brother Colonel Wilson Cary, of "Richneck." The latter, however, must have inherited lands in Elizabeth City, from his grandfather, as in 1751 (see Palmer's State Papers, I, 247) he was lieutenant of the county. He undoubtedly became a resident of the county from the date of his appointment in 1726, to the lucrative post of Naval Officer of the Lower James, which he held for thirty-five years or more. His patrimonial estate of "Richneck," over four thousand acres, lay in the County of Warwick, some twenty miles from Hampton and about three from the Court House.

When I visited it in 1868 the mansion was a pile of ruins, though from the remains of the walls still standing I could estimate its former extent. It was a long-fronted, two-storied brick building, with the usual adjacent outhouses, and must have been very commodious. The tradition that I gathered from some of the oldest inhabitants at the Court House was that the House of Burgesses had sat there several times (sessions), after the burning of the State edifices at Jamestown, and before the completion of the capitol at Williamsburg. These gentlemen informed me that the mansion had been wantonly destroyed after the cessation of hostilities in 1865 by the troops of General French on returning from that section of Virginia.

Col. Wilson Cary was born about 1703; the exact date cannot now be ascertained, owing to the destruction of the family archives at Carysbrooke. This is shown by an autograph inscription to that effect on the title pages of a number of the books of his once extensive library, about two hundred and fifty volumes of which I still possess. I was in England in 1867, and on one occasion had the pleasure of dining in Trinity Hall with the dons, and the librarian, Mr. W. Aldis Wright, kindly made me the following extract from the College admission books, viz.:

June 30, 1721, Admissus Wilson Cary; peus, an. nat. 18, filius de Miles Cary, de Virginia in India Occidentale, e Collegio Gulielme et mariae in eadem terrâ. His marriage occurred before January 20, 1728-9, as is shown by a York County deed made at that date between "Wilson Cary, of the County of Elizabeth City, Gent., and William Nelson, of York County, Merchant," Cary conveying lots twelve and eighteen in the town of York, "formerly sold and conveyed by the trustees of the town land unto Miles Cary, of the County of Warwick, Gent., father of the said Wilson Cary, etc., etc., . . . and free from all right of dower of Mary, late relict of the aforesaid Miles Cary, Gent., deceased, and of Sarah, now the wife of the said Wilson Cary, if she should happen to survive."

Now this lady did happen to survive until 1783, when she died between the first and sixth day of September, as I learn from a letter of Edmund Randolph (who married her granddaughter) to Bryan Fairfax (her son-in-law). But her maiden name has eluded all my efforts to ascertain it. I am, however, very strongly inclined to the conclusion that she was a scion of the long extinct family of Pate, of Gloucester. Richard Pate had patented as early as 1650 one thousand one hundred and forty acres on Poropotank Creek, and was Burgess of Gloucester in 1653. Administration on his estate was granted to his nephew, John Pate, in 1657. This John Pate, Henning records as added to the commission of Gloucester, in 1660 (II, 15), and the only extant volume of the General Court proceedings shows that he was "admitted and sworne one of ye Counsell of State of this Colony, November 20, 1671." In this volume it is further stated that at a court held November 8, 1672, "Col. U. John Pate, Esquire, dyeing possest of a considerable estate in this country left a widow out of this country, and Mr. Thomas Pate, brother's son to the said Pate, deceased, appears and petitions for administration on his said Unkle's estate, which is accordingly granted him," where-



upon the said Pate furnished as his securities Major Richard Lee and Captain John Armistead. This was the Major Thomas Pate, of Petsworth Parish, Gloucester, at whose house Nathaniel Bacon, the rebel, died in October 1676, being buried in the bed of Poropotank to prevent Berkeley from hanging his corpse on the gibbet. The records of Gloucester having been destroyed in 1820, it is difficult to trace the descendants of this family, but Major Thomas Pate seems to have left at least two sons, John and Matthew. In 1715, one John Wills patents one hundred and thirty acres in Gloucester, bounded by the main creek of Poropotank, adjoining a tract devised to said Wills by "Mr. John Pate," in his last will.

This John Pate is possibly the father of Mrs. Wilson Cary. I have in my library several volumes bearing the autograph "John Pate, 1706," on the title page above that of Colonel Wilson Cary (possibly his son-in-law), and to increase the probabilities, I would add, that I have also a volume showing in like manner the signature of Colonel Thomas Milner, and beneath it that of his son-in-law, Colonel Miles Cary. Now Colonel Wilson Cary in his will devises to his son lands lying on both sides of Poropotank, in the counties of Gloucester and King and Queen. These Gloucester lands, it is true, may have been subsequent purchases, and thus my theory that Colonel Cary acquired them through marriage might be untenable, still there is nothing to show that Miles Cary may not have been induced to invest in these very lands by the fact of his elder brother already having acquired property in Gloucester by marriage. However this may be, there certainly had been intermarriages between the Cary, Pate and Wills families.

Mr. Miles Cary Wills was the general manager of the Carysbrook estate.

Col. Wilson Cary had issue by this unknown wife, Sarah, four daughters and one son. These will be given later.

Colonel Cary names as one of his executors my kinsman, Richard Cary, of Warwick, afterwards Judge of Admiralty, and of the General Court, who was born about 1730 and died November 13, 1789, and more than once had represented Warwick in the House of Burgesses. He had been bred to his profession in the school of the County Clerk's office, he himself, his father and his grandfather before him having succeeded one another almost as heredi-



tary clerks of Warwick ever since the latter end of the seventeenth century. He was a cousin of the testator, but many degrees removed, being the second son of Major Miles Cary, of "Peartree Hall," by Hannah Armistead, and the grandson of "Mr. Miles Cary, Jr.," as he is styled in the records, by Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Coeke. This latter Miles is mentioned by the Quaker Story, who visited Warwick in 1699 and 1706, as Secretary of the county, who, with his brother, Thomas, had become converts. They were undoubtedly the sons of Major Thomas Cary (1647-80), uncle of Colonel Wilson Cary, of "Ceelys."

Wilson Miles Cary, of Baltimore, sent these items, taken from his Cary Genealogy, to Mr. Stanard, thinking possibly that he might wish to make some comments upon the various parties mentioned in the will. His Cary material is very voluminous. He could give Mr. Stanard, if he desired it, some articles on the Virginia Fairfax family. I suppose—in fact, I know—there is no one so accurately posted on its genealogy as Mr. Cary.

Below are appended an abstract of the will of Miles Cary and a copy of the will of his brother, Wilson Cary, both of which are on record in Elizabeth City County:

Will of Miles Cary, of Ceelys, Elizabeth City County, body to be buried at Rich-Neck. Legacies to Mary Seldon, nephew Cary Seldon, brother Wilson Cary, nephew Samuel Seldon, nephew Miles Seldon, niece Sarah Fairfax, niece Mary Cary, niece Ann Nicholas, niece Elizabeth Cary, nephew Wilson Miles Cary, brother Wilson Cary. Among other things land "bought of my brother, William Roscow, deceased," gives money to buy land for James Roscow, son of said William, to nephew Wilson Roscow. Dated October 11, 1752; no date of probate.

## CHAPTER IV

## THE CARY FAMILY IN ENGLAND.

Gualter de Boulyn was a vassal kinsman of the Lord of Brie in 1344. When Sir Thomas Boleyn in 1514 left France after the affiancement of the Princess Mary Tudor to Louis XII of France (the espousals having taken place on August 13, 1514, and the nuptials October 19, 1514), he placed his daughter Anne (born 1499 or 1501), who had been an assistant at the nuptials in a convent in the village of Brie under the special care of his "friend and kinsman" Du Moulin, Lord of Brie and Fontenaye.

The family of Boleyn, Bullen, Boulyn as it was variously spelled, is of French origin and first settled in Norfolk, England.

Thomas Boleyn, d. 1411, progenitor of Anne and Mary, was a younger brother of the estateman. He married Anna, daughter of Sir John Braxton, and bound his eldest son, Godfrey Boleyn, as an apprentice to a Mereer. He was "Master of the Mereess Company," in 1424, Sheriff of London during the wars of the Roses, Lord Mayor of London in 1457 and died in 1471. He married Anne, daughter of the Lord of Hoo and Hastings.

Sir William Boleyn, eldest son, was made Knight of the Bath by Richard III. He married Margaret, daughter of Sir Thomas Butler, last Earl of Ormond, which title was revived in the person of his son. Sir Thomas Boleyn, who married the Lady Elizabeth Howard, daughter of the renowned Earl of Surrey, afterwards Duke of Norfolk, by his first wife, Margaret Tylney. The brother of Lady Elizabeth Howard, Lord Thomas Howard, married the Lady Anne Plantagenet, sister to Henry VII's queen.

Anne Boleyn, mother of Queen Elizabeth, was the eldest daughter of Sir Thomas Boleyn and Elizabeth Howard. She was born about 1501 or previously.

Mary Boleyn, sister of Anne, married Sir William Cary, in February 1521.

Lady Elizabeth Howard Boleyn d. 1512, and Henry VIII, on June 8, 1525, advanced the father of Anne and Mary, Sir William

Boleyn, to the dignity of Baron Rochefort. He made him treasurer of the Royal Household. He also made William Cary, husband of Mary, a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber. Sir William Cary d. 1526.

George Boleyn, b. about 1500, brother of Anne and Mary and son of Sir Thomas, was created Viscount Rochefort and Baron Hunsdon. He was Governor of the Cinque Ports and Dover, and was several times a special ambassador to France. He was executed for high treason by King Henry VIII.

Sir William Cary and Mary Boleyn had two sons and a daughter:

- I. Henry Cary, Baron Hunsford under Queen Elizabeth.
- II. Catherine Cary. Married Charles Howard, Lord High Admiral of England, Earl of Nottingham.
- III. Robert Cary, Knight, took to James of Scotland the announcement of the execution of Queen Mary, of Scotland, in a letter from Queen Elizabeth.

The father of Sir William Cary (who married Mary Boleyn), was Sir William Cary, Knight of Cockington. Married, first, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir William Paulet, and had a son.

- I. Sir Robert Cary, of Cockington, ancestor of the Carys of Torr Abbey, in Devonshire.

Sir William Cary married, second, Alice, daughter of Sir Baldwin Fulford, Knight of Fulford, and had a son, Thomas Cary, who married Margaret, daughter of Sir Robert Spencer by Eleanor, his wife, who was the daughter of Edmund Beaufort, Duke of Somerset. This Thomas Cary and Margaret Spencer had two sons:

- I. Sir John Cary.
- II. Sir William Cary, who married Mary Boleyn, sister of Queen Anne Boleyn, and who were ancestors of Cary, Lord Hunsdon and Earls of Devon and Earls of Monmouth.

The eldest brother, Sir John Cary, married Joyce, sister of Sir Anthony Denny, Knight, and left issue:

- I. Sir Edward Cary.
- II. Catherine Cary. Married James II, Earl of Horne.
- III. Victoria Cary. Married, first, Sir William Uvedale, second, Bartholomew Price, of Linlithgow.
- IV. Anne Cary.

- V. Elizabeth Cary.
- VI. Lucy Villars Cary.
- VII. Mary Cary.

These four young ladies became Benedictine nuns of Chambray.

The eldest son, Sir Edward Cary, Knight of Beckhamstead, Master of the Jewel Office to Elizabeth and James I. Married Catherine, daughter of Sir Henry Knevit and widow of Henry, Lord Paget, by whom he had a son:

- I. Sir Henry Cary, Knight of Beckhamstead, who was elevated to the peerage, Nov. 10, 1620, as Viscount Falkland. He was Lord Lieutenant of Ireland in 1622 and continued in office until 1629. He married Elizabeth, only daughter of Sir Lawrence Tanfield, Chief Baron of the Exchequer, and had issue:
  - I. Lucius Cary, killed at Newberry, Sept. 12, 1643.
  - II. Lawrence Cary, killed under Sir Charles Corté in 1642.
  - III. Edward Cary, died young.
  - IV. A son who became a priest, known as Father Placid.
  - V. Patrick Cary, b. in Ireland during his father's Vicereignty. He married Susan, daughter of Sir Francis Uvedale, and left a son, Edward Cary, who married Anne, daughter of Charles, Lord Lucas of Sheffield, and by her (who married, second, Lord Archibald Hamilton) left at his decease, in 1792, a daughter, Frances. Married John Villiers, Viscount Grandison; and a son, Lucius Henry Cary, who succeeded as sixth Viscount Falkland.

The first Sir Henry Cary, Viscount Falkland, died in 1633, and was succeeded by his son Lucius Cary, second Viscount Falkland, who was the famous cavalier of history. He was born 1610 at Burford, and was taken into Ireland by his father in 1622. He fell at Newberry, September 20, 1643.

The Carys of Cockington and Torr Abbey suffered severely by the execution of Charles, for they were consistent royalists and therefore suffered the confiscation of their property.

Sir Henry, son of Sir George Cary, in 1654 fled with his family to Virginia. He returned to England after the restoration, but Prince, in "The Worthies of Devon," says that he died in poverty and his children were scattered. Those of his children

whose births were inscribed in the records of Cockington are: Grace, b. 1640; Edward, b. 1642; Henry, b. 1643; Hastings, b. 1652.

John Cary, of Cockington and Torr Abbey, an officer in the Austrian Army, living in Vienna, June 18, 1845, is son of John Cary, of Cockington and Torr Abbey, who was directly descended from Sir Henry Cary, son of Sir George Cary, of Cockington, Sheriff of Devon in 1633 (8th Charles I). This is the Henry Cary who emigrated to Virginia after the death of King Charles and the consequent loss of his property. Mr. Cary, of Vienna, says the descendants of this Henry Cary are scattered over the whole world and are very numerous.

The heirs-at-law occupy at the present time the estates of Cockington and Torr Abbey.

#### CARY GENEALOGY.

The first of the name on record was Adam Carye, of Carye Castle in Devon, England, Esq., who lived in 1208 and married Amy, daughter of Sir William Trewit, Knight. The Devonshire *Herald's Visitations* of 1620 gives fourteen generations of his descendants. His grandson's great-great-grandson was Sir John Carye, Knight, Chief Baron of the Exchequer in the reign of King Henry IV, who was banished into Ireland for political offenses. His son Sir Robert Carye was a favorite of King Henry V. "In his time came out of Aragon a lusty gentleman of England, and challenged to do feites of arms with any English gentleman without exception. This Robert Carye hearing thereof, made suite forthwith to the Princee, that he might answer the challenge. . . . At the time and day prefixed both parties met and did perform sundrie feites of arms, but in the end Robert did give the foils and overthrow the Aragon Knight, disarmed and spoiled him. This so well pleased the Princee that he received him into great favor, caused him to be restored to the most part of his father's lands and willed him, also, for a perpetual memorie of his victorie, that he should henceforth give the same arms, as the Aragon Knight, which both he and all his successors to this day enjoyed which is—Argent, on bend sable, three roses argent—for before they did bear Gules

chevron entries, three swans argent." (Ref. "Visitation of Devon," 1620.)

The arms of the Carys of Bristol and Virginia are identical with those of Sir Robert Cary, of Devon, just referred to. There is a tradition in Virginia that Sir Henry Cary, Knight, a Royalist leader, who went into exile after the defeat of Charles I, came to Virginia and some of the descendants of Miles have claimed descent from him.

Descended from Adam Carye, about the tenth generation, was:

William Cary, Lord Mayor of Bristol, was born about 1490. He was made Sheriff of Bristol in 1532 and Mayor in 1546, and was buried in St. Nicholas Parish, Bristol, March 28, 1572. His will was proved June 10, 1572. He married twice and by his first wife had issue: Richard Cary, of Bristol, and William Cary, of London. He also had a daughter, Agnes, married in 1543 to Humphrey Cooper and afterwards to Thomas Dickinson, and Anne married to William Lacy. By his second wife, William Cary had Richard Cary (the younger), who died s. p. in 1569.

Richard Cary (the elder), son of William, was a merchant of Bristol, buried at St. Nicholas, Bristol, June 17, 1570. Married twice, and had issue by his first wife, Anne, seven daughters and two sons. The sons were Richard, b. 1542, and William, b. in 1550. By his second marriage to Joan, sister of Robert Haltes Chamberlain, of Bristol, he had five daughters and one son, Christopher Cary, who was Sheriff of Bristol in 1612. He had a son Richard, b. in 1591 and d. June 4, 1591. There is nothing of record concerning Richard, the eldest son. Richard Cary, Senior, made his will in 1570, which was proved at London the same year.

William Cary, merchant of Bristol, Mayor of Bristol, baptized at St. Nicholas Church, October 4, 1550; Sheriff of Bristol, 1599; Mayor, 1611; buried at St. Nicholas, March 1, 1632; married three times. By his first wife, Elizabeth, he had three children:

I. William Cary, b. 1576; d. 1638, leaving two sons, John, b. 1617, and William, b. 1629.

II. Richard Cary.

III. John Cary.

By his second wife, Alice Goodwin, he had four sons and two daughters:



- I. Walter Cary, b. 1588; d. 1634, leaving issue.
- II. Robert Cary, b. 1589, left two daughters, b. 1619 and 1620.
- III. Thomas Cary, b. 1596. Married Joan Wilnér; left a son, Walter, b. 1646.
- IV. James Cary. Married Eliner Hacokins and moved to Charleston, Massachusetts, 1639; left a son, Jonathan, father of Samuel, b. 1683; d. 1740.

By his third wife, Mary, daughter of Gregory Lewellyn, of Somerset (his second wife died 1623), he had an only son, Henry, b. 1625. William Cary died 1632 and was eighty-two years of age on March first of this year.

John Cary, of Bristol, third son of William Cary, was baptized at St. Nicholas, April 10, 1583. Married Alice, daughter of Henry Hobson, Alderman, and Mayor of Bristol, and his wife, Alice, daughter of William Davis. By her he had four sons and three daughters, namely: Henry, Matthew, Richard and Myles, the latter born in 1620. The daughters were: Alice Cary; married, first, Thomas Hagman; second, William Payne. Honore Cary and Mary Cary.

John Cary, his wife and children were all living at the death of Henry Hobson, in 1625, and were residents of the City of Bristol. Myles Cary emigrated to Virginia.

Richard Cary, of Bristol, second son of William Cary, was baptized at St. Nicholas, August 1, 1579. Married (in 1606) Mary, daughter of Richard Shershaw, of Abergarennny, Monmouthshire; d. 1662. He had eight sons and ten daughters and was buried at St. Nicholas Church 1644. He was succeeded by his only surviving son, Shershaw Cary.

Shershaw Cary, merchant of Bristol, baptized in St. Nicholas, April 16, 1615. Married, first, Mary, daughter of John Scrope, of Castle Cowbe, Wiltshire, by whom he had three children, all sons. He died 1651. He married, second, Mary, daughter of Hugh Yeo, of Bristol, by whom he had one son, William, who died young. His wife died January 1681, at Lisbon, Portugal.

It is well here to correct some statements made regarding the Cary family in "American Family Antiquities," by Wellesly, presenting some facts which can be substantiated by the records of Warwick Co., Va.

In September 1851, Mr. Eggleston found on a farm called "Bensalls," near Warwick Inn, then occupied by Mr. Lucas, a dilapidated tombstone in five fragments. Putting the pieces together, it was found to bear a coat-of-arms and the following inscription:

Here lyeth ye body of Miles Cary, Esq.,  
Only son of John Cary and Alice his wife,  
Daughter of Henry Hobson of ye city of  
Bristol. Alderman, he was born in ye city  
and departed this life ye 10th day of June, 1667,  
about the forty-seventh year of his age, leaving  
four sons and three daughters (viz:) Thomas,  
Ann, Henry, Bridget, Elizabeth,  
Miles and William.

The will of "Myles Cary" (recorded in Book A, p. 448, June 21st, 1667) corroborates the statement of the epitaph. The coat-of-arms of the original colonist is represented on articles handed down from early days, with this motto: "Sine Deo Careo."

#### FIRST AMERICAN GENERATION IN VIRGINIA.

I. Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>, Esq.,\* b. 1620, d. 1667, came to Virginia 1640 or "1646," and settled in Warwick Co., where he married Anne, daughter of Thomas Taylor, one of the earliest settlers. He lived on an estate known as "Magpie Swamps," obtained from his father-in-law, Capt. Taylor, which he devised to his son, Thomas Cary. He mentioned in his will two houses in England, presumably in Bristol, one in Baldwin Street the other in St. Nicholas Street, to be sold for the benefit of his daughters. He owned two thousand acres of land, well stocked; numerous slaves, a mill and a store. His children were born in 1645 to 1666:

---

\*NOTE.—Council and General Court Records, 1670. Col. Miles Cary, late of Warwick, by his will, among several bequests and legacies, directed a sale to be made of his two houses in the city of Bristol, Kingdom of England; one of them situated in Belame Street and the other house situated in St. Nicholas Street, and that the produce of money they should be sold for should be equally divided among his three daughters, to wit: Anne, Bridget, and Elizabeth Cary. Emmanuel Willis married Elizabeth Cary, and they by a deed of the 11th of April, 1670, conveyed to William Bassett, of the Courts of New Kent, all their interest in said houses. (General Court Will Book. N. p. 3.)

2. I. Thomas Cary<sup>2</sup>, b. after 1645. Married Anne Milner.
3. II. Anne Cary<sup>2</sup>.
4. III. Henry Cary<sup>2</sup>, b. 1650; d. 1720.
5. IV. Bridget Cary<sup>2</sup>.
6. V. Elizabeth Cary<sup>2</sup>. Married Emanuel Willis.
7. VI. Miles Cary<sup>2</sup>, b. 1656; d. 1708 or '09. Married Mary Wilson.
8. VII. William Cary<sup>2</sup>.

## SECOND GENERATION.

II. Thomas Cary<sup>2</sup> (Miles<sup>1</sup>), of "Magpie Swamps," who died 1708. His will is in Book I, p. 23, b. after 1646, being under age at the time of his father's death. He married Anne, daughter of Francis Milner, by whom he had issue:

9. I. Thomas Cary<sup>3</sup>.
10. II. James Cary<sup>3</sup>.
11. III. Miles Cary<sup>3</sup>.
12. IV. Elizabeth Cary<sup>3</sup>.

II. Henry Cary<sup>2</sup> (Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), of Warwick Co., b. 1650; d. 1720. His will is in Book I, p. 199. He inherited "The Forest." He was appointed to superintend the building of William and Mary College and the capitol at Williamsburg. Issue:

13. I. Henry Cary<sup>3</sup>.
14. II. Miles Cary<sup>3</sup>.
15. III. Anne Cary<sup>3</sup>. Married Stuckey.
16. IV. Elizabeth Cary<sup>3</sup>. Married Scarbrooke.
17. V. Judith Cary<sup>3</sup>. Married Mr. Barbour; d. before 1720, leaving two sons:

I. Thomas Barbour.

II. William Barbour.

II. Col. Miles Cary<sup>2</sup> (Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), of Warwick, b. 1656; d. February 17, 1708 or '09. His will is in Book E, pp. 348-369. He was by his father's will to be educated in England, under Mr. Hueles' direction. He was Surveyor General of Virginia, 1617, also Clerk of Assembly. He married Mary, daughter of William Wilson, b. 1675; d. 1741, by whom he had issue:

18. I. Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup>, b. 1703; d. 1772. Married (1729) Sarah ———.

19. II. Miles Cary<sup>3</sup>, b. 1708; d. 1756.

20. III. Mary Cary<sup>3</sup>. Married Joseph Seldon.

21. IV. Anne Cary<sup>3</sup>. Married Whiting, of Gloucester Co.

II. Captain William Cary<sup>2</sup> (Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), of the Parish of Mulberry Island, Warwick Co., b. 1657; d. 1713. His will is written in 1711, Book E, p. 570. He was to be educated in Virginia, under Mr. Wm. Beaty. He inherited a plantation up Warwick River, bought by his father from Capt. Thomas Flint, probably the Skiff Creek plantation, on which he lived. He was a member of the House of Burgesses, 1710, and married Martha Scarbrooke, daughter of Major John Scarbrooke and Mary Martain. He was Justice of York, 1666, and member of Council in 1669 (Brock).  
Issue:

22. I. Harwood Cary<sup>3</sup>, d. 1720, leaving son, William Cary, who (1764) was authorized to sell Skiff Creek and other lands and slaves. (Virginia Statutes VIII, p. 34.)

23. II. Miles Cary<sup>3</sup>.

24. III. William Cary<sup>3</sup>.

25. IV. Martha Cary<sup>3</sup>. Married Edward Jaquelin. (Descendants, Volume I and Volume III.)

### THIRD GENERATION.

III. Thomas Cary<sup>3</sup> (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), the "Elder," of Warwick Co., b. 1670 or '90; d. 1764 (will in Book O, p. 488), leaving issue:

26. I. Thomas Cary<sup>4</sup>. (Book E, 1774.) Issue:

I. William Cary<sup>5</sup>, d. 1808, leaving son, William.

II. Miles Cary<sup>5</sup>.

III. A daughter. Married Edward Custis.

27. II. A daughter<sup>4</sup>. Married R. Whitaker.

28. III. A daughter<sup>4</sup>. Married G. Whitaker. These two left numerous descendants—married Bell, Branch, Blair, Gratz, Langhorn. (See Standard III, p. 9.)

III. Henry Cary<sup>3</sup> (Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. 1670 or 1700; d. 1749.  
Issue:

29. I. Archibald Cary<sup>4</sup>, b. 1720; d. 1786.

30. II. Judith Cary<sup>4</sup>. Married David Bell, of Lynchburg, Va. (See Marshall Family, p. 297.) Had issue:
- I. Harry Bell<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Harrison.
  - II. Judith Bell<sup>5</sup>. Married Col. Gist of Virginia, a Revolutionary officer.
  - III. Sarah Bell<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, John Langhorne; second, Cary Harrison.
  - IV. Eliza Bell<sup>5</sup>. Married Bates.
31. III. Mrs. Spear<sup>4</sup>, lived in Edinburgh, Scotland.
- III. Miles Cary<sup>3</sup> (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of Warwick Co., d. 1724. (Book I, page 313.) Issue:
- 32. I. Anne Cary<sup>4</sup>.
  - 33. II. Elizabeth Cary<sup>4</sup>. Married Benj. Watkins, of Chesterfield Co., Va., and had numerous descendants—Benj. Watkins Leigh, Conway Robinson, Turner, Royal, Worsham, Leigh, Barksdale, Peachy, Crockett. (See Watkins Genealogy, pp. 46-50.)
  - 34. III. Bridget Cary<sup>4</sup>.
  - 35. IV. Dorothy Cary<sup>4</sup>. Married George Dudley of England.
  - 36. V. Martha Cary<sup>4</sup>.
  - 37. VI. Miles Cary<sup>4</sup>. Married Hannah Armistead.
  - 38. VII. Thomas Cary<sup>4</sup>.
  - 39. VIII. Nathaniel Cary<sup>4</sup>.

One of the daughters probably married John Collier of Brunswick Co., Va. (See Collier Excursus.)

III. Col. Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup> (Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of "Ceelys" and "Richneck," b. 1702; d. 1772. Married Sarah —, about 1729. She was b. 1710; d. 1783. He was educated at William and Mary College and Cambridge, England. He was County Lieutenant of Elizabeth City, Va. Issue:

40. I. Col. Wilson Miles Cary<sup>4</sup>, of "Ceelys" and Carysbrooke, b. 1733; d. 1817. Married (1775) Sarah, daughter of Hon. John B. Blair (1759), President of the King Council and nephew of Commissary Blair. Sarah, b. 1739; d. 1799. They had issue:

- I. Wilson Cary<sup>5</sup>, of "Richneck," b. 1760; d. 1793.

- II. Sally Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. 1762; d. 1779. Married (1778) Capt. Thomas Nelson (son of Secretary Nelson), an officer on Gen'l Washington's staff. (See Armistead Chapter XIX; Page Book, p. 169; Hayden's Genealogies, p. 446.)
- III. Mary Monro Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. 1764; d. 1836. Married (1787) William S. Peachy.
- IV. Miles Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. 1766. (See *Virginia Gazette*, April 21, 1774.)
- V. Elizabeth Blair Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. 1770. Married (1796) her first cousin, Fernando Fairfax. (Descendants in Fairfax Chapter.)
- 41. II. Sarah Cary<sup>4</sup>, b. 1730; d. 1811. She, in a letter of Dec. 12, 1802, to her nephew, Thomas, ninth Lord Fairfax, states her age as then seventy-two. She married (Dec. 12, 1748) George William Fairfax, heir apparent to the Barony of Fairfax, of Cameron, and eldest son of Colonel William Fairfax, President of the council. (Descendants in Fairfax Chapter.)
- 42. III. Mary Cary<sup>4</sup>, b. 1732; d. May 1781. Married (1754) Edward Ambler, of Jamestown, b. 1733; d. 1768, leaving three children. (Descendants in Volume I.)
- 43. IV. Anne Cary<sup>4</sup>, b. 1735; d. 1786. Married (1751) Colonel Robert Carter Nicholas, b. 1728; d. 1780. They had issue, to be found in Nicholas Family.
- 44. V. Elizabeth Cary<sup>4</sup>, b. 1737 or '38; d. 1778. Married (1759) Bryan, eighth Lord Fairfax, of Cameron, b. 1736; d. 1802. Issue given in Fairfax Family.
- III. Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> (Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), married Joseph Seldon, and had issue:
  - I. Colonel Samuel Seldon<sup>4</sup>, of Selvington, Stafford County, b. 1725, whose only son:
  - I. Colonel Cary Seldon<sup>5</sup>, d. s. p. in 1822.
  - II. Anne Cary Seldon<sup>5</sup>. Married J. T. Brooke. Of this same lineage is the wife of Doctor R. H. Latimer, No. 772, of the Goode Genealogy.



- II. Rev. Miles Seldon<sup>4</sup>, of Henrico County, Va., b. 1726; d. 1785. Married (about 1747) Rebecea Cary, sister of Judge Richard Cary, one of Colonel Cary's executors, and left issue, five sons and three daughters.

III. Anne Cary<sup>3</sup> (Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. about 1706. Married (about 1724) a Mr. Whiting, of Gloucester Co., Va. The name of her husband and his relationship to Colonel "Henry Whiting," mentioned in the will, have baffled my researches. She had died before the date of Colonel John Bolling's will in 1749, which mentions legacies to his daughters, Mary and Sarah, "left by their Aunt Whiting's will." Anne Cary Whiting d. about 1825.

III. Major Miles Cary<sup>3</sup> (William<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), the "Elder," of York Co., Va., d. 1766. (Book O, p. 549.) Married Anne Peyton, who died 1768. Issue:

45. I. Richard Cary<sup>4</sup>, Judge of the Court of Appeals, graduate of William and Mary College; d. 1785. (Book F, p. 680.) Issue:

I. Richard Cary<sup>5</sup>.

II. Miles Cary<sup>5</sup>.

III. A daughter<sup>5</sup>.

46. II. Miles Cary<sup>4</sup>.

47. III. Robert Cary<sup>4</sup>.

48. IV. John Cary<sup>4</sup>. Married Dorothea Dudley.

49. V. Anne Cary<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Tomkins.

III. William Cary<sup>3</sup> (William<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of Warwiek Co., Va.; d. April 3, 1742. Married Judith Jones, by whom he had issue:

50. I. Matthew Jaquelin Cary<sup>4</sup>, d. single.

51. II. Miles Cary<sup>4</sup>, d. single.

52. III. William Cary<sup>4</sup>, Mayor of Yorktown, 1789; d. 1805. Married, first, Mrs. Moody; second, Sarah Dudley. Issue:

I. Sally Cary<sup>5</sup>.

II. Miles Cary<sup>5</sup>.

III. A daughter<sup>5</sup>. Married Major Wm. Dudley.

53. IV. Patty Cary<sup>4</sup>. Married Wm. Goosley, merchant of Yorktown. Issue:

I. George Goosley<sup>5</sup>, student of William and Mary College 1800; lived in the West Indies.

II. William Goosley<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Harrison, daughter of Benjamin Harrison. (See Harrison Family, Chapter XV.)

54. V. Mary Cary<sup>4</sup>, d. single.

55. VI. Judith Cary<sup>4</sup>. Married William Eggleston.

56. VII. Betsy Cary<sup>4</sup>. Married John Eggleston. Issue:

I. Maria Cary Eggleston<sup>5</sup>.

57. VIII. Nancy Cary<sup>4</sup>.

III. Martha Cary<sup>3</sup> (William<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>). Married Edward Jaquelin, of Jamestown, Va.

John Cary<sup>4</sup> (Major Miles Cary<sup>3</sup> (married Anne Peyton), William<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), son of Major Miles Cary and Anne Peyton. Married his cousin Dorothea Dudley, daughter of Dorothea Cary<sup>4</sup> (Miles<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>) and George Dudley, only son of the great George Dudley, of England, and had one daughter. They had issue:

I. John Cary<sup>5</sup>.

II. Dudley Cary<sup>5</sup>. Married Lucy Tabb and also moved to Georgia. From him are descended, through his second daughter, Elizabeth (sometimes called Eliza), the Thomases of Georgia, and through his third daughter, Frances, the Moores, also of Georgia.

III. Elizabeth Cary<sup>5</sup>. Married Mr. Gregory and moved to Georgia.

Elizabeth Cary<sup>6</sup> (Dudley Cary<sup>5</sup>, John Cary<sup>4</sup>, Major Miles Cary<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>). Married Stephens Thomas. Issue: Stevens Thomas<sup>7</sup>. Married Isabella L. Hayes. Issue: Minnie Cornelia Thomas<sup>8</sup>. Married Van Epps. She was b. in Athens, Ga., but resides in Atlanta, Ga. (1905).

John Cary<sup>5</sup> (son of John Cary<sup>4</sup>, Senior), the oldest brother of Dudley Cary, above mentioned, married (October 13, 1785) Miss Eliza Williams. In 1798 he was clerk of the county of Matthews. In 1800 he moved to Oglethorpe Co., Ga., or its vicinity. John Cary and Eliza Williams have issue:

I. Martha L. Cary<sup>6</sup>. Married Thomas Gresgana Lamar, and had issue:

I. Thomas Lamar<sup>7</sup>.

II. Bolivar Lamar<sup>7</sup>.

III. Sarah Lamar<sup>7</sup>.

- IV. Martha Lamar<sup>7</sup>.
- V. Charles Lamar<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Eliza Cary Lamar<sup>7</sup>.
- VII. Robert G. Lamar<sup>7</sup>. Married Caroline Jones.
- II. John Leland Cary<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Armistead Dudley Cary<sup>6</sup>, moved to Alabama in 1800.
- IV. Orlando Cary<sup>6</sup>.
- V. William Henry Cary<sup>6</sup>.
- VI. Charles Cary<sup>6</sup>.
- VII. Mary Eliza Cary<sup>6</sup>.
- VIII. Glorianna Cary<sup>6</sup>, d. in infancy.

Thomas Lamar<sup>7</sup>, son of Martha L. Cary and Thomas Gresgana Lamar. Married, first, Miss Whatley of South Carolina, and had two sons:

- I. A. Whatley Lamar<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Thomas Lamar<sup>8</sup>.

Thomas Lamar<sup>7</sup>, married, second, Miss Dunbar, of Beech Island, S. C., and had four children:

- I. Dunbar Lamar<sup>8</sup>. Married and resides at Beech Island, S. C.
- II. Cary Lamar<sup>8</sup>. Married and resides at Beech Island, S. C.
- III. Cal Lamar<sup>8</sup>. Married and resides at Beech Island, S. C.
- IV. Celia Lamar<sup>8</sup>, d. unmarried.

A. Whatley Lamar<sup>8</sup>, mentioned above, married Bessie Webb of South Carolina and has several children. Resides at Nashville, Tenn.

Said Thomas Lamar<sup>7</sup>, Sr., was colonel in C. S. A.; killed at the battle of Secessionville.

Bolivar Lamar<sup>7</sup>, second son of Martha L. Cary and Thomas G. Lamar. Married and left one son, John<sup>8</sup>, who married a Miss Hammond and lives at Beech Island, South Carolina.

Martha Lamar<sup>7</sup>, fourth child of Martha Cary and Thomas G. Lamar. Married Mr. Peay of South Carolina and has descendants: Wardlaws, Peay and others.

Eliza Cary Lamar<sup>7</sup>, sixth daughter of Martha L. Cary and Thomas G. Lamar. Married Theodore Stark of Columbia, South Carolina, 1834. They had ten children:

- I. Mary Eliza Stark<sup>8</sup>, b. 1836.
- II. Martha Lamar Stark<sup>8</sup>, b. 1838.

III. Rebecca (Decca) Lamar Stark<sup>s</sup>, d. single.

IV. Thomas Lamar Stark<sup>s</sup>.

V. Theodore Stark<sup>s</sup>. The other children died in childhood.

Robert G. Lamar<sup>r</sup>. Married Caroline Jones. Issue:

I. Jones Lamar<sup>s</sup>. Married Miss Durham.

II. Martha Lamar<sup>s</sup>. Married Henry Edwards.

III. Charlie Lamar<sup>s</sup>, died in infancy.

IV. Carrie Lamar<sup>s</sup>. Married Berry McCuery.

V. Annie Lamar<sup>s</sup>. Married D. T. Richley.

VI. Ella Lamar<sup>s</sup>, single.

VII. Mary Lamar<sup>s</sup>. Married William Moore.

VIII. Robert Lamar<sup>s</sup>. Married Sallie Sanford.

IX. ——— Lamar<sup>s</sup>. Married Sadie McClenether.

X. Hannah Lamar<sup>s</sup>. Married Wilson Gibbes.

XI. William Lamar<sup>s</sup>. Married Maggie Johnson.

Thomas Lamar Stark<sup>s</sup>, fourth child of Eliza Cary Lamar and Theodore Stark, married Alice Davidson, of Quincy, Florida, and they have three children:

I. William Davidson Stark<sup>o</sup>.

II. Mary Eliza Stark<sup>o</sup>.

III. Thomas Taylor Stark<sup>o</sup>.

Mr. Thomas Stark<sup>r</sup> d. 1883. His children survive him. They live in Jacksonville, Florida. Mary E. Stark<sup>o</sup> married (1899) W. H. Leahy. Issue: Daniel Lamar Leahy.

Theodore Stark<sup>s</sup>, fifth son of E. C. Lamar and Theodore Stark, married Kate Sawyer. Issue:

I. Jerome Stark<sup>o</sup>, resides in Columbia, S. C.

Martha Lamar Stark<sup>s</sup>, second daughter of Eliza C. Lamar and Theodore Stark. Married Douglas B. de Saussure, of Camden, S. C., and had five children, four of whom died young. One son, William Ford, survived her and lives in New York City. Mrs. Saussure died January, 1893.

Mary Eliza Stark<sup>s</sup>, eldest child of Eliza Cary Lamar and Theodore Stark. Married (April 14, 1858) John C. West, of Camden, S. C. They moved first to Austin, then to Waco, Texas, where the family still reside. She died April 1903, survived by her husband and all of her children:

I. Theodore Stark West<sup>o</sup>.

II. Mary L. West<sup>o</sup>.

III. Decca Lamar West<sup>o</sup>.

Theodore Stark West<sup>9</sup>, son of Mary Eliza Stark and John C. West, married (November 1885) Maude Swartz Wilder (also a descendant of Col. Miles Cary, through the Smiths of Virginia). (See Volume III.) They have issue:

- I. Mary Maude West<sup>10</sup>.
- II. John C. West<sup>10</sup>.



COL. ARCHIBALD CARY

Died September, 1786, aged 66

Painted about 1750, by an unknown artist. It is said to have been painted by Charles Wilson Peale, of Philadelphia, but it is more probable that it was the work of Bridges. Copied in part in water color by C. H. Sherman, of New York City, 1882

- III. Charles Shannon West<sup>10</sup>.
- IV. Stark West<sup>10</sup>, Jr., d. in infancy.
- V. Tesie Thurston West<sup>10</sup>, d. in infancy.
- VI. Jaquelin Clark West<sup>10</sup>.

VII. Virginia Cary West<sup>10</sup>, b. June 5, 1905. They reside with their parents in Waco, Texas.

Mary L. West<sup>9</sup>, eldest daughter of Mary Stark and John C. West. Married J. B. Beatty, of Belfast Island, June 17, 1890. They live in Houston, Texas. They had one son, Robert, who died in infancy.

Decca Lamar Stark<sup>9</sup>, youngest daughter of Mary Stark and John C. West, lives with her father in Waco, Texas.

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

IV. Col. Archibald Cary<sup>4</sup> (Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of Ampt-hill, b. January 24, 1720; d. September 1786, aged sixty-six years. He was a sterling patriot of the Revolution, and was a member of the Virginia Convention of 1776. He was nicknamed "Old Iron," whether from his extreme patriotism and as a sterling fighter in the Revolution, or from the fact that he had an iron furnace at the "Falling Creek," on the same site of the one once established by Colonel Berkley who, with his men, were murdered by the Indians in 1622. Colonel Cary's mills were burnt by Tarleton's troops during the Revolution. He commanded a regi-ment during the Revolution, and was also president of the first State Senate. He married (May 31, 1744) Mary Randolph, b. at Curl's Neck, about 1727, daughter of Richard Randolph (son of William Randolph and Mary Isham) and Jane, daughter of John Bolling, of Bollingbrooke, Chesterfield Co., Va. Archibald Cary and his wife, Mary Randolph, had issue:

- I. Anne Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. Feb. 1745. Married (Nov. 18, 1761) Thomas Mann Randolph, of Tuckahoe, Goochland Co., Va., who was the father of Governor Thomas Mann Randolph, of Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., Va. (See Randolph, of Tuckahoe.)
- II. Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. July 1747; d. Aug. 1748, infant.
- III. Jane Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. Feb. 12, 1751. Married (1768) Thomas Isham Randolph, of Dungenness, Goochland Co., Va. (See Randolph.)
- IV. Sarah Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. Feb. 23, 1753. Married (1773) Mr. Bolling.
- V. Elizabeth Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. April 1755. Married (about 1775) Richard Kincaid.



- VI. Henry Cary<sup>5</sup>, only son, b. March 2, 1756; d. May 17, 1758.
- VII. Mary Cary<sup>5</sup> (No. 2), called Polly, first wife of Major Carter Page, of "The Fork," Cumberland Co., Va.
- IV. Col. Wilson Miles Cary<sup>4</sup> (Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of "Ccelys" and Carysbrooke, b. 1733; d. 1817. Married (1775) Sarah, daughter of Hon. John B. Blair, 1759, President of the King's Council and nephew of Commissary Blair. Sarah was b. 1739; d. 1799. Issue:
  - I. Wilson Cary<sup>5</sup>, of Richmond and Riekneck, b. 1760; d. 1793. Married Jane B., daughter of Dabney Carr and a niece of Thomas Jefferson.
  - II. Sally Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. 1762; d. 1779. Married (1778) Captain Thomas Nelson, of the American Army, b. 1750 at Yorktown, York Co., Va., and removed to "Bears Spring," Hanover Co., Va. There was only one child as far as known, viz.:
    - I. Wilson Cary Nelson<sup>6</sup>, b. 1776, at "Bears Spring," Hanover County, Va. Married, but the name of his wife is unknown. Issue:
      - I. Catherine Nelson<sup>7</sup>. Married (1831) Charles Page, of Hanover town, Hanover Co., Va.
      - II. Lucy Nelson<sup>7</sup>. Married (1833) John F. Page,\* of same place.
- III. Miles Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. 1766. See *Virginia Gazette*, April 21, 1774.)
- IV. Judith Cary<sup>4</sup> (William<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>). (See Eggleston Excursus No. 50.)

## FIFTH GENERATION.

- V. Mary Cary<sup>5</sup> (Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. December 4, 1766; d. January 26, 1797. She was buried at

---

\*NOTE.—John Page and Lucy Page had issue: Mary Mann Page, b. about 1834. Married (about 1854) Wilnam B., son of Hon. Willoughby Newton, of Westmoreland County, Va., and brother of Rev. John B. Newton, of Norfolk City, Va., who married Roberta P. Williamson, of Orange County, Va. William B. Newton died leaving a widow and three children, viz: (1) Lucy P. Newton, (2) Willoughby Newton, (3) Kate Newton. They resided at Summer Hill, Old Church P. O., Hanover County, Va. (Page Family, Roswell, p. 79.)

Presquise on James River Virginia. She married Major Carter Page at Tuckahoe, Goochland Co., Va., April 12, 1783; he died 1825; son of Hon. John Page, of Gloucester Co., Va., and Jane Byrd, his wife.

According to the Virginia "Historical Register" his name appears in the list of students who left the College of William and Mary, in 1766, to join the American army. Carter Page rose to the rank of Major, and served as aid-de-camp to General Lafayette during the campaign in Virginia against Cornwallis.

Mary Cary and Carter Page had issue:

- I. John Cary Page, eldest, b. at "The Fork," Cumberland Co., Va., May 9, 1784; removed to Union Hill, same county. Married (Oct. 12, 1808) Mary Anna Trent.
- II. Henry Page, b. at "The Fork," Sept. 29, 1785; removed to Kentucky. Married (Dec. 23, 1813) Jane B. Deane.
- III. Carter Page (No. 1), b. Dec. 9, 1786; d. Nov. 7, 1789.
- IV. Lavinia Randolph Page, b. June 15, 1788; d. Nov. 8, 1789.
- V. Carter Page (No. 2), b. Aug. 10, 1790; d. June 30, 1791.
- VI. Dr. Mann Page, b. at "The Fork," Oct. 26, 1791; removed to Turkey Hill, Albemarle Co., Va. Married (Dec. 12, 1815) Jane F. Walker.
- VII. William Page, b. Aug. 21, 1793; d. Dec. 26, 1793.
- VIII. Mary Isham Page, b. Dec. 30, 1794; was burned to death in the Richmond Theatre, Va., Dec. 26, 1811. Her name is inscribed on the monument erected there (site of the present Monumental Church) to their memory.
- V. Wilson Cary<sup>5</sup> (Wilson<sup>4</sup>, Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of Richneck, b. 1760; d. 1793. Educated at William and Mary College, 1776, member of the House of Delegates 1786. Married Jane B., a daughter of Dabney Carr, a niece of President Jefferson. Issue:
  - I. Wilson Jefferson Cary, b. at Carysbrooke, Fluvanna Co., Va.
  - II. Miles Cary, b. 1789; d. 1827.
  - III. Sarah Cary. Married William Newson.

#### SIXTH GENERATION.

- VI. John Cary Page<sup>6</sup> (Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of Union Hill, Cumberland Co., Va., eldest son and child

of Major Carter Page, of Willis Fork, same county, Va., and Mary Cary, his first wife, was b. at the last named place May 9, 1784; d. at Union Hill, May 14, 1853. He was a very handsome man of powerful frame and fine proportions, standing six feet four inches in height. In his face and expression he very much resembled his grandfather, Col. Archibald Cary. Even in his later years there was a strong family resemblance in his face to Col. Cary's portrait. Though he commenced life at fourteen years of age as a poor office boy, in a store in Richmond, Va., he accumulated a large fortune before his death. All his children were born at Locust Grove, Cumberland Co., Va. It is about one mile from "The Fork." To his two daughters, Mrs. Fisher and Mrs. Hobson, he gave the Locust Grove property, and it was bought from them about 1840 by Thomas Page, their half uncle. John C. Page married (October 12, 1808) Mary Anna, daughter of Dr. Alexander Trent, of Barley Hill, Cumberland Co., Va. She died January 10, 1877, aged eighty-six. They had issue:

- I. Lavinia Anderson Page<sup>r</sup>, b. at Locust Grove, Cumberland Co., Va., June 20, 1809. Married (1832) Dr. Edward Fisher, Superintendent of the Insane Asylum, at Staunton, Va. Their six children were given in Ambler Genealogy, Volume I.
- II. Mary Anna Page<sup>r</sup>, b. May 26, 1811. Married (1845) John Daniel, Esq., of Broomfield, Cumberland Co., Va. He died 1850, leaving two children:
  - I. Lucy Daniel<sup>s</sup>. Married (1869) Francis Kinckel, of Lynchburg, Va. They have several children.
  - II. Anna Daniel<sup>s</sup>. Married (1870) Lewis Randolph, of Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., Va.
- III. Virginia Randolph Page<sup>r</sup>, b. Aug. 17, 1813. Married (1833) Thomas Hobson, of Powhatan Co., Va., who died 1850.
- IV. Eliza Trent Page<sup>r</sup>, b. Oct. 19, 1815; d. single Sept. 16, 1838.
- V. Ellen Cary Page<sup>r</sup>, b. June 19, 1817; d. single May 19, 1837.
- VI. Alexander Trent Page<sup>r</sup>, eldest son, of Cumberland Co., Va., b. Nov. 21, 1819; d. April 4, 1845.

- VII. Mary Willis Page<sup>7</sup>, b. Jan. 18, 1822. Married (1843) Rev. William H. Kinckel, of the Episcopal Church, Lynchburg, Va.
- VIII. Archibald Cary Page<sup>7</sup>, b. April 22, 1824; d. 1871, at Spring Hill, Goochland Co., Va. He married, first (1846), Lucy Trent; second (1853), Lizzie Trent; third (1859), Eliza Harrison, Richmond, Va.
- IX. Carter Page<sup>7</sup>, b. March 25, 1826; d. May 31, 1826.
- X. Harriet Randolph Page<sup>7</sup>, b. April 15, 1827. Married (1857) D. Coupland Randolph, of Richmond, Va.
- XI. John Cary Page<sup>7</sup>, Jr., b. Locust Grove, Cumberland Co., Va., Feb. 22, 1830; removed to Auburn, same county. He married, first (1858), Nellie Eppes.
- XII. Edward Trent Page<sup>7</sup>, b. May 20, 1833. Married (1854) Bettie Nicholas.
- VI. Henry Page<sup>6</sup> (Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of Todd Co., Kentucky, second son and child of Major Carter Page, of "The Fork," Cumberland Co., Va., and Mary Cary, his first wife, was b. at the last named place, September 29, 1785; d. Kentucky 1845. He was educated at William and Mary College, and in the catalogue of which institution his name appears in the alumni list for 1804. He lived first near Ca Ira, Cumberland Co., Va., where all his children were born. He removed to Kentucky about 1841. Married (December 23, 1841) Jane B. Deane, and had issue:
- I. Mary Cary Page<sup>7</sup>, b. Oct. 27, 1814. Married (Dec. 23, 1840) Rev. George McPhail.
- II. Thomas Deane Page<sup>7</sup>, b. July 27, 1816; d. Jan. 31, 1864. Married (1846) Isabella Catlett.
- III. Carter Page<sup>7</sup>, b. May 4, 1818. Married, first (Dec. 14, 1843), Betty Byers; second (Jan. 6, 1853), Sarah Bell Miller.
- IV. Eliza Wallace Page<sup>7</sup>, b. July 2, 1820; d. June 30, 1872. Married (1851) Jonathan Clark Temple.
- V. Rev. James Jellis Page<sup>7</sup>, b. July 7, 1822. Married (Dec. 16, 1851) Virginia Newton.
- VI. Anne Catherine Page<sup>7</sup>, b. Jan. 13, 1825; d. 1878. Married (1850) Dr. Charles A. Williams.
- VII. Martha Bell Page<sup>7</sup>, b. at Ca Ira, Cumberland Co., Va., Feb. 17, 1827; unmarried.

VI. Dr. Mann Page<sup>o</sup> (Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of Turkey Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., sixth child of Major Carter Page, of "The Fork," Cumberland Co., Va., and Mary Cary, his first wife, was b. at the last named place, October 26, 1791; d. at the first named place, May 15, 1850.

He was educated at Hampden-Sidney College, Va., and afterwards graduated in Medicine at Philadelphia, 1813. (Medical Diploma, Page Family, p. 108-9.) Dr. Mann Page commenced the practice of medicine in Richmond, Va., but after his marriage he retired to his wife's estate, called "Turkey Hill," Albemarle Co., Va. The estate, consisting of three thousand seven hundred acres of land, was a part of the Castle Hill estate, owned by Hon. Francis Walker, but which originally belonged to Meriwether. On Friday, November 5, 1824, a dinner was given to Gen'l Lafayette in the rotunda of the University of Virginia, by ex-President Thomas Jefferson. Dr. Mann Page was one of those present. He married (December 12, 1815, at Richmond, Va.) Jane Frances, eldest child of Hon. Francis Walker, of Castle Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., and Jane Byrd Nelson, of Yorktown, Va., his wife. They had issue:

- I. Maria Page<sup>r</sup>, b. in Richmond, Va., Dec. 1816; d. unmarried at "Turkey Hill," June 15, 1837.
- II. Ella Page<sup>r</sup>, b. Castle Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., Sept. 18, 1818; d. unmarried at "Turkey Hill," Nov. 14, 1882.
- III. Francis Walker Page<sup>r</sup>, b. Nov. 17, 1820; d. July 12, 1846. Married (Sept. 4, 1844) Anna E. Cheesman.
- IV. Carter Henry Page<sup>r</sup>, b. Nov. 21, 1822. Married (1857) Leila Graham.
- V. John Cary Page<sup>r</sup>, b. 1824; d. 1826.
- VI. Frederick Winslow Page<sup>r</sup>, b. Nov. 20, 1826. Married (Dec. 24, 1850) Anne Kinlock Meriwether.
- VII. Jane Walker Page<sup>r</sup>, b. Oct. 18, 1828; d. unmarried Jan. 29, 1845.
- VIII. Mann Page<sup>r</sup>, Jr., b. May 1, 1831; d. Oct. 1864. Married (May 1854) Mary Anna Hobson.
- IX. Charlotte Nelson Page<sup>r</sup>, b. "Turkey Hill," Albemarle Co., Va., March 25, 1833; d. at Kinlock, same county, 1849, single. She is buried at "Turkey Hill."
- X. William Wilmer Page<sup>r</sup>, b. 1835; d. typhoid fever, Nov. 6, 1857.

- XI. Thomas Walker Page<sup>r</sup>, b. April 1837. (Married (1861) Nannie Watson Morris.
- XII. Dr. Richard Channing Moore Page<sup>r</sup>, b. Jan. 2, 1841, at "Turkey Hill," Albemarle Co., Va.; removed to New York City in 1867. Married (April 30, 1874), in the



RICHARD CHANNING MOORE PAGE, M. D.  
New York City

Memorial Episcopal Church, at Westport, Connecticut, Mary Elizabeth Fitch, widow of the Hon. Richard Henry Winslow, of that place. (See "Page Family," p. 117, by Mary Elizabeth Fitch.)

Dr. Richard Channing Moore Page deserves a great deal of credit for publishing the genealogy of the Page family in Vir-



ginia and many others, from which many of my notes and records are taken, especially the following, which corroborates what is stated in Mr. Wilson Miles Cary's letter given in Chapter III, Volume I.

The following is from the "Page Family," pp. 109-112:

Dr. Mann Page was, as we have already stated, the grandson of Col. Archibald Cary, who was descended from the Carys of Cockington and Torr Abbey, England. In regard to a certain decree, said to have been made in the Court of Chancery, England, respecting the property of the Carys of Cockington, Dr. Mann Page wrote to Francis R. Rives, Esq., Secretary of the American Legation, in London, under the date of February 22, 1843. Edward Everett was at that time the American Minister to England. In reply Mr. Rives wrote from London, March 27, 1813:

Immediately after the receipt of your letter, I addressed a note to H. J. Perry, Esq., the principal Secretary to the Lord High Chancellor, asking for the desired information, which, he wrote me, it was not in his power to give, unless some clue is furnished whereby the name of the suit in court can be ascertained. A copy of his reply I herewith transmit you. I then addressed myself to George Stanley Cary, Esq., the present representative of the Carys of Follation House, who is ignorant of the Chancery decree in question. That gentleman forwarded a copy of my letter to the widow of his late cousin, the proprietor of Torr Abbey; and she turned the letter over to her cousin, Mr. Browne, who says they are not aware of any decree having been made in the Court of Chancery, respecting the property of the Carys of Cockington (who are the ancestors of the Carys of Torr Abbey and of the Carys of Follation House), nor have the family any recollection of any such matter. Entire copies of the letters of Messrs. Cary and Browne I likewise enclose you. These circumstances, it seems to me, furnish ample proof of the erroneous character of the information you have received respecting this affair. . . .

The following is a copy of the reply of George Stanley Cary, Esq., of Follation House to Mr. Francis R. Rives:

FOLLATION HOUSE, 22 March, 1843.

SIR:—I beg to acknowledge the receipt of your letter this morning. I beg to state that I am totally unacquainted with any circumstances relative to the decree in chancery that your correspondent in the United States alludes to. I have forwarded by this day's post a copy of your letter to the widow of my late cousin—the proprietor of Torr Abbey, where the family have resided for the last 170 years.

I have, Sir, the honor to be your most obedient servant,

GEORGE STANLEY CAREY.

TO FRANCIS R. RIVES, ESQ.

P. S.—Should any further information be sought for, relative to the Cary family, it will be most cheerfully furnished by Mrs. J. Cary, who resides at No. 16 Park Road, Regent's Park.

Mr. John Cary, of Cockington and Torr Abbey, residing in Vienna, Austria, heard through Mr. Everett of this letter from Dr. Mann Page to Francis R. Rives, Esq., in regard to the Cary property, and wrote as follows:

VIENNA, March 14, 1846.

DR. MANN PAGE,

Albemarle County, Va., U. S. America.

MY DEAR SIR:—On the 18th of June last, 1845, I availed myself of the pleasure of addressing you. Obtaining, unfortunately, no answer up to this date, I much fear that the said enclosure has, on account of special reasons, been mislaid. Allow me consequently to trouble you again with these lines, at the same time inclosing herewith a repetition of the letter in question, under date of 18th June last, 1845:

VIENNA, June 18, 1845.

MY DEAR SIR:—Informed at last, unfortunately but of late, of your address, through the medium of Mr. Everett, the American Minister at London, I venture to avail myself of the pleasure of enclosing you these lines on a most important subject regarding my family. I am apprised, my dear sir, that you are the gentleman who addressed Mr. Everett, during the spring of 1843, an enclosure imparting to him information that you had received from England, to the effect that, according to a recent decree of English Chancery, a considerable amount of property had accrued to the heirs of Sir Henry Cary, of Cockington, in Devonshire. My much lamented father, Mr. John Cary, of Cockington and Torr Abbey, in Devonshire, was directly descended from Sir Henry Cary, who was the son of Sir George Cary of Cockington, Sheriff of Devonshire in the 8th year of Charles I. After that monarch's fallen fortunes, Sir Henry Cary emigrated with his family to Virginia; which event is well known to me from records in English history, and more so from various important documents regarding my family, copies of which have been in my possession since my infancy. As a member of the family, being my father's youngest son, and as a father, as well as in behalf of my innumerable brothers and sisters, I shall feel myself, my dear sir, much and much indebted to your extreme kindness in favouring me in short, if possible, with a few lines, informing me from what source in England you gained this intelligence.

I have resided on the Continent for many years, and here in Germany for sixteen years. I was formerly in the Austrian service and at present retain the character of an Austrian officer. My brothers are dispersed in all parts of the world; which fate, my dear sir, I do not doubt you are

aware, befalls the younger sons in England. By chance, unfortunately but of late, I heard indirectly of the above stated important communication. The amount of property in question, and said to be in the Court of English Chancery, is possibly leasehold property now falling in; and if this be the case, the same, instead of reverting to the present representative of my family, namely, to my nephew, Robert Cary, eldest son of my sister-in-law, Mrs. Cary, of Torr Abbey in Devonshire, on his obtaining his majority of twenty-one years, the same must evidently, after having been sold, be equally divided among us brothers and sisters.

I repeat again and again, my dear sir, how much and much I shall feel myself indebted to your extreme kindness if you will impart to me the source in England from which you gained your information regarding the matter, and also whether the property in question is personal or leasehold now falling in.

I gained information of this important event in the spring of 1833. My sister, who is at present married in Hungary, was on a visit to us here in Vienna at that time. One day during the month of April, 1833, she received from my mother-in-law, Mrs. John Cary, a letter which by chance fell into my hands.

In this letter she stated that my sister-in-law, Mrs. Cary, of Torr Abbey, had received, some days since, a most strange letter from the American Minister in London, stating that a member of the Cary family in the United States had heard that by a late decree of English Chancery a large amount of property had accrued to the heirs of Henry Cary (son of Sir George Cary, of Cockington), and that the said property was leasehold property then falling in. Subsequently I addressed a letter on the subject to Mr. Edward Everett, American Minister in London, and he confirmed the statement communicated to my sister by my mother-in-law. Moreover, Mr. Everett addressed a letter on the subject to my sister-in-law, Mrs. Cary, of Torr Abbey, and he intimated to me her answer, stating that she was not aware of the existence of any such property, nor could she obtain any information respecting it, unless the date and the name of the decree in question were known.

I repeat again and again, my dear sir, that I shall feel myself truly much indebted to your extreme kindness in forwarding to me as soon as possible information regarding this important subject.

At the same time I should feel myself much obliged to you, if you could forward to me the addresses of certain members of my family, residing in the State of Virginia, who are descendants of Sir Henry Cary, of Cockington and Torr Abbey, in Devonshire.

Trusting on a speedy answer, I remain, my dear sir, your most sincere and thankful friend.

JOHN CARY,  
Of Cockington and Torr Abbey.

I do not remember the origin of the statement that there had been a decree in the English Court of Chancery regarding the

Cary property. No such decree has been heard of by those who were certainly in a position to have known it, had it really ever been made. There is strong reason to suspect that it was merely a quack advertisement in some newspaper by a so-called law firm which made a business of swindling credulous people about such matters. (Mann Page, M. D.)

VI. Wilson Jefferson Cary<sup>6</sup> (Wilson<sup>5</sup>, Wilson<sup>4</sup>, Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of Carysbrooke, Fluvanna Co., Va. He was the great nephew of United State President Thomas Jefferson. Married Virginia Randolph, b. at "Tuckahoe," Goochland Co., Va., January



MONTICELLO

31, 1786; d. —. They were married at Monticello, Albemarle Co., Va., August 28, 1805, and have issue:

- I. Col. Wilson Miles Cary<sup>7</sup>, b. at Carysbrook, Fluvanna Co., Va., 1806; d. 1877. Married (1832) Jane Margaret, b. —; d. —, daughter of Peter Carr Smith.
- II. Archibald Cary<sup>7</sup>, b. at Carysbrooke. Married Moninia, daughter of Thomas, ninth Lord Fairfax.
- III. Jane Blair Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married Rev. E. D. Smith, of New York City.
- IV. Ellen Randolph Cary<sup>7</sup>, d. unmarried.
- V. Mary Randolph Cary<sup>7</sup>, b. 1806; d. —. Married (1829) Dr. Orlando Fairfax, of Alexandria, b. 1806; d. 1882. Issue given in Fairfax Genealogy, Chapter VI.

- VI. Martha Jefferson Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married her first cousin, Gouverneur Morris, of Morrisania, New York.
- VI. Miles Cary<sup>6</sup> (Wilson<sup>6</sup>, Wilson<sup>4</sup>, Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), second child of Wilson Cary and Jane B. Carr, niece of President Jefferson, of "Oak Hill," Fluvanna Co., Va., b. 1789, d. 1827. Married (1810) Elizabeth Scarsbrook Wilson, daughter of Col. W. B. Curle, of "Pastures," Elizabeth City Co., Va., and d. in Alabama, November 1827. Had issue:
- I. Miles Cary<sup>7</sup>, b. 1814; d. 1843; father of Hunsdon Cary, of Memphis, Tenn.
  - II. Lucius Cary<sup>7</sup>, b. 1815; d. 1845. Married Lucy Henley.
  - III. Virginius Randolph Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married (1836) Lucy Skipwith, of Memphis, Tenn.
  - IV. Elizabeth Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married Alston.
  - V. Sally Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married Dr. Stephen Cooke (cousin John Esten Cooke).
  - VI. Mary Jane Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married ——— Small.
  - VII. William W. Cary<sup>7</sup>.
  - VIII. Octavius Cary.

## SEVENTH GENERATION.

- VII. Virginia Randolph Page<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. August 17, 1813. Married (1833) Thomas Hobson, of Powhatan Co., Va., who died in 1850. They had issue:
- I. Mary Anna Hobson<sup>8</sup>. Married (1854) Mann Page, Jr., b. at Turkey Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., May 1, 1831; removed to Mansfield, same county; d. Oct., 1864; was buried at Turkey Hill. Left issue:
    - I. Charlotte Nelson Page<sup>9</sup>.
    - II. Caroline Hobson<sup>8</sup>, called "Caddy." Unmarried.
    - III. Joseph Hobson<sup>8</sup>. Unmarried.
    - IV. Virginia Page Hobson<sup>8</sup>. Married (1863) Richard Archer, of Powhatan Co., Va.; had three children.
    - V. Thomas Hobson<sup>8</sup>, Jr.; d. single, 1864.
    - VI. Ellen Hobson. Married Nash.
    - VII. Alexander Hobson.
    - VIII. Cary Hobson.



VII. Alexander Trent Page<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald Cary<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), eldest son, of Cumberland Co., Va.; b. Nov. 2, 1819; d. April 4, 1846. Married (1840) Martha Henderson, of Northfield, same county, and had issue:

- I. Martha Henderson Page<sup>8</sup>. Married (1867) Mr. Stewart, of Alexandria, Va.; d. 1870, leaving issue of two sons.

VII. Maria Willis Page<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>); b. January 18, 1822; d. 1862. Married (1843) Rev. William H. Kinckel, of the Episcopal Church, Lynchburg, Va., and had issue:

- I. Francis Kinckel<sup>8</sup>, called Frank. Married (1869) Lucy Daniel and had several children.
- II. Anna Kinckel<sup>8</sup>. Married (1870) J. P. Williams, of Lynchburg, Va.
- III. William Kinckel<sup>8</sup>.
- IV. Maria Kinckel<sup>8</sup>.
- V. John P. Kinckel<sup>8</sup>.
- VI. J. Carrington Kinckel<sup>8</sup>.
- VII. Alexander Gilmer Kinckel<sup>8</sup>.
- VIII. Frederick Kinckel<sup>8</sup>.

VII. Archibald Cary Page<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>); second son, and eldest to have male issue; b. April 22, 1824; d. 1871, at Spring Hill, Goochland Co., Va. Married (1846) Lucy, daughter of Dr. John Trent, of Trenton, Cumberland Co., Va., and had issue:

- I. William H. Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1847.
- II. John C. Page<sup>8</sup>. Married, second (about 1853), Lizzie Trent, sister of Lucy, and had issue.
- III. Archibald Cary Page<sup>8</sup>. Married, third (1859), Eliza Harrison, of Richmond, Va. No issue.

VII. Harriet Randolph Page<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. April 15, 1827. Married (1857) D. Coupland Randolph, of Richmond, Va., son of Isham Randolph, of that city. They moved to Union Hill, 1865; issue:

- I. Mary A. Randolph<sup>8</sup>.
- II. D. C. Randolph<sup>8</sup>, Jr.
- III. B. Heath Randolph<sup>8</sup>.

VII. John Cary Page<sup>7</sup>, Jr. (John<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. at Locust Grove, Cumberland Co.,



Va., February 22, 183—; removed to Auburn, same county. Married, first (1858), Nellie, daughter of Dr. Willie J. Eppes, of Millbrook, Buckingham Co., Va., issue:

- I. Willie J. Page<sup>s</sup>, b. 1859.
- II. Mary A. Page<sup>s</sup>.
- III. Martha Burke Page<sup>s</sup>.

Mrs. Nellie Eppes Page d. 1878. John C. Page, Jr., removed to Clay Bank, Cumberland Co., Va. Married, second (1882), Julia Trent, widow of John Taylor Gray, Esq., of the firm of Adie & Gray, druggists, Richmond, Va.

VII. Edward Trent Page<sup>r</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), youngest, b. May 20, 1833; removed to Halfway Branch, Cumberland Co., Va. Married (1854) Bettie, daughter of John S. Nicholas, of Seven Island, same county. Issue:

- I. Nannie Nicholas Page<sup>s</sup>. Married in Lynchburg.
- II. Mary Byrd Page<sup>s</sup>.
- III. John Nicholas Page<sup>s</sup>.
- IV. Edward Trent Page<sup>s</sup>.
- V. Bessie Coupland Page<sup>s</sup>.

VII. Mary Cary Page<sup>r</sup> (Henry<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), called "Polly"; b. Ca Ira, Cumberland Co., Va., October 27, 1814. Married (December 23, 1840) Rev. George McPhail, of the Presbyterian Church, who d. 1870, while President of Davidson College, North Carolina. Issue:

- I. Jane McPhail<sup>s</sup>. Died single.
- II. Mary McPhail<sup>s</sup>. Married Rev. Mr. Davis, of the Presbyterian Church.
- III. Henry McPhail<sup>s</sup>. Married ———; resides Norfolk City, Va.
- IV. Lillian McPhail<sup>s</sup>. Married Rev. Mr. Irving, of the Presbyterian Church.

VII. Thomas Deane<sup>r</sup> (Henry<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), eldest son, b. Ca Ira, Cumberland Co., Va., July 27; removed to Henry Co., Missouri, where he died January 31, 1864. Married (1846) Isabella Catlett, of Todd Co., Kentucky, and had issue:

- I. Fannie Catlett Page<sup>s</sup>. Married (Oct. 28, 1874) William McCown, who d. 1875.

- II. Henry Page<sup>8</sup>, b. Dec. 27, 1849. Married (Jan. 9, 1878)  
Maude G. Crews.
- III. Jane Deane Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1851; d. July 8, 1855.
- IV. Thomas Deane Page<sup>8</sup>, Jr., b. Oct. 20, 1853.
- V. Calmere Catlett Page<sup>8</sup>, b. April 24, 1856.
- VI. Carter Page<sup>8</sup>, d. Aug. 30, 1876.
- VII. Isabella Page<sup>8</sup>, b. April 22, 1859.
- VIII. John Cary Page<sup>8</sup>, b. Feb. 12, 1861.
- VII. Carter Page<sup>7</sup> (Henry<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of Chillicothe, Missouri; b. Ca Ira, Cumberland Co., Va., May 4, 1818. Married, first (December 14, 1843), Betty Byers; d. leaving one child.
  - I. Henry Cary Page<sup>8</sup>, d. infant.
 Married, second (Jan. 6, 1853), Sarah Bell Miller, of Cynthiana, Ky., and had issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Deane Page<sup>8</sup>, b. Sept. 10, 1854.
  - II. Henry Page<sup>8</sup>, b. Oct. 1, 1856; dentist in Chillicothe, Missouri.
  - III. Isaac Newton Page<sup>8</sup>, b. February, 1858.
  - IV. Eglantine Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1860.
  - V. James Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1862.
  - VI. Virginia Lee Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1865; d. infant.
  - VII. Catherine Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1867; d. infant.
  - VII. Eliza Wallace Page<sup>7</sup> (Henry<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. Ca Ira, Cumberland Co., Va., July 2, 1820. Married (1851) Jonathan Clark Temple, of Logan Co., Ky. He lived only a few weeks, but she never married again; d. June 30, 1872, Chillicothe, Missouri.
  - VII. Rev. James Jellis Page<sup>7</sup> (Henry<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. Ca Ira, Cumberland Co., Va., July 7, 1822; was educated at the Theological Seminary, Fairfax Co., Va., and entered the Episcopal ministry. He married (December 16, 1851) Virginia, daughter of E. W. Newton, of Charleston, W. Va. Mr. Newton was a native of Vermont, and a graduate of Dartmouth College. The wife of Mr. Newton belonged to the Nicholas family, of whom I shall give a sketch later. Issue:
    - I. Wood Newton Page<sup>8</sup>, b. Nov. 13, 1852.
    - II. Henry Deane Page<sup>8</sup>, b. Nov. 2, 1854. He was educated for the Episcopal Church at the Theological Seminary, Fairfax Co., Va.

- III. Sarah Bell Page<sup>s</sup>, b. July 28, 1856.
- IV. Thomas Carter Page<sup>s</sup>, b. Dec. 8, 1858.
- V. Mary Wallace Page<sup>s</sup>, b. Nov. 17, 1860.
- VI. Lilla Leigh Page<sup>s</sup>, b. May 7, 1868.
- VII. Anne Catherine Page<sup>r</sup>, b. Ca Ira, Cumberland Co., Va., January 13, 1825. Married (1850) Dr. Charles A. Williams, of Chillieothe, Missouri. She died 1878, and left issue:

- I. Jane Clark Williams<sup>s</sup>, b. Aug. 14, 1852. Married, first (January, 1874), Henry M. Hatton<sup>o</sup>, of Chillieothe, Missouri; had two ehildren, of whom Hubert McPhail, b. Sept. 18, 1877, only survived.
- II. Luey Washington Williams<sup>s</sup>, b. Dec. 22, 1855.
- III. Henry Page Williams<sup>s</sup>, d. young.
- IV. Charles Williams<sup>s</sup>, b. Feb. 3, 1866.
- VII. Franeis Walker Page<sup>r</sup> (Mann<sup>o</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>s</sup>, Arehibald<sup>d</sup>. Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), eldest son, b. Turkey Hill, November 17, 1820. Removed to Cobham Grove, Albemarle Co., Va.; d. there July 12, 1846. He was buried at Turkey Hill. Married (September 4, 1844) Anna E., daughter of Benjamin F. Cheesman and Maria S. Whittemore, his wife, both of New York City. Mrs. Cheesman was the daughter of Thomas Whittemore and Luey Snow, his wife. Mr. Whittemore was born in Leicester, Mass., and removed to New York City, where he beecame a prominent and wealthy merehant. He died in 1829. He was sixth in descent from Thomas Whittemore, of Malden, Mass., who emigrated to Ameriea with Gov. Winthrop, of that State, in the year 1635. Anna E. Cheesman was the niece of the late distinguished physieian and surgeon, Dr. John S. Cheesman, of New York City, who was a contemporary of the late Prof. Valentine Mott, of that eity. She died at Cobham Grove, 1880, leaving one son:

- I. Franeis Walker Page<sup>s</sup>, Jr.
- VII. Carter Henry Page<sup>r</sup>, seecond son, b. at Turkey Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., November 21, 1822; removed to Eldon, near Cobham, same eounty. Married (1857) Leila, daughter of Captain William Graham, Baltimore, Md.
- I. Leila Graham Page<sup>s</sup>, b. 1858; resides at Eldon.
- II. William Graham Page<sup>s</sup>, eldest son, b. July 1860; lawyer; removed to Baltimore, Md.

III. Carter H. Page<sup>8</sup>, Jr., b. 1864. Travelled in Europe during the summer of 1882 with his uncle, Dr. R. C. M. Page, of New York. While in Paris he visited the grave of Lafayette, in The Cimetière Historique, No. 35 Rue Picpus près de la barrière du Trône, and placed a wreath of *immortelles* on the tombstone, as his great-grandfather, Major Carter Page, of "The Fork," Cumberland Co., Va., had served as aid-de-camp to Gen'l Lafayette during the campaign in Virginia against Cornwallis, 1781.

IV. Mary Bowdoin Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1866.

VII. Frédérick Winslow Page<sup>7</sup> (Mann<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. "Turkey Hill," November 20, 1826. Removed to Millwood, Albemarle Co., Va. Married (December 24, 1850) Anne Kinloek, daughter of Dr. Thomas W. Meriwether, of Kinloek, Albemarle Co., Va., and Anne Carter Nelson, his wife, who was a granddaughter of Gov. Thomas Nelson, of Yorktown, Va. Mrs. Anne Kinloek Meriwether Page died spring 1864; his second wife was Mrs. Luey Beale Brent, of Fredericksburg, Va.; his third and present wife was Mrs. Luey White Bryan, of Memphis, Tenn. He had issue:

I. Jane Walker Page<sup>8</sup>, b. Lynehburg, Va., Sept. 22, 1851. Married (1875) Thomas Walker Lewis, of Castalia, Albemarle Co., Va. They removed to Airlslee, near by in the same county, and have several children.

II. Eliza M. Page<sup>8</sup>, b. Aug. 1, 1853; d. 1873, single.

III. Annie Nelson Page<sup>8</sup>, b. Sept. 15, 1855. Married (1875) Nathaniel Coleman, of News Ferry, Halifax Co., Va., and has issue. She bore a strong resemblance to the portrait of her ancestress, Jane Byrd, of Westover, on James River, Charles City Co., Va., who was the wife of Hon. John Page, of North End, Gloucester (now Matthews) Co., Va.

IV. Frédérick K. Page<sup>8</sup>, of Millwood, Albemarle Co., Va., b. July 24, 1857. Married (1878) Flora Temple, daughter of William Lewis, of same county. They have several children.

V. William Douglas Page<sup>8</sup>, b. June 11, 1859; d. April 1878, single. He was buried in the Nelson Cemetery at Belvoir.

- VI. Evelyn Byrd Page<sup>8</sup>, b. Sept. 21, 1862. Married (July 19, 1882) John M. Coleman, of Halifax Co., Va. (See Coleman Family, Chapter XII.)
- VII. Mildred Nelson Page<sup>8</sup>, b. June 27, 1865. Resided several years with her unele, Dr. R. C. M. Page, of the City of New York.
- VII. Mann Page<sup>7</sup>, Jr. (Mann<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. "Turkey Hill," Albemarle Co., Va., May 1, 1831. Removed to Mansfield, same county. He died in October 1864 and was buried at "Turkey Hill." Married (1854) Mary Anna Hobson, of Powhatan Co., Va. Issue:
- I. Charlotte Nelson Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1862.
- VII. Thomas Walker Page<sup>7</sup> (Mann<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. "Turkey Hill," Albemarle Co., Va., April 1837, resided at same place. He married (in the spring of 1861) Nannie Watson, daughter of James Morris of Sylvania Green Springs, Louisa Co., Va., and Caroline Pleasants, his wife. They had issue:
- I. Ella Rives Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1862.
  - II. James Morris Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1864.
  - III. Thomas Walker Page<sup>8</sup>, Jr., b. 1866.
  - IV. Constance Morris Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1868.
  - V. Mann Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1872.
  - VI. Rose Morris Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1876.
- VII. Col. Wilson Miles Cary<sup>7</sup> (Wilson, Jr.<sup>6</sup>, Wilson<sup>5</sup>, Wilson<sup>4</sup>, Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. Carysbrooke, Fluvanna Co., Va., September 2, 1806, removed to Baltimore Co., Md., and represented that county for six years in the Maryland State Senate. Married (September 16, 1830) Jane Margaret, daughter of Peter Carr and Hetty Smith, his wife. The latter was niece of Gen'l Samuel Smith, of Baltimore, Md. She died January 22, 1903, Thursday morning, at her home 1012 North Calvert St., Baltimore, Md. The funeral took place from the Franklin Street Presbyterian Church. The services were conducted by the pastor, Rev. Harris Kirk. During the services the hymns "I Heard the Voice of Jesus Say," and "Nearer, my God, to Thee," were rendered by the church choir. The pall-bearers were Mr. Burton N. Harrison, Mr. Clarence Cary and Mr. Gouverneur Morris, of New York; Mr. Fairfax Harrison, of Washington, D. C.; Messrs.

Wilson M. Cary, Jr., John McHenry, Jacob A. Ulman, R. Brent Keyser and Charles Morton Stuart, Jr., of Baltimore. The interment was in St. Thomas Church Cemetery, Baltimore Co., Md., at Garrison Forest, Md. Mrs. Cary was ninety-four years old and the widow of Col. Wilson Miles Cary, who died in 1877. They had issue:

- I. Sarah Nicholas Cary<sup>8</sup>, b. April 14, 1832; d. July 7, 1893. Married (1856) James Howard McHenry, of Baltimore Co., Md. Issue:
  - I. Juliana Howard McHenry<sup>9</sup>, d. 1901 single.
- II. Wilson Cary McHenry<sup>9</sup>. Married Edith Dove, of Andover, Mass. Issue:
  - I. Howard McHenry<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. Edith McHenry<sup>10</sup>.
- III. John McHenry<sup>9</sup>. Married Priscilla Stewart of Baltimore Co., Md. Issue:
  - I. John McHenry<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. James McHenry<sup>10</sup>.
- III. Juliana McHenry<sup>10</sup>.
- IV. Ellen McHenry<sup>9</sup>. Married R. Brent Keyser, of Baltimore Co., Md.
- V. Sophia McHenry<sup>9</sup>. Married Charles Morton Stewart, of Baltimore Co., Md.
- II. Hetty Carr Cary<sup>8</sup>, b. May 15, 1836; d. Sept. 27, 1892, without issue. Married (Jan. 19, 1865) John Pegram, Brigadier General C. S. A.; was killed in battle Feb. 6, 1865; second (Dec. 20, 1879), Henry Newell Martin, of Newry, Ireland, professor at Johns Hopkins University.
- III. Wilson Miles Cary<sup>8</sup>, b. Dec. 12, 1838. He is a lawyer, member of Maryland Historical Society and a professional genealogist. He is travelling in Europe this summer (1905).
- IV. John Burne Cary<sup>8</sup>, b. April 1840. Married (Nov. 7, 1867) Frances Eugenia Daniel, of Jefferson Co., W. Va., and had issue:
  - I. Hetty Carr Cary<sup>9</sup>, Aug. 6, 1871. Married (June 1894) Fairfax Harrison, Washington, D. C. Issue:
    - I. Constance Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
    - II. Ursula Harrison<sup>10</sup>.



- II. Katharine Daniel Cary<sup>9</sup>, b. Jan. 1873. Married (1895)  
Jacob Albert Ulman, of Baltimore, Md. Issue:
  - I. N. Harisse Ulman<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. Jane Margaret Ulman<sup>10</sup>.
  - III. Rose Ulman<sup>10</sup>.
  - IV. Katharine Cary Ulman<sup>10</sup>.
- III. Ellen Buchanan Cary<sup>9</sup>, b. 1876. Married (Oct. 29, 1902)  
Frederick McLellan Burbank, who died Feb. 1903.  
No issue.
- IV. Jane Margaret Cary<sup>9</sup>, b. 1878. Married (Oct. 23, 1900)  
Charles Ridgely White, of Howard Co., Md.; d. March  
9, 1903. Issue:
  - I. John McKin White<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. Elizabeth Thomas White<sup>10</sup>.
  - V. Wilson Miles Cary<sup>9</sup>, b. Dec. 24, 1880. Married (Oct.  
1903) Helen Snowden Lanahan, of Baltimore, Md.  
Issue:
    - I. Anne Snowden Cary<sup>10</sup>.
  - VI. Francis Daniel Cary<sup>9</sup>, unmarried.
    - V: Jane Margaret Cary<sup>8</sup>, b. Jan. 11, 1843, unmarried.
  - VI. Sidney Carr Cary<sup>8</sup>, b. Dec. 20, 1845. Married (1886)  
Pauline Playford, of Uniontown, Pennsylvania. Issue:
    - I. Gwendolen Cary<sup>9</sup>.
- VII. Archibald Cary<sup>7</sup> (Wilson Jefferson<sup>6</sup>, Wilson<sup>5</sup>, Wilson<sup>4</sup>,  
Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. 1815, at Carysbrooke, Fluvanna Co.,  
Va.; removed to Cumberland Co., Md.; d. 1854. Married  
Moninia, daughter of Thomas, ninth Lord Fairfax, by whom he  
had issue:
  - I. Falkland Cary<sup>8</sup>, d. young.
  - II. Constance Cary<sup>8</sup>. Married Burton N. Harrison.
  - III. Clarence Cary<sup>8</sup>, b. ——. Married (1878) Elizabeth,  
daughter of Howard Potter, of the banking firm of  
Brown Bros., New York City. Issue:
    - I. Howard Cary<sup>9</sup>.

The following account of his tragic death appeared in the *Balti-  
more Sun* of May 8, 1906:

#### HOWARD CARY FOUND SHOT.

LONDON, May 7.—The death of Howard Cary, of New York, who was  
found on May 4 shot dead in his bed at a Kensington boarding house, is  
being investigated by the coroner. Seemingly it is a case of suicide.

Cary arrived here May 2, and was staying at the boarding house with his cousin, Lord Fairfax. The latter testified to-day at the inquest that he and Cary dined and went to the theater together on May 3. Cary seemed to be quite cheerful.

Other witnesses testified to finding Cary dead, with a revolver grasped in his right hand and a bullet wound in his right temple. He was dressed in evening clothes, and there was no sign of a struggle in the room.

The doctor who made the post-mortem examination said he found a bullet flattened behind the left ear. It was certainly a case of suicide, he thought.

The coroner said that he desired to make further inquiries before the jury rendered its verdict. The inquest was adjourned.

Howard Cary was a son of Mr. Clarence Cary, of 17 East Fifty-fourth Street, New York. He was 24 years old and a graduate of Harvard University. No reason for his death can be furnished by his relatives.

The young man sailed from New York three weeks ago. Lord Fairfax, his cousin, with whom he made his home while in London, was a resident of New York City for several years before assuming his title.

Guy Fairfax Cary, a brother of the dead man, says that he does not believe Howard committed suicide, since he had ample means when he left here, and was then, seemingly, in the best of health and spirits.

Cary's friends scout the idea of intentional suicide. They say the young man was perfectly happy the night before his death, and that he had no financial or other troubles. They believe his death was accidental.

While Mr. Cary never visited Baltimore, he was well and favorably known by a large circle of friends whom he met in New York frequently. He was also connected with some of the most prominent families in Baltimore City, among whom is Mrs. Brent Keyser and Mrs. Tunstall Smith, who are his second cousins, and Mr. Wilson Cary, who is a first cousin. His relatives are both shocked and surprised at the idea of his committing suicide, as he was a man of considerable means, youth and health, and had no apparent reason for the act.

Word was received by Mrs. Smith yesterday from relatives of Mr. Cary in New York, stating that Mr. Cary had died suddenly, but it did not mention suicide. His friends and relatives here are under the impression that some mistake must have been made, probably in transmitting the dispatch, as they can absolutely give no reason why Mr. Cary should take his own life.

VII. Miles Cary<sup>7</sup> (Miles<sup>6</sup>, Wilson<sup>5</sup>, Wilson<sup>4</sup>, Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. 1814; d. 1843.

VII. Lucius Cary<sup>7</sup> (Miles<sup>6</sup>, Wilson<sup>5</sup>, Wilson<sup>4</sup>, Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. 1815; d. 1845. Married Lucy Henley. They had issue.

## EIGHTH GENERATION.

VIII. Jane Walker Page<sup>8</sup> (Frederick<sup>7</sup>, Mann<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. at Lynchburg, Va., September 22, 1851. Married (1875, January) Thomas Walker Lewis, of Castalia, Albemarle Co., Va. They removed to Airlie, near by, in the same county, and had issue:

- I. Frederick Page Lewis<sup>9</sup>, b. Oct. 1875, drowned July 1893.
- II. Archibald Cary Lewis<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Alice Douglas Lewis<sup>9</sup>. Married Ashton Blair Jones, Oct. 1903, and have issue:
  - I. Page Lewis Jones<sup>10</sup> (girl), b. February 20, 1905.
- IV. Thomas Walker Lewis<sup>9</sup>.
- V. Isabel M. Lewis<sup>9</sup>.
- VI. Anne Kinlock Lewis<sup>9</sup>.
- VII. Frank Nicholas Lewis<sup>9</sup>.
- VIII. Mildred Nelson Page Lewis<sup>9</sup>.
- IX. Philip Augustus Lewis<sup>9</sup>.

VIII. Annie Nelson Page<sup>8</sup> (Frederick<sup>7</sup>, Mann<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. September 15, 1855. Married (1875) Nathaniel Coleman, of News Ferry, Halifax Co., Va. She bore a strong resemblance to the portrait of her ancestress, Jane Byrd, of Westover. She had issue:

- I. Frances Coleman<sup>9</sup>. Married Roger H. Williams of New York 1902, and had issue:
  - I. Coleman Shaler Williams<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Annie Nathalie Coleman<sup>9</sup>. Married Rev. George McC. Brydon, 1902, of Baltimore, Md., and had issue:
  - I. George McC. Brydon<sup>10</sup>, Jr.
  - II. Anne Page Brydon<sup>10</sup>.

VIII. Frederick Kinlock Page<sup>8</sup> (Frederick<sup>7</sup>, Mann<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), of Millwood, Albemarle Co., Va., b. July 24, 1857. Married (1878) Flora Temple, daughter of William Lewis, of same county. They had issue:

- I. Wm. Douglas Page<sup>9</sup>, b. 1879.
- II. Evelyn Mabry Page<sup>9</sup>, b. 1881.
- III. Frederick Boyd Page<sup>9</sup>, b. 1883.
- IV. Frances Campbell Page<sup>9</sup>, b. 1886.
- V. Robert Shackelford Page<sup>9</sup>, b. 1888.

VIII. Evelyn Byrd Page<sup>8</sup> (Frederick<sup>7</sup>, Mann<sup>6</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>5</sup>, Archibald<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. September 21, 1862.

Married (July 1882) John M. Coleman, of Halifax Co., Va., and had issue:

- I. Mary Channing Coleman<sup>o</sup>.
- II. John M. Coleman<sup>o</sup>.
- III. Frederick Page Coleman<sup>o</sup>.
- IV. Nathaniel Coleman<sup>o</sup>.
- V. Evelyn Byrd Coleman<sup>o</sup>.

VIII. Constance Cary<sup>s</sup> (Archibald<sup>7</sup>, Wilson Jefferson<sup>o</sup>, Wilson<sup>s</sup>, Wilson<sup>4</sup>, Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. April 25, 1846, Fairfax Co., Va.; educated by private governesses; lived in Richmond, Va., during the war between the States. It was she who arranged the poem of "My Maryland" to the music of a German air. She then went abroad with widowed mother to complete her studies in music. Has travelled in Europe, Asia, Africa, and spent much time in London, Paris, and other capitals. She has written extensively and her books have been read by the best and most cultivated people of the United States. She is known at home and abroad as one of our best writers of high-class fiction. Some of her books are: "Golden Rod," "An Idyl of Mt. Desert," "Woman's Handiwork," "Old Fashion Fairy Books," "A Son of the Old Dominion," "Good Americans," "A Triple Entanglement," "A Russian Honeymoon" (play adapted from the French), "Little Comedies for Amateur Acting," etc., etc. In 1867 she married Mr. Burton Harrison, b. July 14, 1838, New Orleans, La.; d. March 29, 1904, at his home, 1712 N. Street, Washington, D. C. The funeral services were held at Christ Church, Alexandria, and the interment was at Ivy Hill, Fairfax Co., Va.

Mr. Harrison was a prominent attorney of New York and Washington. He had been ill for several weeks, but his condition was not considered critical until the Friday before his death, when Dr. Janeway, of New York, was summoned and announced that there was no hope of his recovery.

Mr. Harrison was born in New Orleans, July 14, 1838. At seventeen he entered Yale University and graduated with high honors in 1859. He accepted the professorship of mathematics and astronomy of the University of Missouri, which position he held until the outbreak of the Civil War, when he resigned to enter the Confederate Army. Before joining a regiment he received a letter from Jefferson Davis, summoning him to Richmond to accept a position of private secretary to the President of the Confederacy.

He remained as a member of Mr. Davis' household throughout the war. After Mr. Davis' capture Mr. Harrison was incarcerated in the Old Capitol prison at Washington and later transferred to the prison at the arsenal. He was finally placed in solitary confinement at Fort Delaware. In 1866 he was released through the influence of Hon. Francis P. Blair. He went abroad and upon his return entered the law offices of ex-Judge Fullerton, and a year or two later began the practice of his profession before the New York bar. He was married to Constance Cary of Virginia in 1867.

Mr. Harrison was always actively interested in politics, but was averse to holding public office. During the second administration of Mr. Cleveland he declined the appointment of Ambassador to Rome, and subsequently that of Assistant Secretary of State. At one time Mr. Harrison served as secretary to Mayor Wickham, of New York, and in that capacity was instrumental in the prosecution of the Tweed ring. He was a member of the New York Bar Association, the University and Century Clubs and other leading organizations of New York.

Mr. Burton Harrison and Constance Cary had issue:

- I. Francis Burton Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. 1873, in New York City.  
Married (June 7, 1900) Mary Crocker, of San Francisco.
- II. Archibald Clay Harrison<sup>9</sup>, of New York.
- III. Fairfax Harrison<sup>9</sup>, of Washington, D. C.
- VIII. Harriette Cary<sup>8</sup> (Lucius<sup>7</sup>, Miles<sup>6</sup>, Wilson<sup>5</sup>, Wilson<sup>4</sup>, Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), first child of Lucius and Lucy (Henley) Cary. Married William Christian of "Craigton," Henrico Co., Va., and have issue:
  - I. Fairfax Cary Christian<sup>9</sup>. Married Harriette Alexander Peters, niece of Professor Peters, University of Virginia.
  - II. William Wallace Christian<sup>9</sup>.
  - III. Martha Harrison Christian<sup>9</sup>.
  - IV. Lucy Falkland Christian<sup>9</sup>.
  - V. Elizabeth Curle Christian<sup>9</sup>.
- VIII. Col. Wilson Miles Cary<sup>8</sup> (Lucius<sup>7</sup>, Miles<sup>6</sup>, Wilson<sup>5</sup>, Wilson<sup>4</sup>, Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), second child of Lucius and Lucy (Henley) Cary. Married, first, Nannie Sublett, and had issue:
  - I. Hunsdon Cary<sup>9</sup>.

II. Emily Cary<sup>9</sup>. Married Thomas Marshall, of Innis, Fauquier Co., Va. Issue:

I. Fairfax Cary Marshall<sup>10</sup>.

Col. Cary married, second, Lily McPhail and had issue:

III. Lucius Cary<sup>9</sup>.

IV. Lillias Blair Cary<sup>9</sup>, sponsor for Virginia at Confederate Reunion at Louisville, Ky., June 1905. Miss Jennie McPhail Talcott, of Richmond, Va., was her maid of honor. Miss Cary was educated by tutors, and although a native of Richmond she was reared for the most part at historic "Roanoke," the seat in Charlotte Co., Va., of John Randolph, then owned by her father.

#### NINTH GENERATION.

IX. Francis Burton Harrison<sup>9</sup> (Constance Cary<sup>8</sup>, Archibald Cary<sup>7</sup>, Wilson<sup>6</sup>, Wilson<sup>5</sup>, Wilson<sup>4</sup>, Wilson<sup>3</sup>, Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles<sup>1</sup>), b. December 18, 1873. Married (June 7, 1900) Miss Mary Crocker, daughter of the late Charles F. Crocker, of San Francisco, under whose will the daughter received a large fortune. The marriage took place at the country home of the bride's aunt, Mrs. C. B. Alexander, at Tuxedo.

Representative Francis Burton Harrison, who received the nomination for Lieutenant Governor at the Democratic State Convention at Saratoga, September 1904, is one of the youngest men to be named for such a high state office.

Mr. Harrison was born in New York City, December 18, 1873. In 1895 he was graduated from Yale, and two years later he received the degree of Bachelor of Laws from the New York Law School. He took an active interest in the Democratic affairs of his district. Last year he received the Democratic nomination for Congress in the Thirteenth New York district and was elected (July 1905). Mr. Harrison served with distinction in the Spanish-American War, first as a private in Troop A and afterward as captain and assistant adjutant-general of the United States Volunteers. He is a member of a dozen prominent clubs of New York and Washington and is vice-president of the McVickar Realty Company.

Francis Burton Harrison and Mary Crocker have issue:

I. Virginia Randolph Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. Oct. 27, 1901.



The following account of Mrs. Francis Burton Harrison's death is copied from the *Baltimore Sun*:

#### KILLED UNDER AUTO.

NEW YORK, November 25th, 1905.—Mrs. Francis Burton Harrison, wife of former Congressman Francis Burton Harrison, of New York, was killed to-day by the overturning of an automobile, in which she was riding with a party of friends from San Francisco. The car was running down a steep hill in Long Island City, when a break in the steering gear caused the accident.

Mr. and Mrs. Laurence I. Scott, of San Francisco, and Charles T. Crocker, also of San Francisco, a Yale student and brother of Mrs. Harrison, were injured. Mr. Scott suffered a fractured rib and is in a serious condition. His wife was knocked senseless, but later revived. Mr. Crocker was bruised and the chauffeur slightly hurt. Mrs. Harrison's neck was broken.

Mrs. Harrison was Miss Mary Crocker, daughter of the late C. F. Crocker, of San Francisco. She was one of the three children who divided a fortune of \$12,000,000 and \$15,000,000 left by her father.

To-day's automobile ride was part of Mrs. Harrison's program in entertaining Mr. and Mrs. Scott, who were intimate friends of the Crocker family, and who came here recently on a visit. The party was riding from New York to Hempstead Colony, Long Island, and it was about noon when the accident occurred.

#### LAUGHTER TURNED TO GRIEF.

Mrs. Scott told the details of how the merry party in the midst of laughter from Mrs. Harrison were without warning hurled sharply from the road and thrown into a ditch, two of them rendered unconscious and pinned under the heavy machine. The automobile had just started down what is known as Thompson's Hill. This place is a favorite speedway for automobiles.

As the car began to glide swiftly down, Mr. Scott and Mr. Crocker were examining a road map, while Mrs. Harrison and Mrs. Scott were talking together and laughing. The chauffeur, Mrs. Scott said afterward, turned about in his seat and remarked that something was wrong with the steering gear.

#### PLUNGED INTO A DITCH.

The next instant the machine swerved sharply. The chauffeur's frantic efforts to guide it back into the road were fruitless and the car plunged toward a ditch at the side of the road, with a telegraph pole looming directly in its course. It struck the pole a glancing blow and then toppled into the ditch.

Mrs. Harrison was thrown under the machine, her head being pinned down by the heavy vehicle. She was unconscious, and it was afterwards found that her neck had been broken. Beside her, also pinned down by

the car, was her brother, but he was not severely injured and was able to free himself from the car.

The other three—Mrs. Scott, Mr. Scott and the chauffeur—had been thrown clear of the machine. Mrs. Scott was hurled across the ditch, landing 10 feet beyond, and lay senseless where she struck. Her husband, although still conscious, was unable to move for some time. The chauffeur also, like the other members of the party, was stunned.

No one was near the point when the accident occurred, the road being almost deserted at the time.

The first persons to realize the terrible situation were Mr. Crocker and the chauffeur, who tried to free Mrs. Harrison and found that they could not lift the machine. Mr. Scott, with a broken rib, also joined them, but still the machine pressed upon the unconscious woman. Mrs. Scott had by this time been restored to her senses, and it was decided to send for help.

#### DIES ON THE WAY TO HOSPITAL.

Assistance, however, was already at hand, two farm hands having seen the accident and run across the fields. Another automobile came along about the same time, and the men were able to raise the machine. Mrs. Harrison was dying when her friends lifted her up. She was hurried to St. John's Hospital in Long Island City; but she expired before reaching the institution. Later an ambulance was sent for Mr. and Mrs. Scott, who after treatment at the same hospital were able to return to New York in a carriage.

Mr. Harrison was at his office in New York when first informed of the accident, and was told that his wife was seriously injured. He did not know of her death until he called at St. John's Hospital.

Mr. and Mrs. Harrison were married in 1900. At the last gubernatorial election in New York Mr. Harrison was candidate for the office of Lieutenant-Governor.

Mr. and Mrs. Scott had been staying at the Arlington Hotel. Mr. Crocker left New Haven yesterday to come to New York for the automobile party.

Constant Ravert is the name of the chauffeur. To-night it was reported that his shoulder had been dislocated.

Mrs. Harrison's body will be sent to San Francisco and placed in the Crocker vault.

Former Congressman Harrison was grief stricken to-night, remaining at the hospital with the body of his wife.

#### CAUSE OF THE ACCIDENT.

In explanation of the cause of the accident, it is said that the chauffeur threw off the clutch and allowed the automobile to run under its own momentum, which carried it along very rapidly. In some manner the thumbscrew worked loose on the steering-gear handle, releasing a knuckle joint which allowed the driver to control the gear underneath the machine

with the wheel. As soon as the steering gear was released from the wheel grip the front wheels swerved around. Then the car turned over.

This is the second accident in which Crocker has been hurt. Several years ago, while speeding an automobile in California, he collided with a bridge support and was taken out of the wreck with both legs fractured.

Mrs. Harrison was regarded as one of the best automobilists among women of her set. Frequently she drove her brother's 40-horsepower car at high speed, acting as her own chauffeur.

Since writing the above records of the Cary Family I have been fortunate to secure more information about Mary Cary<sup>3</sup>, who married Joseph Selden, from William and Mary College Quarterlies, Vol. V, No. 1, July 1896, and Vol. VI, No. 4, April 1898.

Also about Mary Munro Cary<sup>5</sup>, who married William S. Peachy, and Miles Cary. Married (January 1, 1797) Anne Robinson.

#### SELDEN FAMILY.

The founder of this family in Virginia was Samuel Selden<sup>1</sup>, a lawyer, who, according to a deposition in the Elizabeth City records, came to Virginia in 1699, and boarded in 1700 at Mr. Bertram Servants'. He married Rebecca —, "cousin and heir at law" of Rebecca Yeo, wife of John Lear, Esq. (member of the Colonial Council), widow of Col. Leonard Yeo and Col. Charles Morryson. (See Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. II, p. 385.)

Samuel Selden's will was dated May 29, 1720, and was proved at the July court following: He gave his wife, Rebecca, "Buckroe," for life, and then to his heir-at-law; to son Joseph, the plantation on Potomac creek, in Stafford County; to son John, two plantations on Black River and "Old Fields," late in the tenure of Thomas Batts; to daughter Elizabeth, £60 sterling, and to son Bartholomew and daughter Mary Milner other devises.

Rebecca Selden's will is dated April 23, 1736, and mentions daughter Elizabeth, grandson Samuel Milner, Cary Selden, Samuel, Miles, Richard and Joseph Selden, granddaughter Eliza Selden; cousin George Yeo, and son John, executors.

The will of George Yeo was dated March 15, 1742; proved April 20, 1743. He gives to his son George Arnold, merchant in London, certain tenements in the burrough of Hatherly, commonly called by the name of Wadlands and Finch Parks; gives him also

the plate I brought from England; to Cousin John Selden, £20, all my law books, "The Whole Duty of Man," "Sherlock on Providence," and "St. Augustine's Meditations"; to Joseph, son of Cousin John Selden, my dictionary and grammar; to Elizabeth, daughter of second cousin William Selden, one silver ribbon and a book entitled "The Master's Blessing"; to Robert Brough, son of William Brough, deceased, Owen's "Epigrams," Norvell's "Catechism," "Thomas à Kempis," one in Latin and one in English, Sherlock on "Judgment," and "The Five Bishops and the Doctors"; various legacies of clothing, furniture and books to my wife's daughters Mary and Grace Selden, and to her granddaughters, Agnes and Anne Howard and Mary Douglas; Cousin George Arnold in Great Britain and Cousin John Selden, of Virginia, executors. Witnesses: Charles Jenings, John Webb and George Cooper.

On March 2, 1702, license was granted William Bosell to marry Elinor Brough (widow of Coleman Brough), and June 22, 1727, George Yeo and Elinor, his wife, qualified as administrators of Capt. Wm. Bosell, deceased. In a deed from Coleman Wroe to David Meredith 1741, John Selden is mentioned as marrying one of the co-heirs of Capt. Wm. Bosell. Issue of Samuel Selden<sup>1</sup>, Justice of the Peace of Elizabeth City County, attorney-at-law, etc., etc.:

1. I. Samuel Selden<sup>2</sup>, mentioned in suit in 1714, but not mentioned in wills; probably died without issue.
2. II. Bartholomew Selden<sup>2</sup>; d. 1727, without issue.  
His widow Sarah married Wm. Edwards before 1740.
3. III. John Selden<sup>2</sup>.
4. IV. Joseph Selden<sup>2</sup>, who got by his father's will land in Stafford County.
5. V. Elizabeth Selden<sup>2</sup>, who in 1716 sold her interest in "Buekroe" to her father.
6. VI. Mary Selden<sup>2</sup>. Married — Milner and had:
  - I. Samuel Milner<sup>3</sup>.

John Selden<sup>2</sup>, Justice in 1725, etc., Deputy King's Attorney for Elizabeth City County in 1752. Married, first, —, and had:

7. I. Richard Selden<sup>3</sup>. Married (1741) Mary Ball, daughter of Major James Ball of "Bewdley." (Hayden's Va. Genealogies, p. 62.)

John Selden<sup>2</sup> married, second, Sarah Ball, daughter of Capt. Richard Ball, and first cousin of his son's wife. As far as known no issue. He married, third, Grace, daughter of Capt. William Bosell, and had the children mentioned in his will in 1754:

8. I. Captain Joseph Selden<sup>3</sup>.
9. II. John Selden<sup>3</sup>.
10. III. Rev. William Selden<sup>3</sup>.

At the "Burnt Chimneys," about a mile in the woods from Lancaster Courthouse, is the tombstone of Sarah Selden, which reads:

Here lies the Body of  
Sarah, the wife of John Selden,  
Gent., and eldest daughter of  
Capt. Richard Ball, Gent., who  
departed this life the 10th day of  
October 17—

Joseph Selden<sup>2</sup> (Samuel Selden<sup>1</sup>), Justice of Elizabeth City County in 1723 and other years, commissioned sheriff in 1725, and his will was proved June 21, 1729. Married Mary Cary<sup>3</sup>, b. 1704; d. 1775, daughter of Col. Miles Cary<sup>2</sup> and Mary Wilson, and granddaughter of Miles Cary<sup>1</sup> and Anne Taylor.

They had three sons:

- I. Miles Selden<sup>4</sup>.
- II. Cary Selden<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Samuel Selden<sup>4</sup>.

In Joseph Selden's will mention is made of "their uncles" Wilson and Miles Cary.

#### FOURTH GENERATION (CARY GEN.).

In Joseph Selden's will mention is made of their uncles, Wilson and Miles Cary.

IV. Miles Selden<sup>4</sup> (Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> (married Joseph Selden), Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), son of Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> and Joseph Selden, was ordained in London and was minister of Henrico Parish from 1752 to 1776; d. March 20, 1785. Married Rebecca, daughter of Miles Cary, b. 1701; d. 1766, Clerk of Warwick, and had issue:

- I. Joseph Selden<sup>5</sup>, d. Jan. 1, 1807.
- II. Mary Selden<sup>5</sup>. Married — Rose.

- III. Col. Miles Selden<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Hannah Selden<sup>5</sup>. Married Col. Wm. Hartwell Macon, of Mt. Prospect, New Kent County.
- V. Rebecca Selden<sup>5</sup>. Married Thomas Watkins.
- VI. Nathaniel Selden<sup>5</sup>, d. before 1833. Married Mary, daughter of Charles Woodson. Had issue:
  - I. Charles Selden<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Joseph Selden<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Mary Selden<sup>6</sup>. Married (1824) Richard Adams.
- VII. Elizabeth Selden<sup>5</sup>. Married Hunter. (See Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, p. 738.)
- IV. Cary Selden<sup>4</sup> (Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> (married Joseph Selden), Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), son of Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> and Joseph Selden. Married Miss Jennings, of the West Indies. They had issue:
  - I. Wilson Cary Selden<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Joseph Selden<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.
- III. Miles Selden<sup>5</sup>, killed at sea when quite young.
- IV. Mary Selden<sup>5</sup>. Married young.
- V. Elizabeth Selden<sup>5</sup>. Married Dr. James McClurg. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth McClurg<sup>6</sup>. Married John Wickham, the lawyer. (See McClurg Family, Quarterly I, p. 164.)
- VI. Naney Selden<sup>5</sup>. Married Breekinridge.
- VII. — Selden<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, Barron; second, Whitaker.

## FIFTH GENERATION.

V. Miles Selden<sup>5</sup> (Miles<sup>4</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> (married Joseph Selden), Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), son of Rev. Miles Selden and Rebecca Cary. He was reared in the old general court office, which was the school in which the county court clerks were generally educated; afterwards appointed Clerk of Henrico County and officiated in that character several years; was a man of good education, well acquainted with business generally and represented the County of Henrico in the General Assembly for many years and was likewise for many years presiding magistrate of his county. He was also member of the Council in 1785. Married (March 27, 1774) Elizabeth Armistead, b. March 9, 1752, daughter of Col. Gill Armistead. She was married at the house of her stepfather, John Lewis, in Williamsburg, Va. Col. Miles Selden d. May 18, 1811; his wife, April 1833, aged eighty-two years. They had issue:



- I. Betty Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. March 10, 1775.
- II. Miles Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. Jan. 5, 1777.
- III. Mary Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. March 10, 1779.
- IV. Gill Armistead Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. Nov. 16, 1781.
- V. Cary Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. Feb. 16, 1783.
- VI. John Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. Sept. 15, 1784.
- VII. Patsey Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. Jan. 15, 1786. Married William H. Roane, May 6, 1809; d. Aug. 10, 1810.
- VIII. Joseph Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. May 7, 1787.
- IX. Samuel Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. Feb. 14, 1789.
- X. William Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. Jan. 31, 1791. Treasurer of the United States.
- XI. James Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. April 16, 1793.
- XII. Adeline Elison Selden<sup>a</sup>, b. Feb. 1802.

There was a contest over Miles Selden's will, which is shown in *Selden v. Coaltes, et als*, 2 Virginia Cases, p. 553.

V. Dr. Wilson Cary Selden<sup>5</sup> (son Cary Selden<sup>4</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> (married Joseph Selden), Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), son of Cary Selden and Miss Jennings. Married, first, Miss Love; second, Mrs. Page, née Miss Selden; third, Mrs. Alexander, daughter of Charles Armistead.

Issue by first wife:

- I. Wilson Selden<sup>a</sup>. Married Louisa Alexander, Dr. Selden's third wife's daughter.

Issue by third wife:

- II. Elizabeth Armistead Selden<sup>a</sup>. Married John L. Lloyd.
- III. Cary Selden<sup>a</sup>, unmarried.
- IV. John Selden<sup>a</sup>. Married, first, Anne Kennedy; second, Sarah Kennedy.

#### SIXTH GENERATION.

VI. Miles Selden<sup>a</sup> (Miles<sup>5</sup>, Miles<sup>4</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> (married Joseph Selden) Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. Miles Cary and Elizabeth Armistead, his wife, b. January 5, 1777; d. May 10, 1814. Married (February 23, 1801) Martha Bland Allen, b. June 30, 1780; d. April 21, 1814. They had issue:

- I. John Armistead Selden<sup>7</sup>, b. Jan. 3, 1802.
- II. Elizabeth Ann Selden<sup>7</sup>, b. Nov. 11, 1802.
- III. Miles Cary Selden<sup>7</sup>, b. Dec. 14, 1806.

IV. Carter Harrison Selden<sup>7</sup>.

V. Joseph Allen Selden<sup>7</sup>. Of these, Martha Bland Selden<sup>7</sup> married John Saunders and had issue, among others:

I. Betty Saunders<sup>8</sup>. Married Col. Walter H. Taylor, now resident in Norfolk.

VI. William Selden<sup>6</sup> (Miles<sup>5</sup>, Miles<sup>4</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> (married Joseph Selden), Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. Miles Selden and Elizabeth Armistead, his wife, b. January 31, 1791; member of the House of Delegates, treasurer of the United States. Married, first, Eliza Swan, d. 1835; second, Emily Hunter.

Issue by first wife:

I. William Henry Selden<sup>7</sup>.

Issue by second wife:

II. Jennie Selden<sup>7</sup>.

III. John Selden<sup>7</sup>.

IV. Hunter Selden<sup>7</sup>.

V. Lilly Selden<sup>7</sup>.

VI. Cary Selden<sup>7</sup>.

VII. Florence Selden<sup>7</sup>.

VIII. James Buchanan Selden<sup>7</sup>.

The following notes are in the handwriting of Mrs. Selden, wife of the minister, Rev. Miles Selden, and throw light upon the family:

June, 1823, a letter from Mrs. Harriet Selden, Arkansas, stating to me the birth of her daughter, Betty, on the 25th of June. After she came to Virginia she had another daughter named Josephine; in 1825 both baptized; husband was Joseph Selden, killed in a duel in Arkansas.

This is now 1833. I live to have this year three great-grandchildren:

My grandson, Dr. Wm. A. Selden, a daughter.

My grandson, Miles, a son.

Mrs. Graham, a daughter.

Granddaughter, Sarah Graham, a second, a son.

In 1831 my son William was married (November 28) to Miss Eliza Swann, of Virginia, who died 1835, leaving a son, William Henry Selden. His second wife was Emily Hunter, who had seven children, as given above.

March, 1814, I left Tree Hill and moved to Richmond, where I took charge of the children of my beloved sons. I remained there until 1823, July 2nd, when I returned to Tree Hill.

June, 1824, was an afflicted, distressing time to me; the death of my poor, unfortunate son, Joseph, never to be forgotten by his afflicted mother.

1825, living at Tree Hill; much trouble and affliction and bad health much of the time in 1826-27.

In 1824 Harriet Selden came to Tree Hill, after the death of her beloved husband, with her two children, Elizabeth and Josephine. July, 1825, she had them baptized by Bishop Moore. At the same time my first great-grandchild, Miles, was baptized; my second child was baptized by Bishop Moore, and called Thomas. 1827, the third son.

In July, 1827, Harriet was united to Mr. Lowry, an English gentleman, and went to England July, 1828, with her husband and daughters. He is said to be a good and clever man. I leave them to God, who has promised never to forsake the widow and orphan.

January 1st, 1829, I left Tree Hill (with my granddaughter Elizabeth), I expect, for the last time of ever seeing that dear, beloved mansion, never to be forgotten. Oh! not my will, oh, God! The events of my life (a mysterious one) now in my 79th year.

August 30, 1830 (1830), still alive. Oh, my God, let me be resigned! I have lived to see my fourth great-grandchild. 1831. Now 80 years old and two more added. Sarah Graham has a daughter, and John Selden has another son, called Joseph, 1832.

My granddaughter, Elizabeth (Mrs. Miller), has a son, July 9, 1824.

My son Cary paid me a visit at Tree Hill, with all his family, which was very gratifying. They left 25th September. I expect it will be our last meeting.

1829, June 13. I have long wished to visit once more the old church on Richmond Hill (Church Hill, Richmond). My son, James, at this time a resident in Park Hill House. I was gratified in having my desire. The father of my husband and my much-loved friend was the pastor. I cannot describe the pleasure I received. Associations of ideas recalled to mind so many scenes of past happiness not to be forgotten.

1825, December 9, our sister, Mrs. B. Hunter, departed this life in Richmond, the last remaining child of the Woodstock family, the daughter of the Rev. Miles Selden, pastor of the Richmond Church.

("Woodstock," a plantation owned by the Selden family.)

James M. Selden and Mary E. Ireland were married the 19th December, 1825.

Betty, their first child, born September 19, 1827.

1831. I have heard of the death of my beloved grandson, Cary Selden, much lamented.

1832, May 16, my grandson, Wm. A. Selden, was married to L. Riddle, sister of Mrs. Dr. Nelson.

VI. Wilson Selden<sup>6</sup> (Dr. Wilson Cary<sup>5</sup>, Cary<sup>4</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> (married Joseph Selden), Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), son of Dr. Wilson Cary Selden and Miss Love, his first wife. Married Louisa Alexander. They had issue:

I. Molly Selden<sup>7</sup>, d. young.

II. Eleanor Love Selden<sup>7</sup>. Married John A. Washington, of Mt. Vernon. Issue:

- I. Louisa Washington<sup>s</sup>. Married Col. Chew.
- II. Jean C. Washington<sup>s</sup>. Married N. H. Willis.
- III. Eliza Washington<sup>s</sup>. Married Robert Hunter.
- IV. Lawrence Washington<sup>s</sup>.
- V. Maria Washington<sup>s</sup>. Married Rev. Beverley D. Tucker,  
of Norfolk, Va.
- VI. Nelly Washington<sup>s</sup>. Married Julian Howard.
- VII. George Washington<sup>s</sup>. Married Miss Porterfield.

The following is taken from the *Baltimore Sun* of October 4, 1906:

#### BISHOP TUCKER CONSECRATED.

NORFOLK, VA., Oct. 3.—Rev. Dr. Beverly Dandridge Tucker, Bishop Coadjutor-elect of the Diocese of Southern Virginia, was to-day consecrated to the bishopric in historic St. Paul's Episcopal Church here, of which he had been rector for nearly a quarter of a century.

There were present sixty bishops and distinguished clergymen from various dioceses. Bishop Randolph, of Southern Virginia, presided. Bishops Gibson, of Virginia, and Peterkin, of West Virginia, were the consecrators, and Bishops Satterlee, of Washington, and Cheshire, of North Carolina, were the presenters.

Rev. Dallas Tucker, of Bedford City, Va., and Rev. Luke M. White, of Pulaski, Va., were the attending presbyters, with Rev. Dr. W. A. Barr, of Norfolk, as master of ceremonies, and Rev. C. E. Woodson, of Norfolk, as deputy register.

Bishop Peterkin, of West Virginia, delivered the consecration sermon. Bishop Tucker will have joint jurisdiction with Bishop Randolph, the senior bishop of southern Virginia, but his particular work will be in the western part of the State. His residence will be in Roanoke, Va.

*Baltimore Sun* of Oct. 15, 1906:

Sunday, October 14, 1906, was a memorable day at St. Paul's, Norfolk. In the afternoon there was a beautiful and impressive farewell service to Dr. Augustin Tucker, son of Bishop Tucker, who sails as a medical missionary to China. The church was crowded. In the chancel were Bishops Randolph and Tucker, and clergymen of the city. The music was superb. Beautiful and appropriate addresses were delivered by the Rev. Mr. Thomson, of Trinity, Portsmouth, and the Rev. Dr. Morris, of Christ Church, Norfolk. The collection was for the work to which the young missionary is devoting his life. He goes to the work which God has called him accompanied by the prayers and blessings of all of God's people, who wish him "good luck" in the name of the Lord.

On October 3rd, the day of the consecration of Dr. Tucker to the Bishopric, a beautiful memorial window was unveiled in St. Paul's Church,

Norfolk, in memory of Mrs. Pegram, who was for many years one of the most devoted communicants of this church.

A meeting of the clerics of Norfolk was held Monday morning, October 8th. The Rev. W. Alexander Barr, rector of St. Luke's Church, was unanimously elected president in place of Rev. Dr. Tucker.

VI. Elizabeth Armistead Selden<sup>o</sup> (Dr. Wilson Cary<sup>5</sup>, Cary<sup>4</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> (married Joseph Selden), Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Dr. Wilson Cary Selden and Mrs. Alexander, née Armistead, his wife. Married John T. Lloyd. They had issue:

I. Mary Lloyd<sup>7</sup>, d. unmarried.

II. Rebecca Lloyd<sup>7</sup>, first wife of Rev. Melville Jackson.

III. John S. Lloyd<sup>7</sup>. Married Miss Herbert.

IV. Arthur S. Lloyd<sup>7</sup>. Married Miss Blackford.

V. Nellie Lloyd<sup>7</sup>. Married George Uhler.

VI. Eliza Lloyd<sup>7</sup>. Married, first, Burk; second, Wolfolk.

VI. John Selden<sup>o</sup> (Dr. Wilson Cary<sup>5</sup>, Cary<sup>4</sup>, Mary Cary<sup>3</sup> (married Joseph Selden), Miles<sup>2</sup>, Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>), son of Dr. Wilson Cary Selden and Mrs. Alexander, his wife. Married, first, Annie Kennedy; second, Sarah Kennedy.

Issue by first wife.

I. Wilson Cary Selden<sup>7</sup>.

II. Mary Selden<sup>7</sup>. Married Dr. S. D. Kennedy.

III. Lizzie Selden<sup>7</sup>. Married Lieut. R. T. Jasper.

IV. Andrew Selden<sup>7</sup>. Married Miss Kearsley.

Issue by second wife:

V. John Selden<sup>7</sup>.

VI. Anne Selden<sup>7</sup>.

(Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, pp. 68 and 63.)

Mr. Wilson Miles Cary of Baltimore, Md., sent the following:

Samuel Selden<sup>1</sup> came to Virginia 1690; will probated June 1720 names three sons and two daughters. Married Rebecca Yeo; d. 1737, daughter of Leonard Yeo, of Elizabeth City; will probated 1690. Issue:

I. Bartholomew Selden.

II. John Selden.

III. Joseph Selden.

1. Bartholomew Selden, d. 1727. Will gives estate to nephew, Joseph, son of John Selden. Married, first, Achilly Achilly, d. s. p. 1722; second, Sarah Hilliard, d. s. p. 1778.

2. John Selden, "the elder," of Elizabeth City, inherited two plantations from his father on Back River, Elizabeth City Co. Married Grace Roswell or Boswell. His will, probated 1754, names four sons and one daughter. Issue:

- I. Captain Joseph of Elizabeth City Co., b. 1704. Married, second, 1770, widow Curle and had (all minors in 1774)—John, to whom father gave farm on Hampton Roads, and one-seventh of his negroes; Robert, to whom lot in Hampton, facing Col. Cary's, and one-seventh of his negroes; Joseph, William, Samuel, of Elizabeth City Co. Married Susannah —; will probated 1806, names sons, John, Samuel, Joseph and James.
- II. John of Elizabeth City Co. Married —; d. intestate March 1775. Had issue: John of Nottoway. Married Anne —.
- III. Rev. William, Rector of Elizabeth City Co., Parish, 1741-1783. Issue: Wm. Boswell, of Norfolk.
- IV. Richard. Richard Selden d. at his residence, Farmville, Lancaster Co., Dec. 6, 1823, aged sixty-five years, leaving a widow and an only son. Was forty years a member of Presbyterian Church.

3. Joseph Selden got by his father land on Potomac Creek, Stafford County. Married Mary Cary, b. 1704; d. 1775, daughter of Col. Miles Cary, of "Richneck," Warwick Co., Va. Will probated 1727.

#### PEACHEY FAMILY

Samuel Peachey, the immigrant, was son of Robert Peachey, of Mildenhall in Suffolk County, England, and Anne Hodgskin, his wife. As a youth he accompanied his uncle, William Hodgskin, to Virginia in 1659. The following letter is from the records of Richmond County, Virginia:

BROTHER WILLIAM:—My love, with your sisters, to you presented, and desiring God to (bless) keep both of you and my son Samuel, which is to go along with him, but Brother, Shree and I desire, according as you promised me, that you would be a father rather than an uncle to him, to lett him be to you, as indeed he is, a kinsman, and not a slave. You shall receive by Beeraft, the carrier of Norwich, a Trusse with your Turkey and rapier in it Directed to Mr. Edward Addenbrook, as you



directed me. So, as formerly, with our prayers to God to bless and keep you, I Rest your Loveing brother to His ability.

Milden Hall, October 24, 1859.

ROBERT PEACHEY.

I pray lett us heare from you as soone as possible of your arrivall.

To his Loveing friend, Mr. Wm. Hodgskin, there presents with.

Reoordat—Test:

JAMES SHERLOCK, Cl. Cur.

According to the record of the deposition of Mr. Edward Adcock (whose authority is Mrs. Elizabeth Dobbins) Samuel's mother was own sister of Mrs. Elizabeth Dobbins, and Mr. William Hodgskin was their brother. Mrs. Elizabeth Dobbins was wife of Mr. Daniel Dobbins. (In the Richmond County Records the name is always spelt with an "e" before the last letter.)

By Mrs. Phœbe Slaughter's deposition, made July 7, 1703, Mr. William Hodgskin was her first husband, her brother being Mr. Henry Smith (and she was a daughter of Col. Toby Smith, of Rappahannock); that on a visit to England she saw Mrs. Anne Peachey, mother of Mr. Sam Peachey, and heard Mr. Hodgskin call her sister"; that Machin Hodgskin was brother of William Hodgskin, and Mrs. Anne Peachey was their eldest sister, and Samuel Peachey her eldest son.

This is confirmed by the family bible of Thomas Griffin Peachey, from which the following is a literal transcription:

Thomas Griffin Peachey, son of Samuel and Winifred Peachey, was born December 23, 1734, and was married to Elizabeth, the eldest daughter of Mr. John Gilliam, October 12, 1758. Elizabeth Gilliam b. March 26, 1741; d. May 27, 1781. T. G. Peachey d. March 6, 1810.

- I. Thomas Griffin, son of Thomas Griffin and Eliza Peachy, b. Jan. 9, 1760; departed this life Jan. 2, 1781.
- II. John Tayloe<sup>2</sup>, second son of Thos. Griffin and Eliza Peachey, b. Dec. 19, 1761; departed this life the 31st day of December, 1785.
- III. William Samuel Peachey<sup>2</sup>, third son of Thos. Griffin and Eliza Peachey, b. Nov. 9, 1763, and departed this life the 2nd day of January, 1802. Married Mary Monro Cary, daughter of Col. Wilson Miles Cary, Esq., of "Ceelys," Nov. 22, 1787. [Mary Monro Peachey departed this life Nov. 16, 1836.]

Thomas Griffin was married to Elizabeth Mills, widow of Mr. Mills, of Urbanna, in the county of Middlesex, September 22, 1783. [Elizabeth, the second wife of Thos. Griffin Peachey, departed this life October 3, 1795.]

Samuel Peachy, the father of Thos. Griffin Peachy, was son of William Peachy, who was the son of Samuel Peachy, who was the son of Robert Peachy, of Milden Hall, the county of Suffolk, in England, from which place the last-named Samuel Peachy immigrated with his family to Virginia about the latter part of the seventeenth century, and purchased lands and settled himself on the banks of Rappahannock, in the county of Richmond.

Winifred, the mother of Thomas Griffin, was the eldest daughter of Thomas Griffin and Elizabeth (Lee), his wife.

(See Chapter VIII, Lee Family.)

(The above is copied from an old bible leaf, and is the handwriting of Thomas Griffin Peachy, the first-named, save the parts included in brackets which are in another hand.)

Samuel Peachey<sup>1</sup>, the immigrant, was justice of Richmond Co., and in 1704 lieutenant colonel; d. about 1712, and his will dated January 25, 1711-12, proved June 4, 1712, disposes of a large estate: legacies to his nephews and nieces, the sons and daughters of Nathaniel Peachey, and the sons and daughters of Will Delamere and Anne, his wife, and also sons and daughters of John Wildman and Jane, his wife; to grandson, Samuel Peachy, "my great silver tankard and my sealed gold ring, having both my coate of Armes and the horse I lately bought, with the Saddle and Furniture, as holsters and Pistolls," etc., etc.; to said grandson "all my bookes;" Sister Jane Wildman to have some necessary clothing for the poor of the parish; gold rings to Col. Willoughby Allerton, Capt. Daniel McCarty, Mr. Daniel Dobbins and Capt. Thomas Beale; requests that his grandson, Samuel, "be sent to the Colledge of Williamsburg, to be improved as much as he is capable of attaining unto;" other legacies to Katharine Dobbins, James Bibblecomb, Robin Hood, Sen., William Dobbins, Charles Dobbins, Thomas Thorne, Elizabeth Lynch, daughter of Steven Lynch and Elizabeth, his wife, and Thomas Burly, etc., etc.

William Hodgskin, who was justice of Rappahannock Co., mentions in his will, proved in 1673, the sons of his nephew, Samuel Peachey, Samuel<sup>2</sup> and William<sup>2</sup>.

About this time lived Mary Peachey, whose will (May, 1713, to 2d September, 1713) mentions daughter Mary Tarpley, granddaughters Mary and Elizabeth Tarpley, and appoints the residue of her estate to be divided between James Bibblecomb's children and daughter Elizabeth Jones' children.

William Peachey<sup>2</sup>. Married —, and had Capt. Samuel Peachey<sup>3</sup>, who married Winifred Griffin, daughter of Thomas Griffin and Elizabeth Lee, his wife.

Capt. Samuel<sup>3</sup> Peachey's will is on record in Richmond County, dated December 12, 1748, proved November 5, 1750. It mentions sons Samuel<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Thomas Griffin<sup>4</sup> and Le Roy<sup>4</sup>, and daughters Flood<sup>4</sup> and Eustace<sup>4</sup>, and granddaughter Kate Flood. His inventory exhibits a large library. The following is from the register of St. Stephen's Parish, Richmond County (kept in the Clerk's office) :

Robert, son of Samuel and Elizabeth Peachey, b. March 21, 1673.

Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel and Katharine, b. November 18, 1724.

Phebe, daughter of Samuel Peachey, b. December 18, 1727.

William<sup>4</sup>, son of Samuel Peachey, b. April 4, 1729.

William Griffin, son of Samuel Peachey, b. February 26, 1730.

Samuel, son of Samuel Peachey, b. February 26, 1732.

Thomas Griffin, son of Samuel Peachey, b. December 23, 1734.

Le Roy<sup>4</sup>, son of Samuel Peachey, b. June 19, 1736.

Marriage bond of Le Roy Peachey<sup>4</sup> to Betty Tarpley, dated November 7, 1759, by whom he had issue :

I. Eliza Griffin Peachey<sup>5</sup>, b. Oct. 10, 1761.

II. Samuel Peachey<sup>5</sup>, b. Oct. 12, 1767.

III. Le Roy Peachey<sup>5</sup>, b. August 21, 1770.

Marriage bond of Capt. William Peachey<sup>4</sup> with Million Glasscock, — 31, 1748 ; issue :

I. Winifred, daughter of William and Million Peachey.

He married, second, Elizabeth —, and had issue :

II. Aliee Peachey<sup>5</sup>, b. July 2, 1762.

III. Susannah Peachey<sup>5</sup>, b. Sept. 14, 1764.

IV. Ann Peachey<sup>5</sup>, b. Oct. 15, 1766.

V. Thomas Griffin Peachey<sup>5</sup>, b. Nov. 10, 1770.

VI. Sally Peachey<sup>5</sup>, b. Dec. 3, 1775.

William Peachey<sup>4</sup> was the colonel of the 51st Virginia Regiment, in the Revolutionary War.

The following is from a bible, and all save the last entry is in the handwriting of William S. Peachey, deceased:

T. G. Peachey died in Williamsburg on the 6th of Mareh, A. D. 1810, in the 76th year of his age. He was buried in the Peachy graveyard, in the garden to the house now owned by R. W. Hansford.

T. G. Peachy, by his first wife, had three children, to-wit:

I. Thomas Griffin, b. 9th January, 1760; d. 2nd June, 1781. Unmarried.

II. John Tayloe, b. Dec. 19, 1761; d. Dec. 31, 1785. Unmarried.

III. William Samuel, b. Nov. 9, 1763. Married Mary Monro Cary, daughter of Col. Wilson Miles Cary, at Ceeleys, Elizabeth City Co., on Nov. 22, A. D. 1787. He died at Flower-de-Hundred, on James River (and was buried there), Jan. 2, 1802; aged 38. Mary Monro, his wife, died in the city of Williamsburg, on the 16th November, A. D., 1836; aged 72. Her mother was Sarah Blair, sister of Judge John Blair, of the U. S. Supreme Court. Sarah Blair was daughter of John Blair, Sr., who married Mary Munro, daughter of Rev. John Munro. Thomas Griffin Peachy<sup>2</sup> (son of said William Samuel and Mary Munro Peachy, was born on the 14th day of May, 1794. On the 9th day of October, A. D. 1817, he was married to Sally M. Campbell, of Norfolk. He died in the city of Richmond, Va., on the 21st June, A. D., 1864, aged 70 years, 1 month, 7 days. Sally M., the wife of Thomas Griffin Peachy, d. October 13, 1878. They had issue:

I. William Samuel Peachy, b. July 18, 1818.

II. Archibald C. Peachy, b. Oct. 8, 1820.

III. John Blair Peachy, b. June 19, 1823; d. Dec. 6. 1868. Unmarried.

IV. Thomas Griffin Peachy, b. Feb. 28, 1826; d. May 3, 1867.

V. Beverley St. George Tucker Peachy, b. Feb., 1828.

VI. Mary Munro Peachy, b. Mareh 14, 1831.

VII. Sally Cary Peachy, b. Jan. 20, 1837; d. Sept. 9, 1839.

VIII. Mary Munro Cary Peachy, b. July 20, 1841.

Married, in the city of Alexandria, Va., on Monday, the 9th day of October, 1843, by Rev. James Johnston, William S. Peachy, of the city of Williamsburg, State of Virginia, to Virginia Bland, youngest daughter of Bathurst Daingerfield, deceased.

Died, in the city of Williamsburg, on the 1st July, at 11 o'clock p. m., A. D. 1881, William Samuel Peachy in the 63rd year of his age.

The Peachey arms, as preserved on a seal of the late William S. Peachy, are the same as those of John Peachy, Esq., of Sussex county, England, granted in 1614: Az. a lion rampant, double queued erm. ducally gu (Burke). The crest of the seal differs in some measure, but it is identical with a crest of "John Peachey, Esq.," whose book-plate I have seen in Judge Beverley Tucker's library in an old copy of Chaucer's Poems—a demi-lion double queued erm. holding in the dexter paw a sword point upward.

(See Chapter XIX; William and Mary College Quarterly, Vol. VI, No. 4, April, 1898; Hayden's Va. Genealogies, p. 573; Letter from Dr. Lyon G. Tyler, Feb. 26, 1906; Letter from Mrs. Nora Doyle Levy, of Louisa, Va., dated December 9, 1905.)

Miles Cary<sup>1</sup>. Married Ann Taylor.

Thomas Cary<sup>2</sup>. Married Frances Milner.

Miles Cary<sup>3</sup>, of Warwick Co., d. 1724. Clerk of Court. Married ———.

Miles<sup>3</sup> had a large family, as given above.

I will only mention:

Miles Cary<sup>4</sup>, b. 1701; d. 1766. He was Clerk of Warwick, of Pear Tree Hall. Married, first, Hannah Armistead, by whom he had issue:

I. John Cary<sup>5</sup>, b. about 1745; d. 1795. Married, first, Sally Sclater. Married, second, Susanna, daughter of Gill Armistead, of New Kent.

II. Robert Cary<sup>5</sup>, d. in Buckingham, about 1763.

III. Rebecca Cary<sup>5</sup>. Married Rev. Miles Selden, who d. 1785.

IV. Elizabeth Cary<sup>5</sup>. Married Benjamin Watkins. Her aunt, by same name, is said to have married Benjamin Watkins, of Chesterfield Co., Va., and had numerous descendants.

Miles Cary<sup>4</sup>, of Pear Tree Hall. Married, second, ———.

He had a son:

Miles Cary<sup>5</sup>, of Pear Tree Hall. Married (January 1, 1797) Anne Moneure Robinson, b. March 2, 1775; d. November 25, 1842, daughter of Anthony Robinson and Mary Phillips.

Anne Robinson's brother, John Robinson, b. February 13, 1773; d. April 26, 1850. Married Agnes Conway Moneure, sister of William Moncure, b. at Clermont, and d. at Windsor Forest. William Moneure was father of Henry Wood Moncure, grandfather of the author.

Anne Moncure Robinson. Married Miles Cary<sup>5</sup>. She was left a widow at the age of twenty-one, with one child.

- I. Miles Cary<sup>6</sup>. Married Harriet Staples. Issue:
    - I. Anne Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married Richard N. Hudson.
  - II. Sarah Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married Wm. E. Elliott, of England; no children.
  - III. Anthony Robinson Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married Luey Wood. Issue:
    - I. Miles Davis Cary<sup>8</sup>.
    - II. Luey Cary<sup>8</sup>.
  - IV. Richard Melton Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married, first, Annie Dunbar, of Mass. Issue:
    - I. Lelia Cary. Married Mr. Parnell.
  - R. M. Cary. Married, second, Lucy Willson, of England. Issue:
    - I. Gladys Cary.
    - V. Mary Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married James A. Brown. No issue.
    - VI. Ellen Cary<sup>7</sup>, unmarried.
  - VII. John Staples Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married Sara Bourdon. Issue:
    - I. Bourdon Cary<sup>8</sup>.
    - II. Annie Cary<sup>8</sup>.
    - III. Mary Cary<sup>8</sup>.
    - IV. Richard Milton<sup>8</sup>, Jr.
  - VIII. Howard Cary<sup>7</sup>, unmarried; killed during the Civil War.
  - IX. Miles Cary<sup>7</sup>. Married Harriet Beadles. Issue:
    - I. Hattie Cary<sup>8</sup>. Married Sidney Johnston.
    - II. Miles Cary<sup>8</sup>.
    - X. Roberta Robinson Cary<sup>7</sup>. Unmarried.
- Anne Cary<sup>7</sup>, daughter of Miles Cary and Harriet Staples. Married Richard N. Hudson. They had issue:
- I. Anne Cary Hudson<sup>8</sup>. Married Lewis Finch, of Evergreen, Ala. Issue:
    - I. Kate Hudson Finch<sup>9</sup>.



- II. Francess C. Fineh<sup>o</sup>. Married Walter Lee. Issue:
  - I. Walter Lee<sup>10</sup>, Jr.
- III. Louise Fineh<sup>o</sup>.
  - II. Nora Doyle Hudson<sup>s</sup>. Married Leon Levy, of Louisa, Va. Issue:
    - I. Richard Hudson Levy<sup>o</sup>. Margaret Loekhart Robinson, of Baltimore. Issue:
      - I. Richard Hudson Levy<sup>10</sup>, Jr. He is the youngest descendant of Anne Moneure Robinson and Miles Cary<sup>5</sup>, of Pear Tree Hall.
- III. Bettie West Hudson<sup>s</sup>. Married James H. Patton. No issue.
- IV. Kate H. Hudson<sup>s</sup>. Married John Dunean Sawyer, of Keswick, Va. No issue.
- V. Cornelia Robinson Hudson<sup>s</sup>. Married Everett Perkins, of Roanoke, Va. Issue:
  - I. Helen Bartlett Perkins<sup>o</sup>.
  - II. Anne Cary Perkins<sup>o</sup>.
- VI. Richard N. Hudson<sup>s</sup>, Jr. Married Jessie L. Gregory, of Kentucky. Issue:
  - I. Virginia Cary Hudson<sup>o</sup>.

I have received two letters from Mrs. Nora Doyle Levy, which may be of interest to my readers:

MULBERRY, ISLAND, September 29, 1811.

MR. JOHN ROBINSON:—I was greatly obliged to you for your favours, of which I have two unanswered ones now before me. You must receive this in answer to them both, as I cannot tell when I shall have another opportunity. This I expect Mr. Humphrey Wynne, who is Sheriff for this county, will take charge of. I cannot say but I experienced some uneasiness in not hearing from my child, as it has bin some time since I had a letter from him, and it being a sickly season, which he seldom escaped when with me; but when I considered that he had his health up then better, and I was almost certain if anything of consequence shou'd be the matter with him, you would let me know, all these things contented me. You will receive enclosed in this the money for his Schooling, as it is very near twelve months now since he first went. Indeed, I am afraid it will be rather late by the time you get this. I think Miles told me he thought it was forty dollars, which the two notes amount to that I shall send for that purpose. You can never know, my dear Brother, how I feel indebted to you and his Aunt for taking of him and treating him as your own. I hope if he lives he will possess gratitude which, if he does, he can never

forget it. I have wished much for an opportunity to write to you ever Since I left Williamsburg. Brother & sister have been unlucky in having the girl who attended to their children to leave them, at a time, too, when they cannot procure another to take her place; while I was there Harriet was kind enough to take the trouble of them from sister and they all got so much attached to her that I prevailed on her not to leave them when I did, Saying I should write to you Soon, but did not think you wou'd have any objection to her Staying awhile. She consented with some reluctance, but I told her I knew Brother would give her something for her trouble, and about a fortnight ago brother was here and requested me to let her stay until the expiration of the year, provided you had no objection. I hope you will write me Soon, if only a short letter, & let me know, that I may inform him. Her staying their under the care of Brother and sister, I hope, will be no disadvantage to her at all, and at present I have not anything for her to doe. Our relations, I believe, are all tolerably well. Molly Howard has bin very sick, I've understood, but she has recovered. The people have bin very unhealthy with the bilious and ague & fever, as to myself, I am as well as usual, but have had a very sick family; not more so than I might have expected, though. I cannot tell you the Amount of the Sum left Aunt's Daughters; enough, tho, I believe, to assist them greatly. It was left them by a Great Aunt. I have some remembrance of her, her name was Dorothy Kemp, a near relation of our grandmother Phillips's.

Doe my Brother, make my Son write to me. I shall doe as you direct concerning his bed. I hope you will excuse this dreadful scrawl, for I know it is a horrid one; let me know whether he is a good boy or not, I shall be glad to know. I hope this will finde all well. Remember me to them all that enquire after me.

Your affectionet Sister,

ANNE CARY.

March 14, 1812. Warwick.

MY DEAR BROTHER:—It has bin sometime since I wrote to you, but I know you will excuse it, when you know it was not for want of inclination.

I understand from Miles, that you intend going from home this Spring. Shou'd this be the case, Brother, and you think my child can be taken from school, I must request you and his teacher (master) to permit him to come to see me, provided Anthony comes down with him. You can guess better than I can express to you the uneasiness I experienced concerning your family when I heard of that ever-to-be-remembered fire. For two days did I remain in the most dreadful suspense, before I heard yourself and family was out of it. Poor Mrs. Craig. Sincerely do I feel for her. I understand she has Lost another Daughter in Consequence of it.

I believe all our relations are well. I've not heard lately from Ann Throckmorton. Brother Starkey has taken up his old habit again. I suppose you have heard it. I heard yesterday Mr. Wm. Howard was very ill, our Niece, Mary H., has bin sick, but soon recovered enough to be

frollicking about with them. It appears to me as if they have endeavoured to See how many they could be. Mr. Prescud the first; Our Nephew, T. C.. the next. Billy was mistaken in telling of you concerning the pear Graft. Brother, I had a pareel engrafted for you and Brother A., but he did not attend to them as he should have done and they were destroyed, which I was very Sorry for; but have some now that I shall, if I can, save for you. Oh my Brother, when Shall I ever be thankful enough to you for yours and Mrs. Robinson's kiudness to my only child. Mrs. Portiaux sent me word a few days ago that he was well. She and Sister Robinson is on a visit in person. You tell me my child Shall not want while he is with you, oh, what a relief to me. I send him what I can. I am afraid from what you Say that you think I ought to dress him more than I doe. The Jacket I sent him was an old peace of casimer his unele gave him ever since he was first at Williamsburg, whieh I kept untill then, thinking he would be more in want than at that time. Dear Brother, if you could, write soon; tell Miles if he can Spare time, to let me know how you all are. I am very poorly with the headach. Adieu.

Yours, &c.,

ANN CARY.

#### ADDENDA TO CARY GENEALOGY.

William Cary, b. 1500; d. 1572.

Richard Cary, b. 1525; d. 1570.

William Cary, b. 1550; d. 1632.

John Cary of Bristol. Married Alice Hobson.

Col. Miles Cary, b. 1620; d. 1667. Married Anne Taylor.

Henry Cary, third child, b. 1650; d. 1720, of "The Forest," Warwick Co., Va.

Miles Cary, son of Henry Cary, of "The Forest." Married (1695) Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Cocke, of "Bremo," Henrico Co., Va.; d. 1724. Miles d. 1724.

Dorothea Cary, daughter of Miles Cary and Elizabeth Cocke. Married George Dudley, only son of the great George Dudley of England; left only one daughter, Dorothea Dudley, who married her first cousin, John Cary, Sr., son of Miles Cary and Miss Peyton (see above, Cary Genealogy). Left issue:

I. John Cary.

II. Dudley Cary.

III. Elizabeth Cary. Married a Mr. Gregory and moved to Georgia.

Dudley Cary was lieutenant of a company of militia formed in Gloucester County in 1775 and was married to Lucy Tabb,

November 11, 1775. He was also justice of the peace in Matthews County in 1791. Later he moved with his family to an estate he owned on an island off the coast of Georgia where he and many of his slaves died shortly after of yellow fever. His wife and children then moved to Athens, Ga., as did his brother John and sister Elizabeth, who had married Capt. Gregory. A son, Peyton Cary, who died in early manhood, engraved the seal which the University of Georgia still uses to stamp its diplomas, he being one of its early alumni. Dudley Cary and Lucy Tabb, his wife, had issue:

- I. Lucy Cary. Married Dr. Leland.
- II. Elizabeth Cary. Married Steven Thomas.
- III. Frances Cary. Married a Moore.
- IV. Edward Cary. Married, first, Lucinda Clayton; second, Mrs. Eliza Rutherford, née Howard.

Edward Cary and Lucinda Clayton had issue:

- I. Elizabeth Cary. Married George D. Henry.
  - II. Edward Cary.
  - III. George Cary. Married Miss Thweat.
- Issue by second marriage, Mrs. Eliza Rutherford, née Howard:
- IV. Charles Cary. Married Virginia Simmons.
  - V. Dudley Cary.
  - VI. Joseph Milton Cary. Married Lucy Jeannette Powell.

Elizabeth Cary and George D. Henry had issue:

- I. Edward Henry. Married Addie Goodwin.
- II. Lala Henry. Married Mr. Bunkley.
- III. Pauline Henry. Married John K. McDonald, of Athens, Ga.

Charles Cary and Virginia Simmons had issue:

- I. Mary Helen Cary.
- II. Eugenia G. Cary.
- III. Charles Cary.

Joseph Milton Cary and Lucy Jeanette Powell had issue:

- I. Arthur Powell Cary. Married Pearl Buckner. Issue:
  - I. Joseph Milton Cary, b. 1893.
  - II. Lucile Virginia Cary, b. 1895.
- III. Elizabeth Cary, b. 1898.
- IV. Arthur Powell Cary, b. 1899.
- II. Joseph Milton Cary.

III. Ida Lucile Cary. Married John Selmes Lowry, of St. Louis, Mo. Issue:

I. Arthur Cary Lowry, b. 1897.



DR. EDWARD H. CARY, OF DALLAS, TEXAS

To represent the Cary family at reunion of Jaquelin and Cary descendants, August 13-14, 1907, at Jamestown Exposition; a descendant of Miles Cary and Ann Taylor

II. John Selmes Lowry, b. Dec. 8, 1906, the next youngest child mentioned in this book. Mrs. I. L. Bedwell's daughter, Ida Lewis, being born Dec. 10, 1906.

IV. Edward Henry Cary, M. D., of Dallas, Texas.

Mary Helen Cary, daughter of Charles Cary and Virginia Simmons, b. March 13, 1859, at Chunnenugge, Ala. Married Sidney Cicero Shivers, of Sparta, Hancock Co., Ga.

Eugenia Gertrude Cary, b. at Chunnenugge Ridge, Ala., September 24, 1861. Married (October 17, 1888) Willard Preston Beman. Issue:

I. Helen Preston Beman, b. Aug. 4, 1889.

II. Lucy Douglas Beman, b. Oct. 23, 1897.

Charles S. Cary, son of Charles Cary and Virginia Simmons. Married (December 14, 1898) Mary Elizabeth Rives. Issue:

I. Charles Williamson Cary, b. Feb. 10, 1900.

II. George Rives Cary, b. July 8, 1902.

Norborne Berkeley Powell and Eliza Ann Rebeeca Holmes Powell had issue:

I. Virginia Amanda Powell, b. in Jasper Co., Georgia, Oct. 21, 1819; d. Jan. 14, 1907, Washington, D. C. Married Col. Homer Blackmon.

II. Richard Holmes Powell. Married Mary Ann Blackmon.

III. Anastasia Powell. Married Dr. James Foster.

IV. Mary Carter Powell. Married James Carter.

V. Nathaniel Powell.

VI. James Lucas Powell. Married Frances Thompson.

VII. Lucy Jeanette Powell. Married Joseph Milton Cary. Issue given above.

Virginia Amanda Powell. Married Col. Homer Blackmon and had issue:

I. Eugenia Holmes Blackmon, b. May 5, 1842, Macon Co., Ala.

II. John P. Blackmon, d. without issue.

III. Mary Eliza Blackmon, b. Oct. 1839, Macon Co., Ala.; d. June 19, 1856, at Chunnenugge, Ala., without issue.

IV. Rebecca Beatrice Blackmon, b. July 4, 1845, at Chunnenugge, Macon Co., Ala.; d. Nov. 20, 1877, Union Springs, Ala. Married Col. Loeke. No issue.

V. Virginia Anastasia Blackmon, b. 1847, at Chunnenugge, Ala.

VI. Ida Powell Blackmon, b. June 29, 1853, at Chunnenugge, Ala.



VII. Mary Eliza Blackmon, b. 1857, at Chunnenugge, Macon Co., Ala.

Richard Holmes Powell. Married Mary Ann Blackmon and had issue:

- I. Virginia Eliza Powell. Married Capt. A. R. Pickett.
- II. Nathaniel Powell, d. without issue.
- III. Norborne Berkeley Powell.
- IV. Homer Powell, d. without issue.
- V. James Blackmon Powell. Married Almyra Brown.
- VI. Mary Carter Powell.
- VII. Thomas Powell.
- VIII. Massy Powell.

Annastasia Powell. Married Dr. James Foster and had issue:

- I. Norborne Foster, d. without issue.
  - II. Mary Cooper Foster. Married A. J. Pittman.
- Mary Carter Powell. Married James Carter. Issue:

I. Mary Carter. Married Capt. E. T. Randle.

James Lucas Powell. Married Frances Thompson and had issue:

- I. Charles James Powell, d. without issue.
- II. Mary Eliza Powell. Married A. J. Pittman.
- III. Norborne Berkeley Powell, d. without issue.
- IV. Richard Holmes Powell, d. without issue.
- V. Rebecca Beatrice Powell, d. without issue.
- VI. Benjamin F. Powell. Married Frances Crewdston.
- VII. James Lucas Powell. Married A. E. Singleton.

Eugenia Holmes Blackmon, daughter of Homer and Virginia A. Blackmon. Married, first, Locke Weems; second, Col. James Goodwin. Issue:

- I. Locke Ira (or Ina) Weems.

Issue by second marriage:

- II. Virginia Powell Goodwin.
- III. Beatrice Seymour Goodwin.

Virginia Anastasia Blackmon. Married Henley Vanner Napier and had issue:

- I. John Blackmon Napier.
- II. Anastasia Napier.
- III. Hendley Vanner Napier.
- IV. Ida Page Napier.

Virginia Eliza Powell, daughter of Richard Holmes Powell and Mary Ann Blackmon. Married Captain A. H. Pickett and had issue:

- I. Marie Powell Pickett. Married Rev. L. W. Johnston.
- II. Ada Bledsoe Pickett. Married J. Ogburn.
- III. Ethel Claire Pickett. Married Clifford Steed.
- IV. Anastasia Robinson Pickett. Married Sands S. Weems.
- V. Alma Holmes Pickett. Married ———.
- VI. Virginia Llewellyn Pickett. (Pickett Family, Volume I.)

James Blackmon Powell, son of Richard Holmes Powell and Mary Ann Blackmon. Married Almyra Brown and had issue:

- I. Richard Holmes Powell. Married Julia Riggs.
- II. Benjamin Phill Powell.
- III. James Blackmon Powell.
- IV. Floyd Berkeley Powell.
- V. Alto W. Powell, d. without issue.

Mary Cooper Foster, daughter of Anastasia Powell and Dr. James Foster. Married A. J. Pittman and had issue:

- I. Anastasia Pittman.
- II. James Foster Pittman.
- III. Virginia Pittman.
- IV. Norborne Pittman.
- V. Mary Cooper Pittman.
- VI. Andrew Jackson Pittman.

Mary Carter, daughter of Mary Carter Powell and James Carter. Married Capt. E. T. Randle and had issue:

- I. Anne Eliza Randle.
- II. Emily Colquit Randle.
- III. Mary Carter Randle.
- IV. Edmond T. Randle.
- V. Sarah Hines Randle.
- VI. Lucy Powell Randle.
- VII. James Henry Randle.

Mary Eliza Powell, daughter of James Lucas and Frances Thompson. Married A. J. Pittman and had issue:

- I. Hugh Pittman.
- II. James Lucas Pittman.

James Lucas Powell, daughter of James Lucas Powell and Frances Thompson. Married Judge A. E. Singleton, Judge of Probate, Bullock County, Union Springs, Ala. They had issue:

- I. Nannie Singleton.
- II. Lucile Singleton.
- III. Alexander Edward Singleton.
- IV. Powell Singleton.
- V. Frances Singleton.
- VI. Burnett Eley Singleton.
- VII. Charles Brown Singleton.

Lucas Powell, b. near ———.

John and Anne (Sweeney) Cary had issue:

- I. John Cary. Married Anna Cooper and moved to the Southwest.
- II. Miles Cary, d. in Mississippi, leaving one son and three daughters.

Gill Armistead and Sally (Baytop) Cary had issue:

- I. John B. Cary, formerly of Hampton, now of Richmond; colonel in the Confederate States Army and later Superintendent of the Schools in Richmond. Col. John B. Cary married Columbia Hudgins of Mathews County, Virginia.
- II. Dr. Nathaniel R. Cary, b. 18——; d. 1874. Married Susan Fisher.
- III. Richard Miles Cary, of Hampton and Petersburg, member of Petersburg Militia, severely wounded in the defense of Petersburg, June 9, 1864. Married Hannah, daughter of John Cary, of Whitney.
- IV. Gill A. Cary, b. 1831; d. 1880, lieutenant Confederate States Cavalry. Married Virginia Smith, of South Carolina.

Col. John B. and Columbia (Hudgins) Cary had issue:

- I. Gilleria Cary.
- II. Effie Cary.
- III. Sally Cary.
- IV. Archibald Cary.
- V. Elizabeth Cary.

Dr. Nathaniel R. and Susan (Fisher) Cary had issue:

- I. Sally Cary.
- II. Juliet Cary.
- III. Susan Cary.

Richard Miles and Hannah (Cary) Cary had issue:

- I. Richard Cary.
- II. Sally Cary.
- III. Martha Cary.
- IV. Lelia Cary.
- V. Clara Cary.

Gill Armistead and Virginia (Smith) Cary had issue:

- I. Belle Cary.
- II. Mathew Cary.

Thomas and Dorothy (Phillipson) Cary had issue:

- I. Robert Cary, of Chesterfield. Married Mary, daughter of William Jennings, of Amelia, Va.
- II. Thomas Cary, of Chesterfield; d. 1784.

Robert and Mary (Jennings) Cary had issue:

- I. Anne Cary.
- II. Dorothy Cary.
- III. Judith Cary.
- IV. Elizabeth Cary.
- V. Robert Cary, b. 1768. Married a daughter of Edward Branch.
- VI. Wilson Cary, b. 1770. Married Judith Baker, removed to Kentucky.
- VII. Henry Cary, b. 1771. Married Elizabeth Morrisette, and moved to Kentucky.
- VIII. Miles Cary, b. 1776; d. 1814. Married Obedience Brummell, of Chesterfield.
- IX. Nathaniel Cary.

Miles Cary and Obedience (Brummell) Cary had issue:

- I. Nelson Cary, b. 1794. Married Anna Blount and had issue:
  - I. Robert Henry Cary.
  - II. John Pettus Cary.
- III. Milton Cary, b. 1796. Married Phœbe Haneoek, and settled in Greenbrier Co., Va.

## THE CARY FAMILY OF VIRGINIA.

Miles and Elizabeth (Cocke) Cary had issue:

- I. Miles Cary, of "Pear Tree Hall," Warwick; clerk of that county; d. 1766. Married, first, Hannah, daughter of William Armistead, of Elizabeth City Co.; secondly, Mrs. Anne Howard and had no issue by second marriage.
- II. Thomas Cary, of "The Lodge," York Co., and after 1753, of Chesterfield Co.; d. 1755. Married Dorothy, daughter of Dr. Robert Phillipson, of York Co.
- III. Nathaniel Cary.
- IV. Bridget Cary.
- V. Dorothy Cary.
- VI. Martha Cary.
- VII. Anne Cary. Married Benjamin Watkins, of Chesterfield.
- VIII. Elizabeth Cary.

Miles and Hannah (Armistead) Cary had issue:

- I. Miles Cary, of Southampton Co., b. May 28, 1727; d. Sept. 3, 1763. Married (May 23, 1752) Elizabeth Taylor.
- II. Richard Cary, of Warwick Co., b. 1739 (?); d. Nov. 3, 1789. Clerk of Warwick Co., 1764, member of the House Committee of Safety, 1774-6; of the convention of 1776 and House of Delegates 1776, from Warwick; appointed a judge of the Court of Admiralty, Dec. 27, 1776, and of the general court, Dec. 24, 1788. Married Mary Cole.
- III. Colonel John Cary, of Elizabeth City, b. 1745; d. 1795, member of the county committee, 1774, and a captain in the Revolutionary army 1775. Married, first, Sallie Slaughter, and had Miles, b. 1767; married, second, Susan, daughter of Gill Armistead, of New Kent.
- IV. Robert Cary, d. in Buckingham about 1803, and left no issue.
- V. Anne Cary. Married ——— Thompkins.

Miles and Elizabeth (Taylor) Cary had issue:

- I. Colonel Miles Cary, b. Sept. 1757; d. 1809. Married Elizabeth, widow of Colonel William Yates and a daughter of George Booth.

- II. Nathaniel Cary, b. Oct. 19, 1763; d. Nov. 15, 1767.
- III. Elizabeth Cary. Married (1774) William Hay, of Surry. Miles and Elizabeth (Booth) Cary had issue:

- I. George Booth Cary, of Southampton, member of Congress 1841-3; d. without issue.
  - II. Daughter. Married Judge Gholson.
- Judge Richard and Mary (Cole) Cary had issue:
- I. Richard Cary, of Warwick Co., member of the House of Delegates, 1787, 1798, 1799, 1800 and probably other years; member of the convention of 1788. Married Catherine Dudley.

- II. Miles Cary, b. 1763; d. 1797. Married Anne Robinson. Richard and Catherine (Dudley) Cary had issue:

- I. Richard Cary, d. without issue at the age of thirty.
- II. Miles Cary, of Warwick. Married Arianna, daughter of William and Mary (Digges) Hill, and had Arianna, married A. F. Kuper, of Richmond, and Catherine, married James Powers, of Richmond.

Miles and Anne (Robinson) Cary had a son Miles, who was born 1797. Married Harriet C. Staples and died 1847, leaving issue:

- I. Anthony Cary.
  - II. Richard Milton Cary, colonel of the 13th Virginia Infantry, Confederate States Army. Married Anne Dunbar.
- III. John Cary.
  - IV. David K. Cary.
  - V. Miles Cary.
  - VI. Ann Cary.
  - VII. Ellen Cary.
  - VIII. Sarah Cary.
  - IX. Robert Cary.

Colonel John and Susan (Armistead) Cary had issue:

- I. Miles Cary, b. 1767; d. 1850, member of the House of Delegates from Warwick, 1823-26; removed to Campbell Co. Married Mrs. Page (née Mallory).
- II. John Cary, of Hampton, b. 1770; d. 1822. Married Anne Wythe Sweeny, niece of George Wythe.
- III. Nathaniel, d. young.



- IV. Colonel Gill Armistead, of Hampton, b. 1783; d. 1843.  
Married Sallie Baytop.
- V. Nathaniel Cary, b. 1792; d. unmarried, 1832.
- VI. Robert Cary.
- VII. Hannah A. Cary. Married Horace Whiting.
- VIII. Judith R. Cary. Married Henry Howard.
- IX. Susan Cary, b. 1791; d. 1873.
- Miles and ——— (Mallory-Page) Cary had issue:
  - I. John Cary, of Lynchburg and Richmond, b. 1802; d. 1868. Married Susan Lambeth.
  - II. Daughter. Married ——— Hunt.
  - III. Daughter Married ——— Nelson.
- John and Susan (Lambeth) Cary had issue:
  - I. Miles Cary, of Richmond. Married ——— Schooler and had issue: Mrs. Upshur, Mrs. Gentry and Alfred.
  - II. George Cary, of Richmond.
  - III. John Cary, of New York.
  - IV. Francis Mallory Cary, of Richmond.
  - V. Eliza Cary. Married ——— Hoppe.
  - VI. Virginia Cary.
- John and Anne (Sweeny) Cary had issue:
  - I. John Cary. Married Anna Cooper and moved to the southwest, where he died, leaving a daughter.
  - II. Miles Cary, d. at Pontotoc, Mississippi, leaving one son and three daughters.
- Gill A. and Sally (Baytop) Cary had issue:
  - II. John B. Cary, formerly of Hampton, now of Richmond.
- Major Thomas Cary, of Magpie Swamp. Married ———; d. 1708, leaving issue:
  - I. Thomas Cary, of Warwick Co., b. 1678; d. 1764, was Sheriff of Warwick Co. from 1712 to 1713. Married ———, and left issue:
    - I. Thomas Cary, d. 1790, leaving a son, William, who d. in 1808, leaving issue:
      - I. William Miles Cary.
      - II. Elizabeth Cary. Married Richard Whitaker, a native Englishman, who came from England and settled in North Carolina.
      - III. A Daughter. Married G. Whitaker.

NOTE. The following items are copied from Whaler's History of North Carolina, now out of print:

Cary Whitaker, graduated from North Carolina University in 1802.

Wilson Cary Whitaker, graduated from North Carolina University, 1851.

Spear Whitaker, of Halifax County, member of the House of Commons, 1838. Attorney General of State, 1842.

Elizabeth Cary Whitaker, daughter of Elizabeth Cary and Richard Whitaker, both of Halifax County, North Carolina. Married Edward Morris, a minister of the Gospel, the year the independence was declared; enlisted in the army of Virginia, when he was twenty-three years of age. General George Washington relieved him from military duty, and gave him the position and rank of Chaplain. After the war he went to North Carolina in 1790, where he married.

Edward Morris, son of Cornelius Morris and Mary Dieken. Cornelius was of Irish descent and Mary Dieken of Scotch descent.

Edward Morris and Elizabeth Cary Whitaker had eight children, five daughters and three sons. The sixth child was Mary Dieken Morris. Married (1837) Henry Fuller Smith, who was reared in Virginia, but went to Wilson County Tennessee, where he married. Mary Dieken Morris, b. 1802; moved in 1812, with her parents, to Wilson County Tennessee. Being the daughter of a Revolutionary soldier, she was made an honorary member of the National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution and presented with a gold souvenir spoon.

Henry Fuller Smith and Mary Dieken Morris had issue:

- I. Martha Louise Smith.
- II. Edward Morris Smith.
- III. Lucy Coleman Smith.
- IV. Henry Clay Smith.

Martha Louise Smith. Married (1856) Edwin Ruthven Pennebaker and had issue:

- I. Mary Howard Pennebaker.
- II. Edwin Ruthven Pennebaker.
- III. Lena Owen Pennebaker.
- IV. Aliee Pennebaker.
- V. Lueile Pennebaker.

Edward Morris Smith, second child of Henry Fuller Smith and Mary Dieken, lives in Texas and has six children.

Lucy Coleman Smith, third child of Henry Fuller Smith and Mary Dicken Morris. Married (1875) Joseph N. Mackenzie. She is a widow, living at Lebanon, Tennessee. Issue:

- I. Stuart Mackenzie.
- II. Henry Mackenzie.
- III. Mary Morris Mackenzie.

Henry Clay Smith, fourth child of M. D. Morris and H. F. Smith. Married Martha Shutt, who died without issue. Married, second, a younger sister of his first wife. Issue:

- I. Stokes Smith.
- II. Owen Smith.

Mrs. Emma S. Smith and her two sons are living near Gallatin, Tennessee.

Mary Howard Pennebaker. Married (1878) Frazor Titus Edmundson. Issue:

- I. James Howard Edmundson.
- II. Martha Titus Edmundson.

All living at 500 Linden Street, Memphis, Tennessee.

Edwin Ruthven Pennebaker. Married (1875) Katherine Bostick. Issue:

- I. Frank Wilson Pennebaker.
- II. Edwin Ruthven Pennebaker.

All living at 715 Walnut Street, Memphis, Tennessee.

Lena Owen Pennebaker. Married (1882) Samuel Golladay. She is a widow. Issue:

- I. George Shawl Golladay.
- II. Mary Howard Golladay.
- III. Gladys Golladay.

All now living in Lebanon, Tennessee.

Alice Pennebaker, b. 1863. Married (1882) Edward Taylor Campbell. Issue:

- I. Edwin Taylor Campbell.
- II. Lucile Cary Campbell.

Residence ——— St. Louis, Mo.

Lucile Pennebaker. Married (1891) David J. Matteson. Issue:

- I. Dorothy Matteson.

Residence 5925 Horton Place, St. Louis, Mo.

## CHAPTER V

## THE RANDOLPH FAMILY.



RANDOLPH COAT-OF-ARMS

The arms are described as follows:

Gules, a cross fleury, argent, bearing five mullets uierced, sable.

Crest—An antelope erased, holding in the mouth a baton.

Motto—*Parique sentiat* (To speak what he thinks).

- I. Archibald Cary. Married (May 31, 1744) Mary Randolph, of Curl's Neck.
- II. Anne Cary, b. Feb. 1745. Married (Nov. 18, 1761) Thomas Mann Randolph, of Tuckahoe, Goochland Co., Va.
- III. Jane Cary, b. Feb. 12, 1751. Married (1768) Thomas Isham Randolph, of Dungenness, Goochland Co., Va.

The following is copied from the *Baltimore Sun*, March 26, 1904:

Perhaps the largest connection in Virginia is that of the Randolphs. The first Colonial settler, William, left seven sons and two daughters, whose descendants are to be found in every state in the Union. Robert

Randolph married Rose, daughter of Thomas Roberts, of Hawkhurst, Kent, England. They had one child, William, whose wife was Dorothy, daughter of Richard Law and widow of Thomas West. Their first son was Thomas, the poet, whose works have been edited by Hazlett. Their second son, Richard, married Eliza, daughter of Richard Ryland, and had four sons and four daughters.

The second son of this union was William Randolph, who was the progenitor of the numerous family of Randolphs in America. He married Mary Isham, of the Isham family of Northamptonshire, England, baronets. (Contributed by Edward C. Meade.)

#### FIRST GENERATION.

We are informed, by one of the descendants, that William Randolph bought at one time the whole of Sir Thomas Dale's settlement, amounting to five thousand acres of land, and as much more of other persons, reaching down to Four Mile Creek, on James River. The two settlements of Varina and Curls, so long the property and abodes of the Randolphs, were on this estate. The estate of Bacon, the rebel, once formed a part of this tract, and there are still some remains of the fort which he erected, when contending with the Indians.

The estate called Varina, which continued longest in possession of the Randolphs, was so called from a place of that name in Spain, because the tobacco raised at both places so resembled each other in flavor.

The Randolphs are connected not only with the Episcopal Church, but ministry, both in England and America.

Robert Randolph, of Hams, County Sussex, England, Gent. Married Rose Roberts, of Hawkhurst, County Kent, England. Besides other children they had:

William Randolph, b. 1572; d. 1660. Married, secondly, Dorothy Lane. Their son:

Richard Randolph, b. Feb. 22, 1627; d. 1671, in Dublin, Ireland. Married Elizabeth Ryland, daughter of Richard Ryland, and settled at "Morton Hall," Warwickshire, England. Their second son:

William Randolph, b. 1651; d. April 15, 1711. The following inscription was copied from his tombstone at Turkey Island, by Dr. Robert C. Randolph, of New Market, Clarke Co., Va.:

Col. William Randolph of Warwickshire, but late of Virginia, Gent., died April 11, 1711.

Mrs. Mary Randolph, his only wife. She was the daughter of Mr. Henry Isham by Catherine his wife. He was of Northamptonshire, but late of Virginia, Gent.

In 1674 he emigrated to Virginia and settled at Turkey Island, on James River, Henrico County, Va. Was clerk of Henrico County from 1683 to 1711; was member of the House of Burgesses from 1685 to 1699 and from 1703 to 1705, and again in 1710; Speaker of the House, 1690; Clerk of the House, 1702; Attorney General, 1696, and of the Royal Council a member. There is on file at Henrico Court House a paper dated 1698 bearing signature and a fine impression of his arms—"Gu, upon a cross or, fin mullets gu."

Col. William Randolph married (1680) Mary Isham, daughter of Henry Isham, of Burmuda Hundred on James River, and Catherine, his wife (maiden name unknown). Their children, arranged in order, by John Randolph of Roanoke, are as follows:

1. William Randolph, Jr., known as Councillor Randolph, b. at Turkey Island, Nov. 1681. Married (1705) Elizabeth Beverly.
2. Thomas Randolph, b. at Turkey Island, June, 1683, settled at Tuckahoe on James River, Goochland Co., Va. Married (1710) Judith Churchill.
3. Isham Randolph, b. at Turkey Island, Dec. 1684, settled at Dungenness, Goochland Co., Va. Married (1717) Jane Rogers, of Shadgate Street, London, Eng.
4. Richard Randolph, b. at Turkey Island, May, 1686, settled at Curls Neck. Married (1714) Jane Bolling.
5. Henry Randolph, b. Oct. 1687; d. unmarried, in England and willed his share of Curls estate to Richard.
6. Sir John Randolph, Knight, b. at Turkey Island, April, 1689; settled in Williamsburg, Va. Married (1718) Susanna Beverly, sister of his brother William's wife.
7. Edward Randolph, b. Oct. 1690, settled in Bristol, Eng. Married (1715) Miss Grosvenor, of Bristol, and had among other children Edward Randolph, Jr., who married Lucy Harrison; Elizabeth, married Mr. Yates, of Gloucester Co.; Mary, married Rev. Robert Yates. Their



daughter, Catherine, married Dr. Robert Wellford, a surgeon in the English army, who settled in Fredericksburg. (See Secretary Nelson's record.)

8. Mary Randolph, b. at Turkey Island, 1692. Married (1712) Capt. John Stith. Their only son, Rev. William Stith, was president of William and Mary College and historian of Va. He wrote his "History of Virginia" in 1740; died at William and Mary College, 1752. He married (Feb. 1744) Judith Randolph, of Tuckahoe. Mary Stith, daughter of Capt. John Stith and Mary, née Randolph, married Rev. William Dawson, D. D., second president of William and Mary College. Their daughter, Mary Dawson, married Ludwell Grymes. Their daughter, Mary, married Rev. Walker Maury, of Norfolk, Va. Their daughter, Anne, married Maj. Isaac Hite.

9. Elizabeth Randolph, b. at Turkey Island 1695, youngest child of Col. William Randolph and Mary, née Isham. Married (1711) Richard Bland, of Jordan's Point on James River. She was his second wife and d. Jan. 22, 1720. Among other children they had:

Mary Bland, b. 1712. Married (1728) Henry Lee, of Lee Hall. Their third son and fourth child was Henry Lee, Jr., b. 1733. Married (1755) Lucy Grymes (Washington's "Lowland Beauty"). Their son was Gen. "Light Horse" Harry Lee, father of the illustrious Gen. Robert E. Lee.

Richard Bland, Jr., of Jordan's Point on James River, was member of the House of Burgesses; was in the Convention of 1775, and member of the first American Congress at Philadelphia. He married Anne Poythress.

Theodoric Bland, youngest child of Richard Bland, of Jordan's Point, and Elizabeth, née Randolph, b. 1720, just before his mother died.

II. William Randolph, known as Councillor Randolph of Turkey Island, Henrico Co., Va., eldest child of William Randolph, progenitor of the family in Virginia, and Mary, née Isham, was b. 1681; d. Oct. 19, 1741. He inherited Turkey Island

and was buried there. On the slab which covers his grave there is a lengthy inscription, which can be found in the Page Family History.

Councillor William Randolph married (1705) Elizabeth Peyton Beverly, daughter of Peter Beverly and Eliza Peyton, his wife, of Gloucester Co., Va. Issue five children:

1. Beverly Randolph, b. at Turkey Island 1706, son of Councillor Randolph and Eliza, née Peyton. Married (1734) a Miss Lightfoot, and d. without issue.
2. Peter Randolph, b. at Turkey Island 1708, son of Councillor Randolph and Eliza, née Peyton, lived at Chatsworth. Married (1733) Lucy Bolling, daughter of Robert Bolling, and had four children, viz.: William, Beverly, Robert and Ann. Beverly was b. at Chatsworth 1734, and married Martha Cooke. He died at his residence "Green Creek," in Feb. 1797. He succeeded Edmond Randolph as Gov. of Virginia, Dec. 1, 1788, and served until Dec. 1, 1791. He was succeeded by Gen. "Light Horse" Harry Lee.
3. William Randolph, b. 1710, son of Councillor Randolph and Eliza, née Peyton, settled at "Milton," Henrico Co., Va. Married (1735) Anne, daughter of Benj. Harrison, of Berkley on James River, Virginia, and Anne, née Carter. Issue:
  1. William Randolph, b. 1736.
  2. Peyton Randolph, b. 1738. Married (1763) his cousin, Lucy Harrison. They had three children: Betty Randolph, Kidder Randolph and Peyton Randolph, who married Anne, daughter of James Innes, Atty. Gen. of Va. His only son, James Innes Randolph, married Susan, daughter of Capt. Addison Armistead, U. S. Army.
  3. Anne Randolph, b. 1740. Married (1760) Benj. Harrison, of Brandon, on James River, Va. No issue.
  4. Elizabeth Randolph, b. 1742. Married (1762) Philip Grymes, of Middlesex Co., Va.
  5. Lucy Randolph, b. 1744. Married (1764) Lewis Burwell, of King's Mill, York Co., Va.

4. Daughter Randolph, daughter of Councillor Randolph and Eliza, née Peyton, b 1718. Married — Priece.
5. Elizabeth Randolph, b. 1725. Married (1745) Col. John Chiswell and had four children: 1. Lucy Chiswell, married (Nov. 24, 1770) Col. William Nelson of "The Dorrile," Hanover Co., Va.; 2. Susan R. Chiswell, married Speaker John Robinson, of the Virginia House of Burgesses, and had issue; 3. Daughter Chiswell, married Warren Lewis; 4. Elizabeth Chiswell, married Charles Carter, of Ludlow. Col. John Chiswell and Elizabeth, née Randolph, had no sons, so the name of Chiswell as a surname in Virginia is extinct. It is believed it was originally written De Choiseul.

II. Thomas Randolph, of Tuekahoe on James River, Goehland Co., Va., second son and child of William Randolph, progenitor of the family in Virginia, and Mary, née Isham, was b. at Turkey Island, Henrico Co., Va., 1683. He married (1710) Judith Churchill, of Middlesex Co., Va. There appears to be some uncertainty as to who Thomas Randolph of Tuekahoe married. Rev. Philip Slaughter in his "History of Bristol Parish," p. 214, and Browning in his "Americans of Royal Descent," both say she was a Miss Fleming. On the other hand, Mrs. Ellen Wayles Randolph Harrison, of Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., states her name was Judith Churchill, and that no marriage took place between Randolph and Fleming until a later period. Mr. Wilson M. Cary agrees with her. The children of Thomas Randolph of Tuekahoe and Judith Churchill were three—namely:

1. William Randolph, b. at Tuekahoe in 1712. Married (1735) Maria Judith Page, only daughter of Hon. Mann Page, of Rosewell, Gloucester Co., Va., and Judith Wormeley, his first wife.
2. Judith Randolph, b. at Tuekahoe 1724. Married (Feb. 1744) Rev. Wm. Stith, president of William and Mary College.
3. Mary Randolph, b. at Tuekahoe 1726. Married (1746) William Keith. These were ancestors of Chief Justice John Marshall.

III. William Randolph, of Tuekahoe on James River, eldest son of Thomas Randolph and Judith, née Churchill, b. 1712; d.

1745. Married (1735) Maria Judith Page, daughter of Hon. Mann Page, of Rosewell, and Judith, née Wormeley, his first wife. Issue four children:

1. Mary Judith Randolph, b. 1736. Married (1756) Edmond Berkeley, Jr., of Barn Elms, Middlesex Co., Va. (was his first wife). He was the eldest son of Col. Edmond Berkeley and Mary, née Nelson, daughter of Thomas Nelson, of Yorktown, Va., known as Scotch Tom, and Margaret, née Reid, his first wife, who married Joseph Clayton. Edmond Berkeley, Jr., married, secondly, Mary Burwell. Issue: Norbourn, Carter, William, Betsey, who married Churchill; Lucy, who married Hepanon; Alice, who married Fontaine; Sally, and Lewis.
2. Mary Randolph, b. 1738. Married (1758) Tarlton Fleming, of Rock Castle, Goochland Co., Va. This was the first connection between the Randolphs and Flemings.
3. Thomas Mann Randolph, b. at Tuckahoe on James River 1741, only son of William Randolph, of Tuckahoe. He married (1761) Anne Cary.
4. Priscilla Randolph, b. at Tuckahoe, unmarried.

IV. Thomas Mann Randolph, of Tuckahoe on James River, only son of William Randolph of Tuckahoe and Maria Judith, née Page, was b. 1741. Married, first (Nov. 18, 1761), Anne, eldest child of Col. Archibald Cary, of Amptill, Chesterfield Co., Va., and Mary, née Randolph, of Curls Neck on James River, Henrico Co., Va. Issue, thirteen children:

1. Mary Randolph, b. Aug. 9, 1762. Married (1782) David Meade Randolph, of Presque Isle on James River, Va. She was known as "the Queen." Of their children, Beverly was a clerk in the United States Treasury, at Washington, D. C., and three of this sons, James, Maury and Richard, were in the employment of the Baltimore and Ohio R. R. Co.
2. Henry Cary Randolph, b. 1763; d. in infancy.
3. Elizabeth Randolph, b. 1765. Married (1785) Robert Pleasants, of Filmer.
4. Thomas Mann Randolph, Jr., Gov. of Va., b. at Tuckahoe, Goochland Co., Va., 1767; removed to Edge Hill,

- Albemarle Co., Va. Married (1790) Martha Jefferson, daughter of Thomas Jefferson, President of U. S.
5. William Randolph, b. at Tuekahoe 1769. Married (1794) Luey Bolling Randolph, daughter of Beverly Randolph, of Cumberland Co., Va. Left two sons, viz.:
    1. William Fitzhugh Randolph. Married Jane Cary Harrison, of Clifton, Cumberland Co., Va. She became entirely blind. Her two sons, Beverly Randolph and William Easton Randolph, resided near her at Millwood, Clarke Co., Va. William married Susan Randolph, daughter of Dr. Robert C. Randolph, of Newmarket, Clarke Co., Va. Her only daughter married George Tabb, of Gloucester Co., Va.
    2. Beverly Randolph married Miss Mayor, of Pennsylvania. They left one son, William Mayor Randolph, who removed to St. Louis, Mo.
  6. Archibald Cary Randolph, b. 1771; d. in infancy.
  7. Judith Randolph, b. 1773. Married (1793) her cousin, Richard Randolph, of Bigarre, who was a brother of John Randolph of Roanoke. They had one son, who was a deaf mute; who left a large property to be divided among his heirs-at-law. Col. Thomas Jefferson Randolph, of Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., received *forty dollars* from the executors.
  8. Anne Cary Randolph, b. at Tuekahoe 1775. Married (1795) Gouverneur Morris, of Morrisania, N. Y., U. S. minister to France.
  9. Jane Cary Randolph, b. at Tuekahoe 1777. Married (1797) Thomas Easton Randolph, of Bristol, Eng., and had six children:
    1. Mann Randolph, Capt. U. S. Navy.
    2. Dr. James Randolph, of Tallahassee, Fla. Married Miss Heywood.
    3. Lucy Randolph. Married Mr. Parkhill, of Jacksonville, Fla.
    4. Harriet Randolph. Married Dr. Willis. No issue.
    5. Elizabeth Randolph. Married Francis Wayles Eppes.
    6. Dr. Arthur Randolph, of Tallahassee, Fla. Married Miss Duval, and left children.

10. Dr. John Randolph, b. at Tuckahoe, Goochland Co., Va. 1779; removed to Middle Quarter, in the same county. He married (1804) Judith Lewis, of Amelia Co., Va. Their eldest son, William Lewis Randolph, married Margaret, daughter of Col. Thomas Jefferson Randolph, of Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., and had issue:
  - a. William L. Randolph, Jr. Married (1866) Agnes Dillon, of Savannah, Ga. They reside near Charlottesville, Albemarle Co., Va., and have five children.
  - b. Margaret Randolph. Married Edward C. Randolph and left four children.
11. George Washington Randolph, b. 1781; d. an infant.
12. Harriet Randolph, b. 1783. Married (about 1803) H. Richard Harkley, of New York. Consul to Cadiz. He d. leaving two daughters—one of whom married Capt. Talcott and had several children. One son, Randolph Taleott, lived in Richmond.
13. Virginia Randolph, b. at Tuckahoe, Goochland Co., Va., Jan. 31, 1786. She married at Monticello, Albemarle Co., Va. (Aug. 28, 1805), Wilson Jefferson Cary, of Carysbrooke, Fluvanna Co., Va. He was a great-nephew of Thomas Jefferson, President of United States. They had five children.

Thomas Mann Randolph, of Tuckahoe, married, secondly (1790), Gabriella Harvey, by whom he had another Thomas Mann Randolph, who was subsequently Gov. Thomas Mann Randolph, of Edge Hill.

Thomas Mann Randolph, son of Gabriella, née Harvey, married, first, Harriet Wilson. Issue:

1. John Randolph. Married Margaret Timberlake, of Washington, D. C.
2. Mary Randolph. Married John, son of Professor Chapman, M. D., of Philadelphia, Pa.
3. Margaret Randolph. Married F. A. Donkins.
4. Harriet Randolph. Married Albert S. White.

Thomas Mann Randolph, son of Gabriella, née Harvey, married, secondly, Miss Patterson. Issue:

Henry Randolph, of Washington, D. C., clerk in one of the departments.



Daughter Randolph. Married Mr. Howard, of Baltimore, Md.

V. Thomas Mann Randolph, Jr., of Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., Governor of Virginia, was the fourth child and eldest surviving son of Thomas Mann Randolph, of Tuckahoe, Goochland Co., Va., and Ann Cary, his wife, and was born 1767 at Tuckahoe. He married Martha Jefferson, daughter of U. S. President Thomas Jefferson and Martha, née Wayles. Issue:

1. Ann Cary Randolph, b. 1791. Married (about 1810) Charles Bankhead. Issue:
  - a. Daughter Randolph Bankhead. Married John Carter.
  - b. Thomas M. L. Bankhead, d. in Arkansas.
  - c. John Bankhead, of Missouri; has a family.
  - d. William Bankhead, removed to Alabama.
2. Thomas Jefferson Randolph, the eldest son, was born at Edge Hill, and inherited it. Married Miss Nicholas.
3. Ellen Wayles Randolph, b. 1796. Married (1824) Joseph Coolidge, of Boston, Mass. Issue:
  - a. Joseph Coolidge. Married Julia Gardiner.
  - b. Ellen R. Coolidge. Married Edmond Dwight.
  - c. Lydney Coolidge, killed in U. S. army, at Chattanooga 1864.
  - d. Algernon Sidney Coolidge, twin brother of Lydney. Married Lucy Lowell.
  - e. Thomas Jefferson Coolidge, minister to Frances, succeeding Whitelaw Reid, during the administration of President Benj. Harrison. Married Mehitabel (Hetty) Appleton.
4. Virginia Randolph, b. about 1801. Married (1821) N. P. Trist, who made the treaty of "Hidalgo Guadeloupe," after the Mexican War, 1848. Issue:
  1. Thomas Jefferson Trist, deaf mute. Married Ellen Lycman, also a deaf mute. No issue.
  2. Martha Jefferson Trist. Married John Burk, of Alexandria, Va. They had a number of children.
  3. Dr. H. B. Trist. Married Ann Warren, of Savannah, Georgia, and has seven children.
  5. Benj. Franklin Randolph, b. 1805. Married (1828) Sarah Carter. Issue:

- I. Merrywether Louis Randolph. Married Louisa Hubbard and has five children.
- II. Septemia Anne Randolph. Married Dr. David Meikleham, and had one son, William Morland Meikleham, who married in New York and lives in Fordham with three children: Alice Scott, Randolph, and Ellen Wayles Meikleham.
6. Merrywether Louis Randolph, b. 1808. Married (1830) Eliza Wharton. No issue.
7. George Wythe Randolph, b. 1815. Married (1852) Mary E. Adams. No issue.

VI. Col. Thomas Jefferson Randolph, of Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., eldest son of Gov. Thomas Mann Randolph, Jr., and Martha, née Jefferson, his wife—who was third child, and eldest son of Thomas Mann Randolph, Sr., of Tuckahoe, Goochland Co., Va., and Anne Cary, his wife, eldest son and child of William Randolph and Maria Judith Page, his wife—who was eldest son and child of Thomas Randolph and Judith Churchill, his wife—who was second son and child of William Randolph, of Yorkshire, England, and Turkey Island, Henrico Co., Va., progenitor of the Randolph family in Virginia, and Mary Isham, his wife.

Col. Thomas Mann Randolph, b. at Edge Hill 1792; d. there in 1875, aged 83 years. He was buried at Monticello, in the Jefferson graveyard. He was Presidential Elector in 1845, and was President of the National Democratic Convention, which met in Baltimore in 1873. He was also chosen President of the Philadelphia Centennial Exhibition of 1876, but died a short time before its opening. He married (1815) Jane, daughter of Gov. Wilson Cary Nicholas, of Warren, Albemarle Co., Va. Their children were:

1. Margaret Smith Randolph, b. 1816. Married (1836) William Lewis Randolph.
2. Patsey Jefferson Randolph, b. 1817. Married (1838) I. C. Randolph Taylor, of Albemarle Co., Va. Issue:
  - a. Bennet Taylor. Married (1863) Lucy Colston and had six children.
  - b. Jane Randolph Taylor.
  - c. Susan Beverley Taylor. Married John Blackham.

- d. Jefferson Randolph Taylor, lawyer, of Charlottesville, Albemarle Co.
- e. Margaret Randolph Taylor.
- f. Cornelia Jefferson Taylor.
- g. Stevens Mason Taylor.
- h. Edmond Randolph Taylor.
- i. Moncure Robinson Taylor.
3. Cary Ann Nicholas Randolph, b. 1820. Married (1840) Frank G. Ruffin, of Albemarle Co., Va. Issue:
  1. Jefferson Randolph Ruffin.
  2. William Roane Ruffin. Married (1868) Miss McIlvaine, of Petersburg, Dinwiddie Co., Va.
  3. William Cary Nicholas Ruffin. Married (1870) Mary Harvie.
  4. George Randolph Ruffin.
  5. Frank Gilbert Ruffin, Jr.
  6. Eliza McDonald Ruffin.
  7. Cary Randolph Ruffin.
  4. Mary Buchanan Randolph, b. 1821 or 1823; resides at Edge Hill, where she is Principal of a girl's school. She closely resembles the portraits of Thomas Jefferson, President of United States.
  5. Ellen Wayles Randolph, b. 1825. Married (1860) William B. Harrison, of "Upper Brandon," on James River, Charles City Co., Va. She was his second wife. After her husband's death she removed to Edge Hill. Issue:
    - I. Jane Nicholas Harrison.
    - II. Jefferson Randolph Harrison.
    6. Maria Jefferson Carr Randolph, b. 1827. Married (1848) Charles Mason. Issue:
      - I. Jefferson Randolph Mason, San Antonio, Texas.
      - II. Lucy Roy Mason.
  - III. John Enoch Mason, Commonwealth's Attorney, King George Co., Va. (See Mason Family, Chapter XVII.)
  7. Caroline Ramsay Randolph, b. 1828; resided, unmarried, at Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., Va.
  8. Thomas Jefferson Randolph, eldest son, b. at Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., in 1830. He removed to Shadwell,

same county, and married, first (1854) Mary Walker Merryweather, who d. July 1863, leaving issue:

- I. Frank Merryweather Randolph. Married Charlotte Mason.
- II. Thomas Jefferson Randolph, Jr.
- III. George Geiger Randolph.  
Mr. Randolph married, secondly (in 1865), Charlotte N. Merryweather, and had one child, Mary Walker Randolph. In 1878 Mr. Randolph was accidentally killed by a blast on the Chesapeake and Ohio Railroad. Mrs. Randolph d. 1876.
9. Dr. Wilson Cary Nicholas Randolph, b. 1832, at Edge Hill, removed to Charlottesville, Albemarle Co. He married (1855) Mary Holliday, of that place. Issue:
  - I. Virginia Rawlings Randolph.
  - II. Wilson C. N. Randolph, Jr.
  - III. Mary Walker Randolph.
  - IV. Julia Minor Randolph.
10. Jane Nicholas Randolph, b. 1810. Married (1856) R. Garlick H. Keen. Issue:
  - I. Launeelot Keen.
  - II. Patsey Cary Keen.
  - III. Jefferson Randolph Keen.
  - IV. Robert Garlick Hill Keen, Jr.
11. Merryweather Lewis Randolph, b. 1836, at Edge Hill; d. 1870. Married (1869) Anna Daniel.
12. Sarah Nicholas Randolph, b. 1838, at Edge Hill, Albemarle Co.; removed to Baltimore, Md., and became an authoress, and principal of the Patapsco Institute; d. unmarried, 1892.
- II. Isham Randolph, of Dungenness, on James River, Goochland County, Va.—third son of William Randolph, Yorkshire, England, and Turkey Island, Henrico Co., Va., progenitor of the Randolph family in Virginia, and Mary Isham, his wife—was born at Turkey Island, 1690. He married (1717) Jane Rogers (or Rodgers), of Shadwell Street, London, England. Issue:
  1. Jane Randolph, b. 1720, in London, England. Married (1738) Peter Jefferson, of Shadwell, near Rivanna

River, Albemarle Co. (This is named from Shadwell Street, London, Eng.) Issue:

- I. Thomas Jefferson, b. 1743; d. July 4, 1826. President of the U. S. of America. Married (1772) Martha Wayles, daughter of John Wayles, of "The Forest," Charles City Co., Va. Issue—two surviving children:
  - I. Martha Jefferson. Married (1790) Gov. Thomas Mann Randolph, of Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., father of Col. Thomas Jefferson Randolph of the same place.
  - II. Maria Jefferson. Married (1796) John Wayles Eppes, of Bermuda Hundred, Chesterfield Co., Va. Issue—
    - one child, Francis Eppes, of "Poplar Forest," Bedford Co., Va., who married, first (1822) Elizabeth Randolph, daughter of Thomas Eston Randolph, of Ashton, Albemarle Co., Va. Issue:
      - a. Jane Eppes.
      - b. John Eppes.
      - c. Jefferson Eppes.
      - d. Rev. William Eppes.
      - e. Elizabeth Eppes.

Francis Eppes married a second time the widow Crouch, by whom he had children.
- III. Randolph Jefferson.
- IV. Martha Jefferson. Married John Bolling.
- V. Daughter Jefferson. Married Dabney Carr.
- VI. Daughter Jefferson. Married Mr. Lewis.
- VII. Daughter Jefferson. Married Mr. Marks.
  2. Susanna Randolph, b. 1743. Married (1764) Carter Henry Harrison, of Clifton, a grandson of Robert (King) Carter. Issue:
    1. Robert Harrison; removed to Kentucky and married Anne Cabell. He was the grandfather of Carter H. Harrison, Mayor of Chicago.
    2. Anne Harrison. Married Thomas Drew.
    3. Peyton Harrison. Married Elizabeth Barelay.
    4. Elizabeth Harrison. Married Mr. Bradley.
    5. Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, Cumberland Co., Va. Married (March 20, 1790) at Dungenness, his first cousin, Mary Randolph. He was b. at Clifton, Feb. 11, 1769.

6. Carter Henry Harrison, Jr., graduated at William and Mary College; commenced the practice of law, and d. 1800.
3. Thomas Isham Randolph, eldest son, b. at Dungenness, Goochland Co., Va., 1745, and resided there. He married (1768) Jane, third child of Archibald Cary.
4. William Randolph, b. 1747; removed to Bristol and married Miss Little.
5. Mary Randolph. Married (1770) Charles Lewis.
6. Elizabeth Randolph. Married (1771) John Bailey.
7. Dorothy Randolph. Married (1773) John Woodson, of Goochland Co., Va.
8. Anne Randolph, b. 1755. Married, first (1775) Daniel Seott; no children. She married, secondly, Jonathan Pleasants. Issue: Samuel Pleasants and Jane Pleasants. She married, thirdly, James Pleasants, of Goochland Co., Va. Issue: James Pleasants, Gov. of Virginia, and Susan Pleasants, married Webster.

III. Thomas Isham Randolph, of Dungenness on James River, Goochland Co., Va., eldest son of Isham Randolph of the same place and Jane Rogers, his wife, was b. there in 1745. He married (1768) Jane, third child of Col. Archibald Cary, of Amptill, Chesterfield Co., Va., and Mary, née Randolph, of Curls. Issue:

1. Archibald (called Archie) Cary Randolph, b. 1769 at Dungenness. He married (1794) Luey Burwell, daughter of Col. Nathaniel Burwell, of Carter Hall, Clarke Co., Va. Issue:
  1. Isham Randolph; killed by lightning at Benlomond, near Dungenness, unmarried.
  2. Dr. Philip Grymes Randolph, U. S. A., b. 1769. Married (1784) Mary O'Neal, of Washington, D. C., and d. leaving two daughters:
    - a. Mary Conway Randolph. Married Beverley Randolph, U. S. Navy, and had—Mary Harrison Randolph, who married (June 26, 1877) Perry W. Charington, of England; Grymes Randolph. Married Ruth, daughter of Benj. O'Fallon, of St. Louis, Mo.; William Fitzhugh Randolph; Eston Randolph; Julian Randolph. One of these brothers married Rebecca Rosalie O'Fallon, a sister of Ruth.



- b. Henrietta Randolph. Married Mr. Pendleton.  
Dr. Philip Grymes Randolph was at one time chief clerk in the U. S. War Department and bearer of dispatches to Spain, under Gen. Jackson's administration.
- 3. Susan Grymes Randolph. Married (1839) Dr. Powell Page, of "The Briars," Clarke Co., Va., and was his second wife. Issue: Elizabeth Byrd Page, b. 1838; d. unmarried, 1863; Mary Frances Page, b. 1840. Married (1867) John Esten Cooke, author, Clarke Co., Va. She d. 1878, leaving three children: I. Susie Randolph, b. July 11, 1868; II. Edmond Pendleton Randolph, b. May 18, 1870; III. Robert Powell Page, b. Oct. 12, 1874. Their father, John Esten Cooke, d. Sept. 27, 1886, at "The Briars." Luey B. Page, b. 1842. Married (1862) Capt. William P. Carter, of Clarke Co., Va.; Robert Powell Page, Jr., of Saratoga, Clarke Co., Va., b. 1846. Married (1870) Agnes, daughter of George H. Burwell, of Carter Hall, and Agnes, née Atkinson. Issue: (1) Agnes Page, (2) Mary Page, (3) Robert P. Page, (4) George Page, (5) Nathaniel B. Page.
- 5. Dr. Robert C. Randolph, of Newmarket, Clarke Co., Va., d. 1886. Married (1830) Luey Nelson, only child of William Wellford and Susan R. Nelson, his wife. Issue as follows:
  - a. Betty Burwell Randolph. Married Warren C. Smith, of Clarke Co., Va. They left two sons and three daughters.
  - b. Dr. Archie Cary Randolph. Married (Sept. 29, 1881) Mrs. Susan Henry, née Burwell. No children.
  - c. Col. William Wellford Randolph. Married (1863) Ada Stewart, of King George Co., Va. He was killed at the battle of the Wilderness, May 6, 1864, and left one child, William Wellford Randolph, Jr.
  - d. Philip Burwell Randolph, d. 1857, while at the Virginia University.
  - e. Thomas Hugh Burwell Randolph. Married Eliza Page Burwell, daughter of George H. Burwell, of Carter Hall, Clarke Co., Va. They had one child, Robert Carter Randolph.

- f. Susan Wellford Randolph. Married William Eston Randolph, of Halifax Co., Va. and has two daughters and one son, called Isham Randolph. Their three children trace their lineage back to six of the seven sons of Col. William Randolph, of Turkey Island, progenitor of all the Randolphs of Virginia.
- g. Isham Randolph, of Chicago, chief engineer of the Chicago & Western Indiana Railroad. Married Mary, daughter of George Taylor, formerly of Richmond, Va. They have one son, Robert Isham Randolph.
- h. Polly Cary Randolph. All of Dr. Robert C. Randolph's children are descended from five of the seven sons of Col. William Randolph, of Turkey Island, and their daughter Susan's children from six. The seventh son of Col. William Randolph lived in Bristol, England, so there was but little intercourse.
6. Lucy Burwell Randolph. Married Rev. Eleazor Hutchinson. Issue:
  - I. Robert Randolph Hutchinson, St. Louis, Mo.
  - II. Louis Burwell Hutchinson, of Mississippi.
  - III. Mary Talcott Hutchinson, who married Robert Anderson, of Scotland.
2. Isham Randolph, b. at Dungeness, Goochland Co., Va., 1770; removed to Richmond, Va., and married (1795) Nancy Coupland, of that city. Issue:
  - (1) Julia Randolph, b. 1805. Married (Feb. 1, 1827) Thomas Nelson Page, of Shelly, Gloucester Co., Va., and they had one surviving child, Maj. Mann Page, of Lower Brandon on James River, Prince George Co., Va. He was b. at Shelly, April 21, 1835, only a few months before his father's death. He was the eldest child, of the eldest son, etc., etc., so was the head of the Page family in Virginia. Maj. Page when a middle aged man married, but died without children.
  - (2) Jane Randolph.
  - (3) Fanny P. Randolph, b. 1808. Married (1827) William N. Page, of Ca Ira, Cumberland Co., Va.
  - (4) D. Coupland Randolph, b. 1810. Married (1857) Harriet R. Page, of Union Hill, Cumberland Co., Va.,

- b. April 15, 1827; d. 1884. They had: I. Mary A. Randolph; II. D. Coupland Randolph, Jr.; III. B. Heath Randolph.
3. Thomas Randolph, twin brother of Isham Randolph. Married, first, Miss Skipwith; secondly, Miss Laurence, granddaughter of Gov. Findlay, of Kentucky. Issue—Mary Randolph, who married William Sheets. They removed to Indianapolis, Ind., and had several children. He was killed at the battle of Tippecanoe, Indiana, Nov. 5, 1811. In this battle Gen. William Henry Harrison gained a complete victory over the Indians, led by the famous chief Tecumseh, who was killed. This victory gave to Gen. Harrison the sobriquet of Tippecanoe and hence the political campaign phrase, when he and John Tyler were respectively elected president and vice-president of U. S., of “Tippecanoe and Tyler too.” Thomas Randolph and Joe Deviers, two friends and gallant spirits, were buried together under an oak tree, on which their initials were cut. Some beautiful lines were afterwards published by Mrs. Mary Sheets, entitled, “The Lost Initials.”
4. Mary Randolph, b. Feb. 1, 1773, at Amptill, Chesterfield Co., Va. Married (March 21, 1790) her first cousin Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, Cumberland Co., Va. Had issue.

II. Sir John Randolph, of Williamsburg, James City Co., Va., fourth son and child of Col. William Randolph, of Turkey Island, Henrico Co., Va., and Mary, née Isham, progenitors of all the Randolphs in Virginia, was b. 1693; d. March 15, 1737. Upon a mural tablet placed to his memory in William and Mary College, which was destroyed by fire in 1859, he was called “Johannes Randolph, *Esques*.” He was *Esques* or Knight, not Armiger or Esquire, nor Genevosus, which signifies, Gent or Gentleman. It is quite proper, therefore, to speak of him as *Sir John Randolph*.

He married (1718) Susanna Beverly, daughter of Peter Beverly, of Gloucester Co., Va., and sister of Elizabeth, the wife of William Randolph, his eldest brother, known as Councillor Randolph. The mural tablet, above mentioned, to Sir John Randolph and Susanna, née Beverly, gave also a list of their four children, as follows:

- I. John Randolph, son of Sir John Randolph, b. at Williamsburg 1727. Married (1752) Airanna Jennings, daughter of Edmond Jennings.
- II. Peyton Randolph, son of Sir John Randolph, b. at Williamsburg, d. in Philadelphia, Pa., Oct. 22, 1775, aged 53 years. He was Attorney General for Virginia, Speaker of the Virginia House of Burgesses and President of the first American Congress. Married Elizabeth Harrison. No children.
- III. Beverley Randolph. Married Miss Wormeley.
- IV. Mary Randolph, daughter of Sir John Randolph, b. at Williamsburg, Va. Married (1743) Philip Grymes, of Brandon, Middlesex Co., Va. Issue four children:
  - (1) Philip Grymes, Jr. Married (1762) Elizabeth, daughter of William Randolph, of Wilton, and Anne Harrison, his wife.
  - (2) Lucy Grymes. Married (1761) Gov. Thomas Nelson, of Yorktown, York Co., Va.
  - (3) Susan Grymes. Married Nathaniel Burwell, of "The Grove," York Co., Va., and later of Carter Hall, Clarke Co., Va.
  - (4) Mary Grymes. Married (1777) Robert Nelson, of "Malvern Hill," Charles City Co., Va., younger brother of Gov. Thomas Nelson, and was his first wife.

III. John Randolph, of Williamsburg, son of Sir John Randolph and Susanna, née Beverly, was b. 1727, and was Attorney General for the Colony of Virginia. He married (1752) Airanna Jennings, daughter of Edmund Jennings, of Annapolis, Md., who was at one time Attorney General for both Maryland and Virginia. They had two children:

1. Edmund Randolph, b. Aug. 10, 1753; d. in Frederick Co., Va., Sept. 12, 1813. When the American Revolution broke out John Randolph, of Williamsburg, went to England, but his son Edmund remained and cast his lot with the colonists. He was adopted by his uncle Peyton Randolph, who was President of the first American Congress. Edmund Randolph, b. 1753, was the first Attorney General of the U. S. of America, 1790; having been Gov. of the State 1786-88. He married



GOV. THOMAS NELSON

Yorktown, York County, Virginia

Signer of the Declaration of Independence, July 14th, 1776

(From the Original Portrait by Chamberlin, London, 1754.)



(Aug. 29, 1796) Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Carter Nicholas, Speaker of the House of Burgesses and Treasurer of Virginia. They had issue:

Thomas Nelson, of Yorktown, York Co., Va., signer of the Declaration of American Independence, Governor of the State of Virginia and Major General in the American army, was born at Yorktown, Virginia, December 26, 1738. He was the eldest son and child of President William Nelson, of the same place, and Elizabeth (called Betty) Burwell, his wife; and President William Nelson was the eldest son and child of Thomas Nelson, known as Scotch Tom, of England, and Margaret Reid, his wife.

Governor Nelson died during an attack of asthma, caused by exposure during the war of the Revolution.

Edmund Randolph began a career of prominence, and figured largely for many years as the defender of his country in the councils of his state and of the nation, and was the zealous supporter of the Church against all which he believed to be assaults upon her rights. He had been adopted by his uncle, Peyton Randolph, and had espoused his patriotic views with regard to the independence of America.

His father bitterly regretted going to England, died of a broken heart, and directed that his remains be brought to America. They were buried in the college chapel.

In 1775 Edmund Randolph was a delegate to the Virginia Convention, May, 1776, and from 1779 to 1783 he was a member of the Continental Congress.

Being a member of the Virginia delegation to "The Constitutional Convention," which met in Philadelphia, May 25, 1787, Edmund Randolph introduced, on behalf of his delegation, a series of propositions, fifteen in number, embodying a new scheme of central government, known in history as the Virginia plan. This plan, discussed for two weeks in committee of the whole, was so modified, amended and changed that it could only be called the foundation of what was finally accepted and signed by the delegates in due form. The authorship of the constitution, as then laid down, was clearly the product of many minds, and the source of some of its most vital phrases will never be given to posterity. We only know that the end attained was after long, laborious, anxious discussion and most sagacious compromise.



Sectional differences of opinion were reconciled, and a distinct plan of constitutional union finally arranged. Washington presided at this convention, and by his inflexible course did much to keep the assembly together, a convention whose almost continuous session of four months had more than once threatened to break up in disorder.

It is to be regretted that so little can be known of the Constitutional Convention of Philadelphia, but the injunction of secrecy under which its deliberations were held was never removed. The official journal deposited by Washington in the public archives, and Madison's notes, are the only extended testimony to throw light on this intensely interesting period—a time when Washington himself declared “that our political affairs were suspended by a thread.” In that dread crisis the past furnished no light to guide the statesmen of this august meeting; the present was full of doubt and despair, and the destiny of the American liberty hung trembling in the balance. But in the injunction the majestic reason of George Washington triumphed. “It is too probable,” said he, “that no plan we propose will be adopted.”

“Perhaps another dreadful conflict is to be sustained. If to please the people, we offer what we ourselves disapprove, how can we afterward defend our work? Let us raise a standard to which the wise and honest can repair. The event is in the hands of God.” If, in this memorable speech, Washington counseled immediate action, and thereby cemented the opposing sentiments of the convention by one decisive and imperishable step; if he now laid the foundation of honesty and purity in constitutional government, we, the heirs of this rich legacy, are indebted no less to another Virginian for making the constitution practically all that it has been, is, and yet may be.

To John Marshall, Chief Justice of the United States from 1801-1835, do we turn with gratitude for lifting these resolutions from the mist and cloud of doubt, to be the radiant source of light and life, and happiness to millions of enraptured freemen. When, as yet, the constitution was a doubtful experiment, Judge Marshall by his clear, unanswerable logic, laid it before an eager world as a wonderful combination of liberty and law, and by his practical construction of its beneficent provisions he established it in the hearts and minds of his fellow-citizens as a wise and never-to-be-abandoned system of free government.

At the close of the momentous deliberations of the Constitutional Convention the plan adopted was disapproved by Edmund Randolph, but in June, 1788, when it was submitted to the Virginia Convention, in Richmond, for ratification, he pronounced decidedly for it.

Of the deputies from Virginia, who signed the constitution in Philadelphia, September 17, 1787, were: George Washington, John Blair, James Madison, Jr. Those of the Virginia delegation who did not sign it were: Edmund Randolph, George Mason, George Wythe and James McClung. But the constitution was finally accepted by Virginia, through her convention held at Richmond, and ratified June 25, 1788, by a vote of 89 to 79.

Upon the resignation of Patrick Henry as Governor of Virginia, Edmund Randolph was elected to succeed him, December 1, 1786, and remained in this important office until December, 1788. A glance at the Acts of Assembly during this period will show the varied subjects which claimed the attention of his administration, developing through the laws enacted the gradual and intelligent progress of a people in the difficult experiment of self-government.

In 1784, Edmund Randolph had been appointed Deputy Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Ancient, Free and Accepted Masons of Virginia, and in 1786 he was elected Grand Master of the same body, when he named the Honorable John Marshall as his deputy. His name was masonically perpetuated in the Richmond Randolph Lodge, No. 19, chartered October 19, 1787.

In 1790 Edmund Randolph was appointed by Washington the first Attorney General of the United States, a position which as a man of elegant manners and an accomplished lawyer he was well fitted to adorn. On August 2, 1794, he succeeded Jefferson as Secretary of State, which office he held until August 19, 1795, when he withdrew to private life and resumed the practice of law.

The fact that he retired from the cabinet of Washington was made the occasion of much comment by his political antagonists. He published a "Vindication" of his cause, which ably and effectually silenced the calumnies of his enemies.

Edmund Randolph, son of Sir John Randolph and Susanna, née Beverly, b. August 10, 1753; d. in Frederick Co., Va., September 12, 1813, at his daughter's, Mrs. Bennett Taylor's, where

he spent the latter part of his life; he lies buried by her side in the old graveyard of that parish. He died at "Carter's Hall," the seat of Colonel Nathaniel Burwell. Married (August 29, 1796) Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Carter Nicholas, Speaker of the House of Burgesses and Treasurer of Virginia. Issue:

I. Peyton Randolph<sup>5</sup>. Married Maria Ward, who had been engaged to John Randolph, of Roanoke, Va. Issue:

I. Elizabeth Randolph<sup>6</sup>. Married Dr. Skelton.

II. Edmund Randolph<sup>6</sup>. Married Tomasia De Meaux, of New Orleans, La. I met her in Baltimore, 1902-3. She was still living last time I heard from her daughter Margaret. She was contemporary of my mother and aunt, the Misses Moneure. Issue:

I. Margaret Randolph<sup>7</sup>.

III. Mary Randolph<sup>6</sup>. Married J. G. Kent, of Wytheville, Va. Issue:

I. Luey Kent<sup>7</sup>, was studying to be a trained nurse at Johns Hopkins Hospital when I was in Baltimore, Md.

II. Charlotte Kent<sup>7</sup>.

III. Gordon Kent<sup>7</sup>.

IV. Hugh Kent<sup>7</sup>.

V. Mary Kent<sup>7</sup>.

IV. Luey Randolph<sup>6</sup>.

Susan Beverley Randolph<sup>5</sup> (Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), second child of Gov. Edmund Randolph and Elizabeth Nicholas, his wife. Married J. Bennett Taylor, of Albemarle Co., Va. Issue:

I. John C. Taylor<sup>6</sup>. Married Patsy Randolph.

II. Charlotte R. Taylor<sup>6</sup>. Married Moneure Robinson, of Philadelphia.

Edmonia Randolph<sup>5</sup> (Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), third daughter of Gov. Edmond Randolph. Married John L. Preston. Issue:

I. Elizabeth Preston<sup>6</sup>. Married William A. Coeke.

II. Maj. John T. L. Preston<sup>6</sup>. Married, first, Sarah Caruthers; second, Margaret Junkin (Beechenbrook). Issue will be given later.

Lucy Randolph<sup>5</sup> (Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Gov. Edmund Randolph and Elizabeth Nicholas, his wife, b. 1790; d. November, 1847. Married (1809) Hon. Peter Vivian Daniel, b. "Crow's Nest," Stafford Co., Va., April 24, 1784; d. Richmond, Va., May 30, 1860. He married, second, Elizabeth Harris, daughter of Dr. Thomas Harris, son of Thomas Harris; d. by accidental burning. Issue:

- I. Elizabeth Randolph Daniel<sup>6</sup>, b. 1810; d. June 12, 1879, unmarried. She was a communicant of Monumental Church, 1841-1879.
- II. Peter Vivian Daniel<sup>6</sup>, b. April 17, 1818; d. Richmond, Va., April 2, 1889. Married (Dec. 1, 1846) Mary Robertson, daughter of James Robertson, cashier United States Bank of Richmond and his wife, Mary Clarkson, of England, adopted daughter of Dr. Enoch Edwards, Philadelphia, Pa. I met Mrs. Daniel in 1888, also her son James R. V. Daniel. The latter remembered me as a "French girl, playing on Capitol Square, Richmond, Va., who could not understand a word of English." Mrs. Daniel d. Sept. 16, 1890, aged 71. Peter Vivian Daniel and Mary Robertson, his wife, had issue:
  - I. James Robertson Vivian Daniel<sup>7</sup>, b. Jan. 1, 1850. Married Hallie W. Williams. He was confirmed at Monumental Church, April 21, 1867; educated University of Virginia 1867-68; member of the law firm of Minor and Daniel, Richmond, Va. Issue:
    - I. Robert W. Daniel<sup>8</sup>.
    - II. Channing W. Daniel<sup>8</sup>.
    - III. Mary Isabel Daniel<sup>8</sup>.
    - II. Lucy Randolph Daniel<sup>7</sup>, b. July 19, 1854; baptized Sept. 18, 1854. Married Richard K. Courtley, of England. Issue:
      - I. John Baskett Courtley<sup>8</sup>.
      - II. Henry Courtley<sup>8</sup>.
      - III. R. Vivian Courtley<sup>8</sup>.

I, L. Peequet du Bellet, being in Baltimore 1902-3, met Mrs. Courtley several times. She was very courteous, extending to me an invitation to attend the Woman's Literary Club, whenever I wished to do so. Mrs. Courtley was Vice-President of the Club. Residence, 1532 Mt. Royal Ave., Baltimore.

Anne Lewis Daniel<sup>6</sup> (Lucy Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. — 1822; d. 1905. Married Charles Prosser Moncure. (Their issue, Moncure Family, Chapter XIII.)

2. Ariana Randolph<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. at Williamsburg, James City Co., Va., 1750, daughter of John Randolph and Ariana Jennings. She went with her father to England, when the war broke out, and married James Wormeley, Captain of the King's Guard, Windsor. Issue:

- I. Jane Wormeley<sup>5</sup>. Married Mr. Norris, of Virginia.
- II. Ariana Wormeley<sup>5</sup>. Married Mr. Nelson.
- III. Susan Wormeley<sup>5</sup>. Married ———.
- IV. Ralph Wormeley<sup>5</sup>, b. in Virginia, 1785; d. 1832, and is buried in Newport, R. I.

James Wormeley went to England after the death of his wife. He left his three daughters with their uncle, Attorney General Randolph. He soon married an English lady and placed his son in the English Navy.

V. Ralph Randolph Wormeley<sup>5</sup> (Ariana<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. in Virginia, October 29, 1785; d. 1832. Married (October, 1820) Caroline Preble, of Boston, daughter of Eben Preble, and niece of Commodore Edward Preble. She died 1872, aged 83, and is buried at Newport, R. I., with her husband. He served in the English Navy and rose to be Rear Admiral of the Blue. He served with great distinction. While traveling with his family in U. S. A. he died, 1832, and was buried at Newport, R. I. His widow and daughters settled there. They had issue:

- I. Ariana R. Wormeley<sup>6</sup>. Married (1853) D. Samuel Custis. She is still living and has resided in Europe since 1876. Her home is in Venice, Italy, at present.  
Issue:
  - I. Ralph Wormeley Custis<sup>7</sup>. Married Lisa Ritch, née Colt.  
Issue:
    - I. Sylvia Custis<sup>8</sup>, b. 1893.
    - II. Marjorie Custis<sup>8</sup>, b. 1900.

- II. Osborne Sargeant Custis<sup>7</sup>. Married Henrietta Gaudy, daughter of Captain Gaudy, English Navy. Issue:

- I. Henry Sargant Gaudy<sup>8</sup>, b. 1886.
- II. Arthur Randolph Gaudy<sup>8</sup>, b. 1888.
- III. Ariana Edith Gaudy<sup>8</sup>, b. 1891.  
Osborne Custis has been naturalized an Englishman; his sons are at Eton and will serve in the English Army.
- II. M. Elizabeth Wormeley<sup>6</sup>. Married (1856) Randolph Latimer, b. 1821; d. Dec. 24, 1903.
- III. Katharine Prescott Wormeley<sup>6</sup>, never married.
- IV. James Preble Wormeley<sup>6</sup>, d. 1851, aged 26 years of age.

Mary Elizabeth Wormeley<sup>6</sup> (Ralph Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Ariana<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), author, b. London, England, July 26, 1822; d. January 4, 1904. Married (July 14, 1856) Randolph Brandt Latimer, b. 1821; d. December 24, 1903, daughter of Rear Admiral Wormeley of the English Navy. She was educated at home. Published her first novel in England, then wrote two others, and did magazine work until 1856. After her marriage she ceased writing for the press for twenty years. Mrs. Latimer wrote the following: "Annabel," "Our Cousin Veronica," "Salvage," "My Wife and My Wife's Sister," "Princess Amelie," "A Chain of Errors," "France in the XIXth Century," "Russia and Turkey in the 19th Century," "England in the 19th Century," "Europe and Africa in the XIXth Century," "Italy in the 19th Century," "Spain in the XIXth Century." I met Mrs. Latimer, at the Woman's Literary Club, Baltimore, Md., during the winter of 1902-3; at one of the meetings Mrs. Latimer read a beautiful poem, written by her several years ago. It was quite an honor to become acquainted with such a literary lady.

Mr. and Mrs. Latimer had following issue:

- I. Randolph Wallace Latimer<sup>7</sup>, d. infant, 1857.
- II. Caroline Latimer<sup>7</sup>, b. 1859.
- III. Ralph Randolph Wormeley Latimer<sup>7</sup>, b. 1862.
- IV. James Brandt Latimer<sup>7</sup>, b. 1865. Married Anne Wise Mayo, Nov. 29, 1904.

Katharine Prescott Wormeley<sup>6</sup> (Ralph Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Ariana<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. Ipswich, England, January 14, 1830 (living); came to the United States in girlhood, and took active



interest in relief of Union soldiers during the war; connected with United State Sanitary Commission. She wrote following books: "The U. S. Sanitary Commission," "The Cruel Side of War," "Life of Balzac," etc., etc., etc. She translated the works of Honoré de Balzac, Molière and Duc de Saint Simon. Her address is Jackson, New Hampshire.

Charlotte Randolph Taylor<sup>a</sup> (Susan Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John Bennett and Susan Beverley (Randolph) Taylor, of Frederick Co., Va., and granddaughter of Captain Taylor of Southampton Co., Va., and of the Continental Line. Married (February 2, 1835) Moncure Robinson, of Philadelphia, Pa., b. in Richmond, Va., February 2, 1802; d. 1890, son. of John Robinson<sup>o</sup> (Anthony<sup>5</sup>, Anthony<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Anthony<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>) and Agnes Conway Moncure, daughter of John<sup>2</sup> and Ann (Conway) Moncure, of "Clermont," Stafford Co., Va.  
Issue: .

- I. John Moncure Robinson<sup>7</sup>, b. —; C. S. A. Married Champe Conway, daughter of Dr. James P. and Ellen (Bradfute) Conway.
- II. Edmund Randolph Robinson<sup>7</sup>, b. —. Married Augusta Jay, daughter of Hon. John Jay, New York.
- III. Susan Conway Robinson<sup>7</sup>, d. infant.
- IV. Agnes Conway Robinson<sup>7</sup>, b. —. Married Charles Chauncey, U. S. A. 1861-5, son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Small) Chauncey, of Philadelphia, Pa.
- V. Beverley Robinson<sup>7</sup>, M. D., b. —. Married Anna Foster, of New York.
- VI. Charlotte Robinson<sup>7</sup>, b. —; d. infant.
- VII. Conway Robinson<sup>7</sup>, b. —; d. infant.
- VIII. Charlotte Meigs Robinson<sup>7</sup>, b. —.
- IX. Moncure Robinson<sup>7</sup>, b. —. Married Lydia Biddle, daughter of Col. Henry J. and Mary D. (Baird) Biddle, U. S. A., 1861-5. Issue: Mona M. Robinson.
- X. Nathalie Chauncey Robinson<sup>7</sup>, b. —. Married —.
- XI. Frances Brown Robinson<sup>7</sup>, b. —. Married Algernon Sidney Biddle, son of George Washington and Maria (McMurtrie) Biddle, of Philadelphia, Pa.

John Moncure Robinson<sup>7</sup>, b. ——. Married Champe Conway. He was educated at V. M. I. and Harvard; graduate B. S. Harvard University, 1856; Captain and Col. Engineer Corps, C. S. A.; President Baltimore Steam Packet Co., Seaboard and Roanoke R. R., Raleigh and Gabon R. R., Raleigh and Augusta Air Line R. R., Fredericksburg and Potomac R. R. Mr. Robinson died August 16, 1895.

John Moncure Robinson and Champe Conway, his wife, had issue:

- I. Charlotte Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Ellen C. Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- III. Champe Moneure Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- IV. Moneure Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- V. Florence C. Robinson<sup>8</sup>. Married J. E. McShane.
- VI. Agnes C. Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- VII. John R. Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- VIII. Mary M. Robinson<sup>8</sup>.

Edmund Robinson<sup>7</sup> (Charlotte R. T.<sup>6</sup>, Susan Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>). Married ——— Augusta Jay, daughter of Hon. John Jay, of New York. Mr. Robinson graduated A. B. University of Pa. 1855; Harvard University 1856; M. A. 1858 and 1859; LL. B., Harvard, 1860.

Mr. Edmund Robinson and Augusta Jay, his wife, have issue:

- I. C. Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Moneure Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- III. Augusta Robinson<sup>8</sup>.

Dr. Beverly Robinson<sup>7</sup> (Charlotte R. T.<sup>6</sup>, Susan Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of Moneure Robinson, of Philadelphia and Charlotte Randolph Taylor, his wife. Married Anna Foster, of New York. He graduated A. B. University of Pa., 1862; A. M. 1865; M. D. University of Paris, 1872; Fellow N. Y. Academy of Medicine; Lecturer on Laryngoscope, Bellevue Hospital; Medical College, New York, 1880.

Dr. Beverly Robinson and Anna Foster, his wife, have issue:

- I. Beverly Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Sterman Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- III. Pauline Robinson<sup>8</sup>.
- IV. Anna Robinson<sup>8</sup>.

Nathalie Chauncey Robinson<sup>7</sup> (Charlotte R. T.<sup>4</sup>, Susan Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Moncure Robinson and Charlotte Randolph Taylor, his wife. Married Henry G. Boyer. Issue:

- I. Frances Boyer<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Sidney Boyer<sup>8</sup>.

Elizabeth R. Preston<sup>6</sup> (Edmonia Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John L. Preston and Edmonia Randolph, his wife. Married William A. Cocke, of Oakland. Issue:

- I. William Cocke<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Edmund Randolph Cocke<sup>7</sup>. Married, first, Phœbe Preston; second, Lucie Harrison.

Issue by first wife:

- I. Sally Cocke<sup>8</sup>.

Issue by second wife:

- II. Elizabeth Randolph Cocke<sup>8</sup>.
- III. Armistead Cocke<sup>8</sup>.
- IV. Edmonia Cocke<sup>8</sup>.
- V. Katherine Cocke<sup>8</sup>.
- VI. Nelson P. Cocke<sup>8</sup>.
- III. Thomas Cocke<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. Preston Cocke<sup>7</sup>.

William Cocke, of Bremon, married Jane Armistead, parents of William Armistead Cocke, who married Elizabeth Randolph Preston. (See Armistead, Chapter XIX.)

Major John L. Preston<sup>6</sup> (Edmonia Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of Edmonia Randolph and John L. Preston. Married, first, Sarah Caruthers; second, Margaret Junken (Beechenbrook).

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Rev. Thomas Preston<sup>7</sup>. Married Miss Waddill.
- II. Phœbe Preston<sup>7</sup>. Married Edmund Cocke.
- III. Frank Preston<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. William Preston<sup>7</sup>. Married ——— Randolph.
- V. Eliza Preston<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. John Preston<sup>7</sup>.

Issue by second marriage:

VI. Rev. George W. Preston<sup>7</sup>, of Carrollton, Ill.

VII. Herbert Preston<sup>7</sup>.

Thomas Cocke<sup>7</sup> (Elizabeth Preston<sup>6</sup>, Edmonia Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of Elizabeth Preston and William Armistead Cocke. Married, first, Lucy Lewis; second, Mary B. Custis.

Issue by first marriage:

I. Elizabeth R. Cocke<sup>8</sup>.

Issue by second marriage:

II. William F. Cocke<sup>8</sup>.

III. Harriet T. Cocke<sup>8</sup>.

IV. Charles C. Cocke<sup>8</sup>.

V. Maria Cocke<sup>8</sup>.

VI. Randolph P. Cocke<sup>8</sup>.

Preston Cocke<sup>7</sup> (Elizabeth Preston<sup>6</sup>, Edmonia Randolph<sup>5</sup>, Edmund<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of Elizabeth Preston and William Armistead Cocke. Married Betty Meredith. Issue:

I. Ella M. Cocke<sup>8</sup>.

II. Sarah B. Cocke<sup>8</sup>.

III. Elizabeth P. Cocke<sup>8</sup>.

II. Richard Randolph, of "Curls Neck," on James River, Henrico County, Va., fifth son of Col. William Randolph of Turkey Island and progenitor of the Randolphs of Virginia, and Mary Isham, his wife, b. 1695. He married (1714) Jane Bolling, of Cobbs, Chesterfield Co., Va., daughter of John Bolling and Mary Kennon, his wife. Jane Bolling was of the fourth generation from Pocahontas. Issue—four children:

- (1) Richard Randolph, Jr., b. at "Curl's Neck," 1715. Married (1750) Ann, daughter of David Meade, of Nansemond Co., Va., and had issue. His son Ryland Randolph erected a tombstone to his parents. In 1874 Mrs. Charles Carter, née Nelson, daughter-in-law of Hill Carter, of Shirley on James River, copied the following inscription from it: "This monument is erected by Ryland Randolph, in memory of his Parents, Richard and Ann Randolph, of Curls. The former

died the 6th of June, 1786, aged 71 years, and the latter Dec. 1814, aged 83 years." When Mrs. Carter made this copy, it was the only tombstone at Curls that bore a legible inscription.



JOHN RANDOLPH  
Of "Roanoke," Charlotte Co., Va.

- (2) Mary Randolph, b. at Curls Neck, 1727. Married (May 31, 1744) Col. Archibald Cary, of Amptill, Chesterfield Co., Va. Their daughter, Mary Cary (called Polly), married Maj. Carter Page, of the Fork, Cumberland Co., Va., and was his first wife.

- (3) Jane Randolph, b. 1729. Married (1750) Anthony Walke, of Princess Anne Co., Va. Issue—one son, Rev. Anthony Walke.
- (4) John Randolph, b. at Curls Neck, Henrico Co., Va., 1737, removed to Roanoke, Charlotte Co., Va., and married 1769) Frances Bland, daughter of Theoderick Bland. Issue—four children:
  - a. Richard Randolph, of Bizarre, b. 1770. Married (1790) his cousin, Judith Randolph, daughter of Thomas Mann Randolph, of Tuckahoe.
  - b. Theoderick Bland Randolph, b. 1771; d. 1792, unmarried.
  - c. John Randolph, of Roanoke, Charlotte Co., Va., b. June 3, 1773; d. unmarried in Philadelphia, May 24, 1833. He was buried at his residence, Roanoke, in Charlotte Co., but his remains have since been removed to Hollywood Cemetery, Richmond, Va.
  - d. Jane Randolph.

Judge Roger Prior, of New York City, has in his possession a little book, which once belonged to the talented and eccentric John Randolph, of Roanoke, entitled, "Petit Dictionaire de la Langue Française." In it is an impression of a book plate on which was engraved the Randolph coat of arms, with two mottoes—"Nil admirari" (Wonder at nothing), at the top, and "Fair qui sentiat" (Do what is right), at the bottom. The arms are described as follows: "Gules (red) on a cross or bearing three stars on a field." Crest—"Antelope's head erased, or holding a bâton in his mouth." This description of the Randolph coat of arms corresponds with that given by other branches of the family, and that given in "The Dictionary of Heraldry."

This short sketch of Col. William Randolph, of Turkey Island, progenitor of the Randolph family in Virginia, gives something of each of his eight children who left descendants. His ninth son never married, and died in England. These notes are taken principally from Dr. Channing Page's History of the Page Family, p. 298. Some additions have been made, also corrections. (For further information regarding the Randolph family, look in "The



History of Bristol Parish," p. 214, by Rev. Dr. Philip Slaughter; Records of John Randolph, of Roanoke; "Old Churches and Families of Virginia," by Bishop William Meade.)

The children of Mary Buckner Thornton Magill, b. 1809; d. 1890, and Robert Lee Randolph, of "Eastern View," son of Col. Robert Randolph and Elizabeth Carter, of Shirley, who was a sister of Anne Carter, mother of the illustrious Gen. Robert E. Lee. Issue—five children:

- (1) William Fitzhugh Randolph. Married his cousin, Nanny Carter.
- (2) Mary Thurston Randolph (called Mittie). Married her cousin, Edward C. Turner, of Montrose, Fauquier Co., Va., son of Maj. Thomas Turner, of Kinloch, and Eliza Randolph. They had three children. Sally, the eldest, married Mr. Janney, of Baltimore, Md., a great-great-grandson of Col. Edward Smith, of Smithfield, a brother of Gen. John Smith, of Hackwood Park.
- (3) Alfred Magill Randolph, b. 1836, in Winchester, Va. Graduated at William and Mary College in 1858. Studied for orders in the Prot. Epis. Church at the Theological Seminary near Alexandria and was ordained Priest, 1860. Rector of St. George's Church, Fredericksburg, Va., from 1860 to 1865; Rector of Christ Church, Alexandria, Va., from 1865 to 1867; Rector of Emanuel Church, Baltimore, from 1867 to 1883; Coadjutor Bishop of Virginia from 1883 to 1892, when he was elected Bishop of Southern Virginia. He resides in Norfolk, Va. Rt. Rev. Alfred Magill Randolph married Sarah Hoxton, of Alexandria, Va. Issue:
  - a. Robert Lee Randolph, M. D.; is a leading oculist in Baltimore. Married Phœbe Elliott, of South Carolina, a niece of Rev. Dr. Elliott, long a rector of Ascension Church, Washington, D. C. Issue—six children:
    1. Alfred Magill Randolph, the third.
    2. Ann Stuart Randolph.
    3. Robert Lee Randolph, Jr.
    4. Phœbe Elliott Randolph.

5. Dorothea Winston Randolph.
6. M. Elliott Randolph.
- b. Eliza Turner Randolph, daughter of Rt. Rev. Alfred M. Randolph. Married Dr. James Murray Mason Ambler, son of Rev. John Ambler, of Fauquier Co., Va., and Anna Mason, of Winchester, Va. They reside in Baltimore and have several children. (See Ambler record, Volume I.)
- e. Alfred Magill Randolph, Jr., second son of Rt. Rev. Alfred M. Randolph.
- d. Eva B. Randolph, daughter of Rt. Rev. Alfred M. Randolph.
- e. Eleanor C. Randolph, daughter of Rt. Rev. Alfred M. Randolph.
- f. Fanny Hoxton Randolph, daughter of Rt. Rev. Alfred M. Randolph.
- (4) Beverly Randolph, unmarried; lives with his sister, Mrs. Turner, at Montrose, Fauquier Co., Va.
- (5) Buekner Magill Randolph, clergyman in the Prot. Epis. Church, and has charge of a Parish near Richmond, Va. Married Mary Hoxton. His son, Winslow Randolph, married Anna Robinson, of St. Louis, Mo., a great-granddaughter of Col. Edward Smith, of Smithfield.

## SEVENTH GENERATION.

VII. Thomas Jefferson Randolph<sup>7</sup>, Jr. (Col. Thomas Jefferson<sup>6</sup>, Thomas Mann<sup>6</sup>, Thomas Mann<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), eldest son, b. at Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., 1830; removed to Shadwell, same county. Married, first (1854) Mary Walker Meriwether, who d. 1863; second (1865) Charlotte N. Meriwether. He was accidentally killed by a blast on the Chesapeake and Ohio Railroad, 1870. His second wife d. 1876.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Frank Meriwether Randolph<sup>8</sup>. Married Charlotte Macon.
- II. Thomas Jefferson Randolph<sup>8</sup>, Jr.
- III. Margaret Randolph<sup>8</sup>, d. young.
- IV. Francis Nelson Randolph<sup>8</sup>, d. young.
- V. George Geiger Randolph<sup>8</sup>.

Issue by second marriage:

VI. Mary Walker Randolph<sup>8</sup>.

VII. Dr. Wilson Cary Nicholas Randolph<sup>7</sup> (Col. Thomas Jefferson<sup>6</sup>, Thomas Mann<sup>5</sup>, Thomas Mann<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. at Edge Hill, Albemarle Co., Va., 1832; removed to Charlottesville, same county. Married (1855) Mary Holliday, of that place, and they had issue:

I. Virginia Rawlings Randolph.

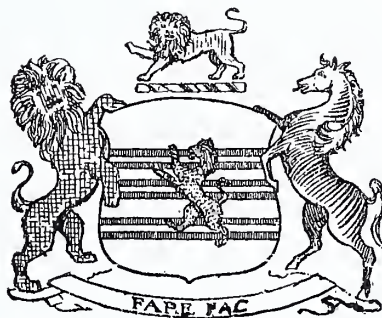
II. Wilson C. N. Randolph, Jr.

III. Mary Walker Randolph.

IV. Julia Minor Randolph.

## CHAPTER VI

## THE FAIRFAX FAMILY.



FAIRFAX COAT-OF-ARMS.

Arms—Argent, three bars gemelies gules, surmounted by a lion sable.  
Crest—A lion passant guardant gules.

Supporters—Dexter, a lion guardant sable; sinister, a bay horse.

Motto—*Fare fac* (speak, do).

The Fairfaxes have good reason to be proud of their name and ancestry, for it is an honorable family, replete with Christian men, strong, scholarly, brave, who feared God and honoured the King, yet who successfully fought for constitutional rights, and who were last, but not least, gallant lovers, ready to storm even a nunnery to win a bride, or to die unmarried, as did Thomas, sixth Baron Fairfax, after 30 years self-imposed exile from native land for love of a winsome but capricious woman, who jilted him.

The title of the Fairfax family has passed frequently from brother to brother, and from kinsman to kinsman, but it has always passed in peace and the family has appeared singularly united in spirit and feeling.

Within the last few years four octavo volumes of the Fairfax history and correspondence have been published in England, a large portion of whose contents were accidentally discovered in

an old box. They had been seereted there during Cromwell's rebellion, or soon after, for safe-keeping, and lest they should fall into the hands of those who would make an ill use of them. Being in a box which, when opened, presented only tiles to the eye, they were supposed to be lost for the larger part of two centuries. From these volumes the following sketch has been taken.

In the early history of the family an interesting fact is stated in Old English verse, viz.: that grandfather, son and grandson, with their wives and children, lived in the same house at Bradford, a village in England.

Under one roof they dwelt with their three wives,  
And at table eat what God gives:  
Our times a sweeter harmony have not known.  
There are six persons, yet their hearts but one.  
In these three pairs Bradford may justly glory;  
What other place can parallel this story?

The above lines were written by the Rector of Bradford, in 1647.

The house of Fairfax is of Saxon blood, and the name is of Saxon origin, signifying fair-haired. In some of the old ancestral deeds the name is spelled Fairvex, while the motto, "Fare fae," appears to be a pun upon the name, but admirably adapted to the spirit of the race, since its meaning is, "Speak, do," and the Fairfaxes have ever been ready to enforce their speech by action.

The Fairfax family were established at or before the Norman Conquest in Northumberland, after which they removed into Lincolnshire and later into Yorkshire, where they settled about the end of the Twelfth Century.

The first of the race whose name is recorded is Richard Fairfax, who in 1204 or 1205 possessed the Manor of Oaklawn and other estates, near York. His grandson, William Fairfax, was High Bailiff of York in 1249, and purchased the Manor of Walton, from which the family afterward drew a title. Richard married Eustachie, daughter of John Carthope, and among their children were:

- I. William Fairfax, of Walton.
- II. Bryan Fairfax.
- III. Guy Fairfax.

Sir William Fairfax, son of Guy Fairfax and grandson of Richard, married Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Sir Robert Manners,

knight, ancestor of the Duke of Rutland. He was one of the Justices of the Court of Common Pleas in the reign of King Henry VIII, and was succeeded by his only son, William.

#### LIKE YOUNG LOCHINVAR.

This Sir William Fairfax married Isabel Thwaits, daughter and heir of John Thwaits, Esq., of Denton Castle, Yorkshire. He was High Sheriff in the county of York during the reign of Henry VIII. A romance, equal to the Scottish ballad of Young Lochinvar, twines about this marriage. The young Sir William Fairfax loved, and was loved in return, by Isabel Thwaits, a beautiful Yorkshire heiress, who was guarded like a rare flower within the walls of a Cistercian nunnery, on the river Wharfe. She was under the care of the abbess, Anna Langton. The abbess was not slow to perceive the blossoming of love's spring-time between her ward and the gallant young knight. Hence she prohibited all meetings between the pair, and the young suitor, finding supplication, diplomacy and even commands from those in high authority unavailing, stormed the nunnery in warlike fashion, captured the willing lady of his heart; carried her off in triumph to Bolton Percy Church, and without loss of time or speech with her abbess guardian, made her his wife. Since all the world loves a lover the Ainsty region rang with rejoicings over the match, and the Lady Isabel Fairfax and her gallant knight lived happy ever after. Through his wife Sir William acquired Denton Castle, and through her descendants the nunnery, where she was confined, was wrested from the abbess, and Nun Appleton, built upon its site, was afterwards the home of Thomas Fairfax, third baron, whose daughter's wooing was less tempestuous, but whose married life as Duchess of Buckingham was full of sorrow. Her relation, Bryan Fairfax, the author, in writing of her, says: "She was an example of virtue and piety in a vicious age and debauched court," adding, "David tells us men of high degree are a lie (they promise and never perform), and men of low degree are vanity (that is, have nothing to give)."

Though hot-headed himself, Sir William Fairfax was less patient with others of a like nature. Upon his death he was succeeded by his second son—the eldest having died—Sir Thomas Fairfax, of Denton, who received that estate from his mother,



but who lost Steeton Castle by his father's disinheriting him and giving Steeton Castle to his youngest son Gabriel. The unruly son, Thomas, had offended his father by aiding the Duke of Bourbon at the sacking of Rome, hence his name is not even mentioned in the will. This will, copies of which still exist, is a curious document, in which the son, fallen under the father's displeasure, is never mentioned. It reads in part:

In the name of God, Amen. This is the last will and testament of me, William Fairfax, of Steeton, in the Parish of Bolton Percy, York, Knight, now whole of memory, thanks be to God, made this third day of March, in the year of our Lord one thousand five hundred and fifty-seven, in the fourth and fifth years of the reign of King Philip and Queen Mary at Steeton aforesaid: First, I will and bequeath my soul to our Lord Jesus Christ and our Lady St. Mary, His blessed Mother, and my body to be buried in St. Nicholas, his choir, in Bolton Church, or elsewhere it shall please God I do depart, and my executors to see me brought forth to the honor of God and worship of my consanguinity with 14 black gowns to 14 poor men of Bolton, Appleton, Coulton, and Bilborough and 14 torches with 14 shillings for their pains, and to every grass house in Bolton, Appleton, Wilborough, Coulton and Todeaster I bequeath sixpence and dole at my burial to the needy poor liberally at the pains and discretion of my executors.

A rhyme follows this last testament to this effect:

The will of dead men is a sacred band.  
To see it kept obliging every hand.

Or thus:

The laws should be observed, but dead men's will  
Must needs be kept, command they good or ill.

## A LONG RECORD OF DISTINCTION.

### FIRST GENERATION.

Disinheritance seems to have had a stimulating effect upon Sir Thomas Fairfax, of Denton. From him and his wife, Dorothy, daughter of George Gale, Esq., of Asham Grange, sprung the line of Fairfaxes destined to raise the already illustrious name to greater heights than it had yet known. He was knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1576 and died in 1599.

They had issue:

- I. Thomas Fairfax<sup>2</sup>, who succeeded him.
- II. Henry Fairfax<sup>2</sup>.

- III. Ferdinando Fairfax<sup>2</sup>, named for a comrade who fought with him at Rome.
- IV. One daughter.
- V. One daughter.
- VI. Col. Charles Fairfax, who was killed at the siege of Ostend.
- VII. Edward Fairfax, the translator of Tasso, said to be the first English poet who imparted metrical smoothness to a translation of the Italian poet's lines. In a work on demonology he thus declares his religious belief and ecclesiastical position: "I am in religion neither of a fanatic Puritan, nor superstitious Papist, but so settled in conscience that I have the sure ground of God's word for all I believe, and the commendable ordinances of our English church to approve all I practice." The latter's gay daughters are said to have ruled their scholarly father by declaring they were bewitched and under spells whenever his orders clashed with their inclinations. The sons, Henry and Ferdinando, died young.

#### SECOND GENERATION.

II. Sir Thomas Fairfax<sup>2</sup> (Thomas<sup>1</sup>) succeeded his father; was knight of Denton Castle. He married (1582) Ellen Ashe, daughter of Robert Ashe, Esq. He was created a peer of Scotland October 18, 1627, as Baron Cameron, of Fairfax. With him the title still carried by his descendants had its beginning. From him the descent is as follows. He was born 1590.

#### THIRD GENERATION.

III. Ferdinando Fairfax<sup>3</sup> (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), K. B., second baron. He married, first (1607), Lady Mary Sheffield (daughter of Edmund, first Earl of Mulgrave), and second, Rhoda, an heiress and daughter of Thomas Clapham, of London. By the former he had three sons and six daughters. He distinguished himself as member of Parliament for Boroughbridge and Yorkshire, as Parliamentary General of the Northern forces, and had chief command at the battle of Marston Moor, where he defeated the royal army and was subsequently Governor of the city of York. His

eldest son, Thomas, had fought shoulder to shoulder with his father and at the latter's death, in 1647, succeeded to the title.

The will of Fernando Fairfax, father of the great general in Cromwell's army, differs much from that of his Romish ancestor. Instead of commanding his soul to Lady Mary in conjunction with her son, his will runs thus: "First, I commend my soul to their Infinite Majesties, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, the same God who hath with his manifold blessings been gracious to me in the world, and whose goodness in his great mercy I hope to enjoy in Heaven. Next, I give my body to be buried without much pomp or ceremony, in what place it shall please God to call me out of this sinful world; but, if with convenience it may be, I desire to be interred in the parish of Bolton Percy, near the body of my dear wife." A sensible and pious will, worthy of imitation.

This parish of Bolton Percy was one in which his brother, the Rev. Henry Fairfax, ministered. He appears to have been a truly pious man, and his wife to have been an helpmate to him. Some interesting letters, written before and after their marriage, show them to have been well formed by nature and grace for the position which they chose in preference to all others. While the country was full of confusion and bloodshed, and his father, brother and nephew were so actively engaged in revolutionary scenes, he quietly performed his duties as a parish minister, molesting none and being unmolested by any. He had two sons; one of them, Bryan, was a scholar and author. Henry was the fourth Lord Fairfax, inheriting the title from the great general, who had no son. His son, who was the grandson of the humble curate of Bolton Percy, was also inheritor of the title, and married the daughter of Lord Culpepper.

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

IV. Thomas Fairfax<sup>4</sup> (Ferdinando<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), K. B., third baron. Married Anne, daughter of Sir Horatio Vere, Lord Vere, of Tilbury. Baron Fairfax had commanded a cavalry wing at Marston Moor and participated in his father's military triumphs. He was already a distinguished republican military leader, and when only 34 years of age, in 1645, was appointed general in the Parliament's army. In that year he gained the

celebrated victory at Naseby, and afterward defeated the Royalists in a series of engagements, but did not participate in the execution of the king, Charles I. That extreme measure caused him in 1650 to resign the command of the army of Cromwell, and in 1659 he zealously assisted to restore the monarchy. He was constable of the Tower in 1647; lord of the Isle of Man in 1650, and sat as member of Parliament for Yorkshire in 1660. It was Anne, wife of this same man of war who, with their only child, Mary, followed him through camp life and who, during the trial of the king in Westminster Hall, pluckily dared to denounce from the gallery, where she sat, Cromwell's violent course. In old age the Baron retired to rural life at Nun Appleton. In the seclusion of this place the same daughter, Mary, whose childhood had been spent in the saddle, and whose girlhood had blossomed in the quiet gardens of Nun Appleton, was wooed and won by the brilliant George Villiers, second Duke of Buckingham, who was as graceless as he was goodly in appearance, and although she ranked second only to royalty, her life was a mournful tragedy, which found an end in her death and interment in King Henry VII Chapel, in Westminster Abbey. She died without children and moved in dignified sorrow amid the brilliant court circles. Upon the death of Thomas, third baron, in 1677, the barony devolved upon his cousin, Henry Fairfax.

IV. Henry Fairfax<sup>4</sup> (Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), fourth Baron Fairfax, was the grandson of the first Lord (Thomas Fairfax) through his second son, the Hon. Rev. Henry Fairfax, of Oglethorpe, county York, and his wife, Mary Cholmley. Henry, fourth baron, married Frances Barwick, daughter of Sir Robert Barwick, of Tolston, Yorkshire, by whom he left two sons:

I. Thomas Fairfax<sup>5</sup>, succeeded as fifth baron; d. 1685.

II. Henry Fairfax<sup>5</sup>, of Tolston, York.

#### FIFTH GENERATION.

V. Thomas Fairfax<sup>5</sup> (Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>). Married Catherine Culpepper, daughter of Sir Thomas Culpepper, and to that marriage is due the passing of Denton Castle from the Fairfax family and the emigration of the sixth Lord Fairfax to America. Catherine inherited Leeds Castle, in Kent, England. She inherited about 5,700,000 acres of land in Virginia. Thomas,

fifth baron, was a colonel of the guards and member of Parliament for Yorkshire until by the Act of Union he became ineligible. He d. 1710, and was succeeded by his eldest son, also named Thomas. Thomas and Catherine had issue:

- I. Thomas Fairfax<sup>o</sup>, sixth baron.
- II. Henry Culpepper Fairfax<sup>o</sup>, never married.
- III. Robert Fairfax<sup>o</sup>, seventh baron.
- IV. Margaret Fairfax<sup>o</sup>. Married Rev. Dr. David Wilkins, pretendary of Canterbury.
- V. Frances Fairfax<sup>o</sup>. Married Denny Martin, Esq. She d. 1791, leaving two children. Denny Martin, her son, in holy orders, inherited at the decease of his uncle, Robert Fairfax, seventh baron, Leeds Castle and other estates in Kent, which led him to assume the name of Fairfax. Her second son, Philip Martin, was a lieutenant-general in the British army. His brother, Denny Martin, dying, he also assumed the name of Fairfax, and inherited Leeds Castle but died unmarried in 1821, when Leeds Castle passed to the representatives of his aunt and heir-at-law, Fiennes Wykeham Martin, Esq.

In the corrupt and venal reign of Charles II the whole State of Virginia, except such parts as had been specially patented, was made over for a time to Lord Culpepper. There was, of course, a good pecuniary consideration given to the king for quit rents. Lord Culpepper was not only the proprietary of the colony, but had the livings of all the parishes in his gift—could bestow or take away as he pleased. There was, however, too much of American feeling, even at that early period, to submit to such a measure. So heavy were the complaints and so threatening the opposition that the king withdrew the grant of proprietorship for the whole estate and restricted it with limitations to the Northern Neck, as above described. By intermarriage between the families of Culpepper and Fairfax, this part of the State came into possession of Thomas Fairfax, whose mother was daughter of Lord Culpepper, himself being the seventh baron, who had inherited the title of Lord Cameron.

V. Henry Fairfax<sup>o</sup> (Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), of Tolston, county York. He inherited his mother's estate of

Tolston. He was high sheriff of Yorkshire in 1691. He married Anne, daughter and heir of Richard Harrison, of South Cave, and died in 1708, leaving issue:

- I. Henry Fairfax<sup>a</sup>, of Tolston, b. Sept. 15, 1685; d. Nov. 22, 1750, unmarried.
- II. William Fairfax<sup>a</sup>, baptized at Newton-Kyne, Oct. 30, 1691. Ancestor of the American Fairfaxes. In 1771 married Sarah, daughter of Major Thomas Walker, chief justice of the Bahama Islands; his second wife was Deborah Clarke, of Salem, Mass. He served in the English army and navy; judge and governor of the Bahama Islands. He was collector of customs at Salem, Mass., 1725. He removed to Virginia in 1732 at the request of his first cousin, Thomas, sixth Lord Fairfax, the proprietor of the Northern Neck of Virginia, to become agent for the property. President of the King's Council in Virginia. He built Belvoir on the Potomac. When Lawrence Washington returned from the expedition against Carthagera, he married Anne Fairfax, the daughter of William Fairfax, and built Mount Vernon, three miles above Belvoir, on the Potomac, and here George Washington was brought at the age of fourteen into the society of Belvoir and Mount Vernon. Issue by first marriage:
  - I. George William Fairfax<sup>r</sup>, of Belvoir, in Virginia and Tolston, Yorkshire; b. at Bahama Islands, 1724. Married (Dec. 17, 1748) Sarah, daughter of Colonel Wilson Cary, of "Ceelys," near Hampton, on James River, Virginia, the companion of Washington on his first surveying tour. In 1759 he inherited Tolston from his uncle Henry, and went to England to live in 1773. He died childless, leaving his estates to his nephew, Ferdinando. His widow survived him until November 2, 1811; d. at Bath, aged 81 years.
  - II. Thomas Fairfax<sup>r</sup>, R. N., killed on board H. M. S. Harwich in a naval engagement with the French in West Indies, aged 21, June 26, 1746.
- III. Anne Fairfax<sup>r</sup>, b. Salem, Mass., in 1728. Married (July 10, 1743) Lawrence, elder brother of General George



Washington, who died July 26, 1752. Married, second, George Lee, of Virginia, uncle of Philip Lee, the grandfather of General Robert E. Lee.

IV. Sarah Fairfax<sup>r</sup>. Married Major John Carlyle, of Alexandria, Va.

V. Bryan Fairfax<sup>r</sup>, eighth Lord Fairfax.

VI. William Fairfax<sup>r</sup>, an ensign 28th foot. Mortally wounded at Quebec under Wolfe in 1759. Before the battle General Wolfe touched him on the shoulder and said: "Young man, when we come into battle remember your name."

VII. Hannah Fairfax<sup>r</sup>. Married Warner Washington, first cousin of General Washington.

#### SIXTH GENERATION.

VI. Thomas Fairfax<sup>o</sup>, sixth Lord Fairfax; b. at Denton in 1690. He retired to his estates in Virginia in 1745 and built Greenway Court, in Frederick Co., where he died March 12, 1782; buried in the chancel of the old church at Winchester. He succeeded to the title in 1710. An erroneous belief that the present Lord Alfred Kirby Fairfax is descended from this sixth Lord Fairfax, and first of the title to come to America, appears fast rooted in the minds of the American public. Thomas Fairfax, sixth baron, never married. He came of age to find that his mother had sold his paternal estates, including Denton Castle, to secure intact her own inheritance, the Castle of Leeds, in Kent, and he fell in love and all the preparations for the marriage were gayly in progress when the lady of his heart discovered his loss of patrimony and withdrew immediately from the engagement. Up to that time Thomas Fairfax had been a gay, light-hearted soldier in a swell regiment, the Life Guards, and a university man of scholarly attainments. Now, under this double blow, his life became embittered. He was obliged to ratify the sale of his property, but he never cared for the manors in Kent and estates in the Isle of Wight, inherited from his mother. He never forgave her action and when a blighted love affair was its culmination he resolved to visit America. There, within the boundaries of the Potomac and Rappahannock, he had inherited (also from his mother) a tract of land called Northern Neck, estimated to be

over 5,000,000 acres. Coming to America, he was so captivated with the climate and picturesqueness of Virginia that he resolved to remain there the balance of his life, which he did. He gave his English estates to his brother, Robert, and distributed the surplus of his American income among his poor neighbors. He designed to have a fine manor house on the slope of the Blue Ridge Mountains, near Winchester. Plans were all drawn out for Greenway Court, as the manor was to be called, but—lacking perhaps the incentive of wife and children—the palatial residence was never built. Instead, a long, low, one-story building with a roof sloping down in the old Virginia fashion into low projecting eaves that formed a veranda running the whole length of the house, became his residence, and was known as Greenway Court, and here he lived and died. His style of living, however, was in ancient English fashion, lavish and hospitable, with a retinue of servants, and Greenway Court was the scene of truly lordly entertainment for any distinguished English gentleman who came to America. He was lieutenant and custos rotulorum of Frederick county, and presided at the provincial court at Winchester, Va., and was one of the most beneficent of official magnates. He was the patron of George Washington in the latter's youth, and his friend through life, but, notwithstanding, remained a rigid Tory, and it is said the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown was his death-blow, since he never rallied from the shock of hearing the news.

Years after, children playing in the garden of a deserted dwelling found a parchment, musty and mildewed, which proved to be a marriage contract drawn in England when George I was king, and all ready in every detail for signatures and seals, that had never been affixed. The name of the lady had been carefully erased, but the man's name was left solitary in proud token, perhaps, of an unchanged heart, and that name, it is said, was Thomas, sixth Lord Fairfax, Baron of Cameron.

On his death his title passed to his brother Robert.

VI. Robert Fairfax<sup>a</sup> (Thomas<sup>b</sup>, Henry<sup>c</sup>, Henry<sup>d</sup>, Thomas<sup>e</sup>, Thomas<sup>f</sup>), b. 1707; member of Parliament for Mardstone in 1743. Major of Horse Guards. He married twice, and d. 1793, childless. He left Leeds Castle, Kent, and the rest of the Fairfax property to his sisters. His title passed to the Rev. Bryan Fairfax, rector

of Christ Church, Alexandria, Va., who succeeded as eighth Lord Fairfax. Leeds Castle passed into the hands of the descendants of Frances Fairfax (sister of the sixth and seventh Lords Fairfax), who married Denny Martin, Esq.

#### SEVENTH GENERATION.

VII. Rev. Bryan Fairfax<sup>7</sup> (William<sup>6</sup>, Henry<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), eighth Lord Fairfax, of Tolston, Yorkshire and Mount Eagle in Virginia, b. 1737. Married (1759) Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Wilson Cary, of "Ceelys," and sister of Mrs. George Wm. Fairfax. In 1789 he entered holy orders. He was chief mourner at the funeral of Gen'l George Washington. He was rector of Christ Church, Alexandria, Va. His claim to the peerage was recognized by the House of Lords on May 6, 1800; d. at Mount Eagle, Fairfax Co., Va., August 1802. Just a hundred years later, in 1900, Bryan Fairfax's great-grandson, Albert Kirby Fairfax, the present Lord Fairfax, called upon the Lord Chancellor of England, as successor to the title, and all the formality observed was that the Chancellor said, "How do you do, Lord Fairfax," and asked him to dine.

On going to England to secure his title and perhaps some property with it, Rev. Bryan Fairfax met with much trouble, delay, and mortification. The Earl of Buchan, Gen'l Washington's friend, addressed a letter of religious sympathy and condolence to him, to which he thus responds: "I have the happiness to say with the Psalmist, in respect of God's dealings toward me, 'I know that of very faithfulness thou hast caused me to be troubled.' I have also seen and published a sermon of his, in which the evangelical plan of salvation is most distinctly and happily set forth." (Bishop Meade's "Old Families and Churches of Virginia," p. 259.)

The Rev. Bryan Fairfax succeeded Rev. David Griffith in 1790. He was ordained deacon in 1786 by Bishop Seabury. Mr. Bryan Fairfax had been a vestryman of the parish and delegate to the Virginia Conventions for some time before this. Whether it was that his health was delicate from the first, or whatever was the cause, he wished an assistant in the parish, and the vestry passed an order allowing him to invite the Rev. Mason Locke Weems,

or any one else whom he might choose, to act as such. Mr. Fairfax made a very different selection and called the Rev. Bernard Page, giving him all the emoluments of the parish. Mr. Page was very decidedly of the then rising evangelical school in the Church of England, and a very zealous preacher of its doctrines. I doubt not but that Mr. Fairfax sympathized with the principles of that school. In a sermon of his which I (Meade) have published, he sets forth the doctrine of salvation by grace through faith in Christ in such a way as was not common in that day. In the year 1792, he resigns his charge in a letter, stating his reasons, which is not entered on the records, though the most flattering letter of the vestry, regretting their loss of him, is. I am not aware how long he lived after this. His residence during the latter part of his life was a place called "Mount Eagle," a short distance beyond the Hunting Creek Bridge. I have stated that he endeavored to dissuade his friend and neighbor, General George Washington, from the war with England. The General, in his letter to him, deals most gently and respectfully with him. The Rev. Mr. Fairfax acted with such prudence, if he did not see cause to change his sentiments, as not to forfeit the friendship of Washington and of the patriots in Fairfax parish, but was, as we have seen, chosen to be their minister. He has left behind him many worthy adherents to our church, though some few have varied from it. At the resignation of Mr. Fairfax, Rev. Thomas Davis was chosen to succeed him. (Bishop Meade's "Old Churches and Families of Virginia.")

Rev. Bryan Fairfax and his wife, Elizabeth Cary, had issue:

- I. William Fairfax, d. infant.
- II. Thomas Fairfax, ninth Lord Fairfax.
- III. Ferdinando Fairfax, of Shannon Hill, Jefferson Co., Va.  
Married his first cousin, Elizabeth Blair Cary.

#### EIGHTH GENERATION.

VIII. Thomas Fairfax<sup>8</sup> (Bryan<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, Henry<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), ninth Lord Fairfax, of Belvoir and Vacluse, Fairfax Co., b. 1762. He spent his life in superintending his paternal estates on the Potomac. He owned upward of forty thousand acres in Fairfax Co., and lived the life of a country gentleman. He died at Vacluse, April 21, 1846. Married

three times; first, Mary Aylett (s. p.); second, Laura Washington, his cousin; third, Margaret Herbert, who d. 1858. He had following issue:

- I. Albert Fairfax<sup>9</sup>, b. April 15, 1802. Married Caroline Eliza Snowden.
- II. Henry Fairfax<sup>9</sup>, b. May 4, 1804; d. 1847. Married (1827) Anne Caroline Herbert.
- III. Dr. Orlando Fairfax<sup>9</sup>, b. 1806. Married his cousin, Mary Randolph Cary.
- IV. Reginald Fairfax<sup>9</sup>, d. unmarried 1862, C. S. Navy.
- V. Eugenia Fairfax<sup>9</sup>. Married Mr. Hyde. Issue:
  - I. Edward Herbert Hyde<sup>10</sup>, Atlanta, Ga.
  - II. Reginald Fairfax Hyde<sup>10</sup>, Springfield, Mass.
- III. Margaret Hyde<sup>10</sup>, now (1905) Mrs. Neville Whiting, of Marshall, Va.
- VI. Eugenia Fairfax. Married, first, a Mr. Mason, had issue:
  - I. Ethelbert Mason<sup>10</sup>, Alexandria, Va.
  - II. Edgar Mason<sup>10</sup>, Alexandria, Va.
- VII. Aurelia Fairfax<sup>9</sup>. Married Mr. Irwin. Issue:
  - I. Dr. Fairfax Irwin<sup>10</sup>, U. S. Marine Hospital Service.
  - II. Daughter Irwin<sup>10</sup>. Married Captain Howngan, U. S. Navy.
- VIII. Monima Fairfax<sup>9</sup>. Married Archibald Cary. Issue in Cary Genealogy, Chapter IV.
- VIII. Ferdinando Fairfax<sup>8</sup> (Bryan<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, Henry<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), of Shannon Hill, Jefferson Co., Va., b. 1766. Heir to his uncle George William Fairfax. He dissipated his fortune in visionary schemes and was continually engaged in lawsuits with squatters on his estate. He married his first cousin, Elizabeth Blair Cary, daughter of Col. Wilson Miles Cary, of "Ceelys," and died at Mount Eagle, Fairfax Co., Va., September 24, 1820. His widow died at Shannon Hill, January 19, 1822. They had issue:
  - I. George William Fairfax<sup>9</sup>, b. at Shannon Hill, Nov. 5, 1797. Married Isabella, daughter of Major W. Gibbs McNeill, of New York; d. leaving issue:
    - I. Donald McNeill Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, U. S. N. The only Fairfax who took the side of the North during the Civil War.
    - II. Edwin Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.

- III. Martha Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.
- IV. Isabella Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Wilson Miles Cary Fairfax<sup>0</sup>, b. at Shannon Hill, Dec. 1, 1798. He married his cousin Lucy Griffeth. They had issue:
  - I. Wilson Miles Cary Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, d. single.
  - II. Llewellyn Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, drowned in Potomac.
- III. Frederick Fairfax<sup>10</sup>. Married Miss Cooke.
- IV. Emily Fairfax<sup>10</sup>. Married Rt. Rev. Dr. Whittle, Bishop of Virginia.
- V. Anne Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, single.
- VI. Alice Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, d. —.
- III. Farinda Fairfax<sup>9</sup>, b. at Shannon Hill, Va. Married Perin Washington; d. at Cameron, Jefferson Co., Va. Issue:
  - I. Farinda Fairfax<sup>10</sup>. Married, first, Mr. Payne; second, Dr. Barton.
- IV. Mary Fairfax<sup>0</sup>, d. single.
- V. Sally Fairfax<sup>9</sup>, d. infant.
- VI. Ferdinando Fairfax<sup>9</sup>, b. at Shannon Hill, Jan. 9, 1803, settled in King George Co., Va. Married, first, Mary, daughter of Barley Jett; second, a daughter of James Jett, a doctor of medicine, now living at Sherwood, Tepton Co., Tenn. Issue:
  - I. William Henry Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, surgeon C. S. A. Married (his cousin) Eleanor Griffith.
  - II. Ferdinando Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.
  - III. Emeline Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.
  - IV. Ella Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.
  - V. Eva Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.
  - VI. Mithe Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.
  - VII. Ethel Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.
- VIII. Ada Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.
- VII. Christiana Fairfax<sup>0</sup>. Married Tho. Ragland and left one daughter:
  - I. Virginia Ragland<sup>10</sup>. Married (her cousin) Commodore Donald McNeill Fairfax, U. S. N.
- VIII. William Henry Fairfax<sup>0</sup>, d. single.
- IX. Louisa Fairfax<sup>0</sup>, d. infant.



- X. Thomas Fairfax<sup>9</sup>.
- XI. Archibald Blair Fairfax<sup>9</sup>, Lieutenant U. S. N., Commander C. S. N.; d. Jan. 3, 1867, and buried in Baltimore.

## NINTH GENERATION.

IX. Albert Fairfax<sup>9</sup> (Thomas<sup>8</sup>, Bryan<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, Henry<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), b. April 15, 1802. Married Caroline Eliza, daughter of Richard Snowden, of Oakland, Prince George Co., Va.; d. before his father, May 9, 1835. He had issue:

- I. Charles Snowden Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, tenth Lord Fairfax, b. at Vaueluse, Va., March 8, 1829; went to California in 1851. Married Ada, second daughter of Mr. Joseph S. Benham, a distinguished lawyer of Cincinnati, Ohio. He held the office of Clerk of the Supreme Court of California; d. in Baltimore, Md., April 7, 1869, childless, and was succeeded by his brother, John Contee Fairfax.

- II. John Contee Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, b. at Vaueluse, Sept. 30, 1830. Married (Oct. 8, 1857) Mary Kirby, daughter of Col. Edward Kirby, U. S. Army.

IX. Henry Fairfax<sup>9</sup> (Thomas<sup>8</sup>, Bryan<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, Henry<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), of Ashgrove, Fairfax Co., Va., b. May 4, 1804; educated at West Point Academy. Married (1827) Anne Caroline Herbert; d. in Mexican War, August 14, 1847, Captain U. S. A. They had issue:

- I. Raymond Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, b. July 19, 1828. Married Anna Burford, and lives in Lynchburg, Va.
- II. Dr. Albert Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, b. June 4, 1836; single; d. Alexandria, Va., 1888.

III. Herbert C. Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.

IV. Henry Fairfax<sup>10</sup>.

IX. Dr. Orlando Fairfax<sup>9</sup> (Thomas<sup>8</sup>, Bryan<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, Henry<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), of Alexandria, Va., b. 1806. Married (1829) his cousin Mary Randolph, daughter of Wilson Jefferson Cary. Dr. Fairfax was a leading physician in Alexandria, and lived in Richmond, where he died in 1882. They had issue:

- I. Virginia Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, b. March 14, 1832; d. Oct. 22, 1832.
- II. Edith Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, b. Nov. 23, 1833; d. Oct. 1839.
- III. Orlando Cary Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, b. Feb. 13, 1836.

- IV. Monimia Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, b. Dec. 27, 1837. Married (1866) Hon. George Davis, of Wilmington, N. C., Attorney General to the Confederate States. Issue:
  - I. Mary Fairfax Davis<sup>11</sup>. Married Mr. Fairfax Gouverneur, son Fairfax Gouverneur.
  - II. Cary Davis<sup>11</sup>. Married Donald Maekal, of Wilmington, N. C. Issue:
    - I. Monimia Fairfax Maekal<sup>12</sup>.
  - V. Jane Cary Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, living in Washington, D. C. To her I am indebted for much of this Fairfax genealogy.
- VI. Randolph Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, b. Nov. 23, 1842, a gallant young hero; fell at the battle of Fredericksburg, Va., C. S. A., Dec. 15, 1862. He was a very rare and unusually gifted youth, about whom Rev. Philip Slaughter wrote an interesting monograph.
- VII. Ethelbert Fairfax<sup>10</sup>, b. Jan. 20, 1845; Lieutenant C. S. A., and wounded at battle of Bentonville, N. C., 1865.
- VIII. Mary Edith Fairfax<sup>10</sup>. Married Dr. Jaquelin Ambler Moneure, of U. S. Quarantine Service, Ship Island, via Biloxi, Miss. (See Volume I, Chapters VI, VII, and Moneure Chapter, this volume.)

## TENTH GENERATION.

X. John Contee Fairfax<sup>10</sup> (Albert<sup>9</sup>, Thomas<sup>8</sup>, Bryan<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, Henry<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), eleventh Baron, b. at Vaucluse, Fairfax Co., Va., September 30, 1830. Married (October 8, 1857) Mary Kirby, daughter of Col. Edward Kirby, U. S. Army. He was an M. D. Toward the close of the Civil War he purchased Northampton, an estate of eight hundred acres, Prince George Co., Md., where his widow, the Baroness Fairfax, still resides, and where the present Lord Fairfax, his brother, and all his sisters, save the Hon. Caroline Snowden Fairfax, were born. They had issue:

- I. Hon. Caroline Snowden Fairfax<sup>11</sup>, who resides at the Brexton, Baltimore, Md.
- II. Hon. Josephine Fairfax<sup>11</sup>. Married Mr. Tunstall Smith, of Baltimore, Md. Issue:
  - I. Louise Smith<sup>12</sup>.
  - II. Josephine Smith<sup>12</sup>.
- III. Albert Fairfax<sup>11</sup>, succeeded as twelfth Lord Fairfax. He resides in London, England.

- IV. Charles Edmund Fairfax<sup>11</sup>, lives in New York.
- V. Hon. Mary Cecelia Fairfax<sup>11</sup>.
- VI. Frances Fairfax<sup>11</sup>. Married Mr. Edward Lownde Rhett, about 1903, both of New York.

#### ELEVENTH GENERATION.

XI. Albert Kirby Fairfax<sup>11</sup> (John<sup>10</sup>, Albert<sup>9</sup>, Thomas<sup>8</sup>, Bryan<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, Henry<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), b. June 23, 1870, twelfth Baron Fairfax, of Cameron, and not yet thirty-five years of age; has since his father's death taken an active interest in the management of Northampton, his mother's home in Maryland. The magnificent estate of Northern Neck, Va., inherited by Thomas Fairfax, sixth Baron, from his mother, Catherine Culpepper, and which would have acerued to the present Lord Fairfax by right of entail if that right had been preserved, was confiscated by Washington during the Revolution and a princely fortune lost to the Fairfax house. The young Lord, who is unmarried, is a most unassuming and polished gentleman. His residence for some time past has been in London, where he is assistant manager of the International Banking Corporation. His preliminary training in banking was with Brown Bros., New York City.

To be an American gentleman and citizen who unites all the rights and privileges of American citizenship with equal rights to sit with the peers of Scotland at the foot of the throne of Great Britain above the woosack and to bear the ancient and honored title of Baron Fairfax of Cameron, peer of Scotland, such is the exceedingly unique position occupied by Albert Kirby Fairfax, American gentleman and twelfth Baron Fairfax of Cameron, who visited his home in the United States in January 1905.

To have a right to vote for President of the United States, and yet for generations to have had your family uninterruptedly called at the roll call of the Scotland peers, assembling for election to Parliament at Holyrood Castle, this is not a usual state of affairs, and naturally invests the owner of these peculiar privileges and his family with an unusual degree of interest on both sides of the Atlantic Ocean, but especially in Maryland, where Northampton, the Fairfax estate, is situated, and in Baltimore, where two of his sisters reside.

## PROMINENT FAMILIES.

Among prominent families to which Lord Fairfax's family is related, are the Ridgelys, Warfields, Snowdens, Kirbys, Carys, Thomases, Herberts, Marvins, Fields, Stevensons, Williamses and others. Northampton, in Prince George Co., Md., is a charming old estate of eight hundred acres. The house, some two hundred years old, is of frame, about one hundred and twenty-five feet front, and such portion as is the original architecture is put together without nails. The drawing room, library and dining room, all with high chimney pieces and wide open fireplaces, face the front; and in the rear, according to the fashion of that time, are bedrooms with high Gothic windows and other rooms now used as pantries. The place is well wooded and about the residence are elm and willow trees, also flowering magnolia trees, and white fringe trees trailing their delicate blossoms. There are stately poplar trees also, and in a grove is a well of olden days, with a well-house built over it.

While Northampton was acquired by the Fairfax family by purchase, it has none the less been in the possession of ancestors of the family through a feminine line for generations.

Lieutenant Thomas Sprigg, b. 1630; d. 1704. He was of Calvert and Prince George Co., and was granted by Lord Baltimore a tract of one thousand acres of land called Northampton. He was a man of official honors, and he married Elinor Nuttall. Their son, Lient. Col. Thomas Sprigg, married one Margaret. Their daughter, Elinor Sprigg, married Henry Wright; and their daughter, in turn, Mary Wright, married Thomas Snowden. Maj. Thomas Snowden, son of the last named pair, married Annie Ridgely, and they in turn had a son, Richard Snowden, who married Eliza Warfield, daughter of Dr. Charles Alexander Warfield, of Peggy Stewart's fame. A daughter was born to them, Caroline Eliza Snowden, who married Hon. Albert Fairfax, of Vacluse, Fairfax Co., Va., father of John Contee Fairfax, eleventh Baron Fairfax, who purchased Northampton, whose widow still resides there, and whose son is the present Lord Fairfax.

Included in the connection are, Mrs. Burton Harrison, of New York; Mr. Clarence Cary, of New York; Mr. Fairfax Harrison, of Washington, D. C.; Mr. Francis Burton Harrison, of Washington, D. C.; Mr. Archibald Cary Harrison, of New York; Mrs.

Neville Whiting, of Virginia; Col. Arthur Herbert; Messrs. Herbert and Harrison Whiting; Mrs. Fairfax Harrison; Sergeant John Carlyle Fairfax, of Fort Ethan Allen, Vt.; Mrs. Courtland H. Smith, of Hampton Farm, Alexandria, Va.; Miss Nora Herbert, of Alexandria; Mrs. William Pinkney Whyte, Jr.; Mrs. H. Warren Buckler; Mrs. William Kennedy Boone; Mrs. Charles Marshall; Mr. Arthur Percy Fairfax; Mr. John Brune Cary; Mr. Wilson M. Cary; Miss Gwendolen Cary; Mr. R. E. Lee Marshall; Mr. Charles A. Marshall; Mr. H. Snowden Marshall; Dr. Harry T. Marshall, all of Baltimore, and Mrs. Markham Marshall, of New York.

#### COLLATERAL BRANCHES.

Issue of the late Hon. Henry Fairfax, second son of ninth Baron, b. 1804; d. 1847. Married (1827) Anna Caroline, daughter of the Hon. John Carlyle Herbert, of Maryland.

Raymond, b. 1829; is a civil engineer; was Major Confederate Army 1861-5. Married (1865) Anna, daughter of Sylvester L. Burford, Esq., of Amherst Co., Va., U. S. A., and has living issue: Ronald Randolph, of Roanoke, Va., U. S. A., b. 1870. Married (1901) Annie Ridge, daughter of Charles Early, Esq., Washington, D. C., U. S. A. Guy Percy, b. 1872. Henry Raymond, b. 1875. Isabella Christian. Ada Raymond.

Herbert Carlyle, b. 1838, was captain Confederate Army 1862-5. Married (1861) Jane Davis, daughter of Dr. Frederiek Baker, and has issue living: Eugenia Chalmers. Caroline Herbert. Henry Malcolm, b. 1849, educated at the Theological Seminary, Alexandria, Va.

Grandson of the late George William Fairfax, Esq., eldest son of the late Hon. Ferdinando Fairfax (*infra*).

Issue (by first marriage) of the late Rear Admiral Donald MacNeill Fairfax, b. 1821; d. 1894. Married, first (1854), Virginia Cary; d. 1878, daughter of Thomas Ragland, Esq., of Virginia; second (1879), Josephine (now of Hagerstown, Md., U. S. A.), daughter of the late Rear Admiral A. H. Foote; U. S. Navy. William MacNeill Fairfax, b. 1858. Residences, Washington, U. S. A.; Hagerstown, Md., U. S. A.

Grandchildren of the late Hon. Ferdinando Fairfax, second son of eighth Baron, b. 1766; d. ——. Married Elizabeth Blair,

d. 1822, daughter of Col. Wilson Miles Cary, of "Ceelys," Elizabeth City Co., Va., U. S. Army.

Issue of the late Wilson Miles Cary Fairfax, Esq., b. 1798; d. 1860. Married (1882) Lucy Anne, who d. 1861, daughter of David Griffith, Esq., of Virginia, U. S. A. Frederiek Fairfax, b. 1835, formerly a member of U. S. Coast Survey. Married (1868) Mary Alden, daughter of the late Lieut. Com. John Aquila Cooke, U. S. Navy, and has issue living: Lilian Vere. Gwendolin Owner, residence, 235 Second Street, South, Capitol Hill, Washington, U. S. A. Annie Fairfax, residence, Richmond, Va., U. S. A. Issue of the late Ferdinando Fairfax, Esq., M. D., b. 1803; d. 1873. Married, first (1831) Mary Anne, who d. 1848, daughter of Bailey Jett, Esq., of Westmoreland Co., Va.; second (1855), Mary Jane, who d. 1864, daughter of James Jett, Esq.

William Henry Fairfax, M. D., b. 1834, was surgeon in Confederate Army; is Treasurer of Westmoreland Co., Va. Married (1867) Eleanor, daughter of Edward Colville Griffith, Esq., of Westmoreland Co., Va., and has issue living: Frederick Griffith, b. 1867, residence, Montrose, Westmoreland Co., Va., U. S. A. Emma Fairfax. Married (1870) James Chandler, Esq., and has issue living: Juliette Critcher, b. 1873. Ella Louisa. Married (18—) Captain Edmund Wharton. Evangeline May, Mary Jett, and Ethel Blair, all of whom are married. Ada Susan. Married (1892) Allen Monroe Chandler, Esq., residence, Montrose, Westmoreland Co., Va., U. S. A.

Issue of the late Commodore Archibald Blair Fairfax, b. 1809; d. 1867. Married first (1832) Sarah Carlyle, who d. 1850, daughter of the Hon. John Carlyle Herbert, of Maryland, U. S. A.; second (1852) Eliza Mary, daughter of the Rev. Oliver Norris, of Alexandria, Va.

Llewellyn Cary, b. 1855. Married (1890) Priscilla Hall, daughter of the late Reginald Wright, Esq., M. D., of Baltimore, U. S. A. Arthur Perey, b. 1857. Married (1882) Naney Hunter, daughter of Hon. John Blair Hoge, of Virginia, U. S. A., residence, Baltimore, Md., U. S. A.

Grandchildren of the late Com. Archibald Blair Fairfax (ante).

Issue of the late Archibald Carlyle Fairfax, b. 1843; d. 1879. Married (1873) Virginia Caroline (who married second, 1892,



Henry Byrd Lewis, Esq., of Cleve Manor, and Towke's Port, Conway, King George Co., Va., U. S. A.), daughter of the late William H. Redwood, Esq., of Baltimore, U. S. A.

John Carlyle, b. 1874, is in U. S. A. Infantry. William Redwood, b. 1876, residencee, Fredericksburg, Va., U. S. A.

## THE LINDSAYS OF AMERICA.

### FIRST GENERATION.

I. Thomas Lindsay<sup>1</sup>, of Mount Pleasant, b. as recorded, November 13, 1750, the youngest son of Robert and Susanna Lindsay, of "The Mount," was also a gentleman of the old school, courtous and dignified in manner, of fine and pleasing features, tall of stature, not stout, of quick yet stately step, punctilious in religious affairs, a vestryman of his church, and one of the highest respected citizens of Fairfax Co., Va. He inherited his homestead from his father, upon which he lived comfortably the life of the southern planter. The plantation was a few miles from historic old Falls Church and next to "The Mount," and, tradition says, one of the prettiest in the neighborhood. He married a young widow of Pennsylvania, Mrs. Martha, née Scott, whom all her children loved devotedly, her character was so gentle and winning. She was a firm yet affectionate mother, an excellent housewife and gracious hostess, and truly religious. Her acts of charity were many; a tale of distress ever found her a sympathetic listener and helper. Thomas Lindsay d. September 14, 1830, his disease being paralysis; Mrs. Lindsay d. September 21, 1831; she was b. November 6, 1757. They had issue:

- I. Robert Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. May 26, 1779; killed by lightning, with some friends, while bathing in the Potomac River, July 17, 1805.
- II. Samuel Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 2, 1781.
- III. David Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. May 25, 1784. Married Miss Lucy Parker.
- IV. Naney Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 5, 1786. Married Braddock Richmond, a member of Congress from Rhode Island; d. Dec. 10, 1810, Washington, leaving one son:
  - I. Thomas Lindsay Richmond<sup>3</sup>, studied for the pulpit; d. before ordination.

—11—

Henry Byrd Lewis, Esq., of Cleve Manor, and Towke's Port, Conway, King George Co., Va., U. S. A.), daughter of the late William H. Redwood, Esq., of Baltimore, U. S. A.

John Carlyle, b. 1874, is in U. S. A. Infantry. William Redwood, b. 1876, residence, Fredericksburg, Va., U. S. A.

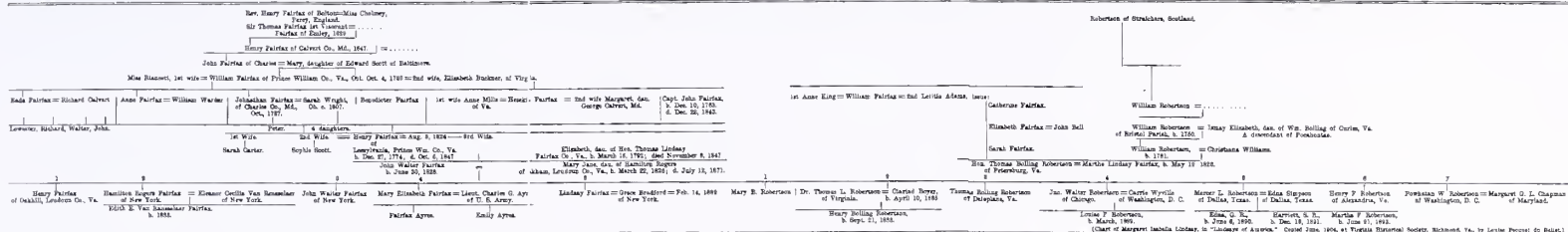
## THE LINDSAYS OF AMERICA.

### FIRST GENERATION.

I. Thomas Lindsay<sup>1</sup>, of Mount Pleasant, b. as recorded, November 13, 1750, the youngest son of Robert and Susanna Lindsay, of "The Mount," was also a gentleman of the old school, courteous and dignified in manner, of fine and pleasing features, tall of stature, not stout, of quick yet stately step, punctilious in religious affairs, a vestryman of his church, and one of the highest respected citizens of Fairfax Co., Va. He inherited his homestead from his father, upon which he lived comfortably the life of the southern planter. The plantation was a few miles from historic old Falls Church and next to "The Mount," and, tradition says, one of the prettiest in the neighborhood. He married a young widow of Pennsylvania, Mrs. Martha, née Scott, whom all her children loved devotedly, her character was so gentle and winning. She was a firm yet affectionate mother, an excellent housewife and gracious hostess, and truly religious. Her acts of charity were many; a tale of distress ever found her a sympathetic listener and helper. Thomas Lindsay d. September 14, 1830, his disease being paralysis; Mrs. Lindsay d. September 21, 1831; she was b. November 6, 1757. They had issue:

- I. Robert Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. May 26, 1779; killed by lightning, with some friends, while bathing in the Potomac River, July 17, 1805.
- II. Samuel Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 2, 1781.
- III. David Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. May 25, 1784. Married Miss Lucy Parker.
- IV. Nancy Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. Aug. 5, 1786. Married Braddock Richmond, a member of Congress from Rhode Island; d. Dec. 10, 1810, Washington, leaving one son:
  - I. Thomas Lindsay Richmond<sup>3</sup>, studied for the pulpit; d. before ordination.

# CHART OF THE FAIRFAX AND ROBERTSON FAMILIES OF VIRGINIA





- V. Susanna Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. Feb. 23, 1789; d. ——. Married Mr. Moore.
- VI. Elizabeth Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. March 15, 1792. Married (Aug. 5, 1824) Henry Fairfax.
- VII. Josiah Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 17, 1794; d. Feb. 22, 1813, aged nineteen, single.
- VIII. Margaret Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. Nov. 26, 1797. Married Mr. Swink.
- IX. Thomas Walter Lindsay<sup>2</sup>, b. July 22, 1800; d. Aug. 18, 1802.

## SECOND GENERATION.

- II. Samuel Lindsay<sup>2</sup> (Thomas<sup>1</sup>), b. November 20, 1781. Married M. Dougal, of Virginia, by whom he left issue:
  - I. Martha Lindsay<sup>3</sup>. Married Dr. W. P. Gunnell.
  - II. Mary Eliza Lindsay<sup>3</sup>.
- II. David Lindsay<sup>2</sup> (Thomas<sup>1</sup>), b. May 25, 1784. Married Lucy Parker of Clarke Co., Va., a relative of the noted Judge Parker, of Winchester, Va. He emigrated many years ago to Kentucky, became in time a well-to-do farmer of Mason County and died at a good old age, leaving issue:
  - I. Richard Alexander Lindsay<sup>3</sup>.
  - II. William T. Lindsay<sup>3</sup>, d. 1879, in Kentucky, leaving issue:
    - I. H. P. Lindsay<sup>4</sup>. Is proprietor of the Commercial Hotel, Xenia, Ohio.
  - II. Richard Lindsay<sup>4</sup>. Married and lives on a farm in Maysville, Ky.
- III. Lucy Lindsay<sup>4</sup>. Married a farmer of same place.
- III. Lizzie Lindsay<sup>3</sup>. Married, first, Rev. Craig, of New York, and had issue:
  - I. Lindsay Craig<sup>4</sup>.
  - II. Fairfax Craig<sup>4</sup>.  
 She married, second, a wealthy gentleman of Paducah, Ky., at which place she died many years ago.
- II. Susanna Lindsay<sup>2</sup> (Thomas<sup>1</sup>), b. February 23, 1789; d. ——. Married Mr. Moore, of Colonial History. Issue:
  - I. Robert Moore<sup>3</sup>.
  - II. Thomas Moore<sup>3</sup>.
  - III. Francis Moore<sup>3</sup>, was much endeared to his relations for his lovely and genial disposition; d. 1852, young.



II. Elizabeth Lindsay<sup>2</sup> (Thomas<sup>1</sup>), b. March 15, 1792. Married (August 5, 1824) Henry Fairfax, at Mount Pleasant, by a Baptist minister, named Johnston. Henry Fairfax, Esq., of Prospect Hill, near Dumfries, Prince William Co., Va., and Freestone, of the same county, a gentleman of wealth and good family, a descendant, like Lord Fairfax of Virginia, of Henry Fairfax, fourth Baron of Fairfax of Cameron; d. 1685, who was the oldest son of the Hon. Rev. Henry Fairfax of Bolton-Perey, Yorkshire, England. (These are taken from "Lindsays of America," by Margaret Isabella Lindsay, published by Munsell's Sons, Albany, New York, 1889. They were copied June 14, 1904, Virginia Historical Society, Richmond, Va.) Issue:

I. John Walter Fairfax<sup>3</sup>, b. June 30, 1828.

II. Martha Lindsay Fairfax<sup>3</sup>. Married Thomas Bolling Robertson.

II. Margaret Lindsay<sup>2</sup> (Thomas<sup>1</sup>), b. November 17, 1797; d. ——. Married Wm. Swink, of Fairfax Co., Va. She was a gentle and much esteemed lady by all who knew her. She had issue:

I. Daughter Swink<sup>3</sup>. Married Rev. Mr. Landstreet, of Virginia, a retired Methodist minister.

II. Daughter Swink<sup>3</sup>. Married Mr. Hunter, of Fairfax Co., Va.

III. Daughter Swink<sup>3</sup>. Married Henry Alvoid, the distinguished and able Principal of the Maryland Agricultural College, near Washington, D. C., a northern gentleman and a descendant of the fine old Alvoid and Willis families of Massachusetts.

#### THIRD GENERATION.

III. Martha Lindsay<sup>3</sup> (Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>). Married a physician of Alexandria named W. P. Gunnell, and later removed with him and her family to Austin, Texas, where he left her a widow. Her children are grown and are:

I. Jenny Lindsay Gunnell<sup>4</sup>.

II. Ada Byron Gunnell<sup>4</sup>.

III. Marion Campbell Gunnell<sup>4</sup>.

IV. Dr. Mooter Gunnell<sup>4</sup>.

V. Laura Richard Gunnell<sup>4</sup>.

This family resides in Marlin, Texas.

III. Mary Eliza Lindsay<sup>3</sup> (Samuel<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), spends her winters between Baltimore and Washington and her summers in Virginia.

III. Richard Alexander Lindsay<sup>3</sup> (David<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), the eldest son of David Lindsay, is a wealthy farmer of Mason Co., Ky., and possesses one of the largest and best cultivated farms in the locality. Maysville is the town he lives in. He has four sons and two daughters. He married Jane E. Parker, as first wife, and had issue:

I. Josiah Lindsay<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary Ellen Botts, and has four children.

By second wife, Malinda Aliee Ball, he had issue:

II. William Parker Lindsay<sup>4</sup>.

III. David Lindsay<sup>4</sup>.

IV. Richard Madison Lindsay<sup>4</sup>.

V. Lucy Dudley Lindsay<sup>4</sup>.

VI. Eliza Lee Lindsay<sup>4</sup>, b. 1880 or '82.

III. Thomas Moore<sup>3</sup> (Susanna<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), lawyer, Fairfax Court House; belonged to the firm, Thomas Moore & Son. Married Miss Morris, of New York, great-granddaughter of Lewis Morris, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. Issue:

I. Robert Walton Moore<sup>4</sup>, lawyer, member of Virginia Legislature; was a graduate of University of Virginia.

II. Susanna Lindsay Moore<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Donohue, of Fairfax Co., Va.; d., leaving two children.

III. Jane Morris Moore<sup>4</sup>.

IV. Bessie Rutherford Moore<sup>4</sup>.

V. Helen Stuyvesant Moore<sup>4</sup>.

VI. Edith May Moore<sup>4</sup>.

VII. Lucy Kean Moore<sup>4</sup>, deceased.

VIII. Margaret Lindsay Moore<sup>4</sup>.

III. John Walter Fairfax<sup>3</sup> (Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>), b. at Prospect Hill, Prince William Co., Va., June 30, 1828. He inherited a fine estate from his parents; was a gallant officer of the Confederate service, rising to the rank of colonel. His elegant homes, "Freestone," in Prince William Co., Va., and formerly "Belle Grove," Loudoun Co., Va., afforded entertainments during the hunting season to President Grant and his friends. Married Mary

Jane Rogers, of Loudoun Co., Va., September 27, 1844, by whom he had issue:

- I. Henry Fairfax<sup>4</sup>, civil engineer, of considerable means; residence "Oakhill" (formerly the seat of President James Monroe), Loudoun Co., Va.
- II. Hamilton R. Fairfax<sup>4</sup>, residence New York City. Married (June 1, 1887) Eleanor Cecelia, daughter of Mrs. William P. Van Rensselaer, of Manursing Island, New York; a lady of fine old Knickerbocker stock and an heiress. Issue, one daughter, b. 1888.
- III. John W. Fairfax<sup>4</sup>, residence New York City.
- IV. Elizabeth Lindsay Fairfax<sup>4</sup>. Married Lieut. Charles Ayres, of the U. S. army; son of the late General R. Ayres, of the army. Issue, two children.
- V. Lindsay Fairfax<sup>4</sup>, resides in New York City. The three last sons are united in business in New York; name of firm, "Fairfax Brothers."

III. Martha Lindsay Fairfax<sup>3</sup>, daughter of Henry and Elizabeth Lindsay Fairfax, like her brother, John Walter Fairfax, inherited a fortune from her parents. She figured as quite an heiress and belle in the palmy society days of Alexandria, and was surrounded by many of the brightest beaux of Virginia of her time. Her hand and heart were won at last by a clever and handsome young lawyer, Thomas Bolling Robertson, Esq., a descendant of good old Scotch stock and of the famous Indian princess, Pocahontas.

1. Pocahontas. Married John Rolfe.
  2. Thomas Rolfe. Married Miss Poythress.
  3. Jane Rolfe. Married Col. Robert Bolling.
- (The Marshall Family, p. 31, by Paxton.)

Mr. Robertson d. March 1887, aged 70 years, at his residence, "Galemont," Broad Run, Fauquier Co., Va., where his widow, daughter and two sons reside most of the time.

Mrs. Robertson has one of the warmest and kindest hearts which ever beat within human breast. One of her greatest virtues, according to the great Napoleon, is her raising seven handsome and well educated sons. Her youngest son, Murray, d. a few months before his father. Issue:

- I. Mary Bernard Robertson<sup>4</sup>.

- II. Dr. Thomas Lindsay Robertson<sup>4</sup>, b. June 27, 1852, Petersburg, Va. Married in Fincastle Va. (Nov. 1, 1887), Clarinda Bowyer; b. Fincastle, Va., April 10, 1865. Issue:
  - I. Henry Bolling Robertson<sup>5</sup>, b. Sept. 21, 1888, at "Galc-mont," Fauquier Co., Va.; d. at Elliston, Va., March 4, 1894.
  - II. Mereer Leyburn Robertson<sup>5</sup>, b. in Fincastle, Jan. 20, 1895; living.
- III. Bolling Robertson<sup>4</sup>, resides at Delaplane, Fauquier Co., Va.
- IV. Jno. Walter Robertson<sup>4</sup>. Married Carrie Wyville, of Washington, D. C.; business, Chicago, Ill.
- V. Mereer L. Robertson<sup>4</sup>, b. April 22, 1850. Married (March 13, 1889) Edna Geils Simpson, of Dallas, Texas; b. May 21, 1870, daughter of James B. and Harriett J. Simpson. Mr. M. L. Robertson, lawyer and notary public; P. O. address, North Texas Building, Dallas, Texas. Issue:
  - I. Edna Geils Robertson<sup>5</sup>, b. June 6, 1890.
  - II. Harriett Simpson<sup>5</sup>, b. Dec. 18, 1891.
- III. Martha Fairfax Robertson<sup>5</sup>, b. June 21, 1893.
- VI. Henry Fairfax Robertson<sup>4</sup>, P. O., Alexandria, Va.
- VII. Powhatan W. Robertson<sup>4</sup>, b. May 9, 1865. Married (Feb. 8, 1888) Margaret Stone Lee Chapman; b. May 4, 1864. No issue. Address, Powhatan Wyndham Robertson, 2232 Q St. N. W., Washington, D. C.

## CHAPTER VII

## THE CARTER FAMILY.



CARTER COAT-OF-ARMS

So far as known the first of this prominent and influential family to emigrate to Virginia was John Carter, who was born in England and settled first in Upper Norfolk, now Nansemond Co., Va., which he represented as Burgess in 1649; later he settled in Lancaster, from which county he was a Burgess in 1654, and commanded the forces sent against the Rappahannock Indians. Both himself and his eldest son, John, appear on the vestry-book as members of the vestry in the year 1666, the father having been acting in that capacity before—how long not known. The father, who died in 1669, had previously built by contract the first church, standing on the spot where Christ Church now is, and the vestry

received it at the hands of his son, John, in six months after his father's death. The first John Carter had three wives:\*

First, Janc, the daughter of Morgan Glynn, by whom he had George and Eleonor.

Second, Anne, the daughter of Cleave Carter, probably of England.

Third, Sarah, the daughter of Gabriel Ludlowe, by whom he had Sarah.

All of these died before him, and he was buried with them near the chancel in the church which he built, and the tombstone from which we take the above covers them all, being still in the same position in the present church.

The following inscriptions could be found in 1894.

#### I.

This inscription is to the north of the chancel in the east end of the church:

Here lyeth ye body of John Carter, Esq., who died ye 10th of June, Anno Domini 1669; and also Jane, ye daughter of Mr. Morgan Glyn, and George her son, and Eleonor Carter, and Ann, ye daughter of Mr. Cleave Carter, and Sarah, ye daughter of Mr. Gabriel Ludlowe, and Sarah, her daughter, which were all his wives successively, and died before him.

"Blessed are ye dead which die in ye Lord; even soe, saith ye Spirit, for they rest from their labours, and their works do follow them."

#### II.

This inscription is in the center of the church at the intersection of the aisles:

Here lyeth the body of Mr. David Miles, who died December 29, 1674; and in ye 40th year of his age.

(Mine to-day, yours to-morrow.)

#### III.

This tombstone is at the east end of the church:

H. S. E.

Vir. Honorabilis Robertus Carter, Armiger, qui, genus honestum dolibus eximiis et moribus antiquis illustravit, Collegium Gulielmi et Mariæ temporibus difficillimis propugnavit, Gubernator.

---

\*NOTE.—Mr. W. G. Stanard thinks John Carter was married five times; that the "Eleonor Carter" mentioned on tombstone was his second wife, not a daughter, and the last wife was Elizabeth Shirley, whom he married October 24, 1668. She was not buried with her husband, but was mentioned in his will with her son Charles. (Keith, *Ancestry of Benjamin Harrison*.)



Senatus Rogator et Quæstor sub serenissimis Principibus Gulielmo, Anna, Georgio Primo et Secundo.

A publicis concilliis concillii per sexennium proeses; plus anno Colonial Præfectus, eum, regiam dignitatum et publican libertatem æquali jure asseruit.

Opibus amplissimis bene partis instructus, ædem hanc sacram, in Deum pietatis grande monumentum propriis sumptibus, extruit. Loeupletavit.

To omnes quos humaniter excepit nec prodigus nec pareus hospes. Liberalitatem insignem testanteur debita munifico remissa.

Promo Juditham, Johannis Armistead, Armegei filiam, deinde Betty, e quebus prolem numerosam suscepit, in qua, erudienda pecuniæ vim maximam insumpsit.

Tandem, honorum et dierum satur, cum omnia vitæ munera egregiæ præstitisset obet. Pri. Mon. Aug. An. Dom., 1732, Aet. 69.

Miseri solamen, videiæ, præsiduum, orbi patrem; ademptum lugent.

#### IV.

East of the church:

Here lyeth buried the body of Judith Carter, the wife of Robert Carter, Esq., and eldest daughter of the Hon. John Armistead, Esq., and Judith, his wife. She departed this life February 23rd, Anno 1699, in the — year of her age, and in the eleventh year of her marriage, having borne to her husband five children, four daughters and a son, two whercof, Sarah and Judith Carter, died before, and are buried near her. Piously she lived and comfortably died, in the joyful assurance of a happy eternitie, leaving to her friends the sweet perfume of a good reputation.

#### V.

East of the church and mutilated:

To the memory of Betty Carter, second wife of Robert Carter, Esq., youngest daughter of Thomas Landon, Esq., and Mary, his wife, of Grednal, in the County of Hereford, the ancient seat of the family and place of her nativity. She bore to her husband ten children, five sons and five daughters, three of whom—Sarah, Betty, and Ludlowe—died before her and are buried near her. She was a person of great and exemplary piety and charity in every relation wherein she stood; whether considered as a Christian, a wife, a mother, a mistress, a neighbor or a friend, her conduct was equalled by few, excelled by none. She changed this life for a better on the 3rd July, 1710, in the 36th year of her age, and the 19th of her marriage. May her descendants make their mother's virtues and graces the pattern of their lives and actions.

#### VI.

East of the church:

Under this stone are the remains of Mary Carter, the affectionate wife of Charles Carter, of Corotoman, who died on the 30th of January, 1770, after a painful illness of three months, during which she discovered a truly Christian fortitude; aged 34 years.

Mr. Carter moved to Shirley on James River, in 1776, and married Ann Butler Moore, his second wife.

The following translation of Mr. Robert Carter's epitaph may be a help to some of my readers:

Here lies buried Robert Carter, Esq., an honourable man, who by noble endowments and pure morals gave lustre to his gentle birth.

Rector of William and Mary, he sustained that institution in its most trying times. He was Speaker of the House of Burgesses, and Treasurer under the most serene Princes, William, Anne, George I and II.

Elected by the House its Speaker six years, and Governor of the Colony for more than a year, he upheld equally the regal dignity and the public freedom.

Possessed of ample wealth, blamelessly acquired, he built and endowed at his own expense this sacred edifice—a signal monument of his piety toward God. He furnished it handsomely and richly.

Entertaining his friends kindly, he was neither a prodigal nor a parsimonious host.

His first wife was Judith, daughter of John Armistead, Esq.; his second wife, Betty, a descendant of the noble family Landons. By these wives he had many children, on whose education he expended large sums of money.

At length, full of honors and of years, when he had well performed all the duties of an exemplary life, he departed from this world on the 14th of August, in the 69th year of his age.

The unhappy lament their lost comforter, the widows their lost protector, and the orphans their lost father.

The following item taken from the *Baltimore Sun*, will be of interest in this connection:

#### SKETCH OF OLD CHRIST CHURCH.

Old Christ Church was built in 1732, in Lancaster County, Virginia, by Robert, yeleft "King" Carter.

Bishop Meade, in his "Old Ministers, Churches, and Families of Virginia," writes: "The present church was built on the site of an older one, which was completed in the year 1670 under the direction of Mr. John Carter, the first of that name and the great ancestor of many bearing that name in Virginia.

"The church being too small for the increasing population, a larger one was meditated and some change of its location talked of, when Mr. Robert Carter (since known by the name of King Carter) offered to build one at his own expense, saying that in consequence of his large possessions, increasing family and number of tenants, he had intended for some time to build a larger one for the parish. The offer was cheerfully accepted, and the present house was completed about the time of Mr. Carter's death—that is, about the year 1732—and exhibits to this day one of the most

striking monuments of the fidelity of ancient architecture to be seen in our land. Very few, if any, repairs have been put on it; the original roof and shingles now cover the house, and have preserved in a state of perfection the beautiful arched ceilings, except in two places, which have within a few years been a little discolored by the rain, which found its way through the gutters where the shingles have decayed. The walls of the house are three feet thick, perfect and sound. The windows are large and strong, having probably two-thirds of the original glass in them. The pews are of the old fashion, high-backed, and very firm. A very large one, near the altar, and opposite the pulpit, together with the whole north cross of the building, was especially reserved by Mr. Carter for use of his family and dependents in all time to come.

"It deserves to be mentioned that in addition to the high backs which always concealed the family and prevented any of them from gazing around when sitting or kneeling, a railing of brass rods, with damask curtains, was put around the top of the pews, except the part opposite the pulpit, in order, it is supposed, to prevent the indulgence of curiosity when standing. These remained until a few years since, and parts of them may probably yet be found in the possession of neighbors or relatives. In further evidence of the fidelity with which the house was built, I would mention that the pavement of the aisles, which is of large freestone, is yet solid and smooth as though it were the work of yesterday. The old walnut communion table also stands firm and unimpaired, and not a round from the railing of the chancel is gone or even loosened. The old marble font, the largest and most beautiful I ever saw, is still there, and, what will scarce be credited, the old cedar dial post, with the name of John Carter (1702), and which was only removed a few years since from its station without the door, where it was planted in the ground, is still to be seen in its place of security under the pulpit."

About 1845 it became necessary to repair the roof. "In taking off the old one for the purpose of renewing it, one secret of the durability of the plastering was discovered. Besides having mortar of the most tenacious kind and of the purest white, and laths much thicker and stronger than those now in use and the old English wrought nails—our modern factories not then being known—the mortar was not only pressed with a strong hand through the openings of the laths, but clinched on the other side by a trowel in the hand of one above, so as to be fast keyed and kept from falling. In all respects this house appears to have been built in a most durable manner, but without the mere trinkets of architecture."

Many years have passed since Bishop Meade wrote the foregoing impressions of this grand old building. The foundation and walls are to all appearances as firm now as when first constructed. The bricks and mortar are in such state of preservation that their condition makes the hastily and cheaply crected buildings of to-day suffer greatly by comparison.

The old church recently has been undergoing repairs, and in a short time the vestry hopes to have the sacred edifice restored to its original state of soundness and beauty. The wounds and scars which met the eye of the

visitor at every turn within and without the church were made by the hand of irreverent sightseers and relic hunters, whose vandalism extended even to the grave of "King" Carter, which was opened for the purpose of securing jewelry reputed to have been buried with him. Many of these marks have been removed within the church, but there still remains much to be done in the way of restoring the woodwork, such as repairing the railing to the chancel and to gallery and pulpit upstairs.

This landmark of Colonial days is in the form of a Greek cross, with walls 3 feet thick. The ceiling, forming a groined arch, is 30 feet from the floor. There are 12 high arched windows and 3 deep ones in the gables. The flooring, still in perfect condition, is of great slabs of freestone. The center slab, at the intersection of the aisles, covers the remains of a workman who fell from the scaffolding during the erection of the structure and, being instantly killed, was buried where he fell.

Three of the transepts are entered through high double doors, which are wonderfully preserved after the lapse of nearly two centuries. The fourth transept contains the walnut chancel, opposite which is a small gallery over one of the doors. There are 25 paneled pews over five feet in height. Two of the pews, with benches around the four sides, seat comfortably 24 persons; the others, 12. One of the double pews was reserved exclusively for the Carter family and the other for the Ball family, or Ditchley, which came next in prominence in Christ Church parish. It may be said in passing that descendants of both of these families are now and have always been vestrymen of the church, according to the early and recent vestry books.

The walnut pulpit projecting from the corner formed by the north and west transepts, close to the ceiling and opposite the chancel, looking like a huge bird box, but withal of graceful and ornate design, is reached by a spiral stair. The reading desk is below the pulpit, on a level with the pews. Over the chancel, in the east transept, filling the space between two high arched windows, were two tablets set in a walnut frame. On one were inscribed the Commandments, on the other the Creed and the Lord's Prayer. These tablets have long since disappeared, but the vestry hopes to replace them in the near future.

The old walnut Chippendale communion table, with one foot missing and every joint loosened by time and abuse, has just been restored through the interest and generosity of Dr. J. Houston Eccleston, rector of Emmanuel Church, Baltimore. The old table now stands in its former strength and beauty ready to serve its original holy purpose for another century or two. It can now be seen at Potthast Bros., on North Howard Street.

The beautiful Italian marble font placed in the church at its completion was a few years ago desecrated by vandals, who knocked it over and broke it apparently beyond repair. That, too, was sent to Baltimore to be restored, and can now be seen at Gaddess Bros., North Liberty Street.

In a corner of the east transept near the chancel lie buried John Carter, the father of Robert, the "King," and his three wives and several children. This spot is marked by a large slate slab, covered with inscriptions. Vis-

itors are wont to stand upon this slab the better to decipher the crudely cut inscriptions which, from the arrangement of the data, often cause heated discussion as to who is who in this branch of the Carter family.

The tombs of "King" Carter, his two wives and several children are in the churchyard. The "King's" once magnificent tomb, in the form of a



ROBERT CARTER

Of Corotoman, generally known as King Carter

sarcophagus, the whiteness of which has not been affected by time or the elements, is mutilated beyond restoration. The ubiquitous relic hunter is largely responsible for the present condition of that once beautiful monument. The top of the tomb, now resting on three sides, one having fallen out, is covered with Latin inscriptions, which refute the tradition that he who lies buried there ruled with an iron hand.



## FIRST GENERATION.

I. John Carter<sup>1</sup>, who was born in England, had three wives.  
First, Jane, the daughter of Morgan Glyn, and had issue:

I. George Carter.

II. Eleanor Carter.

Second, Ann, the daughter of Cleave Carter, probably of England.

Third, Sarah, daughter of Mr. Gabriel Ludlow.

John Carter<sup>1</sup> was a member of the Council in 1657, and another of the same name was a member in 1724, probably a grandson. Besides the children mentioned above, apparently he left two other sons, Robert and Charles, or three sons in all.

## SECOND GENERATION.

II. The eldest John Carter<sup>2</sup>, was twice married and had issue.

II. Charles Carter<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>) probably left issue also, but of neither of above is there any accurate account.

From the second surviving son, Robert Carter<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), generally known as "King Carter," the Virginia family is chiefly descended. Robert Carter of "Corotoman," Lancaster Co., Va., b. 1663; d. 1732. Married twice.

First, 1688, to Judith, eldest daughter of John Armistead, "the Counsellor." She died February 23, 1699, in the eleventh year of her marriage, having borne to her husband four daughters and one son, whereof Sarah and Judith Carter died before and are buried near her tombstone.

Second, 1701, Mrs. Elizabeth Willis, a daughter of Thomas Landon, of England. She was b. 1684; d. 1719. By these two wives he had twelve children.

From five of these daughters so many distinguished men have descended that a brief mention of them is desirable.

## THIRD GENERATION.

III. Elizabeth Carter<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married twice.

First, Nathaniel Burwell, b. 1681; d. 1721. Had issue:

I. Lewis Burwell<sup>4</sup>.

II. Carter Burwell<sup>4</sup>.

III. Robert Burwell<sup>4</sup>.





JUDITH A. CARTER

First wife of Robert "King" Carter

IV. Elizabeth Burwell<sup>4</sup>. Married William Nelson, president of the Council and father of Thomas Nelson, the signer.

Second, Elizabeth. Married George Nicholas, M. D.; issue: Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, treasurer of Virginia, and father of Gov. Wilson Cary Nicholas<sup>5</sup> (see Nicholas Family), also Elizabeth Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Edmund Randolph (see Randolph Family).

III. Judith Carter<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married Mann Page, of "Rosewell," Gloucester Co., Va., being his second wife. They had issue:

I. Mann Page<sup>4</sup>, b. 1718; d. ——. Married (1743) Alice Grymes. Their eldest son was Governor John Page. He married, second (1748), Anne Corbin Tayloe.

II. John Page<sup>4</sup>, second son and child, b. at Rosewell, Gloucester Co., Va., 1720; removed to North End, Gloucester Co. (now Mathews Co.), Va. Married Jane Byrd, of Westover, on James River, Charles City Co., Va. (See Page Family, North End, p. 85.)

III. Robert Page<sup>4</sup>, third son and child; b. at Rosewell, Gloucester Co., Va., 1722; removed to Broadneck, Hanover Co. Married (Jan. 20, 1750) Sarah Walker.

IV. Carter Page<sup>4</sup>, b. at Rosewell, 1724; was a student at William and Mary College; d. single and young.

V. Matthew Page<sup>4</sup>, b. at Rosewell, 1726. He also was a student at William and Mary College, but died young, unmarried.

VI. Daughter Page<sup>4</sup>, b. at Rosewell, 1728; d. infant.

The three surviving brothers, Mann, John and Robert, became the heads respectively of the three branches of the Page family in Virginia: 1. Rosewell, also called the White Pages. 2. North End, or Black Pages. 3. Broadneck Pages. Judith Carter was, therefore, the ancestress of the Pages of Virginia.

III. Anne Carter<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married Benjamin Harrison, of Berkeley, Charles City Co., Va., and had issue:

I. Anne Harrison<sup>4</sup>. Married William Randolph, of Wilton; had issue, given in Randolph Family, Chapter V.

II. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>4</sup>. Married Peyton Randolph, president of the first Continental Congress.

III. Carter Henry Harrison<sup>4</sup>, of Clifton. Married Susannah, daughter of Isham Randolph, of Dungenness. (Randolph Family, Chapter V.)

- IV. Charles Harrison<sup>4</sup>, who was a brigadier general in the Revolutionary army. Married Mary, daughter of Augustine Claiborne.
- V. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>4</sup>, speaker of the State Senate; sheriff of Prince William Co., Va., 1779. Married, first, Mary, daughter of Edmund Ruffin. Married, second, Anne, daughter of William Gilliam.
- VI. Robert Harrison<sup>4</sup>, who died before 1771, and had two daughters, who were killed by lightning with their father.
- II. Mary Carter<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married George Braxton.
- III. Luey Carter<sup>3</sup>. Married Col. Henry Fitzlugh.

From four sons of Robert Carter are descended the later generations of this family. These four were: John, Robert, Charles, Landon.

III. John Carter<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), secretary, eldest son; married (about 1723) Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Hill, Jr., of "Shirley," Charles City Co., Va., and had issue:

- I. Elizabeth Carter<sup>4</sup>, b. 1731; d. 1760. Married Col. William Byrd, of Westover, and had issue:
  - I. William Byrd.
  - II. John Byrd.
  - III. Thomas Byrd.
  - IV. Elizabeth Byrd. Married James Parke Farley.
  - V. Ottway Byrd.
- II. Charles Carter<sup>4</sup>, of Shirley, b. 1736; d. 1806, son of John Carter<sup>3</sup> and Elizabeth Hill. Married, first (1756), Mary W. Carter, b. 1736; d. 1770. Married, second, Anne Butler Moore.
- III. Edward Carter<sup>4</sup>, of Blenheim, the second son of Secretary John Carter and Elizabeth Hill. Married Sarah Champe.

III. Robert Carter<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of "Nominy Hall," Westmoreland Co., Va.; the second son of "King Carter" to have issue; d. 1732. Married (1725) Priseilla Bladen. Had issue:

- I. Eliza Carter<sup>4</sup>.
- II. Robert Carter<sup>4</sup>, the Councillor. Married Frances Anne Tasker.
- III. Charles Carter<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. 1707; d. 1764; was the third son of "King Carter." He married three times:

First, 1728, Mary Walker.

Second, 1742, Anne Byrd.

Third, 1764, Lucy Taliaferro.

He had issue:

- I. Charles Carter<sup>†</sup>, of Ludlow, d. 1796. Married Elizabeth Chiswell. Had issue.
- II. Eliza Carter<sup>†</sup>. Married William Churehill and had issue.
- III. Judith Carter<sup>†</sup>. Married William Burnet Browne. Had issue.
- IV. Mary Walker Carter<sup>†</sup>. Married Charles Carter, of Shirley, her first cousin.

By his second wife:

- V. Anne Carter<sup>†</sup>. Married, first, John Champe. Second, Lewis Willis, of Fredericksburg, Va.

(See Willis Family, pp. 59, 60, 61, etc., by R. C. Willis. Also chapter on Willis Family in this book. I give manuscript of Col. Byrd Willis, son of Col. Lewis Willis.)

- VI. Martha Carter<sup>†</sup>. Married William Armistead, of Hesse, Gloucester Co., Va. (Armistead Family, "Lee of Virginia," pp. 531, 532, 533.) Col. John Ambler's (of Jamestown) first wife was a Miss Armistead.
  - VII. John Carter<sup>†</sup>. Married Miss Claiborne.
  - VIII. Lucy Carter<sup>†</sup>. Left no issue.
  - IX. Landon Carter<sup>†</sup>, of "Cleves," b. 1751; d. 1811. Married, first, Mrs. Mildred Willis. Married, second, Mrs. Eliza (Carter) Thornton, of "Sabine Hall." Had issue.
  - X. Jane Carter<sup>†</sup>. Married Garvin Corbin. No issue.
  - XI. Sarah Carter<sup>†</sup>. Married William Thompson. Had issue.
- By Charles Carter's third wife:
- XII. Anne Walker Carter<sup>†</sup>. Married John Catlett.

The following notes are taken from William and Mary College Quarterly, Vol. V, No. 1, July 1896, pp. 64, 65:

#### HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL NOTES.

Dr. William Bankes was a neighbour of Wm. Fitzhugh, of Stafford, who characterized him as "an ingenious gentleman and a boon, facetious companion."

Letters, Jan. 8, 1682-'83, Virginia Magazine of History and Biography:

Gerald Bankes, of Stafford, was a son of Adam Bankes, and in 1709 sold land to John Bowles, purchased by his father in 1674—"Stafford County Records." Judith Bankes is mentioned as sister in the will of Charles Carter, of "Cleve" (King George County Records), and in 1754 she deeded to John Wormley 78 acres in York County, at the head of Black Swamp (York County Records). She was evidently the daughter of that name of Joseph Walker, Esq., whose daughter, Mary, married Charles Carter, of "Cleve." She died in Caroline County before 1778, and left her houses and four lots for the advantage of Walker Randolph Carter and Charles Landon Carter, sons of Charles Carter, of "Ludlow" (who was a son of Charles Carter, of "Cleve.") Hening's Stat., IX, 573.

The will of Charles Carter was proved in King George County, June 7, 1764. He had nine daughters and three sons: Judith, Anne, Maria, Lucy, Jane Bird, Sarah, Carolanna, Betty Churchill, wife of William Churchill; Mary, wife of Charles Carter, of Carotoman; Charles, to whom he gave a handsome gold watch with his coat of arms on the outer case, a gold-headed cane, and a ring of five guineas pure; John and Landon.

Mentions his son Charles Carter; daughters Betty Churchill, Mary Carter and Judith Carter as "Born of wife, Mary, daughter of Joseph Walker, Esq., sister (sister-in-law) Judith Bankes, and father, the Hon. Mann Page, Esq." (Mann Page married Judith Carter, sister of Charles Carter, and they are ancestors of the Pages of Virginia); brother Landon Carter, Esq., of Richmond County; sons-in-law Charles Carter, Esq., of Lancaster County, and Mr. John Champe, Jr., of King George County; son Charles' wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Col. John Chiswell, and his daughter, Elizabeth. To each of his daughters 1,000 pounds sterling. Various provisions for his sons, etc.

The will of Joseph Walker, Esq., dated November 9, 1723, was recorded in York County, November 16, 1723. He gives to each of his daughters, Mary Walker and Judith Walker, 500 pounds sterling; to his wife, Sarah, his chariot, furniture and horses; to Judith "the land called the French Ordinary and Basses, and the land I purchased of Sebrell and Stockner, in the case my son die without issue;" (the French Ordinary was at the head of Black



Swamp, and was doubtless part of that sold by Judith Bankes, in 1754) to son, Matthew Walker, residue of his estate; Sarah Walker, Mann Page and John Wormeley, Esq., executors.

Schooling—Provisions in the Will of Charles Carter, of "Cleve":

Whereas, my sons John and Landon are now in England for the Benefit of their education, and it being necessary to prevent all doubts that may arise relating to them, it is my will and meaning that they shall continue at School to learn the Languages, Mathematicks, Philosophy, Dancing and Fencing till they are well accomplished and of proper age to be Bound to some Reputable, Sober, Discreet, practising Attorney, till they arrive at the age of twenty years and nine months, and that a suitable present be made to the Gentlemen to whom they are bound, to improve them in the Business and practice of Attorneys, and that they be entered at the same time at the Temple and be by their masters permitted to attend commons so as not to interfere with their studies, and the Practice and Business of an Attorney, and it is my will and desire, that as my said sons arrive at the age of Twenty years and nine months, that they immediately embark and return to Virginia, and I do earnestly desire their guardians, as much as in their Power lies, to prevent extravagance by limiting their pocket expenses, after they arrive at the age of eighteen, to a sum not exceeding fifty pounds sterling money per annum, as their fortunes depend entirely on the seasons of a most variable climate.

And whereas, the extravagance of the present age and the flattering hopes of great Fortunes may be a great temptation to run into unnecessary expense in Living, it is my positive will and desire that my Daughters may be maintained with great frugality and "taught to dance."

III. Landon Carter<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of Sabine Hall, Richmond Co., Va., was the youngest son of "King Carter." He married three times.

Married, first, Elizabeth, daughter of John Wormeley, of Rosegill.

Married, second, Maria, daughter of William Byrd, of Westover.

Married, third, Elizabeth Beale, sister of Sir William Beale; one issue, elsewhere.

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

IV. Charles Carter<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of Shirley, b. 1736; d. 1806. Married, first (1756), Mary W. Carter, b. 1736; d. 1770; daughter of Charles, of "Cleve," and Mary Walker; his first wife d. Jan. 30, 1770. Married, second, Anna Butler Moore, daughter of Bernard and Anne Catherine (Spotswood)



Moore, Sr., of Chelsea, King William Co., Va. (Moore Family, Chapter XX.)

By first marriage, issue:

- I. George Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Lelia Skipwith.
- II. Mary Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Col. Robert Randolph, of "Eastern View," Fauquier Co., Va.
- III. Charles Carter<sup>5</sup>, of Mt. Atlas. Married Naney, daughter of Robert W. Carter, of Sabine Hall.
- IV. Edward Carter<sup>5</sup>, of Cloverland. Married Jane, daughter of John Carter, of Sudley.
- V. Landon Carter<sup>5</sup>.

By second marriage, issue:

- VI. Robert Hill Carter<sup>5</sup>.
- VII. Anne Hill Carter<sup>5</sup>, b. 1773; d. 1829. Married (June 18, 1793) Gen'l Henry Lee, as his second wife.
- VIII. Dr. Robert Carter<sup>5</sup>, son of Charles Carter. Married (1792) Mary Nelson, b. Dec. 19, 1774.
- IX. Bernard Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married (1803) Luey Grymes Lee, b. 1786; d. 1860.
- X. Kate Spotswood Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Dr. Carter Berkeley.
- XI. William Carter<sup>5</sup>, of Hanover. Married Charlotte Foushee.
- XII. Butler Carter<sup>5</sup>. Had no issue.
- XIII. Mildred Carter<sup>5</sup>. Had no issue.
- XIV. Luey Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Nathaniel Burnell.

IV. Edward Carter<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), the second son of Seeretary John Carter and Elizabeth Hill. Married Sarah Champe, and had issue:

- I. John Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Aphia Fauntleroy.
- II. Eliza Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married William Stanard, of Roxbury, Spottsylvania. Had issue.
- III. Jane Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Major Bradford, of the British army.
- IV. Sarah Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, George Carter. Married second, Dr. Cutting.
- V. Charles Carter<sup>5</sup>, of Culpeper. Married Betty Lewis.
- VI. William Champe Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Maria Farley.
- VII. Edward Carter<sup>5</sup>, of Blenheim. Married, first, Mary Lewis. Married, second, Luey Wood. Married, third, Miss Cook.

- VIII. George Carter<sup>5</sup>, d. without issue.
- IX. Whitaker Carter<sup>5</sup>, d. without issue.
- X. Hill Carter<sup>5</sup>, of "Mine Hill," Amherst Co., Va. Married Miss Coles, of Albemarle Co., Va.
- XI. Mary Champe Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Judge Francis T. Brooke (descendants given in Brooke Family, Chapter XI).
- XII. Nancy Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Gov. M. Troup, of Georgia.
- IV. Robert Carter<sup>4</sup> (Robert<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), the Councillor. Married Anne Tasker and had issue:

- I. George Carter<sup>5</sup>, of "Oatlands," and many others.

Of "Councillor" Carter, Bishop Meade remarks: In "Councillor" Carter, of Nomini, the grandson of "King Carter," this peculiarity was found in a large measure. Early in life his disposition was marked by a tendency to wit and humour; afterwards he was the grave councillor and always the generous philanthropist; at a later day he became scrupulous as to the holding of slaves and manumitted great numbers. The subject of religion then engrossed his thoughts. Abandoning the religion of his fathers, he adopted the creed of the Baptists and patronized their young preachers, having a chapel in his own home at Nomini. After a time he embraced the faith of Swedenborg, and at length died a Roman Catholic. All the while he was a most benevolent and amiable man.

IV. Landon Carter<sup>4</sup> (Charles<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of "Cleves"; b. 1751; d. 1811. Married, first, Mrs. Mildred Willis. Married, second, Mrs. Eliza (Carter) Thornton, of Sabine Hall. But he may have had a third wife, for Philip Ludwell Lee, writing to his brother, William, under date May 31, 1769, said (Lee of Virginia): "Landon Carter, son of old Charles, is to be married in a little while to Miss Molly Fauntleroy, of 'Naylor's Hole.'" If this statement is true and applies to this Landon, then Molly Fauntleroy must have been his first wife.

His children were:

- I. Mildred Ann Byrd Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Robert Mercer. Had issue.

Married, second, John Lewis. Had issue.

- II. Lucy Landon Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Gen'l John Minor. Landon Carter<sup>4</sup> and Mrs. Eliza Thornton had issue:

- III. Robert Charles Carter<sup>5</sup>.

IV. St. Leger Landon Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Eliza, daughter of Thomas Ludwell and Fanny (Carter) Lee. No issue.

V. Eliza Thornton Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married William MacFarland. There were other children.

• (Diary Landon Carter, William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. XIII, No. 3, January, 1905, pp. 157, 8, 9, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64; Vol. XIII, No. 4, April, 1905, pp. 219, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24.)

IV. Robert W. Carter<sup>4</sup> (Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>); he married and had issue:

I. Fanny Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Thomas Ludwell Lee, of Caton, Loudoun Co., Va., eldest son of Thomas Ludwell Lee and Mary Aylett, b. —; he died 1807. They had issue.

IV. Maria Carter<sup>4</sup> (Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married Robert Beverley, of Wakefield, Culpeper Co., Va., whose daughter:

I. Evelyn Byrd Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married George Lee, of Loudoun, son of Thomas Ludwell Lee and Mary Aylett. He died 1805.

#### FIFTH GENERATION.

V. Anne Hill Carter<sup>5</sup> (Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. 1773; d. 1829. Married (June 18, 1793) Gen'l Henry Lee, "Lightfoot Harry," as his second wife. They had six children. The record of their ages given here is from Mrs. Lee's family bible. Issue:

I. Algerton Sidney Lee<sup>6</sup>, b. April 2, 1795; d. Aug. 9, 1796.

II. Charles Carter Lee<sup>6</sup>, b. at Stratford, Westmoreland Co., Va., Nov. 8, 1798; d. March 21, 1871. Born at his home, "Windsor Forest," in Powhatan Co., Va.

III. Anne Kinloch Lee<sup>6</sup>, b. June 19, 1800; d. Feb. 20, 1864, Baltimore, Md. Married (1825) Judge Lewis Marshall, b. Sept. 26, 1803, Buckpond, Ky.

IV. Captain Sidney Smith Lee<sup>6</sup>, third son of Gen'l Henry Lee and Anne Hill Carter; b. Sept. 2, 1802, at Camden, N. J.; d. July 22, 1869.

V. Gen'l Robert Edward Lee<sup>6</sup>, the fourth son of Gen'l Henry Lee and Anne Hill Carter; b. at Stratford, Westmoreland Co., Va., Jan. 19, 1807; d. Oct. 12, 1870, at his home in Lexington, Va.

VI. Catherine Mildred Lee<sup>6</sup>, youngest child of Gen'l Henry Lee and Anne Hill Carter; b. Feb. 27, —, Alexandria, Va.; d. 1857, Paris, France. Married (1831) Edward Vernon Childe.

V. Dr. Robert Carter<sup>5</sup> (Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Charles Carter and Anne Butler Moore, daughter of Bernard and Anne Catherine (Spotswood) Moore Lee, of Chelsea, King William Co., Va. This Dr. R. Carter was a younger brother of Ann Hill Carter, the second wife of Gen'l Henry Lee. Married (1792) Mary Nelson, b. December 19, 1774; seventh child of Governor Thomas Nelson and Lucy, daughter of Philip Grymes, of Middlesex Co., Va., and Mary Randolph, his wife.

Robert Carter and Mary Nelson had issue:

- I. Hill Carter<sup>6</sup>, of Shirley. Married Mary B. Randolph.
- II. Anne Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married William F. Wickham.
- III. Lucy Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Edward Wickham.
- IV. Thomas Nelson Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married, first, Juliette Gaines.

Issue:

- I. Thomas Hill Carter<sup>7</sup>, the father of Juliette Carter, who married Captain Lee.

V. Bernard Carter<sup>5</sup> (Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married (1803) Lucy Grymes Lee, b. 1786; d. 1860; daughter of Major General Henry Lee, and his cousin, Matilda, daughter of Philip Ludwell and Elizabeth (Steptoe) Lee, of Stratford. Matilda Lee d. 1790, having had four children.

Bernard and Lucy Grymes (Lee) Carter had issue:

- I. Charles Henry Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Rosalie Eugenia Calvert, of Prince George Co., Md., and had issue:
  - I. Eugenia Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. Alicc Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Bernard Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Mary Buckner, daughter of David Rigeley, of "White Marsh," Baltimore Co., Md., and had issue.
  - II. Josephine Carter<sup>8</sup>. Married Eugene Fausen. No issue.
- III. Matilda Lee Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Thomas M. Willing; had six children.

- IV. Mildred Randolph Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Louis de Potestad.
- Issue:

- I. Louis de Potestad<sup>7</sup>.
- Other children.

- V. Charlotte Carter<sup>o</sup>. Married G. W. Featherstonebaugh, of England, and left issue.
- V. Lucy Landon Carter<sup>o</sup> (Landon<sup>4</sup>, Charles<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married Gen'l John Minor, of Hazel Hill. Issue:
- I. John Minor<sup>o</sup>, of Fredericksburg, Va., lawyer, and a lover and patron of art (painting). He was loved by all the children who knew him for the charming stories he told them. Died unmarried in 1862.
  - II. Mary Berkeley Minor<sup>o</sup>. Married Wm. M. Blackford. Mary Berkeley is named "Berkeley" after the lady whom her father married first, "Mary Nelson Berkeley," of Airwell, who died at the birth of her first child, and the tomb containing her body and that of her infant son is at Airwell in Hanover Co., Va., the residence now (1905) of F. Nowland (whose mother was a Berkeley), who married Lucy Landon Cooke.
  - III. Lieut. Charles Landon Carter Minor<sup>o</sup>, U. S. A., d. at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, unmarried. As a young officer he refused to countenance certain practices of his inferior officers, which he thought not strictly honest to the Government; was court-martialed, exonerated, and received formal acknowledgment of his honourable conduct from the President, but d. very soon after. From his letters his chief chum seems to have been the man who became General Heintzleman, who fought on the Northern side at the first battle of Manassas.
  - IV. Dr. Lewis Willis Minor<sup>o</sup>, surgeon of U. S. A. and fleet surgeon of C. S. A. Married Eloise Juerarity, of Pensacola, Fla., daughter of James Juerarity, of Scotland, and Eloise Troulier, of France. Dr. Minor b. 1808. Issue, three children.
  - V. Lucius Horatio Minor<sup>o</sup>, b. 1810. Married Catherine Frances Berkeley, b. 1813, daughter of Dr. Carter Berkeley, of Edgewood, Hanover Co., Va., and Frances Burwell Page Nelson, widow of Thos. Nelson (son of Gen'l Thos. Nelson, of Yorktown, Va.), and daughter of John Page, of Rosewell, Gloucester Co., Va. (Governor of Virginia), and Frances Burwell, his wife. Lucius Horatio Minor and Catherine Frances Berkeley had eight children.

- VI. Rev. Launcelot Byrd Minor<sup>6</sup>. Married Mary Stuart, of Baltimore (aunt of Mr. Morton Stuart), d. without issue, as a missionary in Africa. A clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church.
- VII. James Monroe Minor<sup>6</sup>. Married Ellen Josephine Pierrepont, daughter of Hezekiah Beers Pierrepont and Anne Constable, his wife, of Brooklyn, N. Y. They had eight children.
- VIII. A. Byrd Minor<sup>6</sup>, d. in infancy.

## SIXTH GENERATION.

VI. Mary Berkeley Minor<sup>9</sup> (Luey L. Carter<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Charles<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married William M. Blackford, first of Fredericksburg and later of Lynchburg, Va. Issue:

- I. Charles William Blackford<sup>7</sup>, d. in infancy.
- II. Lucy Landon Blackford<sup>7</sup>. Married Dr. John Staige Davis (a very distinguished man), of the University of Virginia. Issue:
  - I. Maj. Wm. Blackford Davis<sup>8</sup>, M. D., surgeon U. S. A. Married Mary Jane (called Kentie) Howland, of Portsmouth, Va. Her father was from New England; her mother a Miss Watts, of Portsmouth, Va. Issue:
    - I. Dr. John Staige Davis<sup>9</sup>, of Baltimore.
  - II. Mary Jane Davis<sup>9</sup>. Married James P. Harrison, of Danville, Va. Issue:
    - I. Luey Landon Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1854; d. childhood.
    - II. Donald Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
- III. Col. William Willis<sup>7</sup> (baptized William Wilberforce) Blackford. Married Mary Robertson, daughter of Judge Wyndham Robertson, of Abingdon, Va. Col. W. W. Blackford was on Gen'l J. E. B. Stuart's staff, and was a gallant Confederate soldier. Several children d. in infancy; four survived. Issue:
  - I. Wyndham Blackford<sup>8</sup>. Married Louie ——. No issue.
  - II. Lizzie Blackford<sup>8</sup>. Married Rev. Arthur Seldon Lloyd, of Alexandria, Va. Issue:
    - I. Mary Lloyd<sup>9</sup>.
    - II. Lizzie Lloyd<sup>9</sup>.
  - III. Gay Robertson Lloyd<sup>9</sup>.



- IV. Pelham Lloyd<sup>9</sup>. Married Evelyn Baylor. Issue, one son.
- V. John Lloyd<sup>9</sup>.
- VI. Rebecca Lloyd<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. Captain Charles Minor Blackford<sup>7</sup>, of Lynchburg, Va.  
Married Susan Colston. He was a Captain in the Confederate service. (Ambler Genealogy, Volume I.)
- V. Benjamin Lewis Blackford<sup>7</sup>. Married Nannie Steinbergen. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth (called Lily) Blackford<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Alice Blackford<sup>8</sup>, d. in infancy.
- III. Mary Berkeley Blackford<sup>8</sup> (called Daisy). Married Capt. Chas. Sawtell, U. S. A. Issue:
  - I. Alice Biern Sawtell<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. Lucy Landon Blackford<sup>8</sup>. Married Lieut. Lawrence Reed, U. S. N.
- VI. Launcelot Minor Blackford<sup>7</sup>, A. M., LL. D., of Alexandria, Va. Married Eliza Chew Ambler (Ambler Genealogy, Volume I.)
- VII. Eugene Blackford<sup>7</sup>, of Sudbrook Park. Married Rebecca Chapman Gordon, daughter of Wm. Gordon, of Santee, near Fredericksburg, Va. Issue:
  - I. Emily Chapman Blackford<sup>8</sup>. Married Arthur Poultney, of Baltimore, Md. Issue:
    - I. Rebecca Poultney<sup>9</sup>.
    - II. Emily Poultney<sup>9</sup>.
    - II. Eugene Blackford<sup>8</sup>, Jr.
  - III. William Gordon Blackford<sup>8</sup>, of Sudbrook Park, Baltimore Co., Md.
- VIII. Mary Isabella Blackford<sup>7</sup>. Married James Churchill Cooke, a gallant Confederate soldier, of Dewberry, Hanover Co., Va. They went to live at Foxleigh, in King William Co., Va. Issue:
  - I. Lucy Landon Cooke<sup>8</sup>. Married Fenton Noland, of Airwell, Hanover County, Va. They have five children.
  - II. James Churchill Cooke<sup>8</sup>, Jr.
  - III. Mary Minor Cooke<sup>8</sup>.
  - IV. Eugene Blackford Cooke<sup>8</sup>.
  - V. Edmonia Churchill Cooke<sup>8</sup>.
  - VI. Dr. Lewis Willis Minor<sup>6</sup> (Lucy L. Carter<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Charles<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), surgeon of U. S. A. and fleet surgeon of

C. S. A. Married Eloise Juerarity, of Pensacola, Fla., daughter of James Juerarity, of Scotland, and Eloise Troulier, of France. Dr. Minor b. 1808. Issue:

- I. James Juerarity Minor<sup>7</sup>, d. 1855, of yellow fever, Portsmouth, Va.
- II. Lucy Landon Carter Minor<sup>7</sup>. Married William Henry White, of Portsmouth, Va.; son of Dr. Wm. White and Henrietta Turner, his wife. Issue:
  - I. Eloise Juerarity White<sup>8</sup>. Married Orlando Bland Hinton, of Petersburg, Va. Had issue:
    - I. Orlando Bland Hinton<sup>9</sup>.
    - II. Eloise Hinton<sup>9</sup>.
    - II. Lewis White<sup>8</sup>, d. in infancy.
  - III. William Henry Landon White<sup>8</sup>. Married Ella Ellis. His mother died at his birth and Wm. H. White married, second, Emma Grey, of Richmond, Va. Issue:
    - IV. Wm. Henry White<sup>8</sup>.
    - V. Emma Grey White<sup>8</sup>.
  - III. Dr. Lewis Willis Minor, d. single.
  - VI. Lucius Horatio Minor<sup>6</sup> (Lucy L. Carter<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Charles<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. 1810. Married Catherine Frances Berkeley, b. 1813, daughter of Dr. Carter Berkeley, of Edgewood, Hanover Co., Va., and Frances Burwell Page Nelson, widow of Thomas Nelson (son of Thos. Nelson, of Yorktown, Va.), and daughter of John Page, of Rosewell, Gloucester Co., Va. (Governor of Virginia) and Frances Burwell, his wife. They were married February, 1833. Issue:

- I. Fanny Berkeley Minor<sup>7</sup>, d. March, 1885, unmarried.
- II. Dr. Charles Landon Carter Minor<sup>7</sup>, A. M., LL. D. Married Fanny Ansley Cazenove, of Alexandria, daughter of Lewis A. Cazenove and Fanny Ansley, his wife, daughter of Daniel Ansley, of St. Johns, New Brunswick, and Fanny Bailey, his wife. Lewis A. Cazenove son of Antoine Charles Cazenove and his wife (Anne Hogan?). Issue:
  - I. Charles Landon C. Minor<sup>8</sup>, d. in infancy.
  - II. Kate Berkeley Minor<sup>8</sup>, d. aged 11 months.

- III. Fanny Ansley Minor<sup>s</sup>. Married Rev. James Fitts Plummer, of Petersburg, Va. (b. in Warren Co., North Carolina), son of Edward Armistead Plummer and Lucy Fitts, his wife. Issue:

- I. James Minor Plummer<sup>n</sup>, b. June, 1897.
  - II. Charles Cazenove Plummer<sup>n</sup>.
  - III. Edward Armistead Plummer<sup>n</sup>.
  - IV. William Gardner Plummer<sup>n</sup>.
  - V. Cameron McRae Plummer<sup>n</sup>, b. 1904.
- IV. Anne Cazenove Minor<sup>s</sup>. Married Rev. Andrew Glassell Grinnon, son of Dr. Andrew Glassell Grinnon and Georgia Bryan, his wife, of Brampton, Madison, W. Va. Issue:

- I. Frances Anne Cazenove Grinnon<sup>n</sup>.
- II. Andrew Glassell Grinnon<sup>n</sup>.
- V. Lewis Cazenove Minor<sup>s</sup>, d. in infancy.

Fanny Ansley Minor, d. June 16, 1884, in Winchester, Va. Dr. Chas. L. C. Minor, d. July 13, 1903, at Beaulieu, in Albemarle Co., Va. They are both buried with their infant children in Winchester, Va., at Mt. Hebron Cemetery. Dr. Minor was educated at the University of Virginia, where he graduated in the '50's with the degree of master of arts. He entered at once upon an educational career, teaching for a number of years at Winchester and later going to the Episcopal High School, near Alexandria. Later in life he was elected president of the Virginia Polytechnic Institute, and afterward chosen head of the Maryland Agricultural College. In recent years he devoted his time to coaching young men for entrance to Johns Hopkins University. He entered the Confederate army as a private, and rose to the rank of captain. I was in Baltimore, Md., winter 1902 and 1903, and met Dr. Minor, and never met a more polished and thoroughly educated gentleman in my life. I always enjoyed being entertained by his sister, Miss Mary Willis Minor. The French conversations I had with Dr. Minor were always based on French Literature.

- III. Lucy Landon Minor<sup>r</sup>, d. Feb. 1865, unmarried.
- IV. Berkeley Minor<sup>r</sup>, of Staunton, Va. (baptized Carter Nelson Berkeley); he is beloved by all who come near to him and is a distinguished and successful educator. Married Susan Watson Fontaine, daughter of James

Fontaine, of Rock Castle, Hanover Co., Va., and Juliet Morris, his wife. He has lived in Staunton, Va. (1905), for twenty years or more. He was a soldier in the Confederacy, and rose from private to lieutenant. Issue:

- I. James Fontaine Minor<sup>s</sup>, lawyer, in Charlottesville, Va.
- II. Berkeley Minor<sup>s</sup>, lawyer, in Charlestown, W. Va.
- III. Charles Landon Carter Minor<sup>s</sup>, d. infancy.
- V. John Minor<sup>r</sup>, d. in childhood.
- VI. Kate Meade Minor<sup>r</sup> (baptized Thomasia Meade, but changed her christian name). Married Richard Morris Fontaine, son of Col. Edmund Fontaine, of Beaverdam, Hanover Co., Va., and Maria Louisa Shakelford, his wife. Issue:

- I. Edmund Fontaine<sup>s</sup>, b. June 24, 1875.
  - II. Richard Morris Fontaine<sup>s</sup>, Jr.
  - III. Kate Minor Fontaine<sup>s</sup>.
  - IV. Berkeley Minor Fontaine<sup>s</sup>.
  - V. Charles Landon Carter Fontaine<sup>s</sup>.
  - VI. Maria Louisa Shakelford Fontaine<sup>s</sup>.
- Kate Minor Fontaine<sup>r</sup>, d. April 23, 1890, at Beaverdam, Hanover Co., Va. Her husband and his children now live at Beaulieu, Albemarle Co., Va., near Charlottesville, Va.
- VII. Robert Berkeley Minor<sup>r</sup>. Married Routez Houston, daughter of — Houston, of San Antonio, Texas, and Elizabeth Weyman, his wife. Mr. Minor is a lawyer in San Antonio, Texas. Issue:

- I. Houston Minor<sup>s</sup>.
- II. Robert Berkeley Minor<sup>s</sup>, Jr., cartoonist for the *San Antonio Gazette*.
- III. Elizabeth Weyman Minor<sup>s</sup>.
- IV. Joseph Houston Minor<sup>s</sup>.
- V. Catherine Berkeley Minor<sup>s</sup>, d. infancy.
- VI. Bryan Houston Minor<sup>s</sup>, d. in infancy.
- VIII. Mary Willis Minor<sup>r</sup>.

Mary Willis Minor<sup>r</sup> was sponsor of the Baltimore chapter of Daughters of the Confederacy, at the convention held in New Orleans the fall of 1902. She represented the chapter with great honour and was entertained by many prominent families in

Louisiana. She visited her brother in San Antonio, Texas. She had not seen him in twenty years. She is a Daughter of the American Revolution, and also a Colonial Dame. She is one of the most charming ladies I have ever met. She taught for many years, and since the death of her brother, Dr. Charles L. Minor, she has become a nurse and devotes her life to doing good and alleviating pain and sorrow.

VI. Dr. James Monroe Minor<sup>6</sup> (Luey L. Carter<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Charles<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married Ellen Josephine Pierrepont, daughter of Hezekiah Beers Pierrepont and Anne Constable, his wife, of Brooklyn, N. Y. Issue:

I. Luey Landon Minor<sup>7</sup>, d. unmarried.

II. Anne Pierrepont Minor<sup>7</sup>, d. unmarried.

III. Pierrepont Minor<sup>7</sup>. Married Kate Lynch. Issue:

I. Ellen Josephine Minor<sup>8</sup>.

II. Elizabeth Davis Minor<sup>8</sup>.

IV. Mary Montague Minor<sup>7</sup>, d. in infancy.

V. Virginia Carter Minor<sup>7</sup>, d. unmarried.

VI. Helen Willis Minor<sup>7</sup>. Married Rev. Steven Nathaniel Castleton Poyntz, an English clergyman, and lives at Dorechester, England. Issue:

I. Steven Poyntz<sup>8</sup>.

II. Romola Poyntz<sup>8</sup>.

III. Alban Poyntz<sup>8</sup>.

IV. John Michael Poyntz<sup>8</sup>.

VII. Kate Berkeley Minor<sup>7</sup>.

VIII. Dr. Charles Launcelet Minor<sup>7</sup>, of Asheville, N. C. Married Mary Venable, daughter of Prof. Chas. Venable, of the University of Virginia, and Miss McDowell, his first wife. Issue:

I. Luey Landon Minor<sup>8</sup>.

II. John Minor<sup>8</sup>.

III. Margaret C. Minor<sup>8</sup>, d. in infancy.

IV. Mary McDowell Minor<sup>8</sup>.

#### FIFTH GENERATION—Continued.

V. Fanny W. Carter<sup>5</sup> (Robert<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married Thomas Ludwell Lee, of Coton, Loudoun Co., Va., eldest son of Thomas Ludwell Lee and Mary Aylett. Fannie and Thomas Lee had issue:

- I. Thomas Ludwell Lee<sup>6</sup>, d. young.
- II. Elizabeth Lee<sup>6</sup>. Married St. Leger Landon Carter, the second son of Landon Carter, of "Cleves," and Mrs. Eliza (Carter) Thornton, his wife, who was a daughter of Robert W. Carter. They had no issue.
- III. Mary Aylett Lee<sup>6</sup>. Married Tench Ringgold, being his second wife. Had issue; names unknown to writer. Amongst them a daughter, from whom the Hon. Edward D. White, late U. S. Senator from Louisiana, and present Associate Justice of the U. S. Supreme Court, is descended.
- IV. Winifred Beale Lee<sup>6</sup>. Married William Brent, Jr., of "Richland," Stafford Co., Va. He was the son of Daniel Carroll and Ann Fenton (Lee) Brent, a first cousin of his wife.
- V. Fanny Carter Lee<sup>6</sup>, d. single.
- VI. Ann Lucinda Lee<sup>6</sup>. Married John M. McCarty, son of Col. Daniel and Sarah (Mason) McCarty, of "Cedar Grove," Fairfax Co., Va.
- VII. Catherine Lee<sup>6</sup>, d. single.
- VIII. Sidney Lee<sup>6</sup>; was probably a daughter. Said to have died single.
- V. Evelyn Byrd Beverley<sup>5</sup> (Maria Carter<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>). Married George Lee, of Loudoun Co., Va., son of Thos. Ludwell Lee and Mary Aylett, his wife. He was b. —; d. 1805. (See his will in "Lee of Virginia," p. 318.) Issue:
  - I. Maria Carter Lee<sup>6</sup>; was not 16 years of age in 1802.
  - II. Dr. George Lee<sup>6</sup>, the only son of George Lee and Evelyn Byrd Beverley, his wife; b. 1796; d. 1858. He resided at Leesburg. Married (July 19, 1827) Sarah Moore, daughter of Richard H. and Orra (Moore) Henderson, a lawyer of Leesburg. Mrs. Lee d. at that place, Feb. 16, 1858. George Lee's will was dated Nov. 13, 1851. and probated in Loudoun Co., Va., March 9, 1858. Dr. George Lee and his wife had a very large family; it is said, twenty-three children.
 

A daughter, Orra Lee<sup>7</sup>. Married John M. Orr.

Maria Lee<sup>7</sup>, d. single

Elizabeth Claggett Lee<sup>7</sup>, d. single.

Evelyn Byrd Lee<sup>7</sup>. Married Thomas Delany.



George Lee<sup>7</sup>, only son of George Lee and Sallie Moore Henderson, his wife, b. at Leesburg, May 3, 1831; d. April 14, 1892, at Brooklyn. Married (June 27, 1860) his cousin, Laura Frances Orr, daughter of General Asa Rogers and Eleanor Lee Orr, his wife, of Leesburg. George and Laura Frances (Rogers) Lee had four children:

- I. Hugh Douglas Lee<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Eleanor Orr Lee<sup>8</sup>.
  - III. Asa Rogers Lee<sup>8</sup>.
  - IV. Arthur Lee<sup>8</sup>.
- Archibald Henderson Lee<sup>7</sup>, d. single.

#### SIXTH GENERATION—Continued.

VI. Charles Carter Lee<sup>6</sup> (Anne Carter<sup>6</sup>, Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. at Stratford, Westmoreland Co., Va., November 8, 1798; d. March 21, 1871; was b. at his home, "Windsor Forest," in Powhatan Co., Va. Carter Lee entered Harvard College in 1816, and graduated second in his class in 1819. He possessed a mind of a very superior order; had a thorough classical education; a most retentive memory. He was a lawyer by profession and practised first at Washington City, then in Floyd Co., Va.; next in Mississippi, where he resided for several years. Later he removed to Hardy Co., and finally settled in Powhatan. Mr. Lee married (May 13, 1847) Lucy Penn, daughter of George Taylor, of "Horn Quarter," King William Co., Va., and Catherine Randolph, his wife. George Taylor was of the same family as President Taylor.

Charles Carter Lee and Lucy Penn Taylor, his wife, had issue:

- I. George Taylor Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. March 18, 1848, Richmond, Va. Married (May 15, 1888) Mrs. Ella Marion (Goodwin) Fletcher, and daughter of William and Caroline (Townsend) Goodwin, of Lenoke, Ark. She was born April 30, 1863. Mr. Lee practices law at Johnson City, Tenn. Issue:
  - I. Charles Carter Lee<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Lucy Randolph Lee<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Henry Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. July 17, 1849. Married (July 19, 1888) Lilian Elizabeth, daughter of John Anderson and Susan Caroline (Malcolm) Woollen. Issue:

- I. Charles Carter Lee<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Robert Henry Lee<sup>8</sup>.
- III. Virginia Lilian Lee<sup>8</sup>.  
Mr. Henry Lee lives at Winston, N. C.
- III. Robert Randolph Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. May 22, 1853. Married (Feb. 4, 1886) Alice Wilkinson. He resides on his father's old estate in Powhatan Co., Va. Issue:
  - I. William Carter Lee<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Robert Randolph Lee<sup>8</sup>.
- IV. William Carter Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. Sept. 8, 1854; d. from railroad accident, June 21, 1882, unmarried.
- V. Mildred Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. Nov. 20, 1857. Married (Feb. 4, 1888) Dr. John Taylor Francis. He graduated 1883 at the medical school of the University of New York, and practiced in Norfolk. Issue:
  - I. Mildred Lee Francis<sup>8</sup>.
- VI. Catherine Randolph Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. Aug. 27, 1865. Married (July 10, 1892) Dr. John Guerrant, of Franklin Co., Va. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Moore Guerrant<sup>8</sup>.
- VII. John Penn Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. Sept., 1867; is a lawyer, being a member of the firm Dillard and Lee, of Rocky Mount, Va.

Mr. Charles Carter Lee had in his possession the old family portraits of the first three generations in Virginia: Col. Richard Lee and his wife; Richard Lee, Jr., and his wife; Thomas Lee, of Stratford, and his wife.

VI. Anne Kinloch Lee<sup>6</sup> (Anne Carter<sup>5</sup>, Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. June 19, 1800; d. February 20, 1864, Baltimore, Md. Married (1825) Judge William Louis Marshall, b. at Buckpond, Woodford Co., Ky., September 26, 1803; d. in Southern California, where he moved after his wife's death, October 5, 1869. Judge Marshall was the second son of Dr. Louis Marshall and Agatha Smith, his wife, b. at "Oakhill," Fauquier Co., Va., October 7, 1773; d. at Buckpond, Woodford Co., Ky., 1866. Dr. Marshall was the eleventh child of the famous Col. Thomas Marshall, a school mate and life-long friend of George Washington.

- I. Ann C. Marshall<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Henry Lee Marshall<sup>7</sup>.

- III. Capt. Louis Henry Marshall<sup>7</sup>. Married (1854) Florence Burke, d. 1882. Married, second (June 2, 1884), Elvia C. White.

(See "Marshall Family," under 258.)

VI. Captain Sidney Smith Lee<sup>6</sup> (Anne Carter<sup>5</sup>, Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), third son of Henry Lee and Anne Hill Carter<sup>5</sup>, b. September 2, 1802, at Camden, New Jersey, where his mother happened to be visiting a friend; d. July 22, 1869. Upon graduating at the Naval Academy, he was appointed a midshipman December 30, 1820; promoted lieutenant May 17, 1828; a commander June 4, 1850; resigned April 28, 1861, to enter the service of the Confederate States.

(See "Lee of Virginia," under 49.)

Captain Sidney Smith Lee married (1834) Anna Maria, daughter of the Hon. John and Anna Maria (Murray) Mason, of Clermont, Fairfax Co., Va. She was born February, 1811, and was still living in 1895. Issue:

- I. Fitzhugh Lee<sup>7</sup>, the eldest son of Sidney S. Lee and Anna M. Mason, his wife; was b. at "Clermont," Fairfax Co., Va., Nov. 19, 1835; d. April 28, 1905. Married (April 19, 1871) Ellen Bernard, daughter of George D. and Sarah Ellen (Hooe) Fowle, of Alexandria, Va.
- II. Sidney Smith Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. at Georgetown, D. C., Feb. 10, 1837; d. April 15, 1888; was in the navy; served on the Confederate cruiser "Shenandoah," under Captain Waddell. He never married.
- III. Major John Mason Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. Clermont, Fairfax Co., Va., Jan. 4, 1839; he served in the Confederate army, rising to the rank of major. Married (Oct. 25, 1871) Nora, the youngest daughter of Dr. William and Dorothea (Minor) Bankhead, of Caroline Co., Va. They had issue:
  - I. Nannie Mason Lee<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Dorothea Bankhead Lee<sup>8</sup>.
  - III. Bessie Winston Lee<sup>8</sup>.
  - IV. John Mason Lee<sup>8</sup>.
  - V. William Bankhead Lee<sup>8</sup>.
- IV. Henry Carter Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. "Clermont," Fairfax Co., Va., January 9, 1842. Married September 24, 1868, Sally Buchanan

Floyd, daughter of John Warfield Johnston and Nichette Buchanan, his wife. Henry Carter Lee joined the Richmond Howitzers at the outbreak of the late Civil War; later was transferred to the staff of Gen'l W. C. Wickham, upon which he served as adjutant-general. He died June 6, 1889, at Richmond, Va. Issue:

- I. Johnston Lee<sup>s</sup>.
- II. Sidney Smith Lee<sup>s</sup>.
- III. William Floyd Lee<sup>s</sup>.
- IV. Anne Mason Lee<sup>s</sup>.

V. Daniel Murray Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. Alexandria, Va., July 14, 1843. Married (October 14, 1874) Nannie E., daughter of Joseph Burwell and Ann Eliza (Fitzhugh) Ficklen, of Belmont, near Fredericksburg, Va. D. M. Lee served in the Confederate navy four years; is now (1905) farming in Stafford Co., near Fredericksburg, Va. I (author) met Edmonia Lee in Fredericksburg during the fall of 1902, and winter, 1903. Issue:

- I. Joseph Burwell Ficklen Lee<sup>s</sup>.
- II. Edmonia Corbin Lee<sup>s</sup>.
- III. Sidney Smith Lee<sup>s</sup>.
- IV. Mary Custis Lee<sup>s</sup>.
- V. Henry Fitzhugh Lee<sup>s</sup>.

VI. Robert Carter Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. at "Clermont," Fairfax Co., Va., November 17, 1848. I (author) met him at Mary Washington Hospital, Fredericksburg, Va., January and February, 1903, and on January 19, 1903, birthday of his uncle, Gen'l Robert E. Lee, the Daughters of the Confederacy sent him beautiful baskets of fruits and flowers, decorated with Confederate flags and white and red ribbons. Since then Robert C. Lee has passed away. I do not remember the exact date of his death.

VII. Elizabeth Mason Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. "Clermont," Fairfax Co., Va., February 17, 1853; d. at the age of seven months.

#### GENERAL ROBERT EDWARD LEE.

VI. Gen'l Robert Edward Lee<sup>6</sup> (Anne Carter<sup>5</sup>, Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. at Stratford, Westmoreland Co., Va., January 19, 1807; d. Lexington, Va., October 12, 1870. When Robert E. Lee was four years old his father removed with his family to Alexandria, Va. When only eleven years old he lost his father; who, prior to his death, had been absent from home for several



GENERAL ROBERT EDWARD LEE  
(Painted by Bruce)



years, so Robert E. Lee was raised almost entirely under the loving care of his mother. It is said she taught him from his earliest childhood to practice self-denial and self-control, traits which he ever exhibited throughout life.

(“Popular Life of General Lee,” by Miss Emily V. Mason.)

Robert E. Lee was educated at private schools in Alexandria, Va., and prepared for entrance into the military school at West Point, for from earliest youth he seems to have desired to enter the army. His first teacher was Mr. William B. Leary, an Irishman, who lived to meet his pupil after the Civil War.

General Scott said of Lee: “Robert E. Lee is the greatest soldier now living, and if he ever gets the opportunity he will prove himself the great captain of history.”

(“Lee of Virginia,” by Dr. Edmund Jennings Lee; “General Lee,” by Fitzhugh Lee, and “Reminiscences of General Robert E. Lee,” by Colonel Johnson.)

When the war was over what should General Lee do? He had no home, no fortune, no occupation. Numerous offers of high positions in various corporations were made to him, but none suited him. The trustees of Washington College offered him the presidency of that institution. A home in the mountains of Virginia suited his taste and a desire to still be of use to his State in training her young men decided him. He entered upon his duties there in October, 1865, and steadily performed them for five years. Then his discharge came. The death of General Lee was not due to any sudden cause, but was the result of agencies dating as far back as 1863. He contracted a severe sore throat, that resulted in rheumatic inflammation of the sack enclosing the heart.

Wednesday, September 28, 1870, General Lee attended a vestry meeting of Grace Episcopal Church. The church was rather cold and damp, and General Lee sat in a pew with his military cape cast loosely about him. When he returned to his home, finding his family waiting tea for him, he took his place at the table, standing to say grace. The effort was vain; the lips could not utter the prayer of the heart; he took his seat quietly and without agitation. His physicians arrived promptly and applied the usual remedies and placed him on the couch, from which he was to rise no more. The symptoms of his attack resembled concussion of the brain,



without the attendant swoon. On October 10, during the afternoon, his pulse became feeble and rapid and his breathing hurried, with evidences of great exhaustion. On October 11 he was evidently sinking: his respiration was hurried; his pulse feeble and rapid. His decline was rapid, yet gentle, and soon after nine o'clock on the morning of October 12 he closed his eyes and his soul passed peacefully from earth.

One who watched him in those long night hours tells me that he died of a broken heart! This is the most touching aspect of the great warrior's death; that he did not die on the battlefield, either in the hour of defeat or victory; but in silent grief for sufferings which he could not relieve. It was this constant strain of hand and brain and heart that finally snapped the strings of life, so that the last view of him as he passes out of our sight is one of unspeakable sadness.

Upon the tombstone is only a name with two dates:

ROBERT EDWARD LEE  
Born January 19, 1807  
Died October 12, 1870.

That is all, but it is enough: all the rest is left to the calm, eternal judgment of eternity.

General Lee married Mary Anne Randolph Custis, the only daughter of George Washington Parke Custis and Mary Lee Fitzhugh, his wife. Mary Custis was born at Arlington, October 1, 1808; d. at her home in Lexington, November 5, 1873. She was buried at the college chapel with her daughter, Agnes, and her husband.

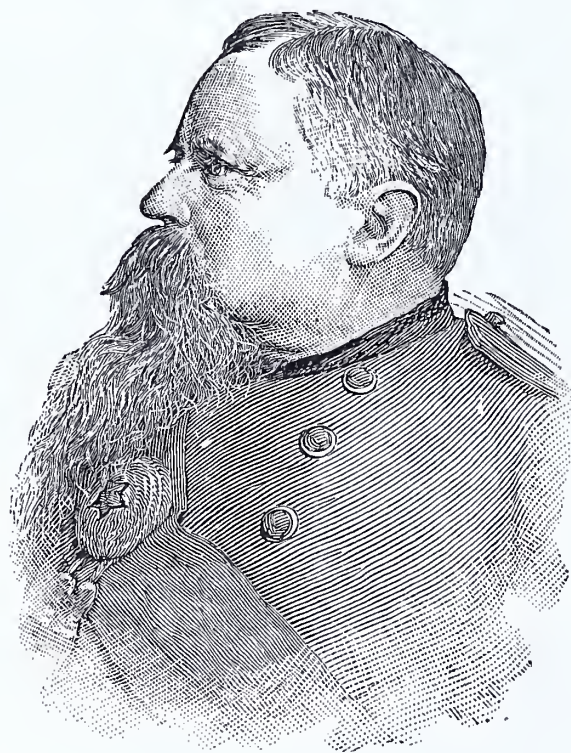
The public notice of the marriage was short:

Married: June 30, 1831, at Arlington House, by the Rev. Mr. Keith, Lieutenant Robert E. Lee, of the United States Corps of Engineers, to Miss Mary A. R. Custis, only daughter of G. W. P. Custis, Esq.

Beautiful Arlington was in all her glory that night. The stately mansion never had a happier assemblage. Its broad portico and wide-spread wings held out open arms to welcome the coming guests. Its halls and chambers were adorned with the patriots and heroes, and with illustrations and relics of the great Revolution and of the "Father of his Country." Without and within history and tradition seemed to breathe their legends upon a canvas as soft as a dream of peace.

Gen'l Robert E. Lee and his wife had the following issue:

- I. Major General George Washington Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. at Fortress Monroe, Va., Sept. 16, 1832.
- II. Mary Custis Lee<sup>7</sup>.
- III. William Henry Fitzhugh Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. at Arlington, Alexandria, Va., Oct. 15, 1837; d. at Ravensworth, Fairfax Co., Va., Oct. 15, 1891. Married (1859) Charlotte, daughter of George Wickham, U. S. N.
- IV. Annie Carter Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. at Arlington, June 18, 1839; d. at White Sulphur Springs, Warren Co., N. C., Oct. 20, 1862. A beautiful monument has been erected over her grave by the citizens of Warren Co. It was unveiled with appropriate ceremony Aug. 8, 1866.
- V. Eleanor Agnes Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. at Arlington, 1842; d. at Lexington, Oct. 15, 1873.
- VI. Captain Robert Edward Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. at Arlington, Alexandria Co., Oct. 27, 1843. Married, first (Nov. 16, 1871); Charlotte Taylor, daughter of R. Barton Haxall. Married, second, Juliet Carter.
- VII. Mildred Childe Lee<sup>7</sup>, b. at Arlington, Va., about 1845; d. New Orleans, La., March 28, 1905. She was named for the youngest sister of her father.
- VI. Catherine Mildred Lee<sup>6</sup> (Anne Carter<sup>5</sup>, Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), youngest child of Gen'l Henry Lee and Anne Hill Carter; b. February 27, —, at Alexandria, Va.; d. at Paris, France, 1856. Married (1831) Edward Vernon Childe, and had issue:
  - I. Edward Lee Childe<sup>7</sup>, living in Paris. Married, first (1868), Blanche de Trigneti. Married, second (1888), Marie de Sartiges.
  - II. Arthur Lee Childe<sup>7</sup>, d. 1856, at Munich.
  - III. Florence Childe<sup>7</sup>. Married at Paris, 1854, Count Henri Soltyk. La Comtesse is still living in Paris, and has issue:
    - I. Count Stanislaus Soltyk<sup>8</sup>, b. 1855; was an officer in Austrian service 1895.
    - IV. Mary Custis Childe<sup>7</sup>. Married (1859) Robert Gilmer, of Baltimore; d. 1867 without issue.



Stynga Lee

## SEVENTH GENERATION.

VII. Brig. Gen'l Fitzhugh Lee<sup>7</sup> (Sidney<sup>6</sup>, Charles<sup>5</sup>, Anne Carter<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), the eldest son of Sidney Smith Lee and Anna Maria Mason, his wife, was b. at "Clermont," Fairfax Co., Va., November 19, 1835; d. April 28, 1905. Married (April 19, 1871) Ellen Bernard, daughter of George D. and Sarah Ellen (Hooe) Fowle, of Alexandria, Va. They had issue:

- I. Ellen Lee<sup>8</sup>. Married (June, 1901) Lieutenant Rhea, who is stationed at Chickamauga.
- II. Lieut. Fitzhugh Lee<sup>8</sup>, who is in the Philippines.
- III. Lieut. George Mason Lee<sup>8</sup>, of the Seventh Cavalry, was in California at the time of his father's death. Married a daughter of General Burton.
- IV. Annie Lee<sup>8</sup>. Married Lieutenant Brown. They were spending their honeymoon on the Pacific coast, and but for a delay in sailing, they would have been on their way to the Orient. They were married Feb. 15, 1905, Norfolk, Va.
- V. Virginia Lee<sup>8</sup>.

The following is copied from the *Baltimore Sun* of April 29, 1905:

WASHINGTON, April 28.—Brigadier-General Lee, United States Army, retired, and President of the Jamestown Exposition Company, is dead.

He was stricken with apoplexy at about 2 o'clock this morning while on a train *en route* from Boston to Washington, and insisted on being carried to the end of his journey. He reached here at 10 o'clock this morning and was removed to the Providence Hospital, where he died at 11:20 o'clock to-night. His death came suddenly. At 9 o'clock to-night Major Guy L. Edie, of the Army Medical Staff, who had charge of the case, issued a bulletin stating that General Lee's respiration was 32, his temperature 98.8, and his pulse 112. At his bedside when he died were his brother, Daniel Lee, Drs. Edie and Kean. The end came quite suddenly and was without pain. The dead general was doing fairly well considering the severity of the attack until about 10 o'clock to-night, when the change came for the worst. Mrs. Fitzhugh Lee and her daughter were at Fort Oglethorpe, near Chickamauga Park. His son and daughter were in California.

WASHINGTON, April 30.—Since 1 o'clock this afternoon the remains of General Fitzhugh Lee have been lying in state at the Protestant Episcopal Church of the Epiphany, on G Street, between Thirteenth and Fourteenth

Streets, Northwest. The casket remained at Providence Hospital to-day in the main reception room until it was removed quietly to the church. Mrs. Lee and a group of relatives and friends went from the hospital to the church in carriages. The body will lie in state at the Church of the Epiphany until 12 o'clock to-morrow, when brief services will be conducted by Rev. Dr. Randolph H. McKim, rector of the church. The remains will be escorted from the Church of the Epiphany to the Pennsylvania Railroad station immediately after the service.

May 1. 12 o'clock. Leaving church. Music, military escort, clergy, caisson, pall-bearers, mourners, official delegation representing the State of Virginia and the City of Richmond.

After the arrival of the funeral party in Richmond the casket will be escorted by the military to the place where the remains will lie in state until the funeral. The body cannot lie in state in the Capitol, because it is being dismantled for improvements. Mrs. Lee was last night desirous of having the body lie in state at St. Paul's Church, where the funeral services are to be held. It seems probable, however, that the remains will lie in state in the City Hall of Richmond.

General Lee not long ago expressed the wish to Mrs. Lee to be buried in Hollywood Cemetery, Richmond, near the graves of Winnie Davis and Jeb Stuart. General Lee had always wanted to be buried near Jeb Stuart. Hundreds of telegrams were received from all over the country and abroad.

RICHMOND, VA., May 2.—General Fitzhugh Lee's funeral will be held from St. Paul's Church here at 2 o'clock Thursday afternoon. His son, Lieutenant George Mason Lee, will reach Washington from San Francisco Wednesday afternoon and will be in Richmond that evening. Bishop A. M. Randolph, assisted by several clergymen, will officiate at the funeral, which will be the most impressive since the reinterment of Jefferson Davis. The body of the General will remain in the rotunda of the City Hall until a short time before the funeral.

May 3.—All the militia of Virginia will march to-morrow afternoon in the procession from St. Paul's Church to Hollywood Cemetery, when the remains will be laid to rest in a section adjacent to that of President Jefferson Davis. All the Confederate camps will be represented. All the public schools will be closed and thousands of the children will walk in the procession to Hollywood. Each child will contribute a single flower to the floral offerings at the grave.

General Lee left Washington several weeks ago in the interest of the Jamestown Exposition, for which he had been working very hard. He was in Boston yesterday (April 27, 1905), to advocate the representation of Massachusetts in the Exposition, and in the afternoon appeared before the Legislative Committee on Federal Relations, making a strong address in favor of the erection of a State building by Massachusetts at the Exposition.



The General's brilliant record as a soldier in both the Confederate and United States armies, and his masterly administration as Consul-General at Havana, during the exciting period leading up to the Spanish-American War, made him conspicuous as a man among men.

Fitzhugh Lee entered West Point at the age of sixteen and was graduated in July, 1856, at the head of his class in horsemanship, and was appointed second lieutenant in the famous old Second Cavalry, which regiment furnished so many officers afterwards distinguished in the Civil War. He was sent to the Western frontier and became an Indian fighter in Texas under Major Earle Van Dorn. At the outbreak of the Civil War Fitzhugh Lee found himself back at West Point as an instructor in cavalry tactics. He promptly resigned, and offered his services to his native State, serving first on the staff of General Ewell, then as Lieutenant-Colonel of the First Virginia Cavalry, under J. E. B. Stuart, whom he accompanied on his famous raid around McClellan's Army in front of Richmond.

The last fighting done by the Army of Northern Virginia was the cavalry charge headed by Fitzhugh Lee at Farmville, a few miles from Appomattox, on the 8th of April, 1865, when the Confederates were successful in driving back the Federal cavalry division of General Crook.

The personal friendship between Fitzhugh Lee and President Cleveland dated from the latter's first inauguration, March 4, 1885. The day after the inauguration Lee called upon President Cleveland by special invitation. In the same year General Lee was elected Governor of Virginia and served from 1886 until 1890. Eight years afterward, when Cleveland was again President, he appointed General Lee Collector of Internal Revenue at Lynchburg, Va. In the spring of 1896 President Cleveland appointed Fitzhugh Lee as Consul-General to Cuba, combining with the usual duties of the office the active requirement that he should inform himself as a military man of the real status of affairs in the island for the guidance of the President. General Lee's resignation had been on file in Washington several months already, when in November, 1897, he came here and reported in person to President McKinley. General Lee's days in Havana in the early part of 1898 were among the most exciting in his long life of activity, and reached a climax when he quit Havana on April 9, with the American flotilla, which headed toward Key West with its many American passengers.

#### THE RETURN OF A HERO

The trip of General Lee from Key West to Washington in April was that of a conquering hero. He arrived in Washington on the evening of April 12, and the entire city turned out to welcome him, cheering him to the echo. Fully 4,000 persons were at the depot when his train pulled in, and officials of the Government were on hand to greet him. When he landed at Tampa, the Fifth Battalion of Florida State troops turned out with a band, and the trip from Tampa to Washington smashed all records, cutting



nine hours off the regular schedule time. Crowds were at every station along the line, but the reception at Richmond was notably enthusiastic.

The arrival of General Lee in Richmond brought out one of the largest crowds and caused one of the most remarkable demonstrations ever witnessed in the old capital of the South. When his train pulled into the city the Howitzer battery fired the major-general salute of thirteen guns; the band played "Dixie" amid a shout which fairly shook the roof of the train-shed, and the Richmond Light Infantry Blues and many other organizations were on hand, with Governor Tyler, and about 18,000 persons. The crowd, with a thundering shout, demanded a speech. General Lee bowed, said he was still in official harness and could not publicly discuss Government affairs. "But," he said, "I was reared a soldier, and believe more in action than in words."

Prolonged applause greeted this, and then General Lee said: "You fellows must want to fight." "We do, we do, and under you," came the reply from the military. General Lee afterwards said this was the proudest moment of his life, and his car was loaded down with flowers when he left Richmond for Washington.

At the outbreak of the Spanish War General Lee was, in May, 1898, appointed major-general of volunteers, and went to Cuba in command of the Seventh Army Corps. He was honorably discharged April 12, 1899, and breveted brigadier-general of the regular army, and in February, 1901, he was appointed brigadier-general in the permanent establishment, commanding the Department of the Missouri, and on March 2, 1901, he was placed on the retired list.

VII. Major General George Washington Lee<sup>7</sup> (Robert<sup>6</sup>, Anne Carter<sup>5</sup>, Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. at Fortress Monroe, Va., September 16, 1832. His earliest school days were passed at Clarens, in Fairfax Co., Va., under the Rev. George A. Smith. Later he entered the classical school of Benjamin Hallowell, Alexandria, Va., where his father had studied before him. President Zachary Taylor nominated him to a cadetship at West Point. He entered the institution June, 1850. In June, 1854, he graduated at the head of his class, having spent four years in the United States army. On May 2, 1861, he resigned from the U. S. army to enter the service of his native State. On the last of August, 1861, he was appointed aide-de-camp to the President of the Confederate States, with rank of colonel.

In the autumn of 1865 General Lee received the appointment to the chair of Civil and Military Engineering at the Virginia Military Institute, at Lexington. He continued in his professorship until after his father's death, when, February 1, 1871, he was

elected president of Washington and Lee University. I have had two very interesting letters from Major General G. W. Custis Lee, who has left the University and now (1905) resides at Burke, Va.

VII. William Henry Fitzhugh Lee<sup>7</sup> (Robert<sup>6</sup>, Anne Carter<sup>5</sup>, Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. at Arlington, Alexandria, Va., October 15, 1837; d. October 15, 1891, at Ravensworth, Fairfax Co., Va. After a thorough preparatory course of study, first under the Rev. George A. Smith, near Alexandria, Va., then with a Mr. McNally, of Baltimore, Md., and lastly, under the care of a Mr. Nugent, of York City, he entered Harvard College in the autumn of 1854. In 1857 Mr. Lee was appointed a lieutenant in the army at the personal request of General Scott. Upon receiving his appointment to the army Mr. Lee left Harvard to join his regiment, the Sixth Infantry. When he married he settled down a typical Virginia farmer.

William H. F. Lee<sup>7</sup> married, first (1859), Charlotte, daughter of George Wickham, U. S. N. Two children were born, a boy and a girl. Both died in infancy. Mrs. Lee d. December 26, 1863, while her husband was a prisoner. Their son was named after his grandfather, Robert Edward Lee. The grandfather wrote his son: "So he is called after his grandpapa, dear little fellow. I would wish him a better name, and hope he may be a wiser and more useful man than his namesake."

William H. F. Lee<sup>7</sup> married, second (November 28, 1867), Mary Tabb, daughter of George W. and Martha S. Bolling, of Petersburg, Va., who survives him, and has issue:

I. Robert Edward Lee<sup>8</sup>, practicing law in Washington, D. C.

II. George Bolling Lee<sup>8</sup>, M. D.

VII. Captain Robert Edward Lee<sup>7</sup> (Robert<sup>6</sup>, Anne Carter<sup>5</sup>, Charles<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. at Arlington, Alexandria Co., Va., October 27, 1843. He entered the University of Virginia in October, 1860. Though the students of the University were exempted from army service, all the young men of suitable age hastened to join the Southern army; among them, Robert E. Lee, Jr. In February, 1862, he joined the famous "Roekbridge Artillery" as a private and served with it until appointed a lieutenant and aide to his brother, General W. H. F. Lee. He continued with the cavalry staff until the close of the war, rising to the grade of captain.

After the close of the war Captain Lee settled on his farm on the Pamunkey River, in King William Co., Va., where he lived until 1890, when he removed to Washington, D. C., to engage in business. Married, first (November 16, 187—), Charlotte Taylor, daughter of R. Barton Haxall and Octavia Robinson, his wife, of Richmond; b. October 23, 1848; d. September 22, 1872, without issue.

Captain Lee married, second, at Washington, D. C. (March 18, 1894), Juliet, daughter of Colonel Thomas Hill Carter and Susan Roy, his wife, of "Pampatike," King William Co., Va.

(For the Custis Family, see "Lee of Virginia," pp. 456-577.)

The following notes are from Dr. Edward C. Ambler, of Roanoke, Va., a descendant of Edward Carter and Sarah Champe:

V. Edward Carter<sup>a</sup>, of Blenheim (Edward<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Edward Carter and Sarah Champe, his wife. Married three times: First, Mary Lewis; second, Lucy Wood; third, Miss Cook.

Issue by first marriage:

I. Dr. Charles Carter<sup>a</sup>, of Charlottesville, Va. Married Miss Cooke.

II. Robert Willis Carter<sup>a</sup>. Married Mary Franklin.

III. Edward Champe Carter<sup>a</sup>. Married Miss Turner.

Issue by second marriage:

IV. Champe Carter<sup>a</sup>. Married Miss Montgomery.

V. Mary Carter<sup>a</sup>. Married Wm. H. McCulloch.

VI. Peter Carter<sup>a</sup>. Married Julia Taylor.

Issue by third wife:

VII. Washington Carter<sup>a</sup>. Married Miss Digges.

VIII. William Carter<sup>a</sup>.

IX. Caroline Carter<sup>a</sup>.

X. Laura Brooke Carter<sup>a</sup>. Married, first, Beverley Davies. Married, second, — Powers.

Issue by first marriage:

Laura Beverley Davies<sup>r</sup>. Married John Jaquelin Ambler<sup>a</sup>, of Glen-Ambler, Amherst Co., Va. (Issue in Volume I, Chapters V, VI, and VII.)

XI. Julia Carter<sup>a</sup>. Married — Reynolds.

XII. Dr. John Carter<sup>a</sup>, of New Orleans, La. Married Letitia S. Todd. Issue:

I. Florence Carter<sup>r</sup>.

- II. John T. Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Letitia Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. Virginia Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- V. Charles Todd Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Edward L. Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- VII. Laura B. Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- VIII. Thomas T. Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- XIII. Stanley Carter<sup>6</sup>.

This branch is given separately:

III. Landon Carter<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of Sabine Hall, Richmond, Va.; was the youngest son of "King Carter." He was married three times.

First, Elizabeth, daughter of John Wormeley, of Rosegill.

Second, Maria, daughter of William Byrd, of Westover.

Third, Elizabeth Beale, sister of Col. William Beale.

(William and Mary College Quarterly, Vol. XIII, No. I, July, 1904, pp. 45, 46.)

#### EXTRACTS FROM DIARY OF COL. LANDON CARTER.

Col. Landon Carter, of Sabine Hall, kept a very minute diary of his plantation life, some portion of which has come into the possession of the editor, from Robert Carter Wellford, Esq., to whom it has descended. While most of it is given up to the details of planting and Col. Carter's reflections upon all sorts of things, we catch occasionally some very interesting glimpses of society in the Northern Neck before the Revolution.

Col. Carter was the son of Robert Carter, who, according to the "Gentleman's Magazine," left at his death, on August 4, 1722, 300,000 acres, 1,000 slaves and £10,000 in money. Col. Carter lived at "Sabine Hall," on the Rappahannock River. His brother, John Carter, resided at Corotoman, near the mouth of the river. Another brother, Charles Carter, up the river at "Cleve," King George County, and a third brother, Robert Carter, resided at Nomini, on the Potomac. The nearest neighbors of Col. Carter were the Fauntlerroys, and above them was Col. John Tayloe, at Mount Airy. Col. Landon Carter served in the House of Burgesses from 1748-1764, and was prominently engaged in politics. He married three times:

(1) Elizabeth, daughter of John Wormeley, of Rosegill.

(2) Maria, daughter of William Byrd, of Westover.

(3) Elizabeth Beale, sister of Capt. William Beale.

By his first wife he had issue:

- I. Robert Wormeley Carter<sup>4</sup>. Married Winifred Travers Beale, daughter of William Beale, of Richmond County.
- II. Elizabeth Carter<sup>4</sup>. Married Nelson Berkeley, of "Airwell," Hanover County, Va.
- III. Landon Carter<sup>4</sup>, of Prince William County. Married Judith Fauntleroy.
- IV. John Carter<sup>4</sup>, of "Sudley," in Prince William County. Married Janet Hamilton.

By his second wife he had issue:

- V. Maria Carter<sup>4</sup>. Married Robert Beverley, of Blandfield.

By his third wife he had issue:

- VI. Judith Carter<sup>4</sup>. Married Reuben Beale.
- VII. Lucy Carter<sup>4</sup>. Married William Colston.
- VIII. Beale Carter<sup>4</sup>.
- IX. Fanny Carter<sup>4</sup>.

Col. Landon Carter owned "Ring's Neck" and "Rippon Hall," on York River; "Sabine Hall," "The Forks," and "Mangorike" plantations in Richmond County; a plantation in Northumberland, and extensive lands in Prince William and other places. Capt. William Beale was son of Thomas and Elizabeth Beale.

Diary of Col. Landon Carter will be found in the following William and Mary College Quarterlies, beginning January 14, 1770:

Vol. XIII, No. 1, July, 1904; Vol. XIII, No. 4, April, 1905; Vol. XIII, No. 3, January, 1905; Vol. XIV, No. 1, July, 1905; Vol. XIV, No. 3, January, 1906; Vol. XIV, No. 4, April, 1906.

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

IV. Maria Carter<sup>4</sup> (Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Landon Carter and Maria Byrd, his second wife. Married Robert Beverley, of Wakefield, Culpeper Co., Va. Issue:

- I. Byrd Beverley<sup>5</sup>.
- II. Mumford Beverley<sup>5</sup>.
- III. William Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Beckwith. Issue:
  - I. Maria Beverley<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. William M. K. Beverley<sup>6</sup>, of Scarborough, England.
- IV. Maria Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, Richard Randolph; second, Gowan Corbin.

- V. Carter Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married Jane Wormeley.
- VI. Robert Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married Jane Taylor.
- VII. Lucy Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married Brett Randolph.
- VIII. Anne Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married Francis Corbin.
- IX. Peter Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married Lovely St. Martin.
- X. Evelyn Byrd Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, George Lee; second, Dr. Douglas, of Kentucky.
- XI. McKenzie Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married Isabella Gray.
- XII. Jane Bradshaw Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married Thomas Robertson.

Issue:

- I. Mary Jane Robertson<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Anne T. Robertson<sup>6</sup>.
- XIII. Harriet Beverley<sup>5</sup>. Married Rittenhouse. Issue:
  - I. John B. Rittenhouse<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Landon Carter<sup>4</sup>, of Pittsylvania (Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Landon Carter<sup>3</sup>, and Elizabeth Wormeley, his wife. Married Judith Fauntleroy. Issue:
  - I. Moore Fauntleroy Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Judith Edmonds.
  - II. Charles Carter<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Betsy Carter<sup>5</sup>.
  - IV. Margaret Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Robert Hone. Issue:
    - I. Edward Hone<sup>6</sup>, of Virginia.
  - V. Wormeley Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Sally Edwards.
  - VI. Charles Beale Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Ann Stuart.
  - VII. Mary Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married John Bruce.
  - VIII. Moore F. Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Judith Edmonds.
  - IX. Judith Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Dr. Isaac Henry, U. S. N.
  - X. John Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Jane Edwards.
- IV. Elizabeth Carter<sup>4</sup> (Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Landon Carter and Elizabeth Wormeley, his third wife. Married Nelson Berkeley, of Airwell, Hanover. Issue:
  - I. Edmund Berkeley<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Dr. Robert Berkeley<sup>5</sup>. Married Julia Carter.
  - III. Nelson Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, of Airwell. Married, first, Miss Bassot; second, Lucy Farmer Robinson.
  - IV. Dr. Carter Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, of Edgewood. Married, first, Catherine S. Carter, of Shirley; second, Fanny Page, Mrs. Nelson, of Rosewell.
  - V. William Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, of Prince Edward Co. Married Elizabeth Randolph.



VI. Mary Berkeley<sup>5</sup>. Married Gen'l John Minor, of Fredericksburg, Va.

VII. Lucy C. Berkeley<sup>5</sup>.

VIII. Lewis Berkeley<sup>5</sup>. Married Elizabeth Darracott.

IV. Lucy Carter<sup>4</sup> (Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Landon Carter and Elizabeth Beale, his third wife. Married William Colston, son of Travers Colston and Mrs. Susanna Opie Kenner, his second wife, who was son of Charles Colston and Rebecca Travers, his wife.

Charles Colston, b. 1690, son of William Colston, was a Captain in the Colonial Militia. In 1713 Captain Charles Colston married Rebecca Travers, widow—although only twenty-one years of age—of John Travers. Rebecca Travers was the youngest of three sisters, daughters of Raleigh Travers and granddaughters of William Travers, of Lancaster and Richmond County, who were two of the most prominent men of the Northern Neck of Virginia. From her father, Raleigh Travers, Rebecca Colston inherited the beautiful plantation of "Exeter Lodge," situated in Northumberland Co., Va., on Mattaponi Creek. Mrs. Colston bequeathed by will "Exeter Lodge" plantation to her oldest son, Travers Colston, who married, first, Alice Corbin Griffin, daughter of Thomas Griffin, one of the burgesses of Richmond Co., Va. She died about 1740, leaving three children.

I. Charles Colston.

II. Elizabeth Colston.

III. Travers Colston.

Mr. Colston married, second, Mrs. Susannah Opie Kenner, widow of Mr. Rhodam Kenner and daughter of John Opie and granddaughter of Captain Thomas Opie and Rev. David Lindsay. Mrs. Colston d. November 21, 1749, leaving issue:

I. Raleigh Colston.

II. William Colston.

III. Samuel Colston.

Charles Colston, eldest son of Travers and Alice Griffin Colston, reached his majority in 1757. He resided at "Exeter Lodge," which he inherited by his father's will; also another tract of land called Forest Quarter. Married Anne, eldest daughter of Griffin Fauntleroy, of Cherry Point. Mr. Charles Colston d. leaving two daughters:

I. Judith Susan Colston.

II. Alice Griffin Colston.

Elizabeth Colston, eldest daughter of Travers and Alice Griffin Colston, married Col. William Peachy, of Richmond Co., Va., who raised the first companies in the Northern Neck of Virginia which served in the Revolution of 1776. The children of Travers Colston by his second wife were:

- I. Travers Colston, d. young.
- II. William Colston. Married Lucy Carter.
- III. Raleigh Colston, of Honeywood, b. 1749; d. 1823. Married Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Thomas Marshall, granddaughter of John Marshall, who came from Wales. Married Miss Markham. Issue:

- I. Edward Colston.
- II. Susan Colston.
- III. Mary Isham Colston.
- IV. Thomas Colston.
- V. Raleigh Travers Colston.
- VI. Lucy Ann Colston.
- VII. John James Marshall Colston.

Edward Colston, eldest son of Raleigh and Elizabeth Marshall Colston, married, first, Jane Marshall; second, Jane Brockenborough. Issue:

- I. Elizabeth Colston.
- II. Jane Colston.
- III. Mary Colston.
- IV. Raleigh Colston.
- V. William Colston.
- VI. Lucy Colston.
- VII. Judith Colston.
- VIII. Edward Colston.

Susanna Colston, oldest daughter of Raleigh and Elizabeth Marshall Colston, b. November 27, 1792, married Benjamin Watkins Leigh, of Chesterfield Co., Va., b. 1781; d. 1849, member of the State Legislature and United States Senator. Susanna Colston was noted not only for her beauty, but also for her lovely traits of character. Issue:

- I. William Leigh. Married Mary White Colston.
- II. Susan Leigh. Married Conway Robinson.

Mary Isham Colston, third child of Ralcigh and Elizabeth Colston, married Hon. John Hanson Thomas, son of Dr. Philip and Jane Contee Hanson Thomas. Issue:

- I. Philip Hanson Thomas.
- II. Raleigh Colston Thomas.
- III. John Hanson Thomas, b. 1813.

Thomas Marshall Colston married Elizabeth Jaquelin Fisher. (Descendants Volume I, Chapters V, VI, and VII.)

William Colston was sheriff of Bristol, England, and amassed an immense fortune in the Spanish and Levantine trade. He died leaving two children, Edward Colston, his heir, who became the great philanthropist, and William Colston, who emigrated to America about the middle of the sixteenth century. William Colston became Clerk of old Rappahannock County. He died and left a son, William, who also became Clerk of Rappahannock County, and afterwards of Richmond County, until his death in 1701. William Colston, second, was also a member of the House of Burgesses in 1692. William Colston's will was proved in 1701, in which he mentions two sons, William and Charles, and daughter Susannah; son-in-law, Thomas Beale. A gravestone to be sent for to be laid over his wife Anne, value not less than £10, with suitable inscription. William Colston married Anne, daughter of Major William Gooch, of York Co., Va.

Lucy Carter and William Colston had issue:

- I. William Colston.
  - II. Travers Colston.
  - III. Elizabeth Colston.
  - IV. Susanna Colston.
  - IV. Robert W. Carter<sup>4</sup> (Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Landon Carter<sup>3</sup> and Elizabeth Wormeley, his wife. Married Winifred Beale, daughter of William Beale, of Richmond, Va.
- Issue:

- I. George Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Sarah Carter, of Blenheim.
- II. Landon Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Mary B. Armistead.
- III. Fanny Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married J. L. Lee.
- IV. Nancy Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Charles Carter, of Shirley.
- V. Elizabeth Carter<sup>5</sup>. Married Landon Carter, of "Clevec."

## FIFTH GENERATION.

V. Wormeley Carter<sup>5</sup> (Landon<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Landon Carter<sup>4</sup>, of Pittsylvania and Judith Fauntleroy, his wife. Married Sally Edwards. Issue:

- I. Ann E. Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Robert Hamilton.
- II. Landon Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Emily H. Carter.
- III. Wormeley Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Lucinda Alexander.
- IV. Richard H. Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Evelyn Price, of Chickahominy.
- V. Addison Bowles Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Lucy Burwell.
- VI. Thomas Ottoway Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Judith Carter.

V. George Carter<sup>5</sup> (Robert W.<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert W. Carter<sup>4</sup>, of Sabine Hall and Winifred Beale. Married Sarah Carter, of Blenheim. Issue:

- I. Sarah Carter<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Mary Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Gillies Thompson.
  - III. Landon Carter<sup>6</sup>.
  - IV. Fanny Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married John Law, of Washington.
- Issue:

- I. John Law<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Thomas Law<sup>7</sup>.

V. Landon Carter<sup>5</sup> (Robert W.<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of Sabine Hall, son of Robert W. Carter and Winifred Beale, his wife. Married, first, Catherine Tayloe; second, Mary Burwell Armistead. Mrs. Landon Carter, née Mary Burwell Armistead, was b. 1780. Married in 1800; left a widow in 1820; and d. 1846, at Alexandria, Va. Buried at Shooter's Hill.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Winifred Carter<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Lucy Carter<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Elizabeth Carter<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Robert W. Carter<sup>6</sup>, b. 1791; d. 1861. Married Elizabeth Tayloe.
- V. Anne C. Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married William B. Tomlin.

Issue by second marriage:

- VI. John Armistead Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Richardetta Debuttes.
- VII. Fanny Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Rosier Dulany.
- VIII. Mary Carter<sup>6</sup>. Married Captain Wm. Eliason, U. S. A.
- IX. Landon Carter<sup>6</sup>.

V. Fanny Carter<sup>5</sup> (Robert W.<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Robert W. Carter and Winifred Beale, his wife. Married J. L. Lee. Issue:

- I. Elizabeth Lee<sup>6</sup>. Married St. Leger L. Carter, of "Cleve."
- II. Winifred Lee<sup>6</sup>. Married Wm. Brent, Jr.
- III. Mary Lee<sup>6</sup>. Married T. Ringgold.



LANDON CARTER

Of "Sabine Hall," Richmond County, Virginia

- IV. Naney Lee<sup>6</sup>. Married, first, Charles Carter, of Shirley; second, Rev. Wm. Maffett. He married, second, Julia Chouteau.
- V. Elizabeth Lee<sup>6</sup>. Married, first, Presly Thornton; second, Landon Carter, of "Cleve."

#### SIXTH GENERATION.

VI. Anne E. Carter<sup>6</sup> (Wormeley<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Wormeley Carter and Sally Edwards, his wife. Married Robert Hamilton. Issue:

- I. Susan B. Hamilton<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Sallie C. Hamilton<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Robert W. Hamilton<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. Lucy L. Hamilton<sup>7</sup>.
- V. Charles B. Hamilton<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Richard Henry Hamilton<sup>7</sup>.
- VII. Mary E. Hamilton<sup>7</sup>. Married W. A. Carter.
- VIII. Edward Hamilton<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Landon Carter<sup>0</sup> (Wormeley<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Wormeley Carter and Sally Edwards, his wife. Married Emily H. Carter. Issue:
  - I. John Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. Landon Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - III. Sarah Janet Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - IV. Wormeley Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - V. Edwin L. Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - VI. Ann B. Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - VII. Landonia Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - VIII. Thomas Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - IX. Virginia M. Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Wormeley Carter<sup>0</sup> (Wormeley<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Wormeley Carter<sup>5</sup> and Sally Edwards, his wife. Married Lucinda Alexander. Issue:
  - I. Catherine Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. William Alexander Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Mary E. Hamilton.
  - III. Sallie M. Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Townsend Stewart.
  - IV. John W. Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married ——— Hayden.
  - V. Richard Henry Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - VI. Richard Henry Carter<sup>0</sup> (Wormeley<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Wormeley Carter<sup>5</sup> and Sally Edwards, his wife. Married Evelyn Price, of Chickahominy, and had issue:
    - I. James M. Carter<sup>7</sup>.
    - II. Richard Henry Carter<sup>7</sup>.
    - III. Wilson L. Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married, first, Julia A. Bennett; second, Harriet A. Ambler.
    - VI. Addison Bowles Carter<sup>0</sup> (Wormeley<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Landon Carter and Catherine Tayloe, his wife. Married Lucy Burwell. Issue:
      - I. Mann Page Carter<sup>7</sup>.



- II. Maria Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Gen'l Anderson.
- III. Shirley Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Thomas Ottoway Carter<sup>6</sup> (Wormeley<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Wormeley Carter<sup>6</sup> and Sally Edwards, his wife. Married Judith Carter. Issue:
  - I. Addison Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Ann Armistead.
  - II. Moore F. Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - III. Rosalie Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - IV. John Carter<sup>7</sup>.
  - V. Rowland Hill Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Robert W. Carter<sup>6</sup> (Landon<sup>5</sup>, Robert W.<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Landon Carter and Catherine Tayloe, his first wife, b. 1791; d. 1861. Married Elizabeth M. Tayloe. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth L. Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Dr. A. N. Wellford.
  - II. Anne C. Carter<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Anne C. Carter<sup>6</sup> (Landon<sup>5</sup>, Robert W.<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Landon Carter, of "Sabine Hall," and Catherine Tayloe, his first wife. Married W. B. Tomlin. Issue:
  - I. Maria Tomlin<sup>7</sup>. Married Judge Conway.
  - II. Fanny D. Tomlin<sup>7</sup>. Married Hon. John C. Moncure, of Shreveport, La. (Issue Moncure Family, Chapter XIII.)
  - III. Lucy Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Ball.
  - IV. Mary Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married W. Eustace.
- VI. John Armistead Carter<sup>6</sup> (Landon<sup>5</sup>, Robert W.<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Landon Carter of Sabine Hall and Mary Burwell Armistead, his second wife. Married Richardette Debuttes. Had issue:
  - I. Richard Wilby Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Sophia B. Carter. Issue:
    - I. Mary M. Carter<sup>8</sup>.
    - II. Fanny S. Carter<sup>8</sup>.
    - III. Sophia Carter<sup>8</sup>.
    - IV. John A. Carter<sup>8</sup>.
    - V. Richard W. Carter<sup>8</sup>.
    - VI. Henry Carter<sup>8</sup>.
  - VI. Fanny Carter<sup>6</sup> (Landon<sup>5</sup>, Robert W.<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Landon Carter, of "Sabine Hall," and Mary

Burwell Armistead, his second wife. Married Rosier Dulany. Issue:

- I. Rebecca Dulany<sup>7</sup>. Married Richard H. Dulany.
- II. Henry Dulany<sup>7</sup>. Married Ida Powell, of Shirley.
- VI. Mary Carter<sup>6</sup> (Landon<sup>5</sup>, Robert W.<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Landon Carter, of Sabine Hall, and Mary



MRS. LANDON CARTER, OF "SABINE HALL"  
Née Mary Burwell Armistead

Burwell Armistead, his second wife. Married Captain W. Eliason, of U. S. Army. Issue:

- I. Dr. Talcott Eliason<sup>7</sup>. Married Sally —.
- II. Landon C. Eliason<sup>7</sup>. Married Mary White. Issue:
  - I. Mary L. Eliason<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Rebecca Eliason<sup>8</sup>.

- III. Armistead Eliason<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. William Eliason<sup>7</sup>.
- V. Mary Eliason<sup>7</sup>. Married Dr. Augustine Smith Mason, of Hagerstown. (Issue Volume III, and Mason Family, Chapter XVII, this volume.)
- VI. Rutledge Eliason<sup>7</sup>. Married ——. Issue:
  - I. Maria<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Lillie<sup>8</sup>.

## SEVENTH GENERATION.

VII. Wilson L. Carter<sup>7</sup> (Richard Henry<sup>6</sup>, Wormeley<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Richard Henry Carter<sup>6</sup> and Evelyn Price, of Chickahominy, his wife. Married, first, Julia H. Bennett; second, Harriet A. Ambler.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Elijah Lewis Carter<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Indiana B. Carter<sup>8</sup>.
- III. Eleanora A. Carter<sup>8</sup>.
- IV. James M. Carter<sup>8</sup>.
- V. Julia R. Carter<sup>8</sup>.
- VI. Poindexter Page Carter<sup>8</sup>.
- VII. Andromeda Carter<sup>8</sup>.
- VIII. Wilson L. Carter<sup>8</sup>.

## EIGHTH GENERATION.

VIII. Dr. Elijah Lewis Carter<sup>8</sup> (Wilson L.<sup>7</sup>, Richard Henry<sup>6</sup>, Wormeley<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Wilson L. Carter and Julia H. Bennett, his first wife. Married Elizabeth R. Withers. Issue:

- I. Robert Carter<sup>9</sup>.
- II. Alice Carter<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Sydnor Carter<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. Janet Carter<sup>9</sup>.
- V. Edwin Carter<sup>9</sup>.

## NINTH GENERATION.

IX. Janet Carter<sup>9</sup> (Dr. Elijah Lewis<sup>8</sup>, Wilson L.<sup>7</sup>, Richard Henry<sup>6</sup>, Wormeley<sup>5</sup>, Landon<sup>4</sup>, Landon<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Dr. Elijah Lewis Carter and Elizabeth R. Withers, daughter

of Col. Withers, of Wytheville, Va. Janet Carter married John Jaquelin Ambler<sup>7</sup>, of Glen-Ambler, Amherst Co., Va. (Descendants Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.)

Col. Robert Enoch Withers, of Wytheville, Va., is the eldest son of Dr. Robert Walter Withers and Susan D. Alexander, of Campbell Co., Va. He was born September 18, 1821, at "Roek Castle," Campbell Co., and educated in county schools, Woodburn Classical School and the University of Virginia, from which institution he was graduated with the title of Doctor of Medicine in July 1841, before he was twenty years of age. He afterwards had an appointment as one of the resident physicians at the Baltimore Alms House Hospital, which he filled for nearly a year. Then practiced medicine in his native county, Campbell, until 1858, when he removed to Danville, Va., and continued the practice until the commencement of the war.

On February 3, 1846, he married Mary Virginia Royall, the oldest daughter of Joseph E. Royall and Elizabeth Gwatkin, of Lynnhburg Va., who was born January 13, 1827. They had twelve children, whose names will appear hereafter. (See Johnston, Callaway, Royal Families, Chapter XX.)

On April 23, 1861, Robert E. Withers left an infant eight hours old and went to Richmond, Virginia, in command of two volunteer companies, and was mustered into the military service of the State as Major of a Battalion. He served through the war, having been appointed Colonel of the 18th Regiment of Virginia Volunteers, which he commanded at the first Battle of Manassas, and all the subsequent actions, until June 27, at Gaines' Mill, he received several severe wounds, which disabled him from active service. He was put on the Invalid Corps, and assigned to the command of the Prison Post at Danville, Va., where six to eight thousand prisoners were confined. This post he surrendered to Gen'l Wright, of the 6th Army Corps, about two weeks after Gen'l Lee's surrender at Appomattox.

In January 1866, he was appointed first editor of the *Lynchburg Daily News*, which soon became the leading paper of that section of the State.

He was nominated for Governor by the Conservative Convention in Richmond in May 1868, and canvassed the State of Virginia in the effort to secure the defeat of the "——— Constitution," just

promulgated by the "Black and Tan Convention," as it was called, and so successful was this canvass that the military authorities refused to appoint a day for the election to be held.

The next year he withdrew in favor of Gilbert C. Walker, who, as a "Liberal Republican," had been nominated, and who was elected by a large majority. In 1870, he accepted the place of General Agent of the University Publishing Co., and canvassed the State in the effort to secure the adoption of the school books published by that company for use in the public free schools of the State. A large majority of the counties in the State selected them for use.

In 1872 he was unanimously nominated as Lieutenant Governor of the State, after having closely contested, with Gen'l James L. Kemper, the nomination for Governor.

He accepted the second place and canvassed the State, and the ticket was elected by an overwhelming majority. In 1883-4 he was elected, by the Legislature of Virginia, Senator of the United States and served six years in that body.

He was defeated for re-election by Gen'l William Mahone, the leader of the Readjuster Party in Virginia, who on entering the Senate affiliated with the Republicans.

In 1885 Col. Withers was appointed Consul to Hong Kong, during Mr. Cleveland's first administration, and served in that position until the inauguration of Gen'l Harrison, when he resigned and returned to Virginia. He served as States Elector in the presidential canvass of 1868, when Gen'l Grant was elected. He retired to private life in 1889, after his service in Hong Kong. He had held all the offices in the various Masonic orders of the State of Virginia, and was elected Grand Master of Knights Templars of the United States, in San Francisco, in 1883, serving until 1886, when he came from Hong Kong to attend the St. Louis Conclave. He was for some years one of the Board of Regents of the Smithsonian Institution and has since 1871 been one of the Lay Deputies to the General Conventions of the Protestant Episcopal Church at all the triennial sessions of that body, except those held while he was absent from the United States.

Col. Robert Enoch Withers and Mary Virginia Royall, his wife, had issue:

- I. Elizabeth Royall Withers. Married Dr. E. L. Carlet.
- II. Susan Dabney Withers. Married Henry S. Williams.
- III. Alice Chim Withers. Married Edmund Pendleton Goggin.
- IV. Janet Ann Withers. Married, first, Henry Cook; second, W. M. Boyd.
- V. Mary Virginia Withers, d. two and a half years old.
- VI. Josephine Withers. Married John T. Read.
- VII. Kate Massie Withers. Married G. Woodville Smith.
- VIII. Betty Ellison Withers. Married Stephen Putney.
- IX. Willie Clare Withers, not married.
- X. Virginia Seeessia Withers. Married John Y. Terry.
- XI. Robert Edwin Withers. Married Mary C. Kent.
- XII. Mary Thornhill Withers, d. aged seven years.
- II. Elizabeth Royal Withers<sup>2</sup> and Dr. E. L. Carter had issue:
  - I. Virginia Royall Carter<sup>3</sup>, d. aged three years.
  - II. Alice Clare Carter<sup>3</sup>, unmarried.
  - III. Robert Withers Carter<sup>3</sup>. Married Mary Allen.
  - IV. Sydnor Royall Carter<sup>3</sup>.
  - V. Janet Ann Carter<sup>3</sup>. Married John Jaquelin Ambler.
  - VI. Rev. Edwin Royall Carter<sup>3</sup>. Married Hally Williams.
- II. Susan Dabney Withers<sup>2</sup> and Henry S. Williams had issue:
  - I. Bessie Hamilton Williams<sup>3</sup>. Married Walter Paxton.
  - II. Virginia Royall Williams<sup>3</sup>. Married Walter S. Brown.
  - III. Henry Sinclair Williams<sup>3</sup>. Married Hattie —.
  - IV. Robert Withers Williams<sup>3</sup>, unmarried.
  - V. Alice Kennon Williams<sup>3</sup>. Married Albert S. Gravely.
  - VI. Mary Thornhill Williams<sup>3</sup>. Married Edwin Anderson Williams.
  - VII. Edwin Anderson Williams<sup>3</sup>, unmarried.
- II. Alice Chinn Withers<sup>2</sup> and Edmund Pendleton Goggin had issue:
  - I. Mary Virginia Goggin<sup>3</sup>, d. aged three months.
  - II. John Otey Leftwich Goggin<sup>3</sup>. Married Annie Holt.
- II. Josephine Ann Withers<sup>2</sup> and John T. Read had issue:
  - I. Robert Enoch Read<sup>3</sup>. Married Susan J. Rector. Issue:
    - I. Robert Rector Read<sup>4</sup>.
  - II. John Royall Read<sup>3</sup>. Married Katharine Taylor.
  - III. Willie Clare Read<sup>3</sup>, d. aged eight months.



- II. Kate Massie Withers<sup>2</sup> and G. Woodville Smith had issue:
  - I. Ethel Thornhill Smith<sup>3</sup>. Married G. Townes Gaines.  
Issue:
    - I. Ethel Smith Gaines<sup>4</sup>.
  - II. George Woodville Smith<sup>3</sup>, d. aged two years.
- III. Kate Withers Smith<sup>3</sup>, unmarried.
- IV. Robert Withers Smith<sup>3</sup>, d. aged fifteen years.
- II. Betty Ellison Withers<sup>2</sup> and Stephen Putney had issue:
  - I. Josephine Putney<sup>3</sup>. Married W. Page Dame. Issue:
    - I. Elsie Withers Dame<sup>4</sup>, d. aged ten months.
  - II. Elsie Putney<sup>3</sup>, d. aged five years.
- III. Stephen Putney<sup>3</sup>, unmarried.
- II. Virginia Seeessia Withers<sup>2</sup> and John Y. Terry had issue;
  - I. John Young Terry<sup>3</sup>, d. aged nine months.
  - II. Virginia Seeessia Terry<sup>3</sup>, d. aged two years.
- III. Robert Withers Terry<sup>3</sup>.
- IV. William Robertson Terry<sup>3</sup>.
- II. Robert E. Withers<sup>2</sup> and Mary C. Kent had issue:
  - I. Robert Edwin Withers<sup>3</sup>.
- III. Sydnor Royall Carter<sup>3</sup> and — Byrd, his wife, had issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Royall Carter<sup>4</sup>.
  - II. Sydnor Royall Carter<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Edwin Royall Carter<sup>3</sup> and Hallie, his wife, had issue:
  - I. Edwin Royall Carter<sup>4</sup>.
  - II. Nelson Williams Carter<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Bessie Hamilton Williams<sup>3</sup> and Walter Paxton had issue:
  - I. Walter P. Paxton<sup>4</sup>, d. aged eleven months.
  - II. Sue Dabney Paxton<sup>4</sup>.
- III. William Coulter Paxton<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Henry S. Williams<sup>3</sup> and Hattie, his wife, had issue:
  - I. Henry Sinelair Williams<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Mary Thornhill Williams<sup>3</sup> and Edwin Anderson Williams  
had issue:
  - I. Edwin Anderson Williams<sup>4</sup>.
- III. John Otey Leftwich Goggin<sup>3</sup> and Annie Holt, his wife,  
had issue:
  - I. Edmund Pendleton Goggin<sup>4</sup>.

## CHAPTER VIII

## THE LEE FAMILY.

In my second circular, I promised to give the ancestry of the Lees. In making this promise I relied on the correctness of the deductions published by the late Gen'l Fitzhugh Lee in his book, "Life of Gen'l Robert E. Lee."

Gen'l Fitzhugh Lee sent me a copy of his book. I consider it a great privilege to be able to reproduce the following ancestry with his consent:

Westmoreland is one of a group of counties in Virginia lying between the Rappahannock and Potomac Rivers. It was originally a portion of Northumberland County, and, though small in geographical extent, its historical record is great. Within a space of thirty miles in length and an average width of fifteen miles were born statesmen, soldiers, and patriots whose lives and characters adorn the pages of American history, and whose courage, genius and learning are the proud inheritance of those who dwell to-day in the powerful republic of America. Here, from England, in 1665, settled the great-grandfather of the "Father of his Country." Americanized, he became an extensive planter, soldier, magistrate, member of the House of Burgesses, and a gentleman whose virtue and piety were undoubted. In his will he expressed his "sorrow for his sins," and begged forgiveness from "Almighty God, Saviour and Redeemer." Here, his son, Lawrence, and his grandson, Augustine, were born. The second wife of Augustine was Mary Ball and their first child, b. February 22, 1732, was named George Washington.

This son was destined to establish, with stainless sword, a free republic, and by great skill, unfaltering faith, and sublime patriotism, transfer power from king to people. A grateful country acknowledged his illustrious services and he was chosen the first President of the United States. This little county was not satisfied with the high honor. On April 28, 1758, James Monroe was born within its limits. He became a distinguished citizen,

served as an officer in the Revolutionary War, was a member of the General Assembly of Virginia, of the Congress of Confederation, and the Virginia Convention, called in June 1778, to consider the Federal Constitution; a United States Senator, envoy to France, England and Spain; twice Governor of his native State; Secretary of State in Mr. Madison's administration, and President of the republic for two terms, from 1817-1825, thus adding, by a long and meritorious public career, additional renown to the county of his birth, his State, and his country. James Madison, fourth President of the United States, was born in the adjoining county of King George, seven years before Monroc, and but a few miles distant. To this section, from England, came, too, the Lees, who belonged to one of the oldest families in the mother country, its members from a very early date being distinguished for eminent services to sovereign and country. By the side of William, the Conqueror, at the battle of Hastings, in 1066, Laneelot Lee fought, and a later descendant, Lionel Lee, followed Richard Cœur de Lion, taking part in the third crusade of Palestine, in 1192, at the head of a company of "gentleman cavaliers," displaying great bravery at the siege of Acre.

The Lees of Virginia, "a family which has, perhaps, given more statesmen and warriors to their new home than any other of our old colonial progenitors," came of an ancient and distinguished stock in England, and neither country can boast a nobler scion than the subject of these memoirs. Gen'l Lee had never the time or inclination to study genealogy, and always said he knew nothing beyond his first American ancestor, Colonel Richard Lee, who emigrated to Virginia in the reign of Charles I. He believed, however, from his inherited traditions and the coat-of-arms borne by his progenitors in this country, that his family came originally from Shropshire, England, and when the world rang with his name and fame, and he paid the usual penalty of greatness by being besieged with reiterated queries respecting his pedigree, this was all he would say. Others, however, took more interest in the subject; he was claimed by the Lees of Cheshire, Oxfordshire, Bucks, and Essex, as well as Shropshire, and much was said and written pro and con both before and after his death.

In recent years his genealogy has been very persistently and thoroughly investigated by those learned in antiquarian research,

and their conclusion is in favor of Shropshire, though in 1663, the first emigrant, Colonel Richard Lee, made a will in which he states that he was "lately of Stafford Langton in the County of Essex." Now, as we have every reason to believe that he was a younger son, the parental nest was probably full; neither was it such a "far cry" from Shropshire to the near vicinity of London, a remove preparatory, possibly, to the still greater one across the Atlantic. He certainly used the arms of the Shropshire Lees.

Colonel Lee's devotion to the House of Stuart was notorious, and had been often proved even by the manner of dating his will, viz.: "The sixth of February, in the sixteenth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, Charles II, King of Great Britain, etc., etc., etc., and in the year of our Lord 1663." Being Secretary of State and member of the Privy Council in Virginia, he had assisted that staunch royalist, Governor Berkeley, in holding the colony to its allegiance, so that after the death of Charles I, Cromwell was forced to send troops and armed vessels of war to reduce it to subjection. Unable to resist, they made a treaty with the "Commonwealth of England," wherein Virginia was described as an "Independent Dominion," this treaty being ratified in the same manner as with a foreign power.

Berkeley was then removed and another governor appointed; but the undaunted Col. Richard Lee hired a Dutch vessel, freighted it himself, went to Brussels or Breda, surrendered up Sir William Berkeley's old commission—for the government of that province—and received a new one from his present Majesty, Charles II, "a loyal action and deserving my commendation." It is also said that he offered the exiled monarch an asylum in the New World. It is certain that on the death of Cromwell, he aided Governor Berkeley in proclaiming Charles II in Virginia, two years before his "restoration" in England. In consequence, the motto to the Virginia coat-of-arms was, "En dat Virginia quintam," until after the union of England and Scotland, when it was, "En dat Virginia quartam."

The inscription on the tombstone of the second Richard Lee, at Brent House Fields, Mt. Pleasant, Westmoreland Co., Va., describes him as belonging to an ancient and noble family of Morton Regis in Shropshire. It is clearly established that the three earliest representatives of the family in America, Col.

Richard Lee and his two eldest sons, claimed their Shropshire Co. descent.

It is our purpose to trace the Lees in America, not in England. The first emigrant, Colonel Richard Lee, is described as a man of good stature, of comely visage, generous nature; and when he reached Virginia, at that time not much cultivated, he was so pleased with the country that he made large settlements with the servants who accompanied him. To his credit, it may be added that when he returned to England, some years after, he "gave away all the lands he had taken up and settled at his own expense, to the servants, he had fixed on them," some of whose descendants are now possessed of very considerable estates in that colony.

After remaining some time in England he again visited Virginia with a fresh band of followers, whom he also established there. He first settled in York County in 1641, where he was burgess and justice in 1647, and when later he removed to the "Northern Neck," between the Potomac and Rappahannock Rivers, he filled the offices of Secretary of State and member of the Privy Council. Of his loyalty to the House of Stuart we have already spoken, and of his various voyages, indicating in themselves his "enterprising genius." When he made his will in London, in 1663, he was returning on what proved to be his last voyage. He had with him his large, young family, his eldest son John not yet being of age; but he was so determined to establish them in Virginia, that he ordered an English estate—"Stratford"—worth eight or nine hundred pounds per annum, to be sold and the money divided between his heirs. He died soon after his return, and as John, the B. A. of Oxford, never married, Richard, the second son, succeeded to the homestead in Westmoreland. He also graduated at Oxford in law, and was distinguished for his learning, spending almost his whole life in study. On October 15, 1667, as "Major Richard Lee, a loyal, discreet person and worthy of the place," he was appointed member of the council. He was born in 1647. Married Letitia Corbin, and died in 1714, leaving five sons and one daughter. His eldest son, Richard, the third of the name, married and settled in London, though his children eventually returned to Virginia. Philip removed to Maryland in 1700, and was the progenitor of the Lee family in that State; Francis, the third son, died a bachelor, but Thomas, the fourth, with only a common

Virginia education (it could not have been much in those days), had such strong natural talents, that long after he was a man he became a good Latin and Greek scholar, without any assistance but his own genius. Though a younger son, with only a limited patrimony, by his industry and talents, he acquired a considerable fortune, was a member of the Council, and so well known and respected that when his house in Westmoreland burned down, Queen Caroline sent him a large sum of money out of her privy purse, with an autograph letter. Stratford was rebuilt on an imposing scale, and becoming the property of "Light Horse Harry," on his marriage to Matilda, daughter of Philip Ludwell Lee and granddaughter of Thomas, was eventually the birthplace of Gen'l Robert E. Lee.

On the recall of Sir William Goode, Thomas became president and commander-in-chief over the colony; in which station he continued some time, until the king thought proper to appoint him governor, and he is always spoken of as the first native governor, though he died in 1750, before his commission could reach him. He married Hannah Ludwell, of an old and honorable Somersetshire family, originally of German extraction, and left six sons and two daughters.

Stratford is still standing in Westmoreland Co., Va., an object of much veneration and respect. Within its walls, in the same chamber, two signers of the Declaration of Independence were born, while the fact that Robert Edward Lee first saw the light there makes it yet more interesting. It is a large, stately mansion, built in the shape of the letter "H," and not far from the banks of the Potomac. Upon the roof were summer houses, with chimneys for columns, where the band played in the evenings and the ladies and gentlemen gathered. Thomas Lee was buried at Pope's Creek Church, five miles from Stratford. George Washington was baptized at this church, and in the early days, his family, the Lees, Paynes, and other prominent families of the neighborhood, worshiped there.

It has been said that as Westmoreland County is distinguished above all other counties in Virginia as the birthplace of genius, so, perhaps, no other Virginian could boast so many distinguished sons as President Thomas Lee. General Washington, in 1771, wrote: "I know of no county that can produce a family, all distinguished



as clever men, as our Lees." These sons in order of age were: Philip Ludwell, Richard Henry, Thomas, Francis "Lightfoot," Henry, and Arthur. Matilda, the first wife of General Henry Lee, the father of General Robert E. Lee, was the daughter of the eldest son, Philip Ludwell Lee. Richard Henry Lee, the second son, is well known to students of American history. He has been generally styled "The Cicero of the American Revolution." He moved on June 10, 1776, that "These colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent States," and with his brother, Francis "Lightfoot," signed the Declaration of Independence. Having moved this declaration, according to parliamentary etiquette he might have been appointed chairman of the committee to draw up the instrument, but the sickness of his wife called him home; or he might also have been the author of the Declaration of American Independence instead of Thomas Jefferson. His services to the cause of the colony were great, and their struggle for independence was sustained by his tongue and pen. He was a great orator, an accomplished scholar, a learned debater, and a renowned statesman in that period of our country's history. His father's brother, Henry Lee, the fifth son of the second Richard, married a Miss Bland, a great-aunt of John Randolph, of Roanoke. His only daughter married a Fitzhugh. His son Henry married Miss Grymes, and left a family of six sons and four daughters. Henry, the eldest, was the well known "Light Horse Harry," of the Revolutionary War, the father of Robert E. Lee. He and Richard Henry Lee are frequently confounded, and their relationship has often been the subject of inquiry. Richard Henry Lee's father, Thomas, and Henry Lee's grandfather were brothers. The former was therefore a first cousin of the latter's father. "Light Horse Harry" was conspicuous in the military and civil annals of his country as a dashing dragoon in the war between Great Britain and the colonies. His boldness and activity were frequently commended by Washington, and he came out of the war with a brilliant reputation. He possessed the love and confidence of the commander-in-chief, and it is possible that Washington's interest was the first excited because he was once supposed to have had a tender feeling for Lucy Grymes, his mother, a friendship which was continued by reason of the attractive qualities of the son as soldier and statesman. This attachment was deeply appreciated by

Gen'l Henry Lee, and throughout his career he was steadfast in his devotion to Washington.

I give the following letter from Richard J. Evans, bearing on the above:

NEW ORLEANS, LA., Oct. 13, 1905.

DEAR MISS DU BELLET:—Sarah Warner, daughter of Col. Augustine Warner, Sr., of Warner's Hall, Gloucester County, and sister of Col. Augustine Warner, Jr., of the same place, married Lawrence Townley, and had issue, a daughter, Alice, who married John Grymes, of Middlesex County. This John Grymes and Alice, his wife, had a son, John Grymes (d. 1748, aged 57 years), and another son, Charles Grymes, who married Frances Jennings, daughter of Col. Edmund Jennings and Frances Corbin, his wife. They had issue:

1. Charles, d. young.
2. Fanny. Married (1737) Philip Ludwell, Jr.
3. Lucy Grymes. Married Colonel Henry Lee, of Leesylvania, and were the parents of Light-Horse Harry Lee.

I have as authority for above, "Henning's Statutes," VIII, 630; "Lee of Virginia," page 299.

Yours very truly,

RICHARD J. EVANS.

"Light Horse Harry's" father, Henry Lee, of Leesylvania, and Lucy Grymes were married at Green Spring, on James River, December 1, 1753. His mother was the daughter of Luey Ludwell, who married Colonel Grymes, of the Council of Virginia. Bishop Portens, of England, was her unele. Their son, Henry, was born January 29, 1756, at Leesylvania, some three miles from Dumfries, a village built by Scotch merehants, and then the county town of Princee William. His brother, Charles Lee (not to be con-founded with General Charles Lee, an Englishman, and no relation to this family), was subsequently attorney general in Washington's second eabinet. The future cavalry leader was educated at Princeton. Dr. William Shippen writes to Richard Henry Lee, from Philadelphia, August 25, 1770: "I am persuaded that there is no suelh sehool as Princeton on this continent. Your cousin Henry Lee is in College, and will be one of the first fellows in this country. He is more than strict in his morality, has fine genius, and is diligent." The profession of law was thought best for the display of his talents, and he was about to eubark for England to study it, under the direction of Bishop Portens, of London, when stopped by hostilities between the mother country and her American colonies.

Possessing fine descriptive powers, application, great faculty for public expression, and with character formed and mind trained by such a distinguished light of the Church of England, a great legal future would seem a safe prediction, but before the smoke cleared away from the first British gun fired in Massachusetts its report was heard in Virginia. The English volley lighted patriotic fires in the hearts of the colonists with the rapidity that electricity flies in this age from the touch of the button. The sword was substituted for the law book in the hands of Henry Lee, and we find him, at the age of nineteen, after the battle of Lexington, a captain of cavalry, being nominated for that position by Patrick Henry, the orator of American liberty. He rose rapidly in his new career. In the Northern Department at Brandywine, Germantown, Springfield, and in the operations in Pennsylvania, New Jersey, and New York, his address, cool courage, great ability and unceasing activity as an outpost officer speedily drew the attention of his superiors. Congress recognized his services, promoted him, and gave him an independent partisan corps. Ever thereafter his position in the war was near the flashing of the guns. His duties kept him close to the enemy's lines, and his legion was what cavalry should be—the eyes and ears of the army. His communications to Washington were confidential, were sent direct, and he was ordered by the commander-in-chief to mark them "Private." When Washington was anxious to effect Arnold's capture he consulted the commander of the "Light Horse," who planned the famous desertion of Sergeant Champe. He projected and executed the surprise and capture of Paulus Hook by a brilliant *coup de main*, and for prudence, bravery and tactical skill was presented by Congress with a gold medal emblematical of his success—a distinction conferred on no other officer below the rank of General during the war. On one side of the medal was a bust of the hero, with the words, "Henry Lee, Legionis Equit, Præfecto Comitia Americana," and on the reverse is translated: "Notwithstanding rivers and intrenchments, he, with a small band, conquered the foe by warlike skill and prowess, and firmly bound, by his humanity, those who had been conquered by his arms. In memory of the conflict at Paulus Hook, August 19th, 1779."

In November 1780, he was promoted to be lieutenant colonel of dragoons, and his corps is spoken of as the "finest that made its

appearance in the arena of the Revolutionary War." Washington had it formed expressly for him of equal proportions of cavalry and infantry, both officers and men being picked from the army. Under its victorious guidons rode Peter Johnston, the father of the distinguished soldier, Joseph Eggleston Johnston, who joined the legion when only sixteen years old, and led the forlorn hope at the storming of Fort Watson, and was publicly thanked. Afterward he became a judge, and was celebrated for his learning and ability. It is curious that the sons of Judge Johnston and General Henry Lee were afterward classmates at the United States Military Academy, and at the marriage ceremony of Lee, Johnston was a groomsman.

These two eminent soldiers were in the front rank of the United States army and served with great distinction under the Southern flag, even as their fathers rode boot to boot in the days of the Revolution. When Henry Lee's legion was selected to assist in the defense of the Carolinas and the Virginias in the Southern Department, Washington wrote to Mr. John Matthews, a member of Congress from South Carolina, informing him of its march, saying:

"Lee's corps will go to the southward; it is an excellent one, and the officer at the head of it has great reserves of genius."

Lafayette held the leader of the legion in high estimation, and bears testimony to his "distinguished services"; his talents as a corps commander, and his "handsome exploits," while one of the officers of the army said: "He seemed to have come out of his mother's womb a soldier." General Mathew Greene, his immediate commander, testified that "few officers, either in America or Europe, were held in so high a point of estimation;" in a letter to the President of Congress, February 18, 1782, expressed himself as "more indebted to this officer (Lee) than any other for the advantages gained over the enemy in the operations of the last campaign"; and in a letter to Lee himself, writes: "No man in the progress of the campaign had equal merit with yourself, nor is there one so reported. Everybody knows I have the highest opinion of you as an officer, and you know I love you as a friend." After the British colors were lowered at Yorktown, Henry Lee began a civil career which proved to be as great as his military record. In 1778 he was a member of the convention called in Virginia to

consider the ratification of the Federal Constitution. In the battle of intellectual giants composing that body, with eloquence and zeal, he pleaded for its adoption. By his side and voting with him on that important question were such men as James Madison, John Marshall, afterwards Chief Justice of the United States, and Edmund Randolph; while in the ranks of the opposition stood Patrick Henry with immense oratorical strength; George Mason, the wisest man, Mr. Jefferson said, he ever knew; Benjamin Harrison, William Grayson and others, who thought the Constitution, as it came from the hands of the framers, conferred too much power on the Federal Government and too little upon its creator, the States. In 1786 he was a delegate to the Continental Congress. From 1792 to 1795 he was Governor of Virginia, and was selected by President Washington to command the fifteen thousand men from Pennsylvania, New Jersey and Maryland, who were sent into western Pennsylvania to quell what was known as the "Whiskey Insurrection," which he successfully accomplished without bloodshed. This rebellion grew out of a resistance to a tax laid on distilled spirits. Washington accompanied him on the march as far as Bedford, Pa., and in a letter dated October 20, 1794, to Henry Lee, Esq., commander-in-chief of the militia army on its march against the insurgents in certain counties of western Pennsylvania, says at its conclusion: "In leaving the army I have his regret, as I know. I commit it to an able and faithful direction and that this direction will be ably and faithfully seconded by all."

While Governor of Virginia, a section lying under the Cumberland Mountains, projecting between Kentucky and Tennessee, was formed into a separate county and named after him. It has since been divided into two, the eastern portion being called after General Winfield Scott. In 1779 General Lee was elected to Congress, and on the death of General Washington was appointed to deliver an address in commemoration of the services of that great man, in which occurs the famous sentence, so often quoted: "First in war; first in peace, and first in the hearts of his countrymen." In 1798-'99, as a representative of the county of Westmoreland in the General Assembly, he took an active part in the debate upon Mr. Madison's famous resolutions of that date. In his opinion the laws of the United States then under discussion were un-



constitutional, and if they were Virginia had a right to object. "But," he exclaimed, "Virginia is my country; her will I obey, however lamentable the fate to which it may subject me."

When he was Governor of Virginia, six years before, his native State occupied the first place in his heart. In reply to a letter from Mr. Madison, dated Philadelphia, January 21, 1792, asking him if he would relinquish his office and accept command of an army to be organized for the protection of the western frontier, he writes: "Were I called upon by the President to command the next campaign my respect for him would induce me to disregard every trifling obstruction which might oppose acceptance of the office, such as my own repose, the care of my children and the happiness I enjoy in attention to their welfare, and in the execution of the duties of my present station. As a citizen I hold myself bound to obey the will of my country in taking any part her interest may demand from me. Yet I should require some essential stipulations, only to secure a favorable issue to the campaign."

After speaking of how formidable the enemy was he adds: "One objection I should only have (the above conditions being acceded to), and that is the abandoning of my native country to whose goodness I am so much indebted; no consideration on earth could induce me to act a part, however gratifying to me, which could be construed into disregard or faithlessness to this commonwealth."

His great son therefore inherited this doctrine. It was branded into his brain and flowed through his veins, so that later, when he had to meet the question of serving under the flag of the United States or of obeying the will of Virginia, he drew his sword in defense of his mother commonwealth.

When the war was declared with England in 1802, Henry Lee was living in Alexandria, Va., having moved there to facilitate the education of his children. He was offered and accepted at once a major general's commission in the army. Before entering upon his duties he went to Baltimore on business, and while there visited the house of Mr. Hanson, the editor of the *Federal Republican*. "When he was about to leave he found the house surrounded by an angry mob, who were offended with the editor for his articles of opposition to the war. As his friends were threatened he determined to assist him in resisting the attack of the mob. The results of the night proved nearly fatal to General Lee, and were



disgraceful to party spirit." The injuries he received at the hands of the excited mob prevented entering upon the campaign, obliged him to go to the West Indies for his health and ultimately caused his death. While abroad, amid the fatal march of his disease, his heart turned ever to his home and family. His letters to his son, Charles Carter Lee, have been preserved and are literary models, the object being to impress religion, morality and learning upon his children, as well as to manifest his great affection for those left behind. "Fame," he writes, "in arms or art, is naught unless betrothed to virtue." And then, "You know I love my children, and how dear Smith is to me. Give me a true description of his mind, temper and habits. Tell me of Anne. Has she grown tall? And how is my last, in looks and understanding? Robert was always good, and will be confirmed in his happy turn of mind by his ever watchful and affectionate mother. Does he strengthen his native tendency?" He wanted to know, too, whether his sons rode and shot well, bearing in mind a Virginian's solicitude always that his sons should be taught to ride, shoot and to tell the truth.

In his opinion Hannibal was a greater soldier than Alexander or Cæsar, for he thought an ardent exultant of the mind, in defending menaced rights, brings forth the greatest display of genius, of which, forty-four years afterwards, his great son was an illustrious example. On June 18, 1817, from Nassau, he writes: "This is the day of the month when your dear mother became my wife, and it is not so hot in this tropical region as it was then at Shirley. Since that happy day, marked only by the union of two humble lovers, it has become conspicuous as the day our war with Great Britain was declared in Washington, and the one that sealed the doom of Bonaparte on the field of Waterloo. The British general, rising gradually from his first blow, struck in Portugal, climbed on that day to the summit of fame, and became distinguished by the first of titles, 'Deliverer of the Civilized World.' Alexander, Hannibal and Cæsar, among the ancients; Marlborough, Turenne and Frederiek, among the moderns, opened their arms to receive him as a brother in glory."

Again he tells him that Thales, Pittacus and others in Greece taught the doctrine of morality almost in our very words, "Do unto others as you would they should do unto you," and directs his son's attention to the fact that the beautiful Arab couplet, written

three centuries before Christ, announced the duty of every good man, even in the moment of destruction, not only to forgive, but to benefit the destroyer, as the sandal tree in the instant of its overthrow sheds perfume on the axe that fells it.

The principles sought to be inculcated in these admirable letters will be found running through their lives, lodged firmly in their characters and their constant reappearance in the life of one of theirs is an evidence of the impression made.

At the expiration of nearly five years, finding that there was no hope of his ultimate recovery, he determined to return to his family and friends. In January, 1818, he took passage in a New England schooner bound from Nassau to New Providence and Boston. On nearing the coast of the United States he became so much worse that he requested the captain to direct his course to Cumberland Island, lying off the coast of Georgia. He knew that his former trusted friend, General Nathaniel Greene, had an estate there and that there resided his married daughter, Mrs. James Shaw. Next to dying within the limits of his native State, he preferred to furl the flag of a celebrated career under the generous roof and kindly influence of the hospitable daughter of a beloved brother soldier. He was landed at "Dungenness," known as the most beautiful and attractive residence on the Georgia coast, and here he was lovingly received and tenderly cared for. From the window of his sick room "an extensive view of the Atlantic Ocean, of Cumberland Sound and the low-lying verdant shores of Georgia could be seen upon the one side, while upon the other lay attractive gardens and groves of oranges and olives, while grand live oaks swayed solemnly to and fro, loaded with pendant moss."

General Henry Lee's sufferings, consequent upon the injuries in Baltimore, were intense. Mrs. Shaw, General Greene's daughter, said that after his arrival at Dungenness they still continued, and that a surgical operation was proposed as offering some hope of prolonging his life; but he replied that an eminent physician, to whose skill and care during his sojourn in the West Indies he was much indebted, had disapproved a resort to the proposed operation. When his surgeon in attendance still urged it, he put an end to the discussion by saying: "My dear sir, were the great Washington alive and here, joining you in advocating it, I would still resist it." His agony at times was very great, causing irritation to overcome his rarely failing amiability. At times he would

lose self-control and order his servants and every one else from the room. At length an old woman, who had been Mrs. Greene's favorite maid, and who was then an esteemed and privileged family servant, was selected to wait upon him. The first thing General Lee did as she entered his room was to hurl his boot at her head and order her out. Entirely unused to such treatment, without saying a word, she deliberately picked up the boot and threw it back. The effect produced was marked and instantaneous. The features of the stern warrior relaxed. In the midst of his pain and anger a smile passed over his countenance, and from that moment to the day of his death he would permit no one except "Mam Sarah" to do him special service. In the presence of the angel of death he recognized and rewarded pluck and spirit in an old negro nurse, even as he did courage in the breasts of his soldiers.

Not the least among the recollections of "Dungenness" is the fact that the last days of one of the great heroes of the revolution were passed there; and when the flowers of spring could no longer charm by their beauty and fragrance, or the soft southern wind bring health and surcease of pain to the suffering and dying, it received into its hospitable bosom and folded in one long and affectionate embrace all that was mortal of the gallant, gifted and honoured dead. Henry Lee and Nathaniel Greene now sleep but a short distance apart, where the "recollections of their brave deeds and the grateful songs of the true lovers of liberty are caught up by the billows of a common ocean."

Two months after the sick soldier landed he was dead. Every token of respect was shown by the United States navy vessels in Cumberland Sound. Their colors were put at half-mast, as well as the flags at the military headquarters of the army on Amelia Island. Citizens from the adjoining islands united in paying their respects. Commodore Henley, of the navy, superintended the last details. A full army band was in attendance, and Captains Elton, Finch and Madison, and Lieutenants Fitzhugh and Ritchie, of the navy, and Mr. Lyman, of the army, acted as pall-bearers. Upon the stone marking his grave is this inscription:

Sacred to the memory of  
GEN. HENRY LEE, of Virginia,  
Obit March 25, 1818  
Ætæt 63

Not long before the War of 1861-'65 the Legislature of Virginia passed resolutions for the appointment of a committee, who, with the consent of his sons, should remove the remains to the capital city of Virginia, where a suitable monument would be erected to his memory. The commencement of hostilities prevented the accomplishment of this purpose. The sad duty had not been performed before by his sons, because one, Major Henry Lee, was abroad; one was an officer of the army, another of the navy, the fourth a lawyer, and their respective duties kept them widely apart, so that the matter, though frequently referred to in their correspondence, had never been fully arranged. The remains of "Light Horse Harry" therefore still rest amid the magnolias, cedars and myrtles of beautiful "Dungenness."

In many respects this officer was one of the most remarkable men of his day. He was a patriot and soldier, whose personal courage was tested in the fire of battle; an orator, a writer of vigorous and terse English, with a happy facility for expression rarely equalled. His book, called "The Memories of the War of '76," is the standard work to-day of events in the war in the Southern Department of the United States. Two editions of it have been exhausted, and in 1869 a third was issued by his son, Robert E. Lee, who, forgetful of his own great deed, was desirous only of perpetuating those of his distinguished father.

General Henry Lee was twice married—first to Matilda, the daughter of Philip Ludwell Lee, of Stratford, and afterwards to Anne Hill Carter, of Shirley. Four children were born from the first marriage. The eldest was named after his beloved commander, General Nathaniel Greene, and died in infancy. The second son died when ten years old. The miniature of this child he always thereafter wore, and it is still preserved in the family. The third son, Henry, was born in 1787, and died in Paris, France, January 30, 1837. He graduated at William and Mary College and served with credit in the war of 1812. He was appointed by General Jackson consul to Algiers in 1829. In journeying through Italy he met the mother of the great Napoleon, and being an admirer of his Italian campaigns, determined to write his life. The book is well written, as are all books of his.

The daughter married Bernard Carter, a brother of her step-mother. The children of General Lee's second marriage were

Algernon Sidney, Charles Carter, Sidney Smith and Robert Edward, and two daughters, Anne and Mildred. The first boy lived only eighteen months. The second, named after his wife's father, was educated at Cambridge. "We have just heard," writes his father from San Domingo, June 26, 1816, "that you are fixed at the University of Cambridge, the seminary of my choice. You will there have not only excellent examples to encourage your love and practice of virtue, but ample scope to pursue learning to its foundation, thereby fitting yourself to be useful to your country." Charles Carter Lee afterwards studied law, and was a most intellectual, learned and entertaining man. His social qualities were of the highest order; his humour inimitable; his classic wit flowed as clear as the mountain streams from a well-stored mind. He was a boon companion and the first guest invited to the banquet; around him clustered many and from his vicinity peals of laughter always resounded. His speeches, songs and stories are marked traditions in the family to-day. Gifted with a most retentive memory and being a great reader, especially history, his recollection of all he had read made him a most instructive and agreeable companion. Every subject received its best treatment from his genius. He was thoroughly conversant with biblical literature and had been known to maintain the leading part in discussions of the Bible with a roomful of ministers whose duty it was to expound it. In every drawing-room his presence was most warmly welcomed. At every festive board his song or speech was hailed with enthusiastic greeting. He was clever, generous, liberal and free-hearted: When paying visits with his brothers—and the three often went together—should wine happened to be offered, Smith and Robert, with their usual abstemiousness, would decline. Carter, however, would accept, remarking: "I have always told these boys that I would drink their share of wine provided they would keep me generously supplied." He wrote, too, with beauty and fluency of expression, and once said to his brother Robert: "The government employs you to do its fighting. It should engaged me to write your reports. I admit your superiority in the exercise of the sword and in planning campaigns. I am, however, as you know, the better writer of the two, and can make my pen mightier than your sword after the battle is over. We could thus combine and be irresistible." He died and was buried at his county seat, Windsor Forest, in



Powhatan County. The third son, Sidney Smith, entered the United States Navy at an early age and served with marked distinction in that service for thirty-four years. When Virginia withdrew from the Union of States he accepted service in the Southern Navy.

A daughter of General Robert E. Lee writes of him: "No man who ever saw him can forget his beautiful face, charming personality and grace of manner, which joined to a nobility of character and goodness of heart attracted all who came in contact with him, and made him the most generally beloved and popular of men." This was especially so with regard to women, to whom his conduct was that of a *preux chevalier*, the most chivalric and courteous, and having no daughters of his own he turned with the tenderest affection to the daughters of his brother Robert. His public service of more than thirty years in the navy of the United States is well known. He entered it as a boy of fifteen and faithfully served his country by land and sea in many climes and in many oceans. He was in Japan with Commodore Perry, commanding his flagship, when that inaccessible country was practically opened to the commerce of the world. He was Commandant of the Naval Academy at Annapolis, and afterward in command of the navy yard at Philadelphia. When the war of secession began he was stationed in Washington, but when Virginia seceded he did not hesitate to abandon the comforts and security of the present and ambitions of the future and cast his lot with his native State in a war, which from the very nature of things, there could be but little hope of a naval officer.

Uninfluenced then by hope of either fame or fortune, he sadly parted with the friends and comrades of a lifetime, including General Scott, who had been likewise devoted to him as he was to his brother, and for four years served the Southern Confederacy with the same ardor and energy and unselfishness that he had previously given to the whole country. When the end came he accepted the situation with characteristic resignation and fortitude.

The eldest daughter married Mr. William Marshall, and lived in Baltimore. When the war cloud overshadowed the land, Judge Marshall was ardently devoted to the cause of the Union. Their only son was educated at West Point and remained in the army of the United States during the war which followed. It was



natural, therefore, that the wife's sympathies in the pending struggle should be with her husband and child. For many years she was a great invalid and rarely left her couch. Sick and tortured with conflicting emotions, her days were days of trial. It is said she would smilingly agree with her husband in the hope that the armies of the United States would gain victories over the troops of the South, and then into a thousand pieces dash all former arguments by shaking her head and saying: "But after all they can't whip Robert." It was the triumph of ties of consanguinity over all other bonds. Mildred, the youngest daughter, married Mr. Edward Vernon Childe, of Massachusetts, who removed to Paris and lived there, where she died and where her children were brought up and educated. The eldest son, Edward Lee Childe, possessing an excellent education, fine literary ability and a love for the memory of his great uncle, wrote a life of him in French, which has been well received by the people of that country, and was translated into English in 1875 by Mr. George Litting, of London.

## CHAPTER IX

## WILLIS FAMILY.



WILLIS COAT-OF-ARMS

The Knights are dust.  
Their good swords rust,  
Their souls are with  
The saints, we trust.

On the records of the great University of Oxford, in England, for the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, may be seen the names of seven members of the Willis family, who matriculated during the period from 1557 to 1681. All appear to have distinguished themselves in the university, no one of them having taken less than two degrees, and they seem to have been equally prominent in subsequent life, especially in the church. Five of them received

the degree of bachelor of arts, and later that of master of arts. One became a doctor of divinity; one a bachelor of civil law; one a bachelor of medicine; one a doctor of medicine, and three of them held fellowships. Besides this as church dignitaries, three of them became vicars; two became rectors; one was a dean, and one was a canon.

The oldest of these, Francis Willis, is believed to be the progenitor of the Willises of Virginia. He is recorded as a scholar of St. John's College, Oxford, in 1557, the fifth year of the reign of Queen Mary, and subsequently he took his bachelor's and master's degrees with the Bagley prize; became president of St. John's College and vice-chancellor of the University of Oxford. He also held for different periods in his life five prominent offices in the Church of England, and after a life of constant activity and usefulness he died 1596. Of the second generation of these Willises there seems to be no record found as yet.

#### THIRD GENERATION.

III. John Willis<sup>3</sup> (——<sup>2</sup>, Francis<sup>1</sup>), gentleman, of Oxford, England, b. 1587, the thirtieth year of the reign of Queen Elizabeth, and in January, 1607, the year in which Virginia was settled, he matriculated at New College, Oxford. Here he took his bachelor's degree and held a fellowship, and a few years later he took his master's degree, probably from St. John's College, Oxford, and became rector of Orington, in Hampshire. He had a son, Hugh, and two daughters, Frances and Elizabeth.

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

IV. The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Volume XLI, p. 257, contains the will of Francis Willis, made in 1689, proved in 1691. In this he makes bequests to various relatives and refers to his cousin, Hugh Willis<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, ——<sup>2</sup>, Francis<sup>1</sup>), deceased. The term *cousin* at that time was applied also to nephews and nieces, and his cousin Mary Herren is mentioned as "the daughter of my brother, Henry Willis, deceased." His cousin Hugh Willis is not described as a son of a brother or sister, and hence we may infer he was a first cousin, and that the fathers of Hugh and Francis were brothers. Now, Hugh Willis,

according to Foster's Oxford Matriculations, b. 1625, was the son of John Willis, gentleman, of Oxford, b. 1587.

John Willis, therefore, was uncle of the Francis who made the will in 1689. This was the well known Col. Francis Willis, who came from England to York County, Va., early in the seventeenth century. This Francis Willis, as far as known, is the first of the family who emigrated to Virginia, or who became prominent in the affairs of the colony. We find him in 1642, the eighteenth year of the reign of Charles I, holding a patent for the land in York County, and in 1640 he held the important office of clerk of Charles River (York) County. It is said he was a friend of Sir John Harvey, who about that time (1640) was removed from the government of the colony. The new administration, headed by Sir Francis Wiot, was unfriendly to Harvey, and Willis, who was a high-spirited man, espoused warmly Harvey's cause. Indeed, he did not hesitate to denounce publicly the new governor, his council and the House of Burgesses.

For this audacious act Willis was deprived of his office of clerk, and prohibited from appearing as attorney in any court. He was also compelled to pay a fine of twenty pounds sterling and eight pounds more for charges, and had to stand before the courthouse door with a paper in his hat, which probably stated his offences and his punishment in detail.

The triumph of his enemies, however, was short lived, for in two years Wiot was removed from office and Sir William Berkeley, who represented the Willis party, was appointed Governor of Virginia.

Francis Willis now had his disabilities removed and filled in succession a number of high and honored positions in the colony. In 1648 he was the justice of York County, and when Gloucester was cut off from York he and Walter Gwin, in 1652, were the first delegates from Gloucester to the House of Burgesses.

He was chairman of the committee that revised the laws of the colony in 1657-'58; member of the House of Burgesses in 1658-'60, and then was a member of the governor's council continuously until 1675, the year before Bacon's Rebellion.

That year he returned to England in company with his wife, Jane. Why he left Virginia is not now known, but it is evident that they intended to reside permanently in England, for they

carried with them the family plate and a large quantity of household goods. They resided thereafter in East Greenwich Parish, in the county of Kent, where he died in 1691.

The date of his birth is not known, but his will shows that he was born in the parish of St. Foulcs, alias St. Algato, in Oxford, England. A family tradition says that he inherited his name, Francis, from his father and grandfather.

He left no issue, but mentions in his will his brothers, Henry and William, and his sister, Graee, who married Mr. Fielder, and had a son, Charles. This Col. Francis Willis, after giving legacies to his numerous kinsfolk, bequeathed the most of his property including his large estates in Ware River Parish, Gloucester Co., Va., to his nephew, Francis Willis, son of his brother, Henry, deceased.

Henry Willis<sup>4</sup>, nephew of John, of the third generation above, and brother of Francis, just described, d. before 1689, and left five children:

- I. Francis Willis<sup>5</sup>.
- II. William Willis<sup>5</sup>.
- III. Susanna Willis<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Mary Willis<sup>5</sup>. Married Mr. Herren.
- V. Alice Willis<sup>5</sup>.

#### FIFTH GENERATION.

V. Francis Willis<sup>5</sup>, the son of Henry<sup>4</sup>, inherited from his Uncle Francis, who made his will in 1689, large estates in Ware River Parish, Gloucester Co., Va., and also one thousand pounds sterling, together with the cattle, chattels, etc., etc., on the Gloucester lands, and all other property of his uncle that was not bequeathed to others. He had a brother, William, who was sole executor of his uncle's will, and three sisters, Alice, Mary (married Mr. Herren) and Susanna. He left two sons, Col. Francis Willis, Gloucester Co., Va., who married Lady Anne Rich, and Col. Henry Willis, who founded Fredericksburg, Va.

#### SIXTH GENERATION.

VI. Francis Willis<sup>6</sup> (Francis<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, —<sup>3</sup>, —<sup>2</sup>, Francis<sup>1</sup>), the son of Francis of the fifth generation; b. Ware River Parish, Gloucester Co., Va., 1690, the third year of the reign of William

and Mary. Married (1715) Lady Anne Rich, daughter of Edward Rich, and niece of Elias Rich, Esq., of Saint Paul, Covent Garden, Middlesex, whose will, dated January 29, 1719, was served in London, February 11, 1719. (See *New England Historical and Genealogical Magazine*, Vol. XLIX, p. 506.) This Francis Willis was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1748. (Burke's History), and was living in 1749, the date of a deed recorded in York Co., Va.

Anne Rich Willis, b. 1695; d. 1727. One of her ancestors was — Rich, high sheriff of London and Middlesex about 1440. His grandson was Lord High Chancellor of England, whose son, Richard, b. 1498, was made Lord Rich in 1547, and was the first of the family to be ennobled. His descendants were afterwards Earls of Warwick and Holland, but about 1758 the titles became extinct for want of male heirs. When Oliver Cromwell was installed as Lord High Protector of England, Lord Rich led the procession, and his grandson, Robert Rich. Married (1557) Frances Cromwell, the youngest daughter of the Protector. She had been at one time affianced to Charles II, but Oliver forbade the bans, saying that Charles could never forgive him for the death of his father, King Charles I. It is said that Lord Robert Rich visited Virginia in company with his brother, Sir Nathaniel Rich.

The Rich coat-of-arms is described as follows:

Gules, a chevron between three crosses, bottonnée or. Crest on a mount vert a wyvern argent. Motto: *Garde la Foy*.

Anne Rich Willis is buried in the chancel of Ware Church, Gloucester Co., Va., and the gravestone could be seen in 1897, upon which is inscribed the Willis and Rich arms empaled. Mrs. A. Willis d. June 10, 1727, 32 years old.

The descendants of Col. Francis Willis and Anne (Rich) Willis will henceforth be styled the Gloucester branch of the Willis family, and the descendants of Col. Henry Willis, of Fredericksburg, will be styled the Fredericksburg branch.

The William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. V, p. 172, gives the children of Col. Francis Willis and Anne (Rich) Willis, as follows:

- I. Francis Willis<sup>7</sup>.
- II. John Willis<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Mary Willis<sup>7</sup>. Married Lewis Burwell, President of the Virginia Council in 1736. They had issue:



- I. Lewis Burwell, of Gloucester, member of the House of Burgesses, and of the Convention of 1775-'76. Married Judith, daughter of Mann Page.
- II. A daughter. Married Peter Whiting.
- III. A daughter. Married Armistead Lightfoot.
- IV. Rebeeca Burwell, b. May 29, 1746. Married (1764) Jaquelin Ambler, the Treasurer. She was the "Belinda" of Thomas Jefferson's college days.

#### MAJOR LEWIS BURWELL, THE EMIGRANT.

A discovery which probably interested the largest number of Mr. Keith's Virginia readers was that of the ancestry of Major Lewis Burwell, the emigrant, who now has almost innumerable descendants throughout the United States. It was not the intention of Mr. Keith to present a full genealogy of the family, which has been already quite fully and with a few exceptions accurately done in the *Richmond Standard*. A careful examination of the evidences in the case leads us to believe that Mr. Keith is right in his belief that Lewis Burwell, of "King's Mill," was a son of the second marriage of Lewis Burwell<sup>2</sup> (with Martha Lear). One point in which there is some confusion in the various published accounts of the family is as to the descendants of President Lewis Burwell. He was appointed to the council, during the session of 1743-'4 (when a Burgess); became acting governor in 1750, and died in a short time. He certainly married, in 1736, Mary, daughter of Col. Francis Willis, and had, says Burke, the historian, three daughters as stated above. President Lewis Burwell<sup>1</sup> had certainly one son, Lewis Burwell<sup>2</sup>, who studied law in the Inner Temple, where his name appears matriculated as son of Lewis Burwell, Esquire, of Gloucester, Va., and who was, as Lewis Burwell, Jr., sheriff of Gloucester in 1767; Burgess in 1769-'74, and member of the Conventions of 1775-'76. His name appears frequently in the *Gazette* as having horses in races, and he was probably the Lewis Burwell, of Gloucester, who is announced by that paper in the spring of 1779 to have died. Nathaniel Burwell and Elizabeth Carter were certainly the parents of Lewis Burwell (President), but the latter married, as has been stated, Mary Willis, and certainly had children, as has been stated.

Rebecca Burwell was left an orphan at the age of ten years. President Nelson and his wife, Elizabeth Burwell, took charge of her. They had no daughter.

Major Nathaniel Burwell was eldest son of Major Lewis Burwell, who by well regulated conduct and firm integrity justly established a good reputation. He died in the forty-first year of his age, leaving behind him three sons and one daughter by Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Robert Carter, Esq., in the year of our Lord Christ 1721.

Of these the daughter, Elizabeth Burwell, married President William Nelson and was the mother of General Thomas Nelson.

One son, Lewis Burwell, was the grandfather of the late Lewis Burwell, of Richmond, etc., etc., and father of Mrs. P. B. Whiting.

The second son was Carter Burwell, of "The Grove." Married Lucy Grymes, the sister of Alice Grymes, wife of Mann Page, and daughter of the Hon. John Grymes. He was the father of Col. Nathaniel Burwell, of Carter Hall, in Frederick Co., Va.

The third son was Robert Carter Burwell, of the Isle of Wight, the father of Nathaniel Burwell, of the same county, whose children were Robert C. Burwell, of Long Branch; Frederick Burwell, and his four sisters.

Fanny Burwell was the first wife of Col. John Page of Rosewell, since Governor of Virginia.

Bishop Meade visited the old seat of the Burwells, about two miles from Rosewell, on Carter's Creek, and in full view of York River. It was formerly called Fairfield, and is so marked on Bishop Madison's map of Virginia. It has for some time past been called Carter's Creek only. The house, as appears by figures on one of the walls, was built either in 1684 or 1694. A portion of it has been taken down; the rest is still strong and likely to endure for no little time to come. The graveyard is in a pasture lot not far from the house. Being unenclosed, it is free to all the animals which belong to a Virginia farm. There is a grove of a few old trees overshadowing it. The place is a favorite resort in summer. The tombs are very massive. The slabs on which the inscriptions are engraved are the same heavy ironstone or black marble with those at Rosewell, Timberneck and Bellfield. The frame work beneath them has generally given way and they lie in various positions about the ground. A large honey-locust, around which

several of them were placed, having attained its maturity, was either blown down by the wind or struck by lightning, and fell across them, breaking one of the largest into pieces. The young shoots of the tree springing up have now themselves become trees of considerable size, and afford shade for inanimate tombs and living beasts. None of the family has for a long time owned this ancient seat.

(The first part of this sketch was taken from "The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography," Vol. II. Second part from Bishop Meade's Book, p. 352.)

#### BURWELL ARMS.

The Burwell tombs of Carter's Creek bear the arms here given: A cross saltire between four eagles' heads-erased.

#### SEVENTH GENERATION.

VII. Francis Willis<sup>7</sup> (Francis<sup>6</sup>, Francis<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, —<sup>3</sup>, —<sup>2</sup>, Francis<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. Francis Willis and Anne (Rich) Willis, according to the Abingdon Parish Register. Married (1742) Elizabeth Carter. She was a granddaughter of Robert (known as King) Carter, by his second wife, Betty Landon, and daughter of their son, Robert Carter.

Francis Willis<sup>7</sup> and Elizabeth Carter Willis had issue:

- I. Francis Willis<sup>8</sup>. Married Elizabeth, daughter of John Perrin.
- II. Robert Carter Willis<sup>8</sup> (probably the one who in 1772 laid off Frederick Co., and cut off Berkeley Co. from it, and whose will was proved in Berkeley, Oct. 21, 1783). Married Martha —, and had two sons:
  - I. Lewis Burwell Willis<sup>9</sup>.
  - II. Robert Carter Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Priscilla Willis<sup>8</sup>. Married, first, Colonel William Kennon, and married, second, David Flower, of Wilmington, N. C.
- IV. Henry Willis<sup>8</sup>, b. 1760.
- V. Elizabeth Willis<sup>8</sup>. Married Mr. McKain and had issue:
  - I. John McKain<sup>9</sup>.
- VI. Rich Willis<sup>8</sup>, d. Berkeley Co., Va.; will proved June 24, 1789.

## EIGHTH GENERATION.

VIII. Francis Willis<sup>8</sup> (Francis<sup>7</sup>, Francis<sup>6</sup>, Francis<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, —<sup>3</sup>, —<sup>2</sup>, Francis<sup>1</sup>), of White Hall, Gloucester Co., Va.; b. October, 1744; d. July, 1791, and his wife Elizabeth (Perrin) Willis, b. August, 1751; d. December, 1791; had, according to William and Mary Quarterly (Vol. V, p. 176), nine children:

- I. Francis Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- II. Elizabeth Carter Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1771. Married Henry Hiot, attorney at law; d. 1802, and was buried in St. Paul's churchyard, Norfolk.
- III. Dr. John Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. Anne Rich (Nancy) Willis<sup>9</sup>. Married (1798), as second wife, Nathaniel Burwell, of Gloucester, and had issue:
  - I. Claudia Burwell<sup>10</sup>. Married James K. Marshall, of Fauquier Co., Va., son of Chief Justice Marshall. (See Volume I.)
  - II. Mary Burwell<sup>10</sup>. Married John Jennings.
- V. Perrin Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- VI. Maria Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- VII. Molly Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- VIII. Nelson Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- IX. Elias Willis<sup>9</sup>.

Of these nine children only two left children: Anne Rich Madison<sup>9</sup> and Dr. John Willis<sup>9</sup>, who married Nelly Conway Madison, daughter of Captain Ambrose Madison (a brother of President Madison), and Mary Willis Lee, a descendant of Hancock Lee.

## NINTH GENERATION.

IX. Dr. John Willis<sup>9</sup> (Francis<sup>8</sup>, Francis<sup>7</sup>, Francis<sup>6</sup>, Francis<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, —<sup>3</sup>, —<sup>2</sup>, Francis<sup>1</sup>), lived at "Woodley," Orange Co., Va.; d. 1812 of yellow fever. Married Nelly Conway Madison; she survived him till 1865. They had issue:

- I. Col. John Willis<sup>10</sup>. Married (1838) Lucy Taliaferro Madison, daughter of Ambrose Madison and Jane Bankhead (Willis) Madison. He lived in Orange Co., Va., successively at "Rockwood," "Howard Place" and "Oakburn." His wife died 1868, and he about January or February, 1885. They are buried at "Montpelier," in the Madison graveyard.

Some time after 1840 Montpelier was bought by Mr. Henry Wood Moncure, of Richmond. His family spent the summers there; hence the friendship between Miss Catherine Ambler Moncure and Miss Letitia R. Lee. Louise Pecquet du Bellet met Col. John Willis at Col. Charles P. Moncure's, Orange Courthouse, Jan., 1885.

II. Mary Lee Willis<sup>10</sup>. Married Col. John Hancock Lee; d. leaving three daughters:

I. Nelly Lee<sup>11</sup>, d. single.

II. Lucy Lee<sup>11</sup>, d. single.

III. Letitia Ramolina Lee<sup>11</sup>. Married her cousin, Dr. Robert Madison, of the Virginia Institute. She died, leaving two daughters, who d. in the bloom of womanhood:

I. Mary Madison<sup>12</sup>.

II. Letitia Madison<sup>12</sup>.

These Lees are all buried at "Montpelier."

My mother, Catherine Ambler Moncure, who married Pierre Francois Nemours Pecquet du Bellet, was an intimate friend of Letitia R. Lee, who married Dr. Robert Madison. I will give the letter, written by Miss Lee before her marriage, to my mother, also some thoughts written by her in my mother's autograph album, when she (my mother) visited "Woodley."

The following letter is not dated, but it was evidently written before Miss Letitia R. Lee was married:

MY OWN DEAR KATE, VERY MUCH LOVED FRIEND:

Your precious letter came to my hands the 6th of December. I was spending the night at Spring Garden, after having attended Mr. Williams' marriage to one of the Misses Blair (from courtesy, dearest, I have occasionally to don a party dress). I did not even wait to take the flowers from my hair, but went on to devour the contents of your letter. Fortunately none of the family were at home, save Lucie and Mrs. Taylor, and they were asleep, so I enjoyed my midnight communing with the past and absent free of interruptions. The summer I spent at Old Point, until the terminus of the season; the remainder of it at home. I did so with a view of passing the fall in New York, but a change came o'er the spirit of my dream. My Chérie Amie there was married the same month that you were, to an Englishman, so one day I shall have two attractions across the water. She was a near relative of Lord John Metcalf.

It was with deep mortification that I saw your marriage in the papers (because, Josephine, a friend of later years, had told me every thought), and you, dear Kate, I had loved and trusted so deeply, but "n'importe,"

I forgive it all now. I sincerely congratulate you, and pray for your happiness. It had been so short a time since I received your first letter, from Paris, and not to breathe a word of your engagement to me was (I felt at the time) unkind, but to prove how entirely the past is forgiven, I will tell you of my engagement, the first of all my friends except Josephine. You ask of my conquests, Kate, dear; I believe they have been more numerous this year than ever. To tell of them (the whole truth) would occupy more space than I can allow them from a subject to me more important; then, these are not many you know:

Wm. Williams laid his hand and heart at my feet. He is a young lawyer in Williamsburg. Now, you remember him, do you not? I think dear Willie [Willie Moncure, Kate's brother] used to like him. You told me to tell you candidly of myself—I shall do so. I shall tell you little things, that trifles may strengthen memory's chain.

I am engaged to Robert Madison, and expect to plight my holy troth sometime in May next. I cannot write you, Kate, of the past. Should we ever meet again I will tell you all, but of him I must now speak.

Long before I knew you, dearest, when I was "a wee girl," and he but a few years my senior, he saw and loved me. Since then his love has increased and strengthened with advancing manhood, enabling him to surmount all obstacles that came in his path. At the University he took first honors; at Williamsburg he graduated in less time than any student that ever matriculated there; in Philadelphia the professors told him his diploma was ready for him without examining him; in Petersburg, unaided, he has placed himself at the head of his profession there, making hoary heads bow to his genius. He has declined an assistant professorship at the University twice, and is eagerly looking forward to place his name first on the list of fame. Should he not accept any professorship in this country in two years, he will then go to Paris for the medical lectures, and take me with him. Then, Kate, darling, I will see you again; but it is looking far into the future, is it not? I have written you briefly and truly of my choice, now what do you think of it? You letters will be, as mine must be, sacred to friendship and thee. Write me your thoughts, even if they be in disapproval; no other eye shall see them, Kate, even if you do love memoirs; and I sing "*con expressione*," "*Robert, c'est toi que j'aime*."

Now I am going to New York to choose my "trousseau." I wish it very elegant and "*recherché*," and will you not write me "*instantér*" and tell me what to get, how to act, how to dress; how to arrange everything, etc., etc. Just as you would to an own sister, write me everything. My arrangements more than four months beforehand are not defined, as you may imagine, but I have some idea of going to Havana, if political affairs allow it, with some of my Northern friends, and if so, have much to be crowded into a short space, as I will probably be absent until March. My present intention is to be married at "Woodley," and have the company at papa's. His present residence, Litchfield, is only half a mile from here [Woodley]. I expect we shall have a very large entertainment, as we



have both friends at a distance that we would wish to be present. How much I would like you and "et cara sposa" to be here, Kate. Is it possible? Do think of it. Will you not? Do, please, think of it!!

Write me about the style, price, etc., etc., of everything, will you, dear Kate? and do not think I trespass too much on the rights of friendship. You know everything is second in New York, both in beauty and fashion, to Paris, and then I would like to know if laces, etc., etc., are as expensive there. I have a cousin in Paris now, Madame Achille Murat, but I think "ma belle Cousine," a "passée" beauty is rather too fond of finery and furbelows for my plain taste, or rather simple taste, and you always know what is pretty and exquisite. If it gives you trouble, do not think more of what I have asked. Kate, perhaps it is asking too much of you. And you love Nemours very much, Kate! How much I would like to see him. Tell him, if you like, that I already feel much interest in one who has become the possessor of such a treasure as your heart. Tell me more of your marriage; do not think of being so far from me, only think of the spirits communing. Write as you would speak. Lucie sends you much love. She came out at Old Point quite brilliantly. Is still "fancy free." I do not know where she will pass the winter, probably in Washington. Give my love to the little boys [my Moncure uncles] when you write to them, to Henry, and my little Johnny! [Dr. Moncure, at Marine Hospital Station, Ship Island, 1905]. Tell him not to forget me. I shall ever feel interested in them. I am so glad you are quite well again. You should be so thankful, Kate, for such a blessing is health. May it lead you to higher, holier thoughts, as preparation for that bright world, where I trust to meet you and yours. Oh! Kate, if you knew how that holy religion I professed when but a child in years has strengthened my weak footsteps, plucked life's thorns and shielded me in life's temptations, pouring balm on every sorrow, you would think, as I do, the church a nursing mother. May we yet kneel in Communion together!

Write me of your happiness, your sorrows, in weal or woe; my sympathy is yours, friend of my happy days. I see your uncle, Charlie Moncure, but seldom, hear of him often. The Wood Park family are both very well. They have a fine boy you know. I am so little in Orange that I have given up any pretension to visiting here. Much of my poetry has been published. Must I send you some in a letter? Grandma and my mother send love and congratulations to you, Lucie a kiss. Present me kindly to your husband. Forget not your own true friend.

LETITIA R. LEE.

The above letter was written from Richmond, Va., December 18. I presume 1852, as my mother was married September 15, 1852, in Paris, France. I have found above date on envelope.

The following are the verses sent my mother written by Letitia R. Lee:

MISS KATE A. MONCURE.

The rose is loveliest in its bud,  
 When bursting into bloom.  
 The heart is brightest, ere it hath  
 Been shaded once by a gloom.

—*L. R. Lee.*

MISS KATE A. MONCURE.

Could I write on thy heart, as this page, so fair,  
 I would graven my name in letters there.  
 I would ask thee, perchance, in an idle hour,  
 To yield thee, then, to memory's power;  
 To leave, for a moment, thy sunny home,  
 And let thy thoughts away to me roam;  
 I would ask, when I meet, to find thee, as now,  
 The warmth in thy heart, the smile on thy brow;  
 I would ask that time should bring no change  
 As it passes o'er thee in its range.  
 How often the friendship we deem  
 So sacred in youth, in age doth seem  
 As a vision gone, a passing ray,  
 That gilded the close of some sunny day.  
 How is it, that friends who part in tears  
 Oft meet as strangers in after years?  
 Does the youthful heart grow cold?  
 Is it fashioned again in another mold?  
 I know not, but I'll wish for thee  
 That the future ever bright may be,  
 That round thy path true friends may cling.  
 True be the love which to thee they bring.  
 Thy steps with flowers, fair, I would strew,  
 And pluck the thorn from the rose for you,  
 And oft, when I kneel in prayer,  
 I'll think of thee; then I'll remember thee there,  
 That when the cord of this short life is riven,  
 I may meet thee again, I may meet thee in heaven.

Woodley, Sept. 9th.

—*Letitia Ramolina Lee.*

## TENTH GENERATION.

X. Col. John Willis<sup>10</sup> (John<sup>9</sup>, Francis<sup>8</sup>, Francis<sup>7</sup>, Francis<sup>6</sup>, Francis<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, —<sup>3</sup>, —<sup>2</sup>, Francis<sup>1</sup>) son of Dr. John Willis and Nelly Conway Madison. Married (about 1838) Lucy Taliaferro Madison, daughter of Ambrose Madison and Jane Bankhead (Willis) Madison. He lived in Orange Co., successively at "Rock

Wood," "Howard Place" and "Oakburn." His wife d. 1868; he d. 1885. They had issue:

- I. Mary Lee Willis<sup>11</sup>, b. 1840.
- II. Jane Champe Willis<sup>11</sup>. Married Major John Richardson, of Clarke Co., Va.; moved to Savannah, Missouri, and had issue:

- I. Mary Jane Richardson<sup>12</sup>.
- II. Lucy Lee Richardson<sup>12</sup>.
- III. Ambrose Willis Richardson<sup>12</sup>.
- IV. Alice Richardson<sup>12</sup>.
- III. John Willis<sup>11</sup>. Married (1867) Lucy Robinson, d. in a few years. Issue:

I. Shepherd Willis<sup>12</sup>.  
John married, second (1870), Mary Lupton, of Clarke Co., Va., and had issue:

- II. Lucy Madison Willis<sup>12</sup>.
- III. Bessie Willis<sup>12</sup>.
- IV. John Byrd Willis<sup>12</sup>.
- V. Anna Scott Willis<sup>12</sup>.
- VI. William Taylor Willis<sup>12</sup>.

IV. Claudia Marshall Willis<sup>11</sup>. Married (1869) Wm. Wallace Scott, son of Col. Garrett Scott, of Orange, and since 1897 State Librarian in Richmond, Va. I met Mr. Scott June 1904. He was educated at the Virginia Military Institute and the University of Virginia; practiced law in Lexington and Gordonsville, and was for a time private secretary to his kinsman, Hon. John S. Barbour, of the U. S. Senate. They had issue:

- I. Philip Henshold Scott<sup>12</sup>.
- II. Claudia Dennis Scott<sup>12</sup>.
- III. Robert Madison Scott<sup>12</sup>.
- IV. Ellen Scott<sup>12</sup>.
- V. Garrett Scott<sup>12</sup>.
- VI. Wickliff Scott<sup>12</sup>.
- VII. Caroline Barbour Scott<sup>12</sup>.
- VIII. John Scott<sup>12</sup>.
- V. Nelly Conway Willis<sup>11</sup>. Married (1877) William Byrd Willis<sup>10</sup>, son of Richard Henry Willis<sup>9</sup> and Lucy Mary (Nalle) Willis. Issue:

- I. Jane Bailey Willis<sup>12</sup>, b. 1879.
- II. Lewis Byrd Willis<sup>12</sup>, b. 1884.
- III. Mary Lec Willis<sup>12</sup>, b. 1886.
- VI. Lucy Cornelia Willis<sup>11</sup>, b. 1851. Married (1880) Charles Morris, of Caroline Co., Va.; d. 1889. No issue.
- VII. Ambrose Madison Willis<sup>11</sup>, moved to San Francisco, Cal. Married (there) Maude Bagley, a native of New Orleans. Issue:
  - I. David Madison Willis<sup>12</sup>.
- VIII. Andrew Johnson Willis<sup>11</sup>, became an Episcopal clergyman. Married Margaret ——. Issue:
  - I. Mitchell Willis<sup>12</sup>.
  - II. Hunter Willis<sup>12</sup>.
  - III. Margaret Willis<sup>12</sup>.

I have given descendants of Francis Willis<sup>7</sup>, son of Francis and Anne (Rich) Willis. I will give descendants of his brother, John Willis<sup>7</sup>, later on.

I give the following from the manuscript of Col. Byrd C. Willis, beginning with his introduction:

To my children, grandchildren and great-grandchildren, as may have any curiosity to know something of their ancestors. In undertaking to transcribe these pages I have perhaps overrated my ability, as I am not remarkable for industry or steadily pursuing any object to the consummation; therefore, the folks that are to come need not be surprised if I stop short at the end of this page. I make no apology for blunders or omissions, crasures or interlineations. As these are intended only for the eyes of my own people and expressly for their gratification, they will readily acquit the old fellow of anything like vanity in the introduction of that obtrusive promise I frequently make in the course of these pages. Indeed, vanity had no agency whatever in the creation of them; they were simply to gratify a curiosity (not an unworthy one I hope) that might be inherited from me, who had often wished that my father or grandfather had taken the same trouble for my particular satisfaction.

'Tis said of my grandfather, Col. Henry Willis<sup>6</sup>, of Fredericksburg, Va., that he courted his three wives when maids, and married them all when widows. He was a stout coarse man, perhaps I should have said a blunt man, more likely to succeed with the

latter than the former. He had children by all. His sons by first and second wife died without male heirs. One of them left a daughter, the late Mrs. Daingerfield<sup>8</sup>, of Coventry, Spottsylvania Co., Va., the grandmother of my wife; his daughters married a Lee, a Lewis and a Green. [One married a Clayton, marginal note in the original.]

Mr. Lee lived in Fauquier Co., Va.; Mr. Lewis settled in Granville Co., North Carolina; the Cobbs, of Georgia, are descendants of his. Mr. Green went to Kentucky, had two sons, Willis and William, the father of Duff, the present editor of the Washington Telegraph.

My father, Lewis Willis<sup>7</sup>, the first of that name, was by his last wife; her maiden name was Washington, full sister to "Old Gus," the father of Gen'l George Washington, first president of these United States. She had been married twice before, first, to a Mr. Lewis, no issue; second, Mr. Gregory, by whom she had three daughters, married to as many Thorntons.

My father was her only son, and she named him Lewis, in honor of her first husband. My grandfather was a careless and extravagant man. The property was bought in after his death, as it was offered for public sale by my grandmother, who by dint of industry and economy had amassed enough to save the property adjoining the town of Fredericksburg, afterward called, "Willis Hill." She soon afterward died, leaving my father an orphan at the age of twelve. His estate was well cared for but his education was neglected; he was a strong-minded man, cautious and timid in bargaining, lest he should embarrass himself, a timidity I have inherited my full portion of, for I am most unhappy when I owe money till it is paid. He was a schoolmate of Gen'l Washington, who was two years his senior—one born in 1732, and the other 1734. He spoke of the General's industry and assiduity at school as very remarkable: whilst his brothers and the other boys at play-time, were at bandy or other games, he was behind the door engaged in eyphering. But one instance of youthful ebullition is handed down, whilst at that school, and that was his romping with one of the largest girls; this was so unusual that it excited no little astonishment among the other lads. My father grew up a strong and powerful man, and married, at an early age, a Miss Mary Champe, a daughter of Mr. Champe, then a merchant

at Lamb's Creek, King George Co., Va. His first child was a daughter, Mildred<sup>8</sup>, named after his mother. Married Landon Carter, of "Cleve," same county. She left three daughters:

- I. One died<sup>9</sup>, unmarried.
- II. Daughter Willis<sup>9</sup>. Married Robert Mercer.
- III. Daughter Willis<sup>9</sup>. Married Gen'l John Minor. \*Issue:
  - I. Mary Berkely Minor. Married Gen'l John Minor.

[Descendants, Carter Family, Chapter VIII.]

His second child was a son, John W. Willis<sup>8</sup>, who was sent, as was the fashion of those days, to Scotland to school, but though not deficient in genius, he was a wild fellow, ran away and my father's agent was a long time catching him to send back to America. On his return, the old man, not knowing what to do with him, permitted him to join an exploring party to the West. Kentucky was then a wilderness. They took up large bodies of fine land, but my brother never could tell where his was. Finally the Indians scattered the whole party; some were killed, some straggled in and reported all murdered, whilst my brother and three others got into an Indian canoe, on Kentucky River, and descended the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers to New Orleans, then in possession of the French or Spaniards—the first time these rivers ever were navigated by white men (Frenchmen perhaps excepted).

On my brother's setting out, my father had sewed up in his belt three doubloons, with injunctions to hold on to them till the last necessity. On their reaching New Orleans none of the party had a cent but him; the belt was ripped open, the money taken out and given to one of their own men, who pretended he could make himself understood in the town, to purchase necessities. The rascal never made his appearance again, nor could they hear anything of him. My brother agreed with the Captain of a vessel to work his passage to New York; thence he returned afoot to Virginia. About this time the war of the Revolution broke out. He entered the army as a Lieutenant, and served the whole war to the capture of Cornwallis, at Yorktown. As he advanced in life he became very fat, weighed at one time 345 to 444. He was a man of inexhaustible humor, full of anecdotes and greatly beloved. Everybody remembers Major Jack Willis, poor fellow! He married an heiress and died insolvent, leaving three daughters. They were unfortunate in their marriages, their husbands being Hoomes,



Sears, and Epperson. Major John Willis<sup>8</sup> married Ann Beale; she d. 1799. Ann Beale's parents were Elizabeth Madison (sister of Col. James and aunt of President Madison), and Col. Richard Beale. Major John Willis was vestryman of St. George's Church, Fredericksburg, Va., 1785.

Mrs. Sears<sup>9</sup> lived in the upper part of Orange Co., Va., in [what is now Greene Co., Va.]. Her daughter, Mary Sears<sup>10</sup>, married John H. Penny, and they lived near Jacksonville, Randolph Co., Mo. There Mary (Sears) Penny died, leaving issue:

- I. William Willis Penny<sup>11</sup>. Married Mrs. Morris, of Howard Co., Mo.; d. leaving issue:
  - I. George Penny<sup>12</sup>.
  - II. William Penny<sup>12</sup>.
  - II. John Whitaker Penny<sup>11</sup>, lived in Helena, Ark., and married there.
- III. Mary Penny<sup>11</sup>. Married Benjamin F. Hammeth, of Huntsville, Mo., and had issue.

John Whitaker Sears<sup>10</sup>, son of Mrs. Sears above, lived also in Randolph Co., Mo. Married late in life; d. without issue.

Of my second brother (3d child), Harry<sup>8</sup>, I remember but little. He was a very handsome man, without superfluous flesh of the rest of us. He married two or three times. He left one daughter, who married Gen'l McComos of the State of Mississippi. Henry Willis was a captain in the Revolution, and received four thousand acres of land for his three years' service. He was Second Lieutenant Continental Artillery, March 1, 1778; resigned November 18, 1778. He spent his estate in Virginia and came early to the South. I have heard that in passing between Georgia and Mississippi he was taken by the Indians and tied to a stake and his life only saved by the interference of a young squaw.

My sister Jane<sup>8</sup> married Mr. Alexander; she died leaving one child<sup>9</sup>, and he died before he married.

My sister Mary<sup>8</sup> was the fifth child of Col. Lewis Willis. Married Mr. Battaile. She died leaving two sons and two daughters.

Her oldest son, John Battaile<sup>9</sup>, married Mary Daingerfield, granddaughter to the old lady of Coventry, a cousin to my wife.

Her eldest daughter<sup>9</sup> married R. Hoomes, of the Bowling Green, who left her with a large family very poor.

Her next daughter<sup>9</sup> married Muscoe Garnett, of Essex Co., Va. They have a very large family, thirteen children.

Her other son, Lewis Battaile<sup>9</sup>, married, first, Miss Battaile, daughter to Sam Battaile, late of Prospect Hill, who left one daughter.

Lewis Battaile<sup>9</sup> married, second, Miss Thornton, of Mattapony.

The sixth child of Col. Lewis Willis was my brother William Champe Willis<sup>8</sup>, commonly known as "Gentleman Billy," b. 1770; d. 1843. Married (1796) Luey Taliaferro, of Blenheim, Caroline Co., Va.; d. fifteen years ago (1812) leaving a large family. They lived at "Willis Grove" (now "The Retreat"), in Orange Co., Va. They had issue:

- I. Lewis Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- II. Luey Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Richard Henry Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1801.
- IV. Jane Bankhead Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1803.
- V. John Whitaker Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- VI. William Taliaferro Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- VII. Mary Champe Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- VIII. Robert Willis<sup>9</sup>.

Lewis Willis<sup>9</sup>. Married Elizabeth Madison, daughter of Gen'l Wm. Madison. They died early, leaving one child:

- I. Francis Willis<sup>10</sup>. Married John H. Lee, of "Litchfield," Orange Co., Va. Issue:
  - I. Mary Willis Lee<sup>11</sup>, b. 1845; d. young.
  - II. Lizzie Madison Lee<sup>11</sup>, b. 1847. Married Wm. A. Bragg, of Petersburg, Va. They have three grown children:
    - I. Hancock Lee Bragg<sup>12</sup>.
    - II. Calvin Bragg<sup>12</sup>.
    - III. Frances Bragg<sup>12</sup>.
  - III. Lewis Herman Lee<sup>11</sup>, b. 1849. Married (1876) Georgia G. Hansbrough, of Orange Co., Va.; d. leaving one daughter:
    - I. Mary Madison Lee<sup>12</sup>.

Lucy Willis<sup>9</sup> married Armistead Hoomes, Caroline Co., Va.; d. August 1, 1814, without issue.

Richard Henry Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1801, at "Willis Grove"; d. 1886, Amherst Courthouse, Va. Married (1831) Luey Mary Nalle, daughter of Martin Nalle, of Stephensburg, Culpeper Co., Va.; d. 1855, and is buried at "Willis Grove." Mr. Willis d. 1863, "Sunny Side." They had issue:

- I. Lewis Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. 1832.
- II. Thomas Barbour Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. 1834.
- III. William Byrd Willis<sup>10</sup>.
- IV. Nellie Madison Willis<sup>10</sup>.
- V. Mary Champe Willis<sup>10</sup>.
- VI. Fanny Branch Willis<sup>10</sup>.
- VII. Rosalie Carter Willis<sup>10</sup>.
- VIII. Lucy Taliaferro Willis<sup>10</sup>.
- IX. Richard Henry Willis<sup>10</sup>.
- X. Lizzie Burns Willis<sup>10</sup>.
- XI. Philip Pendleton Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. 1855.

Jane Bankhead Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1803, d. 1862; buried at Montpelier, Orange Co., Va. Married Ambrose Madison of "Woodbury Forest," Madison Co., Va., and had issue:

- I. Luey Taliaferro Madison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1820.
- II. Mary Frances Madison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1822.
- III. William Willis Madison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1826.
- IV. James Ambrose Madison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1828.
- V. Eliza Lewis Madison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1834.
- VI. Leila Bankhead Madison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1837.

John Whitaker Willis<sup>0</sup> settled in Grenada Co., Miss., and married a widow Boydin, née Starke, South Carolina. Issue:

- I. Luey Willis<sup>10</sup>, married Tyson, and had issue.
- II. Robert Preston Willis<sup>10</sup>, married Jane Bell; had issue.
- III. Lilly Willis<sup>10</sup>, married James Bell; had issue.
- IV. Randolph Benton Willis<sup>10</sup>.
- V. John Willis<sup>10</sup>, married Eugenia Williams.
- VI. Sarah Willis<sup>10</sup>, married Mr. Williams.

Dr. William Taliaferro Willis<sup>9</sup> went to Alabama with his brother John<sup>9</sup>, and married there a widow Alston (née Starke). He settled in Grenada Co., Miss., near Graysport. Issue:

- I. Amanda Byrd Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. 1834. Married Robert Henry Galladay, a prominent lawyer of Coffeeville, Miss., and had issue.
- II. Gen'l Randolph Benton Willis<sup>10</sup>, of Willis Grove, Grenada Co., Miss., b. 1836; served during the Confederate War; was severely wounded, and left for dead on the field of Gettysburg, Penn.; was taken to Baltimore, and afterwards exchanged. After the war, he was made a briga-

dier-general of Mississippi State troops; married, 1870, his cousin, Rosalie Carter Willis, of "Willis Hall," Orange Co., Va., who had married him when recovering from his wounds. They left issue.

Mary Champe Willis<sup>o</sup> married Mann Page, a lawyer of Orange County Court-House, Va. Had issue.

Robert Willis<sup>o</sup>, b. 1810, married his cousin, Lucy Taliaferro, and had one son. Married, second, Fanny Lee, of Fauquier Co., Va.

Before I proceed in this desultory account of my family, it may not be amiss to give as far as I can a history of the Washingtons.

A Mr. John Washington emigrated from England and settled in Virginia; he left three children, viz.:

John, who lived at the mouth of Nachodock Creek (on lower side), King George Co., Va. The property was afterwards sold by the family of Thacker Washington, whom he, John, married. I can't now recollect, but I believe a Warner, as that was a favorite name amongst the descendants. The next was Augustine, at Wakefield; where Gen'l Washington was born. I know not the name of his first wife; but the second was a Ball, from Lancaster, or Northumberland in the Northern Neck, Va. She was the mother of the General and also the mother of Mrs. Fielding Lewis, the grandmother of my wife. The third and last was Mildred, my grandmother. I am inclined to believe the first Mr. John Washington must have been accompanied to this country (Va.) by a brother, from the following circumstances:

When the second wife of my grandfather Willis died (she was Mildred Brown when he married her), my grandmother, then the widow Gregory, wept immediately upon hearing of it. Upon some one's remarking that it was strange she grieved so much for a cousin, she replied that the death of her relative was not the sole cause of her grief, though she loved her dearly, as they were cousins and bore the same name; but that she knew that Old Harry Willis would be down to see her and she did not know what to do with him. The sequel showed she knew the man: in a little more than a month the Old Cock sat himself down before the door, and commenced a siege; she held out for some time, but was compelled finally to capitulate; so that in less than two months after the death of his second wife, Mildred Brown (formerly Washington),

he married Mildred Gregory, formerly Washington and sister to the aforesaid John and Augustine. In due time, my father Lewis Willis was the first of this union.

I shall now go back to my immediate relations:

After the death of his first wife, my father married the widow of his brother-in-law, John Champe; her maiden name was Anne Carter, from Cleve, also sister to his son-in-law, Landon Carter. This lady had been twelve years the wife of Mr. Champe and had from him no children; yet, in a few years after she became the wife of my father, she was the mother of three children. The eldest attained three years; his name was Charles Lewis. Upon his death, his name was added to mine, which was to have been simply Byrd, and so it became Byrd Charles Lewis. As I grew up, I got tired of so much name and dropped the Lewis, for which my father never forgave me. My mother was a little proud of her descent from the Byrds of Westover and determined to commemorate it by giving me the name. The father of my mother, Charles Carter, of Cleve, was the son of Robert, commonly called King Carter, from his immense wealth.

As the only child of my mother, who had long despaired of such a blessing, I was much petted indeed. The poor lady did not know where to stop, for she persisted in treating me as a child, when I began to think myself nearly a man, and I fear in repelling these infantile caresses, I was not always mindful of the respect due to her. I had no cause to tax my father with being overfond of me; indeed, it was his disposition to conceal rather than display partiality, if he ever indulged in such a feeling, and I had never any reason to believe that I was ever its object, from having to launch out much money for the education of my eldest brother, to little purpose; my father was slow to expend much upon his other sons, so that the cheapness, not the excellence of schools, was the best recommendation. As he advanced in life, he had great faith in the rod; never failed to recommend its application upon all occasions. It was usual, when he entered us at school, to say to the master: "I am a most unfortunate man; none of my children love their books; they are a stiff-necked, perverse generation, and nothing but flogging will do for them." The masters, in those days, generally took him at his word, and we suffered accordingly. The consequence was, we hated school from the bottom of our hearts.

At the early age of 19, November 1800, I married Mary Willis Lewis, the daughter of Major George Lewis, of Marmion; he was the nephew of Gen'l Washington, and belonged to his suite, in the War of the Revolution. My wife's mother was named Catherine, daughter of Mrs. Mary Daingerfield, of Coventry, whom I have had occasion to mention before, so that she was related to me by father and mother. This match was laid off when we were infants and I believe the first wish of my mother's heart was gratified upon its taking place. She lived to name our two oldest children, Lewis and Catherine, and died in November, 1804. After our marriage, we lived a short time in Orange, near the Court House. We then came to Willis Hill, near Fredericksburg. I was an idle fellow, fond of fox hunting, racing, and convivial parties; paid no attention to plantation business, and but for the profits of my race-course and the sale of fire wood, would have run through the girths long before I did. In 1825, finding that things were getting worse and worse, I sold off, paid off, and came off to this Territory (Florida). But I anticipate.

My wife never had a sister, and but two brothers, Samuel and Daingerfield; they have large families. The first married, Miss Attoway Miller of Port Royal and upon her death a Miss Maria Boyles of Kentucky, to which State he had gone after the British had burnt his home and taken away his negroes, 1812-14.

Daingerfield married Miss Lucy Pratt of King George Co., Va., and resides at Marmion.

I will now leave the manuscript of Col. Byrd C. Willis, and add a few notes of himself and immediate family:

Byrd C. Willis<sup>8</sup>, was b. August 27, 1781, d. October 1, 1846. Married, November, 1800, Mary Willis Lewis.

Issue:

- I. Lewis Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. September 1801. Married, 1st, Lucie Hackley, daughter of Richard S. Hackley; 2nd, Harriet Randolph, daughter of Thomas Eston Randolph, and she d. without issue; 3rd, Hester Savage, of the Eastern Shore, Md., she was drowned at Pensacola, Florida, October 3, 1835, leaving two children, Byrd Willis, and Haywood Willis<sup>10</sup>.



- II. Catherine Daingerfield Willis<sup>o</sup>, b. August 17, 1803. Married (1821) Atchinson Gray, of Travelers Rest, who d. in less than a year; married, 2nd, Achilles Murat, ex-Princee of Naples.
- III. Anne Carter Willis<sup>o</sup>, b. Feb. 5, 1805. Married Thomas H. Botts, of Fredericksburg, Va., who d. 1827, leaving issue:
  - I. Lawson Botts.
- IV. John Willis<sup>o</sup>, b. April 26, 1807; entered U. S. Navy, and resigned after six years' service. Was afterwards appointed Inspector of Charlotte Harbour, and d. of bilious fever, at Key West, 1833.
- V. George Willis<sup>o</sup>, b. 1809. Cadet at West Point; afterwards surveyor of public lands in Florida, then deputy collector at Charlotte Harbour. Married (1833) Martha P. W. Fauntleroy, of Middlesex Co., Va.; she d. in 1839, leaving three children. Mr. Willis married, 2nd (1841), Sally Smith, of Fredericksburg, Va. He d. at Pensacola, Florida, April 10, 1861, leaving eight children, two by his first wife, six by the last.
- VI. Mary Byrd Willis<sup>o</sup>, b. November 23, 1813. Married Commodore Alexander J. Dallas, U. S. Navy. He d. leaving three children.
- VII. Ellen Attoway Willis<sup>o</sup>, b. March 23, 18—, married, 1st, Samuel Duval, 183—, d. —; married, 2nd, W. H. Broekenbrough, formerly of University, Va., — then in Tallahassee, Florida.
- VIII. Name unknown.
- IX. The last and ninth child of Col. Byrd C. Willis, b. October 15, 1827, Achilles Murat Willis, married Edwina Ambler. They resided in Rappahannock Co., Va., but are now (July, 1905) living at Beaver, Oklahoma.

I will copy a newspaper article sent to me by Mrs. Achilles Murat Willis:

#### OUR FIRST PRINCESS.

The day upon which Miss Anna Gould became the Comtesse de Castellane was the seventy-fourth anniversary of the day when the American Republic first yielded a daughter to a titled foreigner and hailed her as its first princess.

That distinction fell to the lot of Mrs. Catherine Grey, a niece of George Washington, and a native of Virginia, who married the eldest son of the King of Naples, Joachim Murat, greatest of cavalry leaders, as Napoleon always called him.

Murat's wife, Queen Caroline, Napoleon's youngest sister, had fled from Naples in the early part of May, 1815, after her husband's defeat in the battle of Tolentino, which placed his kingdom in Austrian hands. For some months previous to this misfortune Caroline had been regent, and, therefore, in a position to line her pockets well. She took 3,000,000 francs with her to Trieste, and her four children, the eldest one, Achilles, then being in his 14th year.

Queen Caroline received the news of her husband's execution when living quietly at the Villa Campo Marzo, on the Adriatic. Shortly afterwards she assumed the title of Countess di Lipona, and moved to Frohsdorf, not far from Vienna, having placed herself entirely under Austrian protection—very strange, when her husband, as well as her brother Napoleon, had been victims of Hapsburg perfidy; and at Frohsdorf Murat's children grew up, healthy in body and mind, receiving an education that was very liberal. Achilles having attained his majority, decided to follow the example of his uncle, Joseph Bonaparte, and emigrate to America. He landed in New York in the summer of 1821, and as plain Achille Murat applied immediately for his first papers. Then he set about looking for an "opening" and, recognizing that his commercial instinct was not well developed, decided to seek his fortune as a pioneer of the New South, in wonderful Florida, that had just been acquired by the United States.

He had about 50,000 francs and employed part of this sum to buy 300 acres of land in Jefferson County, between Waccissa and Tallahassee, naming the farm Lipona, in his mother's honour. The log cabin, which he erected with the aid of kind neighbors, he styled "Econhattie." It differed in no wise from those of the "Crackers," as the Florida farmers were called, containing only a grass mattress, stove, and primitive cooking utensils. As a pillow Achille used a leather valise, stuffed with fine linen, and an extra suit or two, which he never put on his back. The only luxuries he indulged in were whiskey, and a good deal of that, and tobacco. A noble gun, powder and lead served as his chief royal provisioners and purveyors. Soon he acquired a number of slaves, and began to develop his domain, utilizing part for raising sugar and part as a cattle ranch. When, in 1824, the capital city, Tallahassee, was laid out, the young farmer gave all the time he could spare to the undertaking. No wonder his name was first mentioned as Alderman of the New City; in 1825 he was elected Mayor; a year later the President named him Postmaster.

Settlers arrived from all parts of the United States. Among the newcomers was Col. Byrd C. Willis, of Willis Hill, near Fredericksburg, Va., and his family, consisting of a wife, Mary Lewis, niece of the great George Washington, and a pretty daughter.

The Willises and a large number of friends, including Achille, had gone to Fort Louis, near Tallahassee, on a picnic. As there were no car-

riages in those days, the ladies wore their stoutest shoes, the better to overcome the hardships of travel over primitive roads. Pretty Kate had donned a pair of gaiters that were much too large for her tiny feet, and either by accident, or as the result of deft equestrianism, managed to lose one of them. This was Achille's opportunity. Picking up the clumsy shoe, he filled it brimful of whiskey and quaffed the eau-de-vie, as he was wont to call our national "tipple," "to the health of Virginia's fairest daughter, dear Kate." Little Mrs. Gray could not withstand such gallant pleading, and when the party reached the fort, her betrothal to Achille Murat, once Prince of the two Sicilies, was announced. The Mayor of Washington made them man and wife on July 20, 1826, and John Quincy Adams, President of the United States, was the first to kiss the bride.

Princess Kate proved to be an expert in her needle-work, and with pardonable pride decorated all her table and bed linen with the great crest of the royal house of Naples. Aside from that, the furnishing and embellishments of Eeonhattie were severely plain and unostentatious.

Achille Murat was an ideal husband. He improved his property, added to his modest fortune and began to study law. He was admitted to the bar and joined Counselor Garmier in New Orleans in practice. The firm flourished and Murat was enabled to buy with his earnings a sugar plantation at Baton Rouge, La., where he spent part of the winter with his wife, entertaining largely in his own peculiar, not to say eccentric, style.

Business reverses forced Murat to abandon the plantation after several years, and the couple returned to Florida. At the outbreak of the Seminole War, he took to the field as General Call's Adjutant, accompanied by the ever-faithful Kate. Still later, he visited Europe with his better half and assumed the Colonelship of the Belgian "Foreigners Legion," remaining two years. Then, after a visit to his cousin, Louis, afterward Napoleon III, in London.

Achille and Kate returned to America, making their home in St. Augustine.

His mother's death, in 1839, called Murat again to Europe, whence he returned loaded with family heirlooms. (Many of these heirlooms are in the possession of Mrs. Achille Murat Willis, Beaver, Oklahoma.) His fortune was, however, not materially increased by the inheritance. Murat devoted the rest of his life, which he spent on the estate of Eeonhattie, to literary pursuits, using his facile pen to the best interest of his adopted country. His "Exposition of the Principles of the Republican Government in America" achieved, among others of his works, wonderful popularity, and was translated into half a dozen foreign languages.

Murat died in his forty-seventh year. The American Princess, his widow, had made such a brilliant impression while abroad, that Napoleon III sent for "his dear cousin Kate" (the same spoken of by Miss L. R. Lee, in a letter to Mrs. Peequet du Bellet), shortly after ascending the throne. He offered her one of the imperial castles of France as a residence and treated her in all respects like a Princess of the blood. But though George Washington's grand niece was not opposed to courtly state, she would rather

have established it in her own country than among strangers, and after a year's residence in Paris she returned to Bellevue, her farm near Tallahassee, which is still known as the "Murat Place," and set up a fine establishment. All her slaves henceforth wore the livery of the Tuileries, while her parlors glistened with reminiscences of the first Empire. Some of the royal bric-a-brac may still be seen in the neighborhood of Bellevue, Econhattie, and Tallahassee.

The Princess Murat, a thorough Southern woman, during the Civil War did everything in her power to interest her cousin, Napoleon, in the lost cause, but failed. When she felt that her end was near, she had herself carried to her old estate in Jefferson County, where she spent her honeymoon with the son of Naples' King. There she died August 6, 1867.

Mrs. Catherine D. Murat,\* the second child of Col. Byrd C. Willis, was born in 1803, and at the early age of thirteen married Atchison Gray, son of John Gray, of "Traveler's Rest." Atchison Gray died in less than 12 months after his marriage, and his child, born after his death, died also. The young widow went with her father and mother to Florida, and soon after her arrival there, married Achilles Murat, ex-prince of Naples, nephew of Napoleon Bonaparte, and settled about sixteen miles from Tallahassee.

I will now return to Col. Byrd C. Willis's manuscript:

After the Revolution in Paris, 1830, and the election of Louis Philippe, Murat, he having large claims upon France, in right of his father Joachim Murat, went over to London with a view to prosecute these claims, believing the change of government would be propitious. He found Louis Philippe more hostile to the Bonaparte family than his predecessor Charles X had been. He took with him his wife. She saw a great deal of high life in London, was introduced by Lady Dudley Stuart, a daughter of Lucien Bonaparte, as the niece of Washington. This relationship was considered highly creditable to her there, so, as she says, she was not indebted for the notice she attracted to her husband alone. She

---

\*NOTE.—Col. Byrd C. Willis would not consent to the marriage of his daughter with Achille Murat, without the consent of the Murat and Bonaparte families, who were at first opposed to the marriage of one of their family to an American widow, but when they were apprised of the fact that the prospective bride was the grand-niece of General Washington, all opposition vanished. Col. Byrd C. Willis' wife and several of his children spent several weeks with Joseph Bonaparte, ex-King of Spain, at his magnificent villa near Bordentown, New Jersey.

returned (under the protection of Mrs. Pringle, of South Carolina, a good American). I have good testimony\* that whilst in London, she stood up for her country, and fought its battle in all companies.

Her husband, if matters are adjusted between Belgium and Holland, will come over in May next. In the meantime, she is preparing "Lipona," the name of his seat in this country, for his reception.

She was at the coronation of William IV, King of England. A seat in Westminster Abbey was obtained for her by no less a personage than the Duke of Sussex, the King's brother.

These attentions might have turned the head of some young women, but I am proud to say my daughter returned to America with increased affection for its institutions and a contempt for the heartless society of London's fashionable life. Col. Murat reached New York, on his return to Florida on July 22, 1833. In gratitude for her kindness to him, when in exile, and in recognition of her husband's claims, Napoleon III, when Emperor of France, placed the Princess Murat at the head of the nobility of France and honoured her with a seat on his right. On one occasion, while visiting an art gallery in London, in company with John Randolph and other distinguished personages, the party paused before the pictures of Napoleon and Washington, which hung side by side. Randolph pointed to the pictures, remarking, "Before us, we have Napoleon and Washington, one the founder of a mighty Empire, and the other of a great Republic"; then, turning to the company said: "Behold, in the Princess Murat the niece of both, a distinction which she alone can claim."

In the above I (L. Pecquet du Bellet) have given Col. Byrd's manuscript, in the main, word for word.

After the war between the States Louis Napoleon settled an annuity of 50,000 francs upon the Princess Murat, which was regularly paid up to the time of her death. After her death the annuity was paid to his sister, Mrs. Brokenborough, until the overthrow of the empire and dethronement of Louis Napoleon.

Prince Murat while a very learned man was also a very eccentric one, and although possessed of a large landed estate and many

---

\*The testimony alluded to is that of Mr. McLane, our Minister at St. James; Washington Irving, and John Randolph, of Roanoke. With all these she was a great favorite.



slaves, he was a poor manager, and very improvident, indeed, and but for the good advice of his wife, which she sometimes prevailed upon him to follow, Prince Murat would have bankrupted himself. At one time after his marriage he resided in New Orleans, and practiced law; for a time he and his wife resided in London; at another time Belgium, where King Leopold gave him command of the "Foreign Legion," but the soldiers of his uncle, the first Napoleon (whom he is said to have resembled), commenced flocking to his standard in such number, that Louis Philippe, the then King of France, became alarmed and requested (which amounted to a command) that the King of Belgium disband his "Foreign Legion," which Leopold reluctantly did. It has been said, that in bidding farewell to his troops, Prince Murat addressed them in seven languages. Many anecdotes have been told of Prince Murat, some of which are quite ludicrous. His peculiarities and eccentricities frequently tested the sweetness and amiability of his wife's character, by whom he was greatly loved. Murat and his wife spent much of their time in Europe, where they, at times, entertained the first cousin of Murat, Louis Napoleon, then not so well off as Murat, and while he never lived to see it, nobly did Napoleon III and his charming empress requite this hospitality.

The Princess Murat was always cordially invited and received at the Tuileries. On one occasion a court dinner was given in her honour, and the empress, with the most delicate and incomparable courtesy, under the cover of being indisposed, abstained from the table, in order that the Princess Murat might fill that seat of honour which, had Eugenie been present, etiquette would have compelled her to occupy. As soon, however, as the formal repast was ended, the empress sent for Princess Murat to come to her private apartments and welcomed her as a sister. At her death were found in her possession many valuable relics of the first empire, which had been presented to her as gifts by Napoleon III, most of which are now (1905) in the possession of her brother, Achille Murat Willis. Amongst other marks of personal esteem by which the emperor showed his full appreciation of the relationship, and his desire to publicly establish it, was the bestowal upon her of the right of using the livery of France.

In a little quiet graveyard near Tallahassee are to be found two simply marble shafts, which bear the following inscriptions:



Departed this life April 18th, 1847  
CHARLES LOUIS NAPOLEON ACHILLE MURAT  
Son of the King of Naples  
and  
Caroline Bonaparte Murat  
Aged 47

This monument is dedicated by his wife, Catherine, in perpetual memory of her love.

The companion shaft reads:

Sacred to the memory of Princess C. D. Murat,  
Widow of Col. Charles Louis Napoleon Achille Murat  
and daughter of the late  
Col. Byrd C. Willis, of Virginia,  
who departed this life on the 6th of August, 1867,  
in the 64th year of her age.  
A kind and affectionate wife and sister.  
A sincere and devoted friend.

The second child of George Willis and Sallie Innis Willis was Catherine Murat, born in Pensacola, Fla., May 27, 1845, and named after her aunt, the Princess Murat, who at her death left as a legacy to her namesake a magnificent diamond brooch, a gift from the Emperor Napoleon to the Princess Murat.

The last and ninth child of Col. Byrd C. Willis was b. October 15, 1827. Col. Byrd Willis, says: "Eleven and a half years after the birth of our daughter, Mrs. Duval, little 'Mu' was born at Blenheim, in Albemarle Co., Va., whilst on a visit to my step-sister, Mary Ross. This was our first visit to Virginia, after our removal to Florida. Born to us in our old age, we wished to name him Byrd, after myself, but my daughter Murat, having no child, begged that he might be called after her husband, and we gratified her. Coming so unexpectedly to us, I fear we dote on him too much, for he is allowed by every one to be a most beautiful child. He will be six, in October next. He goes to school to Mr. Hatten Achille Murat Willis." At the age of twenty, married Miss Florence Edwina Ambler, in 1846, and resided in Rappahannock Co., Va. They moved to Lipscomb, Texas, but are residing at present (August, 1905) at Beaver, Oklahoma. They had issue:

- I. Edward Ambler Willis, b. October 2, 1848.
- II. Byrd Willis, b. August 7, 1850.

III. Achille Murat Willis, b. September 3, 1858.

IV. May Willis, b. May 13, 1862.

V. Lewis Willis, b. September 12, 1864.

Achille Murat Willis served as a Captain of the Rappahannock Company of Cavalry, in the Confederate service; was a member of Ashby's regiment. Capt. A. Murat Willis acted as aide to General Early at the first battle of Manassas, and received special mention at that officer's report of the battle, August 1, 1861.

(Rebellion Records, Vol. II, p. 558.)

#### JOHN WILLIS.

VII. John Willis<sup>7</sup> (Francis<sup>6</sup>, Francis<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, —<sup>2</sup>, Francis<sup>1</sup>), second son of Col. Francis Willis and Anne Rich, his wife, b. 1719; d. 1766. Married (1743) Mildred Smith, b. at Shooter's Hill, 1719, a daughter of Augustine Smith and Sarah Carver, his wife. This Augustine Smith was named for his grandfather, Col. Augustine Warner, who married Mildred Reade, and was the grandfather of Augustine Washington, father of Gen. Washington. (Volumes III and IV.)

I. Francis Willis<sup>8</sup>, b. 1745; d. 1828.

II. Rich Willis<sup>8</sup>.

III. John Willis<sup>8</sup>.

IV. Augustine Willis<sup>8</sup>.

V. Lewis Willis<sup>8</sup>.

VI. A daughter Willis<sup>8</sup>.

VII. A daughter Willis<sup>8</sup>.

VIII. Francis Willis<sup>8</sup>, b. January 25, 1745. Married (1769) Elizabeth Edwards, b. December 29, 1740; d. August 27, 1807, of St. Andrew's Parish, Brunswick Co., Va. They lived a short time in that county and then moved to Berkeley (afterwards Jefferson) County, which was laid off in 1772 by his kinsman, Robert Carter Willis, and they lived at "Shannon Hall" on the Shenandoah River. In 1784 they moved to Georgia and in 1792 we find him in the second Congress as a representative from Georgia. He appears to have continued his roving habits, for he afterwards left Georgia and went to Maury County, Tennessee, where he died April 3, 1829, in Montgomery, aged 84 years, 2 months and 16 days. Issue:

I. Nathaniel Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1772.

- II. Henry Willis<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Carver Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1774.
- IV. George Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1776.
- V. Mildred Smith Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1778; d. unmarried.
- VI. Thomas Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1781.
- VII. Elizabeth Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1783.

IX. Carver Willis<sup>9</sup>, b. 1774, returned to Jefferson Co., Va. He represented his county in the Virginia Legislature about 1825. Married (December 11, 1798) Frances Madison Hite, daughter of Major Thomas Hite and Frances Madison, née Beale. The young couple settled on an estate on Opequon Creek, in Jefferson Co., W. Va., and called it "Medley Springs." Mrs. Willis remained at "Medley" till 1846, when she moved to Charles Town and spent the last six years of her life; d. July 27, 1857. Only five of their ten children attained maturity. They lived at "Medley Springs" till his death, December 11, 1798. Issue:

- I. Thomas Hite Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. September 28, 1800; d. January 18, 1884.
  - II. Elizabeth Edwards Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. Dec. 20, 1802.
  - III. Fanny Beale Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. June 16, 1805; d. April 20, 1889.
  - IV. Eleanor Ann Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. Feb. 15, 1808.
  - V. Mildred Carver Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. May 28, 1810; d. 1882.
- (See Volumes III and IV, Hite and Madison Families.)

X. Thomas Hite Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. at "Medley Springs," Jefferson Co., Va., September 28, 1800; d. Jan. 18, 1884, son of Carver Willis and Frances Madison, née Hite. Married (October 25, 1827) Elizabeth F. Ryland, daughter of Josiah and Catherine Peachy Ryland. Mrs. Willis was b. June 11, 1807. They resided on their estate "Rock Hall" until April 1869, when they removed to Millville on the Shenandoah River and in 1877 to Charles Town, where he d. January 18, 1884, aged 83 years and 4 months. Mrs. Willis d. at Millville April 1871, aged 63 years and 2 months. Issue:

- I. Martha Ellen Willis<sup>11</sup>.
- II. Fanny E. Willis<sup>11</sup>, unmarried; lives in Charles Town.
- III. Catherine Peachy Willis<sup>11</sup>. Married John Shanks. They left issue:

- I. David Shanks<sup>12</sup>. Married, and has one child, who lives in Texas.

- II. Martha Ellen Shanks<sup>12</sup>, living with her parents in Memphis, Tenn.
  - IV. Annie Madison Willis<sup>11</sup>. Married Jaquelin Ambler.
  - V. Nathaniel Hite Willis<sup>11</sup>. Married Jane C. Washington.
  - VI. Robert Willis<sup>11</sup>, unmarried; lives with Mrs. Washington.
  - VII. Emma Edwards Willis<sup>11</sup>. Married Bushrod Washington.
- Martha Ellen Willis, daughter of Thomas Hite Willis and Elizabeth Ryland, married Thomas Lackland, and left five children:
- I. Fanny Lackland. Married Lawrence Washington, son of John Augustine Washington, last owner of Mt. Vernon. They reside in Alexandria. Mr. Washington has held a responsible position in the new Congressional Library, Washington, D. C., ever since its opening. Issue:
  - I. John Augustine Washington. Married in 1905 and lives in Petersburg, Va.
  - II. Lawrence Washington, Jr.
  - III. Patty Willis Washington.
  - IV. Annie Madison Washington.
  - V. Louise Fontaine Washington.
  - VI. Richard Blackburn Washington.
  - VII. Willis Lackland Washington.
  - VIII. Wilson Selden Washington.
  - IX. Fanny Jaquelin Washington.
  - X. Preston Chew Washington.
  - XI. Julian Howard Washington.
  - XII. Francis Ryland Washington.

Nathaniel Hite Willis<sup>11</sup>, son of Col. Thomas Hite Willis and Elizabeth F. Ryland, his wife, was b. March 25, 1843, at "Rock Hall," Jefferson Co., W. Va., January 16, 1869, at Blakeley, the residence of the bride's uncle, Mr. Richard R. Washington; he married Jane Charlotte Washington, daughter of Col. John Augustine Washington, the last owner of Mt. Vernon. In April 1869 they took up their residence at "Rock Hall" and have resided there since. They had issue:

- I. Elizabeth Ryland Willis<sup>12</sup>. Married Walter Washington, son of Richard Washington, Jr., and they have issue:
  - I. Walter Washington, Jr.
  - II. John Augustine Washington.
- II. Eleanor Lou Willis<sup>12</sup>. Married Edmond Pendleton, of Wytheville, Va., and they have issue:

- I. Jane Pendleton.
  - II. Nathaniel Pendleton.
  - III. Eleanor Pendleton.
- I met Mr. and Mrs. Pendleton in Wytheville, Va.
- III. Thomas Hite Willis<sup>12</sup>. Married Josephine Bangs, daughter of Mrs. Adelia C. Bangs, of Louisville, Ky., and reside in Chicago, Ill. Issue:
    - I. Adelia Bangs Willis.
  - IV. Richard Blackburn Willis<sup>12</sup>, civil engineer. Married Grace Matteson, of Galesburg, Ill. They reside in Ohio. Issue:
    - I. Richard Blackburn Willis.
  - V. Eliza Selden Willis<sup>12</sup>, lives at "Rock Hall"; unmarried (1906).
  - VI. Patty Willis<sup>12</sup>, lives at "Rock Hall."
  - VII. John Augustine Willis<sup>12</sup>.
  - VIII. Jane Charlotte Willis<sup>12</sup>.
  - IX. James Willis<sup>12</sup>, still at school (1906).

John Augustine Willis<sup>12</sup>, son of Nathaniel Hite Willis; mining engineer. Married Grace Tappan Smith, granddaughter of Mr. William B. Edwards, of Coalburgh, W. Va. Issue:

- I. Jane Charlotte Willis.

Elizabeth Edwards, granddaughter of Carver Willis and Frances Madison Hite, b. December 20, 1802. Married Archibald Brown, of King William Co., Va. Issue:

- I. Carver Brown.
- II. John Newton Brown.
- III. Ella Brown.
- IV. Thomas Hite Brown.
- V. Beale Brown.

Carver Brown married Miss Sallie Skinner, of Maryland, resided in Canton, Mississippi. He had quite a large family, but I have no data regarding them.

John Newton Brown died of typhoid fever early in the Civil War.

Ella Brown (Willis) married George Hite Flagg, son of John R. Flagg, of Jefferson Co., W. Va. Issue:

- I. Oscar Flagg. Married and lives in Buffalo, Wyoming.
- II. John Ranson Flagg. Married Carrie Bryce, of Charlotte, North Carolina. They reside in New York City. Issue:

- I. Ethel Flagg.
- II. Bryee Flagg.
- III. Julia Flagg.

Thomas Hite Brown married Annie Coleman, of King and Queen Co., Va. He lived many years at North Point, King William Co., Va.; then removed to Pine Bluff, Arkansas. Issue:

- I. Son Willis. Married, and with his family reside at Pine Bluff.

Beale Brown married Miss Semple, of King William Co., Va. They reside in Greenville, South Greenville Co., South Carolina. Issue: Four daughters.

Fanny Beale Willis, daughter of Carver Willis and Frances Madison, née Hite, was b. June 16, 1800; d. April 20, 1829. Married William Ballard Willis, son of Richard Willis, of the eighth generation, and his second wife, Mrs. Gray, née Craighill, b. February 22, 1806; d. May 1st, 1893. They were married April 1st, 1828, and went to Tennessee, intending to make a permanent home there, but in a few years they returned to Jefferson Co., W. Va., and purchased a place on the Shenandoah River, which they called "Millville." Later they built a home near Charles Town and named it "Locust Grove." In 1852, Mr. Willis moved to Howard Co., Md. Here he bought a large farm near Sykesville and called it "The Refuge." Three times his house was totally destroyed by fire, twice at "Millville," once at "Locust Grove."

Mr. William B. Willis was a warm southerner, but disapproved of secession. He hoped for a gradual abolition of slavery, and would not at first take an active part against the union. At the opening of the Civil War, his two sons, Carver and Beale, at once enlisted in the C. S. Army, and very soon after his two younger boys were drafted in the Northern Army. This determined him not to let them go; if they were compelled to fight it must be on the southern side. Disguising himself by shaving off his long white beard, he, with his sons and thirty other young men (many of whom never returned), made their way from Howard County Md., into Confederate lines. Mr. Willis soon found the movements of his party were watched, so building a large fire on their camping ground he and all his party got away under the cover of night, swam the Potomac River, met a Federal lieutenant, took



him prisoner, and entered Confederate lines in safety. Beale and Albert were prisoners at Fort McHenry, Baltimore; Frank was imprisoned at the Old Arsenal at Harper's Ferry. After his sons went south, the Federals kept Mr. Willis and his family under constant surveillance, and he could only visit his family after dark.

William Ballard Willis and Fanny Beale Willis are both buried in the Springfield cemetery, near Sykesville, Carroll Co., Md. They had seven children, two died in infancy, the other five were:

- I. Carver Willis. Married Ella Guilbert and had two living children:
  1. Rev. Kirby Smith Willis, of Allenwood, Pa.; is married and has two children.
  2. Percy Willis, living in Texas; is married and has one child.
- II. William Beale Willis, of Texas. Married Mary Monroe Manning. Issue six children:
  1. Manning Willis.
  2. Frank Willis, lives in Washington, D. C.; is married and has one child.
  3. Bessie Willis.
  4. Eva Willis.
  5. Fanny Beale Willis.
  6. Louisa Willis.
- III. Albert Willis, did active service in the Confederate cavalry and died from the effects of exposure.
- IV. Francis Willis, died Feb. 1863, of typhoid fever, contracted while imprisoned in the "Old Arsenal," at Harper's Ferry. He was paroled, but died in less than a week after he reached home.
- V. Fanny Madison Willis, only daughter of William Ballard Willis and Fanny Beale Willis. Married William H. Stevenson, of Gettysburg, Pa.

William H. Stevenson's emigrant ancestor, Joseph Stevenson, was one of a large number of Scotch Presbyterians, who early in the eighteenth century went first to the north of Ireland, and then came to America to escape the ritualistic services which King James II sought to fasten on their form of worship. They settled in Cumberland Valley, Pa., and dotted the country with Presbyterian churches. Wherever a suitable eminence, with a spring con-

venient, offered an eligible location, they built a church. Hence from Harrisburg westward stand to-day: Silver Spring, Big Spring, Middle Spring, Rocky Spring, and Falling Spring churches, with other monuments, proofs of the sturdy stuff of which these men who built them were made.

William H. Stevenson's mother was Mary Russell, of Gettysburg, and her mother was Mary McPherson, daughter of Col. William McPherson, brother of Col. John McPherson, of Frederick, Md. These were all conspicuous in the war of the Revolution. Mr. Stevenson was born in Gettysburg, graduated at seventeen, in Pennsylvania College, then studied law, and practiced for a few years in his native town. Then his physician advised a change of climate, so he gave up the law, and moved to Baltimore, and engaged in mercantile business. William H. Stevenson married Fanny Madison Willis. They have three most accomplished daughters: Mary Eleanor Stevenson, Anna Berkeley Stevenson, and Fanny Beale Stevenson. The last mentioned is well known as one of the cleverest musicians in Baltimore. She was one of the five ladies who founded the "Virgil Clavier Piano School" of Baltimore.

Mildred Carver Willis was b. May 28, 1810; d. 1882, daughter of Carver Willis and Francis Madison, née Hite. Married Thomas Timberlake, of Jefferson Co., W. Va., son of Mr. Harfield and Mrs. Mary Griggs Timberlake, of Shenstone, Jefferson Co., W. Va. Issue:

- I. Henry Timberlake.
- II. Eleanor Anne Timberlake, d. young.
- III. Fanny Madison Timberlake, d. young.
- IV. Benjamin Timberlake. Married, first, ———— and lived in Waco, Texas. He was Mayor of Sutton; d. in Waco, leaving his wife and four daughters.

Henry Timberlake, son of Mildred Carver Willis and Thomas Timberlake, married Margarett ———, of Indiana, and lived at "Medley Springs," Jefferson Co., W. Va.; d. there, leaving a widow and three children:

- I. Nellie Timberlake.
- II. Hamilton Greenwood Timberlake.
- III. Thomas M. Timberlake.

After Mr. Henry Timberlake's death his family removed to Port Ryan, Ill. When Hamilton Greenwood was six years old he was a boy of fine promise, in both mind and character, and attained a noble manhood; and while Professor of Botany and member of the Faculty of Madison University, Wisconsin, and having an interesting career in view, his life was suddenly cut short by some heart trouble on June 30, 1903, after a marriage of two weeks with Miss Violet Slack of Madison, Wisconsin.

Another record says:

Mrs. Mildred Carver Willis Timberlake married, second, Dr. William Waters, of Frederick, Md., who died suddenly a few years later. After she became a widow she decided to live with her son in Texas. En route she died in Missouri, and was buried there.

Eleanor Ann Madison Willis d. at "Medley Springs," September 5, 1830.

The following are the daughters of Thomas Hite Willis—son of Carver Willis—and Elizabeth Ryland, his wife:

Martha Eleanor Willis.

Fanny Elizabeth Willis.

Catherine Peachy Willis.

Roberta Ryland Willis.

Ann Madison Willis.

Josephine Willis, d. in her eighth year.

Emma Edwards.

Martha Eleanor Willis married Thomas Griggs Lackland, son of Mr. Samuel Watkins Lackland, of Springland, Jefferson Co., W. Va., August 26, 1851. Their home was "Riverside" on Shenandoah River, and they resided there until his death, December 23, 1874. His wife d. in Charles Town, November 21, 1878. Issue:

I. Charlotte Elizabeth Lackland.

II. Fanny Lackland.

III. Samuel Watkins Lackland.

IV. Eleanor Madison Lackland.

V. Thomas Willis Lackland.

VI. Annie Jaquelin Lackland.

Fanny Willis married (June 14, 1876) Lawrence Washington, son of Col. John Augustine Washington, of Waveland, Fauquier Co., Va. They resided some years at "Waveland" and are now (1906) residents of Alexandria, Va. Issue:

- I. John Augustine Washington. Married G. Altizer, of West Virginia. They reside at Logan.
- II. Lawrence Washington, Jr.
- III. Pattie Willis Washington.
- IV. Anne Madison Washington.
- V. Louise Fontaine Washington.
- VI. Richard Blackburn Washington.
- VII. Willis Lackland Washington.
- VIII. Fanny Jaquelin Washington.
- IX. Wilson Selden Washington.
- X. Preston Chew Washington.
- XI. Julian Howard Washington.
- XII. Francis Ryland Washington.

Samuel Watkins Lackland, son of Martha Eleanor Willis and S. W. Lackland, when eighteen years old, with a friend, went to California in 1875, and engaged in land surveying. Married (March 22, 1880) Kate Dawson and resided in Redlands until 1882, returning in January that year, with his wife and infant daughter, to Charles Town, W. Va. He continued his work in Oregon, making occasional visits to his wife and three children. His wife and children reside in Washington, D. C. Issue:

- I. Roberta Willis Lackland.
- II. Francis Lackland.
- III. Thomas Griggs Lackland.

Eleanor Madison Lackland married Frank Coulter Braxton, son of Dr. William and Mrs. Virginia Braxton, of Hanover Co., Va. Married November 22, 1888. Issue:

- I. Virginia Braxton.
- II. Pattie Willis Braxton.
- III. William Braxton, deceased.
- IV. Eleanor Madison Braxton.
- V. Elizabeth Harrison Braxton, deceased.
- VI. Annie Jaquelin Braxton.

They reside in Knoxville, Tenn.

Thomas Willis Lackland, graduate of the Virginia Military Institute, Lexington, civil engineer, went to Oregon in 1886, and was practicing his profession successfully, but we have no recent data regarding him. When last heard from he was in California.

Nannie Jaquelin Laekland, a graduate of the Maryland University Hospital, Baltimore, is superintendent of St. Peter's Hospital, Charlotte, N. C.

Frances Elizabeth Willis, unmarried, resides in Charles Town, W. Va.

Catherine Peachy Willis married John Thomas Shanks, son of Col. Grace Shanks, of Fincastle, Botetourt Co., Va., and nephew of Dr. Lewis Shanks, of Memphis, Tenn. They were married at "Rock Hall," the home of the bride's father, May 27, 1857. She died September 5, 1862. Memphis, Tenn. Issue:

- I. Thomas Moneure Shanks, d. in his eighteenth year.
- II. David Willis Shanks. Married (Sept. 29, 1898) Alma Harrison of San Antonio, Texas. Issue:
  - I. Alma Willis Shanks.
- III. Fanny Ellen Shanks, resides with her father and half sister in Memphis, Tenn.

Roberta Ryland Willis, unmarried, lives (1906) in Charles Town, W. Va.

The next daughter of Thomas Hite Willis and Elizabeth Willis was Anne Madison, married R. J. Ambler. (Issue Volume I, Chapters VI and VIII.)

The youngest daughter of Thomas Hite Willis, Emma Edwards Willis, married (November 14, 1878) Bushrod C. Washington, of Charles Town, W. Va. Issue:

- I. Nathaniel Willis Washington, a young attorney, Charles Town, W. Va.
- II. James Cunningham Washington, in St. Louis, Mo.
- III. Peachy Ryland Washington.

Thomas Willis<sup>9</sup> (Francis<sup>8</sup>, John<sup>7</sup>), son of Francis Willis and Elizabeth Edwards Willis, his wife; b. 1781, Jefferson Co., W. Va. Married (1812) Elizabeth Worsham; d. 1816, Washington, Ga. Issue:

- I. Mary Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. 1813. Married Mark A. Lane. Issue:
  - I. Thomas Lane<sup>11</sup>, b. 1829; d. unmarried. Mrs. Lane d. 1830.
- II. Dr. Francis Thomas Willis<sup>10</sup>, b. 1816, Washington, Ga.; d. Jan. 15, 1898, at his home, 211 E. Franklin St., Richmond, Va., leaving an estate valued at \$500,000, most of which was bequeathed to his grandson, Edward

Jones Willis. Dr. Willis studied medicine in Philadelphia. Married (1837) Elizabeth Butler, b. 1819; d. 1888; moved to Augusta in 1843, and thence to Savannah in 1819. Since 1867 Dr. Willis<sup>10</sup> has lived in Richmond, where he was greatly beloved. Issue:

I. Mary Willis<sup>11</sup>, b. 1838; d. 1883.

II. Edward Willis<sup>11</sup>.

III. Francis Willis<sup>11</sup>, b. 1842; d. 1870.

IV. Thomas Willis<sup>11</sup>, b. 1844; d. 1845.

XI. Mary Willis<sup>11</sup> (Francis<sup>10</sup>, Thomas<sup>9</sup>, Francis<sup>8</sup>, John<sup>7</sup>), daughter of Dr. Francis Thomas Willis<sup>10</sup> and Elizabeth Butler, his wife, b. 1838; d. 1883. Married (1864) J. Pembroke Jones, a lieutenant in the Confederate Navy, commanding successively the armed tug "Resolute" and the iron-clad "Raleigh." She was a friend of Gen'l Robert E. Lee, and their acquaintance was as follows:

In the early part of the war Gen'l Lee, being in Savannah, Georgia, called at the house of Dr. Francis T. Willis, to see some ladies there visiting the house. He was ushered by the servant into the parlor, where Mary Willis was seated at the piano.

She started to leave the room, but he asked her to stay and talk to him. After some other remarks he asked how the ladies liked the officers of Gen'l Lee's staff.

"Quite well," she said, "but they like Gen'l Lee better."

The General at once arose and stepping back, made her a profound bow.

Surprised, she exclaimed, "Oh! you are Gen'l Lee; are you not?" The conversation continued until the visitors appeared. Mary Willis and J. Pembroke Jones had issue:

I. Edward Jones<sup>12</sup>, b. 1866, whose name was changed by Albemarle County Court to Edward Jones Willis. He was an excellent mechanical engineer in Richmond, Va.

II. Emily Pembroke Jones<sup>12</sup>, b. 1867, near Newark, Delaware, where her mother was spending several months; d. 1883.

III. Francis Willis Jones<sup>12</sup>, b. 1869; d. 1870.

XI. Edward Willis<sup>11</sup> (Francis<sup>10</sup>, Thomas<sup>9</sup>, Francis<sup>8</sup>, John<sup>7</sup>), second child of Dr. Francis T. Willis and Elizabeth Butler, his wife, b. 1840, was educated at the United States Military Academy



at West Point. He entered the Confederate Army and became colonel of the Twelfth Georgia Regiment, which fought through the war in the Army of Northern Virginia. He distinguished himself as an officer, was highly esteemed by General Robert E. Lee, and on May 20, 1863, was recommended by him to President Davis for promotion to the office of brigadier-general; he was killed near Bethesda while in command of Dole's Brigade. Col. Edward Willis was killed May 31, 1864, aged 23 years. (War of Rebellion, Official Records, Series, Vol. XXXVI, p. 389; also Vol. XXV, p. 810.)

The following information was secured from the *Baltimore Sun*, Virginia Heraldry, September 23, 1906:

I have read with pleasure your articles on the Willis family in your Sunday editions of the 2nd and 9th of this month. My mother was a Miss Willis and I naturally take some interest in the family. I would like to extend one branch of the family down to date, and also try to get some information through your valuable columns.

My mother descended from John Willis and Mildred Smith Willis, whose issue, as stated in your edition of the 9th instant, was:

- I. John Willis.
- II. Augustine Willis.
- III. Francis Willis.
- IV. Richard Willis (should be Rich).
- V. Lewis Willis.
- VI. Sarah Willis.
- VII. Elizabeth Willis.

I have in my possession a letter written by William B. Willis, and also one written in 1829 by Dr. William W. Willis to his wife, both of whom were my great-grandparents. From these letters and from the information I can gather, I take our line to be as follows, taking in view the fact that my great-grandfather and great-grandmother were first cousins:

Lewis Willis<sup>a</sup> had:

- I. Dr. William W. Willis, died about 1830.
- II. Mildred Willis.
- III. Ann Willis.
- IV. Adeline Willis.

Dr. William W. Willis married (about 1829) his first cousin, Nancy B. Willis. Their only son

- I. Rich Augustus Willis, b. Columbia Co., Tenn., 1830; d. 1884.

Rich Willis<sup>a</sup>, brother of Lewis Willis<sup>a</sup>, and called Richard in your article, had, as stated therein by Mrs. Grey, his second wife:

- I. Ann Willis (this is no doubt Nancy B. Willis, my great-grand-mother).
- II. Eliza Willis.

III. Rich Willis.

IV. Smith Willis.

V. William Ballard Willis.

William Ballard Willis moved to Baltimore and was the guardian of my grandfather, Rich Augustus Willis. I have a letter from him written to one of my aunts giving the names of his children. In 1850 Rich A. Willis married Virginia Martin Drewry, of the old Drewry family of Virginia, and born in King William County, Va., 1828 (1828); d. 1890. They had issue ten children, four of whom died in infancy, the remaining six living to maturity, as follows:

- I. William Martin Willis, of Chesterfield Co., b. 1851. Married (1877) Nannie Townes, of Petersburg. Had issue:
  - I. Marie Louise Willis, b. 1878. Married (1901) Anderson Wade Douthat, of Danville. Issue:
    - I. Nannie Willis Douthat, b. 1903.
    - II. Anderson Wade Douthat, b. 1904.  
(See Douthat Family, Part I, Volume I.)
    - I. Virginia Drewry Willis, b. 1884.
    - II. Augustus Drewry Willis, b. 1853.
- III. Lewis Willis, of Tennessee, b. 1857. Married (1891) Nina Griffin, of North Carolina. Issue:
  - I. Evelyn Willis, b. 1892.
  - II. Francis Rich Willis.
- III. Charles Griffin Willis.
- IV. William Moore Willis.
- IV. Evelyn Byrd Willis, b. 1855; d. 1892. Married (1877) David L. Pulliam, of Manchester, Va. Issue:
  - I. Willis Clopton Pulliam, b. January 14, 1878. Married (Nov. 20, 1906) Edith Hyde, native of Cheshire, England.
  - V. Rich Augustus Willis, b. 1858, of Tennessee; single.
- VI. Virginia Clay Willis, b. 1860; d. 1895. Married (1895) David Watson Morris, of Richmond, Va. No issue.

Manchester, Va.

DESCENDANT.

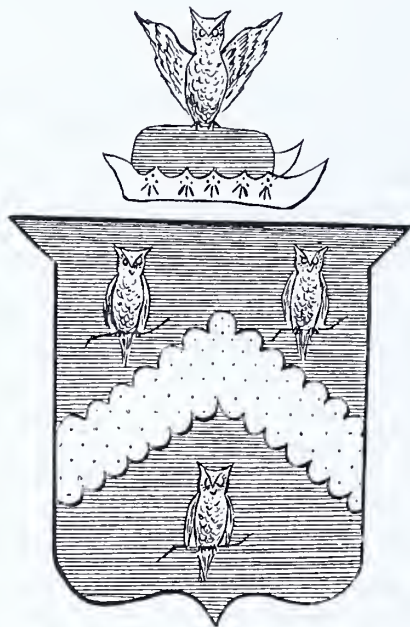
#### PULLIAM AND HYDE.

(Special dispatch to *The Baltimore Sun*.)

RICHMOND, VA., Nov. 20, 1906.—Meade Memorial Church, Manchester, was the scene of a pretty marriage this evening at 8 o'clock, when Miss Edith Hyde, the daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Edward Hyde, of Forest Hall, became the bride of Mr. Willis Clopton Pulliam, with Rev. Benjamin Denis officiating. Mrs. J. Clifton Robertson and Mrs. Walter R. Myers, sisters of the bride, were matrons of honor. Misses Helen Robertson and Rebekah Watson were the bridesmaids. The maid of honor was Miss Minnie Weisiger. The best man was Mr. Samuel D. Moore.

## CHAPTER X

## THE NICHOLAS FAMILY.

*Nicholas.*

## NICHOLAS COAT-OF-ARMS.

Nicholas (London, and Ashton-Keynes and Ryndway, Co. Witts.) Az. a chev. engraved between three owls. Crest—on a chapeau az. (another gu.) turned up erm. an owl, with wings expanded ar.

## FIRST GENERATION.

There appears on the vestry list, of Williamsburg Church, Bruton Parish, the two names of George Nicholas<sup>1</sup> and his son

Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>2</sup>. The former came to this country as a physician, doubtless duly qualified. He married the widow of Mr. Burwell,\* of Gloucester, a descendant of the Carters.

Robert Carter Nicholas was distinguished at the Bar in Williamsburg, in the House of Burgesses, in the Council, as Treasurer of the State, and as a patriot in the Revolutionary War. But he had a higher praise than all these offices could give him; for he was a sincere Christian, and a zealous defender of the Church of his fathers, when he believed her rights were assailed. Mr. Hugh Blair Grigsby, in his eloquent description of the Burgesses of 1776, thus describes him:

He loved, indeed, a particular form of religion, but he loved more dearly religion itself. In peace or war, at the fireside, or on the floor of the House of Burgesses, a strong sense of moral responsibility was seen through all his actions. If a resolution appointing a day of fasting and prayer, or acknowledging the providence of God in crowning our arms with victory, though drawn by worldly men and worldly views, was to be, it was from his hands that it was to be presented to the House, and from his lips came the persuasive words which fell not in vain on the coldest ears. Indeed, such was the impression which his sincere piety—embellishing as it did the sterling virtues of his character—made upon his own generation, that its influence was felt upon that which succeeded it; and when his youngest son, near a quarter of a century after his death, became a candidate for the office of Attorney General of the Commonwealth, a political opponent, who knew neither father nor son, gave him his support, declaring that no son of the old Treasurer could be unfaithful to his country. Nor was his piety less conspicuous in a private sphere. Visiting, on one occasion, Lord Botetourt, with whom he lived in the strictest friendship, he observed to that nobleman, "My lord, I think you will be very unwilling to die!" And when asked what gave rise to that remark:

---

\*NOTE.—Nathaniel Burwell married Elizabeth Carter, eldest daughter of Robert Carter (King Carter), and this lady, after the death of Major Burwell, married Dr. George Nicholas. She was the mother of Lewis Burwell. He was Burgess from Gloucester County, 1736; later he became member of the Council, and as President of that body succeeded Thomas Lee in the administration of affairs in Virginia. During the time that Lewis Burwell presided at the head of the government, Hening, in his "Statutes at Large," records no meeting of the General Assembly, though he mentions patents as having been signed by Burwell when President of the Council. Major Burwell married (in October, 1736) Mary Willis, daughter of Col. Francis and Ann Willis. Major Lewis Burwell was relieved from his post as chief executive of Virginia by the arrival of Robert Dinwiddie November 20, 1751. Died 1752.

"Because," said he, "you are so social in your nature, and so much loved, and have so many good things around you, that you must be loath to leave them." His lordship made no reply; but a short time after, being on his death-bed, he sent in haste for Colonel Nicholas, who lived near the palace, and who instantly repaired thither to receive the last sighs of his dying friend. On entering his chamber, he asked his commands. "Nothing," replied his lordship, "but to let you see that I resign these good things, of which you formerly spoke, with as much composure as I enjoyed them." After which he grasped his hand with warmth, and instantly expired.

Colonel Nicholas died at his seat in Hanover, leaving five sons:

- I. George Nicholas, who moved to Kentucky.
- II. Lewis Nicholas, who lived in Albemarle.
- III. John Nicholas, who moved to New York.
- IV. Wilson Cary Nicholas, was a member of the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States, and Governor of Virginia.
- V. Philip Norborne Nicholas, called after Norborne, Lord Botetourt, his father's friend, who, besides other offices, held that of Judge of the General Court.

One of the daughters of Colonel Nicholas married Mr. Edmund Randolph (Randolph family). Another married Mr. John H. Norton, of Winchester. She was the mother of the Rev. Mr. Norton, a venerable minister of the Episcopal Church, of New York, who has two sons in our ministry, one in Virginia, the other in Kentucky.

The children of R. C. Nicholas were blessed with a mother who was equally worthy. Let the following letter to her son, Wilson Cary Nicholas, on his entering public life, bear witness:

WILLIAMSBURG, 1784.

DEAR WILSON:—I congratulate you on the honour your country has done you in choosing you their representative with so large a vote. I hope you are come into the Assembly without those trammels which some people submit to wear for a seat in the House—I mean, unbound by promises, to perform this or that job which the many-headed monster may think proper to chalk out for you; especially that you have not engaged to lend a last hand to pulling down the Church, which, by some impertinent questions in the last paper, I suspect will be attempted. Never, my dear Wilson, let me hear that by that sacrilegious act you have furnished yourself with materials to erect a scaffold by which you may climb to the summit of popularity; rather remain in the lowest obscurity: though, I think, from long observation, I can venture to assert that the man of integrity, who

observes one equal tenor in his conduct—who deviates neither to the one side or the other from the proper line—has more of the confidence of the people than the very compliant time-server, who is the slave of the people. I flatter myself, too, you will act on a more liberal plan, than some members have done in matters in which the honour and interest of this state are concerned; that you will not, to save a few pence to your constituents, discourage the progress of arts and sciences, nor pay with so scanty a hand persons who are eminent in either. This parsimonious plan, of late adopted, will throw us behind the other States in all valuable improvements, and chill, like a frost, the spring of learning and spirit of enterprise. I have insensibly extended what I had to say beyond my first design, but will not quit the subject without giving you a hint, from a very good friend of yours, that your weight in the House will be much greater, if you not take up the attention of the Assembly on trifling matters, nor too often demand a hearing. To this I must add a hint of my own, that temper and decorum is of infinite advantage to a public speaker, and a modest diffidence to a young man just entering the stage of life. The neglect of the former throws him off his guard, breaks his chain of reasoning, and has often produced in England duels that have terminated fatally.

The natural effect of the latter will ever be procuring a favourable and patient hearing, and all those advantages that a prepossession in favour of the speaker produces.

You see, my son, that I take the privilege of a mother in advising you, and be assured, you have no friend so solicitous for your welfare, temporal and eternal, as your ever-affectionate mother.

ANN NICHOLAS.

The author of the above letter was the daughter of Colonel Wilson Cary, of Hampton, a descendant of one of the first families who settled in the lower part of Virginia. Tradition says that Mrs. Nicholas, after the death of her husband, R. C. Nicholas, at his seat in Hanover, was visited by some British officers, and received them with great dignity. Her daughter-in-law, wife of her son George, and sister of Gov. Samuel Smith, of Baltimore, being recognized by one of the officers as an old acquaintance in Carlisle, Pennsylvania, secured polite treatment for the family; but the officers, on discovering that there were some jewels and other valuables in the house, seized upon them and carried them off.

The ancestry of Wilson Cary Nicholas embraces several of the most worthily represented families of the Old Dominion. The founder of the distinguished Nicholas family of Virginia was Dr. George Nicholas<sup>1</sup>, of Lancaster Co., England, a surgeon in



the British Navy, who settled in the Colony about the beginning of the eighteenth century. Married (about 1722) Elizabeth, widow of Major Nathaniel Burwell and daughter of "King Carter" (Robert), of Corotoman. They had issue:

- I. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>2</sup>, b. 1723. Married Anne, daughter of Col. Wilson Cary, of "Ceelys."
- II. John Nicholas<sup>2</sup>, of Seven Islands (great-grandfather of Mrs. Willie Harrison Nicholas, who married Philip Barbour Ambler). He married Elizabeth, daughter of Colonel Joshua Fry, of Williamsburg. He was Clerk of Albemarle 1749-1815, burgess 1756, '57, '58, and of the Convention of 1774-75, of Buckingham Co.
- III. George Nicholas<sup>2</sup>, probably father of Col. John Nicholas, long clerk of Dinwiddie.

#### SECOND GENERATION.

II. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>2</sup> (George<sup>1</sup>), statesman, jurist, and patriot, familiarly known as Treasurer Nicholas, in colonial annals, from having long and honorably filled that important office. Married (1752) Anne, daughter of Colonel Wilson and Sarah Cary, third in descent from Colonel Miles Cary, the emigrant ancestor of the family in Virginia who was born in Bristol, England, 1620; d. June 10, 1667, in Virginia, and was fifth in descent from William Cary, Mayor of Bristol in 1546. (Cary Family.) They had issue:

- I. John Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. Married Anne Lawson, member of Congress 1793-1801; removed to Geneva, New York, where he has numerous descendants.
- II. George Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. Married daughter of the Hon. John Smith of Baltimore, Md., and was the father of Judge Samuel Smith Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, who published a masterly plea for the *habeas corpus* when it was suspended by President Lincoln during the Civil War.
- III. Wilson Cary Nicholas<sup>3</sup>, b. Jan. 31, 1761, Williamsburg, Va.; d. Oct. 10, 1820. Married (1783) Margaret, daughter of John Smith, of Baltimore, Md.
- IV. Lewis Nicholas<sup>3</sup>.
- V. Philip Norborne Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. Married, first, Mary Spear, of Baltimore, Md.; second, Maria Carter, daughter of Thomas Taylor and Mary Anne Byrd, daughter of William Armistead.

II. John Nicholas<sup>2</sup> (George<sup>1</sup>), of Seven Islands. Married Elizabeth, daughter of Colonel Joshua Fry, of Williamsburg. He was clerk of Albemarle 1749-1815; burgess 1756, '57, '58, and of the Conventions of 1774, '75, of Buckingham Co. They had issue:

- I. Colonel John Nicholas<sup>3</sup>, member of the Buckingham Co., Va., Committee of Safety, 1775; burgess 1774; member of the Convention 1775. Married Louisa Carter.
- II. Elizabeth Nicholas<sup>3</sup>, d. unmarried.
- III. George Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. Married Nannie Scott.
- IV. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. Married Martha, widow of Daniel Scott.

### THIRD GENERATION.

John Nicholas<sup>2</sup>, son of the Treasurer, Robert Carter Nicholas.

The following biographical sketch of "One Eyed" John Nicholas, son of the treasurer, Robert Carter Nicholas, and Anne Cary, his wife, appears in "American Orations," edited by the late Prof. Alexander Johnston of the College of New Jersey (Princeton), viz.:

John Nicholas was born in Westmoreland County, Virginia, in 1763, was elected Representative from Virginia in the Third Congress as a Democrat; was reelected to the Fourth, Fifth and Sixth Congresses, serving from December 2, 1793, to March 3, 1801; removed to Geneva, N. Y., and devoted himself to agricultural pursuits. Was a member of the State Senate of New York, 1806-1809; was presiding judge of the Oneida County Court; superintended the education of a large family, and after a long illness died at Geneva, N. Y., December 31, 1819. (The Political Register and Congressional Directory, compiled by Ben. Perley Poore.)

Randall, in his "Life of Jefferson," says: "No Virginia family contributed more to Mr. Jefferson's personal success than the powerful family of the Nicholases—powerful in talents, powerful in probity, powerful in their numbers and union."

John Nicholas married Anne Lawson, daughter of Gavin Lawson, of Stafford County, Virginia. Robert Selden Rose married another daughter, Jane Lawson. Messrs. Lawson, Nicholas, Rose and a kinsman, Colonel Fitzhugh, with their families and slaves, removed from Virginia in 1803 to what was then called the "Gene-

sec Country" in Western New York, where they had large landed estates in the vicinity of what is now Geneva, Ontario County, N. Y., and where many of their descendants still reside.

John and Anne Lawson Nicholas had issue :

- I. Gavin Lawson Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- II. Anne Cary Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Abraham Dox.
- III. Susan Rose Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Rev. Orin Clarke. Issue :
  - I. Susan L. Clarke<sup>5</sup>. Married George N. Dox.
- IV. George Wilson Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- V. Jane Lawson Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- VI. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary Selden Rose.
- VII. Elizabeth Randolph Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- VIII. Sarah Norton Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- IX. Margaret Caroline Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Dr. F. B. Leonard, of Lansingburgh, N. Y.
- X. Mary Blair Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- XI. John Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Virginia Gallagher.

III. George Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert Carter Nicholas and Ann Cary, his wife. Married Mary, daughter of the Hon. John Smith of Baltimore, Md. He was Governor of Kentucky. He was opposed to the Federalist party with Thomas Jefferson.

George Nicholas<sup>3</sup> and Mary Smith had issue :

- I. Col. R. C. Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, U. S. A.
- II. Maj. Cary Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Smith Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- IV. Nelson Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- V. Capt. George Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, U. S. N.
- VI. Judge Samuel Smith Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married, first, Matilda Prather; second, Mary Smith.
- VII. Maria Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Col. Owings, of Kentucky.
- VIII. Ann Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Lewis Saunders.
- IX. Georgina Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Joseph H. Hawkins.
- X. Margaret Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married, first, Gen'l J. C. Bartlett, U. S. A.; second, Gov. Thomas Fletcher.
- XI. Elizabeth Randolph Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married James Gabriel Trotter, of Lexington, Ky.
- XII. Henrietta Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Richard Hawes.
- XIII. Clara Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, unmarried.

III. Lewis Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>2</sup> and Ann Cary, his wife, of Albemarle. Married Miss Harris. Issue:

I. John Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.

II. Wilson Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.

III. Cary Ann Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Rev. Wingfield.

III. Wilson Cary Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>2</sup> and Ann Cary. Married Margaret Peggy Smith, sister of General Samuel Smith of Baltimore, Md. Issue:

I. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, U. S. S. La. Married Susan Vincent, of New Orleans, La. (Carter Tree says Miss Butler.)

II. John S. Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, b. 1800; d. 1864. Married, first, Miss Hollins; second, Esther Stevenson.

III. Margaret Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, unmarried.

IV. Mary Buchanan Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married John Patterson, son of William Patterson, merchant of Baltimore, whose daughter married Jerome Bonaparte.

V. Sarah Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.

VI. Jane Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Thomas Jefferson Randolph. (Randolph Family, Chapter V.)

VII. Sidney Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, married Dabney Carr.

VIII. Cary Ann Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, married John Spier Smith.

III. Elizabeth Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Robert Carter Nicholas and Ann Cary. Married Edmund Randolph, Governor of Virginia. Issue:

I. Peyton Randolph<sup>4</sup>. Married Maria Ward.

II. Susan Randolph<sup>4</sup>. Married Bennett Taylor.

III. Edmonia Randolph<sup>4</sup>. Married John L. Preston.

IV. Lucy Randolph<sup>4</sup>. Married Judge Peter V. Daniel. (Randolph Family, Chapter V.)

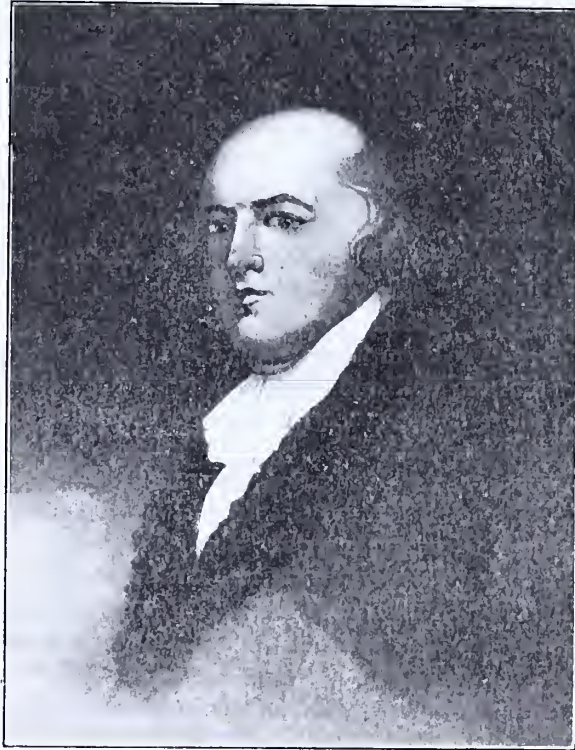
III. Sarah Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Robert Carter Nicholas and Ann Cary, his wife. Married John H. Norton. Issue:

I. Courtenay Norton<sup>4</sup>. Married, first, Warner Lewis; married, second, Landon Carter.

II. Anne Norton<sup>4</sup>. Married Gen. Armistead.

III. Rev. J. H. Norton<sup>4</sup>, of New York. Married Miss Gray. Issue:

- I. Rev. J. Norton<sup>6</sup>, of Kentucky. Married Mary Sutton.  
Issue:  
Juliette Norton<sup>6</sup>.



WILSON CARY NICHOLAS  
Governor of Virginia 1814 to 1816

- II. Rev. George H. Norton<sup>6</sup>, of Alexandria, Va. Married  
Nannie Marshall. Issue:  
I. Claudia Norton<sup>7</sup>. Married Rev. John K. Mason. Issue:  
I. Hatley Mason<sup>8</sup>.  
II. Lucy Mason<sup>8</sup>.  
III. Minnie Mason<sup>8</sup>.  
IV. Mary Mason<sup>8</sup>.  
III. Robert Carter Norton<sup>6</sup>, of Ohio.



Wilson Cary Nicholas was born Jan. 31, 1761, in Williamsburg, Va., and was educated at William and Mary College, which institution he left at the age of eighteen years, to enter the army. His ability as a soldier met with deserved recognition, and he was the commander of Washington's life-guard until it was disbanded in 1783, when he settled in Albemarle County, on his estate called "Warren." In the same year he married Margaret, daughter of John Smith, of Baltimore, Maryland.

The public services of Mr. Nicholas began in 1784, as the representative of Albemarle Co., in the House of Delegates to Virginia. At the close of the session of 1785 he returned to private life, from which retirement he was called to represent the county in the House of Delegates, from 1789 to 1790, and from 1794 to 1799, when he was elected to the United States Senate. In this latter body he took a distinguished position as a Republican leader, and at this highly important time zealously supported all the measures projected by his party for the good of the country. Seeing most of his wishes in this respect accomplished, he resigned his seat in the Senate, 1804, and turned his attention to his own neglected private affairs. In 1806 he declined a special mission to France, but in 1807 he was elected to Congress, and again in 1809 was re-elected to the same position.

During this exciting and momentous period he took the patriotic stand of determined opposition, and if need be, aroused resistance to the policy of France and Great Britain. In December, 1814, Mr. Nicholas was elected Governor of Virginia, and although the State at that time was passing through the great ordeal of a foreign war, under peculiarly trying circumstances, he did not hesitate to accept the position with its unusual weight of care and anxiety.

The announcement of peace being made in the following year, Nicholas showed himself devoted to the honor and welfare of his native State, combining with his zeal a knowledge of her capacities and her needs.

In the spring of 1819, retiring permanently from public life, he returned to his country seat, "Warren," but his health had been seriously impaired by the fatigue and anxiety incident to many positions of responsibility, and his useful life was drawing near its close.

Being advised to try the benefits of a journey on horseback, he set out and reached "Tufton," the residence of his son-in-law,



Thomas Jefferson Randolph. Here his strength failed, and he expired suddenly, October 10, 1820. Popular and successful, his life was crowned with many honors, and he has left the memory of valuable services rendered, both to his State and to his country.

III. Philip Norborne Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>2</sup> and Ann Cary. He was many years Attorney-General of Virginia, President of the Farmers Bank in Richmond, Va.; member of the Virginia Convention 1829-30; Judge of the General Court of Virginia. He was associated with William Wirt and George Hay in an able defence of James Thompson Callender, who was tried in Richmond, Va., May 1800, before Judge Samuel Chase of the United States Supreme Court, for publishing a pamphlet entitled, "The Prospect Before Us," in which the character of President John Adams was infamously libelled. The prosecuting attorney was Thomas Nelson, son of Gen'l Thomas Nelson, Jr., of the Revolution.

The zeal of Judge Chase in directing the prosecution subjected him to the charge of having transcended his powers, and occasioned his famous trial for impeachment before the United States Senate.

Judge Philip Norborne Nicholas<sup>3</sup> married, first, Mary Spear, of Baltimore; married, second, Maria Carter, daughter Thomas Taylor and Mary Ann Byrd, daughter of William Armistead, of Clarke Co., Va., and granddaughter of the third Colonial William Byrd of Westover, James River.

Judge Nicholas<sup>3</sup> married, February 19, 1798, Mary Spear, of Baltimore, Md., daughter of Col. John Spear, who was the son of William Spear.

William Spear's daughter, Dorothy, married William Patterson, and was the mother of Mrs. Elizabeth Patterson Bonaparte and others. Another daughter married General Samuel Smith.

Judge Nicholas<sup>3</sup> and Mary Spear, his first wife, had issue:

- I. John Spear Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary Gilmore.
- II. Wilson N. Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Jane Hollins.
- III. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Elizabeth Bush Ambler, daughter of Col. John Ambler of Jamestown, Va.  
(Issue Volume I, Chapters V, VI, and VII.)

Issue by second wife:

- IV. Jane Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.

- V. Philip Cary Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, a well-known member of the bar in Richmond, Va., and a long efficient librarian of the State Library of Virginia.
- VI. Elizabeth Byrd Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, b. December 16, 1830; d. July 30, 1901.
- VII. Sidney Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Selma Hudgins.  
I, Louise Pecquet du Bellet, visited Shockoe Cemetery, June 8, 1904, and saw the following inscription on tombstone:

Phillip Norborne Nicholas  
Died August 18, 1849  
74 years of age

In early manhood, he was appointed Attorney-General of Virginia, and from that time until his death occupied a position of high trust and responsibility. As a judge, though firm and decided, he was always bland and courteous. His principles were those of a patriot and republican. In all the social relations his uniform kindness gained him many devoted friends, who will long lament his loss.

To the left was the tomb of his second wife:

Maria Carter Nicholas  
Daughter of  
Thomas Taylor Byrd  
Died June 27, 1877  
Aged 82.

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

IV. Judge Samuel Smith Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (George<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of George Nicholas, Governor of Kentucky, and Mary Smith, his wife. Married, first, Matilda Prather; second, Mary Smith. He published a masterly plea for the *habeas corpus* when it was suspended by President Lincoln during the Civil War.  
Issue:

- I. Mary Jane Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Graves.
- II. Matilda Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, B. Spratt; married, second, Hon. P. Barrett, of Mo.
- III. Margaret Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, married, first, Thomas; married, second, ———.

- IV. Julia Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Maj. James Johnson, C. S. A.  
Issue:
- I. Mary Johnson<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. James C. Johnson<sup>6</sup>.
  - III. Matilda Johnson<sup>6</sup>.
  - V. George Nieholas<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, Emma Hawes; second,  
Mary A. Pope.
- Issue by first wife:
- I. Emma J. Nieholas<sup>6</sup>. Married John Churchill. Issue:
  - I. John Churehill<sup>7</sup>.
- Issue by second wife:
- II. Werden Nieholas<sup>6</sup>. Married Lula Cherry. Issue:
  - I. Margaretta Nicholas<sup>7</sup>.
- III. George Nieholas<sup>6</sup>. Married Evelyn Thompson.
- IV. Sarah Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
  - V. Lawrence Nieholas<sup>6</sup>.
  - VI. Prather Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
  - VII. Cary Nieholas<sup>6</sup>.
  - VIII. Matilda Nieholas<sup>6</sup>.
  - IX. Mary Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
  - VI. Col. John Nieholas<sup>5</sup>, U. S. N., 1803.
  - VII. Catherine Rudolph Nieholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Rudolph Fink.  
Issue:
  - I. Albert Fink<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Mary N. Fink<sup>6</sup>.
  - III. Margaretta Fink<sup>6</sup>.
  - IV. Henry Fink<sup>6</sup>.
  - V. Cargetta Fink<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Maria Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (George<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Governor George Nicholas, of Kentucky, and Mary Smith, his wife. Married Col. Owings, of Kentucky. Issue:
- I. B. Owings<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Robert Owings<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. John Owings<sup>5</sup>.
  - IV. Mary Owings<sup>5</sup>.
  - V. Margaret Owings<sup>5</sup>.
  - VI. Ann Owings<sup>5</sup>. Married Hon. Mason, Member of Congress.
- IV. Elizabeth R. Nieholas<sup>4</sup> (George<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Governor George Nicholas of Kentucky and Mary

Smith, his wife. Married James Gabriel Trotter, of Lexington, Ky.  
Issue:

- I. George R. Trotter<sup>5</sup>. Married Amanda Gallaway.
- II. Cary Ann Trotter<sup>5</sup>. Married Edward Hawes.
- III. Margaret Trotter<sup>5</sup>. Married John Fowler Leary.
- IV. Henrietta Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (George<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Governor George Nicholas, of Kentucky, and Mary Smith, his wife. Married Richard Hawes. Issue:

- I. Gen'l Marion Hawes<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A. Married Maria Southgate.
- II. Cary Hawes<sup>5</sup>, d. at Chickamauga.
- III. George N. Hawes<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Samuel Hawes<sup>5</sup>.
- V. Henrietta Hawes<sup>5</sup>. Married Rev. — Davis.
- IV. Clara Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, daughter of Governor George Nicholas of Kentucky.
- III. Lewis Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>2</sup> and Ann Cary. Married Miss Harris. Issue:

- I. John Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- II. Wilson Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Cary Ann Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Rev. — Wingfield.
- IV. Anne Cary Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John Nicholas, of New York, and Anne Rose Lawson, his wife. Married Abraham Dox. Issue:

- I. Peter M. Dox<sup>5</sup>, d. ———. Married, first, Matilda Pope; married, second, Margaret Simpson.
- II. John N. Dox<sup>5</sup>, deceased.
- III. George N. Dox<sup>5</sup>, d. ———. Married, first, Susan L. Clarke.  
Issue:
  - I. Alice N. Dox<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Susan Dox<sup>6</sup>. Married, second, Mrs. Delaney, d. ———.  
Issue:
    - I. George Dox<sup>6</sup>, d. ———.
    - IV. Susan L. Dox<sup>5</sup>. Married Peter G. Dox.
    - V. Mary B. Dox<sup>5</sup>. Married Rev. F. Wardwell.
    - VI. Dudley W. Dox<sup>5</sup>. Married Martha Hazard.
    - VII. A daughter Dox.
    - VIII. Anne N. Dox<sup>5</sup>. Lives in Geneva, New York.

IV. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of John Nicholas of New York and Anne Rose Lawson, his wife. Married Mary Selden Rose, his cousin, daughter of Robert S. and Jane Lawson Rose. Issue:

I. John Cary Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, d. ——. Married Kate Rench.

II. Hon. George Wilson Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, of Geneva, N. Y. Married Olivia M. Gallagher. No issue.

III. Robert Rose Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, Santa Fe, New Mexico. Married Mary Sutton.

IV. Jane R. Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, b. 1836, d. 1903. Married (1856), Zachariah S. Claggett, b. 1821, d. 1890, Hagerstown, Md.

IV. Margaret Caroline Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John Nicholas, of New York, and Anne Rose Lawson, his wife, d. ——. Married Dr. R. B. Leonard, of Lansingburgh, New York. Issue:

I. Mary Leonard<sup>5</sup>.

II. Betty Leonard<sup>5</sup>.

III. Anne T. Leonard<sup>5</sup>.

IV. Cornelia Leonard<sup>5</sup>.

V. John Leonard<sup>5</sup>.

IV. John Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of John Nicholas, of New York, and Anne Rose Lawson, his wife. Married Virginia Gallagher. Mr. and Mrs. Nicholas d. ——. Issue:

I. Mary Murray Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, of Geneva, N. Y.

II. Philip Norborne Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, of Geneva, N. Y. Married Emily E. Jackson.

III. Charles G. Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, d. ——. Married Sarah Fitch.

IV. Wilson C. Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, deceased.

V. Anne Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.

VI. Robert C. Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, of Warner, Texas.

VII. Virginia Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, deceased.

IV. Jane R. Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John Nicholas, of New York, and Anne Rose Lawson, his wife, b. 1836; d. 1903. Married (1856) Zachariah S. Claggett, b. 1821; d. 1890, of Hagerstown, Md. Issue:

I. Robert Carter N. Claggett<sup>5</sup>, now of Cresco, Iowa. Married Ella Hall, and d. leaving no issue.

II. Eliza Claggett<sup>5</sup>, deceased.

III. Mary Claggett<sup>5</sup>, deceased.

- IV. Gavin Lawson N. Claggett<sup>5</sup>, now in Mexico.
- V. George Claggett<sup>5</sup>, deceased.
- VI. Samuel Claggett<sup>5</sup>, now of Roanoke City, Va. Married  
Mrs. Nannie L. Budwell. Issue:
  - I. Nannie Claggett<sup>6</sup>.
- VII. Susan Claggett<sup>5</sup>, deceased.
- VIII. John Cary N. Claggett<sup>5</sup>, now in Mexico.
- IX. Dudley Claggett<sup>5</sup>, deceased.
- X. Jennie N. Claggett<sup>5</sup>, d. 1904; unmarried.
- XI. Zachariah S. Claggett<sup>5</sup>, now of Atlanta, Ga.
- XII. Frederick Dorsey Claggett<sup>5</sup>. Married Mabel Gill; they  
reside in Cincinnati.
- XIII. Walter M. Claggett<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>),  
son of Governor Wilson Cary Nicholas and Margaret Peggy  
Smith, his wife. Married Susan Vincent, of New Orleans, La.  
Issue:
  - I. Caroline Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Margaret Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Mary Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.
  - IV. Wilson Cary Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. John Smith Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>),  
son of Wilson Cary Nicholas and Margaret Smith, his wife. Mar-  
ried (1830) Esther Goodwin Stevenson, of Baltimore. John S.  
Nicholas, b. 1800, was Commodore at his death in 1863 or '64. He  
always went by the sobriquet of "Old Captain." He was a fine  
officer and greatly beloved by all and was said to be the hand-  
somest man in the Navy.

Commodore John Smith Nicholas was stationed at the navy yard, where three of his children were born. In Cooper's "Afloat and Ashore" there is an account of a fire in New York, where noble service was done by a company of naval officers which was commanded by Capt. John Smith Nicholas, to whom was given the credit of having used dynamite to put a stop to further damage, the first time it was used in this country. He was a man of commanding presence and was said to be the handsomest and most popular man in the navy. He was always able to manage his men without having to resort to irons or crude methods. At one time, although for many years in the navy, he could not



swim, and falling overboard, he looked up and found the water black with sailors, all anxious to rescue their dear old commander. He was retired the first six months of the war, so I do not know that he was especially distinguished.



JOHN SMITH NICHOLAS, JR.

Son of John Smith Nicholas and Esther Stevenson, his wife

John Smith Nicholas and Esther Goodwin Stevenson, his wife, had issue:

- I. Wilson C. Nicholas<sup>s</sup>. Married Augusta Moale, of Baltimore. He was of Atamasca, Md.
- II. John S. Nicholas<sup>s</sup>. Married Mary Stuart Lawlor.
- III. George Stevenson Nicholas<sup>s</sup>. Married Elizabeth Purdy.

- IV. Henry Ingersoll Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Alice Hollins.
- V. Augusta Campbell Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married (1868) Edward de Russey, of New Brunswick, New Jersey.
- VI. Cary Annie Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, d. in New Brunswick, New Jersey, 1901.
- VII. Robert Carter Nieholas<sup>5</sup>, d. in childhood.
- VIII. Elsie Nieholas<sup>5</sup>, d. young. Married Henry Potter.
- IV. Sidney Nieholas<sup>4</sup> (Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of Governor Wilson Cary Nicholas and Margaret Smith, his wife. Married Dabney Carr. Issue:
  - I. Wilson Cary Nieholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Sue Henderson.
  - II. Cary Ann Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Maj. Thomas C. Peyton. Issue:
    - I. Sidney Peyton<sup>6</sup>. Married Rt. Rev. William Loyd Gravatt, Bishop Coadjutor, West Virginia (Volume I, Chapters VI and VII).
    - II. Bernard Peyton<sup>6</sup>. Married Louisa Ramsay. Issue:
      - I. Ashton Peyton<sup>7</sup>.
      - II. Bernard Peyton<sup>7</sup>.
      - III. Thomas Peyton<sup>7</sup>.
      - III. Randolph Peyton<sup>6</sup>.
      - III. Samuel Southgate Nieholas<sup>5</sup>.
      - IV. Margaret Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
      - V. Dabney Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Anna Dean. Issue:
        - I. Dabney Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
        - II. Anna Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
        - III. William Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
        - IV. Wallace Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
        - VI. Randolph Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Cary Ann Nieholas<sup>4</sup> (Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Gov. Wilson Cary Nieholas and Margaret Smith, his wife. Married John Spear Smith. Issue:
  - I. Mary Smith<sup>5</sup>. Married Judge Nicholas, of Ky. Issue given above.
  - II. Margaret Smith<sup>5</sup>. Married Robert Carter, of Blenheim, Redlands, Va. Issue:
    - I. Polly Coles Carter<sup>6</sup>.
    - II. Sarah Nieholas Carter<sup>6</sup>.
    - III. Margaret Carter<sup>6</sup>.



ELIZABETH BYRD NICHOLAS  
President of The National Colonial Dames of America

- IV. Robert Carter<sup>6</sup>, Episcopal minister (1906).
- III. John L. Smith<sup>5</sup>. Married Jane Kitty.
- IV. Robert Smith<sup>5</sup>.
- V. Maria Smith<sup>5</sup>. Married John L. Williams. Issue:
  - I. John Williams<sup>6</sup>. Married Lela Leach.
  - II. Cary Anne Williams<sup>6</sup>. Married B. L. Bermis. Issue:
    - I. Charlotte Bermis<sup>7</sup>.
    - II. Frances Bermis<sup>7</sup>.
  - III. Samuel Bermis<sup>7</sup>.
  - IV. John W. Bermis<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Lancaster Williams<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Charlotte R. Williams<sup>6</sup>.
- V. Edmund R. Williams<sup>6</sup>.
- VI. Langbourn M. Williams<sup>6</sup>.
- VII. Eunice G. Williams<sup>6</sup>.
- VIII. William B. Williams<sup>6</sup>.
- IX. Maria W. Williams<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Rev. George H. Norton<sup>5</sup>. Married Nannie Marshall. Issue:
  - I. Claudia Norton<sup>6</sup>. Married Rev. John K. Mason. Issue:
    - I. Hatley Mason<sup>7</sup>.
    - II. Lucy Mason<sup>7</sup>.
  - III. Nannie Mason<sup>7</sup>.
  - IV. Mary Mason<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Robert Carter Norton<sup>5</sup>, of Ohio.
- IV. Wilson H. Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (Philip N.<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of Judge Philip Norborne Nicholas<sup>3</sup> and Mary Spear, first wife. Married Jane Hollins. Issue:
  - I. Philip Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Robert H. Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Mary Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married William K. Forman.
  - IV. Jane H. Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married L. F. Lewis.
  - IV. Elizabeth Byrd Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (Philip N.<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Judge Philip Norborne Nicholas and Maria Byrd, his second wife. She was an accomplished lady, foremost in the art and literary circles of Richmond, Va., and was a leading originator of the Colonial court ball mentioned in the sketch of Lord Botetourt, as having been held in Richmond, February 22, 1876, the pecuniary proceeds of which were patriotically devoted to the furnishing of the Virginia room in the Mount Vernon mansion.

I (author) visited Shockoe Cemetery, June 8, 1904, and saw the handsome tombstone erected by the Colonial dames. This is the inscription:

Here lies the body of  
ELIZABETH BYRD  
NICHOLAS  
Born December 16, 1830  
Died July 30, 1901.  
An Honored Officer  
of the National Society  
The Colonial Dames  
of America  
By whom this stone is erected in  
affectionate and Grateful Memory.

#### FIFTH GENERATION.

V. Margaret Trotter<sup>5</sup> (Elizabeth R. Nicholas<sup>4</sup>, George<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Elizabeth Randolph Nicholas and James Gabriel Trotter, of Lexington, Ky. Married John Fowler Leary. Issue:

- I. James Trotter Leary<sup>6</sup>, Capt. U. S. A. Married Madge Williams, of Washington, D. C. Issue:
- I. Madge Leary<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Eleanor Leary<sup>6</sup>. Married Richard Woolsey Tyler, Major U. S. A. Issue:
- I. Richard Knickerbocker Tyler<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Margaret Knickerbocker Tyler<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Eleanor Leary Tyler<sup>7</sup>. Married James Walter Pilling, of Washington, D. C.
- IV. Margaret Knickerbocker Tyler<sup>7</sup>. Married J. H. Churchill Clark, of Ky. Issue:
- I. Margaret Knickerbocker Clark<sup>8</sup>.
- III. Cary Ann Leary<sup>6</sup>. Married Wallace G. Bone. Issue:
- I. Richard Wallace Bone, Washington, D. C.

V. Captain Wilson Cary Nicholas<sup>5</sup> (John<sup>4</sup>, Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of John Smith Nicholas and Esther Goodwin Stevenson, his wife.

Captain Wilson Cary Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, late of the Maryland Line Confederate States Army, was distinguished for his dash and gal-

lantry during our Civil War, in which he served during its early years as a captain in the First Maryland Infantry, under Stuart and Bradley Johnson, participating in first Manassas, Jackson's Valley campaign, and in all the engagements in which that noted regiment took part up to the time it was mustered out in the fall of 1862. Later on Captain Nicholas won fresh distinction as an officer of the Maryland Cavalry, where he served up to the time of the surrender. Among those now living of that gallant band of Marylanders, "who left their homes and those they cherished" to fight for "Dixie," no one is better known or more beloved than Capt. "Willie Nicholas." Shortly after his return from the war, he married Augusta Moale, daughter of Col. Samuel Moale of Baltimore.

Atamasca, his beautiful home, he inherited from his aunt, the widow of John Patterson, a brother of Mme. Bonaparte. This fine old place, containing nearly 1,000 acres of land, is at the head of the beautiful Green Spring Valley, and is considered one of the finest and most fertile estates in the country. The picturesque old mansion, built more than a century ago, lies almost within a stone's throw of historic St. Thomas Protestant Episcopal Church. Here, surrounded by his interesting family, Captain Nicholas lives the life of a country gentleman, farming his broad acres with skill and industry, and dispensing an old-fashioned Maryland hospitality. His sons, members of the Green Spring Valley Hunt, are among the most noted gentlemen riders in the country. Col. Wilson Cary Nicholas and Augusta Moale, his wife, have issue:

- I. John Patterson Nicholas<sup>6</sup>. Married Daisy Fraser.
- II. Wilson Cary Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Samuel Moale Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Thomas Jefferson Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- V. Randolph Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- VI. Mary Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- VII. Nancy Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- VIII. Cary Anne Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- V. John Smith Nicholas<sup>5</sup> (John<sup>4</sup>, Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of John S. Nicholas and Esther Stevenson, his wife; b. May 3rd, 1839. Married (1873) Mary Stewart Lawlor. He died, Sunday, September, 1905, at his residence, New Brunswick, New Jersey, leaving his widow and eight children. Issue:



- I. Esther Stevenson Nicholas<sup>o</sup>, b. 1874. Married (1898)  
Drury W. Cooper. Issue:
  - I. Drury W. Cooper<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. Esther Stevenson Nicholas Cooper<sup>7</sup>.
  - III. Mary Cooper<sup>7</sup>.
  - IV. Elizabeth Cooper<sup>7</sup>, b. Aug. 11, 1906.
  - II. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>o</sup>, b. 1875. Married (1904)  
Roberta Johnson, of New Brunswick, New Jersey.  
Issue:
    - I. Roberta Johnson, b. Aug. 14, 1905.
    - III. Eleanor Lawlor Nicholas<sup>o</sup>, b. 1877.
    - IV. John Burke Nicholas<sup>o</sup>, b. 1879.
    - V. Mary Lawlor Nicholas<sup>o</sup>, b. 1881.
    - VI. Elizabeth Ridgely Nicholas<sup>o</sup>, b. 18—.
    - VII. Wilson Cary Nicholas<sup>o</sup>.
    - VIII. William Stuart Nicholas<sup>o</sup>, b. ——. He went to Annapolis  
in 1906. An elderly officer told him he hoped he would  
leave as clean a record as his grandfather.
- V. George Stevenson Nicholas<sup>o</sup> (John<sup>4</sup>, Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>,  
George<sup>1</sup>), son of John Smith Nicholas and Esther Goodwin  
Stevenson, his wife; b. Nov. 7, 1840. Married (1869) Elizabeth  
Purdy, of New York, and is a merchant there (1905); address,  
44 Park Avenue. Issue:
  - I. Mary Nicholas<sup>o</sup>, deceased.
  - II. John Nicholas<sup>o</sup>, deceased.
  - III. Elizabeth Teackle Nicholas<sup>o</sup>.
  - IV. George Nicholas<sup>o</sup>.
  - V. Grosvenor Nicholas<sup>o</sup>.
  - VI. Ridgely Nicholas<sup>o</sup>.
  - VII. Virginia Nicholas<sup>o</sup>.
  - V. Augusta Campbell Nicholas<sup>o</sup> (John<sup>4</sup>, Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>,  
George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John Smith Nicholas and Esther Goodwin  
Stevenson, his wife. Married (1868) Edward de Russy, of New  
Brunswick, New Jersey. Mrs. de Russy d. a few years ago, leav-  
ing issue:
    - I. John Jay de Russy<sup>o</sup>.
    - II. Charles Amédée de Russy<sup>o</sup>.
    - III. Julia Wells de Russy<sup>o</sup>.

V. Harry Ingersoll Nicholas<sup>5</sup> (John<sup>4</sup>, Wilson Cary<sup>3</sup>, Robert<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of John Smith Nicholas and Esther Goodwin Stevenson, his wife. Married Alice Hollins, of New York. They have issue:

- I. Nina Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Alice Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Daisy Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Maud Nicholas<sup>6</sup>. Married Captain Niles, of Boston.
- V. Elsie Nicholas<sup>6</sup>. Married Alonzo Potter, son of Bishop Potter. Issue:
  - I. Henry C. Potter<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Harry Ingersoll Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- VII. Beatrice Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- VIII. Marguerite Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- IX. Evelina Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.

The following begins another branch.

King Carter married Judith Armistead.

Elizabeth Carter married, first, Nathaniel Burwell; second, Dr. George Nicholas<sup>1</sup>.

II. John Nicholas<sup>2</sup> (George<sup>1</sup>), second son of Elizabeth Carter and Dr. George Nicholas, of Seven Islands. He was clerk of Albemarle, 1749 to 1815; burgess, 1756-58, and of the Conventions of 1774-75, of Buckingham Co., Va. Married Elizabeth, daughter of Colonel Joshua Fry, of Williamsburg, Va. Issue:

- I. Col. John Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. Married Louisa Carter.
- II. Elizabeth Nicholas<sup>3</sup>, d. unmarried.
- III. George Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. Married Nannie Scott.
- IV. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. Married Martha, widow of Daniel Scott.
- V. Margaret Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. Married ——— Rose.
- VI. Martha Nicholas<sup>3</sup>. Married Edward Scott.
- VII. Joshua Nicholas<sup>3</sup>, of Ky. Married Miss McGehee.

### THIRD GENERATION.

III. Col. John Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of John Nicholas and Elizabeth Fry, his wife, member of the Buckingham Co., Va., Committee of Safety, 1774; burgess, 1774; member of the Convention, 1775. Married Louisa Carter. Issue:

- I. Louisa Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.

- II. Mary Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Nelson Nicholas<sup>4</sup>.
- IV. George Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Stannard. Issue:
  - I. Georgina Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Mr. Buffington.
  - II. Mary Ellen Nicholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Mr. Buffington.
  - V. Virginia Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Francis Lightfoot, of Sandy Point.
- III. George Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), third child of John Nicholas and Elizabeth Fry. Married Nannie Scott, and had issue:
  - I. Margaret Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Col. Walter Fontaine, and d. —.
  - II. Virginia Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. After her sister's death, married Col. Walter Fontaine.
  - IV. Lorenzo Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Martha Ayres. Issue:
    - I. George H. Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.
    - II. John W. Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.
    - V. Frances Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married William Scott. Issue:
      - I. Betty Scott<sup>5</sup>.
      - II. Edward Scott<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of John Nicholas and Elizabeth Fry, his wife; of Seven Islands, Buckingham Co., Va. Married Martha, widow of Daniel Scott.
    - I. Robert Carter Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss O. Bigelow.
    - II. John S. Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Ann Trent.
    - III. George W. Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss F. Bigelow.
    - III. Margaret Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John Nicholas and Elizabeth Fry, his wife. Married — Rose. Issue:
      - I. Robert Rose<sup>4</sup>.
      - II. John Rose<sup>4</sup>.
      - III. Park Rose<sup>4</sup>, and others.
    - III. Martha Nicholas<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), daughter of John Nicholas and Elizabeth Fry, his wife. Married Edward Scott, of Mannintown. Issue:
      - I. John Scott<sup>4</sup>.
      - II. Martha Scott<sup>4</sup>. Married Dr. Royster.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

IV. Robert Carter Nieholas<sup>4</sup> (Robert<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert Carter Nicholas and Mrs. Martha Scott, his wife. Married Miss O. Bigelow. Issue:

I. Robert Carter Nieholas<sup>4</sup>.

II. Martha Nicholas<sup>4</sup>. Married D. U. Barziza, of Texas.

III. Hampden Nieholas<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss W. S. Carrington.

Issue:

I. Aliee Nieholas<sup>5</sup>.

II. Jane Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.

III. Robert C. Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.

IV. Martha Nieholas<sup>5</sup>, and others.

IV. John S. Nicholas<sup>4</sup> (Robert<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert Carter Nieholas and Mrs. Martha Scott, his wife. Married Ann Harrison Trent. Issue:

I. Elizabeth C. Nieholas<sup>5</sup>. Married E. T. Page. Issue:

I. Nannie Page<sup>6</sup>.

II. Mary Page<sup>6</sup>.

III. Nieholas Page<sup>6</sup>.

IV. Edward Page<sup>6</sup>.

V. Bettie Page<sup>6</sup>.

II. Nannie T. Nieholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Thomas D. Jellis, of Lynehburg. After her death married Kate Ambler, daughter of Philip Saint George Ambler, of Amherst Co., Va.

III. Willie Harrison Nieholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Philip Barbour Ambler. (Issue Volume I, Chapters V, VI, and VII.)

IV. John S. Nieholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Ella Cary Ambler. (Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.)

V. William Trent Nicholas<sup>5</sup>, deceased.

VI. Robert Carter Nieholas<sup>5</sup>. Married Mary Carrington.

IV. George W. Nieholas<sup>4</sup> (Robert<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of John S. Nicholas and Mrs. Martha Scott, his wife; married Miss F. Bigelow. Issue:

I. Henry B. Nieholas<sup>5</sup>, d. Fredericksburg, 1862.

II. Philip Norborne Nieholas<sup>5</sup>. Married L. Bigelow. Issue:

I. George Nieholas<sup>6</sup>.

II. Philip Nieholas<sup>6</sup>.

- III. Bigelow Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Reuben Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- V. Henry Nicholas<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Laura Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Belle Nicholas<sup>5</sup>.



MRS. JEROME BONAPARTE  
Née Elizabeth Patterson, of Baltimore, Md.

#### PATTERSON AND BONAPARTE FAMILIES.

Col. John Spear<sup>1</sup> had a son, William Spear<sup>2</sup>, who married and had issue:

- Mary Spear<sup>3</sup>. Married Judge Nicholas.
- Daughter Spear<sup>3</sup>. Married Gen'l Samuel Smith.
- Dorothy Spear<sup>3</sup>. Married William Patterson, father of Mrs. Elizabeth Patterson<sup>4</sup> Bonaparte.
- John Patterson<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary Buchanan Nicholas.

William Patterson, b. November 1, 1752, married (May 15, 1779) Dorothy Spear, daughter of William Spear, b. September 15, 1761; d. May 20, 1814.

Jerome Bonaparte had served under General Le Clerc (Pauline Bonaparte's first husband) in Santo Domingo, and after carrying dispatches home to France had gone to Martinique to command a frigate. About 1803 he was invited to Baltimore, and there at the house of Samuel Cherry, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, he met Elizabeth Patterson, then eighteen. Mr. William Patterson was a frugal, thrifty, well-to-do business man of strict integrity in business matters.

Miss Patterson was desirous of seeing the distinguished Frenchman, and Jerome's curiosity was piqued, as the prettiest girl in Baltimore had been sent to Virginia in order to be kept out of his way. The young lady contrived to attend the city races, and came face to face with her fate.

Jerome was an ardent wooer; the maid was willing to be won, as it had been predicted that she was to wed a distinguished Frenchman, "a prince in disguise," and on the twenty-ninth day of October, 1803, a license for this marriage was issued. A hitch occurred, however, and the marriage did not take place till Christmas eve, bishop John Carroll, brother of Charles Carroll of Carrollton, tying the knot in accordance with the ritual of the Roman Catholic Church.

Bonaparte, who had other views anent the career of his brother, was highly incensed at the marriage. On the 20th of April he caused the French minister of marine to write to the French consul, at New York, his resolution "that no money shall be advanced on the order of Citizen Jerome," and to prohibit all captains of French vessels from receiving on board the young person "to whom Citizen Jerome has connected himself," and to insist on Jerome's return to France by the first French frigate. Such were the wishes of the "First Consul," whose inflexibility can be compared to nothing but the vastness of his conceptions.

It was not until March 31st, 1805, that Jerome embarked at Baltimore, on board the *Erin*, with his wife, for Spain. They had set sail on the previous August, but had been wrecked. Madam Bonaparte's wadded pelisse nearly proved her destruction, as its weight kept her under water; but a sailor fished her up, and shortly



afterward at a hospitable farmhouse she scandalized her aunt by enjoying roast goose and apple-sauce instead of kneeling in prayer and thanksgiving.

Arrived in Spain, Jerome quitted his wife and proceeded to Paris: and on the 3rd of May, 1805, the report of the annulling of the marriage reached Philadelphia. Mrs. Bonaparte arrived in London, where, at Camberwell, July 7th, 1805, was born her son, Jerome Napoleon Bonaparte.

Napoleon offered a pension of 60,000 francs a year if Miss Patterson would return to America and not take the name of Bonaparte. On the 12th of August, 1807, Jerome, who had been spurned by the Queen of Etruria, was married to the Princess Frederica Catherine, of Wurtemberg.

Only once afterwards did he ever meet his American wife: in the gallery of the Pitti Palace, at Florence, in 1821. He was with his second wife.

Mr. Patterson behaved very harshly to his daughter, and in dying only bequeathed her some houses and his cellar of wine. Jerome sent her a thousand guineas on the birth of their son; he subsequently offered her, after his second marriage, the Principality of Smalcald, with \$40,000 a year—an offer declined in the words, “Though Westphalia may be a considerable kingdom, it is not large enough for two queens.”

Napoleon was so pleased with this answer that he offered to befriend her. She asked to be created a duchess, which was promised, but the promised was never carried out. He forwarded her \$20,000 in cash, and allowed her an annuity of \$12,000 till he abdicated, permitting her to sign receipts “Elizabeth Bonaparte.”

Jerome taunted her with accepting money from his brother, but she retorted that she preferred the shelter under the wing of an eagle to shelter under the wing of a goose.

Talleyrand said, “If she were a queen, with what grace she would reign”; and Gortschakoff, then a diplomatic debutant, observed, if she had been “near the throne the allies would have found it more difficult to depose Napoleon.”

Her son, Jerome Napoleon Bonaparte, was b. 1805; d. 1870; was graduated at Harvard in 1826, and studied law, but never practiced. He married the daughter of a wealthy resident of Roxbury, Mass., Susan Mary Williams. They had issue of two sons. Jerome Napoleon, b. 1830, and Charles Joseph, b. June 9, 1851.

Jerome Napoleon Bonaparte graduated at West Point. He had a decided taste for military life, which pleased his grandmother. He served, first, in the United States Army; later as a lieutenant in the French Army. The young man displayed great bravery at Balaklava, Inkerman, and at the siege of Sevastopol he won the Crimean medal from Queen Victoria. Until his death he fought in the courts of France for his right to a place in the imperial line. The French allowed him the title of Prince Napoleon, but to it were attached no privileges and he spent the latter part of his life in the United States. He died in 1893.

When King Jerome Bonaparte died in June, 1857, he said nothing in his will whatever of his first marriage. Madame Bonaparte applied for a share of the estate, but her claims were not allowed in the French Courts. To recognize her rights to a share of the will of her husband would have been tantamount to recognizing her as a member of the imperial family, which would have complicated the succession to the throne.

Madam Bonaparte lived a secluded life the latter part of her life. She was a woman of intense vitality, and though several times, notably in 1838, her life was despaired of, she recovered to repeat her favorite prediction that she would live a hundred years. She died on April 4, 1879, at the ripe age of ninety-four.

The following article came out in *Munsey's Magazine*, September, 1905:

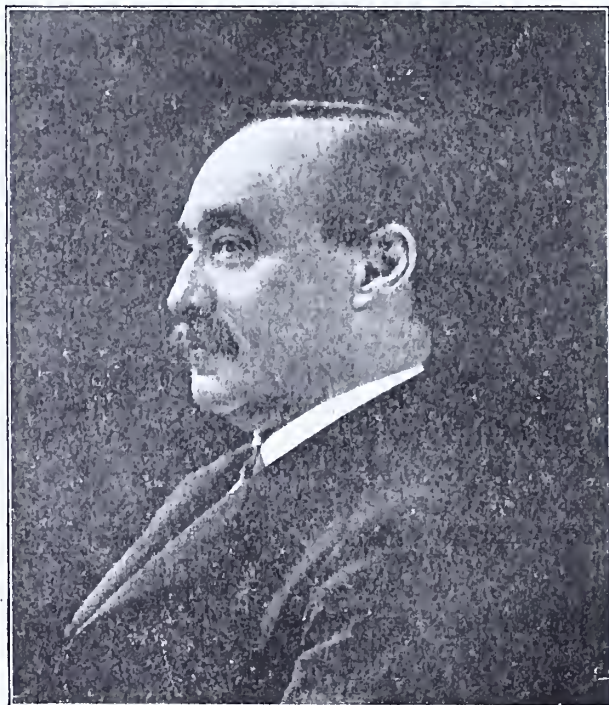
#### THE NEW SECRETARY OF THE NAVY.

In accepting the office of Secretary of the Navy, Charles Joseph Bonaparte, of Baltimore, did what a good many other Americans have shown a creditable readiness to do—he gave to the public service, time and abilities worth far more than his official stipend. Of course, apart from the attraction of a high and honourable post, it is not difficult to find a motive for his action in his strong sense of duty, and especially in his warm personal friendship for the President.

No member of the Roosevelt Cabinet, with the possible exception of Mr. Root, stands closer to the President than Secretary Bonaparte. As was said at the time of Mr. Paul Morton's appointment, Mr. Roosevelt has shown a strong tendency, in selecting his most responsible advisers, to gather about him men whom he personally knows and trusts. The tendency is a natural and an entirely justifiable one.

His acquaintance with Mr. Bonaparte grew out of their mutual interest in the movement for civil service reform. In the days when Mr. Roosevelt

was a member of the Civil Service Commission, the two men were thrown together frequently in working for a cause in which both have always been earnestly devoted. Another tie between them is the fact that both are Harvard men—though they were not contemporaries at college, Mr. Bonaparte having finished his academic course and graduated from the law school two years before the President matriculated.



CHARLES J. BONAPARTE

Secretary of the Navy of the United States. Grandson of Jerome Bonaparte, the youngest brother of Napoleon

A lifelong resident of Baltimore, the new Secretary of the Navy is known outside of his native city almost entirely through the fight he has made for purity in municipal government and in the entire public service. He is a Republican, but a most independent one, for he has been equally active in opposing corruption in both parties. His present portfolio is practically his first office, for he has been entirely outside of the Republican organization of his State since he entered public life—though since his elevation to a Cabinet post the local “machine” has shown its willingness to recog-

nize his leadership. Some time ago he acted for a few months as supervisor of elections in Maryland, at the urgent request of a Democratic Governor. He has also served during the last three years as an Indian commissioner—a work which he undertook at Mr. Roosevelt's special request in order to investigate and correct serious irregularities in the conduct of the bureau. He has never been a candidate for anything except when he was nominated as a Presidential elector in the campaign of 1904. The result showed the esteem in which—aristocrat as his opponents are pleased to term him—he is held by the mass of voters, for he received more ballots than any other elector from Maryland; though the other Republican nominees were defeated.

Mr. Bonaparte is a man whom professional politicians of both parties cordially dislike. He is absolutely impervious to criticism or compliment of the usual sort. A trait that may perhaps be significant of his Napoleonic ancestry in his thorough enjoyment of a good fight.

In his professional work as a lawyer nothing gives him more pleasure than an opportunity to exercise the gift of repartee, which he possesses to perfection. As a public speaker he is not exactly eloquent, although his command of language is ready and wide. He is lacking in personal magnetism, an element so necessary to the most successful oratory, but he uses the weapons of wit and sarcasm as few other men can. In his hands they are as keen as a Damascus blade, as his political opponents well know. He can force the attention of his audience, whether it agrees with him or not, compelling it to admire him for the sweeping way in which he overwhelms his adversaries.

In his private life the new secretary is a typical Baltimorean of the old school. When not at work in his modest office it has been his custom to divide his time between his town house and his country place.

Mr. Bonaparte's friends and associates include such men as Cardinal Gibbons, Dr. Daniel Gilman, and other Baltimoreans eminent in the intellectual life. Outside of the political movements that he has most closely at heart, he is probably as deeply interested in the progress of the church to which he belongs as in anything else.

He is a leading adviser of Cardinal Gibbons, and one of the most noted and influential Roman Catholic laymen in the United States. His personal tastes are of the quietest. He is seldom seen at places of amusement, and very rarely at social functions, except the receptions of such bodies as the Civil Service Reform Association or some other assemblage where his presence is necessary for public reasons.

While Mr. Bonaparte has just completed the fifty-fourth year of his age, he might be taken for a much younger man.

His appearance strongly suggests his descent from the youngest brother of the great Napoleon, although this is a subject which he never discusses, being far prouder of his American citizenship.

Mr. Bonaparte—the only survivor in the American line of the young French officer who afterwards became King of Westphalia—at once attracts attention by his inheritance of the Napoleonic features. He has a clear,

ruddy complexion, bronzed from outdoor exposure, with jet-black hair and eyes. His attire is usually black. He prefers the umbrella to the cane, and this habit increases his resemblance to a studious professor or learned doctor.

Married Ellen Channing Day, of Newport, Rhode Island, in 1875. No issue.

Mrs. Bonaparte is a refined and cultivated lady; she is a gracious and tactful hostess. Indeed, there is a strong resemblance between the Secretary's wife and the Mistress of the White House.

Jerome Napoleon Bonaparte<sup>3</sup>, son of Jerome Napoleon Bonaparte<sup>2</sup> and Susan May Williams, his wife, married, 1871, Caroline Le Roy Edgar. Issue:

I. Louise Eugenie Bonaparte<sup>4</sup>, b. 1873. Married (1896)  
Count Adam Molke-Huitfeldt, of Denmark.

II. Jerome Napoleon Charles Bonaparte<sup>4</sup>, b. 1878; unmarried.



## CHAPTER XI

## A NARRATIVE OF MY LIFE FOR MY FAMILY.

BY FRANCIS T. BROOKE.

'Tis pleasant to recall our former days,  
What we have been, and done, and seen, and heard,  
And write it down for those we love, to read.

To my beloved Daughter,

HELEN,

Who has been my amanuensis in preparing this family narrative, has written about two-thirds of it from my dictation, and aided me essentially in completing it—I now affectionately dedicate it, with my paternal blessing.

## NARRATIVE.

I was born on the 27th of August, 1763, at Smithfield, the residence of my beloved father, upon the Rappahannock, four miles from Fredericksburg. Tradition said it was called Smithfield after Capt. John Smith, otherwise called Pocahontas Smith; but as there is nothing in the histories of Virginia stating that Capt. Smith was ever so high up the Rappahannock, I think that tradition was in error. I think it was so called after a Capt. Laurence Smith, who, in 1679, had a military commission to defend the frontier against the Indians in that region. It was an estate belonging to one Tanner, who was in England, and authorized his agent to sell it, and it was bought by my grandfather, Taliaferro, who then resided at Epsom, the adjoining estate, and he gave it to my mother—God bless her. The estate now belongs to Mr. Thomas Pratt, the old house in which I was born is burnt down, and he has built a new one, not so large, and higher up the river. When I was a boy these were the traces of a fortification, including a fine spring, as a defence against Indians.

My father was the youngest son of my grandfather, who came to this country, with a Mr. Beverley, at the time Gov. Spotswood came, about the year 1715; he became the Surveyor of the State,



and was with the Governor when he first crossed the Blue Ridge, for which he received from the Executive a medal, a gold horse shoe set with garnets, and worn as a brooch, which I have seen in the possession of Edmund Brooke, who belonged to the oldest branch of the family.

My father's name was Richard Brooke. He left four sons and a daughter by my mother, and a fifth son by his second wife; he died aged sixty of gout in the stomach, in the year 1792. He was a handsome man (as may be seen by his picture which I have); with great vivacity of spirits; he read much; had a good library of the books of that age. He sent my two eldest brothers, Laurence and Robert, at an early age, to Edinburgh College, where they were educated for the two learned professions, Medicine and Law, and did not return to this country until the revolution had progressed. They got over to France and Dr. Brooke was appointed by Dr. Franklin Surgeon of the "Bon Homme Richard," commanded by the celebrated John Paul Jones, and was in the battle with the *Serapis*, and all the battles of that memorable cruise.

My brother Robert was captured and carried into New York, and sent back to England by Lord Howe, went again to Scotland, again got over to France, and returned to Virginia in a French frigate that brought the arms supplied by the French government. He did not remain idle, but joined a volunteer troop of cavalry, under Capt. Larkin Smith; was captured in a charge of dragoons by a Capt. Loller of Simeoe's Queen's Rangers, at Westham, seven miles above Richmond. He was soon exchanged; commenced the practice of law; was a member of the House of Delegates, and, in 1794, was elected Governor of the State, and afterwards Attorney General, in opposition to Bushrod Washington, who was afterwards a Judge of the Supreme Court of the United States. My brother Robert died while Attorney General, in the year 1799. Dr. Brooke died some years after, I do not recollect the year.

My father was devoted to the education of his children. He sent my twin brother, John, and myself very young to school. We went to several English schools, some of them at home, and at nine years of age, went to the grammar school in Fredericksburg, taught by a Trinity gentleman from Dublin, by the name of Lennegan, who, having left the country at the commencement of

the War of the Revolution, was hanged for petit treason, and being sentenced to be quartered after he was cut down, was only gashed down the thighs and arms and delivered to his mother, afterwards came to life, got over to England, was smuggled over to France, being a Catholic, and died in the monastery of La Trappe (according to Jonah Barrington, in whose work this account of him will be found). My father sent us to other Latin and Greek schools, but finally engaged a private tutor—a Scotch gentleman of the name of Alexander Dunham, by whom we were taught Latin and Greek. He was an amiable man, but entirely ignorant of everything but Latin and Greek, in which he was a ripe scholar. We read with him all the higher classics; I read Juvenal and Perseus with great facility, and some Greek—the Testament and Æsop's Fables.

Having passed the age of sixteen, the military age of that period, I was appointed a First Lieutenant in Gen. Harrison's regiment of Artillery, the last of the year 1780; and my twin brother, not liking to part with me, shortly after got the commission of First Lieutenant in the same regiment. Our first campaign was under the Marquis LaFayette, in the year 1781, during the invasion of Lord Cornwallis. We came to Richmond in March of that year and were ordered to go on board an old sloop with a mulatto Captain. She was loaded with cannon and military stores, destined to repair the fortification at Portsmouth, which had been destroyed the winter before by the traitor, General Arnold. She dropped down the river to Curles, where we were put on board, with the stores of the twenty-gun ship, the *Renown*, commanded by Commodore Lewis, of Fredericksburg; in addition to which ship, there were two other square-rigged vessels and an armed schooner. We were detained some days, lying before Curles, the residence of Mr. Richard Randolph, who treated us with great hospitality, we being often on shore.

In about ten days the ship was hailed from the opposite bank, by Major North, one of the aids of the Baron Steuben, who was then at Chesterfield Court House. Major North was brought on board the ship. He informed Commodore Lewis that the British fleet was in Hampton Roads, and ordered him to put the artillery and stores on the north bank of the river, and to run the ship and the rest of the fleet as high up as he could. I believe it was to

Osborne's; where they were taken by the British, some carried off—according to Simcoe's account—and the rest scattered.

Having been set on shore on the north side of the river, when we arrived in Richmond, I was ordered to take the command of the Magazine and Laboratory at Westham, seven miles above that place.

My brother John joined a fragment of a State regiment, under a Major Ewell, but on the arrival of the Marquis, joined a company of his own regiment, under Captain Coleman, and cannonaded Gen. Phillips, then in Manchester, from the heights of Rockets, below Richmond.

In a few days after I took the command of the Magazine, I saw Mr. Jefferson, then Governor of the State, for the first time. He came to Westham with one of his council, Mr. Blair, whom I had known before, and who informed me they wanted to go into the Magazine. I replied they could not, on which they introduced me to Mr. Jefferson as the Governor. I turned out the guard, he was saluted, and permitted to go in. They were looking for flints for the Army of the South, and of the North, and found an abundant supply.

The condition of Virginia can hardly be imagined. Her soldiers were nearly all in the army of Gen. Green, her military stores exhausted, by constant supplies to the Southern Army—yet there was a spirit and energy in her people to overcome all her difficulties. I was continued in the command of the Magazine. Lord Cornwallis having crossed the James River, at Westover, I was ordered to remove it to the south side of the river, and carried it to Brittan's Ferry, on the opposite side of the river, from whence I was ordered to remove it back again to Westham, where it remained until I was ordered to throw the cannon into the creek, and carry the rest of the stores to the Point of Fork, now Columbia, as I did. From thence I was ordered to carry a large portion of the powder and small arms, etc., to Henderson's Ford, now Milton, four miles below Charlottesville; there I remained until Col. Tarleton came to the latter place. There was a Capt. Lieutenant Bohannon, who had come a few days before, and who ordered me to remain where I was, and defend the Magazine against any detachment that might be sent to take it, until I heard that Tarleton had crossed the river at Charlottesville, after which I should join

Baron Steuben, at the Point of Fork. About eleven o'clock I heard that Tarleton had crossed the river at Charlottesville, and driven away the Legislature. I then commenced my march to join Baron Steuben. By the road I took, I was thrown on the south of him, and, about a quarter of an hour by sun, I met a man who, on my inquiry, informed me I was five miles from the Baron's encampment, then occupied by Lord Cornwallis' light infantry, who had driven the Baron across the river that morning. Capt. Bohannon having ordered me, if I could not join the Baron, to proceed to Staunton, and to join the army of the Marquis LaFayette. By sunrise the next morning I crossed the south branch of the James River, and thence to Hardware, where I crossed the river.

The next day I met Col. Davis. I had known him before, and without hesitation he asked me where I was going. I told him I was going to Buckingham Court House, to get provisions for the men. He replied that Lord Cornwallis' light infantry would be there before me. I said I had left them in the Fork the night before; on which he said, "You will do as you please." There was a panic everywhere.

The next day I crossed the Ridge, about six miles to the south of Roekfish Gap, where there is a large limestone spring on the top. When I got to where Waynesborough is, I found a large force of eight hundred or a thousand riflemen, under the command of a General McDowell, who, Gov. McDowell has told me, was from North Carolina. He stopped me, saying he had orders to stop all troops to defend the Gap. I replied that I belonged to the Continental Army, and had orders to go to Staunton, and said to the men, "Move on," and he let me pass. In the morning I entered the town. There, for a few days, I heard Patrick Henry, Richard Henry Lee, George Nicholas, and my neighbor, Mann Page, of Mansfield.

It may seem strange that so young as I was, not seventeen years old, that I should have the command that I had. My twin brother, who was an older twin, but a younger officer, had left me at Henderson's Ford, being ordered to Albemarle's old Court House, where there were public stores. I had been in command of about seventy-five men, to guard the Magazine and to make cartridges, portfire, etc., and when I arrived at Staunton, Col. Davis, whom

I found there, insisted on retaining me in that service, but Capt. Fleming Gaines, who belonged to Harrison's regiment of artillery, ordered me to join my corps as speedily as I could in the army of the Marquis, and furnished me with his horses and servant to do so.

In a few days I left Staunton and crossed the Ridge at Swift Run Gap. At that time Lord Cornwallis, having learned that the Pennsylvania line had arrived at Culpeper Court House, changed his route. His first design was to burn Hunter's Iron Works, above Falmouth, which were very valuable. Gen. Weidon at the same time commanded a small body of militia, near Fredericksburg, from which he had nothing to fear in his progress to burn the iron works. He, however, began to retire, when the Marquis recrossed the Rappahannock, at the Raccoon Ford, and by opening an old road, threw himself between Lord Cornwallis and our remaining stores in the upper country, and followed Lord Cornwallis at a respectful distance.

The corps of Tarleton and Simcoe rejoined him. He halted one day on the heights, above Gooseland Court House, when the Marquis also retrograded and placed the army behind Mechum's Creek—I think they called it—in Fluvanna. Both armies proceeded slowly towards Richmond, and at Westham I found a corps of which my brother Robert, afterwards Governor of the State, was a volunteer. He was captured by a troop of Simcoe's regiment, commanded by Capt. Loller. Lord Cornwallis kept on his way to Williamsburg, and the Marquis halted a few miles below New Kent Court House, where, on the Fourth of July, the army was reviewed and fired a few *de joie*.

I was attached to Gen. Lawson's brigade, with one six pounder, and had some opportunity to know the whole force of the American army. It consisted of eight thousand militia, Stephens and Lawson's brigades; of one thousand light infantry, New England troops, brought on by the Marquis; the Pennsylvania line, as it was called, between six and seven hundred men, commanded by Gen. Wayne, with a good train of artillery; one thousand riflemen, under Gen. Campbell, of King's Mountain, and a part of the regiment of Virginia Continental troops, under Col. Febiger, a Dane; a vidette corps of dragoons, under Capt. Larkin Smith, and a single company of Harrison's regiment of artillery



to which I belonged; there were some additional militia, under Maj. Willis. The British army was more efficient; seven thousand infantry, who had fought the battles of the South; Tarleton's and Simcoe's full regiments of cavalry, and a fine train of artillery. These were all troops that could not be easily driven out of a field of battle. The Marquis, in a few days, marched to the Cross Roads and the Burnt Ordinary, sixteen miles from Williamsburg.

While the army lay on the ground, Lord Cornwallis marched from Williamsburg to Green Spring, or Jamestown. The morning of that battle, Maj. Geo. Washington, an old schoolmate, the second aid to the Marquis, was at our quarters, and was asked if the Marquis knew where Lord Cornwallis was, and whether he had crossed the river. His reply was, that Gen. Wayne had been sent on that morning to find out where he was. Tarleton, in his journal says, that one or two days before, he had bribed a white man and a negro to go out, and, if they met with any American detachments, to inform them that the British army, except a small portion of it, had crossed the river. It was this negro who fell in with Gen. Wayne, who, on his report, marched down and attacked the whole British army. Tarleton is wrong in supposing that the Marquis intended to bring on a general engagement; on the contrary, at twelve o'clock, when he learned that Wayne was in some danger, he ordered Col. Galvan, who belonged to his light infantry, to run down with only one hundred men to his relief, while he, with Capt. John F. Mercer's troop of horse, who had lately joined, and some militia riflemen, followed to support him. The Marquis certainly had no idea of a general battle, as the rest of the army remained quietly in their encampment the whole of the day. Gen. Wayne brought on the battle, relying on the intelligence the negro gave him, whom Tarleton had bribed, for which his troops suffered very much. He, as Tarleton says, attacked the whole British army, and got off only by Lord Cornwallis' supposing that a general action was intended by the Marquis, and taking time to prepare for it. Wayne not only lost his artillery, but had, I think, eleven officers badly wounded, whom I saw the next morning under the hands of the Surgeon, at the church, in the rear of our encampment. I think it is very certain that the Marquis, at this time, intended no general battle; nor did Lord



Cornwallis either. His object was to cross the river and fall down to Portsmouth, that he might send the reinforcement required of him by Gen. Clinton, who apprehended an attack by Gen. Washington, and the Count Rochambeau, who was hourly expected to arrive with the French troops from the West Indies.

In a few days after the battle of Green Spring, the single company of artillery of Harrison's regiment, to which I belonged, was ordered to the South. It was to proceed to Charlottesville by the way of Goochland Court House. All the officers, except myself, had leave to take their homes on their way. Left to command the company, I felt it a very arduous task, but I had been long enough in service to know that its discipline must be preserved, or I could not command. The first day's march, we got to the mouth of the lane opposite Hanover Town, and on dismissing the men, I ordered that none of them should go to the town.

Having arrived at Goochland Court House, we were detained there, and engaged in making cartridges and portfire for some weeks. In the meantime, Col. Davis arrived, and ordered me to return to Westham, and get the cannon out, which I had been ordered and had thrown into the creek and river. He furnished me with a Continental horse, and I found the officer there had attempted to draw the cannon out of the mud by fastening ropes to the pieces. I ordered two scows to be brought, and by pulling the pieces up between them, soon got them all up, and returned to join the company at Goochland Court House, where I was for some time continued in command of the laboratory, and finally ordered to Charlottesville, and at last the company reached Cumberland old Court House, where it was kept for some time.

The troops at Cumberland old Court House were at length ordered to join Gen. Green, under Col. Posey. Having received no pay, they mutinied, and instead of coming on the parade with their knapsacks, when the General beat, they came with their arms, as to the beat of the troop. I have said the troops received no pay; one company of them had been taken prisoners in Charleston, had been very lately exchanged, when it received orders to return to the South; the officers received one month's pay in paper, which was so depreciated, that I received, as a First Lieutenant of artillery, thirty-three thousand and two-thirds of a thousand dollars, in lieu of thirty-three and two-thirds dollars in specie.

We continued our march for about twenty days, having to impress provisions on the way.

On approaching Gen. Green's army, an order came that the infantry under Col. Posey should continue their march and join Gen. Wayne, in Georgia. In consequence of this, Col. Posey taking all the wagons, I was ordered to go to the army, lying about twelve miles below, near Bacon's bridge, on the Ashley River, to get wagons to take the baggage of the artillery to camp. In the rice country, the great part of which was covered with water, I mistook my way, and swam my horse to the other side of the Ashley River; meeting with a man on the other side, I asked him how far I was from Gen. Green's army. To my surprise, he told me I was on the wrong side of the river, and the British had a port at Dorchester. I had to retrace my course, and to swim the river again, where it was very narrow. I proceeded, and obtained the wagons necessary to move the company of artillery, and that joined the Park of Artillery. It so happened that I was ordered, with one six pounder, to join the advanced picket, near Bacon's bridge, and it cost me some effort to keep awake the whole night, after so much fatigue. Col. Stewart, of the Maryland line, was the officer of the day, and came the grand rounds twice in the night, and complimented me on my vigilance.

In a few days my boots were worn out, and I applied to Gen. Harrison for an order on the quartermaster, for a new pair; he gave me the order but said so scarce were the stores, that unless Gen. Green would endorse the order, I would get no boots—and that I must go to headquarters. I accordingly went; he was quartered in a large wooden building, a mile or more in the rear of the army. The first officer I saw when I got there was his first aid, Maj. Burnet. He asked if I wished to see the General. I said, "Yes, I have some business with the General." On which he desired me to sit down, and he would return to me. Having waited some time, I walked to the other door and saw Gen. Green for the first time, sitting at a table writing. I knew him by his regimentals, and went in. He accosted me, saying, "You belong to the artillery, have you any business with me?" I told him I had an order from Gen. Harrison, for a pair of boots, which I wished him to endorse, or I would not get the boots. Looking at my boots, he said, "You have very good boots." On which I

replied, "I borrowed them this morning"; on which he endorsed the order, and I made my bow and left him. He immediately followed me, and overtaking me at the door said: "Lieutenant Brooke, I keep a roster of the officers of the army, and they are invited to dine with me in rotation, and you will be invited in your turn,—but whenever you are off duty Mrs. Green will be glad to see you." This arose from the circumstance that Mrs. Green, on her way to join her husband, passed through my neighborhood, and received some attentions at Smithfield, and New Post, the seat of Gen. Alexander Spotswood. I was often at headquarters, on this invitation, and felt I was somewhat a pet of the General's. He was a man of most amiable feelings, and showed me marked kindness on one occasion. Capt. Singleton, who was a great favorite of the General's, commanded the company to which I belonged. We lived in the same marquee, on the most amicable terms, until there was a difference between myself and Lieutenant Whitaker, a nephew of his. We were eating water-melons, when I said something that he so flatly contradicted, that I supposed he intended to say I lied; on which I broke a half of a melon on his head, to which he said, "Brooke, you did not think I meant to tell you, you lied." I said, "If you did not, I am sorry I broke the melon on your head"; and there it ended. But his uncle, I presume, did not think it ought to have ended there. Whitaker had fought a duel going out with a Capt. Blair, of the Pennsylvania line, and wounded him, which made him, at least in appearance, a little arrogant, and our difference was the talk of the camp.

I had been appointed by Gen. Green, quartermaster of the Park of Artillery, on the express condition that I should not lose my rank in the line; as I did not come into the army to go into the staff, and having two duties to perform, I was very attentive to that in the line. On one morning when troop beat, I was delayed and did not get on parade till the roll was at least half called, on which Capt. Singleton asked me, in a rude voice, why I was not on parade sooner. To which I replied, "I waited for my boots, and did not come here in gown and slippers," looking at his nephew in that dress. On which he said, he should take notice of me at another time. The men being discharged, I said to Capt. Singleton, that as long as I thought him my friend, I

should have taken a rebuke from him kindly, but as I was now to consider him in a different light, whenever he meant to rebuke me, he must do it through a court-martial; that I understood my duty, and was not afraid of a court-martial, on which he said he would do so, but never did. After this we lived together, but never spoke, except on duty.

No objection had been made by Capt. Singleton to the performance of my duty in the line, until the company was ordered to join the light infantry, under Gen. Wayne, to take possession of Charleston on the expected evacuation of it by Gen. Leslie. This was a highly desirable service and Capt. Singleton, seeing me preparing to go, said, "You cannot go, sir, you are quartermaster of the Park." I replied, "I have served in the light infantry before, under Col. Laurence, and no objection was made, but I will go to headquarters and resign that office, rather than not go."

Well, I went to headquarters, and there it was that Gen. Green befriended me against the influence of my Captain. No objection was made to my brother, who was Brigade Major to the Park, and we both marched with the company to join the light infantry, under Gen. Wayne. After crossing the Ashley River, we marched to the house of Col. Wright and were sumptuously entertained. From the balcony we could see the British fleet lying before Charleston.

In the evening, one of the videttes came in and informed Gen. Wayne that the post, called the quarter-house, had been reinforced by four hundred men. This was seven miles from Charleston; a canal was cut there from the Ashley to the Cooper River, and two redoubts erected, and the post secured by other fortifications. On receipt of this information, the troops were ordered under arms, and we marched down opposite the quarter-house, within hail of the British sentinels, and encamped in a wood.

Gen. Green, with Washington's regiment, came in the next day, and the army came down the Ashley River, crossed at Wapporcut, and encamped on James island, opposite Charleston, where the Maryland line, hearing that the preliminary articles of peace had been signed by the British Commissioners, and believing the war over, and their enlistment at an end, mutinied. Gen. Green crossed the Ashley River on hearing it, found them on parade, as if they were discharged from service. He immediately addressed them, assuring them there was no intelligence that the war was

over, and at last prevailed on them to ground their arms and submit.

The artillery to which I belonged remained in Charleston, where we were kindly and hospitably treated, especially myself, by Mr. Frank Kinlaw, who resided at Kinlaw Court; he had been a member of Congress, and married a Miss Walker, of Albemarle Co., Va.

When the artillery company to which I belonged was ordered under Col. Posey, with the rest of the Virginia troops, to go to Savannah to take possession of it, on its evacuation by Col. Brown, Capt. Singleton, who had commanded the company, and my brother, with Lieut. Southall and Lieut. Whitaker, got leave to return to Virginia, and left the company under the command of Capt. Lieut. Booker and myself.

On arriving in Savannah, the infantry, under Col. Posey, went four miles below to Thunderbolt, and were quartered there, while the company of artillery was stationed at Fort Wayne, on a point below the town. In Savannah we were hospitably treated; I mean the officers, who remained in town. I felt myself especially noticed. I visited several families, among them Mr. Clay's; he had been a wealthy merchant, and some time before a member of Congress. He and his family were particularly kind to me. I gallanted his daughters, one of whom was very handsome (Naney). She was about sixteen years of age—but I had no serious intentions. On taking my leave of Savannah, I was left in the room with her by her parents, but said nothing. She afterwards jilted a Mr. Fontaine of Virginia, and married Maj. Deveau. Fontaine, in despair, went into the army, and in St. Clair's defeat threw himself among the Indians, and was killed.

In Savannah we had balls and dinner parties. There came some English officers from St. Augustine, on flag, with whom I associated; one a Capt. Car, I think. We met in the billiard room, and at Mr. Eustace's, who gave parties. I was at the wedding of Maj. Habersham with Miss Walton, the daughter of Jude Walton. The entertainment was singular; it was at eleven o'clock in the day, a collation of fruits, wine, and salt fish, etc. I was invited to go into the country with him to a Mr. Gibbs', a few miles from the town, where, having got leave, I spent some very pleasant days.



In Savannah, when invited out, we lived sumptuously—we had breakfast in the morning, luncheon at eleven o'clock, dinner at two, tea and coffee in the evening, and a hot supper at night.

While in Savannah the troops were ordered to an Indian treaty at Augusta, and we were ordered to turn out with whiskers and moustaches; this I was too young to do, being then not nineteen years old, but I used some black pomatum, such as the Hessian Yagers used, and smeared my face, so as to look very ferocious. The Indians were greatly frightened by their defeat by Gen. Wayne. The night they surprised him, he had given orders that none of them should be captured, that no quarters should be given, yet sixteen of them were captured by Capt. Scott's company of the Virginia line; and Gen. Wayne, seeing them next morning, ordered them to be bayoneted, which was deemed by some great cruelty; but General Wayne's force not being so strong as Col. Brown's, in Savannah, he was obliged to change his position every night, lest he should be surprised by him; and the Indians, who were spies upon his camp, were constantly giving Brown information where he was; but after the defeat and massacre of the sixteen, they quitted the country; they refused to come to any treaty at Augusta, where we were to come, and the corps I belonged to, with the rest of the troops under Col. Posey, were ordered back to Charleston, where we remained till August, when the company to which I belonged, and between three and four hundred of the infantry, and fourteen officers, including myself, belonging to different corps, embarked on board ship for Virginia. We were at sea 24 days, and it was thought, in Virginia, that we were lost. Having arrived at Hampton, we were most hospitably treated by a Mr. King and others. After remaining at Hampton three or four days, we came up to Richmond. I paid the company off a portion of their pay, and then gave them their discharges. I then left Richmond for Smithfield, my home, in a chariot loaned me by Mr. Henry Banks, to take a Mrs. Taylor from Norfolk to Fredericksburg. When we got opposite to Smithfield, I left Mrs. Taylor, took my knapsack, and walked to the house, and found the family at supper. To describe the feeling of joy with which they greeted me (believing that I had been lost at sea) would be very difficult.



The Smithfield family at this time consisted of a kind and excellent father; an amiable mother-in-law, who had one son, William, who, when he came to man's estate, studied law, was successful in his practice, died young, and left an amiable family; my whole brothers, Dr. Laurence Brooke, and Robert Brooke, and my twin brother John.

Dr. Laurence Brooke, who had studied medicine at Edinburgh, as I have often mentioned, had now commenced the practice of physic. My brother Robert, who had also been educated at Edinburgh, where he had studied law under Professor Milner, had resumed the study, and was preparing to commence the practice of the law when I arrived.

My twin brother, John, endeared to me by the hardships and dangers of three campaigns, like myself, had no profession, though some time after, he began to study law, got a license and began the practice of the law; he was successful, and became a member of the House of Delegates from his county of Stafford several times. He married a most amiable and excellent lady, and died about the year 1822, leaving a distinguished family,—one of whom, his son Frank, was killed in the Florida War, under Colonel Taylor, now President of the United States. His son Henry is now a distinguished lawyer, at the bar of the Court of Appeals; married Virginia, the daughter of the late Judge Henry St. George Tucker, sometime president of the Court of Appeals.

My only sister married Fontaine Maury, though she had been courted by Capt. Wm. Washington, afterwards General William Washington; Major Churchill Jones, of Washington's regiment, and several others. Fontaine was the youngest son of Fontaine Maury, the Huguenot, who came to this country after the repeal of the Edict of Nantes.

Now, what shall I say of myself? The war was over, and it was time that I should look to some other profession than that of arms. I was not quite twenty years of age, and like other young men of the times, having an indulgent father, who permitted me to keep horses, I wasted two or three years fox hunting, and sometimes in racing; was sometimes at home for three or four weeks at a time. My father had an excellent family library. I was fond of reading history; read Hume's History of England, Robertson's History of Charles the Fifth, some of the British Poets, Shakespeare, Dryden,

Pope, etc., and most of the literature of Queen Anne's reign, and even Blackstone's Commentaries, before I had determined to study law. Having resolved at last to pursue some profession, my brother, Dr. Brooke, prevailed upon me to study medicine. I read his books with him for about twelve months, when my brother Robert would say to me, "Frank, you have missed your path, and had better study law." I soon after took his advice, and commenced the study of the law with him, and in 1788, I applied for a license to practice law. There were at that time, in Virginia, only three persons authorized to grant licenses: they were the Attorney General, Mr. Innis, Mr. German Baker, and Col. John Taylor, of Caroline, all distinguished lawyers. I was examined by Mr. Baker, at Richmond, and obtained his signature to my license. I then applied to the Attorney General, Mr. Innis, to examine me, but he was always too much engaged, and I returned home. In a few days after, I received a letter from my old army friend, Capt. Wm. Barret, of Washington's regiment, informing me that he had seen the Attorney General, who expressed great regret that he had not had it in his power to examine his friend, Mr. Brooke; but that he had talked with Mr. Baker, and was fully satisfied of his competency, and if he would send his license down to Richmond, he would sign it. I accordingly sent the license to him, and he signed it, by which I became a lawyer. I afterwards returned to my brother's office, and applied myself more than I had done to the doctrine of pleading, etc.

Early in 1788, I went to Morgantown, in the North-Western corner of the State, then somewhat an Indian country; Virginia being compelled to keep her scouts and rangers to defend the inhabitants on our frontier, though the Indians still made frequent inroads, and killed, and carried off five families at the Dunkard Bottom, on Cheat River, twenty miles to the east of Morgantown. I had commenced the practice of law in the counties of Monongalia, at Morgantown; and Harrison, at Clarksburg. Soon after the district courts were established, and two of the Judges of the district court, Judges Mercer and Parker, came to Morgantown to hold a court there, when I received from the Attorney General, Mr. Innis, a commission as Attorney for the Commonwealth of that district; he having at that time power to grant commissions to all Commonwealth's Attorneys in the districts and counties of the State.

I continued the practice of the law in that country for a little more than two years, during which time I became acquainted with Albert Gallatin, from whom I, not long ago, received a letter, written in his 88th year, which is here inserted:

NEW YORK, 4th March, 1847.

My dear Sir:

Although you were pleased, in your favor of December last, to admire the preservation of my faculties, these are in truth sadly impaired. I cannot work more than four hours a day, and I write with great difficulty. Entirely absorbed in a subject which engrossed all my thoughts and all my feelings, I was compelled to postpone answering the numerous letters I receive, unless they imperiously required immediate attention. I am now making up my arrears.

But though my memory fails me for recent transactions, it is unimpaired in reference to my early days. I have ever preserved a most pleasing recollection of our friendly intercourse almost sixty years ago; and followed you in your long and respectable judiciary career—less stormy, and probably happier than mine. I am, as you presumed, four years older than yourself, born 29th of January, 1761, and now in my 88th; growing weaker every month, but with only the infirmities of age. For all chronic diseases,—I have no faith in physicians, consult none, and take no physic whatever.

With my best wishes that your latter days may be as smooth, as healing and as happy as my own, I remain in great truth,

Your friend,

ALBERT GALLATIN.

Hon'ble Francis Brooke,  
Richmond.

I returned to Eastern Virginia, and went to settle at Tappahannock, and practiced law in Essex, and the Northern Neck, with Bushrod Washington, afterwards Judge of the Supreme Court of the United States; Alexander Campbell, a distinguished lawyer, and the old Scotch lawyer, Warden, etc., etc.

In that year, the year '90, I sometimes visited my friends at Smithfield; paid my addresses to Mary Randolph Spotswood, the eldest daughter of Gen. Spotswood and Mrs. Spotswood, the only whole niece of Gen. Washington. Our attachment had been a very early one. Her father frequently sent to Smithfield for me when I was only thirteen years of age; my father would complain, but always permitted me to go. I would find the General, about daylight in the morning, with his fine horses drawn out, and his fox

hounds, and, as I was an excellent horseman, would mount me upon one of his most spirited horses, and often range through the country and woods, where I now live. He knew his daughter was very much attached to me, but though succeeding in my profession, I was but poor, and he had great objections to the match. After some time, however, when I had gone back to Tappahannock, finding his daughter's attachment too strong to be overcome, though she had been courted by others, he consented to our union.

She was sixteen in June, and we were married in October following, at Nottingham, in the year 1791. Her form could not be excelled; her face, when lighted with a smile, was brilliant, though her features were not regular; she had brilliant teeth, and luxuriant brown hair; she had been highly educated by a Mrs. Hearn, an English lady, who lived in the family several years. The General was more attentive to the education of his daughters than to that of his sons. He and his brother, John Spotswood, had been much neglected by their guardian at Eton, in England, and were badly educated; they returned to Virginia, and when Gen. Spotswood arrived of age, in 1772, he possessed one hundred and fifty thousand acres of land in the three counties of Orange, Spottsylvania and Culpeper; it was an entailed estate which descended to him from his grandfather, Governor Spotswood. His father's executor prevailed on the Legislature to permit him to sell seventy thousand acres of it; he himself afterwards, and before I belonged to the family, sold to Gen. Henry Lee twenty-odd thousand acres, above Fredericksburg; he also sold forty thousand acres of leased land to James Somerville, of Fredericksburg. He possessed also iron works; a foundry established by Governor Spotswood, which yielded an income of five thousand pounds per annum, and which was broken up by his father's executor.

The General was neglectful of his affairs, and was better fitted for the army than for the pursuits of civil life. He commanded the second regiment, at the battle of Brandywine; and it was said by a British writer, one Smith, that it was the only regiment that left the field of battle in good order. He was again at the battle of Germantown, where his brother, Capt. Spotswood, being badly wounded, was thought to be dead; whereupon he sent in his resignation to Gen. Washington, having made a contract with his brother, when they entered the army, that if either should be

killed, the survivor should return home to take care of the two families. When it was known that Capt. Spotswood was still alive, a prisoner in Philadelphia, he wished to return to his command of the army; but Gen. Washington replied to his letter to this effect, that he could not be reinstated in his former command, because many officers had been promoted after his resignation. He was soon after appointed a Brigadier General, by the State of Virginia, to command the Legion to be raised in Virginia. During Arnold's invasion, in 1780, he commanded a Brigade of Militia, called out to oppose General Arnold. Gen. Spotswood spent a great deal of his fortune in the army; while the Army of the North was naked of clothing, Gen. Spotswood clothed his whole regiment out of his own pocket, in Philadelphia.

Happily married, with good prospects, we lived together thirteen years, when she died January 5th, 1803, after the birth of her youngest daughter, Mary Randolph. She left four children: John, her eldest, Robert, Elizabeth and Mary Randolph. Elizabeth was unhappily killed by the over-setting of a stage. John studied medicine, and in the year 1825, was appointed a deputy surgeon in the Navy; went out in the Brandywine, with Gen. Lafayette to France, where he had been before; has remained in the navy ever since, and is now fleet surgeon in the Chinese seas. Robert was educated at West Point, was appointed a Lieutenant of the Engineer Corps, soon resigned, and studied law; began the practice at Charlottesville, went to Staunton, has been twice married, and has a family of eight children. He was twice elected a member of the House of Delegates, from Augusta; was a good speaker, and popular with the House; his family increasing, he declined public life, and is now President of the Branch of the Valley Bank, at Staunton.

Mary Randolph was married in 1827, to Dr. Edmund Berkeley, of Hanover; and after many changes of situation, went to Staunton, where she now resides, and has a family of eight children.

The shock I received on the death of my wife, I cannot well describe; but my father had left me a legacy better than property, his fine alacrity of spirits (God bless him), which have never forsaken me; and in the summer afterwards, I was advised to go to the Virginia Springs, and began to look out for another wife, to supply



the place to my children of their mother. While at the Warm Springs, with Mr. Giles and some others, a carriage arrived with ladies; there is something in destiny, for as soon as I took hold of the hand of Mary Champe Carter (though I had seen her before and admired her very much), I felt that she would amply supply the place of my lost wife. I began my attentions to her from that moment. In person and in face she was very beautiful. Mr. Jefferson said of her, "She is the most beautiful woman I have ever seen, either in France or in this country." Her sister, Naney, who married Governor Troup, of Georgia, was thought by some equally handsome. Mary Champe had brilliant teeth, and beautiful dark hair; but her beauty was not her only charm; her soft and feminine manners were still more attractive.

On our return to Fredericksburg, I seriously addressed her—and though I had powerful rivals, I soon found that I had won her affections. As I had children, however, her mother and her relations were rather opposed to my pretensions, but their objections were overcome, when they found that our attachment was reciprocal; and we were married on the 14th of February following. Though she had little fortune, her father having left her one thousand and five hundred pounds in officer's certificate (and the half of his plate, on the death of her mother, which by the way, she never received), I had a renewed prospect for happiness. We settled and lived in a small house near her mother's, in Fredericksburg; from there we sent John and Robert to school, to Mr. Wilson, until after the birth of her first son, which she lost. I had built a small brick house with a shed to it, and a brick floor, in the country. Her mother and sister went to Boston; when they returned, she agreed to come into the country to live in that small house; the farm was a small one and worn out; as I was seldom at home, she had the trouble of planting the hedges, attending to laying off the garden, planting the fruit, and house-trees, and was frequently at home by herself for five or six weeks at a time. She was always very kind to the parents of her stepchildren, for when Mrs. Spotwood's old cook, Juna, was worn out nearly, they expressed the desire to have our cook, Belissa, who was an excellent cook; she readily gave up Belissa to them, and took a girl, little more than seventeen years of age, into the kitchen. She was a kind and affectionate stepmother, and her stepchildren were very



much attached to her. When John had gone to Carlisle College, and then to Philadelphia, and often wrote to me to send him more money, and I being straitened, then she would say, "Send him the money, if you are obliged to sell one of the negroes." When Mary Randolph was sent to her by her grandmother, she expressed as much anxiety for her education as if she had been her own child, and when she grew to a proper age, had a music master in the house always, and instructed her herself; although she was no performer, she understood music very well.

In 1806, when her health was delicate and she was advised to go to the Springs, she carried Robert with her, then six years of age; he had had the ague and fever, but recovered at the Springs. We lived forty-two years together very happily, when on the 25th of October, 1846, she expired. She was a sincere Christian, and a quarter of an hour before her death, while I held her feeble hand in mine, she looked up at me, and said, "I am not frightened, I am in no pain, take care of ours"—there she stopped. A short time afterwards, when Mrs. Herndon, the wife of Dr. Herndon, who was here attending her, wanted to bathe her lips with cold water, she held out one of her hands, and said, "I want nothing more in this world," and expired. She had chosen a burial place; I wrote the epitaph, which is engraved upon her tombstone. 'Tis as follows:

(A small but grateful tribute of my heart to one whom I had loved so well and long.)

Sacred  
To the Memory of  
MARY CHAMPE BROOKE  
The wife of Judge Brooke;  
She expired on the 25th of October, 1846,  
in the 68th year of her age.

She was never excelled in virtue, or any of those endearing qualities which made her an affectionate wife and devoted mother!

She left two children, Francis and Helen. Francis married Ella, the youngest daughter of Colonel Ambler, of Jamestown. She is a most amiable wife and mother; they have three sons.

Helen married most unfortunately; her husband was governed by nothing but passion; treated her very cruelly, and she was forced to apply for a divorce to the Legislature, which she ob-

tained, and now lives with me; and he, like the base Judean, "Threw away a pearl richer than all his tribe." She has a little girl, Mary Champe, called after her grandmother.

My native state conferred many offices upon me. I represented the County of Essex in 1794-95, in the House of Delegates. In 1796 my brother, John, having married and declined the practice of the law, I removed from Tappahannock to Fredericksburg, to finish the law business he and my brother Robert had left. In 1800, I was elected a Judge of the General Court (as my commission will show), and, of course, rode the districts of the District Courts, until the Circuit Courts were established; when I was assigned to this circuit, beginning at Goochland, going to Richmond, Hanover, Essex, Caroline, and Spotsylvania, until 1811, when I was elected Judge of the Court of Appeals; of which I was President eight years, and where I was continued ever since. In 1831, I was again elected a Judge of the Court of Appeals, under the New Constitution.

My military appointments were as follows: In the year 1796, I was appointed Major of a Battalion of Cavalry, annexed to the second division of the militia. In 1800, I was appointed Lieutenant Colonel Commandant of the second regiment of Cavalry, in the second division of the militia, Colonel Tom Mann Randolph having resigned. In 1802, I was appointed Brigadier General of the First Brigade and second division of the militia.

Though I had married into two families that had been among the wealthiest in Virginia, it did not profit me very much—for though Gen. Spotswood was a devoted father-in-law, he had not much to give. He gave to his daughter, when we went to Tappahannock, a small servant girl, who soon after died; he gave me a bill of exchange upon Charleston, drawn by Maj. Churchill Jones, which helped me to purchase an old home, in Tappahannock, which was repaired by two of my father's mechanics. In the meantime, he wrote a letter to my father saying, that if he would give me ten negroes, of a particular description, he would give me at his death an equal share with the rest of his children, of his property. My father had delivered some of the negroes before his death, and the General insisted that I should sue his executor for the rest of them and I brought a suit in the High Court of Chancery, and got a decree for them; in the record of

which suit Gen. Spotswood's letter and my father's reply to it can be found. After Gen. Spotswood's death, he having left nothing by his will to me, or any of my family, I brought a suit against his executor, in the Chancery Court at Fredericksburg, upon the contract; but the delays of the law were so great at the time, that I compromised the suit with the executor, to which course my counsel, the late Judge Stanard, thinking that I had made a bad compromise, was very much opposed. The executor gave me an order for three thousand dollars on the suit, which Gen. Spotswood had in the Federal Court (which suit Gen. Spotswood had against the securities of his guardian), which ultimately I received. The executor also conveyed to me one hundred and fifty acres of land, which lies near me.

I personally knew (as well as so young a man could know) all the eminent military characters of the revolution, with the exception of Alexander Hamilton and Gen. Knox. I knew Washington, Green and Gates—I knew Washington in my boyhood. He came to Smithfield with Gen. Spotswood, in 1773, I think it was. He was then a Colonel in the British army. I remember his dress; he wore a deep blue coat, a scarlet waistcoat, trimmed with a gold chain, and buckskin small clothes, boots, spurs, and sword; he had with him a beautiful greyhound; was fond of the sports of the field, and proposed to my father, who had a tame deer, to try if the greyhound could not catch him; to which my father assented, and after leaping over the yard palings, they went through the garden where they leaped the palings again; when the deer turned towards the river, he got a start of the greyhound, and got into the river before he could catch him. Gen. Washington was afterwards at Smithfield two or three times. He was fond of horses; my father had some excellent ones, so had Gen. Spotswood; they took the horses to the road, and mounted the boys upon them, to try their speed. Gen. Washington, in the year 1774, came to Fredericksburg to review the independent companies. After the review, they gave him a collation in the old market house, where he had all the boys of a large grammar school, of which I was one, brought to him; gave them a drink of punch, patted them upon their heads, and asked them if they could fight for their country. After the war he frequently came to Fredericksburg, where his mother resided, and his only sister, Mrs. Lewis. He

attended the ball of the 22d of February; opened it by dancing a minuet with some lady, then danced cotillions and country dances; was very gallant, and always attached himself, by his attentions, to some one or more of the most beautiful and attractive ladies at the balls. The next day, his friends gave him a dinner, at which, after the cloth was removed, and the wine came on, a Mr. Jack Stewart (who had been a Clerk of the House of Delegates), a great vocalist, was called upon for a song; and he sang one from the novel of "Roderick Random," which was a very amusing one. Gen. Washington laughed at it very much, and encored it. The next day, when I went to his sister's to introduce strangers to him, I found him one of the most dignified men of the age. While he was President of the United States, at the instance of my father-in-law, Gen. Spotswood, he offered me the collector's office at Tappahannock; but I preferred my profession, and declined it, though the office, at that time, was a very lucrative one. Washington was undoubtedly a great man, and there was a sublimity in his greatness which exceeded that of any of the great men of ancient or modern history.

I have said before of Gen. Green, that I was in some degree a pet of his, and I have assigned the cause why I was so. Being a good deal at headquarters, I knew him to be an amiable and excellent domestic character; he was devoted to his wife amid all the danger and excitement of war. And the elder Judge Tucker told me this anecdote of him: that after the battle of Guilford, and the retreat to the Iron Works, the General discovered that he had no bed; he invited him to take a part of his, and in the morning, when Tucker awoke, he found him admiring his wife's picture which hung round his neck. He was much beloved by the army; was cautious not to engage in battle, unless there was a prospect of crippling or defeating the enemy. There is a letter in Johnson's life of him, from Gen. Washington, after the battle of Butaw Spring, which begins: "I rejoice, my dear General, that you have, at length, gained a victory," etc. I loved him, and to the page of history consign his memory. I did not know Gen. Gates in the army, but, after the peace, he resided twelve months in Fredericksburg, and being fond of young company, I frequently saw him; his manners were very fine. He had served in the British army, was, I have no doubt, an excellent camp officer,

acquainted with tactics in the drill, but not qualified to command an army.

I have said that I knew also the leading civil characters of that period. I knew Mr. Jefferson very well. The first time I saw him was at the Magazine, at Westham, above Richmond, as I have mentioned before. I was afterwards often at Monticello, and saw much of him there; and while he was President of the United States. He was a man of easy and ingratiating manners; he was very partial to me, and I corresponded with him while I was Vice-President of the Society of Cincinnati; he wished the funds of that Society to be appropriated to his central college, near Charlottesville; and on one occasion I obtained an order for a meeting of the Society, to that effect; but in my absence the order was rescinded, and the funds appropriated to the Washington College, at Lexington, to which Gen. Washington had given his shares in the James River Company, which the State had presented him with. Mr. Jefferson never would discuss any proposition if you differed with him, for he said he thought discussion rather rivetted opinions than changed them. When I was elected Speaker of the Senate of Virginia, he sent me his parliamentary manual, with a very flattering note wafered in it, which is now in the possession of my son Robert. Of Mr. Madison, I personally did not know as much; his manners were not so fine or insinuating as Mr. Jefferson's; he was devoted to Mr. Jefferson but differed with him in some respects; he never shunned discussion, but courted it—told many excellent anecdotes of times past—and was among the purest and ablest statesmen we ever had. I knew Mr. Monroe, practiced law with him, and I think, though a slow man, he possessed a strong mind and excellent judgment. When I was at York, in 1824, with Gen. LaFayette, Mr. Calhoun, then Secretary of War, was there, and I asked him the question, whether it was the President Monroe, or his Cabinet, who were in favor of that passage in his message which declared to the Holy Alliance, that America would not be indifferent to any attempt to aid the Spanish Government to prevent the enfranchisement of the South American powers, then at war with Spain; and he replied, that it was the President's own sentiment, and though he was a slow man, yet give him time, and he was a man of the best judgment he had ever known.



This narrative has been written, or dictated by snatches, at different times, and may therefore contain some repetitions, and I may have omitted some things that ought to be in it; but my recollections are too numerous for me to record them all, and I believe I have given a sufficient number of them to answer my purpose—to gratify my family and friends—and I will now rest.

FRANCIS T. BROOKE.

Richmond, May 1st, 1849.

### GENEALOGY.

Judge Francis Taliaferro Brooke<sup>2</sup>, son of Richard Brooke<sup>1</sup> and Elizabeth Taliaferro, b. at Smithfield, Va., August 28, 1764; d. at St. Julien, March 3, 1851, aged 87. Married Mary Randolph Spotswood, October 3, 1791; b. New Post, Va., June 19, 1775; d. St. Julien, Va., January 23rd, 1803, aged 28. Issue:

- I. John Brooke<sup>3</sup>, who was a surgeon in the Navy, d. off the coast of China and was buried in some Chinese port. Married ———; d. without issue.
- II. Robert Spotswood Brooke<sup>3</sup>. Married Margaret Lyle Smith, of Egypt, Va., Nov. 24, 1835.
- III. Mary Randolph Spotswood Brooke<sup>3</sup>. Married Dr. Edmund Berkeley.
- IV. Elizabeth Brooke<sup>3</sup>, d. aged 15.

Robert Spotswood Brooke<sup>3</sup> (Francis T.<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>), son of Francis Taliaferro Brooke and Mary Randolph Spotswood, his wife, b. at St. Julien, September 5, 1800; d. Staunton, Va., May, 1851. Married (first) Elizabeth Smith, of Folly, Va., near Staunton, Va. Issue:

- I. Margaret Brooke<sup>4</sup>. Married Thomas P. Eskridge. Issue: Elizabeth, Brooke, Meta and Mary.
- II. Virginia Brooke<sup>4</sup>. Married Dr. Briscoe Baldwin Donoghe. Issue: Mary, Florence and Virginia Donoghe.
- III. Elizabeth Smith Brooke<sup>4</sup>. Married John Lewis Cochran, of Charlottesville, Va. Issue: Anne, John, Joseph and James Cochran.

Robert Spotswood Brooke<sup>3</sup>. Married (second) Margaret Lisle Smith, daughter of Abraham Smith, of Harrisonburg, Va. Miss Lisle was daughter of Mr. Lisle and Margaret Baker, daughter of



John Baker and Judith Howard Baker, who was daughter of Peter Wood and Susanna C. Joanna Howard. Issue:

- I. John Francis Brooke<sup>4</sup>. Married Ann Carter Berkeley.
- II. Juliet Lyle Brooke<sup>4</sup>, unmarried.
- III. Mary Randolph Spotswood Brooke<sup>4</sup>. Married Overton Boweock.
- IV. Martha Washington Brooke<sup>4</sup>. Married Walter Frederick Churnside, of England, had issue.
- V. Francis Taliaferro Brooke<sup>4</sup>. Married Ann Aurelia Burnley.
- VI. Edmund Berkeley Brooke<sup>4</sup>, unmarried. It is supposed that the Bakers and Brookes were related before they came to this country. Baker Brooke's name is recorded of the same date as Spotswood's, and in that case both Margaret and Virginia married cousins. The Eskridges and Doneghe or Druaghies (?) both were descendants in the Baker line of the sisters of John Baker who married Judith Wood.

Mary Randolph Spotswood Brooke<sup>3</sup> (Francis Taliaferro<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Judge Francis Taliaferro Brooke and Mary Randolph Spotswood. Married Dr. Edmund Berkeley, of Staunton, son of Dr. Carter Berkeley and Katherine Spotswood Carter, of Shirley, of Edgewood, Hanover Co., who was son of Nelson Berkeley I (and Elizabeth Wormeley Carter, of Sabine Hall), of Airwell, Hanover Co., Va.; who was son of Edmund Berkeley II, of Barn Elms, Middlesex County, Va. (and Mary Nelson of Yorktown); who was son of Edmund Berkeley I, of Barn Elms, Middlesex Co., Va. (and Lucy Burwell of Carter's Creek, Gloucester Co., Va.); who was son of Edmund Berkeley I, of Gloucester Co., Va. (and Mary ———); who was son of Edmund Berkeley; who was a son of Maurice Berkeley; who was a son of John Berkeley, the head of the Beverstone branch of the Berkeley family in England, and who came to Virginia in 1619 and was killed in the massacre of 1622 at Falling Creek.

Dr. Edmund Berkeley<sup>4</sup> and Mary Randolph Spotswood Brooke<sup>3</sup> had issue:

- I. Dr. Thomas Averett Berkeley<sup>4</sup>, was educated at Jefferson College, Pa.; University of Virginia. Surgeon in C. S. Army. Afterwards was at Western State Hospital, Asst. Surgeon, Staunton, Va.; d. unmarried.\*
- II. Lavinia Berkeley<sup>4</sup>. Married Col. Norborne Berkeley, of "Stoke," Loudoun Co., Va.
- III. Katherine Spotswood Berkeley<sup>4</sup>. Married William Igleheart, of Annapolis, Md., lawyer. He served in C. S. A. Issue:
  - I. Annie Igleheart<sup>5</sup>, unmarried.
  - II. Lieutenant Berkeley Igleheart<sup>5</sup>, Lieut. U. S. Army. Unmarried (1906).
- IV. Capt. Francis Brooke Berkeley<sup>4</sup> (married); d. Oct. 5, 1898, leaving issue.
- V. Dr. Carter Berkeley<sup>4</sup>. Married twice; d. March 7, 1905, leaving issue by first wife.
- VI. John Francis Berkeley<sup>4</sup>, d. young.
- VII. Mary Botts Berkeley<sup>4</sup> (still living), never married.
- VIII. Edmund Berkeley<sup>4</sup>, served in Confederate Army; never married, resides at Staunton, Va.
- IX. Alexander Spotswood Berkeley<sup>4</sup>, served in the Confederate Army, at the age of 15; never married, lives at Staunton, Va.

Lavinia Berkeley<sup>4</sup> (Mary R. S. Brooke<sup>3</sup>, Francis Taliaferro<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Dr. Edmund Berkeley of Staunton and Mary R. S. Brooke, his wife. Married Col. Norborne Berkeley, of "Stoke," Loudoun Co., Va. He was a graduate of Virginia Military Institute; Colonel 8th Virginia Infantry, Civil War; member of the Constitution Convention of Virginia, 1869. Issue:

- I. Edmund Spotswood Berkeley<sup>5</sup>.

---

\*NOTE.—"Dr. Thomas Averett Berkeley<sup>4</sup> was a great admirer of my mother, Catherine Ambler Moneure; they met at St. Julien. Dr. James D. Moneure, my uncle, visited Staunton Hospital, to see a friend, on a Sunday; he was told by the attendant, visiting was not allowed on Sunday. He asked for Dr. Berkeley. Dr. Moneure asked to see his friend. Dr. Berkeley replied, "Did you know Catty or Kate Moneure (as she was called)?" Dr. Moneure replied, "She was my own dear sister, but has passed away." Whereupon Dr. Berkeley grasped his hand, saying, "Yes, you can see your friend for the sake of your sister that I loved and still love."

- II. Norborne Berkeley<sup>5</sup>. Married Florenec Lee De Spain, of Oregon.
- III. William N. Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, Ph. D. Johns Hopkins University; will be married soon to Miss Gerhart, of New Jersey (Jersey City).
- IV. Charles C. Berkeley<sup>5</sup>. Married Geraldine De Spain, of Oregon.

Captain Francis T. Brooke Berkeley<sup>4</sup> (Mary R. S. Brooke<sup>3</sup>, Francis Taliaferro<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>), son of Dr. Edmund Berkeley and Mary R. S. Brooke, his wife. He served in the Confederate Army, became Adjutant General, Imboden's Brigade. Married Jennie Baird, daughter of Rev. Baird. Issue:

- I. Eva Berkeley<sup>5</sup>. Married Dr. Charles Robins, of Richmond, Va. Issue:
  - I. Francis Berkeley Robins<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Dorothy Randolph Robins<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Charles Russell Robins<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Francis B. Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, assistant Librarian Va. State Librarian, Richmond, Va.
- III. Edmund Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, Richmond, Va.
- IV. Robert B. Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, Kentucky.
- V. Jeanie Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, unmarried.
- VI. Esther Berkeley<sup>5</sup>.
- VII. Maurice Fitzhardinge Berkeley<sup>5</sup>.
- VIII. Shirley Berkeley<sup>5</sup>.

Dr. Carter Berkeley<sup>4</sup> (Mary R. S. Brooke<sup>3</sup>, Francis Taliaferro<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>), son of Dr. Edmund Berkeley, of Staunton, Va., and Mary R. S. Brooke, his wife. He was educated at University of Virginia and University of Maryland, studying medicine at both places, and receiving his degree at latter. He served in C. S. A., became First Lieut. Artillery. Married (first) Jane L. Gilkeson, daughter of William and Margaret Gilkeson, of "Hillside," Augusta Co., Va.; she d. 1884. Dr. Berkeley married (second) Jane Hale, of Rocky Mount, Va.; d. 1889, no issue. Dr. Berkeley d. March 7, 1905, leaving issue by his first wife:

- I. Edmund Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, served in Spanish American War, resides at Monroe, La.
- II. Margaret Brooke Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, d. in childhood.

- III. Charles C. Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, served in Spanish American War, Cuba. Capt. U. S. Vol. Infantry. Married Linda B——, daughter of J. Alexander and Sarah B——, of "Bethu Green," Augusta Co., Va. Issue:
- I. Sarah Spotswood Berkeley<sup>6</sup>, infant.
- II. Elizabeth Landon Berkeley<sup>6</sup>, infant.
- Mr. Charles C. Berkeley and his cousin Francis L. Berkeley, of "Red Hill," Albemarle Co., Va., are preparing a book, "The Berkeleys and Their Ancestors," to which any one may refer for information concerning the Berkeley Family.
- IV. Randolph Carter Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, served in Spanish American War. Is now (1906) Capt. U. S. Marine Corps.

The following notice of Capt. Berkeley's marriage recently appeared in the *Baltimore Sun*:

#### CAPTAIN BERKELEY WEDS.

SHEPHERDSTOWN, W. VA., Sept. 12, 1906.—One of the most brilliant weddings ever witnessed in Shepherdstown occurred to-night, when Capt. Randolph Carter Berkeley, of the United States Marine Corps, and Miss Carrie Phillips, only daughter of Pay Inspector and Mrs. J. S. Phillips, were united in marriage. The ceremony was performed by Rev. C. E. A. Marshall, in Trinity Episcopal Church, which was filled with a large and fashionable assemblage.

The best man was Capt. A. E. Harding, aid to the President, and the ushers were Dr. Richard Blackburn, of Washington; Lieut. Russell B. Putnam, Capt. Henry Davis, Paymaster W. H. Dougherty and Paymaster D. M. Addison, of the navy, and Messrs. William Muzzey and Lawrence Lee and David Leman, of this place. The maid of honor was Miss Harriet Tilghman, of Norfolk, Va.; and the bridesmaids were Misses Janet Berkeley, of Staunton, Va.; L. E. Hanna, of Washington; Marie Muzzey, of Philadelphia; N. C. Williams, L. Turner, E. Butler, E. L. Potts and Virginia Van S. Reinhart, of Shepherdstown. The ribbon-bearers were Graece Darling Chapline and Joseph A. Chapline. The maid of honor was gowned in blue radium silk, while the bridesmaids wore handsome dresses of white organdie and lace over blue taffeta. The bride wore a beautiful gown of white satin, with duchesse and rose point lace, with bridal veil, and carried Bride roses, as did her attendants. The ushers in the military service wore the full-dressed uniforms of their respective corps, the others wearing dress suits.

The scene as the bridal party entered the church and grouped around the chancel was strikingly beautiful. The processional music was the wedding march from "Lohengrin," while the recessional was Mendelssohn's

"Wedding March." The bride was given in marriage by her uncle, Pay Director Mitchell McDonald, of the United States Navy. Her father, Pay Inspector Phillips, was unable to attend the wedding because of his duties as a special representative of the State Department at Monte Christi, Santo Domingo, the present revolution in that country rendering it imperative that he should be at his post there.

Immediately after the wedding a reception was held at the home of the bride. Thompson's Orchestra, of Martinsburg, rendered music during the evening, and later the younger set were entertained at dancing. The bridal party left for a trip East.

This marriage unites two of the oldest families of Virginia. The bride's ancestors came to Virginia in 1607 and 1610 and the groom's in 1618, all having settled at Jamestown. Captain Berkeley is a son of the late Dr. Carter Berkeley and his wife, Lovie Gilkeson, of Staunton, and a grandson of Dr. Edmund Berkeley and his wife, Mary Randolph Spottswood Brooke, the daughter of Judge Francis T. Brooke and his wife, who was a direct descendant of Governor Spottswood, famous "Knight of the Golden Horseshoe." The bride is a granddaughter of the late Congressman William A. Phillips, of Kansas, and his wife, Margaret Caraway Stewart Spillman, of Tennessee. On her mother's side she is a daughter of the late Judge Joseph A. Chapline, of Shepherdstown, whose ancestors were among the earliest settlers in this section.

Among the out-of-town guests attending the wedding were the Misses Berkeley, of Staunton, Va.; Miss Ann Iglehart, of Annapolis, Md.; Solicitor Edwin Phillips Hanna, the Misses Hanna, Miss Frances Cox and Mrs. C. Piquette Mitchel, of Washington, and Mrs. Robert Gibson, of Philadelphia.

V. Mary Randolph Spottswood Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, Staunton. I have had several interesting letters from Miss Berkeley<sup>5</sup>.

VI. Janet C. Berkeley<sup>5</sup>.

VII. Robert Brooke Berkeley<sup>5</sup>, Atlanta, Ga.

Norborne Berkeley<sup>5</sup> (Lavinia<sup>4</sup>, Mary R. S. Brooke<sup>3</sup>, Francis Taliaferro<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>), son of Lavinia Berkeley<sup>4</sup>, and Col. Norborne Berkeley, of the "Stokes." He was educated at the Virginia Agricultural College, Blacksburg, Va. He went to Oregon in 1884 and has been there ever since. In 1894 he was admitted to the Bar, and has been practicing law since that time. His residence is Pendleton, Oregon; b. July 17, 1860, married (March 8, 1893) Florence Lee De Spain. Issue:

I. Mildred Minor Berkeley<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 31, 1894.

II. Norborne Berkeley<sup>6</sup>, Jr., b. Sept. 26, 1901.

Charles Carter Berkeley<sup>5</sup> (Lavinia<sup>4</sup>, Mary R. S. Brooke<sup>3</sup>, Francis Taliaferro<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>), son of Lavinia Berkeley<sup>4</sup> and Col. Norborné Berkeley of the "Stokes," b. January 27, 1871, married (September 14, 1898) Edith Geraldine De Spain. Mr. Berkeley left Virginia in 1889; went to North Carolina, where he had a position on the Engineering Corps of the Seaboard Air Line. In 1890 he went to Birmingham, Ala., where he worked some time at mining engineering. In 1891-2 he was connected with the engineering department of the Norfolk and Western R. R. in West Virginia. In 1893 he was assistant engineer on the Ohio Southern, Lima, O. He went west in 1893, and was connected with the Astoria and Columbia River R. R. until 1897; then he resigned and accepted a position as resident engineer for the Oregon Railway and Navigation Co., which position he held until 1900, when he resigned and took up private practice in Pendleton. No issue.

Judge Francis Taliaferro Brooke married second, Mary Champe Carter, daughter of Edward Carter of Blenheim and Sarah Champe, son of John Carter and Elizabeth Hill of Shirley, whose father was King Carter, married Judith Armistead.

(See Chapter VII, Carter Family.)

Issue:

I. Frank Brooke, married Gabriella Ambler.

(Issue Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.)

II. Helen Brooke, married Robert Hamilton. Issue:

I. Mary Champe Hamilton, married Capt. Wm. Farleigh.

Issue:

I. Mary Farleigh.

II. Brooke Farleigh, living in New York.

II. Helen Brooke, married, second, Mr. Forman. Issue:

I. Helen Forman.

II. Flo. Forman.

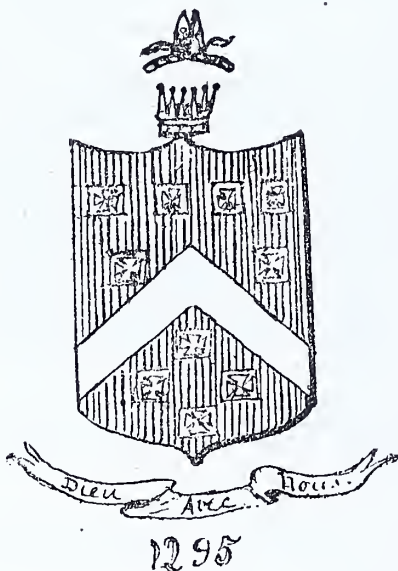
III. Ella Forman.

### THE BERKELEY FAMILY.

The name Berkeley comes from two words, the Danish and Old English word "Birke," meaning birch (one impress left on England by the Danes), and the word "ley," "lay" or "lea," meaning meadow; a grassy, flat pasture land, as a lay for cattle. (See any standard encyclopædic dictionary for these words.) These two



words were compounded into the word "Berkeley," meaning birch-meadow. In the early days, when men had but one name, such as John or Henry, they were more specifically designated by the place at which they dwelt, such as John of the Birk-ley, finally contracted into John Berkeley, the name of the place being taken as the family name. And thus evidently came the Berkeley family name.



BERKELEY COAT-OF-ARMS.

In Gloucestershire, England, near the banks of the Severn River, seventeen and a half miles by rail southwest of Gloucester, and one hundred and one miles west by north of London, in the "Vale of Berkeley," which consists of rich meadow pasture land, lies the ancient town of Berkeley, and on an eminence to the southeast is "Berkeley Castle," built in the reign of Henry I, out of the ruins of a nunnery which had been in existence some time before the Norman Conquest. This castle is to-day one of the most perfect specimens of Norman style in Great Britain. In 1162, Henry II granted this castle to Robert Fitzhardinge, with whose

deseendants it has ever since continued, they having held the title of Baron of Berkeley from 1259, and Earl and Viseount from 1679.

See "Imperial Referencee Library, Eneyelopædie Dictionary and Atlas of the World," Vol. I; "Chambers' Eneyelopædia," Vol. II; "Eneyelopædia Brittanica," Vol. III; and "Lives of the Berkeleys," by John Smyth of Nibley, covering the period from 1066 to 1618, edited by Sir John Maclean, in two volumes, in 1883-84; also "Berkeley Castle," by George Charles Grantley Fitzhardinge Berkeley, published 1836.

It is said that before the Norman Conquest of 1066, the Berkeley family was of some importance in Gloucestershire; that they fought with Harold at Hastings, and for years afterwards resisted William of Normandy with the other lords of Western England, and during the reign of Henry II, this castle was in the possession of Eva Berkeley, all of the men who would have been entitled to the castle having died and been killed in the numerous wars and insurrections. A deseendant of Mauriee Fitzhardinge, a knight, who came to England with William the Conqueror in 1066, married Eva Berkeley, and was granted Berkeley Castle by Henry II (England then being under the feudal system), and took the name of Berkeley, from which union came the present Berkeley family. Thus it would be necessary, to trace baek the lincage of Mauriee Fitzhardinge, to go beyond 1030 (presumably about the time he was born), for the paternal side of his union. Eva Berkeley's line no doubt ran baek before 1000, under the name of Berkeley (from the ancient origin of the name). Thomas Berkeley, eighth Lord or Baron of Berkeley Castle, who was in the battle of Poitiers 1356, in 1361 bought the ancient Castle of Beverstone in Gloucestershire and gave it to a younger son, whose deseendants lived there for eight generations. In the latter part of the sixteenth century, this estate having beecome very much deecayed in 1597, John Berkeley, Esq., then the owner of this estate, and at that time the head of the Beverstone branch of the Berkeley family, and the eighth generation of same, sold it. In 1618 he came to Virginia to superintend the iron works at Falling Creek, in Chesterfield County (about seven miles south of Manchester, near where Falling Creek empties into James River), was appointed a member of the council under Governor Yeardley, and was killed at Falling Creek by the

Indians in the massacre of 1622. He had ten children, of whom the sons were:

- I. Maurice.
- II. Thomas.
- III. William.
- IV. Henry.
- V. John.

It is not known whether any of these were killed in the massacre of 1622; but, at the time, Maurice was in England, and afterwards came to Virginia with a view of reëstablishing the iron works, which was never done. Of Maurice nothing more is known, except that he had charge of the salt works for the colony, and had a son, Lieutenant Edward or Edmund Berkeley, who, with his (Edward's) wife Jane and daughter Jane, was living at Neck of Land (between Island and the mainland), Virginia, in 1620, and who was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1625; and the report which was carried to England by John Harvey in February or March, 1625, stated that Lieutenant Edward Berkeley was living on Hog Island in James River. From this period (1625) there is no mention of the family in records now extant until twenty-six years later, 1651, when there was a grant to Henry Berkeley, Esq., of 2,400 acres on the north side of Chickahominy River, in what was then James City County, but afterwards doubtless New Kent. "Captain Berkeley's Land," on Chickahominy, is afterwards mentioned in 1655. The next of the name was Captain William Berkeley, who, as appears from Hening, was a member of the Virginia Long Parliament, the House of Burgesses, 1660 to 1675. In the records of Middlesex, in 1673, is mention of a Thomas Berkeley. In 1694 we find an Edmund Berkeley in Gloucester County, Va., married Mary Mann, by whom he had issue, Edmund Berkeley, the first, of "Barn Elms," Middlesex County.

Mrs. Mary Berkeley married, second, John Mann, of "Timberneck," Gloucester County, Va. The said Edmund Berkeley, the first of Middlesex County, married but once, in 1702, Lucy Burwell, a daughter of Major Lewis Burwell, of Carter's Creek, Gloucester County, Va., who was by his first wife, Abigail Smith, niece and heiress of General Nathaniel Bacon—and between 1712 and 1718, he moved to his seat at "Barn Elms," Middlesex County, Va.

From this union of Edmund Berkeley and Lucy Burwell are descended most of the Berkeleys now living in Virginia.

There is another family of Berkeleys that have sprung up in Virginia, and inasmuch as the said John Berkeley had five sons living in Virginia from 1619 to as late as 1675, it may be that this branch, who spell their name "Berkley," are descendants of one of the said five sons.

R. A. Brock, in his notes to Spottswood's Letters, "Virginia Historical Society," Vol. II, p. 59, says: "Edmund Berkeley of Barn Elms, Middlesex County, a descendant probably of Henry Berkeley who patented 2,400 acres of land on the north side of the Chickahominy River, in James City County, April 5, 1651 (Virginia Land Registry, page 277)." But it is most likely that he was a son of Lieutenant Edmund Berkeley (who was the son of Maurice Berkeley, who was the son of the John Berkeley, of Beverstone Castle), because, first, it will be noted that he named his eldest son Edmund and the grandson of this first Edmund Berkeley, of "Barn Elms," who was named Edmund and who married Judith Randolph, and had issue by her one son, whom he named Edmund; and Judith Randolph died and he married again, this time a Mary Burwell, and his first child was a son, whom he named Edmund, and he died young; and thus ended the unbroken line of the Edmunds; second, Henry Berkeley was a son of the John Berkeley, of Beverstone Castle, and the uncle of Lieutenant Edmund Berkeley, and Henry was very old to be the father of the first Edmund Berkeley, of Barn Elms, who was probably not born before 1650, which would make him sixty-eight years of age at his death in 1718, and forty-four years of age at the time of his first marriage with Mary Mann. The probability is that he was not more than thirty-four at the time of his first marriage, which would place his birth at 1660, and there is no evidence of Henry Berkeley ever being married. The first Edmund Berkeley of "Barn Elms" was undoubtedly a member of the Beverstone branch of the Berkeley family, for no other Berkeley ever settled in Virginia before the time of his birth save John and his sons, aforesaid Norborne Berkeley, Baron de Bottetouit, who was Royal Governor of Virginia a short while before the Revolutionary War, and who had no descendants. Sir William Berkeley and Lord Norborne Berkeley were both of the English family of Berkeleys,

but not of the Beverstone branch of the family, so far as is known. If so they did not belong to the main line of this branch, whose head was John Berkeley; aforesaid Sir William Berkeley left no male descendants. Edmund Berkeley of "Barn Elms" used the Berkeley coat-of-arms and the crest (a unicorn's head) which was peculiar to the Beverstone branch of the Berkeleys, the Burwells being at that time amongst the most influential and prominent people in Virginia. His appointment on the Council by the Crown in 1713, and the letters of Governor Alexander Spotswood, relative to same; the fact that he was appointed County Lieutenant of Middlesex, and the fact of his high social position, and that of his son, as shown by his son's marriage to Mary Nelson, of Yorktown, sister of General Nelson, and the high position he held—all bear testimony of his lineage. It will also be noted that he was wealthy and well to do in Virginia, and that he used the Beverstone crest and Berkeley coat-of-arms while Henry William, who was a member of the Virginia Long Parliament, 1660 to 1675, and probably John and Thomas, sons of John Berkeley, and uncles or great-uncles of the said Edmund Berkeley, still lived and while Sir William Berkeley was Governor of Virginia. This would seem to put beyond all question the fact that he was a member of the Beverstone branch of the Berkeley family, a grandson or great-grandson of the said John Berkeley, and that the only members of the Beverstone branch of the Berkeley family now live in Virginia, *i. e.*, that belong to the main line of the Beverstone branch of the Berkeley families.

As to the English members of the Berkeley family, these still hold the Earldom of Berkeley, the Barony of Berkeley, and the Barony of Fitzhardinge; and at times have held the Earldom of Flammouth. As there have been from the earliest history of this family in England, there are still, many knights, and officers in the British Army and Navy, in some instances reaching the ranks of Major-General and Admiral. (See Whitaker's Almanac for 1904.)

It was by order of Admiral Berkeley, of the British Navy, that American vessels were searched for British seamen, which caused the War of 1812. (See any History of the United States.)

Some of the most prominent members of the English Berkeleys since 1607 are:



I. Bishop George Berkeley, the philosopher, who died 1783. George Charles Grantley Fitzhardinge Berkeley, English writer, who was for a time in the army and a member of the British Parliament, 1832-52. Among his many works was "Berkeley Castle," published in 1836. He died 1881.

II. Miles Joseph Berkeley, English botanist. The leading British authority on fungi and plant pathology, and especially well known for his achievements in mycology. He died in 1889.

III. Sir George Berkeley, English engineer, who was made president of the Institute of Engineers in 1892; knighted in 1893. He died in December, 1893.

IV. Stanley Berkeley, English artist of note. Constantly exhibited at the Royal Academy in recent years: a national gold medalist, and a member of the Royal Institute of Painter Etchers, amongst his most celebrated paintings being "The Charge of Scarett's Three Hundred," "Gordons and Grays to the Front," "For God and the King," "The Charge of the French Cuirassiers at Waterloo," and "Heroes of the Tugela." He is still living. (See the *Encyclopædia Americana* or any standard *encyclopædia*.)

V. While Sir William Berkeley has been much abused in history for his attitude towards Bacon and his followers, it will be noted that his successful contests and negotiations with the parliamentarians not only gave to Virginia the name of "The Old Dominion," Virginia having been made the fourth dominion of the British Empire on account of her loyalty to the crown, through his efforts and diplomaey, as above stated, but Virginia was also made a harbor of refuge for the cavaliers, who, when deposed by the Cromwell administration, came to Virginia and were cordially received and were assisted in establishing themselves by Sir William Berkeley—amongst whom it is said were the Washingtons and Lees and many others whose descendants have made Virginia history illustrious. (See Jones' *History of United States and other histories*.)

The English family of Berkeleys were concerned in the settlement and history of Virginia almost from its inception. "On Saturday, December 30, 1606, the first expedition sent out for the 'First Colony in Virginia' sailed from London, and May 24, 1607, landed and begun the building of James Towne. In the meantime, on March 19, 1607, James, by the grace of God, etc., issuing an



ordinance and constitution enlarging the number of the King's Council of Virginia, and augmenting their authority, for the better directing and ordering of such things as shall concern the two several colonies." Among the additional councilors was (3) Sir Morris (Maurice) Berkeley.

VI. November 18, 1610, a true Declaration of the Estate of the Colony of Virginia, with confutation of such scandalous reports as have tended to the disgrace of so worthy an enterprise, "was entered at Stationers Hall, for publication, by Sir Thomas Smith, Sir Maurice Berkeley, Sir George Cappin and Master Richard Martin. It was published by advice and direction of the Counsell of Virginia. The first Republic in America by Dr. Alexander Brown, abbreviated T. F. R. A., A. B., page 21 (21-25, 26, 27). (3) 14. Many of these were mere members of Parliament and had seen service in the late war with Spain. They remained in England and there had charge of the affairs of the Virginia colony. (4) Sir Maurice Berkeley had distinguished himself at Cadiz in the war with Spain. January 22, 1619, a fire occurred at White Hall, which destroyed all of the records and minutes of the privy council from January, 1602, to May, 1613, inclusive. As the council had special supervision over Virginia matters, many records of great value to us must have been destroyed by this fire." (T. F. R. A. by A. B., page 226.)

February 13, 1619, Hilary term quarterly court sat, at which "the Indenture (patent) to Sir W. Throckmorton, Sir George Yeardley, Richard Berkeley, George Thorpe and John Smythe, of Nibley, for plantation (Berkeley Hundred) in Virginia," was ratified.

February 28th, joint letter from Sir W. Throckmorton, Richard Berkeley, George Yeardley, Governor of Virginia, offering him a fifth share in the ship they were then sending, at that moment, "kept bound in Ireland." "Since your departure . . . we have procured our patent for plantation in Virginia, a copy whereof we herewith send unto you, written by the Virginia boy of me, George Thorpe."

(2) April 13th Richard Berkeley (and twentieth Sir W. Throckmorton) wrote to John Smith, recommending William Chester (a kinsman of Berkeley's) for their chief or commander of their men in Virginia.

(3) In July, 1619, Sir William Throckmorton, Richard Berkeley, George Thorpe and John Smith, of Nibley, engaged *The*

*Margaret*, of Bristol, a ship of eighty tons, belonging to Edward Williams, to carry men for settling on their plantation in Virginia. Late in July, George Thorpe wrote from Bristol to John Smith asking him to hasten Mr. Woodleaf and the mariners. Captain John Woodiffe, who had been eleven years in Virginia, was to have command of the future settlement of Berkeley Town and Hundred. On September 14th, the four adventurers signed the commission to him, and the covenant and agreement with him, and gave him the ordinance, directions and instructions for the government of our men and servants in the Town and Hundred of Berkeley, together with sundry messages to Sir George Yeardley. The ship sailed with him from Bristol on September 26th. The company records say, "with forty-five persons for Berkeley plantation," but in the certificate of John Swye, Mayor of Bristol, there are only thirty-eight. This was probably the first ship sent to Virginia by them. I have no evidence that the wind-bound ship of February, 1619, ever sailed. On September 19th the four associations wrote a letter to Governor Yeardley, requesting him to become a co-adventurer with them, and sent it by this ship. Captain George Thorpe did not go over at this time. October 10th he granted a fourth part of his own share in the Virginia venture to Robert Oldsworth and John Smith, of Nibley.

I. T. R. ind. by A. B., page 297.

II. T. R. ind. by A. B., page 300.

III. T. R. ind. by A. B., page 345.

A servant was not necessarily a menial, but persons employed the word servant, having the legal signification in a general sense. (1) February 12, 1620, the Hilary term quarter court, held at the house of Sir Edwin Sandys, near Aldergate, questions were considered relative to transportation of persons, and other questions relative to Virginia. A letter from an unknown person, signed "Dust and Ashes," directed to Sir Edwin Sandys, was read, promising money for the rearing and education of Indians. A special committee was appointed by the court for the management of this matter and the money. February 26th the committee reported, and amongst other things recommended that, "it would be best to put such young Indians" in the hands of plantations already settled there, as Smythe's Hundred, Martin's

Hundred, Berkeley's Hundred and the like. Whereupon "Sir Thomas Roe promised that Berkeley Hundred would take two or three, and Mr. Smythe and himself to be responsible to the company for their well bringing up."

II. May 17, 1620, Sir William Throckmorton assigned his share (one-fourth part) in Berkeley Hundred to William Tracy.

III. *The Margaret*, of Bristol, which sailed from "Kingwood," England, September 26th, made land on December 8th, and "landed in a good harbor at Keeketon," in Virginia, on December 10th. Four days thereafter the captain received the following certificate:

To the Treasurer, Counsell and Company of Adventurers and planters of the City of London, for the first Colony in Virginia. These are to certify that in good ship of Bristol called the *Margaret* this present iiiith 14th O. S., 1619 anyold in the port of James City for plantation here in Virginia at the charges of Sir William Throckmorton, Knight and Baronet, Richard Berkeley, George Thorpe and John Smyth, Esquires, under the conduct of John Woodleefe Esq. thess thirty and five persons all in safety and perfect health whose names ensue.

Toby Felgate gent, (pilot). Ferdanando Yale, gent, (who wrote an account of the voyage) John Blanchard gent Henry Pearse gent Richard Godfrey gent Thomas Cooper (or Coopy) gent Rowland Painter, John Cole, Humphry Oshone, Humphry Plant, Thomas Davis, Christopher Nelme, Samuel Cooper, William Cole, Thomas Pearce, Thomas Denton, Christopher Burton, William Parker, John Hind, William Patche, Thomas Patche, Thomas Sanford, William Stone, John Jones.

(I) T. F. R. in A., by A. B., pages 354-355.

(II) T. F. R. in A., by A. B., page 364.

(III) T. F. R. in A., by A. B., pages 370-371.

Richard Sherife the elder, Richard Sherife the Younger, Edward Paynter, Corler Coyer, James Clay, William Clement, Stephen Torphet, Thomas Molton, John Taylor, Waller Tampton, Thomas Thorpe—35.

This Certificate I affirme to be true.

GEORGE YARDLEY,  
JOHN PORTER, Secretary.

Charles City, December 14th, 1619.

These were the first settlers of the Town and Hundred of Berkeley, on James River. The landing place for this plantation is now known as Harrison's Landing, under the management of Captain Woodliffe, with regular ordinances, directions and instructions from the four associates aforesaid, for the managing

the business. They also sent a letter to the Governor affirming him a share in their venture, and from Sir Edwin Sandys.

II. "In compliaunce with these requests the Governor located the plantation in a very good and convenient place on James River, which still retains the name of Berkeley."

III. Governor Yeardley wrote from Jamestown, on January 20, 1620, to John Smith, of Nibley:

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL:—Yours from Bristol dated September 9th, 1619. I have receeived from Captain John Woodleefe, whom, according to your desire, I have planted in a very good and convenient place. Against which act of mine it may be Captain Franeis West, brother to ye late right honorable my Lord La Warre (according to some false information from hence) will there in England take some exeception, as if I had seated your people upon part of that land which he the last summer designed for the right honorable Lord La Warre, now living. Which if he do you may upon mine affirmation boldly reply that Mr. West is misinformed, and that ye land I have made choyle of for you lies above (Westover) that which he had appointed for my Lord, more towards west and Sherley Hundred and towards Charles Citty, and also that he had not before his departure obtained any grant from me of that which he did lay out.

For joyning with you presently in adventure, though I give you many thanks for your favor, in admitting me one of your society, and would as gladly partake with you as with any so well in ye company, yet such now is partly my publike employment and partly my engagement to bring out of at my own charge twenty-five men this year to furnish Smyth Hundred, as I much beseech you to exeuse me, if I cannot at this time make use of that special favor of yours. Hereafter it may be when God shall give me ability and leisure, I shall be more forward to aaccept your courtesye. In ye mean while you shall find me as ready for your sake to assist Captain Woodleefs at all assayer.

I. T. F. R. in A. B., pages 371-372, and note at foot of page 371, which is as follows: See Bulletin of the New York Public Library for March and July, 1897, for reference to Smith, of Nibley, Papers, 1613-1674, relatives to this plantation.

II. T. F. R. in A. B. by A. B., page 372.

III. The T. F. R. in A. B. by A. B., pages 373 and 374.

Colonel Edmund Berkeley, of "Barn Elms," was appointed a member of the council in 1713. It seems he was appointed without the recommendation of Governor Spotswood, which brought about some trouble between him and the Governor and the Lords Commissioners of Trade. He was appointed County Lientenant

of Middlesex in 1715, and died soon after in 1718. By his first wife, Mary Mason, he had no issue. Before 1712 Colonel Berkeley lived in Gloucester County, after which he lived at his famous county seat, "Barn Elms," in Middlesex. He was a man of great wealth and much prominence in Virginia. This issue of his marriage with Lucy Burwell, his second wife, was:

- I. Edmund Berkeley, b. Nov. 26, 1704.
- II. Lewis Berkeley, b. Jan. 18, 1704, died early.
- III. Lucy Berkeley, b. May 10, 1709.
- IV. Mary Berkeley, b. May 24, 1711. She married (Nov. 1736) Ralph Wormeley, of "Rosegill."
- V. Sarah Berkeley, b. Feb. 9, 1713.

The tomb of Lucy (Burwell) Berkeley is at "Barn Elms," with this inscription:

Here lyeth the body of Lucy Berkeley, who departed this life ye 16th day of Decb., 1716, in ye 33 year of her age, after being married twelve years and 15 days.

She left five children, two boys and three girls. I shall not pretend to give her full character; it would take too much room for a gravestone. Shall only say she never neglected her duty to her Creator in public or private; she was charitable to the poor, a kind mistress and indulgent mother and obedient wife. She never, in all the time she lived with her husband, gave him so much as one cause to be displeased with her.

The only son of Colonel Edmund Berkeley I, of "Barn Elms," who had issue, was Colonel Edmund Berkeley II, who succeeded to his father's estate. He was appointed Justice of Middlesex, 1725; member of House of Burgesses in 1736 and other years. He married Mary Nelson, of Yorktown, May 18, 1728. She was the daughter of Thomas Nelson, of Yorktown, and sister of General Nelson. A fine portrait of her is preserved at "Airwell," Hanover County.

Their children were:

- I. Lucy Berkeley, b. June 15, 1729; d. young.
- II. Edmund Berkeley, b. Dec. 5, 1730.
- III. Nelson Berkeley, b. May 16, 1733.
- IV. Mary Berkeley, b. Jan. 15, 1737. She married Dr. Corbin Griffin, of Yorktown.

V. Sarah Berkeley, b. Jan. 27, 1741. Never married.

VI. Lucy Berkeley, b. June 9, 1744. Never married.

Colonel Edmund Berkeley III, of "Barn Elms" (son of Edmund II, son of Edmund I), was also a member of the House of Burgesses from 1772 to 1774, and of the convention of 1775-'76. November 5, 1757, he married Judith Randolph, sister of Thomas Mann Randolph, of "Tuckahoe." On January 23, 1763, he married his second wife, Mary Burwell, daughter of Charles Burwell, of "The Grove."

By his first wife, Judith (Randolph) Berkeley, they had issue:

- I. Edmund, d. in childhood.
- II. Judith, d. in childhood.
- III. Mary Berkeley, who married Joseph Clayton, of Matthews County, had no issue.

By the second wife of Edmund Berkeley III were:

- I. Edmund, appointed clerk of King William County, in 1801, and d. young 1802. Never married.
- II. William, also d. young.
- III. Norborne, who also d. young.
- IV. Carter Burwell, appointed Justice of Middlesex, 1808, d. unmarried.
- V. Elizabeth, who married Thomas Churehill, of "Wilton," Middlesex County.
- VI. Luey Berkeley. Married Rev. Heffernon.
- VII. Mary Berkeley. Married Tarleton Fleming, of Roek Castle, Goochland County.
- VIII. Alice Berkeley. Married a Fontaine.
- IX. Sarah Berkeley.
- X. Lewis Berkeley. This Lewis Berkeley, son of Edmund III, of "Barn Elms," was there left as the representative of the senior branch of the family. He moved to Aldie, Loudoun County, Va., and in 1821 married Frances Calendes Noland, daughter of William Noland, of Loudoun County.

Their issue was as follows:

- I. Edmund Berkeley, Lieutenant Colonel, Eighth Virginia Infantry.
- II. William N. Berkeley, Major, Eighth Virginia Infantry.



III. Norborne Berkeley, Colonel, Eighth Virginia Infantry. (This was known as the Berkeley Regiment, called "The Old Bloody Eight.")

IV. Charles Berkeley, Captain in the Eighth Virginia regiment; d. unmarried.

V. Mary Lewis Berkeley. She married Richard S. Cox, of Washington, D. C., and had:

I. Berkeley Cox.

II. Edmund Berkeley, of Evergreen, son of Lewis Berkeley, of Aldie, was also called Colonel, and lived in Prince William County, Va., and now of Alexandria, Va. He was Lieutenant Colonel of the celebrated Eighth Virginia Infantry during the War between the States, and saw hard service. He was wounded several times; the last at the battle of Gettysburg, in Pickett's division. He married a Miss Williams, daughter of Judge Thomas Lornier Williams, of Tennessee.

They had six children. The fifth, Hugh Douglas Berkeley, was Captain in United States Cavalry, and distinguished himself at the battle of San Juan Hill, in the late Spanish-American War, being mentioned by President Theodore Roosevelt in his account of it. Edmund Berkeley, of Atlanta, Ga., was the oldest son of Edmund Berkeley, of Evergreen (son of Lewis, son of Edmund III, son of Edmund II, son of Edmund I, of "Barn Elms"). He was a cadet at the Virginia Military Institute during the War between the States, and was wounded at the battle of New Market, where the cadets, numbering about 240, all young men, made the celebrated and historic charge which was so successful, losing about — in killed and wounded. He afterwards engaged in railroad business, and is now assistant superintendent of the Seaboard Air Line. Major William W. Berkeley, of Red Hill, son of Lewis Berkeley, of Aldie, and now of the University of Virginia, was Major in the Old Bloody Eight, and was wounded at Gettysburg. He married Miss Cynthia White Smith, daughter of Brig. Gen. Thomas A. Smith, of the United States Army, whose grandfather was of the Essex, Virginia, family.

Colonel Norborne Berkeley, of Stokes, Loudoun County, Va., was a graduate of the Virginia Military Institute, and was Colonel in the Eighth Virginia, and also wounded in the terrible charge of Pickett's division. He married Lavinia Berkeley, daughter of

Dr. Edmund Berkeley, of Staunton, Va., and lived several years in the State of Oregon, but now resides in Prince William County. The children by this marriage were:

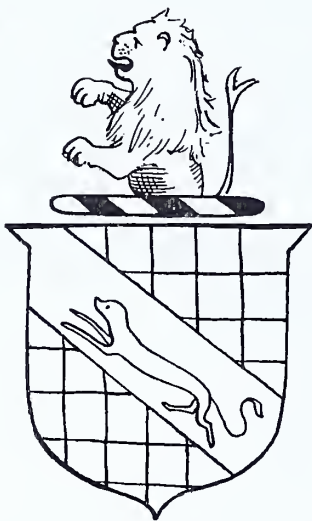
- I. Spotswood Berkeley.
- II. Norborne Berkeley.
- III. William N. Berkeley.
- IV. Charles C. Berkeley.

Nelson Berkeley, second son of Edmund Berkeley II, of "Barn Elms," moved to Hanover County previous to the Revolutionary War, and took up there an estate of some five thousand acres. He was a member of the Hanover Committee of Safety, an organization for providing ways and means for the soldiers of the colonies, and for procuring information as to the movements of the British. On March 11, 1756, he married Elizabeth Wormeley Carter, daughter of Landon Carter, of "Sabine Hall," who was son of Robert King Carter. She it was who heroically saved the silver communion service of the parish church from capture by Colonel Tarleton and his men by standing in the doorway of the church and defying their entrance. The issue of Nelson Berkeley and Elizabeth Carter Berkeley were:

- I. Mary Nelson, b. July 8, 1760; d. Oct. 23, 1787. Married John Minor.
- II. Elizabeth Wormeley Berkeley, b. June 7, 1762; d. Oct. 1763.
- III. Captain Edmund Berkeley, b. March 31, 1764; d. unmarried.
- IV. Nelson Berkeley, b. Jan. 13, 1766; d. Jan. 14, 1848.
- V. Dr. Carter Berkeley, b. Feb. 20, 1768; d. Nov. 3, 1839.
- VI. Colonel William Berkeley, b. Dec. 1, 1768; d. ———.
- VII. Sarah Wormeley Berkeley, b. Dec. 6, 1771; d. Aug. 7, 1773.
- VIII. Lucy Carter Berkeley, b. June 13, 1773; d. Nov. 1773.
- IX. Lewis Berkeley, b. Feb. 18, 1775; d. Nov. 1775.
- X. Robert Berkeley, b. April 21, 1776; d. ———.
- XI. Elizabeth Landon Berkeley, b. May 5, 1778; d. unmarried.
- XII. Landon Carter Berkeley, b. Oct. 26, 1780. Married Lucy Sheppard and had one son, Landon. Father, mother and son died in a few years of each other.

## THE BROOKE FAMILY OF MARYLAND.

Thomas Brooke, of Whitehureh, Hampshire, England, according to the *Herald's Visitation*, in the year 1634, was born in the year 1530 and died 1593. He married Elizabeth Twyne, sister and heiress of Sir John Twyne, of Whitehureh, Hampshire. Their son, Thomas Brooke, married Susan Foster, daughter of Sir Thomas Foster, of Etherstone, Durham County, a famous lawyer of the time of King James I, by whom he was knighted. The old house in which the Brookes lived at Whitechurch is



THE BROOKE COAT-OF-ARMS.

Arms—Chequy and the azure on a bend gules, a lion passant or.

Crest—On a wreath azure and or a demi lion erased or.

still standing. Symonds, in his diary, mentions the interesting fact that during the Civil War King Charles I passed two days and nights as the guest of Sir Thomas Brooke. The entries read thus: "Friday 18, 1644. This night the King lay at the White Hart, in Andover; the whole army in the field. Saturday—as soon as light the army marched after the enemy. The King lay at Whitehureh at Mr. Brooke's, his house, that night. Monday 21st—His Majesty left Whitechurch."

That there was close friendship between the Sovereign and the Brooke family is not only evident from the fact that the King honored his home with his presence, but the action of Cecilius Calvert in announcing Robert Brooke's intended adventure a whole year before his coming, his granting a whole county to him, and the fact that he named it Charles County, all indicate that he was near to the royal person. Robert Brooke, the third, of Thomas and Susan Brooke, of Whitchurch, England, matriculated at Wadham College, Oxford, April 28th, 1618, aged 16 years. He received the degree of Bachelor of Arts, July 6th, 1620, and that of Master of Arts four years later. At the age of twenty-five he married Mary Baker of Baute, in Sussex County, England, and had by her four children—two sons and two daughters. At the death of his first wife Robert Brooke married, in 1635, Mary Mainwaring, daughter of Roger Mainwaring, D. D., Dean of Worcester and later Bishop of St. David's, and said to have been of a noble family. By his second wife Robert Brooke had eleven children, seven of whom were sons. Ten of his children came to Maryland from England with Robert Brooke and Mary, his wife. It is, therefore, not surprising that it took a ship of his own to bring his family across the ocean.

So impressed was Cecilius Calvert by the coming of Robert Brooke, that he made it subject of a special message to Governor Stone and to the privy Council, with instructions to them to enroll and register his grant to Robert Brooke in the common registry of the said province, for the better confirmation and manifestation thereof. "The grant confirmed unto our trusty and well-beloved Robert Brooke, Esq., one whole county within our province to be newly set forth, erected, nominated and appointed for that purpose, round about and next adjoining to the place, he shall so settle and plant in, etc., and such a quantity and number of miles as other counties in our said province. And we hereby grant unto him, the said Robert Brooke, all such honors, dignities, privileges, fees, perquisites, profits and immunities as are belonging to the said place and office of Commander of said county, etc. And we do hereby further empower the said Robert Brooke to appoint and call a Court or Courts to award in our name all manner of process, hold pleas and finally to hear and determine all civil causes and actions whatsoever happening, which

may be heard and determined by any of the Justices of the Peace, in England, in their Courts of Sessions, not extending to life and member."

At the same writing Lord Baltimore also authorized Robert Brooke to be Commander-in-Chief under him, "of all the forces which shall be armed, levied or raised in the said County and to lead and conduct them against the Indians and other foreign enemies." A commission was also forwarded to Maryland by the proprietary, naming Robert Brooke as "member from privy Council to meet and assemble himself in Council upon all occasions." Therefore, when on the last day of June, 1650, Robert Brooke, lineal descendant of King Fergus II (A. D. 404), sailed into the Patuxent River in his own ship, with a retinue of twenty-eight servants, he was accorded, no doubt, the welcome which the heralding of Lord Baltimore naturally insured to him. Charmed by the picturesque shores of the Patuxent he sailed many miles farther up than any adventurer had sailed and chose for his abiding place the two thousand acres known as the "Manor of de La Brooke," of which his eldest son, Baker, was created Lord, while his father became Commander of the new County, named Charles, in honor of the King.

Although Robert Brooke lived but five years after his arrival in Maryland, he left a lasting impression upon the history of his day.

The fact that he came to Maryland as a friend of King Charles and was an adherent and privy Councilor of Lord Baltimore and changed his allegiance to the Cromwellian party when they deposed Governor Stone in 1652, has caused much surmise among his descendants. Robert Brooke was, however, not the only man who changed his politics at this time, and it is quite impossible to judge at this distance whether he thought he could best serve Lord Baltimore's interests as Acting Governor under Parliament, or whether he really was diplomatic and accepted the goods that the gods provided. Certain it is, however, that Lord Baltimore resented the change of front by annulling his commission as Commander of Charles County, in 1654, at which time Calvert County was erected in its place.

That there was no more depth of feeling, however, between the Calverts and the Brookes than the mere passing of a political

campaign is evident from the fact that when Anne Calvert, the daughter of Governor Leonard Calvert, came to Maryland to inherit in connection with her brother the estate of her father, Baker Brooke, the Lord of De La Brooke Manor, was the suitable match made for her Ladyship. Baker Brooke was twenty years of age when he arrived in Maryland and this high-bred young Lord of De La Brooke was commissioned as a member of the Council in the year 1658 and continued till the time of his death. This marriage of Anne Calvert took place between the years 1664 and 1671. On the latter year Baker Brooke received his Commission as Surveyor General of the province, dated August, 1671, on which Lord Baltimore designates him "our trusted and beloved nephew." On the year 1664, when Charles Calvert wrote to his father, Cecilious, that his Cousin William's sister had arrived, and that he was looking out for a good match for her, he little thought that the coming of this Anne and her brother, William Calvert, would destroy the romance woven about their father, Leonard Calvert's noncupative will, in which he said to Mistress Margaret Brent: "Take all; pay all." The incident gave a pretty suggestion for a Colonial love story, in which a young bachelor Governor and the first Woman's Right Advocate, Mistress Brent, were the central figures. But, alas! the cold unromantic facts have dispersed the dreams of fancy, and the belief of all students of the Calvert papers is that Mistress Brent was Leonard Calvert's sister-in-law, and as nearest of kin to his children, was the executrix of his estate, and the reason of her fighting so vigorously to protect it, was in the interest of her sister's children.

Whether this be proved true in time, certain it is that Baker Brooke and Anne Calvert, the daughter of Governor Leonard Calvert, married and left three sons and one daughter, from whom descended many of the Brookes of Maryland. Major Thomas Brooke, the second son of Robert Brooke and Mary Baker, became prominently identified with the official and military life of the Commissioners of Maryland to confer with Sir William Berkeley, Governor of Virginia and others regarding the over production of tobacco in the year 1667. Like his brother, Baker Brooke, Major Thomas married a lady of high social position. She being Eleanor Hatton, niece of the distinguished Secretary of the Province. Their son, Col. Thomas Brooke, of Brookefield, Prince George



County, was not only a member of the Council, but also a Justice of Calvert County, several years before he attained to this high post of honor. Like his father, he was an Indian fighter and one of the Commissioners to treat with the Piscataways in the year 1697. As Commissary General, Judge of the High Court of Admiralty and President and Acting Governor of the Province, he practically filled every office in the gift of the King, Queen, and the Royal Governor. This distinguished official was twice married. By his first wife he left two daughter and a son, all of whom intermarried with prominent families (Colonial families). By his second wife, Barbara Dent, Col. Brooke had eleven children, six of whom were girls, and all married men of high standing.

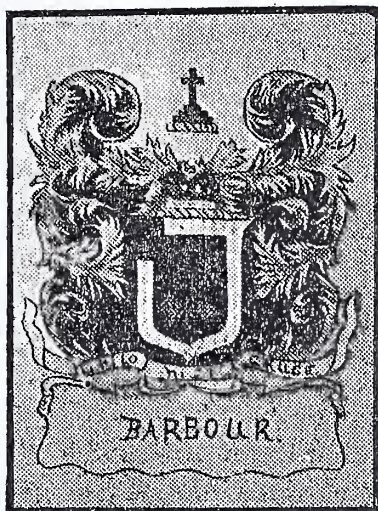
Roger Brooke, another son of Robert Brooke, of De La Brooke, was a Colonial official of importance, being one of the gentlemen Justices of Calvert County and member of the quorum.

Later he was appointed High Sheriff of the County. Through his marriage to Dorothy Neale, he has left numerous descendants in Montgomery County and elsewhere. His second wife was Mary Worseley, of England.

While it is impossible in so limited a space to more than touch upon the individual members of a family so large and officially important as the various generations of the Robert Brooke descendants of Whitchurch, England, and De La Brooke, on the Patuxent, it may prove of interest to know that almost every representative family of the State can trace some connection with this eminent name.

## CHAPTER XII

THE BARBOUR, GREEN, FLEMING, COLEMAN AND HENRY  
FAMILIES.



BARBOUR COAT-OF-ARMS

## THE BARBOUR FAMILY.

Mr. John Strode Barbour has given the following about the Barbour Family:

There is some confusion as to the name of the first emigrant and founder of the Barbour Family of Virginia, or rather who was the emigrant of this particular family. All traditions seem to give their extraction as Scotch, and the time of coming to this country as about the middle of the 17th century. Some traditions give William Barbour, who was said to have been a younger son of the Baron of Mulderg, and who was County Lieutenant of York in 1656, and also one of the commission appointed by the governor, Sir William Berkeley, in 1660, to superintend the erection of the State house at Jamestown, as the first emigrant (see Hardesty's Historical and Geographical Encyclopedia, 1884, p. 358), while others give James Barbour a Scotch merchant. One tradition, in connection with this

last theory is, that, on arriving in Virginia, James Barbour established a home on a plantation, since famous as the seat, for generations, of another distinguished Virginia family. That he then married a Miss Taliaferro, and died, leaving an infant son, James, and a widow. That the widow re-married, and by some means the issue of this second marriage, who was almost an imbecile, became the owner of the entire Barbour property. He was a great gambler, and soon squandered it. The only form of gambling he had intellect sufficient to engage in was "push pins," and he is reported to have lost the homestead upon the issue of a single game. However true this tradition may be, the son, James, left the home of his childhood after his father's death, and came to Culpeper near the end of the first quarter of the 18th century, and settled finally in Culpeper Co., Va. It was here that he lived and died, and was buried. The tombstone marking his grave is still standing at Smith's Cottage, the old homestead, now in Madison County. This second James, spoken of by Dr. Slaughter as the first, was a vestryman of St. Mark's Parish at its organization in 1731. Probably the most authentic account of the founder of the Virginia family, now attainable, is the following extract from the bible of Governor James Barbour, entered therein in his own handwriting, under the date of June 6th, 1806. It will be observed that he makes no reference to William Barbour, and no claim to descent from titled ancestry, but seems rather to emphasize the fact that his ancestors were "farmers or yeomen." It will be observed also that he refers to the defeat of the expectations of the second James, by reason of the re-marriage of his mother. He says:

The farthest back that I have been able to trace, with any certainty, is my great-grandfather, who came over to this country from Scotland in the 17th century. He came in the character of a merchant, and was wrecked on his first adventure. His friends, as stated by tradition, being rich, furnished him with a new cargo, which he turned to a profitable account in (I believe) the county of King and Queen. He had issue, only one son, whom he called after himself, James, who intermarried with Sarah Todd, of a most respectable family. My grandfather's prospects in life were considerably blasted by the second marriage of his mother, an usual concomitant of such connections with the wreck of his expectations. He was either the first or second settler in this country; I mean the South West Mountains. I am certain he was the first inhabitant of this neighborhood, which was at first about the plantation now in the occupancy of the Newman family, that being the place of residence from which he moved to a place nearer the river that belonged to William Johnson. He had issue: five sons and three daughters. . . . My father Thomas, as well as his father, were farmers or yeomen.

In the obituary notice of his distinguished great-grandson, Judge Philip Pendleton Barbour, published in Vol. 16, Peters' U. S. Supreme Court reports, it is said:

His (Judge Barbour's) great-grandfather (the second James) was the founder and first settler of the country lying between the eastern base of the Blue Ridge and the South West Mountains.

While it is possible that the first James, instead of being the emigrant, was a son of a grandson of the William Barbour, above mentioned, in the following chart this James Barbour is treated as the founder of the family.

## FIRST GENERATION.

James Barbour<sup>1</sup> emigrated from Scotland in the 17th century; settled in King and Queen, or in Gloucester County. Married Miss Taliaferro, and had but one son, James, erroneously called James the first by Dr. Slaughter, who was "defeated of his expectaney" by the second marriage of his mother.

## SECOND GENERATION.

James Barbour<sup>2</sup> (James<sup>1</sup>). Married twice; first, Elizabeth Todd, by whom he had one son, Richard, who never married; second, Sarah Todd, probably a sister of the first. He was presiding justice of the Culpeper County Court in 1764, and d. 1775, in Culpeper Co., Va. His widow, Sarah, d. 1781. Their wills are both recorded in Culpeper Co., Va., and show them both to have been possessed of large estates. There were by the second marriage the following issue:

- I. James Barbour<sup>3</sup>.
- II. Thomas Barbour<sup>3</sup>.
- III. Philip Barbour<sup>3</sup>.
- IV. Ambrose Barbour<sup>3</sup>.
- V. William Barbour<sup>3</sup>.
- VI. Mary Barbour<sup>3</sup>.
- VII. Fanny Barbour<sup>3</sup>.
- VIII. Betty Barbour<sup>3</sup>.
- IX. Daughter. Married James Boyd.

## THIRD GENERATION.

James Barbour<sup>3</sup> (James<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>) married Frances Throckmorton, of Gloucester Co., Va. He was a member of the House of Burgesses of Culpeper in 1764, County Lieutenant of the militia of Culpeper County in 1775, an officer in the Revolutionary Army, and was also a judge of the first court ever held in Kentucky, being the head of a commission appointed by the Legislature of Virginia to settle disputed land titles. They had issue:

- I. Mordecai Barbour<sup>4</sup>. Married Elizabeth Strode.
- II. James Barbour<sup>4</sup>, d. single.
- III. Thomas Barbour<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary Taylor.
- IV. Richard Barbour<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary Moore.

- V. Gabriel Barbour<sup>4</sup>.
- VI. Philip Barbour<sup>4</sup>. Married, first, Lucy Taylor; second, Eliza Hopkins.
- VII. Frances Barbour<sup>4</sup>. Married John Moore.
- VIII. Sarah Barbour<sup>4</sup>. Married Col. John or James Harrison.

Issue:

- I. James Harrison<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Talbot, issue.
- II. Lucy Harrison<sup>5</sup>. Married Mr. Davis.
- IX. Mary Barbour<sup>4</sup>. Married Col. David Walker, who was for years a member of Congress; they had seven children.
- X. Lucy Barbour<sup>4</sup>. Married Wythe Baylor.

Thomas Barbour<sup>3</sup> (James<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>) married Mary Pendleton Thomas, of Orange, Va. He was a member of the House of Burgesses from Orange Co., Va., and signed the non-importation act of 1769 between this country and Great Britain, and after the formation of the union was a member of the Legislature. Richard Henry Lee, in a letter to his brother, Arthur Lee, wrote that he was glad that Thomas Barbour was in our State Councils, "for he was a truly intelligent and patriotic man." Thomas and Mary Barbour had issue:

- I. Richard Barbour<sup>4</sup>.
- II. James Barbour<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Thomas Barbour<sup>4</sup>.
- IV. Lucy T. Barbour<sup>4</sup>.
- V. Philip P. Barbour<sup>4</sup>.
- VI. Nelly Barbour<sup>4</sup>.
- VII. Mary or Polly Barbour<sup>4</sup>.
- VIII. Sally Barbour<sup>4</sup>.

Mary Barbour<sup>3</sup> (James<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>) married John Harrison. They had one daughter, married a Mason, and their son, James Barbour Mason, at one time represented Garrard Co., in the Kentucky Legislature. He married a daughter of Hugh Logan, and their son, James B. Mason, was Clerk of Garrard Co., Ky., and (1899) lived in Lancaster.

Fanny Barbour<sup>3</sup> (James<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>) married Smith. Of this family was Geo. A. Smith, who sold the old Barbour homestead, Smith's Cottage, and moved to Texas before the Civil War. His older brother was Dr. Camm R. Smith, of Galveston, Texas. Mrs.

Jeremiah Morton was their sister. Their mother was Mildred Glassel. (See Glassel Family, Hayden's Genealogy.)

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

James Barbour<sup>4</sup> (Thomas<sup>3</sup>, James<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>) married Lucy, daughter of Benjamin Johnson and Bettie Barbour. Resided in Orange Co., Va., was a representative in Congress from Virginia from 1815 until he resigned in 1825; was Secretary of War, and Minister to England under John Quincy Adams' administration, and Governor of Virginia during the war 1812. Their issue were:

- I. Benjamin Johnson Barbour<sup>5</sup>, d. 1820, aged 20 years.
- II. James Barbour<sup>5</sup>, d. 1857, no issue.
- III. Benjamin Johnson Barbour<sup>5</sup>, b. 1821. Married Caroline Watson.
- IV. Lucy Barbour<sup>5</sup>. Married John Seymour Taliaferro.
- V. Frances Cornelia Barbour<sup>5</sup>. Married Wm. Handy Collins, of Baltimore, Md.

Philip Pendleton Barbour<sup>4</sup> (Thomas<sup>3</sup>, James<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>) was a brother of Governor James Barbour; married a sister of his wife, Frances Todd Johnson, and earned equal distinction with his distinguished brother, b. May 25, 1783; was a member of the Virginia Assembly in 1812. In 1814 was elected to Congress, and continued therein until 1825, and was chosen Speaker of the House in 1821. He was a lawyer of great distinction; was offered the professorship of law at the University of Virginia by Mr. Jefferson, but declined it, and was appointed a Judge of the General Court of Virginia. In 1827 he resigned, and was re-elected to Congress without opposition. In 1829 he, together with ex-President Madison, represented Orange County, Va., in the Constitutional Convention of that year, and on the death of ex-President Monroe, succeeded him as president of that distinguished body. In 1830 he was appointed U. S. District Judge for the Eastern District of Virginia. He declined the post of Attorney-General, and refused nominations for a seat on the Court of Appeals of Virginia, for the gubernatorial chair, and the Senate of the United States, but in 1836 accepted an appointment as a Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States, and held this position until his death in 1842. He had issue:



- I. Philippa Barbour<sup>5</sup>. Married Judge R. H. Field.
- II. Elizabeth Barbour<sup>5</sup>. Married John Jaquelin Ambler, who wrote Ambler MSS. Issue given in Ambler Genealogy.
- III. Dr. Thomas Barbour<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Edmund Pendleton Barbour<sup>5</sup>.
- V. Quintus Barbour<sup>5</sup>.
- VI. Sextus Barbour<sup>5</sup>.
- VII. Septimus Barbour<sup>5</sup>, d. leaving no issue.

Full account of Barbour Genealogy in Genealogical and Historical Notes on Culpeper Co., Va., by Dr. Philip Slaughter.

### THE GREEN FAMILY.

Robert Green, son of William Green, an Englishman, emigrated from Ireland with his uncle, William Duff, a Quaker, to Virginia, and settled in King George Co., about the year 1710. He was born in 1695. He soon left his uncle and settled in what is now Culpeper Co., near Brandy Station on the Southern Railway. He built his home near a large spring which is on the road leading from Brandy Station to Rixeyville, and took up large tracts of land in what was, in 1712, Essex; in 1721, Spotsylvania; in 1735, Orange, and in 1749, Culpeper. His father was an officer in the body guard of William, Prince of Orange. He died in 1748, his will and inventory of his estate being recorded in the Orange County Clerk's Office. He was a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses in 1736, and was one of the first vestrymen of St. Mark's Parish. When a young man he married Eleanor Dunn, of Scotland, and had seven sons. Issue:

- I. William Green<sup>2</sup>, b. Essex Co. Married Miss Colemau, of Caroline Co., Va.; was vestryman of St. Mark's Parish from 1749 to his death, in Culpeper Co., Va., in 1770. He was called Colonel Green, probably from military service against the Indians.
- II. Robert Green<sup>2</sup>. Married Patty Ball, of Northumberland; d. in Culpeper.
- III. Duff Green<sup>2</sup>. Married, first, Miss Thomas; second, Anne Willis; he died in Culpeper about the beginning of the Revolution. His three youngest sons moved to Kentucky about 1779, and afterwards carried out their mother and younger sister.

- IV. John Green<sup>2</sup>. Married Susanna Blackwell; d. 1793, in Culpeper.
- V. Nicholas Green<sup>2</sup>. Married Elizabeth Preece, daughter of Ajola Preece, of Orange, whose mother was a daughter of Capt. William Barbour; d. in what is now Madison Co., Va., and left many children, who moved to Kentucky.
- VI. James Green<sup>2</sup>. Married Elizabeth Jones; d. in Culpeper.
- VII. Moses Green<sup>2</sup>. Married Mary Blackwell, sister of Susanna; d. in Culpeper.

## SECOND GENERATION.

Colonel John Green<sup>2</sup> (Robert<sup>1</sup>) was born in Culpeper Co., about 1730. Married Susanna Blackwell; was chosen collector of St. Mark's Parish 1761; made church warden, with his brother, Robert, in 1764. In 1776 Richard Yancey was chosen vestryman "in place of John Green, in Continental service." Captain Green entered the military service of Virginia as Captain 1st Va. Bat., September 4, 1775. When his command was mustered into the Continental Line, he was re-elected Captain, January 20, 1776, at which time he was under the command of Gen. Andrew Lewis at Williamsburg. In the fall of that year, he served under Washington in New York; was engaged with his troops at Mamaroneck in the attack on Maj. Roberts, of the British Army, October 21, 1776, when he was wounded in the shoulder. Colonel John Green and his wife had issue:

- I. William Green<sup>3</sup>. Married Luey Williams. He was Captain of the navy, and was lost at sea on the brig *Defiance*.
- II. John Green<sup>3</sup>, killed at 18, at Valley Forge.
- III. Robert Green<sup>3</sup>. Married Frances Edmunds; d. 1789.
- IV. Moses Green<sup>3</sup>. Married Fanny Richards.
- V. Thomas Green<sup>3</sup>. Married, first, Miss Miller; second, Luey Peyton, and moved to Christian Co., Ky.

James Green<sup>2</sup> (Robert<sup>1</sup>) married Elizabeth Jones, and had issue:

- I. Gabriel Green<sup>3</sup>. Married Miss Grant and moved to Green River, Ky.

- II. James Green<sup>3</sup>. Married Betsy Jones.
- III. Jones Green<sup>3</sup>. Married Miss Nevil and moved to Hardy Co., Va., and had issue:
  - I. Nevil Green<sup>4</sup>.
  - II. Jones Green<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Nancy Green<sup>4</sup>.
- IV. ——— Green<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Parsons.
- V. Mary Green<sup>4</sup>.
- VI. Betsy Green<sup>4</sup>.
- IV. Robert Green<sup>3</sup>. Married Miss Edmunds, and had issue:
  - I. William Green<sup>4</sup>.
  - II. James Green<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Thomas Green<sup>4</sup>.
- IV. Robert Green<sup>4</sup>.
- V. Fanny Green<sup>4</sup>.
- VI. Ellen Green<sup>4</sup>.
- VII. Eliza Green<sup>4</sup>.
- VIII. ——— Green<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Cross.

### THIRD GENERATION.

William Green<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>) married Frances Edmunds.  
Issue:

- I. John W. Green<sup>4</sup>, Judge of Virginia Court of Appeals.

James Green<sup>3</sup> (Jno.<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>) married Betsy Jones, and had issue:

- I. Eliza Green<sup>4</sup>. Married Wm. A. Lane.
- II. J. Strother Green<sup>4</sup>. Married, first, Miss Jett; second, Mrs. Jones.
- III. James Green<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Shackelford.
- IV. Fanny Green<sup>4</sup>. Married George M. Parsons.
- V. Duff Green<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Payne.
- VI. Dolly Green<sup>4</sup>. Married Turner Ashby. Had issue:
  - I. James Ashby<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Moneure.
  - II. Gen. Turner Ashby<sup>5</sup>, killed in battle. (My mother [author] knew Gen. Ashby very well.)
- III. Dolly or Dora Ashby<sup>5</sup>. Married P. Moneure.
- IV. Betty Ashby<sup>5</sup>. Married Geo. Green.
- V. Mary Ashby<sup>5</sup>. Married George Moneure. (More of this Family in Moneure Chapter.)

- VII. Jones Green<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Seott, of Fredericksburg, Va.
- VIII. Charles Green<sup>4</sup>. Married Ann Herndon. Had issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Green<sup>5</sup>. Married Philip St. George Ambler, of St. Moore, near Lynehburg, Va. (See Ambler Genealogy, Chapter I.)
  - II. James William Green<sup>5</sup>. Married M. T. Jett.
- IX. Mary Green<sup>4</sup>. Married Sam Bailey.
- X. Austin Green<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Gordon, of Stafford.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Judge John W. Green<sup>4</sup>, Judge of Virginia Court of Appeals (William<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), married, first, Mary Browne; second, Million Cooke, a granddaughter of George Mason, of Gunston Hall.

(Col. Wm. Ball<sup>1</sup>, b. 1615; d. 1680. Married Hannah Atherold in London, 1638. Joseph Ball<sup>2</sup> married Elizabeth Beomney; Hannah Ball<sup>3</sup> married Raleigh Travers.

Raleigh Travers. Married Hannah Ball.

Elizabeth Travers. Married John Cooke.

Travers Cooke. Married Mary Doniphan.

Col. John Cooke, of "West Farms," Stafford Co. Married Mary Thompson Mason, daughter of George Mason, of Gunston Hall.

Million, daughter of Col. Jno. Cooke, of "West Farms." Married Hon. John W. Green.)

Hon. John W. Green by first marriage had issue:

- I. William Green<sup>5</sup>. Married Columbia Slaughter. Issue:
  - I. John Slaughter<sup>6</sup>, killed in battle.
- II. Bettie Slaughter<sup>6</sup>. Married James Hayes, of Richmond; had two sons and several daughters.
- II. Raleigh B. Green<sup>5</sup>, d. single.
- III. D. Daniel S. Green<sup>5</sup>, U. S. A. Married Virginia Slaughter, and had issue:
  - I. Dr. William Green<sup>6</sup>, of Baltimore, Md.
  - II. Samuel S. Green<sup>6</sup>, of Charlestown, W. Va.

III. Mollie Green<sup>o</sup>. Married Richard Morton, of Baltimore, Md., having issue:

- I. One daughter<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Daniel G. Morton<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Richard Morton<sup>7</sup>, Jr.
- IV. William W. Morton<sup>7</sup>.
- V. Allen Waller Morton<sup>7</sup>.

Hon. John W. Green by second marriage had issue:

- I. John Cooke Green<sup>5</sup>. Married Luey Morton, still living (July, 1905), Culpeper, Va. Had issue:
  - I. Bessie Green<sup>o</sup>. Married John Ambler Brooke.
- II. Cooke Green<sup>o</sup>. Married Edward Brooke. (Chapter I, Ambler Genealogy.)
- II. Thomas Claiborne Green<sup>5</sup>, Judge of the West Virginia Court of Appeals. Married Mary Naylor McDonald and had issue:
  - I. Claiborne Green<sup>o</sup>. Married Miss Harris.
  - II. Annie Green<sup>o</sup>. Married John Porterfield.
  - III. Flora Green<sup>o</sup>. Married Kruger Smith.
  - IV. Kate Green<sup>o</sup>. Married Jno. Lattimer.
  - V. Elizabeth T. Green<sup>o</sup>. Married Dr. Perry.
- III. George Green<sup>5</sup>. Married Bettie Ashby, had several children, one of whom, Dora Green, married G. M. Wallace, of Stafford Co., Va. I met Mrs. Wallace in Fredericksburg, 1905. She was a charming lady.
- IV. James William Green<sup>5</sup>. Married Anne Sanford McDonald, and had issue:
  - I. Augustus McDonald Green<sup>o</sup>. Married Miss Taylor.
  - II. Mary Mason Green<sup>o</sup>. Married J. R. Norris.
  - III. Leacy Naylor Green<sup>o</sup>. Married J. M. Leach.
  - IV. Nancy Craig Green<sup>o</sup>. Married Dr. W. W. Grant, of Denver.
  - V. James Williams Green<sup>o</sup>. Married Mamie Hill, of South Carolina.
  - VI. Sue McDonald Green<sup>o</sup>. Married Franklin Stearns.
  - VII. John Williams Green<sup>o</sup>.
  - V. Luey Williams Green<sup>5</sup>, d. single.

(Full account of Green Genealogy, "St. Mark's Parish," by Dr. Slaughter.)

## THE COLEMAN AND FLEMING FAMILIES.

The following is copied from the *Richmond Standard*, published Saturday, May 29, 1880; contributed by R. A. Brock:

In vigour of intellect in its various exemplifications, in true manhood, and in illustrious and material service in the one sex, and in the typical exhibition of womanly grace and virtues characteristic of Virginia and the South in the other, no citizen of the Old Dominion within its annals or traditions has been more honored in his descendants, to the present generation, than John Henry, a native of Aberdeen, Scotland, and son of John Henry and Jane, the sister of Dr. William Robertson, the historian, and thus the cousin of the distinguished Lord Brougham. John Henry emigrated to Virginia sometime before 1730. He enjoyed the friendship and patronage of Robert Dinwiddie, who introduced him to the acquaintance of Colonel John Syme, whose widow he married. He was Colonel of militia, surveyor, and for many years presiding magistrate of Hanover Co., Va. He had been liberally educated, was well grounded in the classics, possessed an excellent judgment and strong natural ability. He executed a map of Virginia, which was published in London in 1770, a copy of which was in the possession of Joseph Horner, Esq., of Warrenton, Va., a few years ago.

Charles Campbell (History of Va., p. 521) says: "Appended to it is an epitome of the state and condition of Virginia. The marginal illustration is profuse and, like the map, well executed."

Soon after the settlement of Colonel John Henry in Virginia, Patrick, his brother, followed him, and after some interval became, by his brother's interest (April, 1733), rector of St. George's Parish, in the new County of Spottsylvania. He was afterwards rector of St. Paul's Parish, in Hanover County.

Colonel John Henry married Mrs. Sarah (Winston) Syme, and had issue:

- I. Jane Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married Colonel Samuel Meredith, lieutenant of the volunteer company from Hanover County, which under the command of Patrick Henry marched to Williamsburg, May, 1775, and seized the powder in the magazine there.
- II. William Henry<sup>2</sup>, d. *sine prole*.
- III. Sarah Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married Thomas Thomas, of Bristol, England.
- IV. Susanna Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married Gen. Thomas Madison, who was the son of John, and brother of Bishop James Madison, president William and Mary College. Their



descendants number many of the family names of Bowyer and Lewis, of Botetourt County.

- V. Mary Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married — Bowyer.
- VI. Anne Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married George William Christian, son of Robert Christian, from Londonderry, Ireland, who settled in Augusta Co., Va., 1740; d. 1784, aged 90 years. Gen. William Christian was killed by the Indians near Louisville, Ky., in 1784. Issue:
  - I. One daughter<sup>3</sup>. Married Governor John Pope. (From this marriage are descended the Warfields, Bullets, and Diekinsons, of that State.)
- VII. Elizabeth Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married, first, Gen. William Campbell (b. 1745, in Augusta Co., Va.), the hero of King's Mountain, who was killed Sept. 1781; married, second, Gen. William Burrell, who was b. 1758; d. July 3, 1825, Fayette Co., Ky.
- VIII. Luey Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married Valentine Wood, of Gooseland Co., Va.
- IX. Patriek Henry<sup>2</sup>, the orator, b. May 29, 1736; d. June 6, 1799. Married, first (1754), Sarah Shelton; second (Oct. 9, 1777), Dorothea Dandridge, the granddaughter of Governor Alexander Spotswood, who upon his death married, second, Judge Edmunds Winston, of the Court of Appeals of Virginia; d. 1831 at his residence, "The Meadows," Buckingham Co., Va.

Isaac Winston emigrated from Wales and settled in Hanover Co., Va., about 1702.

Sarah, daughter of Isaac and Mary (Dabney) Winston. Married, first, Col. John Syme, son of Col. John Syme, a travelled gentleman of rank and fortune, and Mildred, daughter of Nicholas Meriwether, second in descent from Nicholas of Wales, settled in Virginia about 1650, and had issue:

- I. John Syme<sup>2</sup>, member House of Burgesses, and of the Convention of 1775; Colonial seat, "Rocky Mills." Married, first, daughter of Meriwether, and had issue:
  - I. Sarah Syme<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 5, 1769; d. May 15, 1814. Married (Dec. 1781) Colonel Samuel Jordon Cabell, of the Revolution, b. Dec. 15, 1756; d. Aug. 4, 1818.

- II. Mildred Syme<sup>3</sup>, d. single.
- III. John Syme<sup>3</sup>, d. 1793.
- IV. Nicholas M. Syme<sup>3</sup>, lived and died at New Castle, Hanover Co., Va. Married, first, Miss Johnson; second, Miss Johnson, and had issue:
  - I. William H. Syme<sup>4</sup>, edited a newspaper in Lunenburg Co., Va.
  - II. John Syme<sup>4</sup>. Married Frances Cole Diggs, of Albemarle Co., Va.
  - III. Margaret Syme<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 27, 1825, in Richmond, Va. Married William P. Hogue, Oct. 1847; living now in Charleston, W. Va.

I will give a letter of Mr. John Syme Hogue, son of William and Margaret Hogue:

Charleston, Kanawha Co., W. Va.

Nov. 14, 1903.

EDITOR OF THE TIMES-DISPATCH:—In your issue of October 25th last, you published an article on the Winston family of Virginia. This, I think, is slightly erroneous. I beg to offer these corrections:

Sarah Winston married 1st John Syme (not John Lyne), the emigrant, who came to the Colony about 1721. After his marriage there came to him, with letters of introduction, Colonel John Henry, a man of culture, belonging to an old Scottish family, a magistrate and loyal subject, who took pleasure in drinking the King's health at the head of his regiment. He was of course well received.

John Syme<sup>1</sup> and Sarah Winston, his wife, had issue: John Syme<sup>2</sup>.

John Syme<sup>2</sup> d. 1723. His widow, Sarah, married afterwards Col. John Henry, and by him had issue: Among others, Patrick Henry, who thus became the half brother of John Syme<sup>2</sup>. This John Syme<sup>2</sup> took a prominent part in the Revolutionary proceedings.

I. John Syme<sup>3</sup>, d. 1793.

II. Nicholas M. Syme<sup>3</sup>. His son, John Syme<sup>4</sup>, married Frances Cole Diggs. Their daughter, Margaret Syme, married William P. Hogue, my father, and hence I happen to know something about Sarah Winston.

Very respectfully,

JOHN SYME HOGUE.

Colonel John Syme<sup>2</sup> married, second, Sarah, daughter of Adam Hoops, of Philadelphia, and had issue:

- V. Jane Isabella Syme<sup>3</sup>. Married John Thompson, a wine merchant of Richmond, Va., no issue; second, John T. Swann.

- VI. Anna Maria Syme<sup>3</sup>. Married Jonah Riddiek, of Nansemond Co., issue: Willis and Lemuel, both d. young.
- VII. Elizabeth Syme<sup>3</sup>. Married George Fleming. He came to Virginia with his uncle, Mr. Simeon Vashon, when he was twelve years old (from Ireland); was educated by his uncle, and in Norfolk Co., Va. He became a wine merchant in Richmond, Va. After his marriage he lived at Healing Springs, Louisa Co., Va. Had twelve children, only three of whom survived—the father of George W. Fleming and two maiden sisters. Another son, John S. Fleming, of Goochland Co., Va., d. a few years since, leaving a widow and three sons. One of the youngest, Dr. George Fleming, married Mrs. Mary Orrell Coleman, widow of Thomas Burbage Coleman, of Concord, in Caroline Co., Va.

#### ANCESTORS AND RELATIVES OF DR. GEORGE FLEMING.

##### BROTHERS AND SISTERS.

- Isabel Fleming.  
 Thomas Fleming, d. 21 yrs. old.  
 Adam Hoops Fleming, d. 23 yrs. old.  
 Ellen Catherine Fleming, d. 54 yrs. old. Married Mr. Lindsay.  
 George Fred Augustus Fleming, d. ——.   
 Ann Maria Fleming.  
 Martha Hoops Fleming, d. 28 yrs. old.  
 Jane Thompson Fleming, d. 24 yrs. old.  
 Eliza Hoops Fleming, d. 36 yrs. old.  
 Sallie Fleming, d. 8 mos. old.  
 John Syme Fleming, d. 66 yrs. old.  
 Wm. Nausau Fleming, d. 40 yrs. old.

##### FATHER AND MOTHER.

- George Fleming, d. 70 yrs. old.  
 Elizabeth Hoops Syme Fleming, d. 39 yrs. old.

##### GRANDFATHER AND GRANDMOTHER.

- Col. John Syme.  
 Sarah Hoops. They lived at Rocky Mills, Hanover Co., Va.

## GREAT-GRANDFATHER.

Adam Hoops.

(More about Syme Family later.)

## FAMILY CHART.

Mary Orrell. Married Joseph Brock. Issue:

Susanna Brock. Married Rev. Archibald Dick. Issue:

Elizabeth Dick. Married Capt. Vivian Minor. Issue:

Matilda Minor. Married Robert Coleman. Issue:

Mary Orrell Coleman.

Thomas Vivian Coleman.

Mary Orrell Coleman. Married Thomas Burbage Coleman, of Concord, Caroline Co., Va. Issue:

I. Lewis Minor Coleman. Married Mary Ambler Marshall.  
Issue:

Matilda Minor Coleman.

Lewis Minor Coleman.

Claudia Burwell Coleman.

II. Matilda Elizabeth Coleman. Married Edward W. Morris.  
Issue:

Mary Watts Morris. Married James Nelson. Issue:

I. Rosa Nelson. Married T. K. Mason.

II. Richard Nelson.

III. Robert Nelson.

Matilda Minor Morris.

Richard Morris, d. 1868.

Thomas Burbage Morris.

Sallie F. Morris.

Bettie Morris.

Letitia Rives Morris.

Milly Rose Morris.

Louise Coleman Morris.

Susan Dabney Morris.

III. Robert Thomas Coleman.

These charts were handed to me by Dr. George William Fleming, of Chantilly, Hanover Co., Va.

Mundert Doodes. Married Mary ———. Changed name to Doodes Minor<sup>1</sup>, had issue:

- I. Mary Minor<sup>2</sup>. Married Peter Montague.
- II. Doodes Minor<sup>2</sup>. Married Elizabeth Coke. Issue :
  - I. Minor Minor<sup>3</sup>. Married Elizabeth Norman.
  - II. William Minor<sup>3</sup>.
- III. Garret Minor<sup>3</sup>. Married Lavinia Vivian.
- IV. John Minor<sup>3</sup>, d. Sept. 6, 1685.
- V. Peter Minor<sup>3</sup>, d. —, 1697.
- Garret Minor<sup>3</sup> married Lavinia Vivian. Issue :
  - I. John Minor<sup>4</sup>. Married Sarah Carr.
  - II. Dina Minor<sup>4</sup>. Married George Goodloe.
- John Minor<sup>4</sup> married Sarah Carr and had issue :
  - I. Maj. John Minor<sup>5</sup>. Married Elizabeth Cosby.
  - II. William Minor<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Thomas Minor<sup>5</sup>. Married Mary Dabney.
  - IV. Nancy Minor<sup>5</sup>. Married T. Herndon.
  - V. Garret Minor<sup>5</sup>. Married Mary O. Terrell.
  - VI. James Minor<sup>5</sup>. Married Mary Carr.
  - VII. Diana Minor<sup>5</sup>.
  - VIII. Dabney Minor<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, Anne Anderson ; second,  
B. Cosby.
  - IX. Vivian Minor<sup>5</sup>. Married E. Dick.
  - X. Elizabeth Minor<sup>5</sup>. Married Col. Lewis.
  - XI. Peter Minor<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Jones.
- Dabney Minor<sup>5</sup> married, second, B. Cosby, by whom he had  
issue :
  - I. Joseph Minor<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Alfred Minor<sup>6</sup>.
  - III. Molly Minor<sup>6</sup>. Married T. McLaughlin, had issue :
    - I. George McLaughlin<sup>7</sup>. Married Miss Dicke.
    - II. Thomas B. McLaughlin<sup>7</sup>. Married Miss Hackett.
  - III. John McLaughlin<sup>7</sup>. Married Miss Johnson.
  - IV. Harriet McLaughlin<sup>7</sup>. Married Dr. T. B. Anderson.
  - V. Barbara McLaughlin<sup>7</sup>. Married ———.
- Vivian Minor<sup>5</sup> married E. Dick, and had issue :
  - I. Susan B. Minor<sup>6</sup>. Married Wm. Wyatt.
  - II. Archibald Minor<sup>6</sup>. Married Miss Rawlings.
  - III. Alfred Minor<sup>6</sup>, d. a bachelor.
  - IV. Matilda Minor<sup>6</sup>. Married Robert Coleman.

V. Lewis Minor<sup>6</sup>, d. yellow fever, Mobile.

VI. Joseph Minor<sup>6</sup>, d. a bachelor.

Archibald Minor<sup>6</sup> married Rawlings, and had issue:

I. Elizabeth Minor<sup>7</sup>. Married Hill.

II. Lewis Minor<sup>7</sup>. Married ———.

III. Harriet Minor<sup>7</sup>. Married Duval.

Archibald Minor<sup>6</sup> married Miss Rawlings, and had issue:

I. Mary Orrell Coleman<sup>7</sup>. Married, first, Thomas B. Coleman; second, Dr. George Fleming.

II. Thomas Vivian Coleman<sup>7</sup>.

Mary Orrell Coleman<sup>7</sup> married Thomas B. Coleman, by whom she had issue:

I. Lewis Minor Coleman<sup>8</sup>. Married Mary Ambler Marshall.

II. Robert T. Coleman<sup>8</sup>. Married Milly Rose Irving.

III. Matilda E. Coleman<sup>8</sup>. Married E. Morris.

Lewis Minor Coleman<sup>8</sup>, b. at Chantilly, Hanover Co., Va., February 3, 1827; d. at Edgehill, Caroline Co., Va., March 21, 1863. Married (August 2, 1855) Mary Ambler Marshall, b. at Leeds, April 29, 1830 (still living in Kentucky). Mr. Coleman received from his venerated mother his early moral sentiments and religious impressions. He was first sent to a private school at Beaver Dam, and subsequently he attended the academy of his uncle, Frederick Coleman, at Concord, Caroline Co., Va. In 1844, when Lewis was seventeen, he entered the University of Virginia, and at nineteen graduated with the degree of A. M. On the 12th of November, 1846, he united with the Baptist Church at Richmond, Va. Having determined to devote his life to teaching, he became, by the invitation of his uncle, an assistant in Concord Academy. His wonderful proficiency as a disciplinarian, and his success as an educator, encouraged him to open a school of his own. When Concord Academy was closed about 1854, he founded Hanover Academy, at Taylorsville, Va., and by firmness and perseverance, as well as on account of his scholarship, the school flourished, and his reputation was established. In 1859 he was elected Professor of Latin in the University of Virginia, and Hanover Academy passed to his assistant, Professor Jones. In the University, his scholarship and classical crudition added to the reputation of the institution. But in the midst of his useful



labors the Civil War aroused the nation to arms. His duty to his native State he regarded as imperative. His allegiance was due to Virginia, and not to the Union. An artillery company was in August, 1861, mustered into service of the Confederacy, with Capt. Coleman as its chief officer. With diligence he prepared himself to fill his new position, and drilled his men for service. His men were called morning and evening for religious services, under the leadership of their faithful commander. The effect was, that his men were heroes such as were led by Cromwell and Havelock. Capt. Coleman's company was placed in Gen. Pendleton's division, and at Yorktown, the peninsula, the battles around Richmond and on many other bloody fields in Virginia and Maryland, did valuable service for the South. At the reorganization of the army in 1862, Capt. Coleman\* was promoted to the rank of Major; and shortly afterward was elected Lieutenant Colonel of the First Virginia Artillery. He was with his regiment at Richmond, but had to retire to recruit his health. A short time before the battle of Fredericksburg, Va., he resumed his place. On that bloody field he was wounded in the leg, but not disabled. Yet the wound, which seemed but slight, proved mortal, and after ninety days of intense physical suffering he found the peace of death at "Edgehill," Caroline Co., Va. Thus died a moral hero and martyr to conscientious duty—a scholar, soldier, patriot and Christian.

Col. Coleman and his wife, Mary Ambler Marshall, had issue:

- I. Maud Minor Coleman<sup>o</sup>, d. young.
- II. Lewis Marshall Coleman<sup>o</sup>.
- III. Claudia Burwell Coleman<sup>o</sup>. These are living in Chattanooga, Tenn., at present, 1905.
  - I. Lewis Marshall Coleman. Married Julia W. Boyd, and had issue:
    - I. Lewis Marshall Coleman.
    - II. Maud Coleman, d. 18 yrs. old.
  - III. Claudia Burwell Coleman, b. in Hanover Co., Va., Dec. 24, 1858. She is living with her mother in Chattanooga, Tenn.

---

\*NOTE.—Miss Pecquet du Bellet spent two months of the summer of 1904 at Dr. George William Fleming's, half brother of Col. Coleman. During her stay at Chantilly she read the Life or History of Col. Lewis Coleman, written by some of his friends of the University. A nobler Christian man never lived.

Robert T. Coleman<sup>8</sup> married Milly Rose Irving, and had issue:

- I. Burbage Coleman<sup>9</sup>.
- II. Josephine Coleman<sup>9</sup>. Married James Walker. Issue:
- I. Robert Coleman Walker<sup>10</sup>.

Matilda E. Coleman<sup>8</sup> married E. W. Morris. Issue already been given.

Matilda M. Coleman Morris<sup>9</sup> married M. Woods. Issue:

- I. Ed Morris Woods<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Sallic Woods<sup>10</sup>.
- III. Maud Coleman Woods<sup>10</sup>.
- IV. Mary Watts Woods<sup>10</sup>.
- V. Lettie Page Woods<sup>10</sup>.

Lettie R. Morris<sup>9</sup> married Rev. Frank Page. Issue:

- I. John Page<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Matilda Page<sup>10</sup>.
- III. Elizabeth Page<sup>10</sup>.

Rose T. Morris<sup>9</sup> married Dr. T. Whitehead.

NOTE.—Ancestors of Mrs. Matilda Coleman: Great-grandmother Mary Orrell, d. aged 97 years. Married Joseph Brock, and lived in Spottsylvania. Grandmother Susannah Brock d. aged 97. She was born 1755 A. D. Married Rev. Archibald Dick, English minister from Scotland, b. 1725; d. 1812. Issue: Archibald Dick, d. 90th year, in Caroline Co., Va. Mary Dick, married Mr. Hart. Elizabeth Dick, b. Jan. 12, 1760. Married Captain Vivian Minor, of Caroline Co., Va., b. Nov. 4, 1750. Mrs. Minor d. 1847. They lived at Springfield. Matilda Minor, married Robert Coleman.

Mary Orrell Coleman married, second, Dr. George Fleming, of Chantilly, Hanover Co., Va. She was widow of Thomas Burbage Coleman, of Coneord, Caroline Co., Va.

Dr. George Fleming and his wife had issue:

- I. Mary Eliza Fleming<sup>8</sup>. Married Samuel Schooler, of Edge Hill Academy, Va. After the death of her husband, Mrs. Schooler lived in Fredericksburg, Va. I met her in 1902, 1903. She was one of the most interesting and literary ladies that I have ever had the pleasure of meeting. She was a well known and highly connected Christian lady, of Fredericksburg, Va.; d. Dec. 23, 1903, after an illness of several weeks, aged 70.

She was a prominent member of the Baptist Church, and is survived by two children, G. F. Schooler and Miss Willie F. Schooler. Issue:

- I. George Fleming Schooler<sup>o</sup>.
- II. Mary Orrell Schooler<sup>o</sup>. Married (Dec. 13, 1883) John Ambler; she died 1885, leaving one daughter, six months old.

- I. Mary Orrell Ambler<sup>1o</sup>.
- III. Dr. Malcolm Nausau Schooler<sup>o</sup>.
- IV. Willie F. Schooler<sup>o</sup>, of Fredericksburg. She is principal of a very prosperous school.
- V. Roberta Schooler<sup>o</sup>, d. ———.

- II. Sallie T. Fleming<sup>s</sup>. Married Col. William LeRoy Broun (a very prominent educator since the civil war). Issue:

- I. William LeRoy Broun<sup>o</sup>. Married Lemelia Simon.
- II. Maud Broun<sup>o</sup>. Married Betts.
- III. Mary Broun<sup>o</sup>. Married Ordway.
- IV. Bessie Broun<sup>o</sup>.
- V. George Broun<sup>o</sup>.
- VI. Kate Broun<sup>o</sup>.

- III. Malcolm Nausau Fleming<sup>s</sup>, M. D. Married, first, Anna Dean. Issue:

- I. Mamie Fleming<sup>o</sup>.
- II. Frank Fleming<sup>o</sup>.

Dr. Fleming married, second, Mamie Meigs. Issue:

- III. Mary Fleming<sup>o</sup>.
- IV. Henry M. Fleming<sup>o</sup>.
- V. Stewart Fleming<sup>o</sup>.
- VI. Malcolm Fleming<sup>o</sup>.
- IV. George Fleming<sup>s</sup>, d. ———.
- V. Dr. George William Fleming<sup>s</sup>. Married (April 24, 1883) Ann Gordon Ambler; lived at Chantilly, Hanover Co., Va.; removed spring of 1905, to Cheraw, South Carolina. (See Volume I, Ambler Genealogy.)
- VI. Vivian Minor Fleming<sup>s</sup>. Married Emily White, of Athens, Ga. Mr. and Mrs. Fleming reside in Fredericksburg, Va. They are charming people, and have one daughter.

- I. Annie Fleming<sup>9</sup>. Married (March 28, 1905, New York City, Hotel Victoria) Mr. Smith, b. at Hamilton, Ontario, Canada. He is a newspaper man, and whereas their home has been in Washington, D. C., they have recently (Aug. 1905) removed to New York, where they will in future reside.

VII. William Thomas Fleming<sup>8</sup>.

The following is copied from William and Mary College Quarterly, Vol. VI, No. II, October, 1897, p. 127:

MINOR.—Quite a number of useful and enterprising Dutchmen came to Virginia about 1650, and founded families. Among them was a merehant who signs his name indifferently Doodes Minor, Minor Doodes, and Mindert Doodes. As Minor Minor Doodes, of Nansemond, he received a deed in 1655, from James Gates. Later, as hailing from Lancaster County in 1665, he and his wife, Mary, united in a deed to Peter Montague. His will, dated and proved in 1677, mentions his wife Mary, and son Doodes Minor's children. His wife Mary's will, dated 1678, and proved about 1686, names daughter, Marie Montague, and her daughter, Marie, sons Doudes Mindert and Peter Montague, who are to have an equal division of the residue of his estate. The will of Doodes Minor (Mindert) was dated November 13, 1694, and names wife Elizabeth and four sons: Minor Minor, William Minor, Garrett Minor, and Peter Minor. Minor Minor was to have his seal gold ring, and his granddaughter, Elizabeth Mickleburrongh, a silver ring. The Middlesex register shows that of these Garrett Minor was b. April 13, 1669, and d. Feb. 2, 1720. The inventory of Minor Minor was recorded in 1716-17 (Middleereek County records). The Louisa County books show that Garrett Minor and Mary Terrill were married in 1769. It is believed that the highly distinguished John B. Minor was descended from this family.

THE COLEMAN FAMILY OF HALIFAX COUNTY,  
VIRGINIA.

John Coleman, with a brother, came to America from the British Isles, some time in 1700. John Coleman<sup>1</sup> married Miss Bandolfe. He came to Halifax Co., Va.; his brother went to Pennsylvania.

John Coleman<sup>1</sup> left several daughters and one son, Col. Henry Embry Coleman<sup>2</sup>, of Woodlawn, Halifax Co., Va. He was a member of the Virginia Senate; he married Anne Gordon, and had issue:

- I. Elizabeth Ann Coleman<sup>2</sup>, d. Aug. 29, 1821. Married (Sept. 29, 1813) Charles Baskerville; d. March 22, 1834. Mr. Baskerville married, second, Lucy Goode; d. Dec. 11, 1868.
- II. Mary Margaret Coleman<sup>2</sup>. Married Richard Logan, member of the Virginia Senate.
- III. John Coleman<sup>2</sup>. Married, first, Elizabeth Clark; second, Mary Love. His only daughter married Mark Alexander, whose only child, Bettie, married Gen. Herbert, of Baltimore, Md.
- IV. Thomas Gordon Coleman<sup>2</sup>, b. March 23, 1802; d. Aug. 4, 1862. Married (May 6, 1828) Ann Sims Clark, b. Jan. 27, 1807; d. Jan. 1899.
- V. Henrietta Maria Coleman<sup>2</sup>. Married Rev. John Clark, father of Rev. William M. Clark, of St. James Church, Richmond, Va., and editor of the *Southern Churchman*. A daughter, Mrs. Betty Garrett, resides at Clover, Va.
- VI. Henry Embry Coleman<sup>2</sup>. Married Miss Hamilton; no issue. Married, second, Miss Turner; had three daughters and one son. Mrs. Philip Brine lives in Richmond. Mrs. Charles Bethel lives in News Ferry, Va.
- VII. Dr. Ethelbert Algernon Coleman<sup>2</sup>, b. 1812. Married, first, Elizabeth Sims; one daughter, Mrs. John Clark, of Barristen Lodge, Scottsburg P. O., Va. Dr. Coleman married, second, Martha Ragsdale.
- VIII. Sarah Coleman<sup>2</sup>. Married David Chalmers; son, Joseph W. Chalmers, Houston, Va.
- IX. Charles Coleman<sup>2</sup>. Married, first, Sarah Eaton; issue: Col. Henry Eaton Coleman<sup>3</sup>. Charles Coleman<sup>2</sup> married, second, Alice Sydnor; issue: Mrs. John Tabb<sup>3</sup>, Gloucester, Va., Mrs. Charles A. Snowdon, Baltimore, Md.
- X. Jane Coleman<sup>2</sup>. Married Charles E. Hamilton.

#### SECOND GENERATION.

Elizabeth Ann Coleman<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), d. Aug. 29, 1821. Married (September 29, 1813) Charles Baskerville; d. March 22, 1834.

Mr. Baskerville married, second, Lucy Goode; d. December 11, 1868.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. William Baskerville<sup>3</sup>, b. April 10, 1816; d. 1895.
- II. Henry E. Coleman Baskerville<sup>3</sup>, b. 1817; d. 1900.
- III. Mary Anne Elizabeth Baskerville<sup>3</sup>, b. July 14, 1819; d. July 6, 1873.
- IV. Charles Baskerville<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 14, 1821; d. June 23, 1890.

Issue by second marriage:

- V. Samuel Goode Baskerville<sup>3</sup>, b. April 18, 1824; d. Dec. 31, 1824.
- VI. Lucy Goode Baskerville<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 3, 1827; d. Aug. 6, 1836.
- VII. George Thomas Baskerville<sup>3</sup>, b. Oct. 16, 1829; d. July 2, 1863, at the battle of Gettysburg.
- VIII. John Eaton Baskerville<sup>3</sup>, b. Feb. 16, 1832; d. Nov. 1, 1833.
- IX. Sarah Alice Baskerville<sup>3</sup>, b. March 13, 1834; d. June 19, 1852.

Thomas Gordon Coleman<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), b. March 23, 1802; d. August 4, 1862, at five a. m.; son Henry Embry and Anne Gordon Coleman. Married (May 6, 1828) Ann Sims Clark, b. January 29, 1807. He was 60 years, 4 months and twelve days old, when he died. Issue:

- I. Dr. John Clark Coleman<sup>3</sup>, b. at Clarksville, March 9, 1829; d. Sunday, June 12, 1898, 70 years of age. Married (Jan. 30, 1861) Ann Lightfoot Edmunds.
- II. Henry Embry Coleman<sup>3</sup>, b. July 4, 1830; d. ———. Married (May 11, 1852) Ella Mackay Alexander.
- III. Priscilla Sims Coleman<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 23, 1831; d. Tuesday, Dec. 9, 1851.
- IV. Thomas Gordon Coleman<sup>3</sup>, Jr., b. June 29, 1832; killed in battle, Aug. 30, 1862. Married (Nov. 25, 1856) Isabella Rives.
- V. Martha Elizabeth Coleman<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 11, 1834, 10 o'clock in the morning; d. April 10, 1880, at the residence of Marshall Ambler Moncure, Richmond, Va. Married (June 20, 1855) William Marshall Ambler, youngest



son of Col. John Ambler and his wife, Catherine, née Bush. (Volume I, Ambler Genealogy.)

Dr. Ethelbert Algernon Coleman<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), b. 1812. Married, first, Elizabeth Sims. Issue:

I. Mrs. John Clark, Scottsburg, Va.

Dr. Ethelbert Coleman married, second, Martha Ragsdale. Issue, one daughter and seven sons:

Mrs. Thomas Edmonds<sup>3</sup>, Danville, Va.

Nathaniel R. Coleman<sup>3</sup>, of Paces P. O., Va. Married (1875) Annie Nelson Page. (Cary Genealogy.)

R. S. Coleman<sup>3</sup>, Paces P. O., Va.

J. A. Coleman<sup>3</sup>, Winston P. O., Va.

A. M. Coleman<sup>3</sup>, Winston P. O., Va.

H. E. Coleman<sup>3</sup>, News Ferry, Va.

J. M. Coleman<sup>3</sup>, of South Boston P. O., Va. Married (July 19, 1882) Evelyn Byrd Page. (Cary Genealogy, Chapter V.)

T. G. Coleman<sup>3</sup>, Bedford City, Va.

Jane Coleman<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>). Married Charles E. Hamilton. Issue:

I. Patriek Hamilton, d. ———.

II. Henrietta Hamilton. Married Samuel Tarry, of Woods-worth, Granville Co., N. C.

III. Euphemia Hamilton. Married Dr. John Drake, of Clarks-ville, Va.

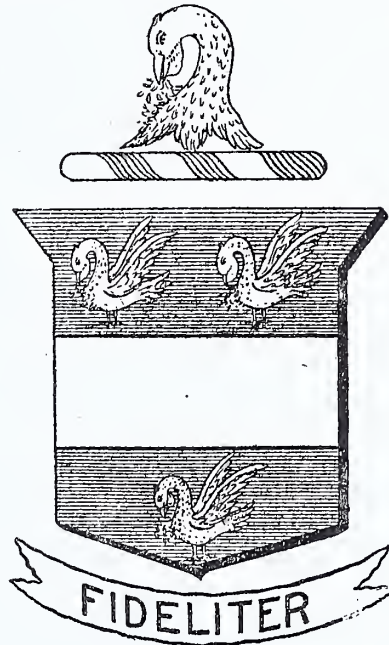
IV. Henry E. Coleman Hamilton, d. ———.

Messrs. John M. Coleman and P. H. Baskerville have furnished most of the above information. My readers will doubtless thank them for their kindness as much as I do.

## HENRY FAMILY.

Judge James Henry, the progenitor of the Henry family, of Aecomae County, or in Aberdeen, Scotland, is supposed to have been the grandson of Alexander Henry, of Scotland, who married Jane Robertson (see above), whose genealogy can be traced to James I, of Scotland. James Henry was b. 1731. He studied law at the University of Edinburgh, and afterwards in Philadelphia, and settled in Aecomae Co., Va. Married Sarah Searborough,

daughter of John and Tabitha Scarburgh, granddaughter of Capt. Charles and Edith Scarburgh, great-granddaughter of Col. Charles and Elizabeth Scarburgh and great-great-granddaughter of Col. Edmund and Mary Scarburgh, the said Col. Edmund being the son of Capt. Edmund and Hannah Scarborough, who were settled on the Eastern Shore as early as 1624. Col. Edmund Scarborough d. 1671, and his only daughters were Tabitha and Matilda, the



HENRY COAT-OF-ARMS

Blazon Azure, a fesse, argent, between three pelicans in their piety.  
Motto—Fidelity.

former at that time married to her second husband, Devereux Browné, and the latter, Matilda West, the mother of several children.

John Scarburgh (or Scarborough) d. 1744. James Henry and Sarah Scarborough were married between 1752 and 1757, and before their removal to Northumberland County resided on a plantation located in Custis Neck, then known as the Great Neck

of Matompkin. This plantation was allotted to Sarah Henry, in the partition between her and her sisters, Bradhurst, the wife of William Drummond, and Elizabeth, the wife of John Coleburn, daughters and heirs of John Searborough, deceased. Judge Henry and wife sold the plantation above named in 1790 to Maj. John Savage, of Northampton County, and since then it has changed owners several times.

Hayden says: "Several letters in the Public Record Office in London, England, show that Col. Edmund Searborough, of Virginia, and Sir Charles Scarborough were brothers. Col. Edmund was High Sheriff of Northumberland Co. in 1666, and Surveyor-General of Virginia. Judge James Henry was Burgess from Accomack Co. from 1772-75; was in the Continental Congress from 1780-1781; and a Judge of the Court of Admiralty from 1781-1788. He was appointed Judge of the General Court on December 24, 1788, and resigned June, 1800. Judge James Henry died December 9, 1804, at his residence, Fleet's Bay, in Northumberland County. This farm he purchased from Peter Conway, who inherited it from his grandmother, who was Miss Fleet and to whom the grant was made. Judge Henry was possessed of large means, and being a warm friend of Gen. George Washington, he loaned the General's brother, Lawrence Washington, large sums of money during the Revolution, which were secured to him by liens on Wakefield, Pope's Creek, Mount Vernon and the farm near Fredericksburg, on which Lawrence Washington lived and died. Lawrence Washington, by will, left Mount Vernon to his brother George, and, to clear the estate of incumbrance, Mrs. Washington consented to give up Mount Pleasant, in King and Queen County. This place was later known as Pleasant Hill, and was the residence of Col. James Hugh Henry. The house was a large brick mansion with large grounds, inclosed by a high brick wall. It was built by John Robinson, speaker of the House of Burgesses. It was sold for debt and purchased by John Parke Custis, who left it, by will, to his widow, Eleanor Custis, née Eleanor Calvert.

Martha Dandridge married Daniel Parke Custis, and John Parke Custis was their only son. He married Eleanor Calvert.

I give the following from the *Baltimore Sun*:

MESSRS. EDITORS:—Miss Jane Griffith Keys in her sketch of the Henry family, which appeared in the Sunday "Sun" of March 25, says that "Judge James Henry married Sarah, the daughter of Col. Edmund Scarburgh (or Scarborough), of Seaside, who was the son of Capt. Edmund and Hannah Scarborough, emigrants of the name to Virginia."

Col. Edward Scarborough died in 1671, and his only daughters were Tabitha and Matilda, the former at that time married to her second husband, Devereux Browne, and the latter, Matilda West, the mother of seven children, so it is impossible that James Henry, who was born in 1731, 60 years after the death of Col. Edmund Scarburgh, married either of the latter's daughters, both of whom had died many years before the birth of the said James Henry. The facts of the case are as follows: Judge James Henry married Sarah Scarburgh, daughter of John and Tabitha Scarburgh, granddaughter of Captain Charles and Edith Scarburgh, great-granddaughter of Col. Charles and Elizabeth Scarburgh and great-great-granddaughter of Col. Edmund and Mary Scarburgh, the said Col. Edmund being the son of Capt. Edmund and Hannah Scarborough, who were settled on the Eastern Shore as early as 1624.

John Scarburgh died in 1744. James Henry and Sarah Scarburgh were married between 1752 and 1757, and before their removal to Northumberland County resided on a plantation located in Custis Neck, then known as the great neck of Matompkin. This plantation was allotted to Sarah Henry in the partition between her and her sisters, Bradhurst, the wife of William Drummond, and Elizabeth, the wife of John Colcburn, daughters and heirs of John Scarburgh, deceased. Judge Henry and wife sold the plantation above named in 1790 to Major John Savage, of Northampton County, and since then it has changed owners several times.

Dr. John James Wise and George Douglas Wise, of Accomac, both deceased, were not the sons of George Douglas Wise, who died without issue, but of John James Wise, his brother.

Martha Dandridge married Daniel Parke Custis, and John Parke Custis was their only son. He married Eleanor Calvert.

I am sure Miss Keys will accept these corrections in the kindly spirit in which they are proffered.

Accomac, Va.

J. H. C.

MESSRS. EDITORS:—In reply to "L. D. C.," would say that being a great-granddaughter of Judith Carter Armistead, of Hesse, I take pleasure in sending the following: John Carter, the emigrant, 1649, member of House of Burgesses, married Sarah Ludlow and had: Robert Carter (King), member of Council and House of Burgesses, who married Bettie Landon in 1701 and had Charles Carter, of Clives, born 1707, who married Anne Byrd in 1742 and had Maria Carter, who married William Armistead, of Hesse, in 1772, father of Dorothy Armistead.

E. M. J.

Judge James Henry<sup>1</sup> and his wife, Sarah Scarborough, left issue:

- I. Edward Hugh Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married, first, his cousin Martha Catharine Henry, daughter of Patrick Henry and his second wife, Dorothea Dandridge, granddaughter of Governor Spottswood, and had issue:
  - I. Dorothea Henry<sup>3</sup>, d. childless.
  - E. H. Henry<sup>2</sup> married, second, Elizabeth Washington Peyton, daughter of Dr. Valentine and Bettie Washington Peyton. E. H. Henry inherited Fleet's Bay, being the eldest son.
- II. Samuel Hugh Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married Mary Beale, daughter of Col. John Beale, of Chestnut Hill, Richmond Co., Va. Issue:
  - I. James Hugh Henry<sup>3</sup>.
  - II. Charles Scarborough Henry<sup>3</sup>. Samuel H. Henry<sup>2</sup> inherited Pleasant Hill.
- III. John Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married, first, Miss Beale, daughter of Col. John Beale, of Chestnut Hill; left no issue. John Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married, second, Martha, daughter of Judge James Williams, of North Carolina, and had issue:
  - I. James Henry<sup>3</sup>.
  - II. Williams Henry<sup>3</sup>.
  - III. Sarah Butler Henry<sup>3</sup>.
  - IV. Samuel Henry<sup>3</sup>.
  - V. Hugh Henry<sup>3</sup>.
  - VI. John Scarborough Henry<sup>3</sup>. John Henry inherited Woodlawn in Halifax Co., Va.

Sarah Elizabeth Henry<sup>2</sup> (James<sup>1</sup>). Married William Moneure, of Windsor Forest, Stafford Co., Va. (Issue Volume I, and Chapter XIII this volume.)

Tabitha Henry<sup>2</sup> (James<sup>1</sup>). Married Capt. Hancock Eustace, of Woodford, Stafford Co., Va. Issue:

- I. John Henry<sup>2</sup>.
- II. Sarah M. Henry<sup>2</sup>.
- III. Agatha Henry<sup>2</sup>.
- IV. Eliza Henry<sup>2</sup>.
- V. Anne Caroline Henry<sup>2</sup>.

- VI. James Henry<sup>2</sup>.
- VII. William Henry<sup>2</sup>.
- VIII. Mary Henry<sup>2</sup>.

Mary Henry<sup>2</sup> (James<sup>1</sup>). Married John Wise, of Accomac Co., Va. Issue:

- I. John N. Wise<sup>3</sup>.
- II. John James Wise<sup>3</sup>. Married ———. Issue: -
  - I. Dr. John James Wise<sup>4</sup>; d. ———.
- II. George Douglas Wise<sup>4</sup>. Married Marietta Alkinson, of Smithfield. Issue:
  - I. Marietta Wise<sup>5</sup>.
- III. George Douglas Wise<sup>3</sup>.

### THIRD GENERATION.

Charles Searborough Henry<sup>3</sup> (Samuel Hugh<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>), son of Samuel Hugh Henry<sup>2</sup> and Mary Beale, his wife; was a graduate of William and Mary College. He settled in Halifax Co., Va., and was killed when about 21 years of age.

James Hugh Henry<sup>3</sup> (Samuel Hugh<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>). Married Ann Elizabeth Carter (see Chapter XX, Volume II, Moore Family, Chapter VII, Carter Family), daughter of Carter Braxton and Sarah Moore, granddaughter of Carter Braxton, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. Issue:

- I. James Hugh Henry<sup>4</sup>. Married Luey Ann Boyd Rowe.
 

Issue:

  - I. Mary Elizabeth Henry<sup>5</sup>. Married Samuel Beach. Issue:
  - I. Luey Lee Beach<sup>6</sup>. Married Henry Lee Watson, a lawyer, of Richmond, Va. Issue:
    - I. Sallie Spottswood Watson<sup>7</sup>.
    - II. Samuel Henry Watson<sup>7</sup>.
- III. John Danforth Watson<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. Elizabeth Fairfax Watson<sup>7</sup>.
- V. Kate Spottswood Watson<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Charles Searborough Beach<sup>6</sup>. Married Mrs. Aliee Cook.
 

Issue:

  - I. Charles Nelson Cook<sup>7</sup>, unmarried.
- III. Bernard Moore Beach<sup>6</sup>, d. young.



- IV. Frank Rowe Beach<sup>6</sup>. Married Mary Parker, of Norfolk, Va. Issue:
  - I. Mary Parker<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. Lucy Rowe Parker<sup>7</sup>.
  - III. James Parker<sup>7</sup>.
  - IV. Thelma Parker<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Judge Samuel Hugh Henry<sup>4</sup>. Married Elizabeth Powell, of Amherst, and had issue:
  - I. Mildred Irving Henry<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Samuel Hugh Henry<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Robert Braxton Henry<sup>5</sup>.
  - IV. Edmund Reade Henry<sup>5</sup>.
  - V. William Thompson Henry<sup>5</sup>. Married Lueille Cameron, of Ohio.
- III. Dr. William Scarborough Braxton Henry<sup>4</sup>. Married his cousin Lucy Broekenborough Daingerfield. Issue:
  - I. John Scarborough Henry<sup>5</sup>. Married Emma Canby, of Maryland, d. ———. Issue:
    - I. Mary Henry<sup>6</sup>.
    - II. Harold Henry<sup>6</sup>.
    - II. Mary Beale Henry<sup>5</sup>. Married J. R. Kelsey, of Nebraska.
  - III. William Dangerfield Henry<sup>5</sup>. Married Sarah Frazer. Issue:
    - I. William Dangerfield Frazer<sup>6</sup>.
    - II. Ralph Frazer<sup>6</sup>.
    - IV. Ann Elizabeth Henry<sup>5</sup>.
- Col. James Hugh Henry<sup>3</sup> married, second, Ann Catharine Temple. (Issue Chapter XX.)

## FOURTH GENERATION.

Edward Moore Henry<sup>4</sup> (James<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. James Hugh Henry and Ann Catharine Temple. Married Indiana Virginia Kilby, who was a daughter of John Kilby, b. 1758, married Elizabeth Thompson, daughter of Roger and Molly Thompson, of Hanover Co., Va. John Kilby enlisted under John Paul Jones during the Revolution; was present at the engagement between the *Bon Homme Richard* and the *Serapis*; was taken

prisoner and carried to England in chains and imprisoned at Dartmouth, from whence he escaped and made his way to France and returned to this country. John Kilby resided in Hanover Co., Va., where he d. 1826. Mr. Kilby left a most interesting but incomplete manuscript of his sea service and experiences, for which he was offered a large sum by a Washington editor, but died before completing it, most unfortunately for the students of history of the present day.

Edward Moore Henry and Indiana Virginia Kilby, his wife, had issue:

- I. James Hugh Henry<sup>5</sup>.
- II. Annie Kilby Henry<sup>5</sup>.
- III. Edward Moore Henry<sup>5</sup>, Jr.

Dr. Patrick Wise Henry<sup>4</sup> (James<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, James<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. James Hugh Henry and Ann Catharine Temple, his wife; settled in Texas. Married Eliza Ruth Lynch; d. there, leaving issue:

- I. Brooke Temple Henry<sup>5</sup>.
- II. Mary Catharine Henry<sup>5</sup>.

Col. John Henry<sup>1</sup>, and his wife, Sarah Winston. His wife had seven daughters, who left numerous descendants:

- I. Jane Henry<sup>2</sup>. Married Col. Samuel Meredith. Issue:

- I. Samuel Meredith<sup>3</sup>. Married Elizabeth Breekinridge. and had issue:

- I. Jane Breekinridge<sup>4</sup>.
- II. Letitia Breekinridge<sup>4</sup>. Married Col. W. S. Dallam.
- III. Elizabeth Breekinridge<sup>4</sup>. Married James Coleman.
- IV. Mary Cabell Breekinridge<sup>4</sup>. Married Robert Breekinridge.
- V. Sarah Breekinridge<sup>4</sup>.
- II. Sarah Meredith<sup>3</sup>. Married Col. William Armistead.
- III. John Henry Meredith<sup>3</sup>.

- IV. Jane Henry Meredith<sup>3</sup>. Married Hon. David S. Garland. Issue:

- I. Jane Meredith Garland<sup>4</sup>. Married Dr. John P. Cobbs, and had issue:

- I. Mary Cobbs<sup>5</sup>. Married Mr. Stewart.
- II. Robert Lewis Cobbs<sup>5</sup>.

- III. John Cobbs<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Jane Henry Cobbs<sup>5</sup>. Married Franklin Thwing.
- II. Ann Shepherd Garland<sup>4</sup>. Married Dr. G. A. Rose, and had issue:
  - I. Dr. Landon Rose<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Holbrook.
- III. Sarah Armistead Garland<sup>4</sup>. Married William M. Waller, and had issue:
  - I. Jennie Waller<sup>5</sup>. Married William Waller<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Samuel Meredith Garland<sup>4</sup>. Married Mildred Powell, and had issue:
  - I. Mildred J. Garland<sup>5</sup>. Married Col. J. L. Ellis.
  - II. Martha Garland<sup>5</sup>. Married Col. Thomas Whitehead.
- III. James P. Garland<sup>5</sup>. Married Lucy V. Braxton.
- IV. Ella Rose Garland<sup>5</sup>. Married Henry W. Willis.
- V. Jane M. Garland<sup>5</sup>. Married W. H. Willis.
- VI. Sally Garland<sup>5</sup>.
- VII. David S. Garland<sup>5</sup>.
- VIII. Waller Garland<sup>5</sup>.
- IX. Paulus Powell Garland<sup>5</sup>. Married Lucy Ellis.
- X. Elizabeth Garland<sup>5</sup>. Married Rev. R. T. Wilson.
- V. Mary Rice Meredith Garland<sup>3</sup>. Married Col. Edward A. Cabell. Issue:
  - I. William Meredith Cabell<sup>4</sup>. Married Mildred Eldridge.
  - II. David S. G. Cabell<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Dr. Patrick Henry Cabell<sup>4</sup>. Married Pattie W. Aylett.
- IV. Edward Pierce Cabell<sup>4</sup>.
- V. Jane Meredith Cabell<sup>4</sup>. Married Capt. N. H. Van Zandt, United States and Confederate States Navy.
- VI. Mayo Cabell<sup>4</sup>.
- VII. Paul Carrington Cabell<sup>4</sup>.
- VI. William H. Garland<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Eubank.
- VII. Eliza V. Garland<sup>4</sup>. Married George K. Cabell.
- VIII. Patrick Henry Garland<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Floyd.
- IX. Louisa F. Garland<sup>4</sup>. Married Prof. Landon C. Garland.
- X. Caroline Garland<sup>4</sup>.
- XI. Martha Garland<sup>4</sup>.

Ann Henry<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Col. John and Sarah Winston Henry, married Col. William Christian. Issue:

- I. John Henry Christian<sup>3</sup>.
- II. Priscilla Christian<sup>3</sup>. Married Alexander Scott Bullet.
  - Issue:
    - I. Anne Bullet<sup>4</sup>. Married John Howard, and had issue:
      - I. William B. Howard<sup>5</sup>. Married Maria Strother.
    - II. Anne Christian Howard<sup>5</sup>. Married Robert G. Courtenay.
- III. Helen Scott Christian<sup>3</sup>. Married, first, Henry Massie;  
second, John L. Martin; third, Col. Marshall Key.
- IV. Cuthbert Christian<sup>3</sup>. Married Harriet Willet. Issue:
  - I. Henry Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married, first, Julia Anderson; second,  
Mrs. Paradise.
  - II. Willet Christian<sup>4</sup>.
  - III. Cuthbert Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married Helen Willard.
  - IV. Priscilla Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married Archibald A. Gordon.
  - V. William Grigsby Christian<sup>4</sup>.
  - VI. Helen Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married Dr. James Lowry.
  - VII. Anne Eliza Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married Lafayette Fitzhugh.
- VIII. Harriet Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married John Fitzhugh.
  - V. William Christian<sup>3</sup>. Married Mildred Fry. Issue:
    - I. Judge Joshua Fry Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married Elizabeth Smith.
    - II. Alexander Scott Christian<sup>4</sup>.
  - III. John C. Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married Therese Langhorne.
  - IV. Martha Bell Christian<sup>4</sup>.
  - V. Susan Peachy Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married Hon. Archibald Dixon.
  - VI. David Bell Christian<sup>4</sup>.
- VII. Helen Martin Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married Dr. Henry Chene-  
worth.
- VIII. Thomas Walker Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married Anne P. Logan.
  - IX. Henry Massie Christian<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary L. Frederick.
- VI. Sarah Winston Christian<sup>3</sup>. Married John W. Warfield.
- VII. Elizabeth Christian<sup>3</sup>. Married Richard Dickerson.
- VIII. Ann H. Christian<sup>3</sup>. Married Gov. John Pope.
- IX. Dorothea Christian<sup>3</sup>. Married Dr. Fishback.

## CHAPTER XIII

## MONCURE FAMILY.



COAT-OF-ARMS

The name Moncure is derived from the French words, "*mon cœur*," meaning "my heart." Anderson says: "There was an old family of that ilk in Perthshire. In the charters of Robert I and David II this name of Moncur is mentioned; and in the reign of Robert III *Andreas Moncur de esdem* is witness in a Rait of

Hallgreen. The ruins of the ancient castle of Moncur are still seen in the parish of Inchtute in the Carse of Gowrie."

Burkes' General Armory gives several Moncur arms:

Moncur (Scotland), "Gu. on a chief ar, three hearts of the first."

Moncur (Slains Co., Aberdeen), "Gu. a chevalier mounted and armed at all points, with sword erect, ar."

Moncur (of that ilk, Co. Kincardine), "Or, a fers between three inescutcheons, gu."

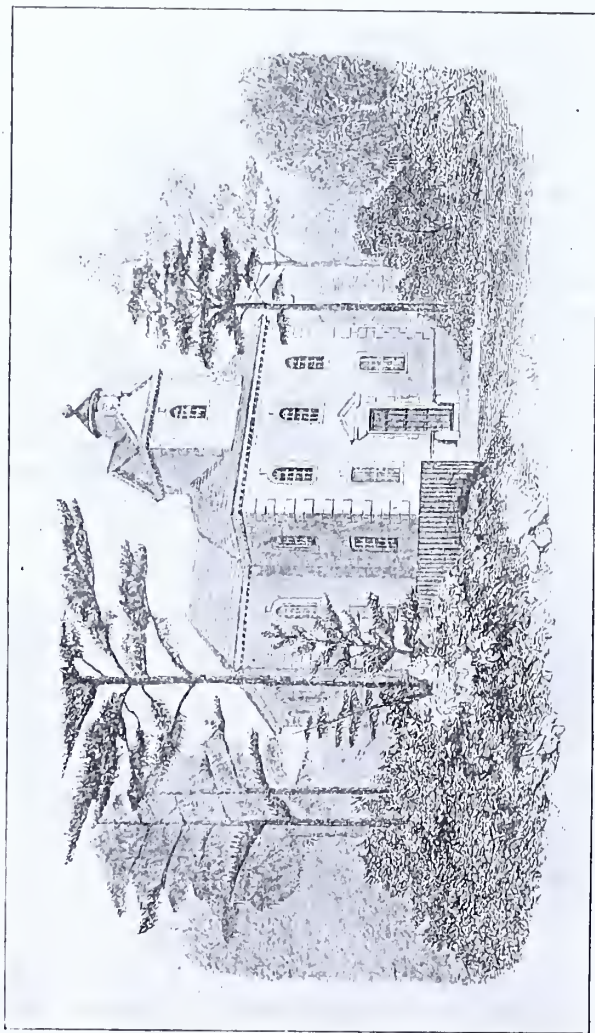
What connection existed between the families of Aberdeenshire and Kincardineshire does not appear. Kincardineshire was the home of the Keiths and Wisharts of Virginia, and also of Rev. John Moncure. It will be noticed that his will names "the heirs of my brother, William Moncure, late of the Parish Kinoff, in Shire Mearns, in Scotland." Therefore, it is proposed that we must look in Mearns, near Kincardineshire, for his ancestry. Family tradition records that his ancestor fled among the first Protestants, from France to Scotland, in consequence of the persecutions about the time of the Reformation, in the early part of the sixteenth century. How ancient the Moncure family of Kincardine may be does not appear. From Fraser's "History of Laurencekirk" (p. 105), in that shire, is learned that:

In a retour of 20th Jan., 1608, Andrew Moncur, of Slains, had succeeded before that date. "Terres de Blaccokmuir et Kirkburn in baronia de Rescobie et regalitate Sancto Andreae." His family was a cadet of Moncur of Moncure of Perthshire. Blackiemuir and Kirkburn (in Kincardine) were parts of the possessions of Barclay of Mathers, along with Wester Conveth, and had been acquired from the representative of that family. The wife of Harry Barclay, of Johnston (Kincardine), was a daughter of Moncur of Slains, and probably a sister of Andrew Moncur.

In 1886 Mr. Richard Moncure Conway and Rev. Horace Edwin Hayden had correspondence with Capt. James Watt, of 69 High Street, Laurencekirk, *in re Moncur*, and had Mr. Conway's sudden death not prevented, a search would have been ordered through Capt. Watt for the Moncure ancestry. Capt. Watt wrote:

I have had a great deal of trouble in tracing out the family of Moncure. At first I thought there was but one family of that name in the parish of Kinoff. I found there had been three, although I cannot find that they really belonged to the parish and stayed in it, except that family from which my wife is descended. The others appear to have moved in and out of the parish from 1700, and there is no trace of them after 1800. The





AQUIA CHURCH, STAFFORD CO., VA.

William Moncur from whom my wife is descended married, in 1799, Jane Pepper. Their only child, Helen, married James Edwards. My wife was her granddaughter. Whether this William Moncur was of the same family as Rev. John Moncure, I have no present means of knowing, but doubtless, if any descendant of Rev. John Moncure is willing to bear the cost of search, Captain Watt, whose Rector wrote me "is worthy of all confidence," will aid him in tracing his ancestry.

The genealogical portion of this family history is given on the authority of the late Mr. Richard Moncure Conway, supplemented by Mr. Hayden's own researches. For the historical and biographical facts Mr. Hayden is alone responsible.

Reverend John Moncure<sup>1</sup>, the first of this name known in Virginia, was probably b. in the parish of Kinoff, Mearns Co. (now Kincardine Co.), Scotland, cir. 1709-10; d. in Virginia, March 10 or 11, 1764; buried under the chancel of Aquia Church, Stafford County. He married (June 18, 1741) Frances Brown, b. Rich Hill, Charles County, Md., July 29, 1713; d. ———, and was laid by the side of her husband in Aquia Church. She was the second child of Dr. Gustavus and Frances (Fowke) Brown. (Brown 5, page 151.)

The following is the will of Rev. John Moncure, dated Oct. 22, 1754; probated Stafford County, July 9, 1764:

Whereas, it has pleased Almighty God, whose name and nature is love, for some years last past to bless me, his unworthy creature, with a greater share of health than I could have expected, from the tenderness of my native constitution, of the fatigues of my ministerial functions which I have undergone in so large a parish, for this and all other mercies Hallowed be His name forever and ever. Into His holy hands I commit my soul; it was He that gave it, and to Him I return it, hoping for forgiveness of all my sins, only through the merits and meditation of His blessed Son Jesus Christ, my dear Saviour and Redeemer. Now, before sickness of body or infirmity of age prevent or diminish the force of my understanding memory, I make and declare this my last will and testament.

I, John Moncure, Clerk, Rector of Overwharton Parish, in the County of Stafford and Colony of Virginia, desire that after my death, my body may be decently interred, and buried according to the rites of the Church of England and the directions which I shall leave in writing, by my Ex'r and Ex'rs hereafter named, what estate it hath pleased God to bless me with after my debts lawfully contracted are honestly paid I dispose of as follows:

Imps: I give and bequeath to my daughter Frances Moncure and her heirs forever, my land in Prince William County, where the Courthouse now stands, purchased of Philomon Waters in joynt tenancy with James

Scott, Clk, and for which mutual bonds have passed between us to prevent survivorship, and a negro girl named Chloe; given to me in trust for her use by her Godfather George Mason, Esq., and another negro girl named Sarah and their future increase, one of my best feather beds and furniture, a horse and side saddle of the value of fifteen pounds current money, all of which to be paid and delivered to her at the age of twenty-one years, or the day of her marriage if it shall first happen, with the consent of her mother or the majority of my Executors hereafter named.

Item.

I give and bequeath to my daughter Anne Moneure and her heirs forever one equal half of my land in Fairfax County, purchased of Harell and Trammell, to be laid off at that end where Talbott now lives, and my negroes James and Lucy with her future increase, and one feather bed and furniture, all of which to be paid her at the same age and under the same limitations with her sister Frances' legacy.

Item.

I give and bequeath to my daughter Jean Moneure and her heirs forever, the other half of my land in Fairfax and my negro boy Harry and the first negro girl that shall be born of either of my negro wenches and lives to the age of eighteen years and her increase, and one feather bed and furniture; all of which to be paid her at the same age and under the same limitations with her sister Frances' legacy, and if either of these negroes given before named should die before my said daughters should arrive at the age of twenty-one years or marriage afterwards, then I give and bequeath to them the next negro girl or girls, that shall be born of any of my wenches in their room.

Item.

I give and bequeath to my son John Moneure, to the heirs of his body lawfully begotten, either male or female, forever, all the rest of my estate, real and personal, not before bequeathed, and I do declare it to be my real meaning and intent, that if my s'd son should die without issue as afore-said, that then the lands to him bequeathed and negroes thereunto annexed should go and descend to my said daughters and the heirs of their bodies forever as followeth, viz.:

The land I bought of Will Hammersley to be equally divided between my daughters Ann and Jean, and all the rest to my daughter Frances, and the negroes with their increase to be equally divided amongst them, and if either of my said daughters should die without issue, then their legacy or legacies, real and personal, to go to their surviving sister or sisters, and if all of them should die without issue, then the whole to go to my son John and his heirs forever; and if all of my children before named should die without issue, then the whole to go (after my wife's decease) to the heirs of my brother William Moneure, late of the Parish Kinoff, in the Shire Mearns, in Scotland, and the heirs of their body forever.

Item.

I give and bequeath to my loving wife Frances Moneure, the use of my said daughters' portion until their respective marriages, or their several

attaining the age of twenty-one years as aforesaid, as also the use of my son's estate aforesaid until he shall attain the same age, for her support in lieu of her dower, and for the maintenance and education of my said children and when my son shall arrive at the age of one and twenty years, I give unto my said wife, during the term of her natural life, or widowhood only, the use of one-half of my land in Stafford, to include the dwelling house and improvements and her choice of one-half of the negroes not bequeathed to my daughters and one-half of the household stuff and my chair, with a pair of the best horses, and after her decease or marriage to my son as aforesaid. And my earnest desire is that my son may have as good an education as my estate with his mother's care and industry will afford, that he may at a proper age, be capable of studying Divinity, Law or Physic. And that all my books and manuscripts may be kept together and not sold, hoping that he may take the same delight in perusing them as I have done; and to prevent all disputes that may hereafter arise, I would have it understood, that the several legacies before given to my wife and children, are in full satisfaction of the portion which I received with my wife from her father, and intended to prevent my estate being in any way affected by a marriage settlement, made after marriage and never legally executed or recorded.

Lastly.

I hereby nominate and appoint my said loving wife Frances Moneure, and my dear friends, George Mason and Thomson Mason, Esqrs., James Scott, Clk, and doctor Michael Wallace, Exeutors of this my last will and Testament and guardians to my Children. And I hereby revoke and annul all former wills but this written with my own hand on this and the two foregoing pages. I sign and seal this 22nd day of October, in the year of our Lord 1754.

JOHN MONCURE (L.)

Sealed and published in presenee of—

At a court held in Stafford County, July the 9th, 1764. The aforesaid will and testament of John Moncure, Clerk, deceased, all written and signed with his own hand, as appears to the court of their own knowledge and by the affidavit of Peter Daniel, Will Bronough and Cuthbert Bullett, Gent, was presented into Court by Frances Moneure and James Scott, Clk, two of the Executors therein named, who made oath thereto according to law, the same is admitted to record, and on motion of the said Executors, and they performing what is usual in such cases, certificate is granted them for obtaining a probate thereof in due form.

Teste, Henry Tyler, C. S. C.

(A copy. Teste, C. A. Tackett, Clk.)

The following will be found in Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, pp. 424-25-26-27:

Mr. Moncure emigrated to Virginia 1733-4, engaged in teaching in Northumberland County, studied theology, and returning to England 1737, received ordination at the hands of the Lord Bishop of London.

Returning to Virginia, he became assistant minister to Rev. Alexander Scott, Rector of Overwharton Parish, Stafford County, shortly before Mr. Scott's death, which occurred April 1, 1738. Mr. Moncure then became the successor of Mr. Scott, remaining incumbent of the Parish until his death twenty-six years. Bp. Meade says: "His name is still to be seen painted on one of the panels of the gallery in old Aquia Church, together with those of the vestry, in 1757." The great Potomac Church, five miles from Fredericksburg, was also in Mr. Moncure's parish.

The following letter, written 1820 to the granddaughter of Rev. James Scott by Mr. Moncure's daughter, Jeem, who married Gov. James Wood, of Virginia, is given entire from Meade, Vol. II, p. 198:

I was only ten years old when I lost my father. He was a Scotchman, descended from French ancestors, who fled among the first Protestants who left France in consequence of the persecution that took place soon after the Reformation. He had an excellent education, and had made considerable progress in the study of medicine, when an invitation to seek an establishment in Virginia induced him to cross the Atlantic, and his first engagement was in Northumberland County, where he lived two years in a gentleman's family as a private tutor. During that time, although teaching others, he was closely engaged in the study of divinity, and at the commencement of the third year from his arrival returned to Great Britain and was ordained a minister of the then Established Church; came to Virginia and engaged as curate to your great uncle, Alexander Scott, who at that time was Minister of Overwharton Parish, in Stafford County, and resided at his seat of Dipple. Your great uncle died a short time after, and my dear father succeeded him in his Parish and resided at the Glebe house. Your grandfather, the Rev. James Scott, who inherited Dipple, continued there until he settled at Westwood, in Prince William. He was my father's dearest, kindest friend, and one of the best of men. This intimacy brought my father and mother acquainted, who was sister to your grandmother Scott.

Old Dr. Gustavus Brown, of Maryland, my maternal grandfather, objected to the marriage of my father and mother. Although he thought highly of my father he did not think him an eligible match for his daughter. He was poor and very delicate in his health.

Dr. Brown did not, however, forbid their union, and it accordingly took place. The old gentleman received them as visitors, and visited them again, but would not pay down mother's intended dowry until he saw how they could get along, and to let them see that they could not live on love without other sauce.

I have often heard my dear mother relate the circumstances of her first housekeeping, with tears of tender and delightful recollection. They went home to your grandpa's, where they were married, with a slenderly supplied purse, to an empty house, except a few absolute necessities from kind



friends. When thus arrived they found some of my good father's parishioners there; one had brought some wood, another some fowls, a third some meal, and so on. One good neighbor would insist on washing for them, another would milk, and another would tend the garden, and they all delighted to serve their good minister and his wife.

Notwithstanding these aids, my mother found much to initiate her into the habits of an industrious housewife, and my father in those of an active, practical farmer and gardener, which they never gave up.

When the business of preparing their meal was over, a small writing stand was their table, the stair steps furnished one a seat and a trunk the other. Often when provisions were scarce my father took his gun or fishing rod and, with his dog, sallied forth to provide their dinner which when he returned his happy wife dressed, and often would she accompany him a-fishing and fowling, for she said they were too poor to have enjoyment in domestic happiness. Though destitute of every luxury, they had a small, well-chosen library, which my father had collected while a student and tutor. This was their evening regale. While my mother worked with her needle he read to her. This mode of enjoyment pleasantly brought round the close of the first year.

When the minister's salary was paid they were now comparatively rich. My dearest father exchanged his shabby black coat for a new one, and the next year was different. By this time the neighboring gentry found out the value of their minister and his wife, and contended for their society by soliciting visits and making them presents of many comforts. Frequently these grandees would come in their splendid equipages to spend a day at the Glebe, and bring everything requisite to prevent trouble and expense to its owners—merely for the enjoyment of the society of the humble inhabitants of this humble dwelling. These dear parents became quite easy in their circumstance. My father purchased a large tract of land on the river Potomac. He settled this principally by tenants, but on the most beautiful eminence that I ever beheld he built a good house, and soon improved it into a very sweet establishment. Here I was born. My brother and two sisters, considerably my senior, were born at the Glebe. My brother, who was intended for the church, had a private tutor in the house. This man attended also to my two sisters, who previously to his residence in the family were under the care of an Englishman, who lived in the house, but also kept a public school, under my father's direction, about a mile from his house.

Unhappily for me, I was the youngest, and very sickly. My father and mother would not allow me to be compelled to attend to my books or my needle, and to both I had a decided aversion, unless voluntarily resorted to as an amusement. In this I was indulged. I would sometimes read a lesson to my sister or the housekeeper, or if their authority was resisted I was called to my mother's side. All this amounted to my being an ignorant child at my father's death, which was a death-stroke to my dearest mother. The incurable grief into which it plunged her could scarcely be a matter of surprise when the uncommonly tender affection



which united them is considered. They were rather more than middle aged when I was old enough to remember them, yet I well recollect their inseparable and undeviating association. They were rarely seen asunder. My mother was an active walker and a good rider. Whenever she could do so she accompanied him in his pastoral visits, a faithful white servant attending in her absence from home. They walked hand in hand, and often rode hand in hand, were both uncommonly fond of the cultivation of flowers, fruits and rare plants.

They watched the opening buds together, together admired the beauty of the full-blown blossoms, and gathered the ripening fruit or seed. While he wrote or read she worked near his table, which always occupied the pleasantest place in her chamber, where he chose to study, often laying down his pen to read and comment on an impressive passage. Frequently when our evening repast was over (if the family were together) some book amusing and instructive was read aloud by my dear father, and those of the children or their young associates, who could not be silent, were sent to bed after evening worship, which always took place immediately after supper.

Under the void which this sad separation occasioned, my poor mother's spirits sunk, and never rallied. The first six or eight months were spent in a dark secluded chamber, distant from that formerly occupied. The management of the family devolved on my brother and second sister. My eldest married two or three years previous to this period. I was left pretty much to my own management.

The education of my brother and sister was so far finished that they not only held what they had acquired, but continued to improve. But alas, poor me! I as usual refused everything like study, but became unfortunately, immoderately fond of books. The key of the library was now within my power, and the few romances it contained were devoured. Poetry and a botanical work with plates came next. This gave me a useless superficial knowledge of what might have been useful, but what in this indigested form was far otherwise. The "Tatler," "Guardian" and "Spectator" were the only works I read which contained beneficial instruction, and of these I only read the amusing papers, and taking the beautiful and sublime allegories which abound with moral instruction in a literal sense. This kind of reading made up a pernicious mass of chaotic matter that darkened while it seemed to enlighten my mind, and I soon became romantic and exceedingly ridiculous—turned the branches of trees together and called them a bower, and fancied I could write poetry, and many other silly things.

My dear mother suffered greatly towards the close of her life with a cancer. For this she visited the medicinal springs, and I was chosen to attend her.

It was a crowded and gay scene for me, who had lived almost entirely in seclusion. I did not mix in its gayest circles, yet it was of service to me, as it gave me the first view of real life that I ever had. My beloved parent was not desirous of confining me, but I rejoice at the recollection that I

very seldom could be prevailed on to leave her. There I became the favorite and devoted friend of your most excellent mother. Forgive the vanity of this boast, my dear cousin, but I can not help observing that she afterwards told me that it was the manner in which I discharged this duty that won her esteem and love.

At this place I first met with General Wood, who visited me soon after my return home, and became my husband four years after.

Rev. John Moncure<sup>1</sup> and Frances Brown, his wife, had following issue:

1. I. John Moncure<sup>2</sup>, b. July 13, 1744, baptized by Rev. James Scott, July 13; d. July 14, 1744.
  2. II. Frances Moncure<sup>2</sup>, b. at "Dipple," Sept. 20, 1745; d. ——. Married (Oct. 7, 1762) Travers Daniel.
  3. III. John Moncure<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 22, 1746-7; d. ——. Married (1770) Ann Conway.
  4. IV. Anne Moncure<sup>2</sup>, b. Oct. 17, 1748; d. ——. Married (1775) Walker Conway.
  5. V. Jean Moncure<sup>2</sup>, b. Clermont, May 22, 1753; d. April, 1823. Married (1775) Gen. James Wood, son of Col. John and Comfort Wood, of Frederick Co., Va., where he was b. 1750; d. "Olney," near Richmond, July 16, 1813. Issue:
- 12-14. I. Maria Frances Wood<sup>3</sup>, b. Jan. 31, 1776; d. young. (See Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, Moncure and Wood.)
4. John Moncure<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), of Clermont, b. "Dipple," Stafford Co., Va., January 22, 1746 or '47; baptized Stafford Co., Va., March 3, 1746 or '47, by Rev. Mr. John Phippis—John Mercer and George Mason, Esqrs., his godfathers, and Elizabeth Brown, his aunt, his godmother. Married (about 1770) Anne Conway, b. about 1756; d. ———, daughter of George and Anne (Heath) Conway. He and his wife are buried at "Dipple," Stafford Co., Va. Mr. Moncure inherited his father's estate of "Clermont." Issue:
7. I. John Moncure<sup>3</sup>, b. Nov. 1, 1772; d. Aug. 13, 1822. Married (Feb. 21, 1792) Alice Peachy Gaskins.
  8. II. William Moncure<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 21, 1774; d. — 1832. Married (179—) Sarah Elizabeth Henry.
  9. III. Agnes Conway Moncure<sup>3</sup>, b. — 1780; d. Nov. 15, 1862. Married (Feb. 9, 1801) John Robinson. (Hayden's Va. Genealogies.)

10. IV. Edwin Conway Moncure<sup>3</sup>, b. April 12, 178—; d.— 1816. Married (1808) Eleanor Edrington.

11. V. Anne Moncure<sup>3</sup>, b.—; d.—. Married, first, Thomas Gaskins; second, Richard Gaskins.

7. John Moneure<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. "Dipple," November 1, 1772; d. August 13, 1822. Married (February 21, 1792) Alice Peachy Gaskins, b. 1774; d. "Chestnut Hill," Stafford Co., Va., May 9, 1860, aged 86, daughter of Col. Thomas and Hannah (Hall) Gaskins, Wicomico, Northumberland Co., Va.

Mr. Moneure was Justice of Stafford Co., 1796, and Sheriff, 1798. He was admitted a communicant of Aquia Church, May 21, 1818; "confirmed years since"; vestryman of Aquia, 1815-1822; Lay Deputy Va. Council P. E. Church, 1817-1822, and Treasurer, 1815.

Mrs. Moneure was a life-long member of the P. E. Church, active and zealous and especially identified with its support and progress in Stafford Co., Va. She was confirmed at Aquia Church by Bishop Moore, October 13, 1815. She died at the residence of her son-in-law, Michael Wallace. Issue:

15. I. John Moneure<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 24, 1793; d. Aug. 3, 1876. Married, first (Oct. 28, 1818), Esther Nowles; second (July, 1834), Frances Daniel.

16. II. Alice Peachy Moneure<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 31, 1796; d. June 18, 1820; confirmed by Bishop Moore, Aquia Church, Oct. 3, 1815.

17. III. Frances A. Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 30, 1797; d. Aug. 30, 1841; confirmed, Aquia Church, Oct. 13, 1815. Married (Oct. 23, 1838) John G. Hull.

18. IV. Thomas Gaskins Moneure<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 12, 1799; d. Feb. 28, 1836. Married, first (Feb. 6, 1823), Clarissa Bernard Hooe; second, Mary Bell Haxall.

19. V. Hannah Hull Moneure<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 10, 1801; d. Feb. 11, 1866. Married (Sept. 26, 1844) Michael Wallace.

20. VI. William Augustus Moneure<sup>4</sup>, b. Nov. 27, 1803; d. March, 1862. Married (March 4, 1828) Lucy Ann Gatewood.

21. VII. Richard Cassius Lee Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 11, 1803; d. Aug. 24, 1882. Married (Dec. 29, 1825) Mary Butler Washington Conway.
22. VIII. Edwin R. Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b. 1809; d. Nov. 1812.
23. IX. Henry L. Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b. 1813; d. 1815. The above children were born at Clermont.
- X. Sarah Elizabeth Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b. Clermont, Stafford Co., Va., Aug. 23, 1809. Married (May 2, 1837) Paul Hull, son of Mrs. Hannah Hull, who married second, Col. Thomas Gaskins and brother of John Hull and grandson of Col. Richard Hull.  
Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, p. 438, give Sarah Elizabeth as daughter of William Moncure<sup>3</sup>. This is a mistake, as my grandfather, Henry Wood Moncure, had no sister who married. (p. 446.)  
Sarah Elizabeth Moncure<sup>4</sup>, daughter of John<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>).

The same mistake was made about Travers Daniel Moncure<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of John Moncure<sup>3</sup> and Alice Peachy Gaskins, his wife, and not son of William Moncure<sup>3</sup> and Sarah Elizabeth Henry.

8. William Moncure<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. "Clermont," September 21, 1774; d. at his estate "Windsor Forest," Stafford Co., Va., 1832. Married (—, 179—) Sarah Elizabeth Henry, daughter of Hon. James Henry, of Fleets Bay, Northumberland Co., Va., and his wife Sarah Scarborough, daughter of Col. Edmund Scarborough, of "Seaside," Accomac Co., Va.

Mr. Moncure was a churchman and one of the original pew-holders of Monumental Church, Richmond, he having bought pew 50 for \$330 in 1814. He was confirmed, Aquia Church, October 13, 1815; vestryman of same 1816; elected to fill the place of E. C. Moncure, 1822. Issue:

24. I. Henry Wood Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b. July 12, 1800; d. Oct. 15, 1866. Married (May 24, —) Catherine Cary Ambler.
25. II. John James Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b.—1802; d.—1827, of yellow fever, in New Orleans, La., unmarried. Buried in Aquia Church.
26. III. Sarah A. E. Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b.—1804; d.—1811.

27. IV. Robinson Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b.—1807; d.—1829, New Orleans, La., unmarried.
28. V. Charles Prosser Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b. April 2, 1819. Married Ann Lewis Daniel.
29. VI. Helen Lee Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 24, 1814; d. 1815.
10. Edwin Conway Moncure<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. "Clermont," April 12, 178—; d. 1816. Married (1808) Eleanor Edrington, of Stafford Co., Va., daughter of Capt. John C. Edrington, Capt. 45th Va. Regiment, war of 1812, and granddaughter of Mr. Edrington, one of the Justices of Stafford Co., 1760. Issue:
  30. I. William A. Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b. 1809, baptized by Bishop Moore, Oct. 13, 1815; moved to Miss. Married ————. Issue:
    31. I. Edwin Conway Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. Hinds Co., Miss., 1840; educated University Va., 1858; served C. S. A., 1861-1865; was later Civil Engineer and planter Dry Grove, Hinds Co., Miss.
    32. II. Dr. John E. Moncure<sup>4</sup>, b. 1812; baptized by Bishop Moore, Oct. 13, 1815; moved to Miss. before Civil War. Married Court Hill. Issue:
      33. I. Charles Hill Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A. Married Mrs. Kate McGowan; one daughter.
      34. I. Myra Kate Moncure<sup>6</sup>. Married Fred Matthews, of New Orleans.
      35. I. One daughter Matthews<sup>7</sup>.  
Charles Hill Moncure<sup>5</sup>, d. in New Orleans, La., June 11, 1904; his remains were interred in the cemetery at Crystal Springs, Miss.
      36. II. Robert Briggs Moncure<sup>6</sup>, still living, single.
      37. III. Agatha Ann Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. Oct. 6, 1842; d. Crystal Springs, Miss., Jan. 9, 1899. Married (Wednesday, May 24, 1865) Frederick Yeamans Dabney, b. Fredericksburg, Va., 1836; d. Crystal Springs, Miss., March 16, 1900, in his 64th year. (Issue Volume IV, Dabney Chapter.)
      38. III. Agatha Ann Moncure<sup>4</sup>, daughter of Edwin Conway Moncure<sup>3</sup> and Eleanor Edrington, b. 1814; baptized by Bishop Moore, Oct. 13, 1815. Married George Garnett Glasscock, Stafford Co., Va.

Anne Moneure<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. —; d. —. Married, first, Thomas Gaskins; second, Richard Gaskins; both sons of Col. Thomas and Hannah (Hull) Gaskins, Wicomico, Northumberland Co., Va.

Issue by first marriage:

39. I. Hannah H. Gaskins<sup>4</sup>, b. —; d. —. Married (Nov. 9, 1819) Rev. Thomas David Ball, b. Maryland, 1800; d. 1831.
40. II. Elizabeth Gaskins<sup>4</sup>.
41. III. Sarah Gaskins<sup>4</sup>, b. —; d. —. Married Rev. Jeremiah Bell Jeter, D. D., b. Bedford Co., Va., July 18, 1802. He married five times.

Issue by second marriage:

42. IV. William Moneure Gaskins<sup>4</sup>, b. —. Married —, and had issue.
15. John Moneure<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. "Clermont," December 24, 1793; d. at his estate "Woodburn," Stafford Co., Va., August 3, 1876. Married, first (October 28, 1818), Esther Vowles, b. 1795; d. June 11, 1833, daughter of Col. Harry Vowles, who it is said served in the Virginia Line during the Revolutionary War. Married, second (July, 1834), Frances Daniel, daughter of Travers and Mildred (Stone) Daniel, b. 1797; d. September 11, 1871.

Issue by first marriage:

43. I. Mary Robinson Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. July 29, 1820; d. July 23, 1880. Married (July 10, 1845) William Armistead Nelson, M. D., C. S. A.
44. II. John Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. July 6, 1822; d. July 17, 1823.
45. III. William Edwin Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. Aug. 26, 1824; d. June 18, 1888. Married (Oct 18, 1853) Georgiana Cary Bankhead.
46. IV. George Vowles Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. July 31, 1826. Married (Nov. 29, 1849) Mary Ashby.
47. V. Fanny Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. Feb. 26, 1828. Married (Dec. 3, 1850) James Green Ashby.
48. VI. Powhatan Moneure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A., b. Sept. 1, 1830. Married (Nov. 15, 1854) Dorothea Farrar Ashby.
49. VII. Esther J. Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. Jan. 18, 1833; d. Dec. 27, 1833.



Issue by second marriage:

50. VIII. Walter<sup>1</sup> Raleigh Daniel Moneure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A., b. Aug. 31, 1837. Married (Dec. 3, 1868) Mary Moncure.

18. Thomas Gaskins Moncure<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of John Moncure and Alice Peachy Gaskin, his wife, b. "Clermont," October 12, 1799; d. February 28, 1836. Married, first (February 6, 1823), Clarissa Bernard Hooe, b. — 1800; d. September 1, 1829, daughter of Bernard and Mary Symes (Chichester) Hooe. Married, second, Mary Bell Haxall, daughter of Philip and Clara (Walker) Haxall, the eminent merchant miller, of Richmond, and granddaughter of Wm. and Catharine Haxall, of Suffolk, England.

Mr. Moneure was vestryman of Aquia Church, 1822; Lay Deputy to Convention, P. E. Church, Leesburg, from Aquia Church, 1823, and member Va. Legislature, 1832.

Issue by first marriage:

51. I. Jane Cornelia Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. June, 1820; d. Sept. 1820.
52. II. Frances Ann Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. July 8, 1827; d. March 12, 1833.

Issue by second marriage:

53. III. Alice Lee Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. —. Married William Harding Perkins, son of William Harding Perkins, of Nicholas (1641), Tuckahoe Creek, Henrico Co., Va. He descended also from Thomas Harding, who received three hundred and nineteen acres on James River, 1716.
54. IV. Mary Bell Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. —. Married, first, —; second, — Dobbin, son of Hon. George Dobbin, of Baltimore, Md.

20. Hon. William Augustus Moncure<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of John Moneure and Alice Peachy Gaskins, his wife, b. "Clermont," November 27, 1803; d. March, 1862. Married (March 24, 1828) Lucy Ann Gatewood, b. September, 1807, daughter of Capt. James Gatewood, Caroline Co., Va., who commanded a Virginia Company in the war of 1812, and his wife, Anna George, granddaughter of Col. William Byrd, of Westover, founder of Richmond, Va.

Mr. Moncure was educated at William and Mary College, 1822-3; was member both houses Virginia Legislature successively from 1846 to 1857, when he was elected Second Auditor and Superintendent of the Literary Fund of Virginia, holding the office until his death. Issue:

55. I. John James Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A., b. 1829. Married, first, Julia Decherd; second, Anna Decherd; was First Lieutenant Cavalry, C. S. A., under Gen'l Kirby Smith, 1861-65; member Legislature of Texas.
56. II. William Cassius Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A., b. 1831; d. Oct. 25, 1883. Married (Feb. 21, 1860) Allenia M. Cottrell, Henrico Co., Va.; was Orderly Sergeant, Henrico Co., C. S. Army, 1861-65.  
Issue:
57. I. Mary Maude Moncure<sup>6</sup>. I met Miss Moncure in Williamsburg, Va., during a visit to my uncle, the late Dr. James D. Moncure.
58. II. Lucy Berkeley Moncure<sup>6</sup>. Married (Oct. 15, 1888) William D. Van Eaton, Hill Co., Texas. When in Dallas in 1900 I was invited to visit Mrs. Eaton, but was unable to do so.
59. III. Allen Hunter Moncure<sup>6</sup>.
60. IV. Lillia Macon Moncure<sup>6</sup>.
61. V. Elgin Denton Moncure<sup>6</sup>. Married (Jan. 11, 1887) Dr. R. T. Styll, of Richmond, Va.
62. VI. Cleveland Murray Moncure<sup>6</sup>.
63. III. Thomas Jefferson Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A., b. Nov. 12, 1832. Married, first (Dec. 13, 1859), Fannie Washington Moncure; second (April 4, 1867), Marguerite Elizabeth Moncure.
64. IV. Anna George Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b.——. Married Daniel W. Norment, Bastrop, Texas.
65. V. St. Leger Landon Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b.——. Married Lucy George Oliver.
66. VI. Eustace Conway Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A., b. July 6, 1836. Married (July 23, 1859) Fanny M. Irby, Hanover Co., Va.; served C. S. Army, 1861-65; private Co. B., 9th Virginia Cavalry, May, 1861,

to Nov. 1864, when he was made Second Lieutenant, commanding First Squad 9th Cavalry; Commonwealth Atty. Caroline Co., 1865; 1865-1885, member Va. Legislature; elected by Legislature, Judge of Caroline Co., 1885; P. O., Bowling Green, Caroline Co., Va. Still living at Bowling Green (1906).

- 67. VII. Mary Alice Moneure<sup>5</sup>. Married Samuel Burke, of Burksville, Va.
- 68. VIII. Rubynetta Moncure<sup>5</sup>. Married William H. Glasscock.
- 69. IX. Cassandra Oliver Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. "Ellerslie," Caroline Co., Jan. 16, 1845. Married (Dec. 15, 1868) William Henry Lyne<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A., eldest son of Dr. Robert Baylor and Mary Ann (Edward) Lyne<sup>4</sup>, of William<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>, who with his brother Henry, came from Bristol, England, to Granville Co., North Carolina, about 1725. Wm. H. Lyne, C. S. A., 1861-65, was for years member of the real estate firm of Lyne & Brother, Richmond, Va., and Wm. H. Lyne & Co. In Sept. 1886, retired to his farm in Orange Co., Va., d —.

Issue:

- 70. I. Hiram Oliver Lyne<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 17, 1870. Married twice, and has children; P. O., Orange C. H., Va.
- 71. II. Mary Esten Lyne<sup>6</sup>, b. April 14, 1871; d. April 19, 1875.
- 72. III. William Henry Lyne<sup>6</sup>, M. D., b. May 12, 1873; d. 1905, Richmond, Va., where he had a large practice.
- 73. IV. Cassie Moneure Lyne<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 14, 1875. She has recently published a very interesting novel. She is a very superior woman. I was entertained very pleasantly twice at Freseati, near "Montpelier" (Freseati is the birthplace of Chief Justice Barbour). Freseati is situated only a few miles from Gordonsville, Va., one of the most beautiful parts of the country that I have ever visited. I had several very interesting drives near the Jaquelin Hall (home of John Jaquelin Ambler). Mont-

pelier was the home of President Madison and later my grandfather, Henry Wood Moncure, of Richmond, Va. Frescati was then the property of Cousin Cassandra Oliver Lyne; she has since sold it and now resides in Richmond with her daughters. Both mother and daughters are charming and interesting ladies.

74. V. Lucy Lec Lyne<sup>a</sup>, b. Oct. 24, 1877; d. Feb. 27, 1884.

75. VI. Baylor Edward Lyne<sup>a</sup>, b. April 12, 1880; d. Feb. 27, 1881.

76. VII. Peachy Lyne<sup>a</sup>.

21. Hon. Richard Cassius Lec Moncure<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. "Clermont," December 11, 1805; d. August 24, 1882. Married (December 29, 1825) Mary Butler Washington Conway, b. April 11, 1807; d. April 10, 1895, daughter of John Moncure and Catharine Stocke (Peyton) Conway.

Judge Moncure was for forty years a vestryman of St. George Parish, Fredericksburg, Va., and a lay deputy to the District Council of Virginia, 1864. He was presiding judge Virginia Court of Appeals, 1852-1864. He received honorary degree LL. D., at Washington and Lee University, 1872.

The following notice of Judge Moncure's wife's death was sent as a special dispatch to the *Baltimore Sun* of April 9, 1895:

FREDERICKSBURG, VA., April 9, 1895.—Mrs. Mary Moncure, the venerable wife of the late Richard L. Moncure, president of the court of appeals of this State, and mother of Judge John Moncure, justice of the court of appeals of Louisiana, died this morning at her home in Stafford County, aged 88 years.

#### Issue:

77. I. John Conway Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S: A., b. Jan. 5, 1827. Married (May 9, 1850) Fannie Dulany Tomlin.

78. II. Catherine Peyton Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. Sept. 24, 1828; d. May 13, 1831.

III. Alice Gaskins Moncure.

79. IV. Richard Cassius Lee Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. Nov. 24, 1831. Married (Oct. 7, 1851) Virginia A. Buchanan.

#### Issue:

80. I. Mary Moncure<sup>6</sup>. Married James Ashby, living in Stafford Co., Va.

81. II. Richard C. L. Moncure<sup>a</sup>, Jr. Married Nannie Waller, daughter of the late Col. Withers Waller, of Stafford Co., Va. She d. Aug. 26, 1903, at her home, Chelsea, near Widewater, leaving several children. The following year Jan. 22, Annie Eliza Moncure, younger daughter of Mr. R. C. L. Moncure, died after a brief illness.

Sent as special dispatch to the *Baltimore Sun*:

FREDERICKSBURG, VA., August 26, 1903.—Mrs. R. C. L. Moneure, daughter of the late Col. Withers Waller, of Stafford County, died to-day at her home, Chelsea, near Widewater, in that county, after an illness of only 10 days, aged 35 years. She is survived by her husband and five children.

FREDERICKSBURG, VA., January 22, 1904.—Miss Annie Eliza Moneure, the young daughter of Mr. R. C. L. Moneure, of Widewater, is dead, after a brief illness.

82. III. Virginia Moneure<sup>a</sup>, was living near Aquia Church, Stafford Co., Va., at her father's, when I visited Stafford a few years ago.  
Richard Cassius Lee Moneure<sup>5</sup>, married, second, ———; she died leaving a little girl who was seven years old, when I saw her in 1902.
83. V. Mary Conway Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. Nov. 20, 1833; d. Feb. 8, 1837.
84. VI. Anna Jane Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. Aug. 21, 1835. Married (Dec. 14, 1864) John Moncure Hull, C. S. A.
85. VII. Thomas Gaskins Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A., b. Feb. 24, 1837. Married (March 12, 1866) Jean Charlotte Washington, of "Megwillie," b. June 29, 1834.
86. VIII. Marguerite Elizabeth Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. Jan. 16, 1839. Married (April 4, 1867) Thomas Jefferson Moncure, C. S. A.
87. IX. Fanny Washington Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. Nov. 3, 1840; d. Oct. 20, 1862. Married (Dec. 13, 1859) Thomas Jefferson Moncure.
88. X. Walker Peyton Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A., b. Aug. 3, 1842. Married (April 8, 1869) Mary Joanna Hughes.
89. XI. Agnes Robinson Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. June 11, 1844. Married (Nov. 13, 1867) Daniel McCarthy Chichester.

90. XII. Harriet Eustace Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. May 26, 1846. Married (Dec. 29, 1880) Thomas Wallace, Jr.
91. XIII. William Eustace Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. March 11, 1848. Married (Nov. 13, 1873) Mary Knox, educated University of Virginia 1870-71; lawyer. I met Cousin Mary in Fredericksburg, Va., the winters 1901-2, and part of 1903. She has a large and very interesting family. I failed to secure the names of the children.
92. XIV. Mary Conway Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 3, 1851. Married (Dec. 23, 1868) Rev. Walter Raleigh Daniel Moncure.

Alice Gaskin Moncure, third child, was omitted. Married Rev. Henry Martyn Paynter.

24. Henry Wood Moncure<sup>4</sup> (William<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. July 12, 1800; d. October 15, 1866. Married (May —, 1824) Catherine Cary Ambler, b. November 15, 1802; d. November, 1850. (Issue: Volume I, Chapters V, VI, and VII.)

28. Charles Prosser Moncure<sup>4</sup> (William<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of William Moncure<sup>3</sup> and Sarah Elizabeth Henry, his wife, b. April 2, 1819; baptized by Rev. Thomas G. Allen, October 17, 1819, Aquia Church, Stafford Co., Va.; d. January 3, 1886, at his home, near Orange, Va. Married ——— Annie Lewis Daniel, daughter of Hon. Peter Vivian Daniel, of Richmond, and Lucy Nelson Randolph; his first wife (see Randolph Family, Chapter V, this volume) b. 1822; d. November 14, 1905, at her daughter's, Mrs. Wm. Grymes' (Grymes), of Orange, Va. I spent six months at Mrs. Moncure's in 1885, and a more lovely character I have never met; she always forgot self for the comfort of others. I am glad that I visited Orange the fall of 1903 and had the pleasure of seeing my dear aunt once more.

Mr. and Mrs. Charles P. Moncure had issue:

93. I. William Moncure<sup>5</sup>, b. —1851; living at Raleigh, N. C. He was educated at the University of Virginia 1870-72. After leaving the University he continued in engineering work (filling most of the time high positions) until 1888, then entering the operating department of what is now the Seaboard Air Line R. R. (filling the position of





HENRY WOOD MONCURE  
Of Richmond, Va.

president and superintendent) until 1902, when he again took up the position of engineering and at present is in that kind of work. Mr. Moncure married (Dec. 12, 1878, Orange Court House, Va.) Belle Chapman, daughter of Judge Chapman, of Orange. They have issue:

94. I. William Moncure<sup>6</sup>, Jr., educated at Raleigh Male Academy and the University of Pennsylvania; he graduated in medicine in 1902, before his 22d birthday, taking a high stand in his class. He is now practicing in the P. E. Church Hospital in Philadelphia; he is 25 years old (1906).
95. II. Belle Perkins Moncure<sup>6</sup>, aged 23, was educated at St. Mary's, Raleigh, North Carolina.
96. III. Vivienne Randolph Moncure<sup>6</sup>, aged 21, was educated at Place Institute and St. Mary's, Raleigh, N. C.
97. II. Peter Vivian Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. — 1853, educated University of Virginia, 1871, lawyer and farmer, Orange Court House, Va. Married (Feb. 15, 1887) Sadie D. Grymes, of Orange. Issue:
98. I. Edward B. Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 31, 1888.
99. II. Charles Lewis Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. June 27, 1898.
100. III. Peter V. D. Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 19, 1901.
101. III. Charles H. Moncure<sup>5</sup>, M. D., b. 1859; practicing in Orange, Va. Married (Sept. 27, 1889) Louise Cheeseborough, b. 1865. Issue twins:
  - I. Louise Moncure<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Anne Moneure<sup>6</sup>. They are at present (1906) about 16 years of age.
102. IV. Lucy Randolph Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b. 1861. Married (Nov. 7, 1896) William Grymes, of Orange. Issue:
103. I. William Randolph Grymes<sup>6</sup>, b. 1899. I have received many interesting letters from Cousin Luey Grymes. I visited her several times and she is as lovely in character, etc., as her dear mother was.

Travers Daniel Moneure<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of John Moneure<sup>3</sup> and Alice Peachy Gaskins, his wife, b. "Clermont," Stafford Co., Va., July 20, 1811; d. "Oakwood," Stafford Co.,

December 22, 1886. Married (May 22, 1838) Susan B. Carter, by whom he had issue:

104. I. Travers Daniel Moneure<sup>5</sup>, b.—. Married ———  
Bessie Douglas, daughter of Maj. Beverley B. Douglas, C. S. A., member U. S. Congress, 1874-79, and his wife, the daughter of Rollin Pollard, King William Co., Va.

105. II. Julian Moneure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A., b. 1843; killed in battle, Aug. 25, 1864.

106. III. John Moneure<sup>5</sup>.

107. IV. Hector Moneure<sup>5</sup>.

108. V. Josephine Moneure<sup>5</sup>.

109. VI. Agatha Moneure<sup>5</sup>.

45. Mary Robinson Moneure<sup>5</sup> (John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. July 29, 1820; baptized by Rev. S. W. Prestman, Aquia Church, August 14, 1822; d. July 23, 1880. Married (July 10, 1845) William Armistead Nelson, M. D., U. S. N., C. S. A., b. Hanover Co., Va., April 8, 1818, son of Armistead Nelson, Midshipman U. S. N., and his wife, Mary Henderson. (Armistead, Chapter XIX.)

Dr. Nelson graduated University of Pa. 1839; appointed assistant surgeon U. S. N., December 9, 1839; surgeon November 21, 1854; served as surgeon on board Commodore Perry's Flagship during the Mexican War; resigned July 28, 1858. In the summer of 1861, he entered C. S. Army as surgeon, serving at Yorktown, Richmond and Louisiana; resigned 1863 on account of ill health, and served as volunteer in the Va. Reserves until the close of the war. He afterwards moved to Missouri.

Dr. W. A. Nelson and M. R. Moneure, his wife, have issue:

110. I. Mary Moneure Nelson<sup>6</sup>, b. April 30, 1846; d. Feb. 3, 1852.

111. II. Frances Moneure Nelson<sup>6</sup>, b.—1848. Married ——— Maj. Edward J. Lyons, C. S. A.

112. III. Aliee Nelson<sup>6</sup>, b.—1852; d.—1854.

113. IV. Luey Randolph Nelson<sup>6</sup>, b.—1852. Married James Towson, Stafford Co., Va., son of Capt. Towson, of war 1812.

114. V. Armistead Nelson<sup>6</sup>, b.—1855.

115. VI. Esther Vowles Nelson<sup>o</sup>, b. 1857. Married ———

Edward Waller, son of Edward Waller, Stafford.

116. VII. Agnes Robinson Nelson<sup>o</sup>, b. ———1859.

117. VIII. John Moncure Nelson<sup>o</sup>, b. ———1864; d. infant.

118. IX. Alice Page Nelson<sup>o</sup>, b. ———1865.

45. William Edwin Moncure<sup>s</sup> (John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of "Somerset," Stafford Co., Va., b. Falmouth, Va., August 26, 1824; d. June 18, 1888. Married (October 18, 1853) Georgiana Cary Bankhead, b. Spring Grove, Caroline Co., Va., August 26, 1830; d. May 9, 1890, daughter of Dr. William Bankhead, Port Royal, Va., and his wife, Dorothea, daughter of Garrett Minor, Fredericksburg, Va. Mrs. Moncure d. at "Somerset," May 8, 1890.

Mr. Moncure was a communicant, and for many years vestryman of Overwharton Parish, Stafford Co., Va.

Mrs. Moncure left a sweet memory of good deeds and gentle sympathy, the head of all that was true and noble where she lived. The Church and people—indeed all who knew her—felt the influence of her life, and withal she was a gifted writer, genial and hospitable.

William Edwin Moncure and Georgiana Cary Bankhead, his wife, had issue:

119. I. John Moncure<sup>o</sup>, b. July 18, 1857. Married (Jan. 21, 1884) Lalla M. Vance.

120. II. William Bankhead Moncure<sup>o</sup>, b. "Somerset," Va., July 10, 1859.

121. III. Robert Minor Moncure<sup>o</sup>, b. March 1, 1861. Married (Dec. 23, 1890) Eliza Stewart Hunt, daughter of James Hunt, Covington, Kentucky.

122. IV. Mary Bankhead Moncure<sup>o</sup>, b. July 5, 1863.

123. V. Georgiana Bankhead Moncure<sup>o</sup>, b. May 5, 1865.

124. IV. Lewis Bengier Moncure<sup>o</sup>, b. Aug. 10, 1867; d. Nov. 10, 1868.

125. VII. Dorothea Bankhead Moncure<sup>o</sup>, b. Nov. 29, 1871.

126. VIII. Richard Travers Moncure<sup>o</sup>, b. Jan. 27, 1873.

47. George Vowles Moncure<sup>s</sup> (John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of "Chelsca," Stafford Co., Va., b. July 31, 1826. Married (at "Rose Bank," Fauquier Co., Va., November 29, 1849) Mary Ashby, b. January 26, 1830, daughter of Turner and Dorothea Farrer Green Ashby.

The *Fredericksburg Star*, Wednesday, October 9, 1901, has the following obituary:

GEORGE V. MONCURE.

In the recent demise of the subject of our present notice, the P. E. Church in Virginia and Overwharton Parish have to mourn the departure to Paradise of one whom many years of faithful devotion can rarely show a parallel. He was foremost of the descendants of his generation of the many descendants of Rev. John Moncure, the Rector when Aquia Church was built in 1751. A member and register and treasurer of that vestry from 1852 to 1882. Baptized an adult by Rev. Henry ———, D. D., in 1856, he became the earnest spiritual and active leader in the lay church work. By his personal friendship, his letters and entreaty, he secured the services of Rev. Jaquelin M. Meredith, in November, 1864, as rector at the time when Aquia Church (one of the oldest and largest of the Virginia Colonial Churches, was declared by Bishop Johns as past reclaiming; when its windows were gone, its walls defaced, its marble chancel floors torn up and broken; when the Episcopal communicants at Aquia and in the county, except members of St. George's Church, Fredericksburg, were only seven (7), when but three out of 12 of the vestry were communicants, this noble Christian almost fed the Rector's family for twelve months, and gave such help to the noble band of lay workers (male and female), to the Rector, that when Bishop Johns came to confirm a large class of 83 at Aquia in 1866, he expressed delight and surprise, to see the dear old Church and Parish putting on new garments of faith and love for the Lord Jesus Christ. George V. Moncure was foremost among those lay workers, forming the society called "Inner and Outer Circles," that from 1866 to 1873 formed the Company of Believers that visited the sick, comforted the afflicted, relieved the needy, taught the various Sunday schools at Clifton, Aquia, Rockhill, Dumfries, Armstrong's Arbor, and Stafford's store. This lay help, thus well organized, enabled the Rector to carry the membership at Aquia from 7 in 1865, to 90 in 1870 (the last figure was defaced), and resulted in repairing Aquia, rebuilding Clifton, rebuilding Quantico Church, Dettingen Parish, organizing an independent congregation at Rockhill, in West Stafford, and finally centering the affections of at least one-half of the county of Stafford in the old Virginia Church, the colonial seat of Overwharton Parish. George V. Moncure was the leader of the vestry, the friend and adviser of every Rector, and the exponent of spiritual faith in Jesus, and lover of the church. He shone in a galaxy of faithful lay workers, such as Commander Sidney Smith Lee (who was honorary member of the vestry for nearly two years and died in this parish, but buried by the Rector of Overwharton Parish at Christ Church, Alexandria, Va.); R. C. Fitzhugh, Dr. W. Peyton Moncure, R. C. L. Moncure, Jr., Mrs. J. M. Lee, Mrs. J. M. Meredith, Miss Angie Edington, Mrs. Georgianna Moncure, Miss Nannie Tackett, and many others, including that lovely, unselfish and warm-hearted wife of George V. Moncure, Mary Ashby, sister to Gen'l Turner Ashby.



This society, called the "Inner and Outer Circles," is thus referred to because its work here is historical and evinces the possibilities of lay corporation in all county parishes. The Outer Circles met weekly in five or six different neighborhoods. Each had its Sunday school, each did effective work for the Rector to reach all the classes of the people for Christian and Church work. Then once a month all the "Outer" Circles met in one "Inner" Circle at Aquia Church to report and commune and pray for the Lord's blessing upon a real, earnest and noted revival of religion, extending over 20 to 40 miles and half of two counties, Stafford and Prince William.

In George V. Moncure all the survivors of that work will recall his warm faith in Jesus, his unbounded hospitality, his brotherly love, and his unceasing love for the Church of his fathers, and the people of his state and county. He was always and everywhere especially kind, loving and helpful to poor neighbors and all persons who attended Aquia Church.

May the loved members of his family and all those who knew him in this life keep in remembrance his sweet Christian virtues and keep up his noble love for God, in Christ, his love for friends, kindred and countrymen, until we shall meet again in God's home of the blest, through Jesus Christ our Lord and Saviour.

His friend and former Rector,

JAQUELIN M. MEREDITH, SR.

George Vowles Moncure and Mary Ashby, his wife, had issue,  
b. "Chelsea," Stafford Co., Va.:

127. I. Turner Ashby Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. March 26, 1851.
128. II. John Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 14, 1854.
129. III. George Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 26, 1855. Married  
Elizabeth Ford, daughter of Nathaniel and  
Margaret (Waller) Ford. Issue:
130. I. George Vowles Moncure<sup>7</sup>.
131. II. Margaret Moncure<sup>7</sup>.
132. IV. Robert Stribling Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. March 1, 1857.
133. V. James Ashby Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 29, 1861.
134. VI. Bettie Ashby Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. June 27, 1862. Married  
Michael W. Moncure, of Richmond.
135. VII. Richard Ashby Moncure<sup>6</sup> (twin), b. Feb. 4, 1864.
136. VIII. Walter Daniel Moncure<sup>6</sup> (twin), b. Feb. 4, 1864.
46. Fanny Moncure<sup>5</sup> (John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. February  
26, 1828. Married (December 3, 1850) James Green Ashby, b.  
July 13, 1827; d. February 2, 1861, son of Col. Turner and  
Dorothea Farrer (Green) Ashby, of "Rose Bank," Fauquier Co.,  
Va., and grandson of John and Mary (Jones) Ashby. Issue:



- 137. I. John Moncure Ashby<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 5, 1854.
- 138. II. James Ashby<sup>6</sup>, b. June 27, 1856. Married Mary Moncure, daughter of R. C. L. Moncure.
- 139. III. Charles Ashby<sup>6</sup>, b. June 20, 1859; d. April 21, 1877.

48. Powhatan Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A. (John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. September 1, 1830. Married (November 15, 1854) Dorothea Farrer Ashby, b. November 15, 1838, daughter of Col. Turner and Dorothea Farrer (Green) Ashby, of "Rose Bank," Fauquier Co., Va., and granddaughter of John and Mary Jones Ashby. Issue:

- 140. I. Powhatan Moncure<sup>6</sup>, M. D., b. April 3, 1861.
- 141. II. Fanny Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 29, 1862.
- 142. III. Ashby Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. July 22, 1865.
- 143. IV. Harry V. Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 22, 1867.
- 144. V. Frances D. Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. July 5, 1868. Married (Nov. 1886) Samuel Taylor, of Clarke.
- 145. VI. Dorothea Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 13, 1870. Married Mr. Powell.
- 146. VII. Alice Bell Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 9, 1871.

50. Rev. Waller Raleigh Daniel Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A. (John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. August 31, 1837. Married (December 3, 1868) his cousin, Mary Conway Moncure, b. December 3, 1851, daughter of Hon. Richard Cassius Lee and Mary Butler Washington (Conway) Moncure, Richmond, Va. Issue:

- 147. I. Fannie Daniel Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 12, 1871.
- 148. II. Mary Conway Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. April 22, 1874.
- 149. III. Sally Hull Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 23, 1877.
- 150. IV. Richard Cassius Lee Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 13, 1878.
- 151. V. John Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. April 2, 1880.
- 152. VI. Emily Wallace Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 28, 1882.
- 153. VII. Alice Peachy Moncure<sup>6</sup>, b. July 31, 1884.

63. Maj. Thomas Jefferson Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A. (William A.<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. November 12, 1832. Married, first (December 13, 1859), Fannie Washington Moncure, b. November 3, 1840; d. October 20, 1862, a communicant of the P. E. Church; daughter of Hon. Richard Cassius Lee and Mary Butler Washington (Conway) Moncure, Richmond, Va. Married, second

(April 4, 1867) Marguerite Elizabeth Moncure, b. January 16, 1839, sister of his first wife. (Hayden's Virginia Genealogies.)

We have the following touching tribute to her memory:

MONCURE.—On Friday evening, February 26, 1897, passed from death unto life, Marguerite Elizabeth, beloved wife of Thomas J. Moncure, at Kirkwood, their home, Stafford Co., Va., in the 58th year of her age.

Although for many months she had suffered much, causing her family great alarm and anxiety for her condition, she seemed to recover her strength, and they had hopes of her final restoration to health. But death came suddenly and unexpectedly. Peacefully and quietly, yet without a word, her pure spirit took its everlasting flight.

When we stand beside the dying bed of our loved ones, watching the life slowly ebbing away, we feel it is hard to see them suffer, to know we must give them up, and yet, after they are gone from us, it seems some consolation at least, that we had a word, a smile, a tender look of recognition, as they passed over the river. But God knows best. He has ever a tender care over His children. In all His purposes concerning them, there is a hidden meaning. We cannot understand it now, but

Sometime we'll understand,  
 God knows the way, He holds the key;  
 He guides us with unerring hand.  
 Sometime with tearless eyes we'll see—  
 Yes there—up there—we'll understand.

Our loved sister had been a child of God for many years—her hope was in Christ. A good wife, a good mother, a kind and true friend. A woman of strong character and strict integrity, she was beloved and respected by all who knew her.

At such a time what could avail us, had we not that same blessed hope in Christ, that we shall see our loved ones again. Precious reality!

A dear husband, three sons and a loved daughter-in-law, and a precious little grandchild, of whom she was very fond; with loved brothers and sisters, not only mourn their loss, but bear her in sweet remembrance till the resurrection morn.

A. M. P.

I (L. P. du Bellet) have failed to secure names of her three sons.

Major Thomas Jefferson Moncure and Fannie Washington Moncure, his first wife, had issue:

154. I. Mary Addison Moncure<sup>a</sup>.
155. II. William Augustus Moncure<sup>a</sup>.
156. III. Richard Cassius Lee Moncure<sup>a</sup>.
157. IV. Alice Moncure<sup>a</sup>, d. aged 14 months.
158. V. Robinson Moncure<sup>a</sup>, b.—1881.

77. Hon. John Conway Moncure<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A. (Richard C. L.<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of Louisiana, b. "Glencairn," Stafford Co., Va., January 5, 1827. Married (May 9, 1850) Fannie Dulany Tomlin, daughter of Williamson Ball and Ann Catherine (Carter) Tomlin, Lancaster Co., Va. (Carter Family, Chapter VII.)

Mr. Moncure graduated at V. M. I., was valedictorian of his class; studied law under his father; was admitted to the bar 1849; was appointed Commonwealth's Attorney, Stafford Co., Va., 1851, and every year subsequent until 1860, when he removed to Shreveport, La. Previous to his departure Gov. Letcher of Virginia appointed him a member of the Board of Visitors of the V. M. I., the first graduate of that institution on whom such an honor was conferred.

In 1861 he enlisted in the C. S. Army as private in Capt. L. M. Nutt's Company, Shreveport; commissioned Captain Adjutant General's Department 1862; assigned to duty staff of Gen. C. J. Polignae, C. S. A.; after the battle of Mansfield, La., he was made Major; in January, 1865, he went to France with Prince Polignae in C. S. service; returning to Louisiana in the summer of 1865, he resumed the active duties of the law; was elected member of the Louisiana Legislature for the sessions of 1871-2, 1873-4, and 1879; during the sessions 1873-4, he was elected Speaker of the House.

In 1874, when the Democratic hope was considered a forlorn one, Maj. Moncure having received a wholly unsolicited nomination for State Treasurer, was elected by a majority of 5,000. The returning board was on hand, however, to rob him and his people of their victory. It was during the legislative career of Maj. Moncure that he received the designation of "Honest John," a tribute from the arch trickster, Henry Clay Warmouth, to the incorruptibility of the man. In 1879 Maj. Moncure was again sent to the Legislature and elected Speaker without opposition. This was the Constitutional Convention of 1879, by which the present judicial system of Louisiana was framed (Shreveport, La., *Times*). (Hayden's "Virginia Genealogies.")

In 1880 Maj. Moncure was elected Judge of the Louisiana Court of Appeals. He is at present Supt. of Public Education of Caddo Parish, La., and resides in Shreveport, staying with his son, Conway Moncure.

I (author) met Judge Moneure April 19, 20, 21, 1906, in Baton Rouge, La., at the Convention of the Louisiana State Teachers' Association, held at Garig Hall, University grounds. I had the pleasure of dining with him at the Grouchy Hotel, Baton Rouge, La.

The following tribute is in memory of Mrs. John Conway Moncure, née Fannie Dulany Tomlin, wife of Hon. J. C. Moncure, Shreveport, La.:

Another loved one has been taken from our dear family circle; a brother beloved has been called upon to part with the wife of his youth, the companion of his riper years. In her death he has lost a true and devoted wife, and her children and grandchildren a loving and tender mother and grandmother, and all of us in the home circle a valued and loved friend.

Whilst another more competent than I has written of her virtues, enumerating the traits of her lovely character, yet would I as associated with her in early life, offer a slight tribute to her precious memory.

So often in this life do we see the true, the noble, the gifted, the self-denying—those who seem to be so much needed in the world—called away, whilst others are left who to us appear of less importance and who are far less lovely in their character and disposition. But we are short-sighted and our vision is obscured, for

God knoweth best who to call to go,  
God knoweth best who to leave below.

Our dear Fanny was one of those lovely and lovable characters whose presence and companionship was dear to all her loved ones. Being dead she yet speaketh. Her precious example is a rich legacy, not alone to her husband, children and grandchildren, but to every one of that family circle of which she was a truly beloved and admired member.

Sweet sister, we will think of thee,  
And cherish long thy memory;  
So long as life and thought shall last,  
Will come to the memories of the past.

A. M. P.

Mrs. J. C. Moncure died January 2d, 9:30 p. m., 1893, Shreveport, La. The interment took place from St. Mark's Episcopal Church, of which she was a devoted and consistent member. The Circuit Court adjourned in respect of her memory. Mrs. Moncure was sixty-five years and one day old.

Hon. John Conway Moncure and Fanny Dulany Tomlin, his wife, had issue:

159. I. Conway Moneure<sup>a</sup>, b. July 18, 1852. Married (Feb. 18, 1884) Effie Jones.
160. II. Ann Carter Moncure<sup>a</sup>, b. March 14, 1854; d. Sept. 24, 1873.
161. III. Richard Cassius Lee Moncure<sup>a</sup>, b. Jan. 16, 1856; d. Feb. 23, 1873.
162. IV. Mary Washington Moneure<sup>a</sup>, b. July 4, 1858; d. May 2, 1866.
163. V. Rebecca Dulany Moncure<sup>a</sup>, b. March 15, 1860; d. Jan. 16, 1861.
164. VI. Rebecca Dulany Moncure<sup>a</sup>, b. April 8, 1862; d. July 2, 1864.
165. VII. Landon Carter Moncure<sup>a</sup>, b. May 22, 1866; d. Feb. 17, 1883.
166. VIII. Fanny Dulany Moncure<sup>a</sup>, b. April 22, 1868. Married (Aug. 14, 1893) Edgar Marburg.

Alice Gaskins Moncure<sup>5</sup> (Richard C. L.<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), third child of Hon. Richard Cassius Lee Moncure and Mary Butler Washington Conway, his wife, b. "Glencairn," Stafford Co., Va., February 4, 1830. Married (September 23, 1852) Rev. Henry Martyn Paynter<sup>4</sup>, M. A., son of Rev. Jos. Painter<sup>3</sup>, M. A., D. D., who was a son of George Painter, son of ——— Painter<sup>1</sup>, who fled from France to Germany, 1685, and then to America, before 1700. (Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, p. 455.)

Mr. and Mrs. Paynter had issue:

167. I. ———<sup>a</sup>, b. ———; d. infant.
168. II. ———<sup>a</sup>, b. ———; d. infant.
169. III. Gilman Vredenburg Paynter<sup>a</sup>, b. ———; d. "Glencairn," Aug. 23, 1874.
170. IV. Anna Blanton Coffey Paynter<sup>a</sup>, b. June 28, 1857. Married Hiram A. Tueker, son of Rev. Silas Tueker, D. D., of the Virginia family.
171. V. Mary Moncure Paynter<sup>a</sup>, b. June 22, 1862. Married Wm. R. Parker, of Chicago.
172. VI. Susanna Preston Lees Paynter<sup>a</sup>, b. July 8, 1866.
173. VII. Henry Martyn Paynter<sup>a</sup>, b. April 22, 1868.

119. Rev. John Moncure<sup>a</sup> (William E.<sup>5</sup>, John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. "Woodburn," Stafford Co., Va., July 18, 1857. Married (Gallipolis, Ohio, January 31, 1884) Lalla Marie Vanec, daughter of Capt. Alexander and Eliza A. (Shepard) Vance, of Gallipolis, Ohio.

Mr. Moneure graduated at Virginia Theological Seminary 1881; ordained Deacon June 1881, and Priest, 1882, by Rt. Rev. F. M. Whittle, D. D. Was rector St. Peter's Church, Gallipolis, 1882-1891. Archdeacon, Richmond, Va.; residence, 603 E. Main St. (1906). Issue:

174. I. Eliza Vanec Moneure<sup>7</sup>, b. May 20, 1885.

159. Conway Moncure<sup>a</sup> (Hon. John Conway<sup>5</sup>, Richard C. L.<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Hon. John Conway Moneure and Fanny Dulany Tomlin, his wife, b. July 18, 1852. Married (February 18, 1884) Effie Jones, daughter of Judge Roland Jones, of Shreveport, La., formerly of North Carolina; member of U. S. Congress from N. C., 33d session, and District Judge of Louisiana for many years, and his wife, daughter of Hon. Montford Stokes, of N. C., member U. S. Congress, 1816-1823, Gov. North Carolina 1830. Gov. Stokes married Mary, daughter of Col. Henry Irwin, who fell at Germantown, 1777.

Conway Moneure and Effie Jones, his wife, had issue:

175. I. Katharine Moneure<sup>7</sup>.

176. II. John Conway Moneure<sup>7</sup>.

177. III. Effie Jones Moncure<sup>7</sup>.

178. IV. Roland Jones Moncure<sup>7</sup>.

179. V. Ann Carter Moneure<sup>7</sup>.

166. Fanny Dulany Moncure<sup>a</sup> (Hon. John Conway<sup>5</sup>, Richard C. L.<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Hon. John Conway Moncure, of Shreveport, and Fanny Dulany Tomlin, his wife, b. April 22, 1883. Married (August 14, 1893) Edgar Marburg, professor in charge of the department of Civil Engineering at the University of Pennsylvania.

Mr. and Mrs. Edgar Marburg have following issue:

180. I. Fanny Tomlin Marburg<sup>7</sup>, b. Sept. 26, 1894.

181. II. Edgar Marburg<sup>7</sup>, b. Nov. 8, 1895.

182. III. Clara Marburg<sup>7</sup>, b. May 10, 1898.

183. IV. Anita Marburg<sup>7</sup>, b. Dec. 10, 1899.



## CHAPTER XIV

## MARSHALL FAMILY.

The following notes are taken from W. M. Paxton's Book, "The Marshalls—Their Origin":

Tradition is the only authority the Marshall family have for claiming descent from William le Mareschal, who came over to England with the army of the Norman conqueror. As his name implies, he was a commander in the army of invasion. From him was descended John Marshall, the nephew of the great Earl of Pembroke. The estates of the latter were on the border of Wales. After the death of King John, he was Mareschal of England. After the crowning of the infant King Henry III, he was chosen Protector of the Kingdom. He had married a daughter of Richard, Earl of Pembroke, surnamed Strongbow, who in 1172, in the reign of Henry II, had conquered the Irish, and reinstated Dermot, King of Leinster. For his services he had been rewarded with the hand of Eva, the King's daughter. On the death of Strongbow, William, Earl of Pembroke, succeeded to his estate in Ireland. As Protector of England and Guardian of Henry III, he sent his nephew, John Marshall, to Ireland, and constituted him Mareschal of Ireland. This John Marshall is mentioned by Irish historians as the leader of the Irish nobility, in their efforts to gain for that Island the benefits of Magna Charta. After the confiscation of the Pembroke estates in Ireland, we hear no more of the Marshall name, until it appears in history in 1558, at the fall of Calais, in the reign of Queen Mary. Captain John Marshall there distinguished himself, and was severely wounded at the capture of the city. He returned to Ireland, and there died. From him descended John Marshall, who was a Captain at the battle of Edgehill in the reign of Charles I. Being an Episcopalian, he did not follow the fortunes of his deposed Sovereign, but came to America about 1650, and settled, first at Jamestown, Va., and afterwards removed to Westmoreland County, in the same colony. He became distinguished in the Indian wars. He appears to have left no will. His son Thomas, an humble farmer, here died in 1704. The second son of Thomas was John, known as John Marshall of the "Forest."

We trace the Marshall lineage as follows:

- I. Captain John Marshall, emigrant, 1650.
- II. His son Thomas, who died 1704.
- III. His son, John of the "Forest," who died 1752. With these I begin my history.

John Marshall, a Captain of Cavalry, in the reign of Charles I, of England. He was a zealous supporter of the crown and of the Episcopal

Church. He was born and reared in Ireland. Having raised a cavalry company, he was one of the first to offer his services to Charles, and from the battle of Edgehill until the imprisonment of his sovereign, he was actively engaged in his support. Unwilling to live under the rule of Cromwell, he removed, with his family, about 1650, to Virginia. Here he was employed in the Indian wars of the colony, and Campbell, in his history of Virginia, gives him credit for the successful termination of hostilities. He may have had other children, but Thomas is the only one whose name has been handed down to us. Capt. John is not mentioned in any of the official records of Westmoreland County, that have been preserved, and Col. Greene thinks that he died near Dumfries, and that his tombstone, as late as a generation ago, marked his grave. My letters sent to officials at Dumfries were not answered.

To show that he had other children, I will give the following:

Lineage of H. L. Marshall, of Moulton, Iowa.

I. William Marshall, b. in Virginia, and removed at an early day to Mason Co., Ky., said his father was a second cousin of Col. Thos. Marshall. He had a brother, Humphrey, of Lewis Co., Ky.

II. William Marshall, b. in Mason Co., Ky., removed to Augusta, Ky., and thence to Brown Co., O.

III. H. L. Marshall, now of Moulton, Iowa, but b. in Brown Co., Ohio.

Now William (No. I above) always claimed that his father (name not ascertained) was a second cousin of Col. Thomas Marshall. Capt. John, of Ireland, was therefore his great-grandfather, and therefore had other children besides his son Thomas. I think also a daughter must have married a Fontleroy, as tradition names her as a great aunt of Col. Thomas Marshall. Mrs. Royall, in letters to me, dated 1884, refers to her as her mother's great aunt, and as one who held herself above her relatives of our branch.

Thomas Marshall, son of Capt. John Marshall, emigrant, was born in Eastern Virginia, about 1635; d. May —, 1704, in Washington Parish, Westmoreland Co., Va. He was a small farmer and a zealous Episcopalian. His will is of record in Westmoreland County. I give a copy:

In the name of God, Amen! I, Thomas Marshall, of the County of Westmoreland, of Washington Parish, carpenter, being very weak, but of perfect memory, thanks be God for it, doth ordain this my last will and testament, in the manner and form following:

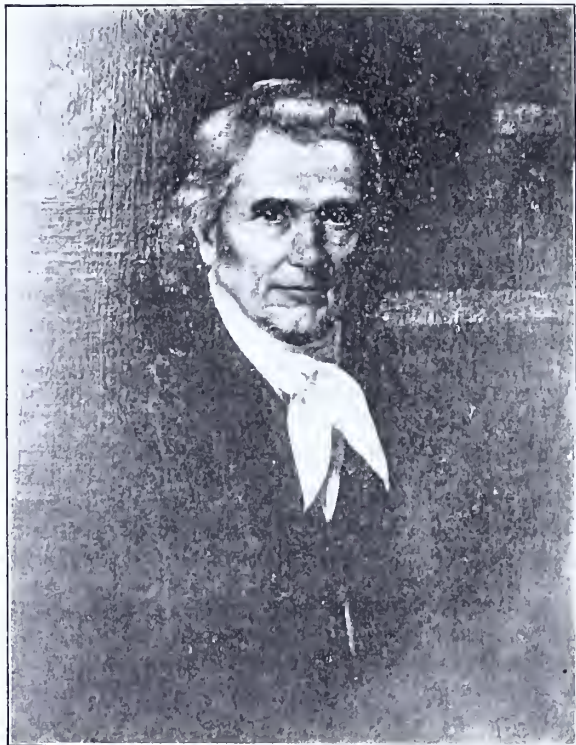
(b) First, I give and bequeath my soul into the hands of my Blessed Creator and Redeemer, hoping, through merits of my blessed Saviour, to receive full pardon and remission of all my sins; and my body to the earth, to be decently buried according to the direction of my executor, which hereafter shall be named.

(c) Item: I will and ordain that my well beloved wife, Martha Marshall, shall be my full and whole executrix.

(d) Item: I will that my estate shall remain in the hands of my wife as long as she remains single; but in case she marries, then, she is

to have her lawful share, and the rest to be taken out of her hands, equally to be divided among my children.

(e) Item: I will that if my wife marry, that David Brown, Sr., and John Brown be guardians over my children, and to take the estate into their hands, bringing it to appraisement, giving good security to what it is valued, and to pay my children their dues as they become of age.



CHIEF-JUSTICE JOHN MARSHALL

Painted by Martin; recently presented by Mr. John L. Williams, of Richmond, Va., to the University of Virginia

(f) Item: I will that Elizabeth Rosser is to have a heifer, delivered by my wife, called White-belly, to be delivered as soon as I am deceased.

(g) Item: I will that my son William Marshall have my plantation, as soon as he comes of age, to him and his heirs forever, but in ease my son William die before he comes of age, or die without issue, then my plantation is to fall to the next heir apparent at law. [No date.]

THOMAS MARSHALL [Séal.]

Witnesses: Edward Taylor, John Oxford and John Taylor.  
Probated May 31, 1704.

The maiden name of Mrs. Martha Marshall is unknown, and William and John are the only children we can trace. John married Elizabeth Markham.

William was the father of the celebrated Col. William Marshall, of Mecklenburg, who served in the Revolutionary War, and was one of the patriots who, in 1775, promulgated the Declaration of Independence, which served as a model for the Continental manifesto.

The posterity of Col. William Marshall has already been referred to and it may be useful to trace one branch of his posterity:

- I. Thomas Marshall. Married Martha ———; d. 1704.
- II. William, his eldest son, b. about 1685.
- III. Col. William Marshall, of Mecklenburg and of the Revolutionary War. Married Lucy Goode, of Powhatan Co., Va.
- IV. William J. Marshall, of Henderson, Ky. Married (1824) Sarah Lyne Holloway, daughter of John Holloway, and Anne, eldest daughter of William Starling, and Susanna Lyne, of Mecklenburg Co., Va. Mr. Marshall was a planter and banker and was highly regarded for his integrity and capacity.
- V. John Holloway Marshall, the eldest child, married Martha E. Hopkins. The second son was William J. Marshall, of Henderson, married Lucy Frances Posey, ninth child. The third son was James B. Marshall, married Harriet E. Hickman. The fourth was Lucy A. Marshall, married Leonard H. Lync.

The above are known as the Henderson Marshalls, and are the only branch of Col. William Marshall's family I can trace. There are hundreds of others from this source scattered over the South, but they cannot trace their connection. I will here give the lineages of several who claim a common ancestry with us.

Lineage of Dr. J. M. Marshall of Knoxville, Tenn.:

He writes: My great-grandfather came from England, and settled on the Eastern shore of Maryland. His sons were: 1, Isaac; 2, Thomas; 3, William; and 4, John. They were all patriot soldiers in the Revolutionary War.

- I. Isaac, the oldest, married ——— Foote; their son:
- II. Joseph Marshall, of North Carolina; their son:

III. Dr. J. M. Marshall, of Knoxville, b. 1821.

He names his brothers :

- I. John Marshall.
- II. Eleazer Marshall.
- III. Theophilus Marshall.
- IV. Henry Marshall.
- V. Richard Marshall.

He says his grandfather (Isaac) was a cousin of Chief Justice and claims kin with Thos. F. Marshall, Humphrey Marshall and Alex. Marshall.

Lineage of H. D., Finis E. and Neal B. Marshall, bankers of Unionville, Mo. :

- I. Denis Marshall, of Franklin Co., Va.
  - II. Louis R. Marshall. Married (in Virginia) Mary Ann Nance. They removed to Putnam Co., Mo., in 1836.
- The three sons above named.  
They claim to be of our family.

Lineage of J. W. Marshall, of Romney, W. Va. :

- I. John Marshall, b. about 1730.
- II. John L. Marshall, b. June 29, 1777; d. Nov. 6, 1847.
- III. John William Marshall, of Romney.

Mr. Marshall is a highly intellectual gentleman, and was much surprised when he ascertained that his relationship with our branch could not be traced. He was reared at the old family seat in Fairfax Co., Va., some ten or twelve miles from Dumfries, and I think the tombstone of John Marshall, near Dumfries, is the monument to the first of the above Johns. The records of Westmoreland County show there was a James Marshall, who died about 1730, and his posterity may have settled in Fairfax. This James was probably a son of Thomas, and brother of William and John.

#### CAPTAIN JOHN MARSHALL OF "THE FOREST."

I. Capt. John Marshall of "The Forest," was born in Westmoreland Co., Va., about the year 1700; d. April, 1752. Married (about 1722) Elizabeth Markham, b. perhaps in Alexandria, Va., about 1704; d. in Fauquier Co., 1775. Mr. Marshall was a farmer, possessed of a plantation of one thousand and two hundred



acres on Appomattox (called Mattox) Creek, in Washington Parish, Westmoreland County, Va. He was a militia captain, and a man of good reputation and influence in his neighborhood. The records of conveyances in Westmoreland County show that in 1728 William Marshall, of King and Queen Co., Va., conveyed to John Marshall, of Westmoreland Co., one thousand and two hundred acres on Appomattox Creek, Washington Parish. This may have been the estate known as "The Forest," and may have been devised to William, the eldest son, by his father, Thomas, as shown by his will. If so, we ascertain that William, the father of Col. William, of Mecklenburg County, was a resident of King and Queen County in 1728. Other records may be here referred to:

1. Louis Markham, died in Washington Parish in 1713, and his estate was divided among eight children.
2. In 1732 William Markham, of Hamilton Parish, Prince William Co., conveys one hundred and twenty-six acres on Mattox Creek to John Price.
3. In 1744, John Smith, Jr., and Patience, his wife, sell to John Smith, Sr., of Westmoreland Co., one hundred and sixty acres adjoining John Marshall.
4. In 1752, Elizabeth Marshall conveys, by deed of gift, to Thomas Marshall, one hundred acres of the homestead (The Forest) granted her by the will of her husband.
5. Mrs. Marshall is referred to as Lizzie Marshall, of Curls Neck, daughter of John Markham.

But the most important and valuable document that has been preserved is:

#### THE WILL OF JOHN MARSHALL OF THE FOREST.

The last Will and Testament of John Marshall: Being very sick and weak, but of perfect mind and memory, I first give and recommend my soul to God that gave it, and my body to be buried in Christianlike and decent manner, at the discretion of my executor, hereinafter mentioned:

I. Item: I give and bequeath unto my beloved daughter, Sarah Lovell, one negro girl, named Rachel, now in possession of Robert Lovell.

II. Item: I give and bequeath unto my beloved daughter, Ann Smith, one negro boy named Daniel, now in possession of Augustine Smith.

III. Item: I give and bequeath unto my beloved daughter, Lizzie Smith, one negro boy named Will, now in possession of John Smith.



IV. Item: I give and bequeath unto my beloved wife, Elizabeth Marshall, one negro fellow, named Joe, and one negro woman named ———, and one negro woman ———, after delivering the next child born of her body, to my son John; until which time she shall remain in the possession of my wife. Likewise I leave my corn and meat to remain for the use of mare named "Beauty," and a side-saddle; also six hogs; also I leave her the use of my land during the widowhood, and afterward to fall to my son, Thomas Marshall, and his heirs forever.

V. Item: I leave my tobacco to pay my debts, and, if any be over, for the clothing of my small children.

VI. Item: I give and bequeath unto my well-beloved son, Thomas Marshall, one negro woman named Hannah, and one negro child named Jacob.

VII. Item: I give and bequeath unto my well-beloved son John Marshall, one negro fellow named George, and one negro child named Nan.

VIII. Item: I give and bequeath unto my well-beloved son, William Marshall, one negro woman named Sall, and one negro boy named Hannibal, to remain into the possession of his mother until he becomes of the age of twenty years.

IX. Item: I give and bequeath unto my beloved son, Abraham Marshall, one negro man named Jim, and one negro girl named Bett, to remain in the possession of his mother until he comes to the age of twenty years.

X. Item: I give and bequeath unto my beloved daughter, Mary Marshall, one negro girl named Kate, and one negro boy, Gus, to remain in possession of her mother until she comes to the age of eighteen years, or until marriage.

XI. Item: I give and bequeath unto my beloved daughter, Peggy Marshall, one negro boy named Joshua, and one negro girl named Liz, to remain in possession of her mother until she comes to the age of eighteen, or until marriage.

XII. Item: I leave my personal estate, except the legacies above mentioned, to be equally divided between my wife and six children above mentioned. [Perhaps his six unmarried children.]

XIII. Item: I constitute my wife and two sons, Thomas Marshall and John Marshall, executors of this, my last will and testament.

In witness whereof, I hereunto set my hand and seal this first day of April, 1752.

JOHN MARSHALL [Seal.]

Interlined before signing.

Benjamin Rollins, William Houston, Augustine Smith, witnesses.

Probated May 26, 1752, and Eliza, his relict, and Thomas Marshall qualified as executors.

Mr. Paxton is indebted to Col. Marshall J. Smith, of New Orleans, for a copy of the foregoing will, and many other favors. The will has proved of great value, in determining the names and

ages of the children, and in establishing dates. Among the papers left by Mary Isham Colston, a genealogical chart was found, of which Mr. Paxton has a copy. The children of John Marshall of the "Forest" are named in the order of the will; but Abraham is called Markham; Anne is called Nancy; Lizzic is called Elizabeth and Peggy is called Margaret. The latter is said to have married ——— Smellan.

The wife of John Marshall of "The Forcest" was Elizabeth, daughter of John Markham. Tradition has gone wild over the career of John Markham. One legend makes him a British peer, another calls him a pirate, a third insists upon his being the buccaneer Blackbeard, but all authorities agree in pronouncing him a handsome, dashing and fascinating gentleman, and a daring, cruel and adroit villain. Here Col. Thomas Green shows his skill and power in interpreting traditions and in deciphering legends. He writes: .

There lived near the family, a John Markham, an Englishman with a peculiar history. He was by birth a gentleman, as the term is used in England, and of mixed Anglo-Saxon lineage,—had been an officer in the British Navy, had killed his captain in a duel in the West Indies, and had taken refuge in Virginia, where he had engaged in mercantile pursuits, and had married the widow of a merchant, much older than himself, by whom he had no children, but of whose whole property he managed to obtain possession. His wife died, and he returned to England, sold a small inherited estate which had come down to him from Anglo-Saxon ancestors, who had owned it before the conquest, for which one of his descendants used to say he ought to have been hung, and eloped with and married a young English girl, with whom he returned to Virginia, and by whom he had seventeen daughters and one son. A shrewd, money-getting, out-breaking, lawless, self-willed, large brained, devil-defying man was this John Markham, if all accounts of him be true, respecting neither God nor man, and fearing neither; and every now and then there breaks out in his race the genuine Markham streak. His son, named John, gobbled up all the paternal estate, and was the father of Commodore James Markham, a distinguished officer of a Virginia Navy during the Revolution. One of the first John Markham's seventeen daughters was the grandmother of the late T. Davies Carneal, well known in Cincinnati and throughout central Kentucky. Another was the ancestress of Major McRae, formerly Commandant of the Barracks at Newport; of George McRae, of Mississippi, and of the family of that name, of South Carolina. One of the youngest, Elizabeth, married Captain John Marshall.

Mrs. Elizabeth Marshall was living October 15, 1773, for her deed of gift of a negro woman, so dated, is of record in Warrenton, Fauquier Co., Va. She styles herself Elizabeth Marshall of Leeds Manor.

In her latter days Mrs. Eliza Colston often dwelt on the traditions of the family, and one who, in his early life, sat at her feet, relates the legend of Markham or Blackbeard, which is as follows:

Blackbeard's correct name was Finch. The scene of his piratical career was the American coast and the West Indies, and the time was the early quarter of the eighteenth century.

Prior to the death of Blackbeard, there lived in Alexandria, Va., a merchant, who had acquired a large fortune by trade. He was a married man, and he and his wife were elderly people. In their employ was a young man named John Markham. The old merchant died, and his widow inherited all his property. Markham persuaded her to marry him, and he thus acquired a large fortune. Sometime after the marriage, his business called him to England. The handsome, but unprincipled young man, here met a beautiful young lady, attending a boarding school, and prevailed on her to elope with him, and a mock marriage was imposed on her. On their arrival, the imposition was exposed, and great sympathy was expressed for the lovely girl. Regarding her as free, a gentleman proposed honorable marriage to her. Markham was incensed, and challenged and killed him. His real wife was greatly mortified, and soon died. Markham claimed and appropriated her whole estate, which he had not already squandered. He was now legally married to the young English girl, and a large family of children was born to them. But Markham died, and the widow found herself immensely wealthy. Her beauty was only matured, and her gaiety made her a leader in society.

At this time there appeared in Alexandria a handsome young Englishman, wearing a rich naval uniform. He seemed to have an abundance of money, and had the address to recommend himself to the good graces of the blooming widow. Infatuated with him, the widow married him, and placed all her fortune under his control. When their honeymoon was ended, and the adventurer had possessed himself of all her property, he threw off restraint, and introduced into her house a set of rough and desperate companions, and made it the scene of boisterous revels. When his wife remonstrated, he struck her, and treated her with brutal contempt. Her children were purposely sent away, or, frightened by the disorderly conduct beneath their mother's roof, fled to Westmoreland County and found protection from her uncles, William and Lewis. Elizabeth found a home with the widow of Thomas Marshall. She had been finely educated, and possessed not only beauty, but the highest accomplishments of the day. Her mother now discovered that she had married Blackbeard, the notorious buccaneer. When his identity was exposed, he gathered all and hastily departed to his ship. But female constancy elings to the most brutal and abandoned of husbands. She was often present at his orgies, and on one occasion, when two villains intended to assassinate Blackbeard, and were seated at table, one on his right, and the other on his left, she held two pistols beneath the table, and drawing a trigger with each hand at the same moment, the miscreants fell dead at the feet of her unworthy lord. But the ungrateful husband is said to have treated her with such cruelty, that

she died from the effects of a kick given her in one of his revels. But Blackbeard did not long survive his wife. Lieut. Maynard outwitted him on the North Carolina coast, and his riddled body, hung in chains, was suspended at Williamsburg as a warning to outlaws.

I find no mention of John Markham in the records of Westmoreland, but names of William and Lewis frequently appear. This confirms the tradition that John Markham lived in Alexandria, while his brothers resided in Westmoreland County. I have a copy of the will of Lewis Markham, from the records of Westmoreland. He describes himself as of the Parish of Washington, and his plantation on Mattox Creek is given to his widow, Eliza Markham. He refers to his eight minor children, but names none of them. He appoints his widow and Joseph Bayly his executors. It is dated March 15, 1713, and probated June 24, 1713. His personal estate was appraised at £709.

I. Capt. John Marshall, of "The Forest," b. about 1700; d. April 1752. Married (about 1722) Elizabeth Markham, b. about 1704; d. in Fauquier Co., 1775.

Children:

II. 1. Sarah Marshall, b. in Washington Parish, Westmoreland Co., Va., about the year 1723. Married (about 1743) Robert Lovell.

III. 2. Anne Marshall, b. in Washington Parish, Westmoreland Co., Va., about 1725; d. in Fauquier Co. about 1781. Married (about 1745) Augustine Smith, of the same locality.

IV. 3. Lizzie Marshall (Elizabeth), b. in Washington Parish, Westmoreland County, Va., about 1727. Married (about 1747) John Smith, brother of Augustine Smith.

V. 4. Col. Thomas Marshall, b. in Washington Parish, Westmoreland Co., Va., April 2, 1730; d. in Washington, Mason Co., Ky., June 22, 1802. Married (1754, in Fauquier Co., Va.) Mary Randolph Keith, b. in Fauquier Co., Va., April 28, 1737; d. Mason Co., Ky., Sept. 19, 1809.

VI. 5. John Marshall, b. in Westmoreland Co., Va., about 1732; d. about 1800. Married Jane Quisenbury.

VII. 6. Rev. William Marshall, b. in Westmoreland Co., Washington Parish, Va., 1735; d. 1809 in Kentucky. Married (1766 in Virginia) Mary Anne Pickett, daughter of William Pickett and sister of Martin Pickett.

VIII. 7. Markham Marshall, b. in Westmoreland Co., Va., about 1730; d.—. He came to Fauquier Co., Va., about 1753, with other members of the family. Married Ann Bailey.

IX. 8. Mary Marshall, b. about 1738; d.—. Married (about 1758) Rev. William McClanahan, of the Baptist Church.

X. 9. Margaret Marshall (Peggy), b. about 1745. Married Smellan. Nothing else is known of her.

II. Sarah Marshall<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), b. in Westmoreland County, Va. (Washington Parish), about the year 1723. Married (about 1743) Robert Lovell. It is not known what became of this family. The names appear in the will of John Marshall, of "The Forest," and Mrs. Mary T. Colston makes Sarah Lovell the oldest child of John and Elizabeth Marshall.

The will of Robert Lovell, Sr., doubtless the father of the husband of Sarah Marshall, is of record in Westmoreland County. It is dated January 15, 1725; probated February 23, 1725; enumerates his children:

- I. Elizabeth Lovell. Married Nicholson.
- II. Mary Lovell. Married Harrison.
- III. Robert Lovell.
- IV. Daniel Lovell.
- V. James Lovell.
- VI. Ursula Lovell.

III. Ann<sup>2</sup> Marshall (John<sup>1</sup>), b. in Washington Parish, Westmoreland Co., Va., about 1725. Married (about 1745) Augustine Smith of the same locality; d. in Fauquier Co., about 1781. Augustine Smith's name appears as one of the witnesses to the will of John Marshall of "The Forest," and the will itself virtually names him as the husband of Ann Marshall. After the death of John of "The Forest" in 1752, the Smiths, with Thomas Marshall, appear to have removed to the vicinity of Germantown, Fauquier Co., Va. Their property in Westmoreland was disposed of and land purchased in Fauquier Co. Mrs. Elizabeth Marshall went with them, and perhaps lived to the beginning of the war. Augustine and John Smith are supposed to have been brothers, the sons of John Smith, Sr., a native of Bristol, England. He came to Virginia about 1700 and settled on Mattox Creek, Westmoreland County, near to Thomas Marshall. He married Mary Ann Adkins,



a relative of the Washington family, of Westmoreland, and from the Washingtons the name Augustine was derived. The records of Westmoreland show:

1. In 1723 a Mr. Thompson sells to John Smith land in Washington Parish near John Marshall's.
2. In 1735 John Smith sells Triplett a tract on Mattox Creek.
3. In 1743 Thomas Smith, of Orange Co., Va., sells to John Smith two hundred aeres on Mattox Creek.
4. In 1744 John Smith, Jr., and Patience, his wife, of Prince William County, sell to John Smith, Sr., of Westmoreland County, one hundred and sixty acres adjoining John Marshall.
5. In 1752 Hornbuckle sells to John Smith two hundred acres in Washington Parish.

By the kindness of Col. Marshall J. Smith, Mr. Paxton is able to present the following:

#### WILL OF THE FIRST JOHN SMITH.

John Smith's will and testament is as follows: I give to my son Thomas, my land which I now live upon, to him and his heirs and assigns forever. And I give my land which I bought of William Thompson to my son John, to him and his assigns; and in case my son John should die before he comes of lawful age, the land to fall to my son Augustine. Also, I give unto my son Thomas a gun and a cow which he calls his. And all the rest of my estate, I give unto my wife Mary, during her widowhood, and then to be equally divided amongst my children. Also I leave my wife Mary and my son Thomas my whole and sole exeutors. Hereunto I set my hand and fix my seal.

JOHN SMITH [Seal.]

Attest:—Samuel Thornberry, John Pope, Margaret Morris.

Probated Aug. 25, 1725.

Children:

XI. 1. John Smith. Married Weaver. He was the oldest son of Augustine Smith, but dying without issue before his father, his brother Thomas beame the heir.

XII. 2. Thomas Smith, b. about 1767; d. in Fauquier Co. about 1796. Married (July 13, —) Elizabeth Adams, b. June 26, 1754.

XIII. 3. Mathew Smith. Married Winn.



- XIV. 4. John Smith.
- XV. 5. William Smith. Married Ann Ashby.
- XVI. 6. Augustine Smith. Married Darnall.
- XVII. 7. Elizabeth Smith. Married Brown.
- XVIII. 8. Ann Smith. Married William Florenee.
- XIX. 9. James Smith. Married Libbie Pickett. . Their child: Thomas Marshall Smith, b.——; d. about 1859. Married, second, — Mrs. Eminet.
- XX. 10. Susanna Smith.

IV. Elizabeth (or Lizzie) Marshall, b. in Washington Parish, Westmoreland County, Va., about 1727. Married (about 1747) John Smith, brother of Augustine Smith, to whose sketch reference is made. John is said to have died in 1783. The following passage of a letter from M. L. Hutt, Dept. Clerk, of Westmoreland County, to Col. Marshall J. Smith, dated Aug. 22, 1883, will throw some light on the Smith records:

I enclose you memorandums of all I can find on the deed-books in this office. They date from 1652. I do not see the names of Mary Ann Adkins, nor of Broadwater, mentioned in the books at all. The name of Fontleroy just appears in deed-book of 1772. I think they were Richmond County people. The Turners are mentioned only once in the will-books, though often in the deed-books. In Thomas Turner's will he leaves his farm, "Smith Mount," to his son Harry Smith Turner, and afterwards H. S. Turner deeds a portion of it to Fontleroy. The Turner family still own the farm. The John Smith mentioned in memorandum 1723 was the father of Thomas, John and Augustine. We have no marriage records nor bonds to show to whom he was married. Probably the marriages at that time were recorded in the church registers, none of which are now in existence in this country.

Lizzie Marshall and John Smith are said to have raised three daughters and one son. Mrs. Judith Keith, of Warrensburg, is one of their great-granddaughters.

V. Col. Thomas Marshall, was b. in Washington Parish, Westmoreland Co., Va., April 2, 1730; d. in Washington, Mason Co., Ky., June 22, 1802. Married (1754, in Fauquier Co., Va.) Mary Randolph Keith, b. in Fauquier Co., Va., April 28, 1737; d. Mason Co., Ky., Sept. 19, 1809.

Children:

XXI. 1. John Marshall, Chief Justice of the United States from 1801 to 1835, b. Sept. 24, 1755; d. at Philadelphia, July

6, 1835. Married (Jan. 3, 1783, at Yorktown, Va.) Mary Willis Ambler, b. March 17, 1766; d. Dec. 25, 1831, at Richmond, Va.

XXII. 2. Elizabeth Marshall, b. near Germantown, in Fauquier Co., 1756, d. at "Honeywood," Berkeley Co., Va., in 1842. Married (Oct. 15, —) Raleigh Colston, b. May 10, 1749; d. at "Honeywood," Va., 1823.

XXIII. 3. Mary Marshall, b. at "Oakhill," Fauquier Co., Va., about 1757; d. about 1827, and buried at Frankfort. Married (about 1784) Humphrey Marshall, b. in Virginia about 1756; d. in Frankfort, Ky., July 1, 1841.

XXIV. 4. Thomas Marshall, b. in Fauquier Co., Oct. 27, 1761; d. in Washington, Ky., March 19, 1817. Married (1790) Frances Maitland Kennan, b. in Virginia, July 24, 1773; d. in Washington, Ky., Nov. 19, 1833.

XXV. 5. James Markham Marshall, b. in Fauquier Co., Va., March 12, 1764; d. at "Fairfield," Fauquier Co., April 26, 1848. Married (April 9, 1795) Hester Morris, b. July 30, 1774; d. at "Fairfield," April 18, 1816. Both were buried at "Happy Creek."

XXVI. 6. Judith Marshall, b. in Fauquier Co., about 1766; d. ———. Married (about 1783) George Brooke.

XXVII. 7. William Marshall (twin brother of Charles), b. in Fauquier Co., Va., Jan. 31, 1767; d. in Richmond, Va., 1815. Married, first, Alice Adams; second, Mary Macon; third, Maria C. Winston (Price).

XXVIII. 8. Charles Marshall (twin brother of William), was b. at "Oakhill," Fauquier Co., Va., Jan. 31, 1767; d. at Warrenton, Va., 1805. Married (Sept. 13, 1787) Lucy Pickett, b. May 2, 1767, d. 1825. Both are buried at Old Turkey Church, Fauquier Co., Va.

XXIX. 9. Lucy Marshall, b. in Fauquier Co., Va., about 1768; d. at Jamestown, Va., 1795. Married (1790) John Ambler, b. at Jamestown, Va., Sept. 25, 1762; d. May 8, 1836.

XXX. 10. Alexander Keith Marshall, b. at "Oakhill," Fauquier Co., Va., 1770; d. at "Walnut Grove," Mason Co., Ky., Feb. 7, 1825. Married (Oct. 10, 1794, at Danville, Ky.) Mary McDowell, b. Jan. 11, 1772; d. at the house of James A. Paxton, Washington, Ky., Jan. 27, 1822. Married, second (Nov. 3, 1823). Mrs. Eliza A. Ball, née Lewis, who d. July 1829.

XXXI. 11. Dr. Louis Marshall, b. at "Oakhill," Fauquier Co., Va., Oct. 7, 1773; d. at Buckpond, Woodford Co., Ky., 1866.

Married (at Frankfort, Ky., 1800) Agatha Smith, b. 1782; d. May 1844.

XXXII. 12. Susan Tarleton Marshall, b. at "Oakhill," Fauquier Co., Va., May 12, 1774; d. in Marysville, Ky., 1858. Married (at Buckpond, Woodford Co., Ky., May 25, 1793) Judge William McClung, b. in Rockbridge Co., Va., July 12, 1758; d. in Mason Co., Ky., 1811.

XXXIII. 13. Charlotte Marshall, b. at "Oakhill," Fauquier Co., Va., d. in Washington, Ky., April 17, 1817. Married (at "Buckpond," Woodford Co., Ky., 1794) Dr. Basil Duke, b. in Calvert Co., Md., 1766; d. in Washington, Ky., 1828. Dr. Duke married, second, Margaret Chinn, daughter of Raleigh Chinn, Ky.

XXXIV. 14. Jane Marshall, b. at "Oakhill," Fauquier Co., Va., July 29, 1779; d. at Mt. Ephraim, Fauquier Co., Va., Sept. 13, 1866. Married (Dec. 22, 1799) George Keith Taylor, b. March 16, 1769; d. Nov. 10, 1815.

XXXV. 15. Nancy Marshall, b. at "Oakhill," Fauquier Co., Va., about 1781. Married (1803) Col. Joe Hamilton Daviess, son of Joseph and Jean Daviess, b. in Bedford Co., Va., March 4, 1774; killed at the battle of Tippecanoe, Nov. 8, 1811. Married, second, William Pollard; third, a Mr. Cox, and after a few unhappy months experienced, was divorced.

V. Col. Thomas Marshall is regarded by his posterity with veneration. In sound judgment and depth of native mind he is said to have surpassed all his illustrious children. They, themselves, admitted his superiority of intellect. His posterity are thought to have inherited their mental powers, rather from the Markhams and the Marshalls than from the Keiths.

Col. Marshall is said to have attempted, with George Washington, the school of Rev. Archibald Campbell, rector of Washington Parish. Here commenced the intimate friendship that continued through life between Col. Marshall and the great apostle of liberty. Well instructed and experienced in the surveyor's art, he often attended Washington in his surveying excursions for Lord Fairfax and others. For these services he received several thousand acres of wild land in Henry Co., Va., which were sold and divided among his heirs, as provided in his will. During the French War he was Lieutenant of Volunteers. He was not at

Braddock's defeat, because he was left behind, employed in building Fort Necessity. His father died in April, 1752, and Mr. Marshall, being the oldest son and the heir, qualified as his executor. His brother, John, though also appointed an executor, was too young to serve. Shortly after the death of John Marshall, of "The Forest," the Marshalls, with their relatives, the Smiths, removed to the vicinity of Germantown, Fauquier Co., Va. Here Thomas accepted the agency of Lord Fairfax, to superintend his immense landed estate, to make leases, collect rents, etc. In 1754, he married Mary Isham Keith, daughter of Rev. James Keith and Mary Randolph. Near Germantown, his elder children were born. In 1765, eleven years after his marriage, he purchased of Thos. L. and R. H. Lee three hundred and fifty acres of land on Goose Creek, and removed upon it. His old log house still stands a mile northeast of Markham. In 1773, he sold his farm; and it was, perhaps, at this time that he purchased "Oakhill," or, as he calls it in his will, "The Oaks." Here he built a fine house of wood, which still remains. All his younger children were born here. His mother had attended him in all his removals. A little later she disappears, and it is probable she was laid in the graveyard near Germantown known as "Locust Level," where the Marshalls, Keiths and Smiths buried their dead. In 1767, while residing on Goose Creek, he was High Sheriff of Fauquier County. His bond as such still appears of record.

When the war broke out, Col. Marshall was already prepared for it. He was one of that band of early patriots which had resolved to resist the encroachments of the British Crown at the hazard of all that is dear to man. The heroic spirit manifested itself in raising a patriotic company known as the Culpeper Minute Men. This was the earliest organization in the cause of freedom. When formed into a regiment under command of Col. Woodford, Capt. Marshall became Major. Maj. Marshall's esteem for his superior officer was afterward shown, and his influence manifested by the county of his residence, in Kentucky, being called Woodford.

Maj. Marshall distinguished himself at the battle of the Great Bridge,—the first engagement on Virginia's soil. He was frequently elected to the Virginia House of Burgesses, and was a member of the convention that declared the colony independent.

He was at Valley Forge, with his sons, John (Chief Justice) and Thomas. At the battle of Germantown, when Gen. Mereer was killed, he succeeded to the command. A horse was killed under him at Brandywine. It has been said that at Brandywine Col. Marshall saved the patriot army from destruction. For such distinguished service, the House of Burgesses through their speaker, Edmund Randolph, presented him a sword. This heirloom descended to his son, Capt. Thomas Marshall, who by his will bestowed it on his son, Gen. Thomas Marshall. The latter left no male issues, and, on his death, his daughter, Mrs. Bland, presented it to the Maysville, Kentucky, Historical Society, which preserves it with care.

In 1779, Col. Marshall, with his Third Regiment, was sent to reinforce Gen'l Lincoln in South Carolina. He joined Lincoln just in time to be shut up with him in Charleston, and to share in the surrender of that city to the British. But having been paroled, Col. Marshall, with other officers, visited Kentucky in 1780. On that trip he located his beautiful farm of "Buckpond," near Versailles.

About the year 1780, Col. Marshall was appointed Surveyor-General of the lands in Kentucky, appropriated to the officers and soldiers of the Virginia State line. November 1st, 1781, it was divided into three counties—Fayette, Lincoln and Jefferson, and Col. Marshall was made surveyor of the first. In 1785, Col. Marshall returned to Virginia for his family, which he brought west on a flatboat, down the Ohio River. In 1787, Col. Marshall represented Fayette County in the Virginia Legislature, and in 1788 was elected to the Danville Convention, to form a State Constitution.

In 1795, one of his favorite daughters, Lucy Ambler, died at Jamestown, Va. He was deeply affected by this event, and in a letter to his son, John Marshall, dated Buckpond, Ky., November 6, 1795, he pours forth his sorrow. The beginning of this letter was given in Volume I, p. 41. The latter part shows that at that time he held the office of the Collector of United States revenue for the State.

He writes:

We are informed that you are appointed Attorney General for the United States, and that you have accepted the office. Now I hope we may be



informed why we have no Attorney in this State for the United States. I have complained of this in every letter I have written on the subject of revenue. I cannot possibly have the revenue collected, as no one will comply with the laws without compulsion, and the government has not put it in my power to compel compliance. This I have tried, but without success. What can I do? I know not. I should think that in the present situation of affairs there might be political reasons assigned for the neglect. But if that be the case, why am I repeatedly written to by the Commissioner of Revenue, as if it were expected that I could go on with the business in the same manner as if there were no impediment, etc.?

From 1780 to 1800 Col. Marshall's home was "Buckpond," one of the most lovely farms in the State of Kentucky. In 1800 his youngest son, Louis, was married to Agatha Smith, and "Buckpond" was given to them. The old people went to live with their son, Thomas, who resided at Washington, Mason Co., Ky. Here June 22, 1802, Mr. Marshall died, and was buried on "The Hill." Paxton says the inscription on his tomb is now illegible; but many years ago he transcribed it, and it is:

Thomas Marshall, to whom this memorial is inscribed, was born the 2nd of April, 1730, intermarried with Mary Keith, in her 17th year, by whom he had fifteen children, who attained maturity; and after distinguishing himself by the performance of his duties as a husband, father, citizen and soldier, died on the 22nd of June, 1802, aged 72 years, 2 months and 20 days.

Col. Marshall's will can be found, p. 23, Paxton's Book.)

The wife of Thomas Marshall was Mary Randolph Keith, daughter of Parson James Keith and Mary Isham Randolph.

The Keiths are descended from Maresehal, of the Scottish army under Bruce. George Keith—born at Kineardine, Scotland, in 1685; died near Potsdam, Prussia, May 25, 1778—was the tenth and last earl that bore the name. His race had been long Maresehals of Scotland, and were possessed of large estates. The family were adherents of the Stuarts, and took an active part in the Rebellion of 1715 in favor of the Pretender. Alexander and James, afterward Field Marshal of Russia and Prussia, were younger brothers of the Earl. James Keith, afterwards known as Parson Keith, a cousin of the Earl, was a professor in the Maresehal College of Aberdeen. The professor was Bishop of the Episcopal Church, and the uncle and guardian of the Earl and his brothers. His son James (the Parson) had been educated with his cousins, and in 1715 was a youth of nineteen. The Earl and



his brothers took part in the rebellion, and had to leave for the continent. Here, through their Cousin James, they still fomented discontent, and in 1719 entered into Scotland, and were repulsed. Their secret correspondence with their friends had been conducted through their cousin James, and he, when discovered, took refuge in the Colony of Virginia.

James (Parson) Keith had been educated for the Church. Coming to Virginia, he settled in Fauquier County, and married Mary Isham Randolph, daughter of Thomas Randolph, of Tuckahoe, the second son of William Randolph, of Turkey Island. She was therefore, closely related to John Randolph, of Roanoke; to Thomas Jefferson and to Richard Henry Lee. (More about the Randolphs in Chapter V.)

Bishop Meade, Vol. 2, p. 216, thus speaks of Parson James Keith:

Of Rev. Mr. Keith and his descendants I have not been able to obtain all the information I desire, or hope for. For all that I can learn, he was a worthy man. He was a native of Scotland. Being involved in the Rebellion in favor of the Pretender, he was forced to fly his country, and came to Virginia. Returning to England for orders, he was settled in Hamilton Parish, and performed the duties of his office there for a long time—probably until 1757 or 1758. A daughter married Col. Thomas Marshall, of "Oakhill," Fauquier County, the seat of the Marshalls to this day (1857).

Several portraits of Mary R. Keith Marshall are preserved. Miss Mollie Marshall, of Washington, Ky., has the likeness preserved by the old lady herself. Mrs. Bullett, of Louisville, Ky., has the portrait possessed by her grandfather, Dr. Louis Marshall, and Mrs. Aliee Carroll, of Leeds, has the third heirloom, handed down from her grandfather, Judge John Marshall. I know no likeness of Col. Thos. Marshall. The three likenesses of Mrs. Marshall are alike, and represent her dressed with a cap, in the style of an old lady of her generation. Doubtless the portraits were taken after the death of her husband, or his likeness would have accompanied them.

V. John Marshall was born in Westmoreland Co., Va., about 1732. He is said to have married Jane Quisenbury. He was appointed an executor of his father's will, but failed to qualify. His father died in 1752, and John was then, perhaps, a minor. He came to Bourbon Co., Ky., at an early day. He must have died about the year 1800. His name does not appear upon the records of Bourbon County. I have found no family records, and his posterity, now living, never heard of him.

V. Rev. William Marshall was born in Washington Parish, Westmoreland Co., Va., in the year 1735; d. 1809 in Kentucky. Married (1766, in Virginia) Mary Ann Pickett, daughter of William Pickett and sister of Martin Pickett. His father died in 1752, and the family removed to Fauquier Co., Va., and settled in the vicinity of Germantown. In 1765 he purchased land two miles west of Markham, Fauquier Co., Va., and his old residence is still pointed out. About 1766, he married, and in 1768 he was brought under the influence of the New Light preachers, and united with the Baptist Church. In a short time he began to preach. Among the fruits of his ministry were John Taylor and Joseph Reading, who afterwards became zealous apostles of the gospel. He often preached at Happy Creek and Front Royal. In 1780 he removed to Kentucky, and settled in Lincoln County, where his brother Markham had preceded him. A few years later he removed to Eminence, Henry Co., Ky., and built up "Fox Run" Church. He died at Eminence in 1809. A year before his death he divided among his children a large amount of real estate, which he had located at an early day. No name is more revered, even to this day, throughout Kentucky; and indeed William Marshall may be said to have been the best if not the greatest of the family. His will can be found in Paxton's Book, also his descendants.

V. Markham Marshall, b. in Westmoreland Co., Va., about 1740. He came to Fauquier Co., Va., about 1753, with other members of the family. Married Ann Bailey, removed to Lincoln Co., Ky., about 1779, and engaged in surveying lands; went further south, and I have heard nothing further of him. The name of Markham Marshall frequently appears on the records of Fauquier Co., Va. There are no traces of his posterity, except of a daughter, who married William Green.

V. Mary Marshall, b. about 1738. Married (about 1758) Rev. William McClanahan, of the Baptist Church. Mary was unmarried at the time of her father's death, 1752. The marriage must have taken place about 1758. At that time the Marshall family were living near Germantown, Fauquier Co., Va. Their oldest son, Thomas, is said to have been born in Westmoreland. At the breaking out of the war in 1776, the McClanahan family were living in Culpeper County. Sometime towards the close

of the century, Mr. McClanahan removed to Greenville, N. C., where he died. The children will be found p. 35, Paxton's Book.

V. Peggy (Margaret) Marshall. From the will of her father, she appears to have been the youngest child, and was born about 1745. She married Mr. Smellan.

VI. Thomas Smith, b. in Westmoreland Co., Washington Parish, Va., about 1767; d. in Fauquier Co., Va., about 1796. Married Elizabeth Adams. His father removed with Col. Thomas Marshall and other relatives, about 1753, to the neighborhood of Germantown, Fauquier Co., Va. He had several children:

Sixth son, John Adams Washington Smith, b. in Fauquier Co., Va., June 2, 1781; d. Sept. 1, 1832. Married (Feb. 2, 1806) Maria Love Hawkins, b. 1789; d. July 18, 1826. Married, second (Oct. 18, 1827), Julia A. M. Chapin, who died Oct. 5, 1828. Married third, Sarah O. Hall, of Loudoun Co., Va. Mr. Smith was educated in Richmond; studied law with his relative, William Marshall. His first wife was a daughter of Capt. John Hawkins, Adjutant of Col. Thos. Marshall's Third Virginia Regiment.

His sixth son, John Thos. Smith, b. June 15, 1816; d. Jan. 28, 1872. Married (Sept. 25, 1845) Margaret L. Marshall, b. Oct. 29, 1823.

VI. John Marshall, Chief Justice of the United States from 1801 to 1835, was b. near Germantown, Fauquier Co., Va., Sept. 24, 1755; d. at Philadelphia,\* July 6, 1835. Married (Jan. 3, 1783, at Yorktown, Va.) Mary Willis Ambler, b. March 17, 1766; d. Dec. 25, 1831, at Richmond Va. His descendants were given in Volume I.

The life of Judge Marshall is so interwoven with the administrative, diplomatic and judicial history of the country, that his

---

\*NOTE.—Chief Justice Marshall died at a boarding house kept by a Mrs. Crim on Walnut Street, below Fifth. He was about to return to Virginia when, while sojourning in the house, he was taken down with his fatal sickness. Mrs. Marshall had always been commended for her purity and piety. Perhaps the mother was more the agent than was the father in bringing their posterity to the house of God. Her husband, though so exalted, was her devoted lover to the last day of her life; and after her death he sanctified its anniversary by writing a letter to a friend detailing her virtues and commending her memory. This letter will be found in Chapter II, this volume.

biography would demand of me a full volume. His life has been written a hundred times, and these pages must be reserved for others whose memory might perish if omitted. At the bar and on the bench—in congress and in cabinet—in the councils of war and embassies of peace, he proved himself a jurist, a statesman, a soldier, an orator and a patriot. As the expounder of the Federal Constitution and laws he laid the foundation of a judicial system that has no equal on earth.

V. Elizabeth Marshall, b. near Germantown in Fauquier Co., Va., 1756; d. at "Honeywood," Berkeley Co., Va., in 1842. Married (October 15, 1785) Raleigh Colston, b. May 10, 1749; d. at "Honeywood," Va., 1823. She was the oldest daughter of Col. Marshall, and received her education chiefly from her father. She became the teacher of her brothers and sisters. Her father in his will makes a special bequest to her, as an expression of his gratitude for her self-sacrificing labors for his younger children. At the age of twenty-seven she was married to the wealthy and accomplished Raleigh Colston, at the house of her brother, John, in Richmond. She survived her husband twenty years.

#### THE COLSTON FAMILY.

1. William Colston, of Bristol, England, was a brother of Edward Colston, the great philanthropist. William, b. about 1618, came to Virginia about 1645, and was clerk of Rappahannock Co., Va.
2. His son William Colston, b. about 1665.
3. Charles Colston, b. about 1690. Married Susan Travers, daughter of William Travers.
4. Travers Colston, b. about 1712. Married, first, Alice Corbin Griffing; after her death married, second, Susanna Opie. The latter was mother of Raleigh Colston, b. May 10, 1749. His son:
5. Thomas M. Colston, b. Nov. 11, 1794; d. April 30, 1840. Married (May 25, 1820) Eliza J. Fisher; d. 1845.

(See the Marshall Family, by Paxton, pp. 52, 53.)

VI. James Markham Marshall, fifth child of Col. Thomas Marshall and Mary R. Keith, his wife, b. in Fauquier Co., Va., March 12, 1764; d. at "Fairfield," Fauquier Co., Va., April 26.

1848. Married (April 9, 1795) Hester Morris, b. July 30, 1774; d. at "Fairfield," April 18, 1876. Both were buried at "Happy Creek."

Mr. Marshall, like his brothers, was thoroughly educated at home. Though quite a youth, he was elected Lieutenant in one of the companies of Alex. Hamilton's regiment, and served to the close of the Revolutionary War. At the siege of Yorktown he led the "forlorn hope" in an attack upon the fort. He came to Kentucky with his father, and on one occasion went to the field to fight a duel with James Brown, afterward Minister to France and Senator from Louisiana. He returned to Virginia in 1795, and married Hester, daughter of Robert Morris, the great patriot and financier of the Revolution. He was sent by Washington as agent of the government, to negotiate the release of LaFayette, when a prisoner of Austria, at Olmutz; and while in Paris witnessed the outrages of the Reign of Terror. Several years were spent abroad, and his two oldest children were born on ships of war, on the British coast. While in England he purchased of the heirs of Lord Fairfax all their estates in what was called the Northern Neck of Virginia. This purchase was made in the name of John Marshall (Chief Justice), Rawley Colston, Harry (Light Horse) Lee, and James M. Marshall. But the State of Virginia set up title to the lands by confiscation, and a compromise was effected, whereby the company received all the Fairfax lands in Leeds Manor and some other smaller tracts. Their portion embraced about 180,000 acres, and the cost to them was something less than one dollar per acre. James M. Marshall purchased the share of Harry Lee, and Mr. Colston took lands on the Potomac. All the unsold lands in Leeds Manor, therefore, went to John and James Marshall, and here their posterity have found homes. They form a community in and around the little town of Marshall, Fauquier County; attend Leeds Church, and send their sons to the State University. All are Democrats, and members of the Episcopal Church. They are a frugal, honest, upright, hospitable, sensible and pious people; and I venture to say, there is no spot in the continent that has produced so many preachers to the acre than Leeds Manor, and I am confident that no other portion of the South, of equal population, sent to the Southern Army so many heroes. With a double portion of the lands thus acquired, Mr.

Marshall became a large proprietor, and left his children large estates.

Mr. Marshall studied law, and practised in Winchester. He was eminent in his profession, and like all the early members of the family, he was a decided Federalist. Under the tutelage of Alex. Hamilton he could be nothing else. Early in the nineteenth century, Mr. Marshall left Winchester, and built on his "Happy Creek" estate a costly villa, consisting of a baronial castle, and spacious quarters for his servants, tenants and dependents. This massive structure, with its wide halls and lofty ceilings, still affords shelter for half of his posterity, and its broad and fertile acres bring them a good income. About 1816 he yielded possession of this magnificent estate to his oldest son, R. M. Marshall, and retired to Fairfield, where he died. He was a handsome and dignified old gentleman, six feet two inches tall, weighed about 200 pounds, raw-boned, and he wore a cue, stockings and knee-buckles.

Mrs. Hester Marshall is said to have been a lovely woman.

#### THE MORRIS FAMILY.

1. Robert Morris, of Liverpool, and afterwards of Oxford, Md., and agent of the great house of Corncliff & Co., of Liverpool, b. 1702; d. July 12, 1750. His son:
2. Robert Morris, the patriot and Philadelphia financier, was b. Jan. 31, 1734. Married (March 2, 1759) Mary White, b. 1739, daughter of Col. Thomas White, and sister of Bishop White, of Pennsylvania, who was the first lawfully consecrated bishop of the American Episcopal Church. He compiled the Prayer Book called by his name.
3. Hester Morris. Married Jas. M. Marshall. They had issue:
  1. Thomas Marshall, b. 1796; d. 1826. Married Catherine Thornton.
  2. Robert M. Marshall, b. 1797; d. 1870. Married (1819) Lucy Marshall, b. 1796; d. 1844.
  3. James Marshall, b. Oct. 21, 1802; d. 1880.



4. John Marshall, b. June 27, 1804; d. 1855. Married (1837) Mary Shaekleford, b. 1811; d. 1849. Married second, Rebeeca Boyd Smith, b. Dec. 21, 1822. Issue from this last marriage given in Volume III.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. James Marshall, b. 1838; d.—. Married (1879) Mary A. Wellford, b. 1846. I met Mrs. Marshall in 1885, also 1904. Issue:
  1. Emmaline W. Marshall, b. Feb. 9, 1880.
  2. Beverley A. Marshall, b. June 19, 1882.
- II. William Marshall, b. Aug. 1, 1840.
- III. Charles S. Marshall, b. 1843. Married (1866) Cary R. Jones, b. 1845. (See Volume I, Chapter VI.)
  5. Charles L. Marshall, b. April 14, 1809; d. 1831.
  6. Henry Morris Marshall, b. June 13, 1811; d.—. Married (1834) Elizabeth Marshall (née Brooke), b. 1813. Issue.
 

Elizabeth B. Marshall, b. 1846. Married (1871) Bowles Armistead.

(See descendants Volume I, Chapter VII, and Armistead Family, Chapter XIX, this volume.)
  7. Susan Marshall, b. Oct. 11, 1812; d.—. Married Dr. Richard Cary Ambler, b. Nov. 1810; d. 1877. (Descendants Volume I, Chapters V and VI.)
  6. Judith Marshall, b. about 1766; d.—. Married (about 1783) George Brooke.
  7. William Marshall, b. Jan. 31, 1767; d. 1815. Married, second, Mary Macon. (Descendants Volume I, Chapter VI.)
  8. Charles Marshall, b. Jan. 31, 1767; d. 1805. Married (Sept. 13, 1787) Luey Pickett, b. May 2, 1767; d. 1825.
  9. Luey Marshall, b. 1768; d. 1795. Married (1790) John Ambler. (Descendants Volume I, Chapter V.)
  10. Alexander Keith Marshall, b. 1770; d. Feb. 7, 1825. Married (Oct. 10, 1804) Mary McDowell, b. Jan. 11, 1772; d. Jan. 27, 1822.
  11. Dr. Lewis Marshall, b. 1773; d. 1866. Married (1800) Agatha Smith, b. 1782; d. 1844.

12. Susan Tarleton Marshall, b. at "Oakhill," Fauquier Co., Va., May 12, 1774; d. Marysville, Ky., 1858. Married (May 25, 1793) Judge William McClung, b. July 1758; d. 1811.
13. Charlotte Marshall, b. 1777; d. April 17, 1817. Married (1794) Dr. Basil Duke, b. 1766; d. 1828.
14. Jane Marshall, b. at "Oakhill," July 29, 1779; d. Sept. 13, ——. Married (Dec. 22, 1799) George Keith Taylor, b. March 16, 1769; d. 1815.
15. Nancy Marshall, b. about 1781; d. ——. Married (1803) Col. Joe Hamilton Davies, b. March 4, 1774; killed at the battle of Tippecanoe, Nov. 8, 1811.

Having omitted the fourth son of Col. Thomas Marshall and Mary Randolph Keith, I will add the following:

Captain Thomas Marshall, brother of John Marshall (Chief Justice), b. in Fauquier Co., Va., October 27, 1761; d. in Washington, Ky., March 19, 1817. Married (1790) Frances Maitland Kennan, b. in Virginia, July 24, 1773; d. in Washington, Ky., November 19, 1833. Mr. Marshall received his education from his father, sisters and tutors employed in the family. At the age of seventeen he volunteered as a private in his father's regiment, and served until the close of the Revolutionary War, at which time he held the commission of a captain. He saw hard service, and participated in many of the bloody battles of the war of Independence. At the end of the war he married Susanna Adams, b. April 1, 1769, daughter of John Adams and Sarah Stacy Gibbons. Capt. Marshall spent several years on his farm in Fauquier Co., Va. In the fall of 1788, or the spring of 1789, he came to Kentucky.

Capt. and Mrs. Marshall lie side by side in the "Hill" cemetery. His epitaph reads:

Thomas Marshall, son of Thomas Marshall, was born on the 27th of October, 1761, and serving his friends, his family, his country and himself, departed this life the 19th day of March, 1817. To all, especially to the widows and orphans of the poor, to one as a friend, and to the other as a benefactor. To his memory his affectionate widow and children have constructed this monument.

Mrs. Frances M. Marshall was reared an Episcopalian, was somewhat inclined to the Baptists, but joined the Presbyterian

Church, that she might be with her friends. She joined the Church in 1818, and from that day her house was the home of all Presbyterian ministers.

Her epitaph reads:

Erected to the memory of Mrs. Frances Marshall, who died November 19, 1833, in the 61st year of her age. During the vicissitudes of a long life, chequered, as is the lot of humanity, with much of happiness and more of sorrow, the character of the deceased remained the same. An affectionate wife, a fond mother, an humble but ardent Christian, a warm-hearted and devoted friend, she will long be remembered in that extensive circle of friends and relatives who, for many years, met at her hospitable board, and to whom her house was a home. In the bosom of that numerous connection, who had known her worth and shared her affection, she expired calmly, cheerfully, happily, in the full hope of a joyful resurrection.

Eliza Colston Marshall, fourth child, b. March 17, 1801; d. July 19, 1874. Married (Sept. 19, 1819) Martin P. Marshall, b. Feb. 10, 1798; d. May 9, 1883.

Charles Marshall, second child, b. March 1, 1825; d——. Married (Nov. 22, 1854) Jane Taylor, b. March 3, 1823. She was still living last time I heard of her.

Lizzie Marshall, second child. Married Richard Cary Ambler.

(See Volume I, Chapter VI.)

## CHAPTER XV

## THE HARRISON FAMILY.

The ancestry of Benjamin Harrison, President of the United States of America, 1889-1893, by Charles P. Keith, has the following:

A tradition, mentioned by President William Henry Harrison, made him a descendant of the regicide General Thomas Harrison. It has not been generally accepted throughout the family, and is certainly untrue as far as it involves direct descent, for the regicide was a contemporary of the Harrison who emigrated to this country, and was probably a few years younger.

If the tradition may be construed to mean that both were of the same family, we cannot at once reject it, finding it extant among the children of persons born within seventy years of the regicide's execution. That took place in October, 1660. Benjamin Harrison, the signer, was born about 1726, and his brother Carter Henry Harrison a few years later.

A number of Harrisons settled in Virginia in the seventeenth century. The connection between but few of them is known. Those who emigrated before Benjamin the Clerk apparently died without issue. Brown is right in making George, who was killed in a duel, the brother of Sir John. Very soon after 1640, appeared Thomas and Edward, the former figuring in Neill's works on Virginia history, first as Governor Berkeley's chaplain, and then as a non-conformist divine.

They are mentioned also in Savage's Genealogical Dictionary of New England, as they resided there for some time. They are embraced in the following tradition, brought over from England by Rev. Joseph Harrison, a native of Skipton, Yorkshire, who lived in the City of New York, in the early part of the present century, viz., four brothers of the name went to America, whom the Rev. Joseph Harrison called Thomas, Richard, Benjamin and Nathaniel, of whom, his own father had told him, two went north, and two south; a fifth brother, Edward, a clergyman, remaining in England, Cromwell being a member of his church.

Now, as we have seen, the name of the clergyman was Thomas, and he was one of those who came to America. Yet afterwards, he preached in London, and accompanied Henry Cromwell to Ireland. Edward, too, was one of those who came to America. I can find no Nathaniel here at that time, nor any Benjamin in such registers in Yorkshire as have been examined, but the Richard of the tradition appears to be identical with the Richard living in New Haven in 1644; he may have been the father of Thomas, who was of New Haven in 1654, and of Branford in 1666 (one of whose sons was called Nathaniel), as well as of Richard, who had a son Benjamin born in 1655. Four sons of Richard the younger, viz., John, Joseph, George and Daniel, removed to New Jersey. Thus we have two brothers going to Virginia, and two other branches of the family, descended from a third brother, settling in Connecticut and New Jersey. The Harrisons of the latter State claimed that one of their family went to Virginia, and a removal thither at the beginning of the eighteenth century is not improbable.

Among the other Harrisons who came to Virginia were Dr. Jeremy and his wife, Frances, the latter as a widow receiving in 1654 a patent for 1,000 acres in Westmoreland Co. In 1655, 1,000 acres were granted to her brother-in-law, John Harrison, entail remainder to her, remainder to Giles Brent of Peace in said county.

The records of S. Runwald's Parish, Colchester, give us the baptism December 31, 1610, of John, son of Sydney Harrison; and December 31, 1612, of Jeremy, son of Sydney Harrison.

Benjamin as a baptismal name had some popularity in the century following the Reformation, or, rather, the revival of interest in the Old Testament. It does not argue relationship to find a number of Harrisons in the time of King James I bearing the name of the youngest of the patriarchs. There was a Benjamin among the Harrisons of Northampton, appearing in the "Visitation of Northamptonshire" of 1619, but there is no evidence that he was the emigrant to Virginia. He was of the generation born before the year 1600, so that he would not have been under fifty when the emigrant's eldest son was born.

It would be gratuitous to assume that Benjamin mentioned in the visitation had a son of the same name who was the emigrant to Virginia. The coat-of-arms was never claimed by the Virginia

family. However, there is little argument to be made from coats-of-arms, when they first appeared in the family several generations after the emigrant, as seems to have been the case with the Virginia Harrisons, who, moreover, at different times have used different ones. There is none on the tomb of the emigrant's son, and the arms of the tomb of the grandson, Benjamin, of "Berkeley," are those of the Burwell family.

On the tombstone of Mrs. Mary (Diggs) Harrison, who died in 1744, and was the wife of the emigrant's great-grandson, is impaled gules, two bars sable between six estoiles placed three, two, one; which with the difference of azure instead of gules are those of the Harrisons who for some time past have been seated at Copford Hall, near Colechester, Essex.

It is noteworthy that there was a Benjamin among the brothers of John Harrison of St. Michael's, Wood Street, London, who, by his will dated February 19, 1638, devised lands "lately given unto me and my heirs by my grandmother situate in Lance, in the parish of Coppeford in Co. Essex," to his brother Francis and his heirs, and, in default of issue, to his said brother Benjamin, in fee. This Benjamin lived at Oldham and Ipswich, Suffolk, and had a son of the same name, mentioned in the will of Judith Harrison in 1638, and of Robert Harrison in 1641, but I do not suppose the son old enough to have been Clerk of the Virginia Council, about 1630, and perhaps both Benjamins are accounted for in the grant of letters of administration on the estate of persons of the name, one of Ipswich, on October 18, 1665, to his relict Susan, and the other "lately in parts beyond the seas, bachelor," on September 26, 1682, to Thomas Younger, a creditor. The only Benjamin mentioned in the Harrison wills of Essex was the son of George, by his wife Emma, Emma having died in, or before 1616, as she was then spoken of as deceased by her mother Susan, who had also married a Harrison. This Benjamin survived the emigrant four years, being appointed in 1653 supervisor of the will of a brother, George, and may have been the Benjamin Harrison of St. Sepulchre's, London, on whose estate letters of administration were granted on April 29, 1663, to his relict Elizabeth.

Perhaps it is better that a family so associated with the history of this country—even in its early existence as a group of colonies, each generation holding a respectable position in the government



of the largest—should look to no other country as the field of any of its greatness, in fact, that its standing in the Old World should not be precisely known.

It is not certain that even the name of the emigrant's father would have been ascertained, if all the Harrison wills of the seventeenth century in the British Isles could have been examined. There were, except in the days of the Commonwealth, a great number of probate courts, acting under the respective archbishops, archdeacons, etc., even in some localities under borough authority. I have had such wills examined as my supposed clues called for, including all those of the name during certain periods in the Prerogative courts of Canterbury, and in those courts usually acting for London, Middlesex, Essex, Kent, Suffolk, Lincolnshire, Staffordshire, and Yorkshire, and can assert nothing. To have been employed as Clerk of the Virginia Council indicates that Harrison, the emigrant, had education and ability, and the sooner this happened after his arrival, the more likely that he had some early acquaintance with important persons in the colony or belonging to the company.

A clerk was appointed by the Governor or Council on the death or absence of the Secretary of the Colony. On June 11, 1621, the Virginia Company removed John Pory from the Secretaryship, and elected Christopher Davison, a brother of Francis Davison, the poet, and a son of a Secretary of State under Queen Elizabeth (see Neill's *Virginia Carolorum*). Davison died, and in 1624 Edward Sharpless was made clerk. He had not served much more than a year when he was removed, and his ears cut off, for disclosing public documents. On March 4, 1625-6, William Claiborne was commissioned secretary by the King. Claiborne was not in the Province when, about January, 1629 or '30, Governor Harvey arrived, bearing a commission, dated March 22, 1627 or '28, which also reappointed Claiborne as secretary.

Before Harvey's departure from England, a number of planters from the Somers Islands (now Bermudas) united in a petition, presented to Parliament on June 4, 1628, setting forth that most of them had lived there since the infancy of the plantation, i. e., for over six years, had lately brought to England their small means in tobacco, which had lain in the customs house four months under a higher duty than it would yield, and they were in great necessity,

some have been arrested for their board, and praying to have their tobacco by bills of store for the present year. There was a Ben Harrison joining in this petition; but, as all the names appended are in one handwriting, his signature cannot be compared with that of the Clerk of the Virginia Council of that name. On the tobacco being released at a smaller duty, this Somers Islander may have transported himself to Virginia, a colony closely connected with the other. Nobody else appearing in the records as clerk, he may have been employed as such as soon as William Claiborne left the colony, or he may have arrived with Harvey, and, the Secretary not being there, had been made clerk at the new Governor's suggestion. The influence of Capt. John Harrison, the agent to Sallee, would be an explanation, if indeed he was a relative. Harvey was a military character, and bore, like John Harrison, the title of "Captain," receiving knighthood on being appointed Governor. They probably met before Harvey sailed, which was subsequent to August 13, 1629; for Harrison made a petition on September 20. The time of Benjamin Harrison's appointment is calculated from the statement that he served several years.

On March 15, 1633 or '34, he certified to the copy of Abraham Piersey's will, signing himself "Ben Harrison, Clee. Con." In December, 1634, Richard Kemp, duly commissioned secretary, arrived. There are no wills on record in the Bermudas prior to 1660. There is none of any Benjamin Harrison afterwards.

The earliest acquisition of land in Virginia by the emigrant was by deed from John Davis, of Kiskiake, dated July 9, in ninth year of King Charles I, for 200 acres on Warrosquisake Creek, which, in a patent for it dated July 7, 1635, was said to be in the tenure of Thomas Jordan. Other patents followed, but "Berkeley" and "Brandon," the celebrated seats of the family on the James River, were acquired by later generations: "Brandon," as far as I can tell, by the emigrant's son; "Berkeley," by the first Harrison, styled "of Berkeley" in the chart, who may have inherited it through his maternal line. The operation of a mill probably made the emigrant's son a richer man than if he had been a mere planter.

Benjamin of "Berkeley" was rich, independently of his father, in whose lifetime he died, possessed of large tracts of land.

The first Harrison appears to have left but two children surviving him: Benjamin and Peter, both by his wife Mary, who

afterwards married Benjamin Sidway, and as in a patent, dated October 9, 1649, it is recited that 500 acres granted to Benjamin Harrison, deceased, on March 21, 1643, were due to Benjamin, Jr., as "his son and heir," we conclude, the law of primogeniture being in force, that Benjamin<sup>2</sup> was the eldest son, and that the property belonging to Peter in his minority was not inherited, but devised to him, probably by his father, whose will has not been found. On January 16, 1652, Benjamin Sidway, by order of the Court, conveyed certain land belonging to "Peter Harrison, orphan of Benjamin Harrison." In a patent dated 1655, quoted by "The Critic," published in Richmond, certain land is said to adjoin that of "Peter Harrison, son of Benjamin Harrison, deceased, and son-in-law of Captain Sidney," the last word being doubtless "Sidway."

Peter Harrison appeared to have died without issue, before middle age, as he was not mentioned in the will of his mother, Mary Sidway, dated March 1, 1687 or '88. It gives as follows:

"Item. I give and bequeath unto my Grand Daughter, Hannah Harrison, the horse colt that sucks on the black mare.

"Item. I give and bequeath unto John Kersey, one yearling hepher. And for the rest of my estate my will is after my just debts paid that it be equally divided between my two sons, Benjamin Harrison, and Thomas Sidway, whom I do make my executors, to see this my will performed."

The will was witnessed by Lyddeia Norwood and Sam'l Alsebrook, who proved it on May 29, 1688.

Thomas Sidway, half brother of Harrison, appears to have died childless. His will, dated January 16, 1694, probated December 3, 1695, gives all his land and personal property to his wife Jeane, for life, and at her death to William Stringer and his heirs. The wife was named as executrix, and the witnesses were Benjamin Harrison and Sarah Pedington. Harrison also left something to William Stringer, if he came to this country, meaning probably, that he had gone to England. So it is evident that he was nearly related to or connected with Sidway's and Harrison's mother. He appears to have been the William Stringer, of Charles City County, who, January 1, 1682, made Elias Osborne his attorney in the law suits between him and Wm. Piekerill and Thomas Hayard, of Surry County. The witnesses to the letter of attorney were Paul Williams, John Harrison and George Jennings.

## SECOND GENERATION.

II. Honorable Benjamin Harrison<sup>2</sup> (Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), of Surry, b. in Southwark Parish, Surry Co., Va., September 20, 1645, d. January 30, 1712-13. He was sent to England as a commissioner from the Colony, against Commissary Blair, member of the Council of the Province from 1699. Married Hannah ———, who was born February 13, 1651-52; d. February 16, 1698-99. They were buried at the Chapel, near Cabin Point, where their tombstones were still to be seen in 1869.

The following is the epitaph on his tombstone:

Here lyeth the body of the Honorable Benjamin Harrison, Esq., who did justice, loved mercy, and walked humbly with God,—was always loyal to his Prince, and a great benefactor to his country.

The tombstone of Benjamin Harrison, of Surry, the councillor, and Hannah, his wife, gives the date of her birth and death, but not her parentage, and the destruction of so many of the public records and the incompleteness of family records prevent our discovering this. The late William Byrd Harrison, of "Upper Brandon," was of the opinion that she was a Churchill, but there is nothing to confirm this, and it may have been derived from the marriage of her granddaughter, Hannah, with Mr. Churchill.

Benjamin Harrison, the councillor, and Hannah, his wife, had issue:

- I. Sarah Harrison<sup>3</sup>, of whose birth the date on the tombstone at Jamestown has been printed both 1670 and 1678, the latter being clearly wrong, as Hannah was born that year. If 1670 be correct, it shows that all the children, except perhaps Mrs. Edwards, but probably including her, were by wife Hannah, as Sarah is declared to have been, the tombstone saying:

"She was daughter of Col. Benjamin and Mrs. Hannah Harrison, of Surry. Born, August 14th, 1670; died May ye 5, 1713, exceedingly beloved and lamented. Sarah married Rev. James Blair, D. D., minister of Jamestown Parish, Commissary of the Bishop of London for Virginia, and President of William and Mary College, who survived her thirty years."

- II. Benjamin Harrison<sup>3</sup>, ancestor of the Presidents, b. about 1673; d. 1710.
- III. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>3</sup>, b. August 8, 1677; d. November 30, 1727.
- IV. Hannah Harrison<sup>3</sup>, b. December 15, 1678; d. April 4, 1731.
- V. Henry Harrison<sup>3</sup>, b. about 1692 or '93; d. September 24, 1732, in the 40th year of his age, according to his tombstone at Cabin Point. Married April 1, 1708, Elizabeth Smith, daughter of Captain John Smith, of Preston, and Mary Warner, b. May 25, 1690. (See Smith, Volume IV, Chapter II.)



REV. JAMES BLAIR, A. M., D. D.

Henry Harrison's will, dated September 11, 1732, recited an agreement of October 27, 1732, left his plantation to his wife, Elizabeth, for life, and then to his nephew, Benjamin Harrison, of Berkeley.\*

I give the following note from the Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. IV, No. 2, October, 1898:

James Blair, D. D., educated at Edinburgh, came to Virginia in 1865; appointed commissary of the Bishop of London, and ex-

---

\*It tends to confirm the regicide tradition that the descendants of John and Lucy Grymes have a tradition (sec Meade) that their ancestor, whose name apparently was not Grymes, was Lieutenant-General Thomas ———, of Cromwell's army. It is, of course, possible that Hannah, wife of Harrison the Councillor, was daughter of Harrison the regicide.



officio member of the Council in 1690; was the father of William and Mary College, and its first president; married the daughter of Hon. Benjamin Harrison, of "Wakefield," Surry County, and died in 1743, having been a minister for fifty-eight, commissary and councillor fifty-four, and President of the College, fifty years.

His brother, Archibald Blair, M. D., also came to Virginia; was member of the House of Burgesses, for Jamestown, in 1718, and for James City County in 1723; and dying in 1736, left issue:

- I. John Blair<sup>2</sup>, b. 1686, d. November 1771; member of the House of Burgesses; auditor, member, and president of the Council, and acting Governor in 1768. Married Mary, daughter of Rev. John Monro.
  - II. Harrison Blair<sup>2</sup>. Married D. George Gilmer.
  - III. Elizabeth Blair<sup>2</sup>. Married, 1728, Col. John Bolling, of "Cobbs," Henrico, now Chesterfield.
2. John and Mary (Monro) Blair had issue:
- I. John Blair<sup>3</sup>, Burgess 1769, etc., Chief Justice of the General Court, Judge of the High Court of Chancery, and of the Court of Appeals of Virginia, member of the Philadelphia Convention of 1787, and Justice of the U. S. Supreme Court; d. August 31, 1800, leaving no children who survived him.
  - II. James Blair<sup>3</sup>, M. D. Married, 1771, Kitty Eustace of New York, and d. December, 1772.
  - III. Sarah Blair<sup>3</sup>. Married Colonel Wilson Cary, of "Ceeleys," Warwick County. (Cary Family, Chapter IV.)
  - IV. Ann Blair<sup>3</sup>. Married Colonel John Banister, of Battersea, Dinwiddie County, Va.
  - V. Christian Blair<sup>3</sup>, b. 1727, d. January 2, 1784. Married Col. Armistead Burwell, of Stoneland, Mecklenburg Co.
  - VI. Elizabeth Blair<sup>3</sup>. Married, 1768, Captain William Thompson, of the British Navy.

### THIRD GENERATION.

III. Benjamin Harrison<sup>3</sup> (Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Benjamin Harrison the Councillor and Hannah, his wife, b. 1673 (about), d. April 10, 1710, aged 37. Married Elizabeth Burwell, daughter of Lewis Burwell of Gloucester County, Va. Elizabeth d. 1734, in her 57th year. Benjamin Harrison was an eminent law-



yer and treasurer and speaker of the House of Burgesses. He was attorney general from 1699-1702; treasurer and speaker of the House of Burgesses in 1705. There is recorded in the Council journal an order giving him access to the records. He settled at Berkeley, Charles City County, Va., and started to write a history of the Colony, when he died. A monument was erected to his memory at the public expense, and we learn from his tombstone at Westover:

"Hic Situs est in Spem Ressurrectionis. Benjamin de Berkeley, Benjamin Harrison de Surry Filius Natu Maximus, uxorem Duxit Elizabetham Ludoviei Burwell. Gloucestriensis Filiam & qua Filium Reliquit unieum Benjamin et unieam Filiam Elizabetham, Obijit Apr. X. Anno Dom. M. D. C. C. X. Etam XXXVII. . ."

Benjamin Harrison and Elizabeth Burwell, his wife, had issue:

I. Benjamin Harrison<sup>4</sup>. Married Anne Carter.

II. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>4</sup>.

III. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>3</sup> (Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Benjamin Harrison, the Councillor, and Hannah, his wife. Nathaniel Harrison, of Wakefield, was Burgess 1706; naval officer of the lower James River, 1713; appointed to the Council, 1713; County Lieutenant of Surry and Prince George Counties, 1715. Afterwards an Auditor General. His tombstone, according to the Philadelphia "Evening Telegraph," of March 13, 1890, was found on the north side of the James River Road, near Sunken Meadow, Surry County, Va., with the following inscription:

"Here lieth the body of the Hon. Nathaniel Harrison, Esq., son of the Hon. Benjamin Harrison, Esq. He was born in this parish, the 8th day of August, 1677, departed this life the 30th day of November, 1727, appointed to succeed his father, resided at Wakefield, will dated Dec. 15, 1726. Married Mary Young, née Cary, supposed to have been Mary, born in 1678, daughter of John Cary, merchant of London, by his wife Jane, daughter of John Flood, of Surry County, Va."

Nathaniel Harrison and Mary Young, his wife, had issue:

I. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>4</sup>, of "Brandon." Married, first (Aug. 23, 1739), Mary, daughter of Coles Diggs; and, second, Lucy, widow of Henry Fitzhugh (Fitzhugh, Chapter XVI); daughter of Robert Carter, of Corotoman. (Carter, Chapter VII.)

- II. Benjamin Harrison<sup>4</sup>, of Wakefield, d. 1758. Married August 23, 1739, Susannah, daughter of Cole Digges.
- III. Hannah Harrison<sup>4</sup>. Married Armistead Churchill.
- IV. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>4</sup>. Married before 1733, John Cargill, of Surry County.
- V. Sarah Harrison<sup>4</sup>. Married before 1733, James Bradle, of Surry County.
- VI. Anne Harrison<sup>4</sup>. Married, August 9, 1739, Edward Digges, brother of her brother Nathaniel's first wife, and of her brother Benjamin's wife.
- VII. Mary Harrison<sup>4</sup>. Married James Gordon. (See Hayden's Virginia Genealogies.)

III. Hannah Harrison<sup>3</sup> (Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Benjamin Harrison, the Counsellor, and Hannah, his wife, b. at Indian Fields in the said parish, the 15th day of December, 1678; d. April 4, 1731. Married, November 11, 1697, Philip Ludwell, b. at Carter's Creek, February 4, 1672; member of Virginia Council; d. January 11, 1726-7, son of Philip Ludwell—Governor of Carolina, and afterwards member of the Virginia Council—his wife Luey, née Higginson. Hannah Harrison and Philip Ludwell had issue:

- I. Luey Ludwell<sup>4</sup>, b. Nov. 2, 1698; d. Nov. 2, 1748. Married John Grymes, Counsellor.
- II. Hannah Ludwell<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 5, 1701; d. Jan. 25, 1749-50. Married Thomas Lee, President of the Virginia Council, commissioned Governor, but died before the commission arrived, Nov. 14, 1750. (Lee Family, Chapter VIII.)
- III. Sarah Ludwell<sup>4</sup>, b. July 29, 1704; d. Jan. 6, 1705.
- IV. Philip Ludwell<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 16, 1705-6; d. March 9, 1705-6.
- V. Philip Ludwell<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 28, 1716; d. March 25, 1767. Married Frances Grymes. Issue:
  - I. Hannah Philippa Ludwell<sup>5</sup>. Married William Lee.
  - II. Luey Ludwell<sup>5</sup>. Married John Paradise. Issue:
    - I. Daughter Paradise<sup>6</sup>. Married Count Barzizi, a Venetian.

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

IV. Benjamin Harrison<sup>4</sup> (Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), of Berkeley, son of Benjamin Harrison and Elizabeth Burwell, his

wife, was Sheriff of Charles City County in 1728; many years Burgess for Charles City; died while a member of the House of Burgesses of Virginia 1744. Married (about 1722) Anne Carter, daughter of Robert Carter (King), of Corotoman. (Carter, Chapter VII.) Issue:

- I. Anne Harrison<sup>6</sup>, 1735. Married William Randolph, of Wilton, b. 1710. Issue:
  - I. Peter Randolph<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Peyton Randolph<sup>6</sup>. Married his first cousin, Lucy, daughter of Benjamin Harrison, the signer of the Declaration of Independence.
  - III. Ann Randolph<sup>6</sup>, b. 1740. Married (1760) Benjamin Harrison, of Brandon. No issue.
  - IV. Elizabeth Randolph<sup>6</sup>, b. 1742. Married (1762) Philip Grymes.
  - V. Lucy Randolph<sup>6</sup>, b. 1744. Married (1764) Lewis Burwell.
  - II. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>5</sup>. Married Peyton Randolph, President of the first Continental Congress. (Randolph, Chapter V.)
  - III. Benjamin Harrison<sup>5</sup>, b. 1726, signer of the Declaration of Independence.
  - IV. Carter Henry Harrison<sup>5</sup>, b. after 1726, at Clifton. Married Susanna, daughter of Isham Randolph, of Dungenness.
  - V. Henry Randolph<sup>5</sup>, d. in infancy.
  - VI. Charles Harrison<sup>5</sup>, d. 1796.
  - VII. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>5</sup>.
  - VIII. Henry Harrison<sup>5</sup>.
  - IX. Robert Harrison<sup>5</sup>, d. before 1771.

(Records assert that Benjamin Harrison and two daughters were killed by the same flash of lightning.)

IV. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>4</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Nathaniel Harrison and Mary Young, née Cary, his wife, of Brandon. Married, first (August 23, 1739), Mary, d. 1744, daughter of Cole Digges; and married, second, Lucy, née Carter, daughter of King Carter and widow of Henry Fitzhugh. Mary Harrison, daughter of the Honorable Cole Digges, President of

His Majesty's Council, and wife of Nathaniel Harrison of Prince George Co., Va., d. November 12, 1744, in her twenty-seventh year. She so discharged the several duties of a wife, mother, and daughter and neighbor, that her relations and acquaintances might justly esteem their loss insupportable, were it not chastened with the remembrance that every virtue which adds weight to their loss augments her rewards. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>4</sup>, of Brandon, was long a member of the Colonial Council and appointed to the State Council, 1776, on the resignation of his son.

Issue by first wife:

I. Benjamin Harrison<sup>5</sup>, of Brandon.

II. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>5</sup>. Married John Thornton.

IV. Benjamin Harrison<sup>4</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Nathaniel Harrison and Mary Young, née Cary, his wife, of Wakefield, in Surry Co., Va.; d. 1758. Married (August 23, 1739) Susannah, daughter of the Honorable Coles Digges, Esq.

William and Mary College Quarterly, Vol. VII, No. I, July, 1898, pp. 39, 40, gives the following issue:

- I. Nov. 26, 1740, Elizabeth Harrison was born. Baptised by the Rev. Mr. Richard Hewit. Sept. 8, 1748, she departed this life in the 8th year of her age.
- II. Oct. 22, 1742, Mary Harrison was born. Baptised by Rev. John Smith. Sept. 2, 1747, she departed this life in the 5th year of her age.
- III. Aug. 24, 1744, Nathaniel Harrison was born. Baptised by Rev. Mr. John Camm.
- IV. Dec. 23, 1745, Susannah Harrison was born. Baptised by Rev. Mr. William Fife.
- V. Aug. 23, 1747, Benjamin Harrison was born. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Henry Eilbeek.
- VI. Sept. 1, 1749, Hannah Harrison was born. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Henry Eilbeek.
- VII. Aug. 24, 1751. Eliza Digges Harrison was born on a Saturday, about half an hour after eleven in the evening, increase of the moon. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Eilbeek. Nov. 8, 1751, she departed this life, being two months and 15 days old. (Note: The above before the style was altered.)

- VIII. Feb. 11, 1753. Peter Cole Harrison was born about three o'clock in the morning, increase of the moon. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Richard Hopkins.
- IX. Dec. 31, 1754. Ludwell Harrison<sup>5</sup> was born on a Tuesday, about half an hour after eleven in the evening, decrease of the moon. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Alexander Finney.
- June 11, 1757, Benjamin Harrison departed this life, being 10 years of age on the 3rd of September, ensuing.

William Goosley, married Ludwell<sup>2</sup>, daughter of Benjamin Harrison, Esq., of Wakefield, on January 16, 1773, and had issue:

- I. Martha Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. Nov. 11, 1773. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Andrews; d. June 16, 1774.
- II. Elizabeth Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. May 14, 1776. Baptised by Rev. Mr. White, of King William Co., Va.
- III. Anne Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 23, 1778; d. June 20, 1779. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Robert Andrews.
- IV. George Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. May 5, 1780. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Andrews.
- V. Lucy Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. March 30, 1782. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Carter, of King and Queen Co.
- VI. Frances Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 29, 1783. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Andrews.
- VII. William Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. April 2, 1786. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Sam Shield.
- VIII. Benjamin Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 23, 1788. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Jno. Braeken; d. Feb. 25, 1789.
- IX. Sarah Cary Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 5, 1790. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Shield.
- X. Anne Harrison Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 15, 1794. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Henderson.
- XI. Cary Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 21, 1797. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Henderson; d. March following.
- XII. Susan Goosley<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 29, 1799. Baptised by Rev. Mr. Braeken.

(See Goosley and Cary Family, Volume I, and Chapter IV of this volume.)

August 22 my dear son George Goosley was lost on his way to Charleston, 1806. December 31, 1809, my beloved husband, William Goosley, of York Co., Va., died.

Richmond, Va., January 1st, 1870: Presented to James Brown McCaw, M. D., oldest son of Anne Ludwell Brown, who married Dr. Wm. R. McCaw, oldest grandson of Frances Goosley, wife of James Brown, Jr., by his great-aunt, Susan Campbell, surviving child of Ludwell Harrison.

Entries in an old Bible printed by Thomas Basket and now owned by Dr. James B. McCaw, of Richmond:

Doctor James Brown McCaw's daughter, Anna Patteson McCaw, married Dr. James D. Moncure. (See Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.)

Dr. McCaw's youngest daughter, Mary, married Dabney H. Maury, of Peoria, Ill.

Granddaughters live in Richmond and Norfolk, Va.

IV. Hannah Harrison<sup>4</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Nathaniel Harrison and Mary Young, née Cary, his wife. (See will of Col. Nathaniel Harrison, proved in Surry County, February 2, 1729.) Married Armistead Churchill, b. at Rosegill (the home of the Wormeleys on the Rappahannock), July 25, 1704, and baptized by Rev. Mr. Yates on August 1 following; was justice of the peace, colonel of the militia, and collector for Rappahannock River. Armistead Churchill<sup>2</sup> was son of William Churchill and Elizabeth Armistead, daughter of Col. John Armistead, of Gloucester, and widow of Ralph Wormeley, Secretary of the Colony, whose will is dated February 2, 1700, and second, October 5, 1703.

Armistead Churchill and Hannah Harrison, his wife, had issue:

- I. William Churchill<sup>5</sup>, of "Wilton," on the Pianketank.
- II. John Churchill<sup>5</sup>, b. Dec. 23, 1728.
- III. Nathaniel Churchill<sup>5</sup>, b. June 16, 1730; d. Dec. 21, 1730.
- IV. Henry Churchill<sup>5</sup>, b. Nov. 15, 1731; d. of pleurisy, Dec. 24, 1760.
- V. Armistead Churchill<sup>5</sup>, b. Nov. 25, 1733; removed to Kentucky in 1787; grandfather of Samuel B. Churchill, Secretary of the State of Kentucky. (See William and Mary College Quarterlies, Vol. VIII, p. 200; Vol. IX, pp. 40, 246; Vol. X, p. 39.)



- VI. Benjamin Churchill<sup>5</sup>, who made a deed to his brother William in 1772, sealed with the Churchill coat-of-arms. (Original at Middlesex Courthouse.)
- VII. Mary Churehill<sup>6</sup>. Married (1749) John Armistead, and had issue:
  - I. Churchill Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married (1775) Betsy Boswell. (Armistead Family, Chapter XIX.)
- VIII. Lucy Churehill<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 1737 or '38. Married (Dec. 1756) Col. John Gordon, of Urbanna, younger brother of Col. James Gordon, one of the most cultivated men of his times.
- IX. Priscilla Churehill<sup>6</sup>. Married, first (1759), Richard Spann; second (Feb. 1765), Williamson Ball.
- X. Judith Churchill<sup>6</sup>, b. Nov. 21, 1743. Married, first (Nov. 11, 1769), Churchill Jones; second, John Blackburn.
- XI. Hannah Churehill<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 4, 1748.
- XII. Betty Churchill<sup>6</sup>, b. 1751. Married Major William Jones, of Spottsylvania, of the "Wilderness." Issue:
  - I. Mrs. Judge Coalter, of Chatham. Major Jones married, second, Lueinda Gordon. Issue: Mrs. Laey.

The deposition of Betty Jones, aged 62, was taken 1813, at the house of William Jones, of Spottsylvania, in Chancery suit, "Carter B. Berkeley, exor., of Edmund Berkeley vs. Roger Blackburn, exor., of Churehill Blackburn." In this suit there is a bond of Churehill Blackburn, as sheriff of King William County, with Pauline Blackburn as security.

The *Virginia Gazette*, for September 21, 1776, has a notice of the death of Mrs. Hannah Churehill, of Bushy Park, in Middlesex County, relict of Armistead Churchill, Esq., in the 70th year of her age. The will of Hannah Churehill, Jr., was proved in Middlesex, May 23, 1774, and she leaves legacies to Sarah Gordon and James Gordon, daughter and son of John and Luey Gordon, and to Churehill Jones, of Fauquier Co., Va. Witnesses, William Jones and R. Layton.

In the William and Mary College Quarterly, Vol. VIII, No. 1, July, 1899, p. 49, we have the following will of Col. Armistead Churehill, as recorded at the Courthouse:

## WILL OF ARMISTEAD CHURCHILL.

In the name of God, Amen. I, Armistead Churchill, of the County of Middlesex, in the Colony of Virginia, being in perfect mind and understanding, do make this my last will and testament. In the first place, I desire all my just debts may be paid by my executors hereafter named, that is, my beloved sons, William Churchill, John Churchill, Henry Churchill, and Armistead Churchill, and if my debts can be paid without selling my tract of land in Prince William County, my will and desire is that it should be divided as follows:

My son John Churchill to have 2,000 acres. My son Armistead to have 2,000 acres. My son Benjamin to have 2,000 acres. My son Henry Churchill to have 400 acres, if he should choose to live there, and the remainder of the tract to be equally divided between my daughters, that is to say, Hannah, Lucy, Priscilla, Judith, and Betty. In testimony hereof I have set my hand and affixed my seal this twenty-first day of August, 1758. (Proved August, 1763.)

William and Mary College Quarterly, Vol. VII, No. 3, January, 1899, p. 187, has the following of the will of William Churchill, father of Armistead Churchill:

The will of William Churchill<sup>1</sup> bears date November 18, 1710, and it was proved March 10, 1710 or '11, in Middlesex County. He required his burial to be "without any great doings, save a sermon to admonish the living upon the words, 'Set thine house in order, for thou shalt dye and not live,' in Second Kings, 20 chapter, and the latter part of the first verse." He gave £100 sterling to the vestry of Christ Church Parish, the interest of which was to be given to the minister "for preaching four quarterly sermons against the four reigning vices of atheism and irreligion, swearing and cursing, fornication and adultery, and drunkenness," and the interest of £25 sterling bestowed on the clerk for attending to said sermons. To the poor of the parish of Christ Church, in London, he gave £10 sterling, and the same amount to the poor of North Aston, in Oxfordshire the place of his nativity. To his wife, Elizabeth, he gave a gold watch and £1,000 sterling, and her part of his negroes for life, and after his death to his son Armistead; he gave her besides, "my new calash I expect out of England." To his daughter, Priscilla, £1,000 sterling, and to his daughter, Elizabeth, £100, leaving his wife to advance her fortune out of her own. To Armistead Churchill, his son and heir, he gave the bulk of his estate in Virginia and England and made executors of his wife, his son and daughters, his kinsmen Nicholas and John Goodwin, of London, his "son-in-law" (step-son) Ralph Wormeley, and overseers of his will his brothers, Mr. William Armistead and Mr. Harry Armistead and friends, Mr. Nathaniel Burwell, Mr. John Holloway and Mr. John Clayton.

IV. Mary Harrison<sup>4</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Nathaniel Harrison and Mary Young, née Cary, his

wife, b. 1731; d. May 13, 1771, aged 40. Married (November 12, 1748) Col. James Gordon, at Col. Armistead Churchill's. Col. Gordon, of Lancaster County, b. Neury, Ireland, 1714; d. Lancaster County, Va., June 2, 1768. (Hayden's Va. Genealogies, pp. 248-9.)

Of Mary Harrison one of her grandsons in 1848 gave the following description. It was written from the High Church Presbyterian standpoint:

"Our grandmother, in the early period of her marriage, was of the High Church of England, and very bigotted—so much so that she refused to hear Mr. Davies preach, although he was a favorite with her husband, Colonel Gordon. Being visited, however, with a protracted illness, a sermon was preached in their house by this distinguished minister, which she heard from her bed, our grandfather being represented as setting open the door of an adjoining room to afford this opportunity. This sermon was blessed to her awakening and conversion. She lived an exemplary Christian and good Presbyterian, and so died."

Col. James Gordon, from whose Bible the quotations are given, came to Virginia, from Neury, County Down, Ireland, with his brother, John, 1738, and located in Lancaster County. The Gordon crest, still preserved on Col. Gordon's silver, is that of the Gordons of Knoekespoek, Hallhead and Esslemont, County Aberdeen, Scotland, i. e., "a stag's head erased proper." Motto: "Bydand." This is the crest of the ancient Gordons of Huntly.

It is said of the brothers James and John, who came to Virginia:

"They were enterprising and successful merchants, and became wealthy and influential. The brothers were closely connected through life. James, however, was the most active in religious matters. A man of enterprise and of popular manners, habits of hospitality, of extensive landed and personal property, by education and principle a Presbyterian, he stood firm in his religious opinions and practice, and received the reward of his faith and devotion. A man of system, he was in the habit of keeping a journal, in which he made daily entries in a brief manner of his domestic concerns, his mercantile affairs, his farming operations, and events of interest in the neighborhood."

Col. James Gordon and Mary Harrison, his wife, had issue:

- I. Col. James Gordon<sup>5</sup>. Married (June 30, 1774) Anne Payne, of Goochland.
- II. Mary Gordon<sup>5</sup>, b. July, 1752; d. ——. Married James Waddell.
- III. Hannah Gordon<sup>5</sup>, b. Jan. 29, 1754; d. Oct. 18, 1757.
- IV. Elinor Gordon<sup>5</sup>, b. Nov. 27, 1755; d. July 17, 1756.
- V. John Gordon<sup>5</sup>, b. April 11, 1757; d. Aug. 17, 1757.
- VI. Elizabeth Gordon<sup>5</sup>, b. Aug. 24, 1758. Married (Aug. 13, 1777, her cousin) James Gordon, eldest child of John and Lucy (Churchill) Gordon.
- VII. Daughter Gordon<sup>5</sup>, b. and d. Sept. 9, 1760.
- VIII. Sarah Gordon<sup>5</sup>, b. May 6, 1762; d. Aug. 1, 1762.
- IX. Nathaniel Gordon<sup>5</sup>, b. Aug. 28, 1763; d. Feb. 28, 1820. Married (Oct. 20, 1785, his first cousin) Mary Gordon, b. March 4, 1768; d. June 29, 1808.
- X. John Gordon<sup>5</sup>, b. Oct. 9, 1765; d. May 7, 1842. Married (Nov. 1, 1797) Betty Ball.

Col. James Gordon married, first, Milicent Conway, by whom he had four children. (See Hayden.)

#### FIFTH GENERATION.

V. Benjamin Harrison<sup>5</sup> (Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Benjamin Harrison and Anne Carter, his wife, b. 1726; resided at Berkeley; d. April 24, 1791. Married Elizabeth Bassett, b. December 13, 1730, daughter of William Bassett<sup>3</sup>, of Eltham, and Elizabeth Churchill; William Bassett<sup>3</sup> was son of William Bassett<sup>2</sup>, b. 1670; d. Oct. 11, 1723, member of the House of Burgesses and Council. Married (November 28, 1693) Joanna, daughter of Lewis Burwell, of Carter's Creek, also a member of the Council, son of William Bassett, of Eltham, from County Southampton. Married Bridget Cary, in England. He was captain in British army of Dunkirk; settled in Blessland Parish, New Kent County, Va.; d. 1671. Bridget was daughter of Miles Cary and Anne Taylor, who was son of John Cary, of Bristol, and Alice Hobson.

Benjamin Harrison<sup>5</sup> was a conspicuous patriot of the Revolution. When a very young man, he honorably represented his

native district in the House of Burgesses, and on the 14th of November, 1764, was one of its distinguished members chosen to prepare an address to the King, a memorial to the Lords, and a remonstrance to the House of Commons, in opposition to the Stamp Act. He was a delegate from Virginia to the first Continental Congress, which assembled at Philadelphia, September 1, 1774, when he had the gratification of seeing his brother-in-law, Peyton Randolph, placed in the Presidential chair.

At the Congress of the following year, 1775, after the death of Mr. Randolph, it was the wish of nearly all the southern members, that Mr. Harrison should succeed him in the presidency, but as the patriotic John Hancock of Massachusetts had likewise been nominated, Mr. Harrison, to avoid any sectional jealousy or unkindness of feeling between the northern and southern delegates at so momentous a crisis, and with a noble self-denial, generously relinquished his own claims, and insisted on the election of Mr. Hancock, who accordingly had the honor of being unanimously chosen to that high office. Mr. Harrison still, however, continued one of the most active and influential members of the Continental Congress. On June 10, 1776, as chairman of the committee of the whole house, he introduced the resolution which declared the independence of the colonies, and on the ever-memorable Fourth of July he reported the more formal Declaration of Independence, to which celebrated document his signature is annexed. The Legislature of Virginia returned Mr. Harrison four times as a delegate to Congress. On the expiration of his last term of congressional service he was immediately elected to the House of Burgesses from his own county, and was at once chosen Speaker of that body, an office which he held uninterruptedly until the year 1782, when he was elected Governor of Virginia and became one of the most popular officers that ever filled the executive chair.

Benjamin Harrison<sup>5</sup> and Elizabeth Bassett, his wife, had issue:

- I. Benjamin Harrison<sup>6</sup>, father of the late Benjamin Harrison, of Berkeley.
- II. Carter Benjamin Harrison<sup>6</sup>, sometime member of Congress.
- III. William Henry Harrison<sup>6</sup>, President of the United States.

IV. Lucy Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married, first, Peyton Randolph; second, Anthony Singleton.

V. Ann Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married David Coupland.

VI. Sarah Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married John Menge, of James River (Weyanoke).

V. Carter Henry Harrison<sup>5</sup> (Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Benjamin Harrison<sup>4</sup> and Anne Carter, his wife, b. after August 22, 1726, the date of Robert Carter's will, which left to the second son of Benjamin and Anne (testator's daughter) Harrison, to be baptized Carter, entailed male, and in default to the third son, entailed male, and in default to the eldest son, entailed male, and in default to said Anne's heirs, females, and in default of her issue, male and female, then to testator's son Robert Carter. Henry agreed to sell lands entailed by Robert Carter's will, and an act of the Assembly was passed in 1761, docking the entail. Resided at "Clifton," Cumberland Co., Va., and was member of the Committee of Safety and of the House of Delegates. Married (1777) Susannah Randolph, b. 1757, daughter of Isham Randolph, of Dungenness. (Randolph Family, Chapter V.)

Carter Henry Harrison and Susannah Randolph, his wife, had issue:

I. Robert Harrison<sup>a</sup>; removed to Kentucky.

II. Anne Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married Thomas Drew.

III. Peyton Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married Elizabeth Barclay; removed to Kentucky.

IV. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married Bradley.

V. Randolph Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married Mary Randolph, daughter of Susannah and Thomas Isham Randolph.

V. Charles Harrison<sup>5</sup> (Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Benjamin Harrison, of Berkeley, and Anne Carter, his wife. Brigadier-General in the Revolutionary War; d. 1796. He is said, in the Family sketch by Charles' son-in-law, Peterson, to have been the youngest son and not quite nineteen at marriage, while the bride had just completed her sixteenth year, which would make 1761 the year of marriage. Married Mary Herbert Claiborne; d. July 25, 1775, daughter of Augustine Claiborne and Mary, née Herbert.



Gen'l Charles Harrison and Mary Claiborne, his wife, had issue:

- I. Augustine Harrison<sup>a</sup>, d. infant.
- II. Charles Harrison<sup>a</sup>, U. S. Army. Killed in a duel; unmarried.
- III. Mary Herbert Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married John Herbert Peterson.
- IV. Anne Carter Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married Matthew Maury Claiborne, her cousin.
- V. Benjamin Henry Harrison<sup>a</sup>, twin. Married Elizabeth Claiborne Butts.
- VI. Elizabeth Randolph Harrison<sup>a</sup>, twin. Married Gen'l Daniel Claiborne Butts.

V. Henry Harrison<sup>5</sup> (Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Benjamin Harrison and Anne Carter, of Sussex. He is fourth in John Herbert Peterson's list; lived at Hunting Quarter, on Nottay River; d. before October 28, 1775. Married —— daughter of Cyril Avery, and left issue:

- I. Henry Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married Polly Coeke.
- II. Elizabeth Randolph Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married Lewis Burwell, of Stoneland.
- III. Ann Carter Harrison<sup>a</sup>. Married Walter Coeke.

V. Robert Harrison<sup>5</sup> (Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Benjamin Harrison and Ann Carter, his wife, of Charles City Co., Va.; d. before 1771. Married a Miss Collier.

Issue:

- I. Collier Harrison<sup>a</sup>, d. Nov. 1809. Married, first, Christiana, née Shields, widow of Minge and formerly of R. B. Armistead; second, Beersheba Bryant.
- II. Braxton Harrison<sup>a</sup>, of Farmer's Rest; d. s. p. in 1809.

V. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>5</sup> (Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), fifth son of Benjamin Harrison and Anne Carter, his wife, b. September 30, 1742; d. December 24, 1782. Speaker of State Senate; Sheriff of Prince George County in 1779. Married, first (October 11, 1760), Mary Ruffin, b. June 5, 1739; d. September 10, 1767, daughter of Edmund Ruffin, of Prince George Co.; married, second (March 12, 1768), Anne Gilliam; d. April, 1781.

Issue by first wife:

- I. Anne Harrison<sup>6</sup>, d. 1782. Married John Short, M. D.  
Issue: One son, d. single.
- II. Lucy Harrison<sup>6</sup>, b. July 5, 1763; d. s. p. 1780. Married  
(1780) John Stith.
- III. Edmund Harrison<sup>6</sup>. Married, first, Mary Murray; second,  
Martha Wayles Skipwith.
- IV. Mary Harrison<sup>6</sup>. Married John Gilliam.

Issue by second marriage:

- I. Benjamin Harrison<sup>6</sup>. Married a widow, née Turnbull.
- II. John Harrison<sup>6</sup>, d. young.
- III. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 31, 1770; d. ——. Married  
Brown.
- IV. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>6</sup>, b. April 12, 1773, of Amelia Co.;  
d. unmarried.
- V. Sallie Carter Harrison<sup>6</sup>, twin, b. July 10, 1775; d. s. p.  
Married Donald McKenzie.
- VI. Jane Pleasants Harrison<sup>6</sup>, twin, b. July 10, 1775. Married  
John Osborne.
- VII. John Harrison<sup>6</sup>, d. young at College.
- VIII. Susannah Boyd Harrison<sup>6</sup>. Married Robert Maitland,  
of Petersburg, Va.

V. Benjamin Harrison<sup>5</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Nathaniel Harrison and Mary Digges, his first wife, of Brandon, was member of the State Council in 1776, and of the House of Delegates 1777, at the same time with Benjamin Harrison of Berkeley. He married three times: first, Anne Randolph, of Wilton; second, Elizabeth Page; third, Elizabeth Taylor, daughter of Col. Wm. Byrd, of Westover. (See Provincial Council of Pennsylvania, 1733-1776.) Issue:

- I. William Byrd Harrison<sup>6</sup>, of Upper Brandon, on the James River, Prince George Co., Va. Married, first, Mary Harrison of Clifton, Cumberland Co., Va.
- II. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>6</sup>. Married John Thornton.

V. Col. William Churchill<sup>5</sup> (Hannah Harrison<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), oldest son of Armistead Churchill and Hannah Harrison, his wife, b. February 24, 1726, was for many years elerk of Middlesex Co. He lived at a place in Middlesex on

the Pianketank, called "Wilton," opposite to "Windsor," the home of the Claytons, which was situated on the other side of the Pianketank, in Gloucester Co., Va. The house has the form of a T, being a building of two stories, with four rooms to a story. On a brick in the outside wall is cut in large figures the year of its erection—1762. In 1760 Col. Gordon noted in his diary that "Col. Churchill's house with all its contents has been destroyed by fire." This probably had reference to "Bushy Park," and "Wilton" was probably built as a result.

"Wilton House," in England, was the magnificent country seat of the Earls of Pembroke, in which was a superb collection of pictures, statuary, etc.

In King George County is recorded the marriage contract of William Churchill, "son and heir apparent of Armistead Churchill," with Betty Carter, eldest daughter of Charles Carter, of "Cleve," dated June 7, 1751. (Carter family tree has Elizabeth Carter as second daughter.) By his will Charles Carter gave each of his daughters £1,000 current money at his death in 1764.

Col. Churchill married, second Elizabeth ———, who survived him. His will was dated May 15, 1782, and was proved in Middlesex Co., April 22, 1799. In it he names son Thomas, and five daughters—Hannah, Betty Carter, Priscilla, Sarah, and Lucy Harrison. "To Sarah and Luey Harrison two negroes that came by my wife Elizabeth (second wife); if son Thomas should die without an heir, then my land shall be equally divided between the sons of my brothers John and Armistead Churchill, they paying my daughters, each of them 2,000 pounds, and if they do not choose to take the land on these terms, then if my son should die, the land must be equally divided between all my daughters, except 200 acres which I have given to my brother Ben Churchill." Makes executors of his will Edmund Berkeley, Philip Ludwell Grymes, and Ralph Wormeley, Esqrs.

Col. William Churchill and Elizabeth Carter, his first wife, had issue:

- I. Hannah Churehill<sup>e</sup>. Married (Oct. 1771) Benjamin Robinson.
- II. Betty Carter Churehill<sup>e</sup>. Married Rev. James Maury Fontaine, b. 1738. (Fontaine, Volume IV, Chapter XIII.)

III. Priscilla Churchill<sup>6</sup>.

Issue by second wife:

IV. Thomas E. Churchill<sup>6</sup>. Married Eliza Berkeley.

- V. Sarah Churchill<sup>6</sup>; d. 1799, unmarried, leaving legacies to her mother, Mrs. Elizabeth Churchill, her brother, Thomas Churchill, and half-sister, Hannah Robinson, and to her niece, Elizabeth Churchill Derby (under age), and to Mrs. Lucy Derby, her niece's mother, and John Derby, her father.

VI. Lucy Harrison Churchill<sup>6</sup>. Married John Derby. Issue:

- I. Eliza C. Derby<sup>7</sup>, b. Nov. 7, 1795.

Elizabeth Spottswood by her will dated July 11, 1782, and proved January 24, 1791, gave legacies to Sarah and Lucy Harrison Churchill and divided all her cattle between Priscilla, Sarah and Lucy Harrison Churchill, daughters of William Churchill, Esq.

V. Lucy Churchill<sup>5</sup> (Hannah Harrison<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Armistead Churchill and Hannah Harrison, his wife, b. January 1737 or '38. Married (December, 1756) Col. John Gordon, of Urbanna, younger brother of Col. James Gordon, one of the most cultivated men of his times. John Gordon came to Virginia with his brother James about 1738, and was living in Lancaster Co., January, 1759.

John Gordon and Lucy Churchill, his wife, had issue:

- I. James Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. 1759.
- II. Hannah Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. 17—.
- III. Churchill Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 10, 1761.
- IV. John Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 28, 1762; d. unmarried at great age.
- V. Sarah Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. June 21, 1764. Married Kendall Lee.
- VI. William Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 4, 1766; d. unmarried.
- VII. Mary Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. March 14, 1768; d. June 29, 1808. Married Nathaniel, son of Col. James Gordon.
- VIII. Nathaniel Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 21, 1770.
- IX. Lucy Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Nov. 21, 1771. Married James Gordon Waddell.
- X. Armistead Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. 1773. Married Clayton.
- XI. Samuel Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. 1775. Married Elizabeth Cole.
- XII. Priscilla Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. 1777. Married Edmund Edrengton.

V. Col. James Gordon<sup>5</sup> (Mary Harrison<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. James Gordon and Mary Harrison, his second wife. Sheriff of Lancaster Co., October 17, 1782, and Clerk of Lancaster Co., 1787-1794. Married (June 30, 1774) Ann, daughter of Col. John Payne, of Goochland. James is called Colonel in the marriage bond of his sister Elizabeth.

Col. James Gordon, Jr., and Ann Payne, his wife, had issue:

- I. Mary Smith Gordon<sup>6</sup>. Married (May 6, 1793, her cousin) Nathaniel Waddell.
- II. James Harrison Gordon<sup>6</sup>.
- III. John Matthews Gordon<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Samuel Baldwin Gordon<sup>6</sup>.
- V. Ann Smith Gordon<sup>6</sup>.
- VI. Addison Gordon<sup>6</sup>.
- VII. Janetta Gordon<sup>6</sup>.

V. Mary Gordon<sup>5</sup> (Mary Harrison<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Col. James Gordon and Mary Harrison, his second wife, b. July 17, 1752; d. —. Married (October 7, 1767) Rev. James Waddell, D. D., the "Blind Preacher" immortalized by Wm. Wirt in "The Spy," b. Ulster, Ireland, July, 1738; d. Virginia, September, 1805, son of Thomas and Janet Waddell. Col. Gordon records in his diary: "January 16, 1759, sent Molly and her maid Judith to school to Mr. Cuswell." April 7, 1763, "This day Mr. Waddell spoke to me about Molly."

Rev. James Waddell and Mary Gordon had issue:

- I. James Gordon Waddell<sup>6</sup>, b. 1770. Married twice.
- II. Nathaniel Waddell<sup>6</sup>. Married Mary Smith Gordon.
- III. Elizabeth Waddell<sup>6</sup>, b. Nov. 15, 1777; d. May 6, 1851. Married Rev. Wm. Calhoun, b. 1772; d. Aug. 27, 1851.
- IV. Janetta Waddell<sup>6</sup>, b. 1789; d. 1852. Married Rev. Archibald Alexander, D. D., Princeton, N. J.
- V. Anne Harrison Waddell<sup>6</sup>, b. 1783; d. 1853.
- VI. Dr. Addison Waddell<sup>6</sup>, b. April 19, 1785; d. June 18, 1855. Married twice.
- VII. Sallie Waddell<sup>6</sup>, b. 1789; d. 1865.
- VIII. Lyttleton Waddell<sup>6</sup>, b. 1790; d. 1869. Married Elizabeth Edmondson.

V. Nathaniel Gordon<sup>5</sup> (Mary Harrison<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. James Gordon and Mary Harrison, his wife, b. August 28, 1763, baptized by Rev. James Waddell, September 13, 1763; d. February 28, 1820. Married (October 20, 1785, his first cousin) Mary, eighth child of John and Lucy (Churchill) Gordon, b. March 14, 1768; d. June 29, 1808.

Nathaniel Gordon and Mary Gordon had issue:

- I. James Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. July 22, 1787; d. June 13, 1825.  
Married twice.
- II. Lucy Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 14, 1789; d. Jan. 12, 1871, unmarried.
- III. John Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. March 6, 1791; d. December 14, 1802.
- IV. John Newton Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 15, 1793; d. Oct. 2, 1870.  
Married (1823) Louisiana Coleman.
- V. Nathaniel Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. April 5, 1795; d. 1869.
- VI. Samuel Harrington Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 23, 1797; d. Aug. 2, 1850. Married Anna Hame.
- VII. Marry Harrison Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Nov. 1, 1798; d. 1887 or '88.  
Married Dr. Charles Beale.
- VIII. Priscilla Churchill Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. July 13, 1801; d. ——. Married Robert King.
- IX. Sarah Ann Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 8, 1803; d. Nov. 1875.
- X. Marcia Armistead Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 13, 1807; d. July 8, 1832.

V. John Gordon<sup>6</sup> (Mary Harrison<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. James Gordon and Mary Harrison, his wife, b. October 9, 1765; d. May 7, 1842. Married (November 1, 1787) Betty Ball, daughter of Col. Ball, of Frederick Co., Va. From his Bible we find his issue:

- I. Son Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Oct. 21, 1788; d. Oct. 23, 1788.
- II. James H. Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 18, 1790.
- III. John Willison Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. March 7, 1792.
- IV. Smith Waddell Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. March 22, 1794.
- V. Matilda Ann Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 11, 1797.
- VI. Nash Legrand Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 4, 1800.
- VII. Mary Agatha Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. April 23, 1802.
- VIII. Betty Lee Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 29, 1804.
- IX. Janetta Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 23, 1806.
- X. Penelope Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Feb. 1, 1809. Married Edward Taylor of New Jersey.



- XI. Archibald Alexander Gordon<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 5, 1811; d. Dec. 22, 1879. Married Priscilla Christian Bullett. (Gordon, Hayden Virginia Genealogies, pp. 249, 250, 251.)

## SIXTH GENERATION.

VI. Benjamin Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), of Berkeley. Was a member of the Council of Virginia at the same time as Benjamin Harrison of Brandon. Married Anna Mereer. Issue:

- I. Benjamin Harrison<sup>7</sup>, of Berkeley. Married, first, Lucy Nelson; second, Mary Page.

VI. Hon. Carter Benjamin Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Benjamin Harrison and Elizabeth Bassett. Member of Congress in 1793. Married Miss Allen. Issue:

- I. William A. Harrison<sup>7</sup>. Married, first, Miss Coupland; second, Martha Coeke.

- II. Benjamin Carter Harrison<sup>7</sup>. Married Eliza C. Harrison, daughter of Collier Harrison and Christina Shields. Issue:

- I. Mary Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married George Minge.

- II. Anna Carter Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married Richard Adams.

VI. Gen'l William Henry Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Benjamin Harrison and Elizabeth Harrison, of Berkeley, b. Feb. 9, 1773, d. April 4, 1841. Married, November 22, 1795, Anna Symmes, b. near Morristown, N. J., July 25, 1775; d. February 25, 1864, daughter of John Cleves Symmes—Colonel in the Revolution, Judge of Supreme Court of New Jersey, and member of Continental Congress—and Anna Tuthill, his first wife.

William Henry Harrison was left under the guardianship of Robert Morris, the distinguished financier. He was educated at Hampden-Sidney College and turned his attention to the study of medicine. The hostilities of the Indians on the northern frontier caused him to relinquish professional pursuit and join the army destined to the defence of the Ohio frontier. His father died in April 1791, and soon after he received from Washington, when

only nineteen, his commission as ensign. In 1792 he was promoted to the rank of lieutenant, and fought under General Wayne, who spoke of his gallant conduct in a very flattering manner. After the desperate battle of Miami Rapids, he was promoted to the rank of captain and was placed in command at Fort Washington. In 1797 he resigned his commission in the army, and was immediately appointed secretary of the Northwest Territory. In 1799, at the age of twenty-six, he was elected a delegate from this territory to Congress. On the erection of Indiana into a territorial government, he was appointed its first governor, and he held this office by reappointment until 1813.

In addition to duties in the civil and military government of the territory, he was commissioner and superintendent of Indian affairs, and in the course of his administration he concluded thirteen important treaties with different tribes. On November 7, 1811, he gained an important advantage over the Indians in the battle of Tippecanoe, the news of which was received throughout the country with a burst of enthusiasm. During the last war with Great Britain he was made commander of the Northwest army of the United States, and he bore a conspicuous part in the leading events of the campaign of 1812-13, the defence of Fort Meigs and the victory of the James. In 1814 he was appointed in conjunction with his companions at arms, Gov. Shelby and Gen'l Cann, to treat with the Indians in the Northwest, and in the following year he was placed at the head of a commission to treat with various other Indian tribes. In 1816 General Harrison was elected a member of Congress from Ohio, and in 1828 he was sent Minister Plenipotentiary to the Republic of Columbia. On his return he took up his residence at North Bend, on the Ohio sixteen miles below Cincinnati, where he lived upon his farm in comparative retirement until he was called by the people of the United States to preside over the country as its chief magistrate. Of 294 votes for President, he received 234. He died April 4, 1841, just a month after his inauguration. His death caused a deep sensation throughout the country.

President William Henry Harrison and Anna Symmes, his wife, had issue:

- I. Betsey Bassett Harrison?, b. 1796, d. 1846. Married her cousin, Judge John Cleves Short. Issue:

- I. Mary Short<sup>s</sup>, d. young.
- II. John Cleves Symmes Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1798, d. 1830. Married Clarissa Pike.
- III. Lucy Singleton Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1800; d. 1826. Married D. K. Este.
- IV. William Henry Harrison<sup>7</sup>, Jr., b. 1802; d. 1838. Married twice.
- V. John Scott Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. Oct. 4, 1804; d. 1878. Married twice.
- VI. Dr. Benjamin Harrison<sup>7</sup>. Married twice.
- VII. Mary Symmes Harrison<sup>7</sup>. Married John Henry Fitzhugh Thornton.
- VIII. Carter Bassett Harrison<sup>7</sup>. Married Mary Anne Sutherland.
- IX. Anna Tuthill Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1814, d. 1865. Married William Henry Harrison Taylor.
- X. James Findlay Harrison<sup>7</sup>, d. young.

VI. Lucy Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Benjamin Harrison and Elizabeth Bassett, his wife. Married, first, Peyton Randolph, of Wilton; second, Anthony Singleton. Peyton Randolph (son of William Randolph, of Wilton, and Anne Harrison, his wife) and Lucy Harrison had issue:

- I. William Randolph<sup>7</sup>, of Wilton. Married Miss Andrews.
- II. R. Kidder Randolph<sup>7</sup>, of Rhode Island. Married Anne Lyman.
- III. Peyton Randolph<sup>7</sup>, of Hampden-Sidney. Married Anne Innis, of Williamsburg.
- IV. Elizabeth Randolph<sup>7</sup>. Married William Berkeley of Prince Edward County, Va.

Issue by second marriage:

- I. Lucy Singleton<sup>7</sup>. Married Thomas Taylor of Richmond.
- II. Richard Singleton<sup>7</sup>.

VI. Sarah Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Benjamin Harrison and Elizabeth Bassett, his wife. Married John Minge of Weyanoke, on James River. Issue:

- I. John Minge<sup>7</sup>. Married Mary Adams.

- II. Benjamin Minge<sup>7</sup>. Married Jane Atkinson.
- III. Collier Minge<sup>7</sup>. Married Maria Ladd.
- IV. George Minge<sup>7</sup>. Married Mary Harrison. Issue :
  - I. Betty Minge<sup>8</sup>. Married Joe Selden.
- V. Eliza Minge<sup>7</sup>. Married Hugh Nelson of Petersburg.
- VI. Anne Minge<sup>7</sup>. Married David Dunlop of Petersburg.
- VII. David Minge<sup>7</sup>. Married Elvira Adams.

VI. Robert Carter Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Carter Henry Harrison and Susannah, daughter of Isham Randolph, of Dungenness, b. June 14, 1765; removed to Kentucky about 1805, and d. September 9, 1840. Married Anne, daughter of Col. Joseph Cabell by his wife, Mary Hopkins.

Robert Carter Harrison and Anne Cabell had issue :

- I. Robert Carter Harrison<sup>7</sup>. Married ———, daughter of William Russell, of Fayette, Ky. Issue :
  - I. Carter Henry Harrison<sup>8</sup>, Mayor of Chicago.
- II. Rev. Joseph Cabell Harrison<sup>8</sup>, of Boone and Kenton Counties, Ky.
- III. Virginia Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married David Castleman.

VI. Randolph Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Carter Henry Harrison and Susannah, his wife, daughter of Isham Randolph, of Dungenness, James River, Goochland County, Va. Married (about March 20, 1789) his cousin, Mary Randolph, b. February 11, 1773, daughter of Thomas Isham Randolph, of Dungenness, Goochland County, Va., and Jane Cary, his wife, daughter of Col. Archibald Cary, of Amptill, Chesterfield County, Va. Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, Cumberland County, Va., b. February 11, 1769. Issue :

- I. Thomas Randolph Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1791, d. 1833. Married (about 1815) Elizabeth Cunningham.
- II. Carter Henry Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1792, d. 1843. Married (1817) Janetta Ravenscroft Fisher, daughter of George Fisher and Ann Ambler. (Vol. I, Chapters V, VI, VII.)
- III. Archibald Morgan Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1794, d. 1842. Married (1817), first, Catherine Heth; second, Euphenia Taylor.

- IV. One son of Randolph and Mary Harrison, b. 1795, lived only 24 hours.
- V. Another son b. 1796, lived only a few hours.
- VI. Jane Cary Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1797, d. 1883. Married (1820) William Fitzhugh Randolph, of Fauquier County, Va.
- VII. Randolph Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1798. Married (about 1821) Heningham Carrington Wills.
- VIII. Peyton Randolph Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1800. Married, first, Jane Cary Carr. Married, second, Ellen M. Smith.
- IX. William Mortimer Harrison<sup>7</sup>, drowned in boyhood.
- X. Mary Randolph Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1802. Married (1827) William Byrd Harrison, of "Upper Brandon." (See Harrison of Brandon.)
- XI. Susanna Isham Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1806. Married Rev. Samuel Blaine.
- XII. Lucy Cary Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1809, d. 1842. Married (1828) Nelson Page.
- XIII. Catherine Lilbourne Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1811. Married (Oct. 1831) John S. McKim.
- XIV. William Mortimer Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1815; d. in Richmond, 1847. Married (1836) Henry Page Irving. Moved to California. Their son, Joseph Kincaid Irving, died of wounds received in a battle at Staunton, Va., 1864.
- XV. Virginia Randolph Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1815, d. 1830.
- XVI. Nannie Hartwell Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. 1819. Married Dr. John Bowling Garrett of Clover Plains, Albemarle County, Va. Issue:
  - I. Mary Randolph Garrett<sup>8</sup>, b. Sept. 27, 1848, d. Aug. 13, 1867.
  - II. Evelina Bolling Garrett<sup>8</sup>, b. Nov. 22, 1850. Married William Byrd Harrison.
  - III. Elizabeth Ashton Garrett<sup>8</sup>, b. Oct. 17, 1853. Married Samuel H. Purcell.
  - IV. Nannie Harrison Garrett<sup>8</sup>, b. Nov. 6, 1855, d. April 30, 1886.
  - VI. Henry Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Henry<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Henry Harrison and Miss Avery, his wife. Married Polly Cocke. Issue:

- I. Henry John Harrison<sup>7</sup>. Married, first, Mrs. Bland; married, second, Mrs. Wood.
- II. Mary Rebecca Harrison<sup>7</sup>. Married Dr. J. M. Walker.
- VI. Collier Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Robert<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert Harrison and Miss Collier of Kittewan, Charles City County, Va.; d. November, 1809. Married, first, Christiana, née Shields, widow of ——— Minge, and formerly of R. B. Armistead; second, Beersheba Bryant.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Elizabeth C. Harrison<sup>7</sup>. Married B. C. Harrison. Issue given above.

NOTE.—Christiana Shields, b. December 23, 1745, daughter of Col. James Shields by his second wife, Anne, daughter of Jean Marrott, issue: Mary Marrott Armistead, married Judge John Tyler, and was mother of President John Tyler.

Issue by second marriage:

- II. Robert Carter Harrison<sup>7</sup>, of Kittewan. Married Naney J. D. Poythress, daughter of Joshua Poythress.
- III. Braxton Harrison<sup>7</sup>, of "Farmers' Rest." Married Camilla A. M. Johnson.
- VI. Edmund Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Nathaniel Harrison and Mary Ruffin, his first wife, b. December 12, 1764, "The Oaks," Amelia Co., Va.; d. February 4, 1826. Married, first, Mary Murray, d. January 18, 1804; second (November 22, 1806), Martha Wayles Skipwith, b. April, 1786, daughter of Henry Skipwith.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Edmund Harrison<sup>7</sup>, and others; all d. young.

Issue by second marriage:

- I. William Henry Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. May 15, 1810, of the "Wigwam"; Principal of Amelia Academy; d. Dec. 23, 1881. Married (1835) Lucy Ann Powers.
- II. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. Dec. 23, 1812; d. about 1870. Married Mary Erskine.
- III. Lelia Skipwith Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. ———; d. Feb. 17, 1868. Married Rev. Pike Powers.
- IV. Sally Carter Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. Aug. 18, 1816. Married W. D. Clark.



V. Donald McKenzie Harrison<sup>7</sup>, b. Aug. 3, 1818, of Columbus, Ohio; d. May 10, 1872. Married (Dec. 30, 1850) Mary Jane Trabue.

VI. Mary Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>; Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Nathaniel Harrison and Mary Ruffin, his first wife, b. December 21, 1766. Married John Gilliam, her step-mother's nephew. Issue:

I. Mary Ruffin Gilliam<sup>7</sup>. Married John Dunlop, of Scotland.

II. Jane Henry Gilliam<sup>7</sup>. Married William Baird.

VI. Benjamin Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Nathaniel Harrison and Anne Gilliam, his second wife. Married a widow, née Turnbull. Issue:

I. Dr. Nathaniel Harrison<sup>7</sup>, of Puddledock. Married, first, Mary Dandridge Minge; second, Margaret Cargill.

VI. William Byrd Harrison<sup>6</sup> (Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Benjamin Harrison and Miss Byrd, of Brandon, on James River, Prince George Co., Va. Married, first (1827), Mary Harrison, b. 1802, daughter of Mary and Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, Cumberland Co., Va. Issue:

I. Randolph Harrison<sup>7</sup>, of Amptill, Cumberland Co., Va. Married Harriet Hielman.

II. Benjamin Harrison<sup>7</sup>, of Rowe, Charles City Co., Va., d. 1862. Married (1854) Mary Randolph Page.

III. Charles Shirley Harrison<sup>7</sup>.

IV. Dr. George Byrd Harrison<sup>7</sup>. Married (1876) Jeannie Stone.

VI. Thomas E. Churchill<sup>6</sup> (William<sup>5</sup>, Hannah Harrison<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. William Churchill and Elizabeth —, his second wife. Married (May 28, 1801) Eliza B. Berkeley, daughter of Edmund Berkeley, Esq., of "Barn Elms," adjoining "Wilton." (See Chapter XI.) He married, second, Luey Burwell Lilly, who survived him and was second wife of John Derby. No issue.

Issue by first marriage:

I. Elizabeth Edmonia Churchill<sup>7</sup>.

## SEVENTH GENERATION.

VII. Benjamin Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Benjamin<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), of Berkeley, only son of Benjamin Harrison and Anna Mercer. Married, first, Lucy Nelson; second, Mary Page.

Issue by first marriage:

I. Mary Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married Rev. Wm. McGuire.

II. Miss Mercer Harrison<sup>8</sup>.

III. Lucy Harrison<sup>8</sup>.

Issue by second marriage:

IV. Henry Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married Fanny T. Burwell.

V. Dr. Benjamin Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married Mattewalla Page.

VI. Maria Harrison<sup>8</sup>.

VII. Evelyn Harrison<sup>8</sup>.

VII. William A. Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Carter B.<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Hon. Carter B. Harrison and Miss Allen, his wife. Married, first, Miss Coupland; second, Martha Cocke.

Issue by first marriage:

I. Carter Harrison<sup>8</sup>.

II. Anne Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married Dr. Wm. Albert Christian, of Richmond, Va.

III. William A. Harrison<sup>8</sup>, Jr. Married Mary Stockdell.

Issue by second marriage:

IV. John H. Harrison<sup>8</sup>.

VII. John Cleves Symmes Harrison<sup>7</sup> (William H.<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of William Henry Harrison and Anna Symmes, his wife; b. 1798; d. 1830. Married Clarissa, daughter of Gen'l Zebulon Montgomery Pike.

Issue:

I. Zebulon Pike Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. 1849. Married John Hunt.

II. Anna Maria Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. 1849. Married James Roberts.

III. Clarissa Louisa Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. April 21, 1883. Married, first, Tomlin Miller Banks, M. D.; second, Oliver Perry Morgan.

IV. Montgomery Pike Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. unmarried.

V. William Henry Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married, first, Elvira Rogers;  
d. 1875. Married, second, Mary Ann McIntyre.

VI. John Cleves Symmes Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. young.

VII. Lucy Singleton Harrison<sup>7</sup> (William H.<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Wm. Henry Harrison and Anna Symmes, his wife, b. 1800; d. April 7, 1826. Married David K. Este, Judge of Supreme Court of Ohio. Issue:

I. Wm. Henry Este<sup>8</sup>, d. young.

II. Lucy Anne Harrison Este<sup>8</sup>, d. 1868. Married Joseph Reynolds.

III. William Henry Harrison Este<sup>8</sup>, d. young.

IV. David Este<sup>8</sup>, d. young.

VII. William Henry Harrison<sup>7</sup> (William H.<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of William Henry Harrison, President, and Anna Symmes, his wife, b. 1802; lawyer in Cincinnati; d. 1838. Married, first, Jane Irwin; she married, second, Lewis Whiteman.

VII. John Scott Harrison<sup>7</sup> (William H.<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of William Henry Harrison, President, and Anna Symmes, his wife, b. at Vincennes, October 4, 1804; resided at North Bend, Ohio; twice elected to Congress; d. May, 1878. Married, first, Lueretia Knapp Johnson, daughter of Wm. Johnson, by his wife Sarah Willson; second (August 12, 1831), Elizabeth Irwin.

Issue by first marriage:

I. Betsey Short Harrison<sup>8</sup>, of North Bend, Ohio. Married Dr. George S. Eaton.

II. William Henry Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. young.

III. Sarah Lueretia Harrison<sup>8</sup>, of Ottumwa, Iowa. Married Thomas J. Devin.

Issue by second marriage:

I. Archibald Irwin Harrison<sup>8</sup>, Lieutenant Colonel U. S. Volunteers; d. Dec. 16, 1870. Married Elizabeth Lawrence Sheets, daughter of William, and descendant from Gen'l Arthur St. Clair.

II. Benjamin Harrison<sup>8</sup>, President of the United States.

- III. Mary Jane Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. Sept. 14, 1867. Married (April 14, 1859) Samuel Vance Morris, son of Judge B. F. and descendant from Gen'l St. Clair.
- IV. Anna Symmes Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. young.
- V. John Irwin Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. young.
- VI. Carter Bassett Harrison<sup>8</sup>, U. S. Marshal Eastern District Tenn. Married Sophia R. Lyttle, widow of William.
- VII. John Scott Harrison<sup>8</sup>, of Kansas City, Mo. Married Sophia E. Lyttle, daughter of William.
- VIII. James Findlay Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. young. .
- IX. James Irwin Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. young.
- VII. Dr. Benjamin Harrison<sup>7</sup> (William Henry<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of William Henry Harrison and Anna Symmes, his wife; d. ——. Married, first, Louisa Bonner; second, Mary Raney.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. John Cleves Short Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married, first, Mary Frances, daughter of Alfred Harrison; second, Margaret Ruth McCarty.

Issue by second marriage:

- II. Benjamin Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. unmarried.
- III. William Henry Harrison<sup>8</sup>, d. unmarried.
- VII. Mary Symmes Harrison<sup>7</sup> (William Henry<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William Henry Harrison, President, and Mary Symmes, his wife, b. January 22, 1809; d. November 16, 1842. Married (March 5, 1829) as first wife of Dr. John Henry Fitzhugh Thornton.

Issue:

- I. William Henry Harrison Thornton<sup>8</sup>, d. unmarried.
- II. Charles Thornton<sup>8</sup>, Surgeon U. S. A.; d. unmarried.
- III. Anna Harrison Thornton<sup>8</sup>, d. Jan. 17, 1883. Married Lee Mason Fitzhugh, of Fern Bank, Ohio.
- IV. Alice Elizabeth Thornton<sup>8</sup>. Married John Calvin Lewis, of Chicago.
- V. Lucy Harrison Thornton<sup>8</sup>, d. young.
- VI. John Fitzhugh Thornton<sup>8</sup>, of Fern Bank. Married Lila Morgan West.

VII. Carter Bassett Harrison<sup>7</sup> (William Henry<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of William Henry Harrison, President, and Anna Symmes, his wife, d. 1839. Married Mary Anne Sutherland. Issue:

- I. Anna Carter Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married David W. McClung, now of North Bend, Ohio.

VII. Anna Tuthill Harrison<sup>7</sup> (William Henry<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William Henry Harrison, President, and Anna Symmes, his wife, b. 1814; d. 1865. Married (1836) William Henry Harrison Taylor, b. 1813, son of Thomas Taylor, of Richmond, Va., by his wife, Lucy H. Singleton, who was niece of President William Henry Harrison. Issue:

- I. William Henry Harrison Taylor<sup>8</sup>. Married, first, Mary King; second, Clara Jenkins.
- II. Lucy Singleton Taylor<sup>8</sup>. Married Henry Scott Howell, of Keokuk, Iowa.
- III. John Thomas Taylor<sup>8</sup>. Married, first, Agnes Kennedy; second, Amelia Wilson.
- IV. Mary Thornton Taylor<sup>8</sup>. Married George A. Plummer, of Minneapolis.
- V. Anna Cleves Taylor<sup>8</sup>. Married Geo. H. Comstock, of Keokuk.
- VI. Bessie Short Taylor<sup>8</sup>. Married John Ogden, of St. Paul, Minn. No issue:
- VII. Fanny Galt Taylor<sup>8</sup>. Married Charles F. Hendryx, of Minneapolis.
- VIII. Virginia Berkeley Taylor<sup>8</sup>. Married Frank W. Statton, of Chicago.
- IX. Jane Harrison Taylor<sup>8</sup>. Married Edward J. Davenport, of Minneapolis.
- X. Nelly Bassett Taylor<sup>8</sup>, d. 1864.
- XI. Edward Everett Taylor<sup>8</sup>.

(More about William Henry Harrison's (President's) descendants in Carter Family Tree; also "The Ancestry of Benjamin Harrison," by Charles P. Keith, a lawyer, of Philadelphia.)

VII. Lucy Singleton<sup>7</sup> (Lucy Harrison<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Lucy

Harrison and Anthony Singleton. Married Thomas Taylor, of Richmond, Va. Issue:

- I. William Henry Harrison Taylor<sup>s</sup>. Married Anna Harrison. Issue given above.
- II. Mary Taylor<sup>s</sup>. Married William Galt, of Fluvanna.
- III. Eliza Taylor<sup>s</sup>. Married ——— Gregory, of Chesterfield.
- IV. Lucy Taylor<sup>s</sup>. Married Wythe Munford.
- V. Fanny Taylor<sup>s</sup>. Married, first, Archie Harrison; second, Thomas H. Ellis.
- VI. Nannie Taylor<sup>s</sup>. Married Robert Nimmo, of Norfolk.
- VII. Thomas Taylor<sup>s</sup>.
- VIII. Kidder Taylor<sup>s</sup>. Married Lavinia Harrison. Issue elsewhere.
- IX. Matthew Taylor<sup>s</sup>.

VII. Eliza Minge<sup>7</sup> (Sarah Harrison<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Sarah Harrison and John Minge, of Weyanoke. Married Hugh Nelson of Petersburg, Va. Issue:

- I. Sally H. Nelson<sup>s</sup>.
- II. Lucy Nelson<sup>s</sup>.
- III. Fanny Nelson<sup>s</sup>. Married Charles Carter, of Shirley.  
Issue:

- I. Mary B. Carter<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. Hugh Nelson<sup>s</sup>. Married Maria Selden.
- V. William Nelson<sup>s</sup>. Married Octavia Owen.
- VI. Mary M. Nelson<sup>s</sup>.

VII. Anne Minge<sup>7</sup> (Sarah Harrison<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Sarah Harrison and John Minge, of Weyanoke. Married David Dunlop, of Petersburg, Va. Issue:

- I. Robert Dunlop<sup>s</sup>. Married Mary Robinson. Issue:
  - I. Mary Dunlop<sup>9</sup>.
  - II. Lena Dunlop<sup>9</sup>.
- III. David Dunlop<sup>9</sup>.
- II. David Dunlop<sup>s</sup>. Married, first, Mary Johnson; second, Kate Compton.

Issue by second marriage:



- I. David Dunlop<sup>9</sup>, Jr. Married Lena Davis.
- III. Sally Dunlop<sup>8</sup>. Married James Routh. Issue:
  - I. Dunlop Routh<sup>9</sup>.
  - II. James Routh<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. John Dunlop<sup>8</sup>.
- V. James Dunlop<sup>8</sup>. Married Mary Cole. Issue:
  - I. Anna Dunlop<sup>9</sup>.
- VII. Robert Carter Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Robert Carter<sup>9</sup>, Carter Henry<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert Carter Harrison and Anne Cabell. Married a daughter of William Russell, of Fayette, Ky. Issue:
  - I. Carter Henry Harrison<sup>8</sup>, Mayor of Chicago since April, 1897, b. Chicago, April 23, 1860 (five times Mayor of Chicago); killed by assassin, November, 1893; educated Chicago Public School Gymnasium, Altenberg, Germany; graduated St. Ignatius College, Chicago, 1881; graduated Yale Law School, 1883. Married (Dec. 14, 1887) Edith, daughter of Robert N. Ogden, Judge of Court of Appeals, New Orleans. Mr. Harrison practiced law in 1883-9; in real estate business 1889-91; publisher and editor *Chicago Times* 1891-3; elected Mayor of Chicago, April 6, 1897, and April 4, 1899; democrat. Address 295 Schiller St., Chicago, Ill.
  - VII. Thomas Randolph Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, Cumberland Co., Va., and Mary Randolph, his wife, b. at Clifton, February 27, 1791; d. 1833. Married (at Cartersville, Cumberland Co., Va., Dec. 1812) Elizabeth Cunningham. Issue:
    - I. John Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Sept. 20, 1813.
    - II. Mary Burleigh Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Aug. 1, 1815.
    - III. William Mortimer Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Aug. 4, 1817. Married Caroline Lambert.
    - IV. Eliza Cunningham Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Oct. 9, 1819. Married Archie Page.
    - V. Jane Cary Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. August 14, 1821.
    - VI. Edward C. Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. March 10, 1823. Married Sally Roane, of "Tree Hill."

- VII. Thomas Randolph Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Sept. 30, 1825. Married Julia Leigh.
- VIII. Burleigh Cunningham Harrison<sup>8</sup>, M. D., b. Aug. 13, 1827.
- IX. Dr. Archibald Taylor Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Oct. 28, 1829. Married Molly Orgain.
- X. Randolph Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Aug. 28, 1831. Married Lizzie Johnston.

VII. Archibald Morgan Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, and Mary Randolph, his wife, b. September 6, 1794; d. 1843. Married, first (at Blackheath, February 27, 1817), Catherine Heth; second (at Glenavon, Fluvanna Co., Va., November 22, 1837), Euphemia Taylor (called Fanny). Archibald M. Harrison d. at Carysbrooke, and his widow married, second, Mr. Ellis, of Chicago.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Henry Heth Harrison<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Lavinia Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married Dr. Kidder Taylor. Residence 217 N. 7th St., Keokuk, Iowa. He d. February, 1905. Issue:
  - I. Kate Taylor<sup>9</sup>.
  - II. Lucy Taylor<sup>9</sup>.
  - III. Jennie Taylor<sup>9</sup>.
  - IV. Warner Taylor<sup>9</sup>.
  - V. Harry Taylor<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Catherine Heth Harrison<sup>8</sup>. Married Prof. Robert T. Morrison.

VII. Jane Cary Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, and Mary Randolph, his wife, b. at Glentivar, Cumberland Co., Va., February 9, 1799; d. at the "Moorings," 1883, in Clarke Co., Va. Married (1820) William Fitzhugh Randolph, of Fauquier Co., Va. Mrs. Randolph became blind. Issue:

- I. Beverley Randolph<sup>8</sup>. Married Mary C. Randolph.
- II. Mary Randolph<sup>8</sup>. Married George E. Tabb, of Gloucester Co., Va.
- III. William E. Randolph<sup>8</sup>. Married, first, S. L. Eppes; second, Susan Randolph.

IV. Virginius Randolph<sup>a</sup>. Married, first, Isabella Potts; second, Elizabeth Preston.

V. Lueius Randolph<sup>a</sup>. Married Isodore Preston.

VII. Randolph Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Randolph<sup>a</sup>, Carter H.<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, and Mary Randolph, his wife, of Elk Hill, Gooseland Co., Va., b. February 17, 1799; d. ——. Married (September 6, 1821, at "Wilton," Logan Co., Ky.) Henningham Carrington Wills. He died at Norfolk, Va., May 18, 1844. Issue:

I. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>a</sup>, b. March 1, 1823; d. Sept. 9, 1804. Married (Dec. 28, 1848) Alexander B. Gordon, of Baltimore, Md.

II. Julien Harrison<sup>a</sup>, b. Feb. 6, 1826; d. July 17, 1877. Married twice.

III. Louisa Harrison<sup>a</sup>, b. Oct. 2, 1830. Married Alexander B. Hagner. She d. Feb. 23, 1905.

IV. Randolph Harrison<sup>a</sup>, b. in Richmond, Feb. 12, 1830; lived at Elk Hill. Married (Nov. 1853) Elizabeth Williamson, of Norfolk; moved to Williamsburg, Va.

VII. Rev. Peyton Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Randolph<sup>a</sup>, Carter H.<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, and Mary Randolph, his wife, b. at Clifton, November 19, 1800. He was of Baltimore, Md. Married, first (January 6, 1825), Jane Cary Carr, second daughter of Judge Dabney Carr, a nephew of President Thomas Jefferson, Judge of Court of Appeals of Virginia; d. July 21, 1859, at Clifton. She was b. December 3, 1807. Rev. Peyton Harrison married, second (1863, in Philadelphia), Ellen M. Smith.

Issue by first marriage:

I. Bettie Carr Harrison<sup>a</sup>, b. May 2, 1826; d. 1847. Married Rev. J. M. P. Atkinson.

II. Randolph Harrison<sup>a</sup>, b. Jan. 16, 1829; d. Sept. 22, 1863. Married Rosalie Freeland, of Richmond, Va.

III. Dabney Carr Harrison<sup>a</sup>, b. Sept. 12, 1830. Married (1855) Sally Pendleton Buchanan.

IV. Peyton Randolph Harrison<sup>a</sup>, b. June 17, 1832. Married Sarah F. Hunter.

V. Virginia Randolph Harrison<sup>a</sup>, b. March 31, 1834. Married Rev. Wm. J. Hoge.

- VI. William Wirt Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Feb. 16, 1837. Married (1859) Emily Taylor, of Richmond.
- VII. Mary Clifton Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. April 21, 1839; d. 1862. Married Robert W. Hunter.
- VIII. Nannie Addison Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Aug. 8, 1841; d. Feb. 23, 1862.
- IX. Henry Tucker Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. June 12, 1844. Married Marian Jenifer, of Maryland, in 1877.
- X. Willianna Irving Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Feb. 27, 1847. Married J. Lisle Turnbull, of Baltimore.

Issue by second marriage:

- XI. Samuel Graeme Harrison<sup>8</sup>, living in England.

VII. Susannah Isham Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, and Mary Randolph, his wife, b. September 13, 1812; d. January 14, 1901. Married (December 15, 1837) Rev. Samuel Blaine, of Lexington, Va., b. February 9, 1807; d. December 15, 1901. Issue:

- I. Rev. Daniel Blaine<sup>8</sup>. Married (Jan. 3, 1867) Mary Louise Mercer, of Williamsburg, Va. Issue:
  - I. Rev. John Mercer Blaine<sup>9</sup>. Married (at Yokohama, Japan) Claude Grier, of North Carolina, August 24, 1897. Issue:
    - I. Daniel Blaine<sup>10</sup>.
    - II. Mary Grier Blaine<sup>10</sup>.
- III. Margaret Cary Blaine<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. Randolph Harrison Blaine<sup>9</sup>. Married (Aug. 23, 1899) Jane Trockmorton Forman, of Cincinnati, Ohio. Issue:
    - I. Mary Blaine<sup>10</sup>.
    - II. Staunton Forman Blaine<sup>10</sup>.
- IV. Samuel Stewart Blaine<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. Prof. Hugh Mercer Blaine<sup>9</sup>. Married (July, 1901) Mary Moore Winston, of Waynesboro, Va. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Winston Blaine<sup>10</sup>.
  - V. Daniel Blaine<sup>9</sup>, d. in infancy.
  - VI. Robert Walter Blaine<sup>9</sup>.
  - VII. Cary Randolph Blaine<sup>9</sup>.

- II. Mary Randolph Blaine<sup>8</sup>, single; residencee 519 West Chestnut St., Louisville, Ky.
- III. Randolph Harrison Blaine<sup>8</sup>. Married (June 8, 1869) Col. Charles Richardson, C. S. A., of Richmond, Va. Issue:
- I. William Dorrington Richardson<sup>9</sup>.
  - II. Samuel Blaine Richardson<sup>9</sup>. Married (June 17, 1898) Nannie Erieson, of Fredericksburg, Va. Issue:
    - I. Dorothy Elizabeth Richardson<sup>10</sup>.
  - III. Lavinia Dandridge Richardson<sup>9</sup>.
  - IV. Lucy Cary Harrison Blaine<sup>8</sup>, single.
- VII. Lucy Cary Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Randolph Harrison of Clifton and Mary Randolph, his wife; b. 1806; d. ——. Married (March, 1828) Nelson Page, of "The Folk," b. November 8, 1801; d. there, November, 1850, aged 49. He was eldest surviving son of Major Carter Page and Luey, eighth child and third daughter of Gov. Thomas Nelson, of Yorktown. Issue:
- I. Mary Randolph Page<sup>8</sup>. Married Benjamin Harrison, son of William B. Harrison, of "Upper Brandon." Issue elsewhere.
  - II. Lueius Cary Page<sup>8</sup>, b. 1838; d. young.  
Nelson Page married, second, Maria Hamilton. No issue.
- VII. Catherine Lilbourne Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Randolph Harrison and Mary Randolph, his wife; b. July 3, 1811; d. ——. Married (1831) John S. McKim, of Batlimore, Md. Issue:
- I. Mary Randolph McKim<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Margie Telfair McKim<sup>8</sup>.
  - III. Carter Henry McKim<sup>8</sup>.
  - IV. Rev. Randolph Harrison McKim<sup>8</sup>, now rector of Epiphany Episcopal Church, in Washington, D. C. Married (1862) Agnes Phillips, of Staunton, Va. Issue:
    - I. Dr. Duncan McKim<sup>9</sup>, first of Chambers Street Hospital, New York, afterwards of Washington, where he died.
    - II. Annie McKim<sup>9</sup>. Married Henry G. Rathbone and resides in England.

III. Eleanor McKim<sup>9</sup>, entered a convent.

VII. William Mortimer Harrison<sup>7</sup>, ninth son of Randolph Harrison and Mary Randolph, was drowned in the Rivanna River, Albemarle Co., Va., and was buried at Monticello. His father, who with his son William and other members of the family were visiting Edge Hill, same county, informed the family that he had seen his son William, in a dream, struggling in the water. Before bedtime a messenger came with the fatal news.

VII. Mary Rebeeca Harrison<sup>7</sup> (Henry<sup>6</sup>, Henry<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Henry Harrison and Polly Cocke, his wife. Married Dr. John M. Walker; she died at the birth of her only child. Issue:

I. John Harrison Walker<sup>8</sup>. Married Louisa Cargill. Issue:

I. — Walker<sup>9</sup>, d. young.

II. — Walker<sup>9</sup>, d. young.

III. Henry H. Walker<sup>9</sup>, General C. S. A. Married Mary S. Mereer. Issue:

I. Mary M. Walker<sup>10</sup>. Married George Harrison, of Brandon.

II. Louisa C. Walker<sup>10</sup>.

III. Henry H. Walker<sup>10</sup>.

IV. Eliza F. Walker<sup>10</sup>.

V. Aliee S. Walker<sup>10</sup>.

IV. Mary H. Walker<sup>9</sup>, d. unmarried.

V. William W. Walker<sup>9</sup>, of Montgomery, Ala. Married Anna Shackelford.

VI. George B. Walker<sup>9</sup>, d. unmarried.

VII. Hugh B. Walker<sup>9</sup>.

VIII. Louisa C. Walker<sup>9</sup>.

IX. Andrew S. Walker<sup>9</sup>.

X. Robert Pegram Walker<sup>9</sup>.

VII. Mary Ruffin Gilliam<sup>7</sup> (Mary Harrison<sup>6</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Mary Harrison and John Gilliam. Married John Dunlop, of Scotland. Issue:

I. James Dunlop<sup>8</sup>. Married Isabella L. Maitland.

II. Donald McKenzie Dunlop<sup>8</sup>. Married Eliza Swinton, of England.

III. Marion Dunlop<sup>8</sup>, d. unmarried.



IV. Mary Elizabeth Dunlop<sup>8</sup>, d. unmarried.

VII. Benjamin Harrison<sup>7</sup> (William Byrd<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of William Byrd Harrison, of "Upper Brandon," on the James River, and Mary Harrison, daughter of Mary and Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, Cumberland Co., Va., b. about 1835. Was killed at the battle of Malvern Hill, July, 1862. Married (November 11, 1855) Mary Randolph Page. His widow resided at the Rowe, on James River, opposite "Lower Brandon," Prince George Co., Va. She sold "The Fork," her father's residence, about 1870. Issue:

I. William Byrd Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Sept. 8, 1853. Married (Oct. 19, 1886) his cousin, Evelina Bolling Garrett. Issue:

I. William Byrd Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. Jan. 11, 1893.

II. Lucius Ashton Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. July 10, 1896.

II. Nelson Page Harrison<sup>8</sup>, called Nelson, b. May 28, 1855; d. Sept. 16, 1855.

III. Lucia Cary Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. Sept. 24, 1856. Married (May 8, 1878) Captain Edmund Randolph Coeke; d. March 30, 1898. Issue:

I. Mary Randolph Coeke<sup>9</sup>, b. June 2, 1879; d. July 12, 1879.

II. Lucia Cary Coeke<sup>9</sup>, b. Sept. 14, 1880; d. Oct. 16, 1881.

III. Elizabeth Randolph Coeke<sup>9</sup>, b. May 21, 1882.

IV. Edmund Randolph Coeke<sup>9</sup>, b. Aug. 4, 1883.

V. Benjamin Randolph Coeke<sup>9</sup>, b. March 6, 1886; d. July 17, 1887.

VI. William Armistead Coeke<sup>9</sup>, b. Feb. 22, 1888.

VII. Edmonia Preston Coeke<sup>9</sup>, b. July 4, 1890.

VIII. Catherine L. McKim Coeke<sup>9</sup>, b. Sept. 16, 1892.

IX. Nelson Page Coeke<sup>9</sup>, b. Nov. 16, 1894.

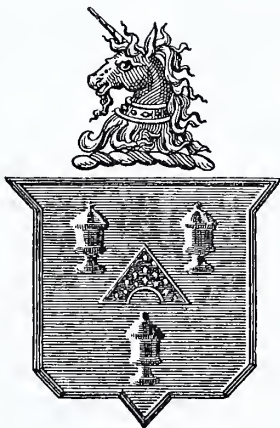
IV. Benjamin Harrison Harrison<sup>8</sup>, b. March 10, 1858. Married (Oct. 15, 1902) Martha Cary Nelson.

V. Nelson Page Harrison<sup>8</sup> (called Page), b. Aug. 4, 1859; d. Nov. 30, 1859.

VII. Dr. George Byrd Harrison<sup>7</sup> (William B.<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>4</sup>, Nathaniel<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of William Byrd Harrison, of Upper Brandon on the James River, and Mary Randolph Harrison, of Clifton, Cumberland Co., Va. Married (1876) Jane, daughter of Robert King Stone, M. D., of Wash-

ington, D. C., and his wife, Margaret Ritchie, daughter of Thomas Ritchie, of the *Richmond Enquirer*. Dr. Harrison died very suddenly; his wife and children are still living in Washington, D. C. (1906). Dr. Robert K. Stone was the first physician called to President Lincoln at the time of his assassination. Issue:

- I. Wm. Evelyn Harrison<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Margaret Ritchie Harrison<sup>8</sup>.



*Salus per Christum*  
CHRISTIAN COAT-OF-ARMS

#### EIGHTH GENERATION.

VIII. Anne Harrison<sup>8</sup> (William A.<sup>7</sup>, Carter B.<sup>6</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William A. Harrison and Miss Coupland, his wife. Married Dr. William Albert Christian, of Richmond, Va. Issue:

- I. William Christian<sup>9</sup>. Married Harriet Cary. Issue given in Chapter IV.
- I. Fairfax Christian<sup>10</sup>. Married Harriet A. Peters.
- II. William Christian<sup>10</sup>.
- III. Martha Christian<sup>10</sup>.
- IV. Lucy Christian<sup>10</sup>.
- V. Betty Christian<sup>10</sup>. (See Cary Family, Chapter IV.)
- II. Judith B. Christian<sup>9</sup>. Married C. M. Robinson.

III. Anna Christian<sup>9</sup>. Married Dr. Wm. F. Carter.

IV. Harrison Christian<sup>9</sup>.

V. Edmonia Christian<sup>9</sup>.

VI. Albert Christian<sup>9</sup>.

VIII. William A. Harrison<sup>8</sup> (William A.<sup>7</sup>, Carter B.<sup>9</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of William A. Harrison and Miss Coupland, his wife. Married Mary Stoekdell. Issue:

I. Charlotte Harrison<sup>9</sup>.

II. William A. Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married L. Sweeny. Issue:

I. William A. Harrison<sup>10</sup>.

II. Clara Harrison<sup>10</sup>.

III. Virginia Harrison<sup>9</sup>.

IV. Anna Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married E. C. Harrison.

V. Carter Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married Clara Sweeny.

VI. Robert Harrison<sup>9</sup>.

VIII. Mary Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Benjamin Carter<sup>7</sup>, Hon. Carter B.<sup>9</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Benjamin Carter Harrison and Elizabeth C. Harrison, who was daughter of Collier Harrison and Christiana Shields. Married George Minge, of Alabama. Issue:

I. Betty Minge<sup>9</sup>. Married Joseph Selden.

I. Maria Selden<sup>10</sup>. Married Hugh Nelson.

II. Mary Selden<sup>10</sup>. Married Richard Wilkins.

III. Minge Selden<sup>10</sup>.

VIII. Anne Carter Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Benjamin C.<sup>7</sup>, Hon. Benjamin C.<sup>9</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Benjamin Carter Harrison and Eliza C. Harrison. Married Richard Adams. Issue:

I. John Adams<sup>9</sup>. Married Maria Edmundson.

II. Sarah Margaret Adams<sup>9</sup>.

III. Carter Adams<sup>9</sup>. Married Maria Minge.

IV. Richard Adams<sup>9</sup>. Married Charlotte Putnam.

V. William Adams<sup>9</sup>. Married — Gwathmay.

VI. George Adams<sup>9</sup>.

VIII. Benjamin Harrison<sup>8</sup> (John Scott Harrison<sup>7</sup>, William H.<sup>9</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of John Scott Harrison and Elizabeth Irwin, his second wife:

grandson of William Henry Harrison and Anna Symmes, his wife. President of the United States of America, and second son of his parents, b. North Bend, August 20, 1833; graduated in Arts at Miami University; practiced law in Indianapolis; reporter of the Supreme Court of Indiana; colonel of 70th Indiana Volunteers during the Civil War; Brevet Brig.-Gen'l U. S. Volunteers; Republican candidate for Governor of Indiana in 1876; U. S. Senator from 1881 to 1887. Married Caroline L. Scott; d. in the White House, October 25, 1892; daughter of Rev. John Witherspoon Scott, D. D., Professor in Miami University, and Mary Pottes Neal, his wife. Mr. Scott d. in the White House, November 29, 1892.

Benjamin Harrison and Caroline L. Scott, his wife, had issue:

- I. Russell Benjamin Harrison<sup>9</sup>, graduate of Lafayette College, of Montana. Married (Jan. 8, 1884) Mary Angeline, daughter of Alvin Saunders, U. S. Senator. Issue:

- I. Marthena Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Mary Scott Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married James Robert McKee, of Indianapolis. Issue:
  - I. Benjamin Harrison McKee<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. Mary Lodge McKee<sup>10</sup>.

VIII. William Mortimer Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Thomas Randolph<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Thomas Randolph Harrison and Elizabeth Cunningham, his wife; b. August 14, 1817. Married Caroline Lambert. Issue:

- I. Thomas R. Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married Gertrude Strachan. Issue:
  - I. Emily Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
- II. William M. Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Mary Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married Maj. A. H. Drewy, of Drewy's Bluff; removed to Westover, Charles City Co., Va.
- III. John Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. Edward C. Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married, first, Anna Harrison; second, Mrs. Sue Ruffin Willcox.

Issue by first wife:

- I. Edward R. Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Hugh T. Harrison<sup>10</sup>.

- V. Archibald Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- VI. Lizzie Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married Carter Wellford, of Sabine Hall.
- VII. Jane Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married John A. Ruffin. Issue:
- I. Carrie K. Ruffin<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. Mary Ruffin<sup>10</sup>.
  - III. John A. Ruffin<sup>10</sup>.
- VIII. Carrie Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married, first, Jaquelin Douthat; second, James P. Harrison.
- VIII. Edward C. Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Thomas Randolph<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Thomas Randolph Harrison and Elizabeth Cunningham, his wife. Married Sally Roane, of "Tree Hill." He was born March 10, 1823. Issue:
- I. Edward C. Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married Mary Harrison. Issue:
  - I. Edward Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. Carter Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
  - III. Sally Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
  - IV. John W. Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. Mary Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- VIII. Dr. Thomas Randolph Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Thomas Randolph<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Thomas Randolph Harrison and Elizabeth Cunningham, his wife, of New Kent. Married Julia Leigh. Issue:
- I. B. W. Leigh Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
  - II. Chapman Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
  - III. Julia Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
  - IV. Archie Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- VIII. Dr. Archibald Taylor Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Thomas Randolph<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Thomas Randolph Harrison and Elizabeth Cunningham, his wife; b. October 28, 1829. Married Molly Orgain. Issue:
- I. Allen Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
  - II. Cary Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
  - III. Burleigh Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- VIII. Dr. Randolph Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Thomas Randolph<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>),

son of Thomas Randolph Harrison and Elizabeth Cunningham, his wife; b. August 28, 1831. Married Lizzie Johnston. Issue:

- I. William M. Harrison<sup>o</sup>.
- II. Lillias Harrison<sup>o</sup>. Married J. J. Knapp, U. S. N.
- III. Sarah H. Harrison<sup>o</sup>. Married Edward W. Eberte or Eberle, U. S. N.
- IV. Thomas R. Harrison<sup>o</sup>.
- V. Randolph Harrison<sup>o</sup>.
- VI. McPherson Harrison<sup>o</sup>.

VIII. Catherine Heth Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Archibald Morgan<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Archibald Morgan Harrison and Catherine Heth, his wife; b. June, 1833, at her father's old homestead "Carysbrooke," Fluvanna Co., Va.; d. in Chestertown, 1899, at her son-in-law's. Married in Richmond, Va., 1854, at Col. Thomas H. Ellis', house of her step-mother, Prof. Robert T. Morrison. She was such an ardent Southerner that she cut up her wedding dress and one other dress to make a battle flag for Captain August's company and it is kept as a relic now in the Confederate Museum in Richmond, Va. Issue:

- I. Thomas Ellis Morrison<sup>9</sup>, b. in Williamsburg, Va. Married Maggie Guy, of Missouri. Issue:
  - I. Kate Morrison<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. B. Morrison<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Catherine Roberta Morrison<sup>9</sup>, b. at Williamsburg, Va. Married James Roy Micou, Ph. D., of Washington College, Chestertown, Md. No issue.

Prof. Robert Morrison first taught a large girls' school in Fredericksburg, Va., and afterwards a girls' school in Richmond, Va.. Then he accepted a professorship at William and Mary College to teach History and Moral Philosophy. He died in Williamsburg, October 31, 1861. He was an ardent Southerner; he was much interested in getting donations for the rebuilding of William and Mary College after it was burned.

I give the following obituary of Prof. Morrison, taken from a leading daily, and tribute of respect written by a "Daughter of the Institute":



## THE LATE PROFESSOR MORRISON.

The remains of the late Robert J. Morrison passed through this city on Saturday afternoon, in charge of the afflicted parent and other relatives and friends of the deceased, *en route* for interment in Lawrenceville. Professor Morrison died at Yorktown of typhoid fever, in the 37th year of his age, in the midst of the important duties incident to his office of Captain of Ordnance, which for some time past he has been discharging with signal ability and satisfaction.

In the last three years he has filled two chairs in William and Mary College; first, the Chair of History, and subsequently that of Moral Philosophy and Belles-Lettres, in both of which he exhibited attainments of rare proficiency. The venerable college is greatly indebted to his friendly interest and unceasing exertions in its behalf, for the revival of its falling fortunes since its destruction by fire. More than aught else that can be said of him, he was a pure Christian; his humble walk in life, his earnest zeal for the success of all Christian enterprise, his gentle character, all the labors of his brief but useful life, speak the simple glory of a man of God.

## TRIBUTE OF RESPECT.

Another of the great and good men of the earth has fallen. Another of the numberless seeking sacrifices, laid on the altar of Freedom's God, has been rendered up, amid the anguish and tears of the heart-broken throng around.

In the death of Prof. Morrison, William and Mary College, Virginia, to repeat a commonplace phrase (but nevertheless a true one), has lost one of the best and bravest of her noble sons—one who was true and devoted to the great cause of Southern independence, and who, long before the events which have since reached their crisis between the two great sections of country, assisted with his whole mental and physical resources Virginia and her sisters to maintain their independence of the North. He, with his far-reaching eye, saw the impending storm which ere long burst upon our heads, and, with the assistance of his loved and able coadjutor, established the Southern Female Institute, and at this day the South would be far less able to cope with the North in educational ability had it not been for their united efforts in the cause of female education. And we do think every female in our fair Southern land should be sincerely grateful for the immense benefits derived from this valuable institution, but more especially should those bow their heads and hearts in humble tribute who were the recipients of his fostering care. They are many, and are spread over a wide extent of country; but wherever the intelligence of his death reaches one of his wide-scattered pupils the shock will come as a death-knell, and each in turn will exclaim: "I have lost a friend, a father!" How often some kind word, dictated by his kinder heart, as the wearied instructor would seek to make the daily task plain to his pupils, will be recalled. Those are the truest friends of youth, those kind instructors, who strive to make the rugged road to knowledge pleasant to the

youthful mind; but, unfortunately, 'tis only when "grim-visaged death" has removed, as in the present instance, one who was so truly loved, that we are brought to a sense of the debt we owe.

Professor Morrison was a noble specimen of a Virginia gentleman. His devotion to the interests of his native State, high sense of honor, his frank and cordial manner, now so seldom seen, which was totally unlike the French and Burr school of mannerisms in one particular, it had all the sincerity of heart which in the latter was wanting, and wanted nothing of its polish.

As a Christian, no better or brighter example could be held up to the youthful pilgrim; for every action of his life was directed by a pure and consistent Christian spirit. No one more truly carried out the commands of the gospel in regard to the duty of each man to his neighbor in all the relations of life. And not only has the department of letters lost a brilliant ornament, the educational department an efficient and valuable instructor, but the Christian church has lost one of the brightest jewels of its crown. And though, of course, as all earth born children we mourn our departed friend, we have still consolation in sincerely believing the Saviour has caught that jewel in falling, and transferred it to his celestial wreath of immortal glory.

Death—the stern, the grim and silent warrior,  
Has once more stolen into the dwellings  
Of the children of men. He wrestled, aye,  
Fearfully, with his victim, and was victorious.

The warrior who, at his country's call,  
Had left his home—his loved ones—all—  
Unmindful of the war god's fiery breath,  
Now, alas! is laid in the embrace of death.

'Twas a noble man—that soldier, bold—  
And all too soon was the summons told;  
For age had not dimmed his kindly eye,  
Or silvered his hair ere called to die.

And, O pitying Father! may we be forgiven,  
Although our loved friend be now in heaven,  
If this murmuring, sinful heart of ours  
Will mourn, and, plucking thorns, leave the flowers.

—A DAUGHTER OF THE INSTITUTE.

VIII. Elizabeth W. Harrison<sup>s</sup> (Randolph<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Randolph Harrison, of Elk Hill, Goochland Co., Va., and Heningham Carrington Wills, his wife; b. Mareh 1, 1823; d. September 9, 1904. Married (December 28, 1848) Alexander B. Gordon, of Baltimore, Md. Issue:

- I. Randolph Gordon<sup>o</sup>.
- II. Henningham Gordon<sup>o</sup>.
- III. Margaret Gordon<sup>o</sup>.
- IV. Emily Chapman Gordon<sup>o</sup>. Married Captain McLean, of the Navy, who died leaving three daughters.

The following is copied from the *Baltimore Sun*:

MRS. ELIZABETH W. H. GORDON.

Mrs. Elizabeth Wills Harrison Gordon died Friday evening at her residence, 1313 Park Avenue, in the eighty-second year of her age. She was the eldest child of Randolph Harrison, of Elk Hill, Goochland County, Va., and his wife, Henningham Wills, of Kentucky. Born in Richmond, she spent the greater part of her unmarried life at the estate of her father on the Upper James River, where she contributed greatly to the attractions of the renowned hospitality of the elegant home. To a striking personal beauty were added the grace of a thorough education, comprising a rare skill in music and an unusual proficiency in foreign languages, with a singular charm of conversation.

She married Alexander B. Gordon, and they resided on Mount Vernon Place in Baltimore until shortly before the war, when they moved to Fredericksburg, Va., where they lived at "Kenmore," then the residence of her mother, which had formerly been the home of Mr. Gordon's father. Here, with her infant children, she experienced to an unusual degree the sharpest trials of the war in the bombardment and other dangers that befell the city.

Left a widow at the close of the war, she returned with her children to Baltimore, and here she quietly passed the remainder of her life.

To her other charms were added in a marked degree the crowning graces of a holy and religious life, spent, so far as her circumstances and health permitted, in acts of charity. She had enjoyed the rare good fortune of being the intimate friend of many important members of the clergy, who had been her pastors and afterwards became bishops of the church; among them the two Bishops Wilmer, pastors at the parish church of Goochland and Bishops Atkinson, Cox, Randolph, Peterkin, and Gallagher, who were in turn pastors of the churches of which she was a member in Baltimore.

The following is the will of Mrs. E. W. H. Gordon, and was published in the *Baltimore Sun*:

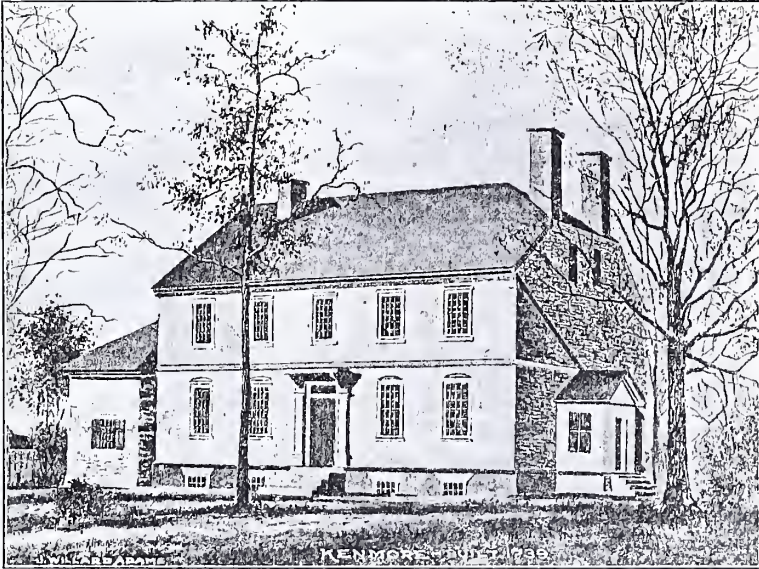
Mrs. Elizabeth W. H. Gordon, by her will filed for probate in the Orphans' Court yesterday, gives to her daughter, Margaret Gordon, the dwelling 1313 Park Avenue, with all its contents except such as are specifically bequeathed. Mrs. Gordon's real estate in Richmond, Va., consisting of an undivided one-half interest in the Shockoe warehouse property and its fixtures, is bequeathed in trust to her son, Henningham Gordon. After the payment of Mrs. Gordon's debts and other expenses the net income

from her share of the property is to be divided into four equal parts, one of which is to be paid to each of her four children, Randolph H. Gordon, Margaret Gordon, Emily C. McLean, and Heningham Gordon. The trustee is authorized in his discretion, upon the written request of any two of the children of the testatrix, to sell her interest in the property and reinvest the proceeds. The trust is to cease as to each of the beneficiaries upon his or her death.

The will also bequeaths \$4,300.00 to Margaret Gordon, daughter of the testatrix, in payment of borrowed money, and to come out of the proceeds of sale of the interest of the testatrix in the Richmond property.

The silver and plated ware of the testatrix and other personal property named are to be distributed in accordance with a memorandum left by her.

Randolph H. and Heningham Gordon, sons of the testatrix, are named as executors without bond. The will was executed March 24, 1891.



"KENMORE"

Kenmore was built by Lawrence Lewis, as a bridal present, when he married Miss Bettie Washington. Some of the decorations were done by British prisoners there during the Revolution. Some of the designs were planned by Gen'l George Washington, President.

I (author) visited the house (1901); it is undoubtedly the most beautifully decorated house, on the inside, I have ever seen. Mrs. Howard was very courteous in showing me all the rooms and telling

so much of interest. I have always regretted not having my notebook with me.

VIII. Julien Harrison<sup>s</sup> (Randolph<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), of Millview, son of Randolph Harrison of Elk Hill and Henningham Carrington Wills, his wife; b. February 6, 1826; d. July 17, 1877. Married, first, Lavinia Heth; second, Lilly Johnston.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Heth Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- II. Frances Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Louisa Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. Virginia Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- V. Julien Harrison<sup>9</sup>, Jr.
- VI. Walter Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- VII. Beverley Randolph Harrison<sup>9</sup>.

Issue by second marriage:

VIII. Hebe Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married (Nov. 27, 1888) Jude Upton Muir. Issue:

- I. Elizabeth Harrison Muir<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Peyton B. Muir<sup>10</sup>.

IX. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married (March 14, 1897) Gen'l John Watts Kearney, of Washington, D. C. Issue:

- I. Elizabeth Anderson Kearney<sup>10</sup>.
- X. Peyton Randolph Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married (June 23, 1903) Louise Wheat.

XI. Alexander Hagner Harrison<sup>9</sup>.

XII. Bernard Johnston Harrison<sup>9</sup>, member of the Union Club, Fifth Avenue and Fifty-first Street, New York City, N. Y. Married (June 19, 1901) Jane Randolph. Issue:

- I. John Randolph Harrison<sup>10</sup>.

VIII. Louisa Harrison<sup>s</sup> (Randolph<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Randolph Harrison, of Elk Hill and Henningham Carrington Wills, his wife; b. October 2, 1830. Married Judge Alexander B. Hagner. She d. February 23, 1905, in her 76th year.

The following obituary of Mrs. Alexander B. Hagner is copied from the *Southern Churchman*, March 4, 1905:



At 11:30 o'clock Saturday morning, February 25, in St. John's Church, Washington, Rev. Roland Colton Smith, rector, the burial service was read over the remains of Mrs. Hagner, wife of Judge Alexander B. Hagner, retired, and warden of St. John's, the rector, Dr. Smith, Bishop Satterlee and Dr. McKim, of Epiphany Church, and cousin of Mrs. Hagner, officiating. The pall-bearers were eminent men in the church and army. Mrs. Hagner was Louisa Harrison, daughter of Randolph Harrison, of "Elk Hill," Goochland County, Va., one of the noted centers of hospitality and wealth in that county, noted for its refinement and culture, where she was born seventy-five years ago, and lived until her marriage, in early life, to the young lawyer of Annapolis, Md., who afterwards became a Justice of the District of Columbia Supreme Court, from which active duties he retired a few years ago. Mrs. Hagner was an active and earnest member of St. John's Church until ill health compelled her withdrawal, and finally confined her to her home and bed where, for several years, she was a helpless invalid awaiting the release and end of the faithful.

Mrs. Louisa Hagner's will was sent as a special dispatch to the *Baltimore Sun*:

WASHINGTON, March 25.—The will of Mrs. Louisa Hagner, wife of Judge Alexander B. Hagner, retired, of the Supreme Court of the District of Columbia, dated April 25, 1895, was filed to-day for probate and record.

By its terms the entire estate is left to Judge Hagner during his life. After his death the surviving executors are to sell the undivided one-half interest of the testatrix in a warehouse property in Richmond, Va. The net proceeds, after paying a legacy to St. Paul's Church, Goochland County, Va., shall be divided into three equal parts, one to be paid to her sister, Elizabeth W. H. Gordon, of Baltimore, if alive, and at her death to her sister's children; another part to be invested and its income paid to Randolph Harrison, of Williamsburg, Va., brother of the testatrix, during his life, and at his death to be paid, both principal and interest, to this brother's children; the third part is to be paid in equal shares to the surviving sons and daughters of Julien Harrison, another brother.

From the proceeds of the sale of the Richmond warehouse property the executors are to pay to the Bishop of the Diocese of Virginia \$2,000.00, to be expended for the permanent benefit of St. Paul's Church, Goochland County, Va. Judge Hagner, H. Gordon, a nephew, and Randolph Hagner, a nephew of Judge Hagner, are constituted executors of the will.

Personal property—china, silverware, jewelry, musical instruments, etc., etc.—is to be disposed of to various persons in accordance with a memorandum filed as an exhibit. The rest of the estate is left to Margaret Gordon, Emily G. McLean, Fanny C. Hill, and Virginia C. Addison, nieces of the testatrix.

VIII. Randolph Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Randolph<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Randolph



Harrison, of Elk Hill and Henningham Carrington Wills, his wife; b. in Richmond, February 12, 1831; lived at Elk Hill. Married (November, 1853) Elizabeth Williamson of Norfolk and moved to Williamsburg, Va. He died in Williamsburg, 1894. Mrs. Harrison was b. 1835; is still living in Williamsburg. I have had many interesting letters from her. They had issue:

- I. Randolph Harrison<sup>o</sup>, Jr., b. 1854. Married (1881) Mary Troupe, of Oregon. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Cary Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1883; d. 1900.
  - II. Louise Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1887.
- III. Virginia Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1890.
- II. Mary Galt Harrison<sup>o</sup>, b. 1855. Married (1876) Gordon Webb, of New Kent; second, William Hartwell Macon, of Hanover Co., Va., in 1885.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Louisa Alexander Webb<sup>10</sup>, b. 1877; d. 1880.
- II. Susan Gordon Webb<sup>10</sup>, b. 1879; d. 1882.

Issue by second marriage:

- I. William Hartwell Macon<sup>10</sup>, b. 1886; d. 1888.
- II. Randolph Harrison Macon<sup>10</sup>, b. 1887.
- III. Nora C. Macon<sup>10</sup>, b. 1889.
- IV. Helen Stanley Macon<sup>10</sup>, b. 1892; d. 1892.
- V. Elizabeth Randolph Macon<sup>10</sup>, b. 1895.
- III. Thomas Gatewood Harrison<sup>o</sup>, d. in infancy.
- IV. Gabriel Williamson Harrison<sup>o</sup>, b. 1858. Married (1888) Sally Webb Burruss, of New Kent. Issue:
  - I. Randolph W. Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1889.
  - II. Carter Beverley Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1890.
- III. Sarah Gordon Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1892.
- V. Carolyn Heth Harrison<sup>o</sup>. Married Sally Stroud, of Oregon. Issue:
  - I. Clifford Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1890.
  - II. Annie Jordan Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1892.
- VI. Lelia Beverley Harrison<sup>o</sup>, b. 1860. Married (1887) Edmund Ruffin Honovet. Issue:
  - I. Edmund Honovet<sup>10</sup>, b. 1887.
  - II. Anne Henderson Honovet<sup>10</sup>, b. 1889.

- III. Randolph Harrison Honovet<sup>10</sup>, b. 1897.
- IV. Roulhae Honovet<sup>10</sup>, b. 1901.
- V. Lelia Beverley Honovet<sup>10</sup>, b. 1903.
- VII. Carter Beverley Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. 1861. Married (1892)  
Caroline Stowe Lenoir, of North Carolina. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Gatewood Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1895.
  - II. Sarah Stowe Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1897.
  - III. Cary Garnett Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1898.
  - IV. Mary Hartley Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1901.
  - V. Charlotte Randolph Harrison<sup>10</sup>, b. 1904.
- VIII. Elizabeth Randolph Harrison<sup>9</sup>, d. in infancy.
- IX. Elizabeth Harrison<sup>9</sup>, d. in infancy.
- X. Robert Tunstall Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. 1867.
- XI. Henningham (boy) Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. 1868.
- VIII. Dabney Carr Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Peyton<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Rev. Peyton Harrison and Jane Cary Carr, his first wife; b. September 12, 1830. Married (1855) Sally Pendleton Buchanan. Issue:
  - I. Dabney Carr Harrison<sup>9</sup>, lives 2021 N St., Washington, D. C.
  - II. Ann Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- VIII. Peyton Randolph Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Peyton<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Rev. Peyton Harrison and Jane Cary Carr, his first wife; b. June 17, 1832. Married Sarah F. Hunter. Issue:
  - I. Jane Cary Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married Rev. B. D. Washburn.  
Residence, Washington, D. C. Issue:
    - I. E. D. Washburn<sup>10</sup>.
    - II. Peyton Washburn<sup>10</sup>.
    - III. Emory Washburn<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. Edmund Pendleton Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married Carrie Webster.  
Issue:
    - I. Sarah Harrison<sup>10</sup>.
  - III. Peyton Randolph Harrison<sup>9</sup>. Married Lillian Gorham.  
Issue:
    - I. Lillian Harrison.

VIII. Virginia Randolph Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Peyton<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Rev. Peyton Harrison and Jane Cary Carr, his first wife; b. March 31, 1834, d. August 9, 1875. Married Rev. William J. Hoge, D. D., February 7, 1855. He d. July 5, 1864. Rev. William James Hoge was b. August 14, 1825, son of Samuel Davies Hoge and Rice Lacy. They were married, February, 1817, at the old home of the Lacys, Mount Ararat. Samuel D. Hoge was son of Rev. Moses Hoge, and his wife, Nancy Griffith, President of Hampden-Sidney College.

Rev. William James Hoge and his brother, Moses Drury Hoge, were both educated at Hampden-Sidney College. The first public speech made by Mr. M. D. Hoge was a Fourth of July oration at Hampden-Sidney, which attracted the attention of many distinguished men. In 1841-44, Mr. Hoge began his labours on the invitation of the session of the first Presbyterian Church, at Richmond, Va., as assistant to the Rev. Dr. Plumer. On March 20, 1844, Moses Hoge was married to Miss Susan Wood, of Poplar Hill, near Hampden-Sidney.

In his daily work at Camp Lee, and in the hospitals, Dr. Hoge was deeply impressed with the fearful lack of Bibles and other religious literature among the soldiers. He made an appeal to the Virginia Bible Society, but with no success. Dr. William J. Hoge conceived the idea of laying before the Christians of Great Britain an appeal for a shipload of Bibles, Testaments and tracts, suitable for army circulation.

Dr. Moses Hoge offered to go himself. The managers of the Virginia Bible Society met that day and accredited Dr. M. Hoge to the British and Foreign Bible Society. Dr. Hoge sailed from Charleston, December 27, 1862. After a short consultation with Lord Shaftesbury, chairman of the committee of the British and Foreign Bible Society, it was announced that the committee had resolved to make a grant of 10,000 Bible, 50,000 Testaments, and 250,000 portions, Psalms and Gospels. The value of this grant was £4,000.

In the spring of 1882, Dr. Hoge's nephew, Peyton Harrison Hoge, came to Richmond to take charge of a mission church. It was a great delight to Mr. Hoge to be thus closely associated with the son of his dear beloved brother, William J. Hoge. Dr. Moses Hoge d. January 6, 1899.

The above notes are taken from "Life of Dr. Moses Hoge," by his nephew, Peyton Harrison Hoge.

Rev. William James Hoge and Virginia Randolph Harrison, his wife, had issue:

- I. Mary Hoge<sup>9</sup>, b. October 15, 1855. Married July 29, 1880, Rev. De Laeey Wardlaw. Mrs. Mary Hoge Wardlaw was for many years a missionary in Brazil; she has written "Candida." She said: "I sighed as I thought of wading through a volume of Brazil life. I tell you that midnight found me poring over the pages, determined not to sleep until I knew what had become of 'Candida.'" This charming book has just been issued by the Presbyterian Committee of Publication, Richmond, Va. It is a missionary book in the best sense of the word, and will be read with interest and profit by young and old.

Issue:

- I. Virginia Randolph Wardlaw<sup>10</sup>, b. July 29, 1881.
- II. Blanche Lewis Wardlaw<sup>10</sup>, b. Aug. 6, 1883.
- III. Mary Louise Wardlaw<sup>10</sup> (called Eloise), b. June 4, 1886.
- IV. Carrie Cunningham Wardlaw<sup>10</sup>, b. July 19, 1891.
- II. Rev. Peyton Harrison Hoge<sup>9</sup>, b. January 6, 1858. Married August 22, 1883, Mary Stewart Holladay. In 1882, he had charge of the first mission church, in Richmond, Va. He has charge (1906) of Memorial Church, Louisville, Ky. He wrote the life of his uncle, Dr. Moses D. Hoge. Issue:
  - I. Virginia Randolph Bolling Hoge<sup>10</sup>, b. June 8, 1884.
  - II. William Laey Hoge<sup>10</sup>, b. November 27 or 28, 1885.
  - III. Mary Stewart Hoge<sup>10</sup>, b. February, 1887.
  - IV. Peyton Harrison Hoge<sup>10</sup>, b. January, 1889.
  - V. Bessie Hoge<sup>10</sup>, b. 1891.
  - VI. Evelyn Cary Hoge<sup>10</sup>, b. August, 1897.

The following notices of the engagement and marriage of Miss Virginia Hoge appeared in the *Baltimore Sun*:

RICHMOND, VA., June 14, 1906.—The engagement has just been announced of Miss Virginia Randolph Bolling Hoge, daughter of the Rev. Dr. Peyton Harrison Hoge, formerly of this city, now of Louisville, Ky., to the Marquis San Germano, of Italy.

Miss Hoge, who has been abroad for two years, stopped over in Richmond, on her return to Louisville, and made the announcement to her relatives and friends. The marriage will take place in August.

#### MISS HOGE WEDS MARCHESE.

LOUISVILLE, KY., Aug. 9.—One of the most brilliant weddings the South has ever known occurred at Warren Memorial Church to-night at 8:30 o'clock, when Miss Virginia Randolph Bolling Hoge was married to the Marchese Emilio San Germano, of Rome.

Rev. Mr. Peyton H. Hoge, father of the bride, officiated.

The ceremony was the outcome of a love affair that began in Italy more than a year ago, when Miss Hoge was a student of music in Rome. The Marchese is a member of one of the oldest families in Italy, his title dating back to Victor Amadeo II, by whom it was granted. He is a Knight of the Garter and is of the Order of the First Knight of the Bath. His only sister is the Duchess Caraccioli.

Miss Mary Hoge, sister of the bride, was maid of honor, and there were five bridesmaids. The gown of the bride was of heavy white satin duchess, made princess, with long court train. Down the front were two panels of priceless rose point lace shaped to the figure, with clusters of tiny tucks at the waist line. Her tulle veil was fastened to her hair with a coronet of orange blossoms.

It is considered conservative to estimate the value of the wedding gifts at \$50,000.

VIII. William Wirt Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Peyton<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Rev. Peyton Harrison and Jane Cary Carr, his first wife, b. February 16, 1837, d. ——. Married (1859) Emily Taylor, of Richmond. Mrs. Wm. N. Harrison's address is 5031 Wells Ave., St. Louis, Mo. Issue:

- I. Randolph Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- II. Emily Taylor Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Lucy Moore Harrison<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. William Wirt Harrison<sup>9</sup>.

VIII. Henry Tucker Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Peyton<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Rev. Peyton Harrison and Jane Cary Carr, his first wife; b. June 12, 1844. Married October 17, 1877, at Good Hope, the Jenifer homestead, Marion Maxwell Jenifer, b. December 7, 1855. Residence, Loek Raven, Baltimore Co., Va. Issue:

- I. Peyton Randolph Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. September 6, 1878.

- II. Daniel Jenifer Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. April 9, 1880.
- III. Bessie Jenifer Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. May 20, 1882.
- IV. Dabney Carr Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. March 4, 1884.
- V. Emily Clifton Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. September 25, 1888.
- VI. Charlotte Lisle Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. June 8, 1890.
- VII. Harry Tucker Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. February 10, 1892.
- VIII. Campbell Jenifer Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. July 6, 1893.
- IX. Lillic Trippe Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. August 29, 1894.
- X. Ruth Ellen Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. July 13, 1898; d. August 15, 1898.

VIII. Willianna Irving Harrison<sup>8</sup>—called Willie (Peyton<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), youngest child of Rev. Peyton Harrison and Jane Cary Carr, his first wife; b. February 27, 1847. Married J. Lisle Turnbull, of Baltimore. Issue:

- I. Janet Graeme Turnbull<sup>9</sup>.
- II. Graeme Turnbull<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Rosalie Randolph Turnbull<sup>9</sup>, b. November 30, 1879. Married October 15, 1902, Alexander Winchester Carroll, b. May 31, 1867. Issue:
  - I. Anne Harrison Carroll<sup>10</sup>, b. Dec. 5, 1903. Residence, 552 Jefferson Ave., Elizabeth, New Jersey.

VIII. Samuel Graeme Harrison<sup>8</sup> (Peyton<sup>7</sup>, Randolph<sup>6</sup>, Carter H.<sup>5</sup>, Benjamin<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Benjamin<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>1</sup>), son of Rev. Peyton Harrison and Ellen M. Smith, his second wife; b. October 27, 1863. Married March 17, 1888, at Thomasville, Georgia, Alice, daughter of the late George Ogston, and widow of F. A. Margrand.

Mr. Harrison lives in England; address, Easthorpe House, Rudington, Nottingham, Eng. Issue:

- I. Graeme Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. April 3, 1889; at Lausanne, Switzerland.
- II. Randolph Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. May 30, 1892, at Leamington, England; d. March 17, 1893, at Pau, France.
- III. Ellen Graeme Harrison<sup>9</sup>, b. November 30, 1893, at Pau, France.

#### ADDENDA.

The *Baltimore Sun* of May 7, 1905, in "Virginia Heraldry," has the following:



Mr. James Taylor, in his book, "Historic Families of Scotland," says the Gordons are one of the oldest and most illustrious of the historic families of Scotland. From the twelfth century to the present day they have taken a prominent part in the public affairs. They have filled the highest offices in church and State. Their exploits have been commemorated in ballad and story. Several members of the family have acquired an honorable position among Scottish authors and poets. "Poor, proud Byron," that most romantic of poets, being a Gordon through his mother. They were early designated as the "Gay Gordons." Young Lochinvar, who came out the west, so brave and so gay, was a typical scion of the race.

There has been much difference of opinion as to the origin of the Gordons. Some writers claim Greece as the cradle of the race, when they came into Normandy; while others are equally positive that they came from Gerdonia, a city of Macedonia. There is no question, however, as to the great



GORDON COAT-OF-ARMS

Arms—Az. three boars' heads erased or.

Crest—A boar's head, as in the arms.

Supporters—Dexter, a unicorn; sinister, a naked man, wreathed about the loins.

Motto—*Animo Non Astutia.*

antiquity of the race or of the fact that the Scottish branch came into Scotland from Normandy during the reign of David I of Scotland (1124-53), from whom they received large grants of land. The first ancestor of the Gordons in Scotland had two sons: Richard and Adam.

Adam Gordon is said to have accompanied Louis of France in his crusade in the Holy Land in 1278. Two hundred years later, in 1449, Alexander Gordon, lineal descendant of Both Richard and Adam Gordon, was created Earl of Huntly.

The Gordons reached the zenith of their power and prosperity during the reign of James V of Scotland, whose daughter was the beautiful, but most unhappy, Mary, Queen of Scots. In 1498 King James V appointed Earl Huntly Lord High Chancellor of Scotland, and he was possessed of almost regal power in the north, the head of the house being known as "Cock of the North." After the coronation of Mary, Queen of Scots, Huntly and his sons set her authority at defiance. The conflict between the Queen and her haughty subjects reached a culmination in the battle of Corrichie, when Earl Huntly was killed, his eldest son taken prisoner and beheaded three days later and his estates confiscated. The movables in Huntly's splendid castle of Strathbogie were divided between Queen Mary and the Earl of Moray. The inventory of Queen Mary's share has been preserved and is very interesting reading, giving an insight into the grandeur and splendid style of living of the Huntlys of that day.

In no long time, however, the house of Gordon rose again from its ruins with undaunted courage, and their forfeited estates were restored. The Marquisat was conferred upon the Sixth Earl by James I of England and VI of Scotland. The second Marquis of Huntly was beheaded for being a Royalist in 1649. He married Lady Anne Campbell, daughter of the seventh Earl of Argyll. George, fourth Marquis of Huntly, was created Duke of Gordon in 1684 by Charles II, "in testimony of his appreciation of the Steadfast loyalty of the family, the sacrifices which they had undergone, and the eminent services they had rendered to the Crown."

George, fourth Marquis and first Duke of Gordon, married a daughter of Henry Howard, Duke of Norfolk. In 1763, during the life of Alexander, fourth Duke of Gordon, the "Gordon Highlanders" were raised on the family estates, the celebrated "Duchess Jane" of that day taking an actual part in the recruiting of the regiment, wearing a regimental jacket and Highland bonnet, offering the irresistible bounty of a kiss and a gold guinea to each recruit. Since the "Gordon Highlanders" were first organized they have fought in nearly every country of the world, winning for themselves an undying reputation for courage and valour.

The Gordon family of Virginia derive their descent from William de Gordon, second son of Sir Adam de Gordon, the founder of the family in Scotland. He received from his father the barony of Stichell and Glenbens, in the stewardry of Kirkendbright, company Kenmuir, Lochinvar, and Galloway.

Sir John Gordon, Laird of Lochinvar, was elevated to the peerage with the title of Viscount Kenmuir and Laird of Lochinvar by Charles I, 1633. Sir William Gordon of Lochinvar, sixth Viscount, unfortunately for himself and his family took part in the Rebellion of 1715. In the old Jacobite ballad he is spoken of as "the bravest laird that ever Galloway saw." Lord Kenmuir fought with the hereditary courage of his race at the Barriades of Preston, was made a prisoner and conveyed to London, where he was beheaded on February 24, 1716. Parliament restored the forfeited honors of the family to John, eighth Viscount, about 1835. From Sir John Gordon, of Lochinvar, father of John, first Viscount Kenmuir, created in

1633, descend the Gordons of Virginia. The first of the Gordon family of whom we have authentic record is Samuel Gordon, of Kirkendbright, who married Margaret McKinnell (b. 1656, d. 1732). His son, Samuel Gordon, of Lochdougan (b. 1722), married on June 1, 1748, Nicholas Brown, daughter of John Brown, of Cragen Collic. Two of their sons, Samuel and Basil Gordon, and a nephew, Samuel, Jr., son of John, Laird of Lochdougan, came from Scotland to Virginia, where all three married sisters, daughters of William Knox, Esq., of Windroe Lodge, Culpeper County, Va., whose wife was Susannah Fitzhugh, great-granddaughter of Col. William Fitzhugh, who came from Bedford, England, to Virginia in 1670. [Fitzhugh, Chapter XVI.]

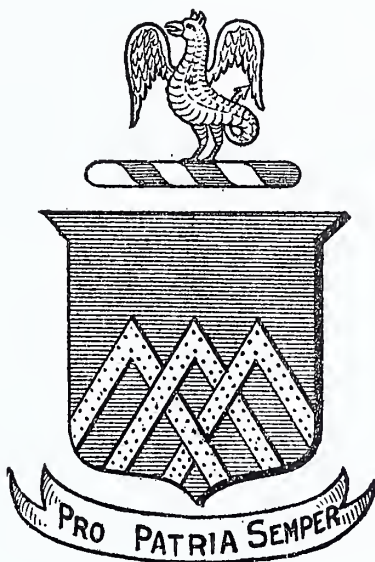
Samuel Gordon, the older of the two brothers, married (in 1798) Susannah Fitzhugh Knox. He acquired Kenmore, near Fredericksburg, Va., the estate of Lawrence Lewis, brother-in-law of General Washington. Many of his descendants still live in and near Fredericksburg. Samuel Gordon died there in 1842.

Among his descendants now living in Baltimore may be mentioned Mrs. Rebecca Gordon Blackford, wife of Eugene Blackford, Esq., and their children and grandchildren; Mrs. Susan McKim Gordon Hays, wife of John Hays, Esq., and their children; Alexander Gordon, who married his cousin, Miss Agnes Armistead, and their children; William McKim Gordon, Randolph Gordon, Miss Margaret Gordon, the children of Thomas C. McLean, United States Navy, who married Miss Emily Gordon; George Armistead, S. Gordon Armistead and his children; Mrs. Minnie Armistead Whiting, wife of Clarence Whiting, and their children; Miss Fanny Armistead.

## CHAPTER XVI

## THE FITZHUGH FAMILY.

[Abstracts made by Miss Henrietta Fitzhugh Barre from Burke's Extinct and Dumant Peerage, Congressional Library, and from other sources.]



FITZHUGH COAT-OF-ARMS

Arms—Azure, three chevrons, brased in base and a chief or.

Crest—A Wyvern with wings expanded, argent.

Motto—*Pro Patria Semper.*

(Barons Fitzhugh, by writ of Immiandries dated 15th May (15) 14 Edward II.)

## FIRST GENERATION.

Although the surname of Fitzhugh was not appropriated to the family before the time of Edward II, it had enjoyed consideration from the time of the conquest, when its ancestor Bardolph

was Lord of Ravensworth, with divers other manors in Richmondshire. He was succeeded by his son and heir, Akiris, who died in 1182. He was succeeded by his son Bardolph Fitz-Henry, who died without issue, and was succeeded by his brother Hugh Fitz-Henry, who died in 1304, and was succeeded by his son Henry Fitz-Hugh, from whom his descendants ever after adopted the name of Fitzhugh.

Lord Fitzhugh was summoned to Parliament as Baron from May 15, 1321, to November 15, 1351. Henry, son of the above named, was summoned to Parliament, and died in the lifetime of his father, leaving a son, Henry, who survived his grandfather as second Baron, and died in 1356, and was succeeded by his grandson, Henry Fitzhugh, as third Baron; he died in 1386 and was succeeded by his only son, Henry Fitzhugh, the fourth Baron, who died in 1424, succeeded by his eldest son, Sir William Fitzhugh as the fifth Baron; he was succeeded by his son Henry Fitzhugh, who married Lady Alice Nevill, the daughter of the Earl of Saulsbury. His children were:

- I. Richard Fitzhugh, his successor; who died.
- II. Alice Fitzhugh. Married Tiennes.
- III. Elizabeth Fitzhugh. Married Sir William Parr.
- IV. Henry Fitzhugh, sixth Baron, d. 1472. He was succeeded by an only son, Richard Fitzhugh, seventh Baron, d. 1508, succeeded by his only son, George, the eighth Baron, d. 1512, without issue. His aunt Alice (Lady Tiennes) and cousin Thomas Parr were next heirs, and here the Barony of Fitzhugh fell in abeyance.

Two of the above mentioned Fitzhughs distinguished themselves at Crecy and Poitiers, another at Agincourt, and two also figured in the Crusades, about the year 1490. Henry, Lord Fitzhugh, of Ravensworth Castle, was married to Lady Alice Nevill, the daughter of the Earl of Saulsbury and sister of Richard, Earl of Warwick (the king maker), and of George Nevill, the Bishop of Exeter and Lord Chancellor of England; they were of the family of Neville, which, says Hume, "was perhaps, at that time, the most potent, both from their opulent possessions, and from the character of their men, that ever appeared in England."

The coat-of-arms which the family of Fitzhugh, in this country and in England still retain, are three chevrons of gold interlaced

on the base of escutcheon on a field of azure, with a Wyvern for the crest (a heraldic animal with the head of a dragon and the tail of a serpent) and the motto:

"Pro patria semper."

Other historians mention the marriage of a daughter of Lord Henry Fitzhugh and Lady Alice Nevill with Lord Beauchamp, who were the parents of Catherine Parr, the last wife of Henry VIII. Queen Catherine was the granddaughter of the last Lord Fitzhugh.

Almost the last Roman Catholic Bishop of London was John, a son of the same lord. One of the Crusaders of the Fitzhugh family built a church at Antioch. Another, Redmond Fitzhugh, was one of the conquerors of England in the time of Henry II. The names of the family residences in England were Ravensworth Castle, Arkendale, Richland, etc., etc., etc.

I cannot furnish you with a clearer idea of the history of the Fitzhugh family than by giving you some extracts from a letter by my uncle Augustine, of King George Co., Va. (who was a dear brother of my mother's). This letter was written to my cousin, Gen. William Henry Fitzhugh Payne, in answer to some inquiries about the family of his mother, who was a sister of your grandmother's (our Aunt Mary).

Uncle Augustine alludes to an article on the Fitzhugh family written by our Cousin George Fitzhugh, of Port Royal, Va., which was published in De Bow's Review of February, 1859, and also refers to Bishop Meade's book, "Old Churches and Families of Virginia," where you will find a brief account of the family in Vol. II, page 192:

You will see that ours is a very ancient and noble family, which has been in England ever since the Norman Conquest, and is of high soul and standing at the present day, and is connected by marriage with the nobility of England.

George Fitzhugh (see De Bow's Review) thinks the family were of Danish descent. Their castle was named "Ravensworth," and the Raven was the standard of the Danes. Besides, William the Conqueror, himself of Danish descent, did not disturb Bardolf, then Lord of Ravensworth, in his vast possessions, but I am convinced they were Normans, for two of them joined the Norman Barons in signing Magna Charta. When Richard I, Cœur de Lion, made a crusade to the Holy Land, he was accompanied by the Norman Barons, and among them was one of our family.



At Runnymede none but Norman Barons were assembled, and among them were two of our name, who signed Magna Charta, and as late as Edward II, when preparations were made for the invasion of Scotland, all the Norman Barons with their followers were called out, and Sir Walter Scott says that "Henry Fitzhugh, Baron of Ravensworth, was taken prisoner at the battle of Bannockburn, in which Edward was defeated by Bruce."

All the Fitzhughs in America are descended from William Fitzhugh, the son of Henry Fitzhugh, of Bedfordshire, England. He was born in 1650, came to this country in 1670. He was a lawyer, and distinguished himself in the profession, being considered the ablest and most successful lawyer of his day. He settled in the "Northern Neck" of Virginia, in Westmoreland County. He amassed a princely fortune and lived in magnificent style, which none of his descendants have been able to reach. He lived at his seat of "Eagle's Nest." He married (in 1673) Sarah Tucker, of Westmoreland, at that time only eleven years of age. She was born August 2, 1663. It is said that her husband sent her to England immediately after the marriage to complete her education. His oldest son, William<sup>2</sup>, married Miss Mary Lee. His second son, Henry<sup>2</sup> (our immediate ancestor. This is Mrs. S. F. Morris's ancestor. She was Fitzhugh.—N. F. M.), was educated at the University of Cambridge, England. On his return to this country he married Miss Cooke, of Gloucester Co., Va.

From William Fitzhugh<sup>1</sup> have sprung all the families of Fitzhughs in Virginia, Maryland and western New York. The Rev. Robert Rose married Ann, the daughter of Henry Fitzhugh, of "Eagle Nest," in the year 1740. She lived to the year 1789, surviving her husband thirty-five years. There are some things in the life and character of the father of this large family of Fitzhughs worthy to be mentioned for the benefit and satisfaction of his posterity. I draw them from his pious and carefully written will, and from a large manuscript volume of his letters, a copy of which was some years ago gotten from the library of Cambridge, Massachusetts, by one of his descendants, and which is now in the rooms of the Historical Society of Virginia.

It appears that he was, during the period that he exercised his profession, an eminent and most successful lawyer, and published in England a work on the laws of Virginia. He was much engaged in the management of land causes for the great land holders, whether residing in England or America. He was counsellor for the celebrated Robert Beverley, the first of the name, and who was persecuted and imprisoned for too much independence. He transacted business for, and purchased lands from, Lord Culpepper, when he held a grant from King Charles for all Vir-

ginia. In all these transactions he appears to have acted with uprightness and without covetousness, for in his private letters to his friends he speaks of being neither in want nor abundance, but being content and happy; though before he died he acquired large tracts of lands at a cheap rate. The true cause of this was his being a sincere Christian. This appears from his letters to his mother and sister, to whom he remitted pecuniary assistance according to his ability, increasing it as his ability increased. The following brief letter to his mother in the year 1694 will exhibit his filial and pious disposition:

DEAR MOTHER:—I heartily condole with you in your present sickness and indisposition, which your age now every day contracts. God's grace will make you bear it patiently, to your comfort, his glory, and your everlasting salvation. I cannot enough thank you for the present of your choice Bible. The money that you say you had present occasion for I have ordered Mr. Cooper to enlarge, and you will see by his letter that it is doubled. Before I was ten years old, as I am sure you will remember, I looked upon this life here as but going to an inn, and no permanent being. By God's grace I continue the same good thoughts and notions, therefore am always prepared for my dissolution, which I can't be persuaded to prolong by a wish. Now, dear mother, if you should be necessary for eight or ten pounds extraordinary, please to apply to Mr. Cooper, and he upon sight of this letter will furnish it to you.

He adds a postscript to the letter saying: "My sister died a true penitent of the Church of England."

His sister had come over to America at his instance some years before and married here, but died without children. Other letters to his mother, who it seems was much afflicted with some troubles, which are not mentioned, he writes in a very consoling manner, bidding her regard her sorrows as from Heaven, and thanks her for pious instruction of him. His habits were strictly temperate. In writing to a friend who was much afflicted with the gout, he tells him the secret of his freedom from it, viz.: That he never was addicted to the orgies of Bacchus, or to the adoration of Ceres or Venus, never courted unlawful pleasures, avoided feasting and the surfeit thereof, and bids him tell the physician this.

Mr. Fitzhugh was not merely a moral man, but a sincerely religious man, beyond the measure of that day. He is not ashamed in one of his legal opinions to quote Scripture as the highest authority. He was a leading member of the Episcopal Church

in his parish. Through him presents of communion plate and other things from English friends were made to the parish. Referring to the unworthiness of many of the ministers who came over from England, he communicated with his friends and with the Bishop of London, asking that *sober, reputable, and educated men* might be sent over instead of such that did come. All this appears from passages in his letters to England. But, were there none of these letters extant, the following extract from his will would testify to his sound and evangelical views of our blessed religion:

(Extract from the will of Colonel William Fitzhugh, of Stafford County, Va., who died in October, 1701. He was the parent of the Fitzhugh family in Virginia, and the patentee of Ravensworth.)

At a court held for Stafford County, December 10, 1701, present her Majesty's Justices for said county.

In the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, Trinity in Unity. Unity in Trinity, Three Persons and One God, blessed forever. Amen.

I, William Fitzhugh, of Stafford County, in Virginia, being by God's grace bound for England, and knowing the frailty and uncertainty of men's lives, and being at present in perfect health and memory, do now ordain, constitute, and appoint, this my last will and testament, revoking all other and former, or other wills, this 5th day of April, 1701.

Inprinis: I commend my soul into the hands of God, through the mediation and intercession of my blessed Saviour and Redeemer, hoping by the merits of his death to have my sins washed away in his blood, nailed to his cross, and buried in his grave, and by his merits and passion to obtain everlasting life; therefore, now do bequeath and dispose such estate as it has pleased God to bestow in his mercy upon me, after this manner following:

After they have disposed of my body to decent interment, without noise, feasting and drinking, or tumult, which I not only leave to, but enjoin, my executors, hereafter named to see decently performed.

Item: I give and bequeath to my eldest son, William Fitzhugh, all these tracts of land following, etc., etc.

Then follow the bequests to the various members of the family.

William Fitzhugh<sup>1</sup> d. in 1701. He left five sons, among whom, at his death, he divided his immense estate—situated mostly in King George, Stafford, Essex, and Fairfax counties. Their names were William, Henry, Thomas, George, and John; and they inherited the estates of "Eagle's Nest," "Bedford," "Bell Aire," "Boseobell," and "Marmion."

- I. William Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>. Married Miss Lee.
- II. Henry Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>. Married Miss Cooke.
- III. Thomas Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>. Married Miss Mason.
- IV. George Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>. Married Miss Mason.
- V. John Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>. Married Miss McCarty.

From above marriages have sprung all the families of Fitzhughs in Virginia, Maryland, and New York.



CHATHAM—HOME OF WILLIAM FITZHUGH

#### SECOND GENERATION.

II. William Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>), of "Eagle's Nest," d. 1713 or '14. Married Ann, only daughter of Richard and Lætitia (Corbin) Lee, of Mt. Pleasant, Westmoreland.

William Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> inherited eighteen hundred acres of land in Stafford and Westmoreland counties. He was made residuary legatee in his father's will of all lands not bequeathed and rights to land in Virginia, Maryland, and England; and £2,000, negroes, furniture, silver, and family portraits. The portraits of Henry Fitzhugh, of Bedford, England; William Fitzhugh, the emigrant;

Henry, his son, and Mrs. Susannah Knox, belong to the collection of ancestral portraits in the possession of Mr. D. H. Thomas, of Baltimore. William Fitzhugh was Justice of Stafford County, Va., and High Sheriff in 1707; member of the House of Burgesses in 1712.

William Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> and Ann Lee, his wife, had issue:

- I. Henry Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, b. —; d. Dec. 6, 1742. Married Lucy, daughter of Robert Carter.

Henry Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, son of William<sup>2</sup>, and William<sup>1</sup>, of "Eagle's Nest," b. 1706; d. 1742, Lieutenant Colonel of Stafford Militia. Married Lucy, daughter of Hon. Robert Carter, of Corotoman. He matriculated at Christ Church, Oxford, in 1722, and on his return to Virginia settled on his paternal estate in Stafford Co. He was a member of the House of Burgesses and was candidate for Speaker. Henry Fitzhugh d. 1742. His widow, Lucy Carter, married, second, Col. Nathaniel Harrison of Brandon.

Henry and Lucy (Carter) Fitzhugh, of Corotoman, left issue:

- I. Elizabeth Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. April 20, 1731. Married (Feb. 21, 1747) Benjamin Grymes. They had a daughter who was twice married—first, to William Randolph; second, to Col. Wm. K. Meade. She was the mother of the Rev. William Meade, Bishop of the Episcopal Church in Virginia.

- II. William Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, of Chatham, b. Aug. 24, 1741; d. some years after the Revolutionary War; was a near neighbor and trusted friend of Washington. The name of Wm. Fitzhugh, of Chatham, in the County of Stafford, Va., as a perfect gentleman, as a most hospitable entertainer, and a true son of Virginia in her Councils, will not soon be forgotten. Married Anne, only daughter of Peter and Lucy (Bolling) Randolph, of "Chatsworth," Henrico, Va. Issue:

- I. Anne Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married Judge William Craik, of Maryland. The Hon. Wm. Craik was the eldest son of Dr. James and Marianne (Ewell) Craik. Dr. Craik, b. Scotland about 1730, came to Virginia 1750; served in the expedition of General Braddock; was a life-long friend of Washington, and one of his physicians during



his last illness. He died Fairfax Co., Va., Feb. 6, 1814. (Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, p. 34.)

- II. Mary Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married George Washington Parke Custis, of Arlington, and was the mother of Mary Anne Randolph Custis, who married Gen. Robert E. Lee.
- III. William Henry Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>, of "Ravensworth," Fairfax Co., Va. Married (Jan. 10, 1814) Anna Maria Sarah, second daughter of the Hon. Charles Goldsborough (b. July 15, 1765; d. Dec. 13, 1834) and Elizabeth Goldsborough, his first wife. Mrs. Fitzhugh, b. Nov. 15, 1796; d. April, 1874, without issue. This branch of the family became extinct in the male line by the death of Wm. H. Fitzhugh, of "Ravensworth." The estate of "Ravensworth" was left to his nephew and namesake, Gen. Wm. Henry Fitzhugh Lee, the second son of Gen. Robert E. Lee, who has recently died.

The following is copied from Bishop Meade's book:

William Henry Fitzhugh was the associate of Bishop Meade at College. He entered life with as fair a prospect for honor and usefulness as any young man in Virginia. Twice only, I (Bishop) believe, did he appear in the legislative halls of our State, and once in a Convention of the same; but such a promise of political distinction was there given that it could not but be felt that a few years would find him in the higher councils of the land. It pleased Providence to interfere, and by a sudden and early death to remove him from this earthly scene. Before this decree of heaven was executed, as if admonished of its coming, he had, after pleading by his pen and voice for the American Colonization Society, directed that all his slaves—amounting, I believe, to about two hundred—should be prepared for and allowed to choose Africa as their home.

Mrs. Mary Custis, of Arlington, the wife of Mr. Washington Custis, grandson of Mrs. General Washington, was the daughter of William Fitzhugh of Chatham. Scarcely is there a Christian lady in our land more honored than she was, and none more loved and esteemed. For good sense, prudence, sincerity, benevolence, unaffected piety, disinterested zeal in every good work, deep humility and retiring modesty,—for all the virtues which adorn the wife, the mother and the friend,—I never knew her superior. A husband still lives to feel her loss. An only daughter, with a numerous family of children, also survives, to imitate, I trust, her blessed example.—(Bishop Meade.)

After the death of Col. William Fitzhugh, about 1713 or '14, his widow, Ann Lee, married Capt. Daniel McCarty, Esqr., of the



Parish of Cople in the County of Westmoreland. He was born 1679; d. May 4, 1724. His tomb is still to be seen at Old Yeocomieo Church. Captain McCarty was Burgess, Justice and Sheriff of Westmoreland, in 1715-20; he was Speaker of the Assembly. Ann (Lee Fitzhugh) McCarty, in her will (dated Nov. 7, 1728, probated Westmoreland, May 31, 1732) mentions her son, Col. Henry Fitzhugh; her brother-in-law, Henry Fitzhugh; her brothers, Thomas, Henry, and Richard Lee; her daughter, Lettie; also Elizabeth, daughter of Maj. John Fitzhugh; her sons, Bellington and Thaddeus McCarty; also her daughter, Sarah Fitzhugh; Col. John Taylor and Sarah Beale.



McCARTY COAT-OF-ARMS

Crest—A dexter arm in armor ppr. cuffed ar, erect and couped at the wrist, holding in the hand a lizard, both also ppr.

Motto—"Lam laidir abu" (Irish). "The strong hand to victory" (English).

The Knight's Motto—"Forti et fideli nil difficile."

She appointed her son, Henry Fitzhugh, and her brothers, Thomas and Henry Lee, her executors. To her son, Henry, she left her grandfather Corbyn's wedding ring. (Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, pp. 86, 87.)

- II. Lettie Fitzhugh<sup>a</sup>, daughter of William Fitzhugh and Ann Lee, b. July 15, 1707; d. Feb. 10, 1732. Married (March 16, 1727) George Turberville, of "Hickory Hill," Westmoreland Co., Va.; apparently no issue.

- III. Sarah Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>. Married (Jan. 5, 1736) Edward Barradall, once Attorney General and Judge of the Admiralty Court of Virginia. They are buried together in the same tomb in Bruton churchyard, Williamsburg. The tomb bears the arms of the Barradall and Fitzhugh impaled.

II. Henry Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>), of "Bedford," second son of William Fitzhugh, the emigrant, b. at "Eagle's Nest," January 15, 1686; d. December 12, 1758. Henry Fitzhugh inherited under his father's will seventeen thousand five hundred and ninety-eight acres of land in Stafford. He was High Sheriff of Stafford in 1715; member of the House of Burgesses for that county, 1736. Married (Feb. 24, 1718) Susannah Cooke, daughter of Mr. Mordecai Cooke, of Gloucester Co., Va. She was b. December 7, 1693; d. November 21, 1749. They left six children:

- I. Henry Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, b. Sept. 18, 1723. Married Sarah Battaile, of Caroline Co., Va., b. Aug. 23, 1731; d. Feb. 12, 1783. She was married Tuesday, Oct. 23, 1746; had eleven sons and three daughters.
- II. Thomas Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, of "Boseobell." Married twice—first, (Oct. 18, 1746) Catherine Booth, d. Feb. 1748; second, Sarah, daughter of the Rev. David Stuart, of King George Co., Va. Had issue:
  - I. Susannah Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. 1757; d. Belmont near Falmouth, Stafford Co., Va., 1823. Married (1766) William Knox, of "Windsor Lodge," Culpeper Co., Va.
  - II. Thomas Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, of "Boseobell." Married Anne, daughter of Col. John Rose, of Amherst Co., Va.:

Their son, William Henry Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>, left a daughter, Ann Eliza Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>. Married Joseph Burwell Ficklen, of Fredericksburg. Their daughter, Ann Eliza Ficklen<sup>7</sup>, married Capt. Daniel Murray Lee, fifth son of Sidney Smith Lee and Anna Mason, his wife.

Mrs. Henrietta Fitzhugh Barre gives the following account of her ancestors:

#### THIRD GENERATION.

- III. Henry Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup> (Henry<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), of Bedford, b. 18 Sept. 1723; d. 1783. [His portrait is owned by Mr. F. L. Fitzhugh, of Bedford

Co.] Married Sarah Battaile, of Caroline Co., Va., b. 23 Aug. 1731; d. 12 Feb. 1783. She was married Tuesday, 23 Oct. 1746. Had eleven sons and three daughters. Issue:

I. Sarah Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. May 7, 1750. Married Theodorie Bland, of England. Had issue:

I. Chancellor Theodorie Bland<sup>5</sup>; became Chancellor of Maryland, which office he filled with distinction till his death.

II. There was another son.

III. Sophia Mayo Bland<sup>6</sup>.

II. John Battaile Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 2, 1752; d. without issue.

III. William Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. April 23, 1754. Married Elizabeth Dedman, of Gloucester Co., Va., who d. leaving one son. Married, second, Sarah Digges, the daughter of Hon. Edward Digges, one of the King's Council, of Little York; d. leaving a large family.

IV. George Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. Jan. 15, 1756. Married Mary Digges, daughter of Hon. Edward Digges, of Little York, and had three daughters and two sons. Issue:

I. Sallie Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married Dr. Thornton.

II. Anne Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married Col. John Baylor.

III. Mary Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married Gen. ———.

IV. Henry Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married ———. Father of Mrs. Henrietta Fitzhugh Barre.

V. George Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>, d. April 20, 1823.

V. Susanna Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. Dec. 28, 1757. Married Townsend Dades, of Albion, King George Co., Va. Had issue:

I. John B. Dades<sup>5</sup> (Col. Jack). Married Elizabeth Slaughter.

II. Cadwallader Dades<sup>5</sup>.

III. Langhorn Dades<sup>5</sup>.

IV. Susan Dades<sup>5</sup>. Married Dr. Isaac Winston.

V. Lucy Dades<sup>5</sup>. Married Walter C. Winston, of Auburn, Culpeper.

VI. Elizabeth Dades<sup>5</sup>. Married Captain Benjamin T. Fendall, of Charles County, Md.

VI. Henry Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 2, 1758. Married Elizabeth Stith; d. leaving one son, the inheritor of Bedford.

VII. Mary Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. April 13, 1766. Married Dr. John Stuart; had two sons and three daughters. Dr. Stuart d. ——. Mrs. Stuart married, second, George Fitzhugh. No issue.

VIII. Thomas Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. March 19, 1762; d. bachelor Nov. 18, 1843.

IX. Nicholas Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. May 6, 1764; d. Dec. 31, 1814. Married Sarah Ashton, daughter of Major Burdett Ashton and Ann Washington. Issue, six sons and six daughters. Mr. Fitzhugh was Mr. Barre's grandfather.

X. Richard Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. Sept. 18, 1766. Married Susanna Meade, daughter of Mr. Andrew Meade, of Brunswick Co., Va. Issue, four sons and four daughters.

XI. Mordecai Cooke Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. March 28, 1769. Married Fanny Fitzhugh; d. leaving issue.

XII. Battaile Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. March 18, 1771. Married Elizabeth Taliaferro; had one daughter, who married Samuel Taliaferro.

XIII. Giles Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.

XIV. Taliaferro Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. Aug. 3, 1775; d. Aug. 18, 1775.

My father, Henry Fitzhugh, of Ravenwood, was the eldest son of George Fitzhugh, the fourth son of Col. Henry Fitzhugh, of Bedford, and Sarah Battaile. My mother was the oldest daughter of Nicholas Fitzhugh, the sixth son of Col. Henry Fitzhugh, of Bedford, who filled a very high position as Judge of the District of Columbia; also was honored and loved for his many virtues, pure and holy life. He was educated at William and Mary College. Both of our grandparents on our father's and mother's side—George Fitzhugh and Mary Digges, Nicholas Fitzhugh and Sarah Ashton—were elegant and accomplished people, ornaments to the polished society they adorned. I might write you some account of the distinguished families of Ashton and Digges, but must refer you to Bisnop Meade's book and other sources of information.

HENRIETTA FITZHUGH BARRE.

I give the following from Rev. Norman Fitzhugh; he has, also, kindly sent me his MS., from which the greater part of this Fitzhugh history is taken:

The Rectory, Bramwell, W. Va., April 8, 1899.

I have just completed this practically accurate copy, changing only an occasional form of expression. The letter of Mrs. Henrietta Fitzhugh Barre was, I think, to Mrs. Samuel Fisher Morris, born Martha or (Mattie) Fitzhugh, who lent it to me.

Mr. Morris is a grandson of the financier. They have three daughters, Mary, Martha, and Charlotte Morris.

By this I seem to establish that my grandfather, Norman Fitzhugh (a Marmion Fitzhugh), was the descendant of John Fitzhugh and Miss McCarty, who seem by the order of names to have gotten Marmion.\*

(Rev.) NORMAN FITZHUGH MARSHALL.

## SECOND GENERATION.

II. Thomas Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>). Married Ann, a daughter of Col. George Mason, of Stafford Co., Va. (second of the name and grandfather of the celebrated George Mason, of Gunston). He died in June, 1715.

II. George Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>). Married Mary Mason, a sister of his brother's wife. Issue one son:

---

\*NOTE.—Page 162, Vol. II, Bishop Meade's "Old Churches and Families," in a note says Marmion is in King George Co., Va.

William Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>. Married Martha (Lee) Turberville, the daughter of Richard and Martha Lee, of London, and the widow of George Turberville, of Westmoreland; they had at least one son, George Lee Mason Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, who has left descendants.

II. John Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>), b. —; d. Jan. 21, 1733. Married Ann Barbara, daughter of Capt. Daniel McCarty, of Westmoreland Co., Va.

II. Rosamond Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>). Married Col. Allerton, of Westmoreland Co., Va. No issue.

### THE MARMION BRANCH OF FITZHUGHES.

I have copied the following from Rev. Norman Fitzhugh Marshall's manuscript without any alteration:

Major John Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>, fifth son of William<sup>1</sup>, the first settler, inherited under his father's will two thousand two hundred and seventy-three acres of land, seven negroes, eight pieces of silver plate, £120 sterling, etc., etc. "Marmion" estate was included in the above. He purchased one thousand two hundred acres adjoining "Marmion," from John Dish, of London. This John Fitzhugh married Ann Barbara McCarty, daughter of Capt. Daniel McCarty, Speaker of the House of Burgesses. Her mother unknown, but at her death Capt. McCarty married Mary Ann Lee Fitzhugh, daughter of Richard Lee and widow of Col. William Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>, eldest brother of Maj. John<sup>2</sup>.

It is necessary to use great care in regard to Daniel McCarty Fitzhugh, there being three persons of that name, between 1760-1786, and there may have been more, viz.: Daniel McCarty Fitzhugh, son of William<sup>3</sup> Fitzhugh and Ursula Beverley, and grandson of John Fitzhugh and Ann Barbara McCarty; his uncle Daniel McCarty Fitzhugh, and Daniel McCarty Fitzhugh, b. May 9, 1763; d. May 2, 1823, without issue. The latter was the tenth son of John Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> and Alice Thornton, his wife, of the "Bedford-Belle Air," branch. All these were known to their intimates as McCarty.

Very little information can be secured regarding the "Marmion" branch, John<sup>2</sup> and McCarty. One writer says that it is impossible to trace this branch further than the third generation down from the first settler; another, that the male line apparently became

extinct in the fourth generation. "But," says Mr. Horace Fitz Hugh, of New York City, who has spent great pains and research on the Fitzhugh genealogy, "they are wrong, for I have found many names that can be traced from the fifth generation back through the 'Marmion' line, to the first settler. Also many names and dates that I believe belong to that line, but am unable to trace them clearly."

They are undoubtedly wrong, for the Marshalls, the Corses, Maj. Norman R. Fitzhugh, of Piecolatah, Florida, and Capt. Norman R. Fitzhugh, his son, of Green Cove Springs, Florida, have a clearly maintained family tradition, that they are of the "Marmion" line. This tradition is sustained by the Frisby of Sassafras River, and the Henderson of Scotland genealogical trees, which show intermarriages with the "Marmion" line. Besides, the Henderson eup in possession of Miss Edith G. Corse, of Jacksonville, Florida, her brother Montgomery owns a copy of "Ridus," 1676, British Museum, a most valuable heirloom in which the entries of the descendants of James and Sarah Frisby have been kept to the present (1902-1905).

The Marmion branch of Fitzhugh family tree, as per my data, is as follows:

I. William Fitzhugh<sup>1</sup>, of "Bedford," b. January 9, 1657. Married Sarah Tueker, b. August 2, 1663; they were married May 1, 1674; d. Oct. 1704. Issue:

I. William Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>. Married Mary Ann Lee.

II. Henry Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>, b. Jan. 15, 1686; d. Dec. 12, 1758. Married A. Cooke.

III. Thomas Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>. Married Annie Mason.

IV. George Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>. Married Mary Mason.

V. John Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>. b. —; d. Jan. 31, 1733. Married Anna Barbara McCarty, about 1719.

VI. Rosamond Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>. Married Col. Allerton.

#### SECOND GENERATION.

II. John Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup>, b. —; d. Jan. 31, 1733. Married Anna Barbara McCarty, about 1719. Issue:

I. Barbara Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, b. —; d. —. Married (Feb. 6, 1739) Rev. Wm. McKay.

II. Elizabeth Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>.



- III. William Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, b. April 13, 1725; d. 1791. Married first, Ursula Beverly; second Hannah ———.
- IV. Sarah Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, b. April 30, 1727; d. ——. Married (April 2, 1747) Francis Thornton.
- V. Anna Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, b. —; d. ——. Married William Allison.
- VI. John Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, b. —; d. Oct. 10, 1772. Married (Jan. 31, 1760) Elizabeth Harrison.
- VII. Daniel McCarty Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, b. June 28, 1733; d. 1786. Married, first, Elizabeth ———; second (Oct. 24, 1772) Susanna Porter; third, Catherine ———.

## THIRD GENERATION.

- III. William Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. April 13, 1725; d. 1791. Married, first, Ursula Beverly; second, Hannah ———.  
Issue by first wife:
  - I. William Beverly Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. March 17, 1756.
  - II. Daniel McCarty Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. March 15, 1758. Married (Dec. 1, 1796) Ann Henderson, b. Nov. 29, 1776. Ceremony by Rev. Mr. Samuel Knox. Present: Mr. and Mrs. John Mason, Miss Peter, Miss A. Stewart, Miss A. M. Rose, Mr. Horatio Rose, Mr. Thomas Turner of Virginia, Miss Kelly Murray, Mr. Thomas Plater and Mrs. Plater. Vid.: Frisby Book (above).
- III. Philip Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. May 4, 1766; d. 1807. Married Charlotte Thornton.
- IV. Theodorick Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. July 20, 1767. (A Theodorick Fitzhugh was at William and Mary College in 1771; mistake in dates or names.)
- V. Lucy Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>. Married (Dec. 3, 1788) Alexander Campbell, of Westmoreland Co., Va., United States District Attorney.
- VI. Mary Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>. Married George Brent, of Woodstock, Prince William Co., Va. Captain in Revolution.
- VII. Elizabeth Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.
- VIII. Anna Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.
- IX. Sarah Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.
- X. Daughter Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>. Married Finch.
- XI. Robert Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.
- XII. John Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.

III. John Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. —; d. October 10, 1792. Married (January 31, 1760) Elizabeth Harrison. He was a son of John<sup>2</sup>, who married Anna Barbara McCarty, and brother of William Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, b. April 13, 1725; d. 1791. Married Ursula Beverly. Issue:

- I. Mary Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. May 29, 1761.
- II. Lucy Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. Feb. 26, 1763. Married Col. William Mayo.
- III. Anna Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. May 27, 1765. Married Geo. Mayo.
- IV. Sarah Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. Oct. 6, 1766.
- V. Nathaniel Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. July 6, 1768.
- VI. William Henry Harrison Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, of Fredericksburg or Frederick Co., Va., b. June 4, 1770.
- VII. Elizabeth Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. March 12, 1772.
- III. Daniel McCarty Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. June 28, 1733; d. —, 1786. Married, first, Elizabeth —; second (October 24, 1772), Susanna Porter; third, Catherine —.

Issue by third wife:

- I. Jane Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.
- II. Sueky Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Elizabeth Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>. Married (June 17, 1800) William Dade Hooe (?).

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

IV. Daniel McCarty Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup> (William<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. March 15, 1758. Married (December 1, 1796) Ann Henderson, b. November 29, 1776. Issue:

- I. Sarah Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>, b. 1797 or '98.
- II. Normand Richard Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>, b. at Strawberry Hill, 7 o'clock in the morning, May 12, 1799 (Frisby Book and Henderson Bible). Married (Vide Records of Alexandria, Va., when part of District of Columbia), Mary Ann Vowell, b. March 20, 1802; d. Nov. 23, 5 a. m., 1840. She was daughter of Thomas and Mary Ann Harper Vowell.
- III. Ann Brice Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>, b. Spring Hill, May 21, 1801, 1 o'clock p. m. Married Rev. W. H. Wilmer, Feb. 5, 1823. (Frisby Book.)

- IV. Janet Ariana Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>, b. at Spring Hill, May 5, 1802, 11 a. m.; d. 1819.

#### FIFTH GENERATION.

V. Normand Richard Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup> (Daniel<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. at Strawberry Hill, 7 o'clock in the morning, May 12, 1799. (Frisby Book and Henderson Bible.) Married Mary Ann Vowell, b. March 20, 1802; d. November 23, 5 a. m., 1840. She was the daughter of Thomas and Mary Ann Harper Vowell. He d. in Alexandria, Va., Sept. 27, 1835.

Norman Richard Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup> left Alexandria, November 4, 1833. Returned to Alexandria May 23, 1834, 12 o'clock at night. "Sister and I went to Mr. Henderson's September 9, 1834; he died 16th; we returned to Harvard 12th November."

Norman Richard Fitzhugh and family, wife and three children, with seven servants, left Alexandria, Va., for St. Augustine, Florida, November 14, 1834. N. R. Fitzhugh, wife and children, returned to Alexandria June 21, 1835.

This Norman R. Fitzhugh, my (Rev. N. F. Marshall's) grandfather, left one hundred and six acres of land on Julington Creek, off St. John's River, thirteen miles above or south of Jacksonville, Fla. It was sold by his son, Norman Richard, in 1904, and proceeds divided among heirs. About forty-two dollars came to me (Norman F. Marshall) during a protracted fever in that year. He left valuable coal lands in East Tennessee, which were unfortunately allowed to get away from the family to pay taxes or to keep records. Papers were destroyed in Corse's fire at Piceolatah, Florida, it is thought. Issue:

- I. Mary Vowell Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>, b. Aug. 13, 1824.
- II. Ann Henderson Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>, b. July 17, 1826.
- III. Margaretta Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>, b. June 16, 1828; d. July 1, 1890. Married twice.
- IV. Richard H. Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>, b. Jan. 30, 1831.
- V. Normand Richard Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>, b. Dec. 8, 1831. Married to Mary Foote Lynde, June 26, 1859, at Camp Floyd, Utah, by Rev. Wm. Vaux, Chaplain U. S. Army. Both living in Florida, 1905.

- VI. Thomas Vowell Fitzhugh<sup>a</sup>, b. Oct. 19, 1833; d. 1862.  
Sent as child to relative John Vowell, Cannonsburg,  
W. Pennsylvania. Not liking it, he ran away to sea;  
in the service ten years. By the influence of friends  
in Richmond, Va., his release from the navy was se-  
cured. He was stationed near Bruges in France,  
having been serving in the Mediterranean Sea.
- VII. Lucretia Fitzhugh<sup>a</sup>, b. Jan. 10, 1836; d. early part 1862.  
Married (Feb. 8, 1854, Wednesday morning, a quarter  
to 8 o'clock, in St. Paul's Church, Alexandria, Va.)  
John Marshall, of Markham, Fauquier Co., Va., he was  
b. Jan. 17, 1830; d. Nov. 27, 1902. Issue—Ambler  
Genealogy, Chapters VI and VII, Volume I.
- V. Ann Brice Fitzhugh<sup>a</sup> (Daniel<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>a</sup>, John<sup>a</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>),  
b. Spring Hill, May 21, 1801, 1 o'clock p. m. Married (February  
5, 1823) Rev. W. H. Wilmer. Issue:
- I. Sarah Janet Wilmer<sup>a</sup>, b. 1824; d. 1837.
- II. Elizabeth Weston Wilmer<sup>a</sup>, b. 1826; d., I think, after  
Civil War. Not married.
- In 1898, December 2nd, the late Rt. Rev. Richard Hooker  
Wilmer, Bishop of Alabama, wrote me:

My stepmother—I do not like to put that word “step” in connection  
with the dearest and saintliest mother that man was ever blessed with—  
was Ann Brice Fitzhugh, the sister of your grandfather, Norman R. Fitz-  
hugh.

After your grandfather's death, if I recollect aright, the care of your  
mother and her sister Margaretta devolved very much upon my mother,  
etc. My father died while president of William and Mary College, and  
was buried in the chancel of the church in Williamsburg, Va., he being  
rector as well as president.

My mother, your great aunt, survived him many years; raised all her  
children and stepchildren to mature years, and happening to be in Wil-  
liamsburg at the time of her death was buried as close to the wall of the  
church as could be—in order that she might be as near her husband after  
death as was possible.

If I have ever done anything in life that is worth doing, it is due to  
that blessed mother.

#### SIXTH GENERATION.

- VI. Margaretta Fitzhugh<sup>a</sup> (Normand<sup>5</sup>, Daniel<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>a</sup>,  
John<sup>a</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. June 16, 1828; d. July 1, 1890. Married

twice—first, Percival Corse; second, William D. Corse, b. March 10, 1826; d. July 27, 1896, in Florida.

She was very cultivated. I remember the fine services conducted by her at Hillside on Sundays during my boyhood, in upper Fauquier Co., Va. She was the chief agent in building an Episcopal Church, since burned, at Piccolatah, Florida. Issue:

- I. Fitz John Corse<sup>7</sup>, b. Jan. 12, 1853, Alexandria, Va.; d. Dec. 30, 1874.
- II. Mary West Corse<sup>7</sup>, b. July 26, 1854, in Alexandria; d. in Fauquier Co., Va., Feb. 9, 1881. Married Robert Turner, son of Mr. Edward Turner, of "The Plains," Va. Subsequently Robert Turner married Pocahontas Meredith. He was afterwards killed by his cousin and brother-in-law, Lieutenant Turner. Mary West Corse Turner was a charming and beautiful young lady. Her daughter is in Fauquier Co., Va., and has been training as a nurse in Johns Hopkins Hospital, Baltimore, Md. Mary West Corse and Robert Turner had issue:
  - I. Margarettta Fitzhugh Turner<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Edward Shirley Turner<sup>8</sup>, lives in Ohio.
- III. Wilmer D. Corse<sup>7</sup>, Jr., b. Jan. 27, 1856, in Alexandria, Va.; d. Sept. 14, 1862.
- IV. Margaretta Fitzhugh Corse<sup>7</sup>, b. Dec. 21, 1857; d. May, 1890, in Piccolatah, Fla.
- V. Montgomery Corse<sup>7</sup>, b. Jan. 23, 1860. Married (Dec. 17, 1885) Anne Peacock, an English lady, in St. Augustine, Florida. Issue:
  - I. Herbert Montgomery Corse<sup>8</sup>, educated at the University of the South, at Sewanee, and Georgia School of Technology, at Atlanta. Mr. Corse is a prominent social and business man in Jacksonville, Florida.
- VI. Norman Fitzhugh Corse<sup>7</sup>, b. June 1, 1862, in Charlottesville, Va.; d. Dec. 6, 1862.
- VII. Douglas Corse<sup>7</sup>, b. Nov. 12, 1864; d. Jan. 8, 1886, at Piccolatah, Florida. He was drowned with Herbert Peacock, in St. John's River, while attempting to fix the government lights. Water was very high, but no one heeded their calls, thinking them entirely safe, being such good swimmers.

VIII. John Burr Corse<sup>7</sup>, b. March 30, 1866, in Alexandria, Va.; d. July, 1866.

IX. Edith Greenville Corse<sup>7</sup>, b. Dec. 11, 1872, at Hillside farm in Fauquier Co., Va. Makes her home with her brother in Jacksonville, Florida. Has lately returned from a trip to Europe, with a cousin, Miss Virginia Corse, daughter of the late Montgomery Corse, of Alexandria, Va.

VI. Norman Richard Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup> (Normand<sup>5</sup>, Daniel<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. December 8, 1831. Married (June 26, 1859, at Camp Floyd) to Mary Foote Lynde, by Rev. William Vaux, Chaplain U. S. Army. Both living in Florida, 1905. Issue:

I. Clara Virginia Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. April 18, 1860, at Fort Laramie, N. T. Died *en route* to the States in camp, on Little Vermillion Creek, Aug. 6, 1860. The dead babe was carried in its mother's arms till nature could no longer endure it, when the body was placed in a trunk, and so the journey continued to West Point, whence the corpse was expressed to Alexandria, Va.

II. Norman Richard Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. Sept. 11, 1861, at "Forest Hall," Spottsylvania Co., Va.

III. Helen Louise Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. Aug. 13, 1866, at the "Refuge," Albemarle Co., Va.; d. Oct. 8, 1872, at "Hill Farm," Minnesota.

IV. Julia Grant Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. at "Hill Farm," Minn., Oct. 30, 1868; d. June 24, 1873, Washington, D. C.

V. Isaac Lynde Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. Feb. 20, 1871, at "Hill Farm," Minn. Married (July 1, 1901) Mary Jane Pacetti—Address, Piccolatah, Florida.

VI. Mary Margaret Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. Feb. 17, 1874, Washington, D. C. Resided on fruit claim at Neptune, Dade Co., Florida; unmarried. She has returned lately to Piccolatah, Florida.

#### SEVENTH GENERATION.

VII. Norman Richard Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup> (Norman<sup>6</sup>, Norman<sup>5</sup>, Daniel<sup>4</sup>, William<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), b. September 11, 1861, at "Forest Hall," Spottsylvania. Married Bertha A. Linton, at Washington, D. C. Issue:



I. Norman Richard Fitzhugh<sup>s</sup>.

II. Julia Fitzhugh<sup>s</sup>.

The continuity of the Marmion branch in the male line seems now to depend on this Norman Richard Fitzhugh, unless Isaae Lynde Fitzhugh has sons after 1904. Norman R. Fitzhugh married B. Linton. He is a well-known St. John's River captain, and owns property at Piecolatah, Florida.

His father, Maj. N. R. Fitzhugh, was appointed to a Philadelphia apothecary as a youth. Went West for his health. In 1854 he was, with one other man, captured by the Ogallah tribe of Indians. Their lives were saved by his adoption as a son by old "Hairy Leggins," their chief, to replace his son, killed in battle the year before. To his influence during the following year was due the successful event of a peace made with this "bad, bad tribe." He was then recognized white chief till he left Fort Laramie. On Gen. J. E. B. Stuart's staff when he, with twenty-two hundred men, made the famous circuit around McClellan on the Chickahominy. Finding the river unfordable, Richard Lee reported, "Lost, lost." Maj. Fitzhugh suggested and aided in constructing a bridge, by which they crossed the river. President Davis called him "Lieutenant," and handed him a commission as first lieutenant, saying, "For distinguished service at battle of Gaines Mill." This was: "Simply standing with others between Lee and consulting officers and the fire of the enemy."

Being ordered by Gen. Robert E. Lee to build a bridge across Stony Creek and Swamp to facilitate provisioning Petersburg in the latter part of 1864, he was promised support to the extent of one-third of the army. After constructing one and one-fourth miles of bridge, work was interrupted by Gen. Gregg and six thousand men. He and one hundred and eighty-seven men filled the wagons with one hundred and eighty-five dead Yankees. Maj. Fitzhugh was captured, escaped, and was captured again, and carried to the mouth of Delaware River. He was here when, for the "first and only time, Gen. Lee issued an order to his army complimenting the services of a quartermaster by name and recommending him for promotion as colonel." War closed before the commission as colonel was issued, and so the Colonel is still Maj. Fitzhugh.

Maj. Norman R. Fitzhugh's life would furnish materials for a brilliant romance. All over the arid West, on the Mississippi; holding sway over Indians, because they knew he would never deceive them; leaving New Mexico with \$25,000.00 in gold, he went East to throw in his lot with his state. "I felt it was my state . . . and my state needed all her sons." And yet, "Never place me, nor write me down, as a secessionist. And, consistently, I could not volunteer, and never volunteered. I enlisted promptly when called by the Governor of my state. I required Mayo to leave the word 'volunteer' out of the oath, and told him if it were not so left out I would not go, and he might do to me what he would." "Thomas (Fitzhugh) was a secessionist. He volunteered before the war began."

Maj. Fitzhugh's wife, Mary Foote Lynde, is a relation of Gen. Grant through the Dents. Her father, Maj. Lynde, was indifferently treated by the United States government, being suspected of Southern sympathies out in New Mexico and Arizona. Losing a competency by an orange grove of seventeen acres being frozen to the ground in a night in 1895, the honest, honored and "hustling" old Major was at seventy-two years making a living in 1904, keeping the government lights in St. John's River near Piccolatah. His sons Norman and Lynde have learned from him mainly their knowledge of machinery. I saw Lynde running his own tug, which he had planned and constructed. His grandson, Norman Richard, was in his turn managing a gasoline launch for the benefit of tourists in Florida.

IV. William Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup> (Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), of Prospect Hill, b. April 23, 1754; d. 1817, son of Henry Fitzhugh and Sarah Battaile, his wife. Married, first, Elizabeth Dedman, of Gloucester Co., Va.; d. —; second, Sarah, daughter of Hon. Edward Digges, one of the King's Council of Little York; d. leaving a large family.

Issue by first marriage:

I. William Dedman Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>.

Issue by second marriage:

II. Anne Harrison Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married Thomas Griffin Thornton, of Ormsby, Caroline Co., Va.

III. Elizabeth Colc Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married Samuel ———.

IV. Sarah Battaile Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>, b. March 20, 1785. Married (1807) Elias Edmund.

- V. Edward Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married Maria, daughter of Dr. Henry T. Thornton, of Caroline Co., Va., and was the father of Edward H. Fitzhugh, Judge of the Chancery Court of the City of Richmond. Married his first cousin, Maria Gordon.
- VI. Cole Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>. Married Catherine Prisley, daughter of Charles Thornton, of Caroline Co., Va.
- VII. Dudley Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>. Married Lucy B., daughter of Thomas Digges, of Fauquier Co., Va.; d. 1860.
- VIII. Thomas Ludwell Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, Miss Powell, of Loudoun Co., Va.; second, Miss Milligan, of Washington, D. C.
- IX. Maria Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married Thomas Catlett.
- X. Battaile Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.
- V. Elizabeth Dades<sup>5</sup> (Susanna Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup> (married Townshend), Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>). Married Benjamin T. Fendall, of Charles Co., Md., who, after his marriage, moved to Alexandria, Va., where he resided until his death, in 1849. Had issue:
  - I. Susan Fitzhugh Fendall<sup>6</sup>, eldest child. Married William T. Marbury, of Prince George Co., Md. Issue:
    - I. Fendall Marbury<sup>7</sup>, of Roland Park, the father of William Marbury, of Baltimore, Md.

Mrs. Benjamin T. Fendall had three other sisters, not mentioned above, Frances Dades, Mary Townshend Dades, d. unmarried, and Sarah Battaile Dades, married her cousin Henry (?) Fitzhugh.

The following extract appeared in the *Baltimore Sun*:

Messrs. EDITORS:—Allow me to correct some mistakes I noticed in the Fitzhugh genealogy, as published in last Sunday's issue, so far as the Dades of Albion are concerned:

1. Townshend Dades did not use an "e" at the end of his first name, but spelled it as the writer spells it; this is immaterial.

2. Elizabeth Dade did not marry Capt. Fendall Marbury, of Alexandria, Va., but married Benjamin T. Fendall, of Charles County, Md., who, after his marriage, moved to Alexandria, Va., where he resided until his death in 1849. His eldest child, Susan Fitzhugh Fendall, married William L. Marbury, of Prince George County, Md. They had one son, Fendall Marbury, the father of William L. Marbury, of Baltimore.

Townshend Dade had three other daughters not mentioned in your record, viz.: Frances, Mary Townshend, and Sarah Battaile. Frances

and Mary Townshend died unmarried. Sarah Battaile married her cousin, Henry (?) Fitzhugh.

B. T. FENDALL.

III. Thomas Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup> (Henry<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), of Boscobel, son of Henry Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> and Susannah Cooke, his wife. Married, first (October 18, 1746), Catharine Booth, who d. February, 1748; second, Sarah, daughter of Rev. Dr. Stuart, of King George Co., Va. Issue:

I. Susannah Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. 1757; d. at Belmont near Fal-mouth, Stafford Co., Va., 1823. Married (1763) William Knox, of Windsor Lodge, Culpeper Co., Va., the progenitor of that family in Virginia. •

II. Thomas Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, of Boscobel, son of Thomas Fitzhugh. Married Ann, daughter of Col. John Rose, of Amherst Co., Va.

Their son William Henry Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup> left a daughter, Ann Eliza Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>. Married Joseph Burwell Ficklen, of Fredericksburg, Va. Mrs. Ficklen is still living in Fredericksburg, Va. She is ninety-one years of age (1906) and possessed of all her faculties.

Her daughter, Mrs. James Parke Corbin<sup>7</sup>, lives with her. Ann Eliza Ficklen<sup>7</sup> married Capt. Daniel Murray Lee, brother of the late Gen. Fitzhugh Lee. John R. Ficklen<sup>7</sup> married ———.

Prof. Ficklen has been at Tulane University, New Orleans, La., for many years. He has written a "History of Louisiana," and recently, "Stories on Louisiana History." Both books are very interesting and are used in public schools of Louisiana.

Mr. and Mrs. Ficklen have issue:

I. Bessie Fitzhugh Ficklen<sup>8</sup>.

II. Edward Porter Alexander Ficklen<sup>8</sup>.

All living in New Orleans, La. (See Mason, Chapter XVII; Jaquelin-Smith, Volume III, Chapters VI and VII.)

II. Thomas Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>), third son of Col. William Fitzhugh<sup>1</sup> and Sarah Tucker, his wife; was clerk of the County of Stafford 1715. He inherited under his father's will four

thousand three hundred and thirty-four acres of land. Married Ann, widow of William Darrell and daughter of Col. George Mason, of Stafford Co., Va. (second of the name and grandfather of the celebrated George Mason, of Gunston). Thomas Fitzhugh d. 1715.

II. George Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>), son of William Fitzhugh<sup>1</sup> and Sarah Tucker, his wife. Inherited under his father's will five thousand nine hundred and seventy-five acres of land. He was a member of the House of Burgesses. Married Mary Mason, daughter of Col. George Mason, of Stafford Co., Va. Issue:

I. George Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>, d. unmarried.

II. William Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup>.

III. William Fitzhugh<sup>3</sup> (George<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), "War Billy," son of George Fitzhugh<sup>2</sup> and Mary Mason, his wife. Married, first (March 28, 1744) Martha Lee, daughter of Richard Lee, of London, and widow of George Turberville, of Hickory Hill, Westmoreland Co., Va. She died November, 1751, and Colonel Fitzhugh married, second (January 7, 1752), Ann, daughter of Peregrine Frisby, of Cecil Co., Md., and widow of John Rousby, of Rousby Hall, Calvert Co., Md. Ann Rousby Fitzhugh d. 1793. After his second marriage, Col. Fitzhugh moved to Maryland, and was made a member of the council there. During the Revolution his house, Rousby Hall, was burned by the British and he was held a prisoner.

In 1754, Lieutenant Governor Sharpe of Maryland was appointed by the Crown commander of the forces against the French; and Campbell, the historian, states that Col. William Fitzhugh, of Virginia, who was to command in the absence of Sharpe, endeavored to persuade Washington to continue in the service. Col. Fitzhugh resigned his commission at the beginning of the American Revolution, as he wished to take sides with the colony. William Fitzhugh was a member of the House of Burgesses for Stafford County in 1748-1751, and County Lieutenant in 1752.

Issue by first marriage:

I. George Lee Mason Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.

Issue by second marriage:

II. Peregrine Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.

III. William Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>.

IV. John Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, b. July 18, 1768. Married Miss Parran.

Issue:

- I. Son Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>.
- II. Son Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>.
- III. Daughter Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married Dr. S. H. Chew, of Maryland.

IV. George Lee Mason Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup> (William<sup>3</sup>, George<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. William Fitzhugh and Mrs. Martha Lee Turberville, his wife. Married Mary Grafton Dulany, of Maryland. Issue:

- I. George Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup>. Married Harriet Richardson. Issue: George Dulany Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>. Married Elizabeth Yellott Worthington, of Baltimore, and they had issue:
  - I. Lee Mason Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>. Married Anna Harrison Thornton, daughter of Dr. Jno. H. F. Thornton and granddaughter of Wm. Henry Harrison, President of United States. Issue:
    - I. Thornton Fitzhugh<sup>8</sup>, resides in Los Angeles, Cal. Married ———, and has three children.
    - II. Anna Thornton Fitzhugh<sup>8</sup>, Los Angeles, Cal.
    - III. Lee Mason Fitzhugh<sup>8</sup>, Jr., resides in San Louis Obispo, Cal. Grandchild of Lee Mason Fitzhugh, Sr.
- George Dulany Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>, resides in La Jolia, Cal.

John Fitzhugh ( . . . . . ), of Bell Air, Stafford, b. June 30, 1727, was baptized by Rev. David Stuart. Married (October 30, 1746, by Rev. Archibald Chambers) Alice Thornton, daughter of Mr. Rowland Thornton, of Crows. He d. May 29, 1809. Alice Thornton Fitzhugh, b. August 21, 1729; d. March 9, 1790, leaving issue:

- I. Henry Fitzhugh, b. Feb. 9, 1748; d. Jan. 15, 1815. Married (Oct. 23, 1777) Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Drury Stith, of Brunswick Co., and widow of Henry Fitzhugh, of Fitzhughsbury, to whom she had been married Oct. 28, 1770, and had issue of one son:
  - I. Henry Fitzhugh, b. July, 1773; was baptized by Rev. William Stuart, and had for godfather his grandfather, Col. Henry Fitzhugh. His father, Henry Fitz-



hugh, was b. May, 1750, d. June, 1777; and his mother was married again to Henry Fitzhugh, of Bell Air, Oct. 23, 1777. Elizabeth Stith Fitzhugh was b. 1754; d. May, 1786, leaving, by her second marriage, issue:

- I. John Bolling Stith Fitzhugh, b. Oct. 23, 1778.
- II. Lucinda Fitzhugh, b. 1782.
- III. Caroline Matilda Fitzhugh, b. June 4, 1784, at Bell Air.
- IV. Alice Thornton Fitzhugh, b. Aug. 15, 1785.

John Bolling Stith Fitzhugh, of Bell Air, son of Henry, b. 1778; d. 1825, at Bell Air, Stafford Co., Va. Married (at Imford, December 29, 1807, his cousin) Fanny Tabb Fitzhugh, daughter of George and Humphrey Frances Tabb Fitzhugh. Issue:

- I. Mary Peyton Bolling Fitzhugh, b. Sept. 14, 1808, at Bell Air.
- II. Eliza Stith Fitzhugh, b. Jan. 6, 1810.
- III. Caroline Matilda Fitzhugh, b. 1811.
- IV. Harriet Washington Fitzhugh, b. March, 1814, at Bell Air.
- V. Ann Frances Fitzhugh, b. 1815, Bell Air.
- VI. George Henry Bolling Fitzhugh, b. Feb. 17, 1818.
- VI. Henry Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup> (Henry<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), of Bedford, b. February 14, 1773. Married (May 3, 1791) Elizabeth, daughter of Catlett Conway, of Hawfield, Orange Co., Va. Issue:

- I. Elizabeth Catlett Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. 1793; d. 1821. Married (1817) Col. John G. Stuart, of King George Co.
- II. Henry Stith Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. 1796.
- III. Louise Conway Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. 1798. Married (1827) Abram Barnes Hooe, of Barnesfield, King George Co.
- IV. Catlett Conway Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. 1800; d. 1827.
- V. Francis Conway Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. 1801.
- VI. Drury Stith Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. 1803.
- VII. Susannah Conway Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. 1805.
- VIII. Susannah Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. 1806.
- IX. James Madison Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>.
- X. Sarah Battaile Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. 1811. Married (1830) James Barbour Newman, of Orange Co., Va.

- XI. Drury Bolling Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>.  
 XII. Ann Wray Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. 1816. Married (1834) Albert G. Dade.

VII. Dr. Francis Conway Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, of Bedford, King George Co., Va., b. 1801; d. 1858. Married (December 5, 1843) Rosa Spence, who d. 1849 and had issue:

- I. William Carter Fitzhugh<sup>8</sup>, b. 1845; d. 1861.  
 II. Francis Conway Fitzhugh<sup>8</sup>, b. Oct. 6, 1847. Married (Dec. 22, 1869) Lola Angles Ashton, of King George Co., Va., and has children.

George Warren Fitzhugh, of William D. Fitzhugh. Married, first, Abby Mays, daughter of Col. John Thom, of Berry Hill, Culpeper Co., Va., and his wife, Abby de Hart, daughter of Col. John Mays; second (November 15, 1871) Elizabeth Frances Gray, granddaughter of Elias Edmonds and Sallie Battaile Fitzhugh, his wife.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. William de Hart Fitzhugh, b. 1850.  
 II. Thomas Cameron Fitzhugh, b. 1851.  
 III. Elizabeth Bland Fitzhugh.  
 IV. Dr. John Alexander Fitzhugh, of Amesbury, Mass.  
 V. Anna Bland Fitzhugh.  
 VI. Eugene Mays Fitzhugh.

Issue by second marriage:

- VII. Henry Fitzhugh. Married Warren Gulie, b. July 20, 1893.

VII. William Henry Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup> (William H.<sup>6</sup> . . . . .), b. December 2, 1819; d. October 30, 1882. Married, first (1846), Betty Ambler, eldest daughter of Carter H. Harrison and Janetta R. Harrison; second (1859), Mary Ann, youngest daughter of Carter H. and Janetta R. Harrison, of Goochland Co., Va. Issue Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.

VI. Henry Fitzhugh<sup>8</sup> (son of George Fitzhugh<sup>4</sup>, of Bunker Hill), of "Sherwood Forest," Culpeper Co., Va., b. —; d. November 23, 1883. Married Jane Elizabeth, daughter of Joseph Downman, of "Moratico," Lancaster Co., Va. Issue:

- I. Joseph Downman Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. June 16, 1838; d. Dec. 28, 1838.

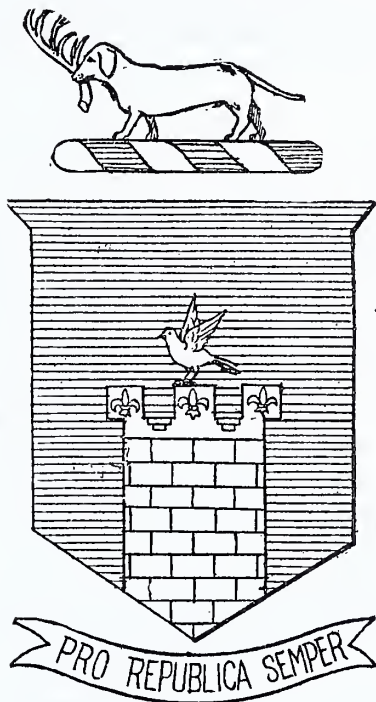
- II. Henry Battaile Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. Sept. 13, 1839. Married, first, Mary Fielding Lewis; second, Miss Martin.
- III. George Downman Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. June 17, 1841. Married Miss Livingston.
- IV. Ella Wilmot Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. Feb. 14, 1843. Married C. P. Custis.
- V. Channing Moore Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. May 18, 1844. Married Altowa Johnston.
- VI. Jane Elizabeth Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. April 4, 1846.
- VII. Roberta Yates Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. March 10, 1848. Married (Nov. 29, 1877) Horace L. Ball, of Lancaster Co., Va.
- VIII. Joseph Downman Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. Nov. 26, 1849.
- IX. Lola Harrison Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. Oct. 6, 1852. Married Lombard Mitchell.
- X. Luey Stewart Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. May 10, 1854.
- XI. Virginia Meade Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. Dec. 1, 1856. Married L. S. Daniel.
- XII. Frances Ravenscroft Fitzhugh<sup>7</sup>, b. March 14, 1859.
- V. Battaile Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup> (Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>), of Santee, Caroline Co., Va. Married Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Lawrence Taliaferro, of Rose Mill, Orange Co., Va., and had issue:
  - I. John B. Patsy Fitzhugh<sup>6</sup>. Married Samuel Gordon, of Kenmore, near Fredericksburg, Va.
  - V. Richard Fitzhugh<sup>5</sup> (Henry<sup>4</sup>, Henry<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>). Married Ann Meade.

From the marriage of Susannah Fitzhugh, daughter of Thomas, of Boscobel, to William Knox, of Windsor Lodge, and the marriage of their two daughters to Basil and Samuel Gordon, are descended several prominent families now living in Baltimore, namely:

Gordon Armistead, George Armistead, Dr. William Dabney, Mrs. Alexander Gordon, Mrs. Clarence Whiting, Mrs. William Blackford, Mrs. Emily B. Poultney, Eugene Blackford, Douglas H. Thomas, J. Thomas Marshall, Miss Natalie Contee Thomas, J. Hanson Thomas, Douglas H. Thomas, Jr., Douglas H. Gordon, Mrs. J. J. Lovell, Douglas Lovell, Starrow Lovell, Mrs. Triplett Haxall, Misses Ann and Mary Gordon Thom, Mrs. John Carroll, Mrs. Nannie Thomas Duvall, and Miss McLean.

## CHAPTER XVII

## THE MASON FAMILY.



THE MASON ARMS

Arms—Argent. A point, three battlements, charged, each with a fleur de lis, and on the middle battlement a dove with wings displaced, proper.

Crest—A talbot, passant, regardant, holding in its mouth the horn of a stab.

Virginia is renowned for her many great men, but few of her families number so many of these as the Mason family.

The colonist was Captain George Mason (1626-1686), born in Staffordshire, England, in 1626 (*Va. Hist. Mag.*). He belonged to the family of Masons of Warwickshire, domiciled at "Mason

Croft," Stratford-on-Avon. This old Elizabethan seat of the Mason family is the present residence of Marie Corclli, the well-known novelist. The last of the Mason name who lived there died about forty years ago.

Capt. George Mason, progenitor of the Mason family of Virginia, was a royalist in the contest between King Charles and the Parliament. He commanded a troop of horse in the royal army at the disastrous battle of Worcester, in 1651, when the power of King Charles I was crushed and destroyed by the army of Cromwell.

Capt. George Mason, after the defeat, escaped from the battlefield, and, with the assistance of some friendly peasants, made his way, disguised, to his home, and then, having been joined by some of his family, friends, and fellow-refugees, he boarded the good ship "Assurance" and in due time was landed in Norfolk, Virginia. He was accompanied by his cousin, Col. Gerard Fowke, who, also, was an officer in King Charles' army, in which he was Colonel of Cavalry. He also held the position of Gentleman of the Bed Chamber to King Charles I. Col. Gerard Fowke died in Virginia subsequent to 1672, surviving his son Gerard.

Capt. George Mason brought to Virginia with him his wife, Mary, his brother, William, and a nephew who removed to Boston, Mass., married there, and was the progenitor of a large number of descendants. There were seventeen persons in Capt. Mason's party of colonists on the "Assurance," because, in 1655, as "Captain George Mason," he located lands in Westmoreland County as having brought eighteen persons into the colony as settlers.

Capt. George Mason became a leading citizen of Westmoreland County, and in 1661, when a new county was cut from it, Capt. Mason's influence caused it to be named Stafford, after his English home.

His home on the Potomac was called Accokeek. It was situated near Paspitansey, the residence of the Indian King Wabanganochee, and which was afterwards the location of Gunston Hall, and there lived the Gunston branch of the Mason family of Virginia. Capt. Chandler Fowke died there in 1745, and not in Maryland.

Capt. George Mason was Sheriff of Stafford County in 1670, at which time he was known as Maj. George Mason. He was

made County Lieutenant and commander of its militia in 1675, which position carried with it the title and authority of Colonel. He was engaged in the Indian warfare that led to Bacon's Rebellion in 1676. He represented his county in the House of Burgesses in what went by the name of the "Bacon Assembly" of 1676. That he was conspicuous in the wars with the Indians is shown by the acts of 1675, 1679, and 1684, when he was engaged in defending the frontier. In Bacon's Rebellion he espoused the side of the people in the House of Burgesses.

Col. George Mason died at Accokeek, Stafford County, Va., in 1686, and was buried there.

Col. George<sup>2</sup> Mason (George<sup>1</sup>), the second of the name, was b. in Accokeek, Stafford County, Va., in 1670. He was the son of George and Mary Mason, of England.

He was appointed Justice of the Peace of Stafford County in 1689, and served as such until 1699. In 1692 he was made Sheriff of Stafford County. In 1699-1700 he was appointed County Lieutenant and Colonel of Militia by Governor Nicholson. His letter of appointment is still extant and bears the seal of the Governor in perfect preservation, showing a heart pierced with two arrows and surmounted by a crown.

Col. George Mason, like his father, was a soldier by taste and profession. An order was issued from Jamestown, July 10, 1700, to "Lieutenant Colonel George Mason, commander-in-chief of militia," requiring him to detail a force of "twelve men and two officers to serve as rangers in the county for its greater security."

In 1694 Col. George<sup>2</sup> Mason sold the estate of his father, Col. George<sup>1</sup> Mason, at "Accokeek," on the Potomac. He reserved only, in the act of sale, the tomb of his father and the lot on which it stands, which was to remain the property of the said George<sup>2</sup> Mason and his heirs forever.

Col. George<sup>2</sup> Mason owned large estates at the time of his death in 1716. He married three times:

First, married (prior to 1694) Mary, daughter of Col. Girard Fowke, the second of that name in Virginia, and his wife Ann, daughter of Capt. Adam Thoroughgood and his wife Sarah Offley and widow of Col. Job Chandler. Ann Thoroughgood administered on her first husband, Col. Job Chandler's estate, October 30, 1669. (See records Charles County, Md.) The children were:



1. George<sup>3</sup> Mason (George<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>).
2. French Mason.
3. Nicholas Mason.
4. Elizabeth Mason.
5. Lympha Rosa Enfield Mason. Married, first, John Dinwiddie; second, Col. Jeremiah Bronaugh.

Margaret Mason Bronaugh was b. 1770. Married Mr. Robert Herford of Virginia. She was daughter of Dr. John Bronaugh, who married Ann Carter of Cleves. Dr. John Bronaugh was son of Jeremiah Bronaugh, who became the second husband of Lympha Rosa Enfield Mason, widow of John Dinwiddie, and daughter of Col. George Mason, grandfather of Col. George Mason, of Gunston Hall.

In the old Truro Parish vestry book we find:

At a vestry held for Truro Parish, this 19th day of August, 1736, there were present Jeremiah Bronaugh, church warden; Denis McCarty, Augustine Washington, Robert Osborn, John Thurman, William Godfrey, James Baxter and Thomas Lewis, vestrymen.

Mr. Charles Green being recommended to this vestry by Captain Augustine Washington as a person qualified to officiate as a minister in this parish, as soon as he shall receive orders from His Grace the Bishop of London to qualify himself for the same, it, therefore,

Ordered by this vestry, that as soon as the said Green has qualified himself as aforesaid he be received and entertained as minister of the said parish, and the said vestry do humbly recommend said Chas. Green to the Right Honorable Thomas, Lord Fairfax, for his letters of recommendation and presentation to His Grace, the aforesaid Lord Bishop of London, to qualify himself as aforesaid.

This Rev. Charles Green served the Falls Church, or, as then called, the "Upper" or "New" church, in Truro Parish, as rector for many years. Augustine Washington named was the father of Gen. George Washington.

The second wife of Col. George<sup>2</sup> Mason was Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. John Waugh, by whom he had three daughters:

1. Catherine<sup>3</sup> Mason. Married John Mercer.
2. Anne<sup>3</sup> Mason. Married Thomas, third son of Col. Wm. Fitzhugh.
3. Mary<sup>3</sup> Mason. Married George, of "Marmion," fourth son of Col. William Fitzhugh, the colonist. (Fitzhugh, Chapter XVI.)

Anne<sup>3</sup> Mason had no children. Mary<sup>3</sup> Mason had many descendants.

The third wife of Col. George<sup>2</sup> Mason was Sarah (surname and parents unknown), by whom he had three children:

1. Frances<sup>3</sup> Mason.
2. Thomas<sup>3</sup> Mason.
3. Sarah<sup>3</sup> Mason.

Col. George<sup>3</sup> Mason (George<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), son of George<sup>2</sup> Mason and Mary Fowke, was born 1690, and died in Charles County, Md., 1735. He was Justice of the Peace and Sheriff of Stafford County in 1713, and, like his father and grandfather, was County Lieutenant and Commander-in-Chief of the Militia of the County (Stafford), receiving his commission from Governor Spotswood in 1719. His position enabled him to extend courtesies to the Scotch merchants and their agents in Virginia who were becoming interested in the settlement and trade of the colony. Col Mason<sup>3</sup> was made Burgess and Guild Brother of the City of Glasgow in 1720.

He represented Stafford County in the Virginia Assembly in 1718-23-26. The county originally embraced all that part of the Northern Neck north of Westmoreland County. Col. Mason owned estates on both banks of the Potomac, in Virginia and in Maryland, and it was while living on one of his estates in Charles County, Maryland, that he was drowned while crossing the river.

Col. George<sup>3</sup> Mason was one of the fifty gentlemen adventurers who accompanied Governor Spotswood in 1716 on his famous expedition across the Blue Ridge Mountains, and by "drinking the health of His Majesty on the summit of Mount George" he became qualified to receive at the hands of the order the title of "Knight of the Golden Horseshoe," and to wear a gold horseshoe in token of the same.

Col. George<sup>3</sup> Mason married (1721) Ann, daughter of Steven Thomson, Attorney General of Virginia during several years of Queen's Anne's reign, and granddaughter of Sir William Thomson, of London. Three of their children reached maturity:

1. George<sup>4</sup> Mason (George<sup>3</sup>, George<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), of Gunston Hall, Stafford Co., Va.
2. Thomson<sup>4</sup> Mason, b. 1732; d. 1785.
3. Mary<sup>4</sup> Thomson Mason.

George<sup>4</sup> Mason (George<sup>3</sup>, George<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), of Gunston Hall, son of Col. George Mason and Ann Thomson, born at Doeg's (afterwards Mason's) Neck, Fairfax County, Va., in 1725; died there October 7, 1792. After his marriage to Ann, daughter of Col. William Ellbrick, he built "Gunston Hall," on the Potomac, where "Paspitansey," the residence of the Indian King, Wabanganochee, formerly stood. Gunston Hall continued in possession of the Mason family until after the civil war of 1861-5.

George Mason, of Gunston, was preëminently a patriot of the American Revolution. His settlement was in Truro Parish, which included Mount Vernon estate, on the Potomac, and he became the intimate friend of Washington, his neighbor and fellow-parishioner. Being an intelligent student of history as well as versed in international law, and having, in addition to his legal attainments, liberal sentiments, fine powers of reasoning and sound judgment, Mason was a valuable adviser to the future leader of the Revolution.

George Mason, of Gunston, drafted the non-importation resolutions which Washington presented to the Virginia Assembly, and procured their adoption in 1769. One of these resolutions pledged the Virginia planters to purchase no slaves imported after November 1st of that year. These resolutions were unanimously adopted.

In support of the political rights of his state, Mason printed a pamphlet entitled, "Extracts from the Virginia Charters, with Some Remarks Upon Them," and at a "meeting of the people," in Fairfax County, July 18, 1774, he presented a series of twenty-four resolutions on the questions at issue between Great Britain and her colonies, which were approved by the Virginia convention in August, 1774, and substantially reaffirmed by the Continental Congress in October of the same year.

In 1775 he was a member of the Virginia convention. He declined an election to the constitutional congress, which was pressed upon him, withdrawing in favor of Francis Lightfoot Lee, and reluctantly consented to serve as a member of the Committee of Safety, which, for a time, exercised supreme powers of government for mutual protection. In May, 1776, he drafted the celebrated "Declaration of Rights" and "Plan of Government," which were adopted June 12th and 29th. In the revision of the statutes

of Virginia his liberal sentiments were conspicuous, and his talent in debate elicited universal admiration. He was a member of the Continental Congress of 1777, and of the Convention for forming the Federal Constitution in 1787. In the latter body Mason took a conspicuous part, proposing that the selection of President should be by direct popular vote, and for a single period of seven years. He opposed the postponement of the repeal of the slave-trade laws, and the counting of slaves as a basis for representation, and the establishment of a property qualification for suffrage. Notwithstanding Mason's efforts several features, which he considered dangerous and tending to establish autocracy and aristocracy, were incorporated in the constitution, which in consequence he afterwards refused to sign; and having been elected to a membership of the Virginia convention called to ratify the new constitution, he united with Patrick Henry in demanding its rejection unless some twenty amendments should first be made. Several of these amendments were afterwards substantially embodied and adopted by the several states, and now form part of the constitution.

George Mason, of Gunston, was elected one of the first senators from Virginia to the United States Congress, but declined the post and spent the remainder of his life in retirement, enjoying the pleasures of a country gentleman in hunting, fishing and congenial studies. He died October 7, 1792, and was buried at Gunston Hall.

His statue is one of the group which surrounds that of Washington in front of the State capitol at Richmond. (See his life by Kate Mason Rowland, 2 Vols., N. Y., 1892.)

President James Madison pronounced Mason to be the ablest debater he had ever known. His talents in this direction were displayed in the first legislature that was held under the new constitution of Virginia, when he brought forward a measure for the repeal of all the old disabling acts, the legalizing of all forms of religious worship, and the releasing of dissenters from the Church of England, from the payment of parish rates.

In the discussion of the question whether the House of Representatives of the United States should be chosen directly by the people, he maintained that no republican form of government could stand without popular confidence, and that confidence could

only be secured by giving the people the selection of one branch of the legislature. He also spoke with great energy against the clause which prohibited the abolition of the slave trade until 1808, declaring that as it was recognized that slavery was a source of national weakness and demoralization, the general government should be given power to prevent its increase.

Col. George Mason, of Gunston, is referred to by Thomas Jefferson as a man of the first order of wisdom, of expansive mind, profound judgment; cogent in argument, learned in constitutional law, and earnest for a republican form of government on democratic principles. He is described, when fifty years of age, as of commanding presence and lofty bearing, of an athletic and robust frame, a swarthy complexion, with black hair, sprinkled with grey; grave face and dark, radiant eyes.

Col. George Mason, of Gunston, changed the motto on his family coat-of-arms from its original English form, "*Pro patria semper*," to a more American one, "*Pro republica semper*." However, his brother and other members of the family preserved the original form. George Mason quartered the Thomson arms with those of Mason. His mother, Miss Anna Thomson, was of the Yorkshire family of that name.

Col. George Mason, of Gunston, married Ann, daughter of Col. William Ellbrick, of Maryland. She died at the age of thirty-nine years. They had children:

1. George Mason<sup>5</sup> (George<sup>4</sup>, George<sup>3</sup>, George<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>), a Captain in the Revolutionary Army.
2. Hon. William Thomson Mason, of "Hollins Hall." Married Sarah McCarty.
3. John Mason.

In "Boogher's Gleanings from Virginia's History," we find "Gentlemen Justices of the Peace for Loudoun County."

May, 1778—George Mason, Lieutenant.

May, 1781—William T. Mason, Ensign.

Dec., 1782—William Mason, First Lieutenant.

After many years a widower, George Mason, of Gunston Hall, married a lady named Brent, of whom there was no issue.

Capt. George<sup>5</sup> Mason, of Gunston, son of Col. George<sup>4</sup> Mason and Ann Ellbrick, had a son who became Gen. John<sup>6</sup> Mason, of



Analostan on Mason's Island, in the Potomac opposite Washington. He married (Naney) Elizabeth Murray, of Maryland, about 1773.

Gen. John Mason<sup>6</sup> and Naney Murray had issue:

- I. James<sup>7</sup> Murray Mason, of Analostan Island, b. Nov. 28, 1798; d. Alexandria, Va., Nov. 28, 1871.

He studied law, and in 1820 began its practice in Winchester, Va. In 1826 he was elected to the Virginia House of Delegates and was twice reelected. In 1837 he was elected to the United States House of Representatives. He declined a reelection and returned to the practice of law. In 1847 he was appointed to the United States Senate to fill a vacancy, and in 1849, and again in 1855, he was reelected. He took a prominent part in the Senate for several years as Chairman of the Committee on Foreign Relations. He drafted the Fugitive Slave Law of 1850. He took an early part in the secession movement, which action of course disqualified him from further service as a senator. After his expulsion from the Senate he was appointed by the Confederate Government Commissioner to England and France; and, November 8, 1861, with his colleague, John Slidell, of Louisiana, he was captured in the Bahama Channel, on board the British mail steamship *Trent*, by Capt. Wilkes, of the United States Navy. He was confined at Fort Warren, Boston Harbor, until January 2, 1862, when he was given up to the British government. During the remainder of the war he resided chiefly in Paris, as the representative of the Confederacy. After its close he went to Canada, where he resided three years and then returned to Virginia.

James Murray Mason<sup>7</sup> married Eliza Chew about 1824. They had issue:

1. Anna Mason<sup>8</sup> (1826-1863). Married (Aug. 5, 1847) Rev. John Ambler, b. "Morven," Fauquier Co., April 8, 1821. (Ambler, Chapters VI and VII, Volume I.)

Hon. Thomson Mason<sup>5</sup>, of "Hollins Hall," son of George Mason, of Gunston, and Ann Ellbriek, married Sarah McCarty and had issue:

1. George Washington Mason. Married Mrs. Patton.
2. William Mason.
3. Judge Thomson F. Mason. Married Miss Price.



4. Elizabeth Mason. Married (her cousin) George Mason, and had issue:

1. John McCarty Mason.
2. George Thomson Mason.

5. Dr. Richard Chichester Mason. Married Luey, daughter of Col. Robert Randolph Mason (son of William), of Fauquier County, Va., and his wife, Eliza, daughter of Charles Carter, of "Shirley," and his wife, Mary W. Carter, of Cleve. They had issue:

1. Robert I. Mason.
2. Dr. Randolph F. Mason.
3. Lueius Mason, d. young.
4. Eliza Mason.
5. Rev. Dr. Richard Randolph Mason, d. 1884. Married Elizabeth Van Dyke, daughter of Rt. Rev. John Johns, D. D., Bishop of Virginia, and his wife, Juliana Johnson.
6. Luey Mason.
7. Boynton T. Mason.
8. Eliza L. Mason, d. 1864.
9. Beverly Randolph Mason, C. S. A. Married Elizabeth Nelson.
10. Eva Mason. Married Robert Heth.
11. John Stevens Mason, C. S. A. Married Eliza, daughter of Robert and Jane (Carter) Beverly.
12. Rev. Landon B. Mason, C. S. A. Married (1875) Luey, daughter of Rev. John Ambler, C. S. A.
13. William Pinkney Mason, C. S. N. Married Miss McGill.

William Thomson Mason<sup>4</sup> (1732-1785), second son of Col. George Mason<sup>3</sup> and Ann Thomson, and only brother of George Mason, of Gunston Hall, studied law in London and attained eminence in its practice. On his return to Virginia he became a member of the Supreme Court of the state and also of the House of Delegates. He owned large estates in Loudoun County. He lived on his estate, "Raspberry Plain," the mansion-house of which he built.

Thomson Mason<sup>4</sup>. Married, first, a daughter of Abraham Barnes, of Tudor Hall, Leonardtown, Md., and second, the widow Wallae, born Miss Westwood.

The children of Thomson Mason and Miss Barnes were as follows:

1. Steven Thomson Mason<sup>5</sup> (1760-1803). Married Mary Elizabeth Armistead, daughter of Robert Armistead, "Serenity Hall," Louisa Co., Va.
2. Ann Thomson Mason<sup>5</sup>. Married Richard McCarty Chichester.
3. John Thomson Mason<sup>5</sup> (1764-1824), removed to Maryland, studied law, and rose to high rank in the profession. He married Miss Betzhover. Their children were:
  1. Louisa Mason<sup>6</sup>. Married Mr. Terry<sup>6</sup>, U. S. N.
  2. John Thomson Mason<sup>6</sup>.
  3. Elizabeth Mason<sup>6</sup>. Married Admiral Theodore Porter, U. S. N.
  4. Barnes Thompson Mason<sup>5</sup>.

In William and Mary College Quarterly, Vol. XIII, No. 3, January 3, 1905, pp. 179-80-81, Miss Emily Maerae, of Orangefield, Stafford County, gives some interesting facts about the Wallae family:

I will hereafter narrate a romantic incident, which caused Elizabeth, who was the Widow Wallace, to move to Chappawansic, Prince William County, Va.

Elizabeth Westwood's mother was a Miss Howard, of the house of Norfolk, of England. (For an account of the Howard family, see William and Mary Quarterly II, pp. 167, 168.) Elizabeth Westwood's mother or grandmother was a cousin of Ann Boleyn.

One of Elizabeth Westwood's sisters married Col. Robert Armistead, of Louisa County, Va. Their daughter Polly Armistead (Mary E. Armistead) was a celebrated beauty and belle. She married Stevens Thomson Mason, of "Raspberry Plain," Loudoun Co., Va. Her oldest son, Armistead Mason, was killed in a duel by Mr. McCarthy. Her son, Jack (John) Mason, went to Michigan, where he was several times elected Governor. His son, John, was also elected Governor of that State. Her oldest daughter, Catherine Mason, married Mr. Barry, an eminently talented man, who was Postmaster General under General Jackson's auspices, and wielded considerable influence. He left one son, called Jackson. After Mr. Barry's death, his widow married Judge Hicks, of Kentucky.

Her daughter, Emily Mason, married Mr. McCarthy, whose only remaining son, Dr. James McCarthy, lives in Richmond, Va.

Mrs. Gen. Chilton, Mrs. Rowland and Miss Emily Mason are the daughters of the late ex-Governor Jack (John) Mason. One of Elizabeth

Westwood's sisters married Mr. King, of Norfolk. After his death, she married Dr. McClurg, of Hampton. Dr. McClurg's son married Miss Selden, of Buck Roe, near Hampton. Their daughter married Mr. Wickham, of Richmond, a distinguished lawyer. William Wirt says Mr. Thomson Mason was the most distinguished lawyer that Virginia had produced up to this time. He was brother of the statesman, George Mason, of Gunston Hall.

Now comes the romance:

When Elizabeth Westwood was about sixteen years of age, she made a visit to her cousins, the daughters of Governor Digges, one of the Colonial Governors, who was living at Denby, near Williamsburg, Va. Whilst there, there was a great deal of talk about an Assembly ball, which was to come off at Williamsburg, and as Elizabeth Westwood did not leave home with the expectation of attending the Assembly, she was not prepared, having left her party costume in Hampton, where she lived. Her cousins, the Digges family, insisted on her remaining to attend the Assembly, saying they would lend her a dress. Yielding to their importunities, she decided to remain and wear her own simple white dress. Soon after the guests assembled at the ball, Mr. Thomas Mason was introduced. He had just returned from England, where he had completed his education. The managers carried him around, offering to introduce him. His eyes rested on the beautiful Elizabeth Westwood, and he had neither eyes nor ears for any other being in the room. She was equally pleased with him. Miss Digges was a cousin of Mr. Mason's, and it appears that she was bent on captivating him herself. Consequently she told Mr. Mason that Elizabeth Westwood was engaged to be married, and she told the latter that he was trifling with her; and consequently when he called to see her the day after the ball, she declined making her appearance. Thus were two young beings separated, to meet in maturer years.

In about six months after this date Elizabeth Westwood married James Wallace, of "Errol," situated on Back River, and several years afterward Thomson Mason married. He lived at Chappawansie, near Dumfries. He frequently attended court in Williamsburg, and was often asked by James Wallace to visit him, which he as often promised to do. On one occasion Mr. Wallace said to Mr. Mason: "My oft-repeated invitations have been so frequently slighted with a promise of fulfillment that I will not extend them again." Mr. Mason then told Mr. Wallace that as he had entertained peculiar sentiments of regard to his wife when she was young, he would prefer not seeing her again.

Years swept on, when Mrs. Wallace became a widow and Mr. Mason a widower. Mrs. Wallace was remarkable for her benevolence. Two Revolutionary soldiers from Stafford County, Va., who were wounded, were attended by Mrs. Wallace, she dressing their wounds. When they recovered sufficiently to leave Hampton and return to their native home, which was near Mr. Mason, they mentioned the circumstance to him, and remarked that he had better make the acquaintance of the beautiful young

widow who had befriended them, and induce her to accept his hand in marriage. Mrs. Wallace had been a widow for several years, but there was at that period very little communication between the upper and lower counties of the State, and that was the first intimation Mr. Mason had of Mrs. Wallace's being a widow. The next day he ordered his coach and four horses, and went from Chappawansie to Errol, a distance of several hundred miles. He was received graciously by the beautiful widow, but had to make several visits before she would consent to being betrothed. It was the second marriage of Elizabeth Westwood to Mr. Thomas Mason, which caused her to remove from Hampton to Prince William Co., Va.

Mr. Mason had one daughter and nine sons, and after his marriage with Elizabeth Westwood he had several sons, two of whom attained the age of maturity, Westwood and William Temple. The former married Miss Noland and d. childless.

William Temple Mason married Miss Anne Carroll, of Baltimore, an heiress. They had sixteen children. They lived at Temple Hall, near Leesburg.

Their oldest daughter married Dr. McGill, of Winchester. When Mr. Thomas Mason was in England he sojourned with Sir William Temple, who was his first cousin. He called his son after him. Dean Swift was a great deal in Sir William Temple's family at the time Mr. Mason was there, and he had many humorous anecdotes and incidents to narrate in connection with the Dean. Miss Digges on her death bed sent to her cousins, Thomas Mason and Elizabeth Westwood, to beg forgiveness for the false, though unsuccessful, part she had acted.

The first James Wallace's daughter, who had married Mr. Selden, of "Buck Roe," fell heir to most of his elegant plate. Mrs. Selden had three daughters and one son.

One daughter, Selden, married, 1st, Mr. Douglas, of Scotland. After his death she married, 2nd, Col. Jones, of Chatham, near Fredericksburg. Mr. Douglas left her a wealthy widow. One daughter married Mr. Fitzgerald, who left an only son, who married Miss Thornton, of Fall Hall, near Fredericksburg, Va.

Steven Thomson Mason<sup>5</sup> (1760-1803). Married Mary Elizabeth Armistead, and had issue:

1. Gen. John Thomson Mason<sup>6</sup>. Married Eliza Moir, of Williamsburg, Va., and had issue:
  1. Emily Virginia Mason<sup>7</sup>, b. 1815.
  2. Steven Thompson Mason<sup>7</sup> (1811-1843). First governor of Michigan. Married Miss Phelps.
  3. Catherine Armistead Mason<sup>7</sup>. Married Maj. S. T. Rowland.
  4. Laura Mason<sup>7</sup>. Married Gen. R. H. Chilton, C. S. A.

Steven Thompson Mason<sup>7</sup> married Miss Phelps and they had issue:

1. Dora Mason<sup>8</sup>. Married Col. Wright.
2. Thomson Mason<sup>8</sup>.

Maj. S. T. Rowland and Catherine Armistead Mason<sup>7</sup>, his wife, had issue:

1. John Thomson Rowland<sup>8</sup>. Married Miss Jackson.
2. Maj. Thomas Rowland<sup>8</sup>.
3. Eliza Moir Rowland<sup>8</sup>.
4. Catherine Mason, Rowland<sup>8</sup>.

Miss Kate Mason Rowland, another gifted writer, has been a bird of passage that has nevertheless frequently alighted in Baltimore, and for a season, at least, has called at John Street home. Miss Rowland's most important books have been "The Life and Letters of Charles Carroll of Carrollton," which is a work of great historic value, and the "Life of George Mason, of Gunston." The last is in two volumes and was published in 1892. The poems of Frank O. Tricknor, M. D., were edited by Miss Rowland, and she has also contributed to *Harper's Magazine*, to the *Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography*, to the *Atlantic Monthly*, the *Magazine of American History*, the *Southern Bivouac*, the *Southern Review*, the *Home Maker*, and other periodicals. Miss Rowland has a mind which grasps instinctively the picturesque features of historic incidents, while her literary skill kindles them to new and vital interest. She is a daughter of Capt. Isaac S. Rowland, of Detroit, Michigan, and his wife, Catherine Armistead (Mason) Rowland, of Virginia, and is prominent both as a society woman and a writer.

Miss Emily Virginia Mason<sup>7</sup>, daughter of Gen. John Thomson Mason, and the present representative of the Gunston Masons, has occupied a most distinguished personality in the political and social life as a typically American woman. Her career began in 1832, and she has recently celebrated her eighty-ninth birthday.

Miss Mason is the granddaughter of Steven Thomson Mason, who died in Philadelphia, Pa., and was buried with public honors in the old Christ Church, and great-granddaughter of Thomson Mason, of "Raspberry Plain," who was the only brother of George Mason, of Gunston Hall.



Few American women are better known or more highly respected both at home and abroad than Miss Emily Virginia Mason. During the civil war she served as a military hospital nurse. At the close of the war, in order to obtain means to educate the orphan daughters of soldiers of the lost cause, Miss Mason collected and arranged "Southern Poems of the War." For fifteen years Miss Mason lived in Paris, where her charm of manner and intellectual attainments made her the leader of the American circle. Although in her ninetieth year, Miss Mason has just returned from a visit to Michigan, where she went to take part in a memorial ceremony in honor of her only brother, Steven Thomson Mason, first governor of Michigan.

Miss Mason resides in Georgetown, D. C. She has written a life of General Lee and other books of great merit.

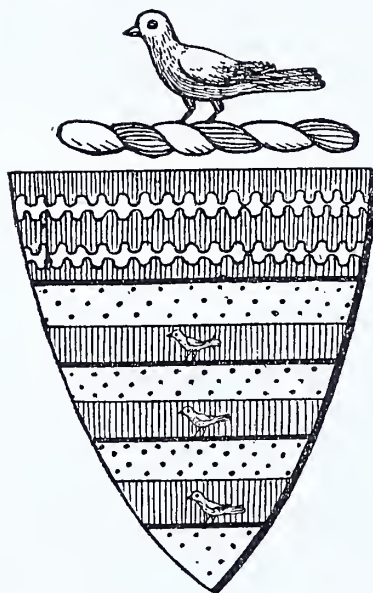
Gov. Steven Thomson Mason<sup>7</sup> (1811-1843), only son of Gen. John Thomson Mason<sup>6</sup> and Eliza Moir, grandson of Steven Thomson Mason<sup>5</sup> and Elizabeth Armistead, and great-grandson of Thomson Mason<sup>4</sup> (1732-1785), only brother of Col. George Mason<sup>4</sup>, of Gunston Hall, was born in Loudoun County and died in New York City. His father, John T. Mason, removed to Kentucky, where Steven was educated. In 1831 he was appointed secretary of the territory of Michigan, Lewis Cass being the governor. Upon the transfer of Governor Cass to the War Department, at Washington, Mason became acting governor. He held the office during the Ohio and Michigan boundary dispute, which excited intense and bitter feelings on both sides. Thousands of armed troops were marshalled along the disputed line and at one time there was great probability of bloodshed and loss of life. The wisdom and policy of Acting Governor Mason did much to avert this.

When Michigan was organized into a state and admitted into the Union in 1835 Mason was unanimously elected her first governor and was reelected to a second term. Retiring from office in 1839, he withdrew from politics and resumed the practice of law, locating in New York City for that purpose, dying there in 1843.

Anna Maria Mason, daughter of Gen. John Mason, fourth son of George Mason, of Gunston Hall, married Sidney Smith Lee, U. S. N. and C. S. N., and were parents of Gen. Fitzhugh Lee, of Cuban fame. (Lec, Chapter VIII; Carter, Chapter VII.)



## GRYMES FAMILY.



THE GRYMES ARMS

Arms—Or, on three bars, gu.

Crest—A martlet vert.

Granted June, 1575, to Thomas Grymes, of London—

Here at the break of morn

No hunter wakes the halloo of the chase,

Nor hounds and echoing horn

Fright from their quiet haunts the sylvan race.

But the odor and bloom of those bygone years

Shall hang round its waters forever.

Maj. John Grymes, of Middlesex County, d. 1708, son of Lieutenant General Thomas Grymes, of Cromwell's army. Married Alice Townley, daughter of Laurence and Sarah (daughter of Speaker Augustine Warner, of "Warner's Hall") Townley. They had children:

1. Col. John Grymes, of "Brandon," b. 1693; d. 1748. Married Lucy, daughter of Philip Ludwell, of "Green

Spring," and his wife, Hannah, daughter of Benjamin Harrison, of "Wakefield."

2. Col. Charles Grymes, of "Marattico," Richmond Co. Married Francées, daughter of Edmund Jennings, of "Ripon Hall," York Co., son of Col. Edmund Jennings, of "Ripon Hall," Yorkshire, England.

Col. John Grymes and Luey Ludwell, his wife, had children:

1. Luey Grymes. Married Carter Burwell, Jan. 5, 1737.
2. Col. Philip Grymes, of "Brandon." Married Mary, daughter of Sir John and Susan (Beverly) Randolph.
3. Charles Grymes, died young.
4. Benjamin Grymes, of "Smithfield," Spottsylvania. Married, first, Elizabeth Landon Fitzhugh, daughter of Col. Henry Fitzhugh, of "Eagle's Nest"; second, Miss Rootes, of Fredericksburg, Va.
5. Sarah Grymes.
6. Charles Grymes.
7. Ludwell Grymes.
8. Aliee Grymes (1723-1746). Married Hon. Mann Page, of "Rosewell," Gloucester Co., Dec. 31, 1741.

Col. Charles Grymes and Francées Jennings, his wife, had children:

1. Charles Grymes.
2. Francées Grymes. Married (1737) Philip Ludwell, Jr. (son of Philip Ludwell, Sr., who was a member of the Virginia Council, and acquired large estates. He married a Harrison). Philip Ludwell, the father, returned to England and died there. He was buried in Bow Church, Stratford. Philip Ludwell, Jr., was also a member of the Council.
3. Luey Grymes, known as the "lowland beauty." Married Col. Henry Lee, of Leesylvania. They had issue:
  1. "Light Horse" Harry Lee, the father of General Robert Edward Lee.

Benjamin Grymes, of Smithfield, married, first, Elizabeth Landon Fitzhugh. They had issue:

1. Benjamin Grymes, of "Eagle's Nest," King George Co., an estate left him by his unele, William Fitzhugh, a

captain in Washington's Life Guard during the Revolution; died about 1803. Married Ann Nicholas, of "Marhone," near Petersburg.

2. Mary Grymes. Married, first, Peter Randolph; second, Col. Richard Kidder Meade, of Clarke Co.

Col. Richard Kidder Meade married Mary Grymes. They had issue:

1. Kidder Meade. Married Miss Green, of Fredericksburg.
2. Rt. Rev. William Meade, Episcopal Bishop of Virginia. Married, first, Mary, daughter of Philip Nelson; second, Tomasia, daughter of Thomas Nelson.
3. David Meade. Married Louisa Nelson, of Maryland.
4. Anne Meade. Married Mathew Page, of Frederick Co.
5. Susan Everard Meade.
6. Lucy Carter Fitzhugh Meade.
7. Mary Meade.

Benjamin Grymes, of "Eagle's Nest," and Ann Nicholas, his wife, of "Marhone," near Petersburg, had issue:

1. William Fitzhugh Grymes, of "Eagle's Nest," d. 1830. Married Jane Champe Pratt, daughter of Thomas and Jane (Brockenborough) Pratt, of King George Co.
2. Benjamin Grymes, of "Somerset," King George Co.; d. 1828. Married Margaret Vivian, daughter of Thomas Pratt.
3. George Nicholas Grymes, of "Mont Cheve" (part of "Eagle's Nest"), died 1853. Married Anne Ellbeck, daughter of George Mason, of Lexington, son of George Mason, of Gunston Hall.
4. Lucy Fitzhugh Grymes. Married A. B. Hooe, Sr., of "Barnesfield," King George Co., and had issue:
  1. William Fitzhugh Hooe, who died young.
  2. Dr. Abraham B. Hooe, Jr., who married his cousin Lucy Grymes.
5. Martha Carter Grymes. Married John G. Stuart.

George Nicholas Grymes, of "Mont Cheve" (d. 1853), and Anne Ellbeck Mason, his wife, had issue:

1. Anne Nicholas Grymes. Married; first, Mr. Toler; second, Mr. Atkinson.

2. Elizabeth Mason Grymes. Married Capt. George Mason Hooe, U. S. N., and had issue:
  - a. Roy Mason Hooe, U. S. N.
  - b. Xarifa Mason Hooe.
3. Lucy Fitzhugh Grymes. Married Dr. A. B. Hooe, and had issue:
  - a. Mary Barnes Hooe. Married Lewis Ashton.
  - b. Lucy Hooe. Married Isaac Hooe.
4. Anna Maria Mason Grymes. Married Col. S. I. Rainey, of Loudoun Co.
5. Marian Grymes. Married James Monroe Taliaferro, and was mother of Mrs. George E. Pflaster, Sr., of "Blue-mond," Va.
6. Mary Louisa Grymes. Married Nicholas Quisenbury, and had issue:
  - a. Mary Louisa Quisenbury, died *sine prole*.
7. Martha Grymes. Married G. W. P. C. Grymes.
8. Rosalie Grymes.
9. George Graham Grymes.
10. Edmund Fitzhugh Grymes.
11. Richard Mason Grymes.
12. Benjamin Grymes.
13. George Edmund Grymes, of "Mt. Stuart," King George Co. Married Elizabeth Hansford.
14. Benjamin R. Grymes. Married Rebecca Randolph.

George E. and Elizabeth Hansford Grymes had issue:

1. Anne Mason Grymes. Married John Peyton, of Washington, D. C.
2. Julia Grymes.
3. Lucy Hooe Grymes.
4. Elizabeth Grymes.
5. Catherine Grymes.
6. William Dechla Grymes. Married Mary Stuart, of "Cedar Grove," King George Co.
7. Richard Mason Grymes.
8. George Nicholas Grymes.

## THE MASONS OF OVERWHARTON PARISH.

This parish, situated in Prince William County (formed in 1730 from Stafford and King George counties), was the seat of the important branch of the Mason family represented by Col. Enoch Mason, of "Clover Hill," Stafford County, who was born in 1769, and died 1830.

Another important branch of the Mason family was that early domiciled in Sussex and Surry counties, and which includes such soldiers as Col. David Mason and such legislators as Hon. John Y. Mason. This branch has been traced back several generations prior to the Revolutionary War.

They were connected with a fourth branch of the Masons of Virginia, those of lower Norfolk County, descendants of that William Mason who came to Virginia in 1651 on the "Assurance" with his brother, Col. George Mason, progenitor of the Masons of Gunston Hall. This branch has several able genealogists at work tracing its ancestry in England and their descendants in America.

Here, then, we have four distinct families, all of the same original stock, and all furnishing many individuals worthy of notice as politically and socially prominent.

In the Revolutionary struggle some were patriot republicans fighting for political independence, while others remained loyal to their king and country. These last, had the seals of destiny tipped their way instead of towards the patriot republicans, would have shown in history the possession of the greater names of the family which, as it happened, are now on the roll of the patriot republicans found among the Masons of Gunston Hall and of Surry and Sussex.

Of the latter a few words concerning Hon. John Y. Mason will not be out of place.

John Y. Mason was born at Greenville, Va., April 18, 1790, and died at Paris, France, October 4, 1859. He graduated at the University of North Carolina, studied law, was for ten years a delegate in the Virginia Assembly and filled several other state offices. He was Representative in Congress from 1831 to 1837 when he was appointed Judge of the United States Court in Virginia. He was Secretary of the Navy under President Tyler.

and successively Attorney General and Secretary of the Navy under President Polk. By President Pierce he was appointed Minister to France, in which office he remained until his death.

The record of the Masons of Overwharton Parish begin with that of the Dinwiddie family.

Robert Dinwiddie, b. 1665; d. October 6, 1712. Was a merchant of Glasgow, Scotland, and married (about 1690) Elizabeth Cumming. They had issue:

1. Martha Dinwiddie, b. about 1691.
2. Robert Dinwiddie, Lieut. Governor of Virginia, 1751-8, b. at "Germinston," Scotland, 1693; d. at "Clifton," Bristol, England, July 27, 1770, at seventy-eight years of age. He married Rebecca Afflick.
3. John Dinwiddie, b. about 1695, emigrated to Virginia and settled on the Rappahannock River. He was a merchant. Married Sympha Rosa Enfield Mason, youngest daughter of Col. George Mason, son of the immigrant, Col. George Mason, and grandfather of George Mason, of Gunston Hall. Sympha was also the granddaughter of Col. Gerard Fowke, and Ann, his wife, of Gunston Hall, Stratfordshire, England. This Col. Gerard Fowke, Gent., was "gentleman of the bed chamber" to Charles I. Col. Mason and Col. Fowke came to Virginia in 1651, together on the same ship, the "Assurance," with sixteen others of the same party of colonists.
4. Laurence Dinwiddie, b. 1697; d. May 3, 1764, in Glasgow, Scotland. He was bailiff in 1734-38-41, provost 1742-3, and one of the six persons chosen to treat with the rebels in 1745. He repurchased from "Scots and Merchants House," lands at "Germinston" and Balome which had formerly belonged to the family and are still in possession of its representative. Laurence Dinwiddie married Elizabeth Kennedy, of "Autz Ardle."
5. Jeanct Dinwiddie, b. 1699. Married (about 1720) Rev. W. McCulloch.
6. Mary Dinwiddie, b. 1707; d. April 30, 1772. Married Andrew Stuart, who was b. 1698; d. March 31, 1774. Both are buried in Harrisburg, Pa.



7. Christian Dinwiddie. Married Prof. Hamilton.
8. Sarah Dinwiddie, mentioned in the will of her brother the governor.
9. A posthumous child, name not known.

Laurence Dinwiddie and Elizabeth Kennedy, his wife, had issue:

1. Robert Dinwiddie, d. Sept. 13, 1789.
2. Laurence Dinwiddie. Married Catherine Campbell and had issue:
  - a. Robert Dinwiddie, d. at Rome, 1819.
  - b. Elizabeth Dinwiddie. Married Dr. Lockhart.
3. Gilbert Dinwiddie, d. May 31, 1764.
4. James Dinwiddie.
5. William Dinwiddie. Married Anne, daughter of Dr. Gilbert Hamilton, of "Ormond," and Margaret Cragie, of "Hull Hill," his wife.
6. Irene Dinwiddie, d. prior to 1812.
7. Agnes Dinwiddie, d. March 8, 1828.
8. Mary Dinwiddie, b. 1746; d. 1771.
9. Rebecca Dinwiddie.
10. Elizabeth Dinwiddie.

William Dinwiddie married Annie Hamilton. They had issue:

1. Margaret Hamilton Dinwiddie, d. unmarried.
2. Elizabeth Dinwiddie, d. unmarried.
3. Alfred Dinwiddie, d. unmarried.
4. Mary Dinwiddie, d. unmarried.
5. Gilbert Hamilton Dinwiddie, Commissary General of the British Army, in which he had served in early life under General Packenham at the battle of New Orleans. Married Mary Anne King.
6. Jean Dinwiddie. Married J. P. Fischer, Esq.
7. Agnes Dinwiddie. Married General Hoge.

Gilbert Hamilton Dinwiddie married Mary Anne King. They had issue:

1. William Dinwiddie, d. May 5, 1869, on the west coast of Africa.
2. Robert Dinwiddie, Captain in the British Army.
3. Laurence Dinwiddie.
4. Gilbert Cragie Dinwiddie.

5. Mary Dinwiddie.
6. Anne Hamilton Dinwiddie.

Mary Dinwiddie and Andrew Stuart, of Harrisburg, Pa., had issue:

1. Rev. John Stuart, D. D., b. 1740. Married Jane O'Kill.



COAT-OF-ARMS

John Dinwiddie married Sympha Rosa Enfield Mason. They had issue:

1. Elizabeth Dinwiddie. Married Col. Gerard Fowke, son of Chambers and Mary (Taraker) Fowke, and grandson of Col. Gerard and Sarah (Burdett) Fowke, and great-grandson of Col. Gerard Fowke, the immigrant, and Ann, his wife.
2. Jane Dinwiddie. Married William Waite.
3. Mary Dinwiddie. Married Rev. George Wilkins, rector of St. Michael Church, Bristol, England, who was b. 1743, and apparently had no issue.

Elizabeth Dinwiddie married Col. Gerard Fowke. They had issue:

1. William Fowke. Married Mrs. Bronaugh.
2. George Fowke.
3. Chandler Fowke. Married Miss Frazier, of North Carolina.
4. Robert Fowke. Married Miss Peachy.

5. Elizabeth Fowke. Married Col. William Phillips, who was b. 1746; d. 1797; of the Revolutionary Army, and at the time of his death Sheriff of Stafford Co., Va.
6. Sarah Fowke. Married Wiley Roy, of Virginia.
7. Rosa Fowke.
8. Enfield Fowke. Married Gabriel Johnston, of Kentucky; from them descended Capt. James Johnston, C. S. A., Mobile, Ala.
9. Mary Fowke. Married Slaughter.

Col. William Phillips was the son of James Phillips, of Wales, who came to Virginia, settled in Stafford County and married Miss Griffin.

Col. William Phillips married Elizabeth Fowke. They had issue:

1. Enfield Phillips. Married Louis Ficklen, of Fauquier Co.
2. Burdett Phillips. Married Jones, of Galveston, Texas.
3. Lucy Phillips. Married J. Le Fant of Fauquier Co. and had issue: Edward Ficklen Le Fant. Married Miss McQuinn.
4. William Fowke Phillips, for thirty years clerk of the Chancery Court, Fauquier Co.; second auditor of the Treasury for the Postoffice Department, Washington, D. C., appointed by President Pierce. On the secession of Virginia in 1861 he raised two companies of volunteers in the District of Columbia, whose services he offered to Governor Letcher of Virginia, whereupon the governor tendered him a commission as Colonel. This he declined for the reason that his lack of military education and experience disqualified him for holding such a position and he preferred to enlist in the ranks as a private. He married his cousin Edith Harrison Ashmore Cannon, a descendant of Chandler and Anne (Harrison) Fowke.

Lewis Ficklen married Enfield Phillips. They had issue:

1. William Phillips Ficklen. Married the widow Martin, and had issue: William Lewis Ficklen. Married Miss Eastham.
2. Gustavus Ficklen.

Col. William Fowke Phillips married Edith Harrison Ashmore Cannon. They had issue:

1. Mary Phillips, died.
2. William Fowke Phillips, died.
3. Laura Phillips. Married William B. Carr, of Loudoun Co., Va., and had issue: William Phillips Carr.
4. Dinwiddie Brazier Phillips, M. D., entered U. S. Navy as Assistant Surgeon, 1847, and the Virginia and Confederate States Navy as Surgeon, 1861. He was Surgeon on the "Merrimac" during the period of its existence, besides acting in the first year of the war as medical director of the Wise Legion. He commanded as Major and Chief Surgeon the hospital port at White Sulphur Springs. Married Fannie F., daughter of William Walden, of Rappahannock Co., Va. They had issue:

1. William Fowke Phillips.
2. Fannie Mason Phillips.
3. Elizabeth Walden Phillips.
5. Virginia Edith Phillips. Married Dr. B. J. Helbran.
6. Roberta Phillips.

Wiley Roy married Sarah Fowke and had issue:

1. Wiley Roy. Married Miss Camm.
2. Richard Roy. Married Miss Beverly.
3. Lucy Roy. Married Col. Enoch Mason, of "Clover Hill," Stafford Co., Va., b. 1769; d. 1830.

The will of William Mason was recorded in Stafford County between 1729 and 1748, but was stolen or destroyed.

In the Overwharton Parish register is recorded children of William and Mary Mason:

1. Anne Mason, b. and d. Aug. 20, 1740.
2. Lewis Mason, b. Oct. 4, 1741; d. Oct. 26, 1745.

The will of George Mason, son of the immigrant, recorded in Stafford County and stolen or destroyed, mentions among others a son William. This will was recorded in 1711. George Mason died in 1716; was the father of Sympha Rosa Enfield Mason, who married John Dinwiddie first and afterwards Col. Jeremiah Bro-naugh.

In the Overwharton Parish register we find the marriage recorded of John Mason, b. about 1724. Married (November 27, 1747) Mary Nelson.

John Mason and Mary Nelson had issue:

1. Rev. William Mason (registered in Overwharton Parish),  
b. Nov. 30, 1748; d. Culpeper, Va., April 26, 1823.  
Mrs. William Mason (probably wife of Rev. William),  
is mentioned in a letter of George Mason, of Gunston  
Hall, as being a visitor there about 1766.
2. John Mason (registered in Overwharton Parish), b. Feb.  
18, 1750 or 1751.
3. Nelson Mason (registered in Overwharton Parish), b. Aug.  
6, 1754.
4. Lewis Mason (registered in Overwharton Parish), b. Feb.  
1756. Married (about 1781) Mary Bethel, and had  
children:
  1. James Mason\*, moved to Missouri.
  2. Lydia Mason. Married, first, William Smith; second,  
George Crawford.

Lydia Mason (Lewis, John) married, first, William Smith, of England, who came to Virginia as a soldier to fight, and remained there. He died, probably, during the war of 1812, as Mrs. Blankman said that he died from camp fever while at home on leave. He left two children: one died unmarried; the other, Maria Smith, married Edward McDowell, of Fredericksburg. He came from Philadelphia and established himself in business in Fredericksburg, Va. They had several children who died young; three survived and were married. The youngest of these, Edward McDowell, Jr., married Jennie Taliaferro, a descendant of President Monroe and also of George Mason, of Gunston Hall. She died, leaving one child, Marian McDowell, who married Judge G. Daniel, of Fredericksburg, Va.

---

\*Every known statistic of the Mason family was taken by Mr. James Mason—son of Lewis Mason and brother of Lydia Mason—about thirty-five or forty years ago, when he left Virginia to go to his daughter's, Mrs. Taylor, wife of the then postmaster at Richmond, Ray County, Missouri. The papers there noted his arrival as being the representative of one of the oldest families of Virginia.

Lydia Mason (Lewis, John) married, second, George Crawford, of New York, and had one child, Jane Beverly Crawford (1831-1895). Married Dr. Michelle Arno Blankman, of Paris, France, son of Dr. Henry Blankman and Lady Isabel Livingston, who was of royal descent.

Of this Dr. Henry Blankman it may be said that in the first year of his manhood he was an officer in the French navy; afterwards he became an officer of the army and remained attached to the personal staff of the Emperor Napoleon until the fall of that great leader and his banishment to St. Helena. Dr. Henry Blankman asked the privilege of accompanying him in his exile, but was refused and left France for America.

The last gift of the Emperor Napoleon to his friend and camp companion was the cross of the Legion of Honor enclosed in the substance of a glass goblet. This cross was repeatedly worn by a granddaughter of the recipient at public receptions she attended at Richmond during three successive occasions.

Dr. Henry Blankman brought with him to America, besides his wife, Isabel, several children.

One son was Dr. Henry Jared Blankman, who married Madeline, daughter of General Valejo, one of the pioneers of California. Another son was Dr. Michelle Arno Blankman, who located at Fredericksburg, Va.

There were two daughters also—Rosa Blankman, born in Spain, and Isabel Blankman, also born in Spain. Isabel, daughter of Dr. Henry Blankman, Sr., married Lieutenant Commander Edward A. Barnett, U. S. N., and was his second wife. They had no children.

Other children of Dr. Henry Blankman and Isabel Livingston, his wife, were born in America:

1. Edmund Blankman, a lawyer, located in New York.
2. Dr. Benjamin Blankman, a physician and lawyer, located in New York.
3. Dr. William Blankman, a physician and lawyer, located in San Francisco and was living there at the time of its destruction by earthquake and fire in 1906.

Dr. Michelle Arno Blankman and Jane Beverly Crawford, his wife, had children:



1. John Sergeant Blankman, a lawyer established in New York; dead.
2. Edward Michelle Blankman, a lawyer; also dead.
3. Lydia Genevieve Blankman. Married Charles L. Coombs, Esq., a lawyer of Washington, D. C., died in 1903.
4. Isabel Livingston Blankman. Married, first, John Jaquelin Evans, U. S. N.; second, Henry Coleman Chamberlain, of Camden, New Jersey.
5. Medora Bruner Blankman. Married William P. Sefton of the Hydrographie Office, Washington, D. C.
6. Rosa Barnett Blankman.
7. Eugenia J. Blankman.

Dr. Michelle Arno Blankman had a valuable collection of records of Virginia covering a period of fifty years in a file of several bound volumes of the *Virginia Herald*, which are now a part of the Congressional Library, in Washington.

Lydia Genevieve Blankman married Charles L. Coombs, a lawyer, son of the Hon. J. J. Coombs, chief of the Pension Bureau and a member of the Legislature of Ohio. They had children:

1. Alee Sergeant Coombs, dead.
2. Charles Mason Coombs, dead.
3. Genevieve Chamberlain Coombs.
4. Brenda Coombs, dead.
5. Ethel Eugenia Coombs.

Isabel Livingston Blankman married twice: first, John Jaquelin Evans, youngest son of Dr. John Evans, of New Hampshire, U. S. Geologist, and grandson of Robert Mills, the eminent architect and engineer, who was U. S. Government architect of public buildings in Washington and elsewhere. He designed the Washington national monument in Washington.

John Jaquelin Evans was born November 29, 1848; died November 24, 1877. Married January 17, 1874. He was drowned off Cape Hatteras in the wreck of the U. S. ship of war, *Huron*, to which he was attached as a ward-room officer at the time. John J. Evans and Isabel Livingston Blankman, his wife, had one child:

1. Isabel Mason Evans, born April 2, 1876. Married Sept. 10, 1902, to Joel Mintur Cochran of Virginia. They live in Charlottesville, Va., and have issue:
  1. Isabel Chamberlain Cochran, b. July 21, 1903.

Mrs. Cochran is a zealous member of the Daughters of the American Revolution, Society of Colonial Dames, the Daughters of the Confederacy, the Pepperrell Ancestral Association, of Kittery, Maine, and is many times repeated a lineal descendant of Colonial Governors.

Isabel Livingston Blankman married, second, Henry Coleman Chamberlain, of Camden, New Jersey, on September 10, 1888, at Washington, D. C., by the same Presbyterian pastor who had married her to her first husband. No children.

Enfield was a family name among the Masons. Miss Enfield Mason was a frequent visitor at the home of Dr. Michelle Arno Blankman, in Fredericksburg, and was always called cousin by the mother and children.

There were two other children of John Mason and Mary Nelson, of Overwharton Parish, born later than the others, and for some reason (perhaps a change of residence) not registered in that parish. These two children were:

1. Joel Mason, born about 1766.
2. Col. Enoch Mason, born about 1769.

Among the marriage licenses from Culpeper County (see Green's St. Mark's Parish) we find: "Joel Mason and Sallie Brown, 1791."

Joel Mason, b. in Stafford County about 1766, married (Dec. 12, 1791) Sarah Browne (or Brown) of Culpeper County. They had issue:

1. Enoch H. Mason, b. Jan. 1, 1793; d. March 13, 1819.
2. Eliza Mason, b. Oct. 28, 1794. Married Robert Kendall, of Falmouth, Va.\*
3. Enfield Mason, b. Dec. 6, 1796. Married John Tackett, Aug. 28, 1816; d. Feb. 28, 1836 (she was born and married in Stafford County). They had a son, William J. Tackett, b. 1826. His daughter, Mattie Enfield Tackett, b. 1858, married William H. Glen.
4. Lucy B. Mason, b. Feb. 9, 1799. Married Burgess, of Lexington County; d. March 29, 1827.

---

\*Among some old letters, of date 1833, from Eliza Mason Kendall, daughter of Joel Mason, she speaks of "Uncle Lewis," "Uncle and Aunt Barber," "Aunt Jameson," and claims connection with the Bushrods and Henrys of Virginia.

5. John W. Mason, b. Dec. 20, 1804. Married Anna Maria Thornton, second cousin of General William Fitzhugh Thornton.
6. Mary H. Mason, b. Dec. 8, 1806.
7. Sarah E. Mason, b. June 15, 1808.
8. Susan F. Mason, b. Nov. 23, 1810, in Fredericksburg, Va. Married, first, Mathew Harrison; second, Alexander Dunbar, of Bolton, Ky.

We are favored with the above pedigree by Mrs. L. C. Heely, 165 W. 140th St., New York City, and it is, no doubt, entirely reliable.

The will of Joel Mason was recorded in Stafford Co., Liber BB, 1813, 1817. This is one of the books stolen or destroyed during the war between the states.

The reference to the store account book, bearing date 1786, must refer to John Mason, father of Enoch and Lewis, and what was read in the book, "Joe Y. Mason, son of John Mason," might prove to be "Joel Mason, son of John Mason." The other names on the list of dealers at the store, John T. Mason, Lewis Mason and Mrs. Elizabeth Mason, may all readily be seen in names of John Mason's children, including the wife of one of them, either John or William. At all events, the quotation from the Aquia account book should come into the chapter as a note to the statement of the marriage. John Mason married (Nov. 27, 1747) Mary Nelson, b. about 1722 (Overwharton Register, b. about 1727).

In a merchants' day book kept at a store at Aquia, Stafford Co., the MS. volume being now in the Congressional Library, Washington, D. C., the date of which is 1786, and the store is supposed to have belonged to one of the Brent family. It appears the following Masons had accounts at the store in 1786: Daniel Mason, Mrs. Elizabeth Mason, John Mason, Joseph Y. Mason (son of John Mason), John T. Mason, Lewis Mason, Richard Mason, Thomas Mason.

Colonel Enoch Mason, the youngest child of John Mason and Mary Nelson, was born about 1769, and died about 1830. He resided on his estate, "Clover Hill," Stafford County, where he died and was buried. He married (about 1793) Luey Wiley Roy, of "Cleveland," King George County, Virginia. She was the

daughter of Wiley Roy and Sarah Fowke. Sarah Fowke was the daughter of Gerard Fowke, son of Capt. Chandler Fowke, of Gunston Hall, Md., and Elizabeth Dinwiddie, daughter of John Dinwiddie and Lympha Rosa Enfield Mason, daughter of Col. George Mason and Mary Fowke. This Col. George Mason was the son of Col. George Mason, the immigrant, and grandfather of George Mason of Gunston Hall, Virginia.

John Mason (Uncle Jack), eldest son and child of Col. Enoch Mason and Lucy Wiley Roy, was born about 1795, and married (about 1822) Eliza Roy, and had two daughters.

Eliza Roy, after the death of John Mason, married (second) Mr. Temple, and had two sons and a daughter.

The children by the first marriage:

1. Mary Camm Mason, b. Feb. 20, 1824; d. Jan. 15, 1895.  
Married (April 27, 1846) James Anthony Hayes, D. D., who was born Dec. 15, 1822; d. March 30, 1880.
2. Lucy Roy Mason, died unmarried.

Mary Camm Mason married James Anthony Hayes, D. D., and had children:

1. Eliza Roy Hayes, b. Feb. 22, 1847. Married (Dec. 1, 1869) W. H. Adams.
2. Charles Browne Hayes, b. Oct. 26, 1851; d. Nov. 12, 1901. Unmarried.
3. Lucy Mason Hayes, b. Aug. 7, 1854; d. Aug. 14, 1854.
4. Genevieve Hayes, b. April 12, 1856.
5. Thomas Mason Hayes, b. Jan. 21, 1858. Married in Palestine, Texas; has family.

Eliza Roy Hayes. Married (Dec. 1, 1869) William Henry Adams. They have children:

1. Lucy Mason Adams, b. Aug. 31, 1870. Married (Oct. 7, 1896) D. K. Smith.
2. Edwin Thompson Adams, b. Sept. 28, 1872.
3. Genevieve Hayes Adams, b. Jan. 21, 1876.
4. Mary Elizabeth Adams, b. May 12, 1885.

Lucy Mason Adams married Daniel K. Smith. They have children:

1. Elizabeth Innes Smith, b. July 5, 1897.
2. Harriet Mason Smith, b. June 9, 1904.

Col. Enoch Mason married (about 1793) Lucy Wiley Roy. Issue eight sons and two daughters:

- I. John Mason (Unele Jaek), b. about 1795. Married Eliza Roy, about 1822, and had issue:
  1. Mary Camm Mason, b. Feb. 20, 1824; d. Jan. 15, 1895. Married (April 27, 1846) James Anthony Hayes, D. D., who was b. Dec. 15, 1822; d. March 20, 1880.
  2. Luey Roy Mason, died unmarried.
  3. Joseph Y. Mason.

Mary Camm Mason. Married James Anthony Hayes, D. D. They had children:

1. Eliza Roy Hayes, b. Feb. 22, 1847. Married William Henry Adams, Dec. 1, 1869.
2. Charles Browne Hayes, b. Oct. 26, 1851; d. Nov. 12, 1901, unmarried.
3. Luey Mason Hayes, b. Aug. 7, 1854; d. Aug. 14, same year.
4. Genevieve Hayes, b. April 12, 1856.
5. Thomas Mason Hayes, b. Jan. 21, 1858. He married in Texas. No record.

Eliza Roy Hayes married William Henry Adams. Issue:

1. Luey Mason Adams, b. Aug. 31, 1870. Married Daniel K. Smith, Oct. 7, 1896.
2. Edwin Thompson Adams, b. Sept. 28, 1872.
3. Genevieve Hayes Adams, b. Jan. 21, 1876.
4. Mary Elizabeth Adams, b. May 12, 1885.

Lucy Mason Adams married Daniel K. Smith. They had children:

1. Elizabeth Innes Smith, b. July 5, 1897.
2. Harriet Mason Smith, b. June 9, 1904.

II. Enoch Mason, second child of Col. Enoch Mason and Lucy Wiley Roy, was born about 1797. Married Eliza Mason, of Alexandria, Va., and left a son (nicknamed "Barney"), Enoch Mason, who died in California, and a daughter who married in South Carolina during the war and was known as Minnie. Enoch Mason married, second (in 1832), Frances Payne.

III. Wiley Roy Mason, third child of Col. Enoch Mason and Lucy Wiley Roy. Married Susan Taylor Smith,

daughter of Augustine Jaquelin Smith and Margaret Boyd, of "West Grove," near Alexandria, Va. Issue Volume III, Chapters V, VI and VII.

- IV. Mary Mason, fourth child of Col. Enoch Mason and Lucy Wiley Roy. Married William Peyton, of Stafford Co., Va.
- V. Alexander Hamilton Mason, fifth child and fourth son of Col. Enoch Mason and Lucy Wiley Roy. Married Jane Alan Smith, daughter of Dr. Augustine Jaquelin Smith, of "West Grove," near Alexandria, Va. He died in 1857, leaving four sons and four daughters. (Issue, Volume III.)
- VI. The sixth child and second daughter of Col. Enoch Mason and Lucy Wiley Roy was Sarah Fowke Mason. Married William Barber, of Stafford Co.
- VII. Selden Mason, the seventh child and fifth son of Col. Enoch Mason and Lucy Wiley Roy. Married Virginia Hooe.
- VIII. Gerard Fowke Mason, eighth child and sixth son of Col. Enoch Mason and Lucy Wiley Roy. Married, first, Isabella Stephenson; second, Margaret Holladay, sister of Gov. F. W. M. Holladay, of Virginia.
- IX. Beverly Welford Mason, the ninth child and seventh son of Col. Enoch Mason and Lucy Wiley Roy. Married Miss Sydney Bayley, of Delaware.
- X. Charles Mason, tenth child and eighth son of Col. Enoch Mason and Lucy Wiley Roy. Married, first, Anna Tayloe Braxton, granddaughter of Carter Braxton, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. Anna Tayloe Braxton was b. 1808; d. May 20, 1831, at Fredericksburg, Va. Issue by this marriage:
  1. Charles Tayloe Mason, Civil Engineer and Major C. S. A. Married Susan James, of Chillicothe, Ohio, but had no children.
 Charles Mason married, second, Maria Jefferson Carr Randolph, granddaughter of President Thomas Jefferson, being the daughter of Col. Thomas Jefferson Randolph and Jane Nicholas, of "Edge Hill," Albemarle Co., Va. They had issue:



1. Jefferson Randolph Mason, Judge, San Antonio, Texas; d. unmarried.
2. Luey Wiley Mason. Married Edward J. Smith, of Fredericksburg, Va., and had issue:
  1. Charles Mason Smith.
  2. William Taylor Smith.
  3. John Enoch Mason, Judge; in turn Commonwealth Attorney for King George Co., Va.; member House of Delegates, State Senator and Circuit Judge. Married Kate Karney Henry, of Washington, D. C. They have children:
    1. Flora Randolph Mason.
    2. Charles Mason (1842-1846).
    3. Thomas Jefferson Mason.
    4. Wilson Cary Nicholas Mason (1858-1866).

Gerard Fowke Mason, M. D., b. July 15, 1815, Stafford Co., Va. Married, first (1842), Isabella Stephenson, who died 1848. She was the daughter of William Stephenson, of Frederiek Co., Va. Gerard Fowke Mason, M. D., married, second, Margaret J. Holliday. Margaret J. Holliday was the daughter of Dr. J. McK. Holliday, of Winehester, and sister of Lieut. Gov. Holliday, of Virginia.

Issue by the first marriage, two sons:

1. William L. Mason, C. S. A. Married Miss Yates, of Charleston, W. Va., and has Virginia Mason. William Mason is a large stock raiser and prominent planter. Chairman of the Board of Supervisors of his County in 1904.
2. Gerard Bell Mason.

Issue by the second marriage, one daughter, who became Mrs. B. D. Gibson, of Charlestown, W. Va.

Dr. Gerard Fowke Mason survived all his brothers and sisters, dying at an advanced age. He studied medicine and was graduated from the Jefferson Medical College, of Philadelphia, Pa., in 1841. Early in 1842 he located in Charlestown, W. Va., and began the practice of his profession, by which he accumulated a considerable fortune. His eldest son, William L. Mason, enlisted in Baylor's Company, 12th Cavalry, C. S. A., 1861-5. When Baylor was made Captain of Mosby's command he took with him ten of his best men, one of whom was Mason.

## THE LOWER NORFOLK MASONS.

[Notes with respect to the Early Representatives.]

The following is copied from the *Baltimore Sun* of April 9, 1905:

Two depositions, from Lieut. Franeis Mason, are quoted. Concerning his age, the statement that he was 42 in 1637, and, therefore, born in 1595, is generally accepted. Another that he was 40 in 1628, or seven years older. Holten is on record that the emigrant came over on the "John and Franeis," with his wife, Mary, and daughter, Ann, in 1613. The first date would have made him 18; the latter, therefore, seems the more probable.

A son, Franeis, was born in Virginia, but Mr. Ellis, in the "Virginia Historical Magazine," Volume II, was of the opinion that both his son and daughter died in early infancy, thus finding no relationship between the Surry and Norfolk families.

In the year 1623, ten years after emigration, Lieut. Franeis Mason's wife was Aliee, the mother of a son and daughter, Lemuel and Elizabeth, and when he died, in 1648, his wife, Aliee, and son, Lemuel, administered on his estate. He was magistrate, justice and vestryman of Lower Norfolk. His second wife came to Virginia in 1622, in the "Margaret and John." She was born 1626 (1626) (Dep.).

There are other accounts, which affirm that an early Franeis and James were half brothers of Colonel Lemuel Mason. The destruction of early records must ever render all such investigation well-nigh hopeless. And just here, it may be remarked that James Mason was as prominent in Surry as was Lemuel in Lower Norfolk. He held large grants there, as well as in Isle of Wight, and in 1652 was a member of the Council.

Colonel Lemuel Mason is one of the first names of the old record of Portsmouth. As written it might stand for any and every word except one, and that one Lemuel. He was born 1628, just twenty years of age when his father died, and he was twenty-one when he married Aliee Seawell, five years younger than himself. She was a daughter of Henry Seawell, merchant, Burgess for Elizabeth City in 1632, and for Norfolk County in 1639. He died about 1644 (1649). The estate of Mr. Matthew Phillips (Phripp?), for estate of said Henry Seawell, as it was left at the decease of the said Aliee, wife of the said Henry.) The administratrix was Anne, wife of said Phillips, whom Aliee had married soon after her husband died. Her death was speedily followed by that of her second husband, but not before he had married Anne. Henry Seawell was then to be sent to Holland for his education, in charge of Mr. Thomas Lee, spoken of as his kinsman. A deposition shows this son as born May 1, 1639, and another mentions his decease in 1672, and that his sister and heir, then the wife of Col. Lemuel Mason, was thirty-seven or thirty-eight years old.

The mother of Mrs. Aliee Seawell was Alee, daughter of Thomas Willoughby, who emigrated to Virginia in 1610 and became a leading merchant of the Colony; also justice of Elizabeth City in 1628, Burgess in 1629-32,

and Councilor in 1644, 1646, 1650. He patented very large tracts of land in Lower Norfolk.

Col. Lemuel Mason was justice from 1649, sheriff 1664-68, burgess from 1654 to 1657 to 1692, mayor in 1656, presiding justice in 1680, colonel of militia in Lower Norfolk, and holding the same office in North Carolina in 1699.

His will was dated June 17, 1695, and probated seven years later. He names his three sons, Thomas, Lemuel and George; daughters, Frances, wife of Mr. George Newton; Alice, wife of Samuel Boush, and widow of William Porter; Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Cocke; Margaret, wife of [paper torn], in England; Anne, wife of Mr. Cron [or something like this, but the paper here is also mutilated]; Mary, wife of Walter Gee, and Dinah.

Mrs. Mason's will is also recorded, of date 1704. It recites Frances Sayer, Alice Boush, Mary Cocke, Dinah Thoroughgood. Still another will from the New England Register, Volume 42, throws light on these daughters of Lemuel Mason—that of Mrs. Margaret Cheeseman in 1679, when only Frances, the eldest, could have reached marriageable age. She is not named, having doubtless received the share to be given to each "on marriage or age of 21." The others are Alice, Elizabeth, Anne, Abigail, Mary and Dinah. Margaret Mason, who lives with ———, god-mother, we suppose to be the daughter Margaret of Colonel Lemuel, named by him, though she is made ——— [paper torn] with Mrs. Mary Childs, and according to the order in which written in her father's will, could not have been more than twelve years of age. To her was devised "£150, the lease of the house I live in, and the plate I had of John Harrison." To Alice there was given "a great Beaker" a tankard, each to Elizabeth and Ann a great ring; and the rest of the plate to be divided among the others. She names her "Coezin, Elizabeth Thelabell," from which we can put her down as aunt to Colonel Lemuel and his sister, the said Mrs. Thelabell.

Thomas Mason, the eldest son, "gent and planter of Tanner's Creek," as he styles himself in his will of 1710, was born in the middle of the previous century. That he was Justice in 1699, survived a wife, Elizabeth, and left a son and three daughters, is all that is known of him to be recorded here. Lemuel, the son, died at a grammar school in 1712, aged eighteen, and with him the name of Mason in his branch. The daughters were: Ann, Mrs. Thomas Willoughby; Mary, Mrs. William Ellison. A deed from her husband specifies land left by Lemuel to his three sisters and Margaret.

Lemuel Mason, Jr., married his first cousin, Mary Thelabell, whose mother was Elizabeth Mason.

George Mason, the youngest son, died in 1710. In his will he named his wife, Philia, and children, George, Thomas, Abigail, and Frances. There were several indentures, 1734-35, between Thomas Mason, Gent, and Col. John Phipp, Gent, of "Princess Anne," in which the land sold is

"that left him by his mother Philia." His brother George also sells land to Colonel Phipp, which he states was given him by his mother Philia. Who is Philia? The widow of Thomas, "Mary Mason, daughter and heiress of Nathaniel Newton, deceased," deeds lands to John Wishart, adjoining Col. John Phipp. As the wife of this last was Frances, it is not improbable that she was daughter of the above George and Philia, his wife. Do any records show?

We are not to suppose that Elizabeth, Mary and Philia were the only wives of Col. Lemuel Mason's sons. They were mentioned in the wills as last. Two, if not three, seemed the matrimonial adventures of most (men and women), and how it all could have been so adequately arranged is the marvel to us now. Death, not divorce, was the great divider then, and its shafts knew no loiter. But not less fast came the jingle of marriage bells, and scant time was accorded tears.

I. Frances Mason, the eldest daughter of Col. Lemuel Mason, was born about 1661. Married, first, George Newton, who died 1694. When her mother's will was made she had become Mrs. Frances Sayer. Mr. Cincinnatus Newton, deceased, was a descendant of the Masons through this daughter.

II. Alice Mason, named in her father's will as the wife of Mr. Samuel Boush, and the widow of Mr. William Porter, must have had an earlier marriage. A will is on record wherein one Robert Hodges, 1681, states that his father-in-law was Lemuel Mason, and Alice was the name of his wife. Lieutenant Maximilian Boush, of the Royal Navy, devises to an uncle, Lemuel Boush.

III. Elizabeth Mason was the wife of Mr. Thomas Cocke. She had two daughters, Mary and Anne, and died before her husband. His will was recorded in 1697. To each he leaves a plantation, a gold chain, plate and jewelry. They cannot be traced in the Cocke pedigree.

IV. Margaret Mason comes next in her father's will, but from the torn page nothing can be known except that she married and lived in England.

V. The name of Anne Mason's husband is also lost for the same reason. Looking as far as the meager information afforded by old records may permit, to find some "Anns" born about that time, married to a Mr. C., with a descendant Lemuel, perhaps (assured sign of Mason derivation), we discover those four conditions only in Mrs. Sampson Treveltham. At any rate, she was "Anne," born as was Anne Mason, near the years 1670-72. She had a grandson, Richard Conner, which might show a previous marriage of her own to Mr. Conner, and also a grandson, Lemuel Tennent. Her will was made in 1643, when she was a very old woman, and had only grandchildren as legatees, viz.: Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Scott; Mary Ann Thororoughgood, Katherine Wright, Richard Conner, Stephen Wright, Lemuel Tennant. "Sister Frances Corbil" is a clue. But there may be some mistake in its rendering, and besides the "in-laws" bore no distinguishable marks in those old wills, where so many mourning rings were bequeathed among them. It is true that the "Critic" makes this Mrs. Anne

Trevethan a widow of Argall Thoroughgood, née Church, but that may have been because there was a Thoroughgood grandchild and because Argall died in very good time for the marriage to Mrs. Sampson Treve-  
than. However, it does not do to challenge any Thoroughgood marriage,—they are sandwiched in everywhere,—and its widows were always on hand and being wed. Only in the instance above quoted, marriage bonds show that Mrs. Trevethan's daughter Mary Trevethan married (1724) Thomas Thoroughgood, and when he died (will 1726), she married (1728) Stephen Wright. The one child by the first marriage was legatee in her grandmother's will.

VI. A deed of gift from Lemuel to "his children, George, Craford, and Abigail, his wife," in 1690, provides for this sixth daughter, not otherwise benefited in will. They were to have the third part of an island situated in Coratuck Inlet, N. C., and all the stock. There can be but little doubt that she was the wife Abigail, who was bereaved the second time, at least, when her first cousin, Francis Thelabell, died 1826. There were five children by this marriage, second of whom was Lemuel. And later the will of the eldest son, James Thelabell, states that his mother was Abigail Moseley, wife of Anthony Moseley.

VII. Mary Mason, at the writing of her father's will, was the wife of Mr. Walter Gee. If the copying of the mother's made no mistake, she was mentioned as Mary Cocke, and thus would end all further concern regarding her matrimonial adventures, but for an entry on the pages of an old bible. In the handwriting of Col. George Blow, it is set forth therein that the grandparents of his mother were Matthew Phripp and Mary Mason. Mary Mason Wright was moreover a sister of Mrs. Blow. They could only have been great-grandparents, because the grandparents were Mr. John Phripp and Frances, above mentioned. Still, all great-grandparents are grandparents, and if we go back a generation Mary Gee was old enough to have made an earlier marriage and to have been the mother of one or two Phripp children.

Mr. Cincinnatus Newton, in a letter a few years ago to the writer of this sketch, expressed the opinion that the names Matthew Phillips and Matthew Phripp were one and the same. Considering the difficulty of deciphering old manuscript, much less names generally misspelled, the wonder is some error did not occur. It will be recalled that the mother of Mrs. Lemuel Mason married Mr. Matthew Phillips, and while we hear no more of the Phillips family in the connection, that of Phripp is very prominent, and frequently thereafter associated with that of Mason.

As an instance of the miswriting of this name, when Mrs. Frances Phripp, in 1742, stood as godmother to one of the Tucker children, she was entered in their bible as Mrs. Frances Phreep. Late Mrs. Mary Phrip Phripp, in the same office, was Mrs. Streep. The name died out in Norfolk when Matthew died without children of his own, and in 1780 devised a large estate to those of his sister, Mrs. Stephen Wright. He had a brother who married Mrs. Mary Anne Walke (her third husband),

leaving a son and daughter, the wife of Dr. James Ramsay. The son married in 1793 Miss Sallie Kieling, but must have left Norfolk, or died without issue.

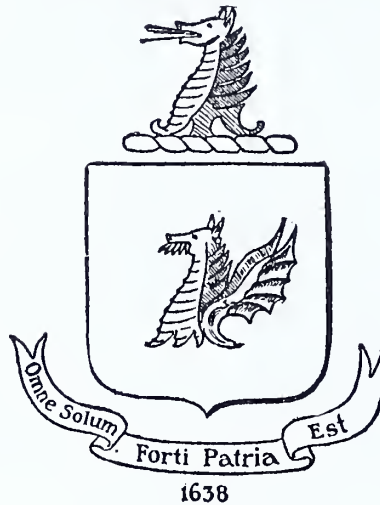
VIII. Dinah Mason, the last and eighth daughter of Colonel Lemuel Mason, married (after 1695) a Thoroughgood, but which one of the family none can say. In the Wilson family we find a Lemuel Wilson, and a generation later a descendant Dinah. In 1714, Mrs. Mary Mason devises to sons Thomas Cluster, John Cluster, and Elizabeth. In 1686, a deed of gift from Lemuel and wife, Anne, to John Griffin and wife, Isabella, Thomas, son of Tristram Mason, sells land with consent of wife, Alice.

FANNY B. HUNTER.



## CHAPTER XVIII

## THE LEWIS FAMILY.



THE LEWIS ARMS

Arms—Argent, a dragon's head and neck crased, vertical, holding in the mouth a bloody hand proper.

Crest—A dragon's head and neck erased vertical.

Motto—*Omne solum, forti patria est.*

It is a question very often discussed of late as to whether the hour makes the man or the man the hour. To a student of the history of Virginia an answer is very soon given, for since the settlement of Jamestown, in 1607, which was virtually the birth of this country, there has never arisen a crisis of any kind when Virginia, our mother State, has not had one or more of her sons ready to meet it. When the hour arrives the man appears. We may search the pages of history in vain for a nobler or as noble a group of men as Washington and his patriot Virginians in 1776.

The Lewis family of Virginia is one of the most distinguished families in the State. It is connected by marriage with many of the best-known names, such as Washington, Marshall, Fielding, Merriweather, Daingerfield, Taliaferro and others. The men of the family from the time when they first settled in the colony, about the middle of the seventeenth century, have been men of action and distinction; they have won for themselves the most remarkable record as soldiers. It is recorded on the tombstone of "Pioneer John" that he furnished five sons for the Revolution. There were five colonels in the Revolution—Colonel Nicholas, Colonel Fielding, Colonel William, Colonel Charles and Colonel Joel—and quite a number of majors and captains. The Lewises also won a gallant record in the War of 1812, the Mexican War and in the Confederate States Army.

The Lewis family were originally French Huguenots, and left France after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, 1685. Three brothers—namely, William, Samuel and John—fled to England. (See Smiles' "History of the Huguenots.") Shortly afterwards William removed to the north of Ireland, where he married a Miss McClelland; Samuel fixed his residence in Wales, while John continued in England. Deseendants of each of these three brothers are supposed to have settled in Virginia.

About the middle of the seventeenth eentury four brothers of the Lewis family left Wales:

- I. Samuel Lewis, went to Portugal; nothing is known of him.
- II. William Lewis, d. in Ireland.
- III. General Robert Lewis, d. in Gloucester Co., Va.
- IV. John Lewis, d. in Hanover Co., Va.
  1. I. William Lewis<sup>1</sup>, one of the Welsh brothers; d. in Ireland. Married Miss McClelland and left one son:
  2. I. Andrew Lewis<sup>2</sup>. Married Miss Calhoun. Issue:
  3. I. John Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1678, in Ireland. Married Margaret Lynn.
  4. II. Samuel Lewis<sup>2</sup>, b. 1680. No issue.
- III. John Lewis<sup>3</sup> (Andrew<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>). In 1720 John Lewis left Ireland a fugitive, having stabbed Sir Inango Campbell, his

Irish landlord, who attempted in a lawless and brutal manner to evict him from his premises, of which he held a freehold lien, and had slain an invalid brother, before his eyes. He first took refuge in Portugal, and later fled to America and settled in Pennsylvania; then in Augusta Co., Va. In Campbell's "History of Virginia" he is styled as Pioneer John Lewis. He is described as being tall and of great muscular strength, and was one of the best backwoodsmen of his day. He built his house with port-holes in it, so that he could successfully contend with the savage tribes that infested the country. When Augusta County was organized he was the founder of Staunton, the county seat, and was one of the first magistrates appointed by the Governor. John Lewis died in 1762. On his tombstone it is recorded that he gave five sons to fight the battles of the American Revolution.

John Lewis and Margaret Lynn, his wife, had issue:

5. I. Samuel Lewis<sup>4</sup>, served with distinction as a captain in the war between the English and French colonists. His brothers, Andrew, William and Charles, were members of his company, and all four were at Braddock's defeat, and three of them were wounded. Samuel was afterwards conspicuous in the defense of Greenbrier County and the border settlements from the Indians. He was born 1716; d. unmarried.
6. II. Thomas Lewis<sup>4</sup>, b. in Ireland, 1718.
7. III. Andrew Lewis<sup>4</sup>, b. in Ireland, 1720.
8. IV. William Lewis<sup>4</sup>, b. in Ireland, 1724.
9. V. Margaret Lewis<sup>4</sup>, b. in Ireland, 1726.
10. VI. Anne Lewis<sup>4</sup>, b. in Ireland, 1728.
11. VII. Charles Lewis<sup>4</sup>, b. in Virginia, 1736.  
Alice Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Madison.

IV. Col. Andrew Lewis<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, Andrew<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), son of John Lewis (Pioneer) and Margaret Lynn, daughter of the Laird of Loeh Lynn, chieftain of the once powerful Clan of Loeh Lynn; b. in Ireland, 1720. He emigrated with his father to America, and settled in Augusta Co., Va. He took a very active part in the Indian Wars. In 1754 he was twice wounded in the battle of Fort Necessity, under General Washington, by whom he was ap-

pointed major of his regiment. General Lewis was, with four of his brothers, in a company of which the eldest was captain, at Braddock's defeat, in 1758. General Andrew Lewis was several times a member of the Colonial Legislature.

An Indian war being anticipated, Lord Dunmore appointed General Lewis commander of the Southern forces. September 11, 1774, General Lewis, with eleven hundred men, commenced his march through the wilderness. After a march of one hundred and sixty miles they reached Point Pleasant, at the junction of the Great Kanawha and Ohio rivers, and there on October 10, 1774, he signally defeated the Shawnee Indians. He is known as the hero of Point Pleasant. His strikingly majestic form and figure never failed to remind me of the memorable remark made by the Governor of the colony of New York, when General Lewis was a commissioner on behalf of Virginia at the treaty of Fort Stanwix, in New York, in 1768, that "the earth seemed to tremble under him as he walked along." His statue is one of those around that of the father of his country, in Capitol Square, Richmond, Va.; it is marked with the name of Andrew Lewis, the "Hero of Point Pleasant."

General Washington, under whom Lewis had served in various capacities, had formed such a high estimate of Lewis's character and ability, it is said, that when the chief command of the Revolutionary army was proposed to Washington he expressed a wish that it had been given to General Lewis. General Lewis died in 1781.

General Andrew Lewis married (1749) Elizabeth Givens, of Augusta Co., Va., and left issue:

12. I. Captain John Lewis<sup>5</sup>, who was an officer under his father at Grant's defeat, when he was made prisoner and carried to Quebec and thence to France. Married Patsy Love of Alexandria, Va.  
Issue:
13. I. Andrew Samuel Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married Miss Whilby.
14. II. Charles Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married daughter of Gen. Abraham Trigg, of Virginia.
15. III. Elizabeth Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married, second, Mr. Ball; third, Mr. Marshall. (Her first husband was Mr. Luke, of Alexandria, Va.)

16. II. Thomas Lewis<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Evans, of Point Pleasant, Va.
  17. III. Colonel Samuel Lewis<sup>5</sup>, U. S. A.; d. unmarried in Greenbrier Co., Va.
  18. IV. Colonel Andrew Lewis<sup>5</sup>, U. S. A. of the Brent Mountain, b. 1759. Married Eliza, daughter of John Madison, of Montgomery Co., Va.; d. 1844. Issue:
  19. I. Charles Lewis<sup>6</sup>, d. unmarried.
  20. II. Thomas Lewis<sup>6</sup>, a distinguished lawyer who killed and was killed by Mr. McHenry in a duel with rifles at the distance of thirty yards, the first duel at close quarters ever fought with rifles in Virginia. Left no issue.
  21. III. ——— Lewis<sup>6</sup>, d. young.
  22. IV. ——— Lewis<sup>6</sup>, d. young.
  23. V. Agatha Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. 1778. Married Col. Elijah McClanahan, of Botetourt Co., Va.
  24. V. Annie Lewis<sup>5</sup>. Married Roland Madison, of Kentucky. Issue:
  25. I. John Madison<sup>6</sup>.
  26. II. Eliza Lewis Madison<sup>6</sup>. Married Mr. Worthington, of Maryland.
  27. III. Andrew Lewis Madison<sup>6</sup>, d. captain in U. S. A.
  28. IV. Roland Madison<sup>6</sup>, Jr., lived (1873) in Rushville, Indiana.
  29. VI. William Lewis<sup>5</sup>, b. 1764. Married, first, Lucy, daughter of John Madison; second, Nancy McClanahan.
1. I. General Robert Lewis<sup>1</sup>, brother of William Lewis<sup>1</sup>, with his wife and two sons came to Virginia in 1645, in the good ship "Blessing." The names of the sons were:
    2. I. John Lewis<sup>2</sup>, Sr.
    3. II. William Lewis<sup>2</sup>, of Chemokins, St. Peters Parish, New Kent Co., Va.
  - II. John Lewis<sup>2</sup> (Robert<sup>1</sup>). Married Isabella Warner, daughter of Augustine Warner, of Warner Hall, Gloucester Co., Va., Speaker of the first House of Burgesses. They had issue:

4. I. Major John Lewis<sup>3</sup>, Jr., of Gloucester Co., Va., a member of the Virginia Council, b. Nov. 30, 1669. Married Frances Fielding. She d. 1731; he d. 1754.
5. II. Warner Lewis<sup>3</sup>. Married Eleanor, widow of William Gooch, son of Sir William Gooch, Governor of Virginia, and daughter of James Bowles, of Maryland.
6. III. ——— Lewis<sup>3</sup>. Married Col. Willis, of Fredericksburg, Va.
7. IV. ——— Lewis<sup>3</sup>. Married Francis Merriweather.
8. V. John Lewis<sup>3</sup>.
9. VI. Isabella Lewis<sup>3</sup>.
10. VII. Anna Lewis<sup>3</sup>.

III. Major John Lewis<sup>3</sup> (John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), of Gloucester Co., Va., member of the Virginia Council, b. November 30, 1669. Married Frances Fielding; d. 1731. He d. 1754. Issue:

11. I. Colonel Robert Lewis<sup>4</sup>, of Belvoir, Albemarle Co., Va.
12. II. Colonel Charles Lewis<sup>4</sup>, of the Byrd.
13. III. Col. Fielding Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married, first, Catherine; second, Betty Washington.

IV. Warner Lewis<sup>4</sup> (Warner<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), son of Warner Lewis<sup>3</sup> and Eleanor Gooch. Married, first, Mary Chiswell; second, Mary Fleming.

Issue by first marriage:

14. I. Warner Lewis<sup>5</sup>. Married Courtenay Norton. Issue:
  1. Courtenay Warner Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married Mr. Selden, of Gloucester, Va.

IV. Fielding Lewis<sup>4</sup> (Warner<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), second son of Warner Lewis and Eleanor Gooch. Married Agnes Harwood. They lived at Weyanoke, on the James River. Fielding Lewis held a high place in society, and was considered one of the fathers of Virginia agriculture. His portrait, with that of John Taylor, of Caroline, and other distinguished agriculturists, may now be seen in the rooms of the Agricultural Society of Richmond, placed there by order of the society. Issue:

15. I. Margaret Waddrop Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
16. II. Frances Fielding Lewis<sup>5</sup>.



17. III. Anne Lewis<sup>5</sup>.

18. IV. Frances Lewis<sup>5</sup>.

19. V. Eleanor W. Lewis<sup>5</sup>.

Margaret W. Lewis<sup>5</sup> married Thomas Marshall, eldest son of Chief Justice Marshall. Their descendants are given in Volume I, Chapters V, VI, VII.

Eleanor Warner Lewis<sup>5</sup>. Married Robert Douthat. Their descendants now living in Baltimore are:

I. Mr. Montgomery O. Selden, his children Allen and Elizabeth Selden.

II. Mr. Bolling Selden, his children Mrs. Swope, Susan P. Selden, Agnes Lewis Selden and Alice Selden.

The descendants of Mrs. Courtenay Warner Lewis, who married Mr. William Selden, of Gloucester, are:

Mrs. Charles Dimmoek, Mrs. William Dimmoek, and Mrs. Loyd Tabb. This branch of the family inherited Warner Hall in Gloucester.

V. Frances Fielding Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Fielding<sup>4</sup>, Warner<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Fielding Lewis and Agnes Harwood, his wife. Married Archibald Taylor, of Norfolk, Va. Issue:

20. I. Fielding Lewis Taylor<sup>6</sup>, a colonel in the Confederate army, who was killed in a battle. Married Farley Fauntleroy. Issue:

21. I. Archibald Taylor<sup>7</sup>. Married Martha Fauntleroy. Issue:

22. I. Archibald Taylor<sup>8</sup>.

23. II. Thomas Taylor<sup>8</sup>, served under Gen. Robert E. Lee in the Confederate army. He was killed at the Battle of Shiloh.

V. Eleanor Warner Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Fielding<sup>4</sup>, Warner<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Fielding Lewis and Agnes Harwood, his wife. Married Robert Douthat, of Weyanoke. Issue:

I Robert Douthat<sup>6</sup>. Married, first, Mary Ambler Marshall; second, Betty W. Wade. Issue Vol. I.

The issue of William H. Selden and Jane Douthat, were:

I. Robert Selden.

II. Eleanor Selden.

- III. William Selden.
- IV. Bolling Selden.
- V. Agnes Selden.
- VI. Montgomery Selden.
- VII. Lewis Selden.

IV. Col. Robert Lewis<sup>4</sup> (Major John Lewis<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), of Belvoir, Albemarle Co., Va. Married Jane, daughter of Nicholas Merriweather; d. 1757. His will is recorded in Albemarle Co., Va.

IV. Col. Charles Lewis<sup>4</sup> (Major John Lewis<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), of the Byrd. Married Luey, daughter of John Taliaferro, of the Manor Plantation, of Snow Creek, Spottsylvania Co., Va., about 1750.

IV. Colonel Fielding Lewis<sup>4</sup> (Major John Lewis<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), son of Major John Lewis and Frances Fielding, his wife. Married (1746) Catherine Washington, a cousin of General Washington; second, Betty Washington, sister of General Washington.

Col. Fielding settled near Fredericksburg, Va. He was a member of the House of Burgesses, a merchant and vestryman. There is in the possession of a descendant of Col. Fielding Lewis and his wife, Betty Washington, an old family Bible, a hereditary relic for five generations, having been given by Mary Ball Washington to her only daughter, Betty (Mrs. Fielding Lewis), and transmitted directly to her descendants. During the Revolution, in 1776, Col. Fielding Lewis was an ardent patriot and did special service by superintending the manufacture of arms for the use of the army.

Col. Fielding Lewis and Catherine Washington, his first wife, had issue:

- 24. I. John Lewis<sup>5</sup>, b. 1747. Married five times.
- 25. II. Francis Lewis<sup>5</sup>, d. young.
- 26. III. Warner Lewis<sup>5</sup>, d. young.

Issue by second wife:

- 27. IV. Fielding Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- 28. V. Augustine Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- 29. VI. Warner Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- 30. VII. George Washington Lewis<sup>5</sup>.

- 31. VIII. Mary Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- 32. IX. Charles Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- 33. X. Samuel Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- 34. XI. Bettie Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- 35. XII. Lawrence Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- 36. XIII. Robert Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- 37. XIV. Howell Lewis<sup>5</sup>, b. 1771. Married Miss Pollard, and left issue.

V. John Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Fielding<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. Fielding Lewis and Catherine Washington, his first wife, b. 1747. He was a graduate of Oxford, England, and died in Logan County, Kentucky. Married five times, first, Lucy Thornton; second, Elizabeth, daughter of Gabriel Jones; third, Miss Jones; fourth, Mary Ann Fontaine, widow of Bowles Armistead; fifth, Mrs. Mereer, née Carter.

V. Fielding Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Fielding<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), fourth son of Col. Fielding Lewis. Married and died in Fairfax Co., Va., leaving no male issue. Issue:

- 38. I. Catherine Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married Henry Chew Dade.
- 39. II. Lucinda Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married Gilson Foote.

V. George W. Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Fielding<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), seventh son of Col. Fielding, b. June 24, 1755. He was a captain in Colonel Baylor's regiment of cavalry, during the Revolutionary War, and commander of General Washington's life-guards. It is said that General Mercer expired in his arms at the battle of Princeton. Married Miss Daingerfield and lived in Clarke Co., Va.; died at his county seat, Marmion, in 1871. He enjoyed the highest confidence of General Washington and was sent by him on a secret expedition to Canada.

George Washington Lewis and Miss Daingerfield, his wife, had issue:

- 40. I. Mary Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married Col. Byrd Willis. (See Willis Family, Chapter IX.)
- 41. II. Daingerfield Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
- 42. III. Samuel Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
- 43. IV. Bettie Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. 1765. Married Charles Carter. (See Carter Family, Chapter VII.)

V. Lawrence Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Fielding<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), twelfth son of Colonel Fielding Lewis, b. 1767. He lived on his estate, Woodlawn, near Mount Vernon. He was the adopted son and executor of the will of General Washington. Married Eleanor Parke Custis, daughter of Washington Parke Custis, adopted child of Mrs. Washington. They had issue:

44. I. Lorenzo Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
45. II. Lawrence Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
46. III. Frances Parke Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
47. IV. Washington Lewis<sup>6</sup>, lived in Clarke Co., Va. His descendants own many of the old family portraits, among them those of Col. Fielding Lewis and his second wife, Betty Washington.

V. Robert Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Fielding<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), thirteenth son of Col. Fielding Lewis and Betty Washington, his second wife; was private secretary to General Washington during his presidential term. Married Miss Brown and settled in Fredericksburg, Va. Issue:

48. I. Daughter Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married Rev. Edward McGuire, of Fredericksburg, Va.
49. II. Daughter Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married George W. Bassett, of Richmond, Va.

From Bishop Meade's "Old Families" we quote the following account:

Among the families who belonged to Pohick Church was that of Mr. Lawrence Lewis, nephew of General Washington. He married Miss Custis, the granddaughter of Mrs. Washington. In many of the pictures of the Washington family she may be seen as a girl in a group with the General, Mrs. Washington, and her brother, Washington Parke Custis. There were two full sisters, Mrs. Law and Mrs. Peter. Mrs. Custis, the widow of Washington Parke Custis, married second, Dr. David Stuart, first of Hope Parish and then of Ossian Hall, Fairfax Co., Va. One of the sons of Lorenzo Lewis married a daughter of Beverly Johnson, of Baltimore, Md.

John Lewis, Sr., one of the original brothers, who emigrated from Wales to America, was born about 1640. He lived with the Mastyns, an ancient and wealthy family of Denbighshire, Wales. He died in Hanover Co., Va., 1726, where his will can be found on record. This John Lewis, Sr., was the great-great-grandfather

of William Terrill Lewis, of Louisville, Winston Co., Miss., author of the Lewis genealogy, from which the dates of this article have been largely drawn. In his will John Lewis mentions the names of his children:

2. I. Rebecca Lewis<sup>2</sup>.
3. II. Abraham Lewis<sup>2</sup>.
4. III. Sarah Lewis<sup>2</sup>.
5. IV. Angelica Lewis<sup>2</sup>.
6. V. David Lewis<sup>2</sup>.
7. VI. John Lewis<sup>2</sup>.

II. David Lewis<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), Sr., fifth son of John Lewis, Sr., was born in Hanover Co., Va., about 1685. Married, first, Miss Terrill, by whom he had eight children.

William, James and John Terrill were brothers of Anglo-Norman descent. They came to America about 1660, as hunters for King James II, of England, and settled in Gloucester Co., Va. For their dexterity in hunting they were awarded by the King fifteen hundred acres of land, to be selected by themselves. The Terrills are of Anglo-Norman origin and descend from Sir Walter Tyrell, a Norman knight who came into England with William the Conqueror, A. D. 1066. David Lewis, Sr., fifth child of the emigrant, moved from Hanover Co., Va., and settled in Albemarle Co., Va., about 1750, where he died in 1779. He married twice and left eleven children. William Terrill Lewis<sup>3</sup>, the eldest child of David Lewis, Sr., b. 1718, Hanover Co., Va., moved to Albemarle Co., Va., and was the third settler in that county. William Lewis, Sr., was one of the first men who volunteered their services in Albemarle Co., Va., to resist the high-handed measures of Lord Dunmore in 1774.

IV. Col. Robert Lewis<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), of Belvoir, Albemarle Co., Va., son of Major John Lewis<sup>3</sup> and Frances Fielding Lewis, his wife. Married Jane, daughter of Nicholas Meriwether. He died in 1757, leaving five children. Issue:

- I. Robert Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- II. John Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- III. Charles Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Nicholas Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- V. William Lewis<sup>5</sup>.

V. William Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Robert<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>) was captain in the State line during the Revolution. Married Lucy Meriwether, daughter of Thomas Meriwether, by whom he had three children:

I. Meriwether Lewis<sup>6</sup>.

II. Reuben Lewis<sup>6</sup>.

III. Jane Lewis<sup>6</sup>.

VI. Meriwether Lewis<sup>6</sup> (William<sup>5</sup>, Robert<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), generally called the "Oregon Explorer," son of Captain William Lewis, b. August 18, 1774. His father died when he was very young and he grew up under the care of his uncle, Col. Nicholas Lewis. Thomas Jefferson gives a very interesting sketch of Meriwether Lewis, who was for two years his private secretary. He says: "He was remarkable, even in infancy, for enterprise, boldness and discretion. When only eight years old he habitually went out in the dead of the night alone with his dogs into the forest to hunt the raccoon and opossum. At the age of thirteen he was put to the Latin school and continued until eighteen."

At the age of twenty he engaged as a volunteer in the body of militia called out by General Washington for service in the western part of the United States. At twenty-three he was promoted to a captaincy. In 1792 Thomas Jefferson proposed to the American Philosophical Society that they should set on foot a subscription to engage some competent person to explore the region by ascending the Missouri, crossing the Stony Mountains and descending the nearest river to the Pacific. Captain Lewis, being then stationed at Charlottesville, warmly solicited Jefferson to obtain for him the execution of the expedition, although it was explained to him that the person engaged to go should be accompanied by a single companion only, to avoid exciting alarm among the Indians. This did not deter him, but the proposal did not succeed. In 1803 Congress approved the plan and voted a man of money to carry it into execution. Captain Lewis, who had been private secretary for Jefferson for two years, renewed his solicitations to have the direction of the party. His request was granted, and as it was necessary that he should have some competent person with him, in case of accident to himself, William Clarke, brother of General Rogers Clarke, was selected and approved, receiving a commission as captain. In April, 1803, a draft of his instructions



was sent to Captain Lewis, and on the 5th of July, 1803, they left Washington and proceeded to Pittsburg. The two explorers, Lewis and Clarke, returned to St. Louis on the 23d of September, 1806, having been gone a little over three years. The old accounts of the expedition tell us, "Never did a similar event excite more joy throughout the United States." Captain Lewis was soon after appointed Governor of Louisiana and Captain Clarke a general of its militia, and agent of the United States for Indian affairs in the department. Captain Meriwether Lewis died October 11, 1809, aged 35.

The *Virginia Heraldry* gives (February 11, 1906):

"There seems to have been some doubt for a time as to which of Col. Robert Lewis' sons married Catherine Fauntleroy. Some genealogists stated that it was Robert, but it has been proved that he married his cousin, Frances Lewis."

I believe that there is now a record of the marriage of John Lewis and Catherine Fauntleroy in Washington. However that may be, there seems to be no doubt that John is the Lewis who married Catherine.

V. John Lewis<sup>5</sup>. (Robert<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, Robert<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. Robert Lewis and Jane Meriwether, his wife. Married Catherine Fauntleroy, daughter of Col. William Fauntleroy, of Naylor's Hole (he mentions his daughter Catherine Lewis in his will, dated 1757), and his wife, Apphia Bushrod, and great-granddaughter of Col. Moore Fauntleroy, who emigrated to America before 1643, and who was the twenty-first generation of descent from Henry I, of France (Browning's "Americans of Royal Descent").

In Deed Book No. 5, of the Albemarle County Records (pp. 191, 192 and 299), he describes himself as "John Lewis, of Halifax Co., Va., in three separate deeds, in which his wife Catherine joins as party to same. He qualified as executor to his father's will in 1766 (Albemarle records). He left Halifax and went to reside on the Dan River, in North Carolina.

John Lewis and Catherine Fauntleroy, his wife, had issue:

- I. Sallie Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. 1761. Married (Aug. 10, 1780) Philip Taylor. Mr. Williams, of Asheville, N. C., has an old prayer-book that belonged to Philip Taylor, an an-

cestor of his, which contains the record of the marriage and the fact of her being the daughter of John and Catherine Lewis.

- II. Apphia Fauntleroy Lewis<sup>a</sup>. Married David Allen, who lived on the Dan River, five miles from Danville, Pittsylvania Co., Va. A great-aunt, who died only a few years ago, by name Apphia Lewis Hightower, gave the facts to my cousin, with the names of the children. She spent much of her time at the old plantation on the Dan River with her grandparents. Apphia Fauntleroy Lewis and her husband, David Allen, had issue:
  - I. Lewis Buckner Allen<sup>7</sup>, b. 1773; d. July 20, 1835, at Hickory Flat, near Florence, Ala. Married Mary Catherine Jones, daughter of Richard C. Jones and Elizabeth Crowley Ward, of Amelia Co., Va.
  - II. Julius Allen<sup>7</sup>, a bachelor, who inherited the old home on the Dan River and afterward left it to his nephew, David Allen.
- III. Fauntleroy Allen<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. Felix Allen<sup>7</sup>. Married Margaret White.
- V. Christian Allen<sup>7</sup>. Married Sallie Fortson.
- VI. Sallie Fauntleroy Allen<sup>7</sup>. Married Joseph Woodson.
- VII. David Bushrod Allen<sup>7</sup>, moved to Mississippi.
- VIII. Mary Meriwether Allen<sup>7</sup>. Married John Ross.
- VII. Lewis Buckner Allen<sup>7</sup> and Mary Catherine Jones left issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Crowley Allen<sup>a</sup>, b. 1817; d. March 5, 1849, Alabama. Married (April 3, 1834) Captain Clinton Heslep.
  - II. William Ward Allen<sup>a</sup>. Married and moved to Texas.
  - III. Ann Catherine Allen<sup>a</sup>. Married John Donalson; descendants live in Aberdeen, Miss.
  - IV. John Lewis Allen<sup>a</sup>. Married Josephine Middlebrook.
  - V. Apphia Lewis Allen<sup>a</sup>. Married John Hightower; descendants live in Texas.
  - VI. Richard Allen<sup>a</sup>, d. single.
  - VIII. Elizabeth Crowley Allen<sup>a</sup> was b. 1817; d. March 5, 1849. Married (April 3, 1834) Captain Clinton Heslep, b. December

10, 1810, in West Calm, Pa., and was the son of Joseph Heslep and wife, Susan Kendig. Joseph Heslep moved to Kentucky in 1813 and then to Alabama. He was very wealthy, having developed the first iron works in that part of the country. His sister Hanna married Bernard Van Leer, and they were the ancestors of the Van Leers of Nashville, Tenn.

Elizabeth Crowley Allen and her husband, Captain Clinton Heslep, left issue:

- I. Mary Cornelia Heslep<sup>o</sup>, b. 1835, at Hickory Flat, near Florence, Ala.; d. at Florence, 1902. Married John Hood. Issue:
  - I. James Hood<sup>1o</sup>.
  - II. Lizzie Hood<sup>1o</sup>. Married Harris.
  - III. John Hood<sup>1o</sup>, of the United States Navy.
  - IV. Chalmers Hood<sup>1o</sup>.
  - V. Cole Hood<sup>1o</sup>.
  - VI. Clinton Hood<sup>1o</sup>.
  - VII. Mary Hood<sup>1o</sup>.
- II. Christian Heslep<sup>o</sup>, b. 1837, Alabama; d. 1890, St. Louis, Mo.
- III. Lewis Buckner Heslep<sup>o</sup>, b. June 22, 1838, Alabama; d. June 1, 1905, St. Louis, Mo. Married (Nov. 22, 1860) Griselda A. Seat, in Trenton, Tenn., a daughter of Capt. Robert Seat, and his wife, Martha Gilchrist. Martha Gilchrist was a daughter of Dr. Allen Gilchrist, whose father, Thomas Gilchrist, married Martha Jones, sister of Gen. Willie Jones and Gov. Allen Jones, of Revolutionary fame, in North Carolina. Dr. Allen Gilchrist's sister, Griselda Gilchrist, married Col. William Polk, of Tennessee, who was the father of Gen. Leonidas Polk, of Civil War fame.
- IV. Joseph Heslep<sup>o</sup>, b. May 1, 1842, Florence, Ala.
- V. Clinton Heslep<sup>o</sup>, b. Sept. 11, 1843, at Brown's Port, Perry Co., Tenn.; d. in Florence, after Civil War.
- IX. Lewis Buckner Heslep<sup>o</sup> and Griselda A. Seat, his wife, had issue:
  - I. Cornelia Sallie Heslep<sup>1o</sup>, b. March 1, 1862, Trenton, Tenn. Married (Sept. 22, 1880, St. Louis, Mo.)

Robert G. Hogan, b. in England and nephew of Hon. John Hogan, of St. Louis, who represented that city in Congress, and was known by the *sobriquet* of "Honest John."

- II. Vernon Benton Heslep<sup>10</sup>, b. April 15, 1864, in Columbus, Ky.
- III. Lewis Buekner Heslep<sup>10</sup>, b. Feb. 4, 1867, Trenton, Tenn.
- X. Cornelia S. Heslep<sup>10</sup> married Robert G. Hogan, and had issue:
  - I. Reginald R. Hogan<sup>11</sup>, lieutenant in United States Marine Corps, b. Dec. 21, 1881, St. Louis, Mo.
  - II. Hazel Heslep Hogan<sup>11</sup>, b. June 28, 1883, St. Louis. Married (April 5, 1903, in St. Louis) Ephraim Brevard Cockrell, son of former United States Senator Francis Marion Cockrell.
  - III. Robert Cecil Hogan<sup>11</sup>, b. July 26, 1885, St. Louis.
  - IV. Gladys Griselda Hogan<sup>11</sup>, b. March 7, 1889, St. Louis.
  - V. George Vernon Hogan<sup>11</sup>, b. March 10, 1895, in Webster Grove, St. Louis Co., Mo.

#### HON. THOMAS LEWIS.

Thomas Lewis<sup>2</sup>, the second son of the founder, was born in Donegal, Ireland, April 27, 1718; died January 31, 1790. He was a man of strong and cultivated mind, of spirit and enterprise, and during the colonial period and the Revolutionary War rendered important services to the country. In 1746 he was appointed colonial surveyor of Augusta, and much of Washington's great wealth was acquired by surveys of land under his authority and in common with him. He and Col. John Wilson represented the county in the House of Burgesses almost uninterruptedly from 1745 to 1767, and they voted in 1765 for Patrick Henry's celebrated resolutions declaring that "this general assembly have the only exclusive right and power to lay taxes and impositions upon the inhabitants of this colony; that any efforts in an opposite direction are illegal, unconstitutional and unjust, and have a manifest tendency to destroy British as well as American freedom."

In 1775 he was unanimously elected delegate to the Colonial Congress, and was one of the first to enroll his name among the

"Sons of Liberty." He was commissioner of the old confederacy of the thirteen colonies in 1778, to treat with the Indian tribes at the battle of Point Pleasant. He was a member of the convention which ratified the constitution of the United States.

After the Revolution, Gen. Washington made him a visit at Lewiston, in Rockingham, and there arranged their land claims. His descendants still own and reside upon his estate, Lewiston, near Port Republic, in the present county of Rockingham. He had a literary taste, and when not engaged in business was generally to be found in his library. He died at his residence in Rockingham County, on the Shenandoah River, three miles from Port Republic, January 31, 1790. In his will he fixed the place on his own estate where he wished to be buried, and desired that the burial service might be read from the Book of Common Prayer by his friend Peachy Gilmer. Married (January 26, 1749) Jane, the daughter of William Strother, Esq., of Stafford Co., Va., whose estate, opposite to Fredericksburg, joined the residence of the father of Gen. Washington, with whom (Gen. W.) she was a school-mate and nearly of the same age.

Hon. Thomas Lewis<sup>2</sup> and Jane Strother, his wife, had issue:

3. I. Thomas Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1749.
4. II. Margaret Ann Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1751; d. 1834.
5. III. Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1753; d. 1836.
6. IV. Jane Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1755; d. 1790.
7. V. Andrew Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1757; d. 1810, single.
8. VI. Thomas Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1760; d. 1847, single.
9. VII. Mary Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1762; d. 1829. Married John McElhany. Issue unknown.
10. VIII. Elizabeth Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1765.
11. IX. Anne Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1767. Married, first, Mr. Douthat—no issue; second, Mr. French, of Kentucky. Issue unknown.
12. X. Frances Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1769. Married Miss Yaneey, of Rockingham Co., Va., and at her death, 1845, left one son:
  - I. Col. William B. Yaneey.
13. XI. Charles Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1772. Married Anne Hance, of Maryland.

14. XII. Sophia Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1775. Married John Carthrae, of Rockingham Co., Va.; removed to Missouri. Issue unknown.
  15. XIII. William Benjamin Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1778. Married Miss Hite, and at his death, 1842, left issue:
  16. I. William H. Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Elizabeth, daughter of Capt. John Lewis, of Bath Co. Issue unknown.
  17. II. Gen. George Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Effinger.
  18. III. Mary Jane Lewis<sup>4</sup>.
  - III. Margaret Ann Lewis<sup>3</sup> (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. 1751. Married McClenahan, of Staunton, Va., by whom she left one child:
  19. I. John McClenahan<sup>4</sup>.
- Her husband dying, she afterwards married Col. Wm. Bowyer, of Staunton, by whom at her death, in 1834, she left issue:
20. II. William C. Bowyer<sup>4</sup>.
  21. III. Strother Bowyer<sup>4</sup>.
  22. IV. Luke Bowyer<sup>4</sup>.
  23. V. Peter C. Bowyer<sup>4</sup>.
  24. VI. Matilda Bowyer<sup>4</sup>.

III. Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup> (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Col. Thomas Lewis and Jane Strother, his wife, b. 1753; d. 1836, aged 83. Married, first, Capt. Frogg, d. leaving one daughter; she left one daughter.

Agatha Lewis married, second, Col. John Stuart, of Greenbrier Co., Va., by whom she left issue:

25. I. Elizabeth Frogg<sup>4</sup>, b. 1773.  
Issue by second marriage:
26. II. Charles A. Stuart<sup>4</sup>, b. 1775.
27. III. Lewis Stuart<sup>4</sup>, b. 1777.
28. IV. Margaret Stuart<sup>4</sup>, b. 1779.
29. V. Jane Stuart<sup>4</sup>, b. 17—.

I shall complete the Stuart lineage before taking up Charles Lewis's branch:

IV. Elizabeth Frogg<sup>4</sup> (Agatha<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Agatha Lewis and Capt. Frogg. Married Major Isaac Estill, of Monroe Co. and left issue.



- 30. I. Wallace Estill<sup>5</sup>.
- 31. II. John Estill<sup>5</sup>.
- 32. III. ——— Estill<sup>5</sup>.
- 33. IV. Agnes Estill<sup>5</sup>.

IV. Charles A. Stuart<sup>4</sup> (Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Agatha Lewis and John Stuart, of Greenbrier Co., Va. Married Miss Robertson, of Augusta Co., Va., and had following issue:

- 34. I. Robertson Stuart<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Bradford, of Orange, Va.
- 35. II. Jane Stuart<sup>5</sup>. Married Margaret Lewis. Issue unknown.
- 36. III. Elizabeth Stuart<sup>5</sup>, single.

IV. Lewis Stuart<sup>4</sup> (Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Agatha Lewis and Col. John Stuart, b. 1777. Married Sarah Lewis and had issue:

- 37. I. Raehael Stuart<sup>5</sup>. Married Gen. Davis, Mississippi.
- 38. II. Jane Stuart<sup>5</sup>. Married Samuel Preece.
- 39. III. Agnes Stuart<sup>5</sup>. Married Charles L. Peyton.
- 40. IV. Charley Stuart<sup>5</sup>, unmarried.
- 41. V. Margaret Stuart<sup>5</sup>. Married James Davis.
- 42. VI. Lewis Stuart<sup>5</sup>, unmarried.
- 43. VII. Henry Stuart<sup>5</sup>, unmarried.
- 44. VIII. Andrew Stuart<sup>5</sup>, unmarried.

IV. Margaret Stuart<sup>4</sup> (Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Agatha Lewis and Col. John Stuart, b. 1779. Married Col. Andrew Lewis,\* of Point Pleasant, 1802; he d. 1833, leaving issue:

- 45. I. Agnes Lewis<sup>5</sup>, b. 1805.
- 46. II. John Lewis<sup>5</sup>, b. 1807; d. 1811.
- 47. III. Elizabeth Lewis<sup>5</sup>, b. —; d. 1812.
- 48. IV. Mary J. Lewis<sup>5</sup>, b. 1811. Married Charles R. Baldwin in 1833; d. 1835.
- 49. V. John Stuart Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- 50. VI. Margaret Lewis<sup>5</sup>, b. —; d. 1819.

---

\*NOTE.—Col. Andrew Lewis<sup>3</sup> (Charles<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>) was son of Col. Charles Lewis and Sarah Murray.

51. VII. Sarah Frances Lewis<sup>5</sup>, b. 1817. Married Dr. Creigh, of Lewisburg, W. Va. Issue unknown.

52. VIII. Elizabeth Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. 1819.

53. IX. Andrew Lewis<sup>6</sup>, d. young.

IV. Jane Stuart<sup>4</sup> (Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Agatha Lewis and Col. John Stuart, b. 17—. Married Major Robert Crockett, of Wythe Co., W. Va., and left the following issue:

54. I. Maria Crockett<sup>5</sup>. Married Judge James E. Brown.

55. II. Agatha Crockett<sup>5</sup>. Married James McGavoc, and left issue.

56. III. Charles Crockett<sup>5</sup>. Married Mary Bowyer, of Botetourt and left issue.

57. IV. Stuart Crockett<sup>5</sup>. Married Margaret Taylor, of Smyth Co., and left issue.

58. V. Frank Crockett<sup>5</sup>. Married ———.

59. VI. Gustavus Crockett<sup>5</sup>. Married Eliza Erskine.

60. VII. Augustine Crockett<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.

V. Agatha Estill<sup>6</sup> (Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Elizabeth Frogg and Major Isaac Estill. Married Henry Erskine of Greenbrier and had issue:

61. I. Elizabeth Erskine<sup>6</sup>. Married Gustavus Crockett.

62. II. Margaret Lewis Erskine<sup>6</sup>. Married Charles S. Gay, of Richmond, Va., who removed to Augusta Co., Va., and had issue:

63. I. Charles Gay<sup>7</sup>, killed in battle Malvern Hill.

64. II. Fanny Gay<sup>7</sup>. Married Richard M. Catlett, a lawyer of Staunton, Va.

65. III. Elizabeth Gay<sup>7</sup>.

66. IV. Erskine Gay<sup>7</sup>, unmarried.

67. V. Agatha Gay<sup>7</sup>.

68. VI. William Gay<sup>7</sup>.

69. VII. Carrie Gay<sup>7</sup>. Married W. M. Allen, of Staunton, Va.

70. VIII. Margaret Gay<sup>7</sup>, d. young.

71. IX. William Lewis Gay<sup>7</sup>, d. young.

72. X. John Robertson Gay<sup>7</sup>, d. young.

73. III. Jane Erskine<sup>6</sup>. Married William Boyd, a lawyer of Buchanan, in Botetourt Co., Va., and had issue:

- 74. I. Henry Boyd<sup>7</sup>.
- 75. II. Aliee Boys Boyd<sup>7</sup>.
- 76. III. William Boyd<sup>7</sup>.
- 77. IV. Andrew Boyd<sup>7</sup>.

V. Rachel Stuart<sup>5</sup> (Lewis<sup>4</sup>, Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Lewis Stuart and Sarah Lewis, his wife. Married Gen. Davis, of Mississippi, and had issue:

- 78. I. Runnels Davis<sup>6</sup>.
- 79. II. Charles Davis<sup>6</sup>.
- 80. III. Sarah Davis<sup>6</sup>.
- 81. IV. Mary Davis<sup>6</sup>.
- 82. V. Alfred Davis<sup>6</sup>.
- 83. VI. ———— Davis<sup>6</sup>.
- 84. VII. ———— Davis<sup>6</sup>.

V. Jane Stuart<sup>5</sup> (Lewis<sup>4</sup>, Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Lewis Stuart and Sarah Lewis, his wife. Married Samuel Priece, of Lewisburg, W. Va., formerly Lieutenant-Governor of Virginia and in 1876 United States Senator for West Virginia, and at her death, in 1873, left issue:

- 85. I. Margaret Priece<sup>6</sup>.
- 86. II. Mary Priece<sup>6</sup>.
- 87. III. John Priece<sup>6</sup>.
- 88. IV. Sally Priece<sup>6</sup>.
- 89. V. Jennie Priece<sup>6</sup>.
- 90. VI. Lewis Priece<sup>6</sup>.

V. Agnes Stuart<sup>5</sup> (Lewis<sup>4</sup>, Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Lewis Stuart and Sarah Lewis, his wife. Married Charles L. Peyton, son of C. Peyton and a great nephew of President Jefferson, of Greenbrier Co., W. Va., and had issue:

- 91. I. Thomas Peyton<sup>6</sup>.
- 92. II. Elizabeth Peyton<sup>6</sup>.
- 93. III. Lewis Peyton<sup>6</sup>.
- 94. IV. Charles Peyton<sup>6</sup>.
- 95. V. Harry Peyton<sup>6</sup>.
- 96. VI. Caroline Peyton<sup>6</sup>.

V. Maria Crockett<sup>5</sup> (Jane Stuart<sup>4</sup>, Agatha Lewis<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Jane Stuart and Major Robert Crockett, of

Wythe Co., Va. Married Judge James E. Brown, by whom she had issue:

97. I. William Brown<sup>6</sup>, d. unmarried.
98. II. Jane Brown<sup>6</sup>, d. unmarried.
99. III. Fanny Peyton Brown<sup>6</sup>. Married Col. Joseph F. Kent. She d. 1861, leaving issue:
  - I. Betty Kent<sup>7</sup>. Married George M. Harrison. (See Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.)
  - II. John Kent<sup>7</sup>, unmarried.
  - III. Jane Kent<sup>7</sup>. Married Howe Peyton Cochran.
  - IV. Emma Kent<sup>7</sup>. Married Jno. O. Yates.
  - V. Alexander Kent<sup>7</sup>, d. unmarried.

After the death (1861) of Mrs. Kent, Col. Joseph F. Kent married, second, Virginia Frances Peyton, b. 1841. Issue:

- I. Joseph Kent<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Susan Peyton Kent<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Mary Preston Kent<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Susan Peyton Kent<sup>7</sup>. Married (6th of January, 1904) by Rev. Mercer P. Logan, D. D., at St. John's Episcopal Church, Wytheville, Va., to Mr. Edmund Fontaine Broun, of Charleston, W. Va.\*

IV. Alexander Brown, fourth child of Judge Brown, was a most promising young man, who, after graduating with distinction at the University of Virginia, commenced the law practice in Wythe, but died soon after.

The *Baltimore Sun* of August 13, 1905, has the following article on:

#### THE OLD HOME OF NELLY CUSTIS.

Of the many old Colonial Homes in Virginia which are still in a splendid state of preservation, perhaps none can claim greater historical interest or more pleasing associations than does old Woodlawn Mansion, the

---

\*Being in Wytheville that winter I (L. Pecquet du Bellet) was at the wedding. I was at the reception and handed all the telegrams of congratulations to the bride and groom. A lovelier bride I have never seen. The parlors were crowded with guests from various States of the Union. The presents were very handsome, costing several thousand dollars.

The mother of the bride is a very dear friend of mine. I receive some very interesting letters from her. (Peyton Family, Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, pp. 461-566.)

original home of Mrs. Eleanor Custis Lewis, née Nelly Custis, the adopted daughter of General George Washington. Since Woodlawn was built one hundred years have rolled into the great abyss of the past, yet it stands to-day a complete and solid result of fine old-time architecture, in no respect reduced from its ancient splendor or magnificence.

Woodlawn is located in lower Fairfax County, lying directly on the road known as the Alexandria pike, and an hour's drive from that old city of Alexandria, where centers so much of history, sentiment and anecdote concerning America's greatest general, the illustrious Washington. The commanding site upon which this mansion is built was formerly a part of the Mount Vernon estate, but, with the acres surrounding it, was given by General Washington to his adopted daughter, Nelly Custis, upon her marriage to his favorite nephew, Lawrence Lewis, afterwards Major Lewis of Woodlawn. Its architecture is of Colonial date, being one of the finest specimens of that period and better known as the Georgian architecture. Within the long drawing-room of that historic mansion, on the last anniversary of the birthday of her devoted foster-father, Nelly was made the bride of Lawrence Lewis, Washington himself giving the blushing young beauty away to the beloved nephew, afterwards Major Lewis, of Woodlawn. This event took place on the 22nd of February, 1799. Mrs. Eleanor Custis Lewis sleeps to-day beneath the marble shaft that marks her grave at Mount Vernon, only a few feet away from the tomb containing the honored dust of her beloved hero and foster-father. Upon this monument the noble traits of this gentlewoman are thus written:

"Sacred to the memory of Eleanor Parke Custis, granddaughter of Mrs. Washington and adopted daughter of General Washington. Reared under the roof of the Father of His Country, this lady was not more remarkable for her beauty of person than for the superiority of her mind. She lived to be admired and died to be regretted, July 15, 1852, in the seventy-fourth year of her age."

Woodlawn has changed owners many times, and is the property to-day of Mr. Paul Kester, the popular young playwright.

Since writing the above I am the happy recipient of the following extract from Mrs. Penrose N. Ions, of San Angelo, Texas, taken from the "History of Huguenots," by Samuel Smiles:

Jean Louis was forced to flee from France, during the persecutions of the Huguenots, which followed the revocation of the "Edict of Nantes." He came of a Protestant family of wealth, position and influence, of the town of Castred. He made good his escape to England, and as the English were in need of experienced officers in Flanders, he was gladly welcomed and given a commission as Captain in Queen Anne's Army in the "Low Countries." For his gallantry and valuable services he was made Field Marshal, Earl of Ligenter and Baron of Greniskilin.

He was with Marlborough in Flanders, and attracted his attention at the storming of Liege. At Blenheim he was the only captain of his

regiment who survived. At Kenice (or Menice) he led the grenadiers in storming the counters. He fought at Malplaquet, where he was made Major of Brigade. He was in all of Marlborough's battles, and at Dettingen as Lieutenant-General, he won still higher distinction. The intrepidity with which he led the British Infantry won the battle of Fontenoy. Placed in command of the British forces in Flanders, he was taken prisoner at the engagement of Sanfield. Restored to England he was made Commander-in-Chief, and Colonel of the Fort Guards. During his career, he was in nineteen battles and twenty-three sieges.

### GENERAL JOHN LEWIS.

The first General John Lewis had a son named ———; he was the eldest and died early. He had rented in fee simple, for a hundred years, the estate of Lord Dunraven, in Ireland. John Lewis, the eldest son of the dead man, succeeded to the titles and estates and settled in Ireland. That John Lewis went to Scotland and married Margaret, the daughter of Lord Lynn, who lived on Loeh (Lake) Lynn.

John Lewis, then an earl, and his wife lived happily for a few years. Then the profligate Earl of Dunraven wanted to give (rent) the estate to a boon companion. He came with an armed band to drive John Lewis away. He fired into the house and killed a brother of Lewis, who was ill in bed. John Lewis, who had been absent, returned, and, seeing the armed Earl, he shot him dead. English soldiers were sent to arrest John Lewis for killing the Earl of Dunraven, but the Irish of the whole country arose and helped him to escape to the west coast. All the landlords near John Lewis armed their followers and escorted him to the coast, and he escaped to France. Feeling unsafe in France, he made his way alone and on foot over to the mountains in Spain. Relatives knelt to King George and begged a pardon for John Lewis. As he was safe in Spain and the King could not get him, he thought to make good use of him and try to get the Indians to kill him, so he (the King) said John Lewis should lose titles and property, but if he would go to Virginia, and go far beyond all of his good subjects, he (the King) would forgive and rent him a tract of land, 100,000 acres, provided he built a fort and became a shield to all of his good and loyal subjects. So, as he could not help himself, John Lewis came to Virginia. His brother brought over the family of John Lewis



and a shipload of tenants—McHughs (now ealled McCues) and MeLungs and many other Valley families, all Presbyterians. As soon as they got to Virginia they were on a level with John Lewis.

John Lewis had the following children: Samuel, Thomas, Andrew, William, Margaret Anne, Charles and Aliee. Aliee married Mr. Madison and was the mother of Bishop Madison. Mr. Madison was the first and only member of the family to belong to the Protestant Episeopal Church.

Thomas Lewis married Jane Strother. His sketch has been given above.

II. Col. Charles Lewis<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), the youngest son of the founder, John Lewis, and Margaret Lynn, his wife; was killed October 10, 1774, at the battle of Point Pleasant. Married Sarah Murray, an English lady, half-sister of Col. Cameron, of Bath Co., Va. She was a near relative of Linley Murray, who wrote the grammar.

Col. Charles Lewis left following issue:

3. I. Elizabeth Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1762; d. single.
4. II. Margaret Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1765.
5. III. John Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1766.
6. IV. Mary Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1768.
7. V. Thomas Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1771.
8. VI. Andrew Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1772.
9. VII. Charles Lewis<sup>3</sup>, b. 1774.

III. Col. John Lewis<sup>3</sup> (Charles<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. Charles Lewis and Sarah Murray, his wife, of Bath Co., Va. Married Raehel Miller, of Augusta Co., and left at his death, 1843, the following issue:

10. I. Sarah Lewis<sup>4</sup>.
11. II. Henry Miller Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss O'Connor, of Georgetown, Ky., and left issue.
12. III. Charles C. Lewis<sup>4</sup>.
13. IV. Naney Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Gen. Samuel Hanee Lewis, of Roekingham Co., Va.
14. V. James Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Eliza Dickinson, of Bath Co., Va. Issue unknown.
15. VI. William Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Eliza C. Miller, of Augusta Co., Va. Issue unknown.

16. VII. John Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary J. Lewis, daughter of William Benjamin Lewis, of Rockingham Co., Va., and Miss Hite. W. B. Lewis<sup>3</sup> was youngest son of Thomas Lewis<sup>2</sup> and Jane Strother. Issue unknown.
17. VIII. Elizabeth Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Wm. H. Lewis, son of Wm. Benjamin Lewis and M. Hite. Issue unknown.
18. IX. Hannah Lewis<sup>4</sup>, unmarried.
19. X. Rachel Lewis<sup>4</sup>, d. unmarried.

III. Charles Lewis<sup>3</sup> (Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Thomas Lewis<sup>2</sup> and Jane Strother, his wife; b. 1772; d. 1832, near Port Republic, Rockingham Co., Va. Married Anne Hance, of the Eastern Shore of Maryland. He inherited the homestead on the Shenandoah River in what is now Rockingham Co., Va. Charles Lewis and Anne Hance had issue:

- I. Thomas Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Delia Fletcher. Issue:
  - I. Anne Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Samuel Hance Lewis<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Charles Chambers Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary Allen and had following issue:
  - I. Charles Chambers Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. James Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Andrew Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
  - IV. Mary Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
  - V. Henry Clay Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
  - VI. William Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- VII. George Kemper Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Mary Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Dr. Nuseo Chambers, of Clinton Co., Ohio.
  - V. Margaret Strother Lewis<sup>4</sup>. Married Rev. C. B. Tippet, of Maryland.
- IV. Gen. Samuel Hance Lewis<sup>4</sup> (Charles<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Charles Lewis<sup>3</sup> and Anne Hance, a prominent citizen of Virginia, was a graduate of Washington College (now Washington and Lee), a man of great literary tastes, profoundly religious, of high moral worth, and beloved friend of Bishops Meade and Cobb. While exceedingly genial among his intimate friends, he

was a man remarkable for his strict religious observances, for his stern deportment in the presence of frivolity, and for his iron will and high integrity, both in private as well as in public life. He represented his county in the Legislature for many years, and his name is dear to the church in Virginia, in whose councils he was so long a ruling spirit. He died at his home, Lewiston, Rockingham Co., of cancer of the neck, in 1868.

He married, first, Nancy Lewis, the granddaughter of Col. Charles Lewis, killed at the battle of Point Pleasant; second, Anna Maria Lomax, daughter of Judge J. T. Lomax, of Fredericksburg, Va.; third, Mrs. Fry. No issue by this marriage.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Charles H. Lewis<sup>5</sup>, United States Minister to Portugal, 1873. Married a daughter of Judge Lomax and had issue of one daughter.
- II. John Francis Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Samuel H. Lewis<sup>5</sup>. Married a Miss Dabney.
- IV. Elizabeth Lewis<sup>5</sup>. Married Rev. J. C. Wheat.
- V. Mary Lewis<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.
- VI. Anne Lewis<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.
- VII. Margaret Lynn Lewis<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.
- VIII. William Meade Lewis<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.

Issue by second marriage:

- IX. Charlotte Lewis<sup>5</sup>. Married Beverly Botts and has issue.
- X. Lunsford Lomax Lewis<sup>5</sup>.
- XI. Cornelia Lewis<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.
- XII. Anne Maria Lewis<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.

V. John Francis Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Charles<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), second son of Gen. Samuel Hance Lewis and Nancy Lewis, his first wife. He inherited all of his father's sterling qualities, and was one of the leading men of his day in Virginia. Of magnificent physical proportions—six feet three inches tall—his mental attributes were quite as remarkable. He was especially noted for his reckless bravery, his impulsive denunciation of wrong, and his utter disregard for public opinion when he considered it to be in error. His first appearance in public life was when he was sent as delegate to the convention at the outbreak of the Civil War, which was to decide whether Virginia would secede from the

Union or not. He was a strong Union man and went there instructed to vote against secession, which he did to the bitter end, saying they might hang him, as they threatened to do, but he would never sign the ordinance. He was the only man in this convention who did not sign it. There were several of the West Virginia members, who did not sign, but they left at once for their homes within the Northern line. A hundred times the ordinance was thrust into his face, but he invariably replied, "I will die first." That he was not killed seems almost a miracle. Many of the best and staunchest Union men gave way to the pressure and signed the ordinance. Samuel McDowel More was burned in effigy, Jubal A. Early was threatened with mob law, yet they both yielded to the overwhelming excitement. John F. Lewis alone remained at his post, true to the last to his firm conviction that to do so would bring trouble and ruin to his State. His integrity and honesty of purpose were so well known and so well appreciated that they seemed to be a shield to his open and often reckless Union utterances, and while others were imprisoned, or shot down on the roadside, he was spared to save his State from the internal strife which so long retarded the happiness and prosperity of many of the more southern states. In 1869 he was elected Lieutenant Governor, and in November of that year was elected to the United States Senate. To quote from Rev. O. S. Bunting, late of Petersburg, Va., and a dear friend: "From heel to crown he was every inch a man—brave, true, sincere, courteous in the truest sense, generous, positive. Agree with him some did not, but admire him all must. All over the State he was honoured as extremely few public men ever were." He was born 1818. Married (October 26, 1842) Serena Helen Sheffey, b. 1823, daughter of the Hon. Daniel Sheffey, of Staunton, Va. They had issue:

- I. Daniel Sheffey Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. Oct. 17, 1843. Married Isabella Botts, daughter of Hon. John Minor Botts, of Richmond, Va. Issue:
  - I. Minor Botts Lewis<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. John F. Lewis<sup>7</sup>.
  - III. Daniel Sheffey Lewis<sup>7</sup>.
  - IV. Beverley Lewis<sup>7</sup>.
  - V. Lunsford Lewis<sup>7</sup>.
  - VI. Archie Lewis<sup>7</sup>.

- II. Nannie Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. 1845. Married Hon. John Ambler Smith, of Dinwiddie Co., Va. Their descendants are in Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.
- III. Maria Hanson Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. 1848. Married Penrose N. Ions, of Fairfax, Va. No issue. Mr. Ions, agent Insurance Co., Hartford, Conn. They reside San Angelo, Texas.
- IV. Serena Helen Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. 1850. Married Lewis Stuart Davis, of Greenbrier, W. Va. No issue.
- V. Mary Louise Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 16, 1857. Married Dr. Edwin Gibbs, of Lexington, Va. Issue:
  - I. John Lewis Gibbs<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. Nannie Lewis Gibbs<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. John Franeis Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. Sept. 6, 1860. Married (Jan. 10, 1883) Anna Harnsberger, b. Dec. 1, 1861. They reside at Lynwood, Va., and have issue:
  - I. Helen Lewis<sup>7</sup>, b. Sept. 8, 1888.
  - II. Hanson Lewis<sup>7</sup>, b. May 11, 1893.
  - III. Anna Lewis<sup>7</sup>, b. May 4, 1896.
  - IV. Katherine Stuart Lewis<sup>7</sup>, b. April 26, 1898.
- VII. Samuel Hanee Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. March 9, 1869. Married Editha Clay, of Lynchburg, Va. Issue:
  - I. Samuel Hance Lewis<sup>7</sup>.

Daniel Sheffey Lewis<sup>6</sup>, oldest son of the late Hon. John F. Lewis<sup>5</sup> and Serena Helen Sheffey, his wife, b. October 17, 1843, graduated from the Law Department of the University of Virginia in the year 1867. Married Isabella McLaine, youngest daughter of the late Hon. John Minor Botts. In 1876 he was the Republican candidate for Congress in the Fifth Congressional District of Virginia and was defeated by the Hon. George G. Cabell, of Danville, Va. In 1882 was appointed by President Arthur United States District Attorney for the Western District of Virginia, which place Mr. Lewis held until President Cleveland came into office, when he was removed to make way for the Hon. H. C. Allen, of Woodstock.

In 1886 he bought the *Spirit of the Valley*, a newspaper published in Harrisonburg, Va., which he has published up to the present date (1906). For sixteen years he held the position of treasurer of the town of Harrisonburg and was reëlected on June 14, 1904.

V. Samuel Hance Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Charles<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), third son of Gen. Samuel Hance Lewis and Nancy Lewis, his first wife. Married Louisa Dabney. Issue:

- I. Lucy Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Sallie Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Elizabeth Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Ellen Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
- V. Samuel Hance Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married (Dec. 20, 1900) Agnes de Leon Moses. Issue:
  - I. Margaret Lynn Lewis<sup>7</sup>.
  - VI. John E. Walter Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
  - VII. Charles Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
  - VIII. Harry Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
  - IX. Sue Lewis<sup>6</sup>.

V. Elizabeth Rachel Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Charles<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Gen. Samuel Hance Lewis and Nancy Lewis, his first wife. Married Rev. James Clinton Wheat. They have issue:

- I. Dr. Samuel Lewis Wheat<sup>6</sup>, d. Dec., 1903. Married (1886) Ella Rutherford. She came from Scotland. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Lewis Wheat<sup>7</sup>, b. Oct. 27, 1887.
  - II. James Clinton Wheat<sup>7</sup>, b. Feb., 1888.
- III. Frances Rutherford Wheat<sup>7</sup>, b. —, 1889.
- II. John Wheat<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Eleanor C. Wheat<sup>6</sup>. She lives at the old home of Gen. Samuel Hance Lewis, Lynwood, Roekingham Co., Va.
- IV. James Clinton Wheat<sup>6</sup>. Married (June, 1895) Gertrude Ross, daughter of J. M. Ross, of U. S. A. Issue:
  - I. Clarence Ross Wheat<sup>7</sup>. Mr. Wheat resides in Atlanta, Ga.

Issue by second marriage, Anna Maria Lomax:

- V. Charlotte Thornton Lewis<sup>6</sup>, daughter of Gen. Samuel H. Lewis. Married Beverley B. Botts, son of Hon. John Minor Botts.
- VI. Lunsford Lomax Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
- VII. Cornelia J. Lewis<sup>6</sup>, b. 1847; d. 1871.
- VIII. Anna Maria Lewis<sup>6</sup>. Married Charles Maurice Smith, of Richmond, Va. (Descendants Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.)



V. Charlotte Thornton Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Charles<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Gen. Samuel H. Lewis and Anna Maria Lomax, his second wife. Married Beverley B. Botts, son of Hon. John Minor Botts. They have issue:

- I. Anna Lewis Botts<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Mary Beverley Botts<sup>6</sup>, b. Nov. 7, 1869, Culpeper Co., Va. Married (June 28, 1899, in Washington, D. C.) John Minor Botts Hoxey, b. April 17, 1869, Pater-son, New Jersey. Issue:
  - I. John Minor Botts Hoxey<sup>7</sup>, Jr., b. April 25, 1900, Brook-lyn, N. Y.
  - II. Dorothea Douglas Hoxey, b. Jan. 26, 1903, Brooklyn, N. Y.; d. Feb. 6, 1903.

V. Judge Lunsford Lewis<sup>5</sup> (Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Charles<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Gen. Samuel Hance Lewis and Anna Maria Lomax, his second wife; he was Republican nominee for Governor of Virginia during the fall of 1905. Married, first, Rose Botts, daughter of John Minor Botts; second, Miss Jane Looney, of Memphis, Tenn.

I met Mrs. Lewis in Richmond, Va., June, 1904. To her kind and gracious invitation I am indebted for spending a delightful evening at the Woman's Club. I had the pleasure of meeting Mrs. Stonewall Jackson the same evening. I met Mrs. Lewis several times during my visit in Richmond, and she was always as courteous as any lady I had the pleasure of meeting at the Capital City of the Old Dominion.

At the Woman's Club I was introduced to Mrs. Willford. She pressed my hands and remarked: "You must be the daughter of Catherine Ambler Moncure. I visited her during my wedding tour in Paris, France, and remember seeing you as a child."

Judge Lunsford Lomax Lewis and Rose Botts, his first wife, have issue:

- I. Minor Lewis<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Mary Willer Lewis<sup>6</sup>. I have had some very interesting letters from Miss Lewis.
- III. Samuel Hance Lewis<sup>6</sup>.

## CHAPTER XIX

## ARMISTEAD FAMILY.

The Armistead coat-of-arms is described in Burke's General Armoir, as follows:

The shield being plain or a heraldry, as silver; argent, a chevron gules (red depicted by perpendicular lines) between the points of spears Azure (blue depicted by horizontal lines), tasseled in the middle or. (gold known in uncolored drawing or engraving by dots or points).

Crest—A dexter arm, embossed (bowed or bent) proper, holding the butt end of a broken spear or. (gold).

Motto—"Suivez raison."

The following extract from Mr. C. P. Keith's account in "Descendants of Benjamin Harrison" gives all that can be relied upon regarding the early history of this interesting Virginia family:

There is a tradition that the Armisteads derive their name and origin from Darmstadt, and that the seat of the elder line in Virginia was called "Hesse." Without deciding when or whether in modern times they crossed the German Ocean, it is sufficient to say they were Englishmen for several generations before William Armistead came to America, the name, with varied spelling, frequently appearing in Yorkshire records of the time of Queen Elizabeth. The emigrant to America seems, from the names of his children, Anthony and Frances, to have been the son of Anthony "Armistead," of Kirk Deighton, Yorkshire, and Frances Thompson, of the same place, who obtained a marriage license in the year 1608. On August 3, 1610, William, ye son of Anthony "Armistead, of Kirk, Deighton," was baptized in All Saints Church, the only church in the Parish.

Search for a few years later discloses the fact that this child, whom I suppose the emigrant, passed safely through the period of tender infancy; at least, no burial can be found. His father continued to reside there, having other children, and a contemporary named Thomas Armistead, who also had a family. The emigrant's marriage did not take place there, if, as I assume, it was later than 1627, and prior to 1634. William Armistead received a patent in 1636 from Captain John West, Governor of Virginia, for four hundred and fifty acres in Elizabeth City County, lying

southeast upon the land of Mr. Southall, northeast upon the land of John Branch, easterly upon the creek, westerly to the roads; among the persons he had transported to the Colony being his wife, Anne. The name is spelt "Armstead" in a patent of 1651.

Hence 1. Anthony Armistead, of Kirk Deighton, Yorkshire, and Frances Thompson, his wife of the same place, had issue:

2. William Armistead<sup>2</sup>, baptized, August 3, 1610, in All Saints' Church, the only church in the parish of Kirk Deighton. He emigrated to Virginia about 1635, and obtained large grants of land in Elizabeth City County, and subsequently Gloucester County. He died about 1660, as in that year, in the York County, Virginia, records his second son, John<sup>3</sup>, was heir of his elder brother William<sup>3</sup>, who died childless. He married Anne and had issue, as far as known:
3. William Armistead, who, in a deed recorded in Elizabeth City County, November 20, 1695, is named as his "sonne and heire," and who died without issue before 1660, when John Armistead, "as heyre" and one of the executors of Mr. William Armistead, made a power of attorney in York County.
4. John Armistead<sup>4</sup>, the Counsellor, and ancestor of President Harrison.
5. Anthony Armistead, ancestor of President Tyler.
6. Frances Armistead. Married, first, Rev. Justinian Aylmer, of Jamestown; second, Lieutenant Colonel Anthony Elliott, of Elizabeth City County and Middlesex County. She married, third, Col. Christopher Wormeley, and died May 25, 1685. (Middlesex Parish Register.)

In January, 1666, the will of Col. Elliott was admitted to record in Middlesex County. He names sons William, Thomas, Robert and makes son William and brother John Armistead executors. In November, 1666, probate was granted Mr. Christopher Wormeley in place of William Elliott and John Armistead, "as having married the relict." In 1671 Captain Wormeley sued, as having married the relict of Rev. Justinian Aylmer, of Jamestown. (General Court Records.) Aylmer, by his deposition in York County, was twenty-six in 1661. (See also "Hayden's Virginia Genealogies," Wormeley Family.)

7. Probably Ralph, who in 1678 patented forty-eight acres in Kingston Parish, Gloucester County, for transporting one person, was this Ralph, father of John Armistead, of Rappahannock County. Under the date of 1689 is this order: "Upon the information of Edward Thomas, that Mr. Dowell Read, minister of South Farnham Parish in this county, hath solemnized the rites of matrimony between John Armistead and Mary Brown, both of the same parish and county, contrary to the form of the acts of assembly," etc., "ordered," etc. Mr. Read is summoned to the next court to answer, but the case was evidently dropped, as no further order appears. John Armistead's inventory was recorded in Essex County in 1703, and Francis Moore was administrator. Across in Richmond County, formerly part of old Rappahannock, is recorded the will of Francis Armistead, of South Farnham Parish, proved in 1719. It names daughter Elizabeth, son John Armistead, wife Sarah, and in default of surviving issue gives his property to Francis Armistead, son of Ralph Armistead. The register preserved in the court house shows that his daughter Elizabeth was born March 28, 1716, and son John was born February 26, 1718. It is probable that from this source, principally, come the Armisteads whose names appear in the register of Kingston Parish, Matthews County (formerly Gloucester). The entries are brought together here for convenience:

Anne, daughter of Robert and Catherine Armistead, b. Oct. 17, 1756.

Anne, daughter of John and Anne Armistead, b. April 1, 1769.

Ralph, son of Richard and Elizabeth Armistead, b. June 10, 1769.

William, son of William and Mary Armistead, b. Oct. 26, 1769.

Francis, son of Currill and Margaret Armistead, b. Dec. 8, 1772.

Katy, daughter of Richard and Elizabeth Armistead, b. Jan. 21, 1775.

Dorothy Reade, daughter of George and Lucy Armistead, b. May 23, 1775.

Sarah, daughter of Wm. Armistead, Esq., and Mary, his wife, b. Feb. 22, 1776.

Mr. Starkey Armistead and Miss Mary Tabb were married June 19, 1773.

Isaac Davis and Rebecea Armistead were married Jan. 9, 1771.

Robert Armistead married Catherine Gwathney, Sept. 24, 1743. (Register, Gloucester County, Abingdon.)

John Armistead<sup>a</sup> (William<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>) settled in Gloucester County, where his father had patented a considerable quantity of land. In 1697 he made a deed (which is on record in Elizabeth City County), in which styling himself "brother and heir" of William Armistead, deceased, and "son and heir" of Wm. Armistead, late of Elizabeth City County, Gent., he confirms to his brother Anthony all land on Back River, in said county, of which his father died seised. In 1680 he was lieutenant colonel of horse in Gloucester and one of the justices. On October 18, 1688, he was sworn one of the council. (M. S. Council Journal.) His wife was Judith; but though called "brother" by Robert Beverley, it is impossible to say whether one married the other's sister or sister of the other's wife. Major Robert Beverley married Mrs. Catherine Hone, in Gloucester, March 28, 1679, and in March, 1681-2, Beverley was administrator of Major Hone, and not his daughter, as stated in the introduction to "Beverley's History of Virginia." His first wife was Mary. (See Va. Mag. Hist. and Biog.)

Issue of John Armistead and Judith, his wife:

5. Judith, married "Robert Carter." Her tombstone calls her "eldest daughter of the Hon. John Armistead, Esq., and Judith, his wife. She departed this life the 23d day of February, Anno 1699, in the — year of her age, and in the eleventh of her marriage, having borne to her husband five children and a son, whereof Sarah and Judith Carter died before and are buried with her." (See Keith; Carter Family, Chapter VII.)

6. Elizabeth Armistead married, first (February 16, 1687), Ralph Wormeley, Esq., secretary of the colony, whose will is dated February 20, 1700; and she married, second (October 5, 1703), William Churchill, Esq. (See Keith, Hayden; and Middlesex Register.) William Churchill's will was proved March 6, 1700, and names as overseers of his will, "my brothers, Mr. William Armistead and Mr. Henry Armistead; and friends, Mr. Nathaniel

Burwell, Mr. John Holloway and Mr. John Clayton." Elizabeth Churchill died November 16, 1716, and her will was proved January 1, 1716. It names, "my brother, Mr. Henry Armistead." (For children, see Keith.)

7. William Armistead<sup>4</sup>.

8. Henry Armistead<sup>4</sup>.

7. William Armistead<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>; Anthony<sup>1</sup>), b. 1671; d. at Eastmore River, in Matthews County, June 13, 1711, where his tomb still stands. Married Anne Lee, daughter of Hancock Lee and Mary, daughter of Wm. Kendall, of Northampton County. (Hening VI, p. 443.) They had issue:

9. I. John Armistead<sup>5</sup>.

10. II. Mary Armistead<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, James Burwell; d. 1718; second, Philip Lightfoot, of the council.

11. III. Judith Armistead<sup>5</sup>. Married George Dudley.

12. IV. Anna Armistead<sup>5</sup>. Married (April 4, 1725) Anthony Walke; d. Feb. 14, 1732. (See Walke Chart Va. Mag., July, 1897.)

13. V. Joyce Armistead<sup>5</sup>.

14. VI. Frances Armistead<sup>5</sup>.

(See will of James Burwell,\* will of Mrs. Mary Lightfoot; William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. III, p. 107.)

In Barradall's Reports occurs the following suit:

April court, 1737, *Robinson vs. Armistead, et als.* John Armistead and Robert Beverley, deceased, jointly purchased 100 acres of land in Gloucester County, which was conveyed to them by Deed January 17, 1680, for the cons. of 50£. That Beverley by his will August 20, 1680, devised his half part to his daughter Catherine in tail and soon after death. After which Armistead became solely possessed of the Premises, and died possessed. And after his death John Armistead, his eldest son and heir, entered and was possessed, after whose Death his son and heir John Armistead entered and died possessed, leaving the Defendant John Armistead his son and heir an infant. That the said Catherine at the Death of Beverley was an Infant and before 21 married John Robinson, Esq., the Plt's

---

\*NOTE.—Will of James Burwell, proved September 15, 1718, at Yorktown, names wife Mary, daughter Lucy, son Nathaniel Bacon, sisters Mrs. Johannah Bassell, Mrs. Elizabeth Harrison, and Mrs. Martha Armistead. Brother John Armistead, sister Martha Burwell, mother Mrs. Anne Armistead, sister Judith, wife of George Dudley, sister Elizabeth Armistead, sisters Ann, Joyce and Frances Armistead. Makes brothers Nathaniel and Lewis Burwell and William Bassell executors.



Father now living and died in 1726, leaving the Plt. her eldest son and heir, then an Infant, and since the death of Armistead the grandson the defts. Burwell, Armistead, and Dudley in right of the Defendant Armistead, an infant, have entered into the Premeses claiming the whole by survivorship and refuse to make partition with the Plts. Praying, therefore, that the defts. may answer premes and the Plt. be relieved according to Equity, etc., etc.

A comparison of this case with the will of James Burwell and the act in Henry VI, p. 403, makes it plain that Barradall was in error in the name of the eldest son of Col. John Armistead. His name was William and not John. According to this, the line ran, John<sup>3</sup> Armistead, the councillor (died before 1705); William<sup>4</sup>, d. in 1711; John<sup>5</sup>, who made his will in 1734, and John<sup>6</sup>, who was under age in 1753. Mistakes of this kind by a jury or court are not infrequent in the records. The volume of Barradall's Reports, preserved in the Law Library, is, however, only a copy of the original manuscript.

9. John<sup>5</sup> Armistead (William<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), Captain, etc., married, first, Elizabeth (Gill?), mentioned as sister of Elizabeth Armistead in the will of James Burwell; and, second, Susanna, daughter of Thomas Meriwether, of Essex (William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. VI, No. 2, p. 100), who made his will in 1708, when Susanna was not then baptized. (Hening, VI, p. 405.) As Nicholas Meriwether, the uncle of Susanna Armistead, had lived in New Kent, I feel certain that the Captain John Armistead was the husband of Susanna Meriwether. The New Kent John had sons John and William, and this last William had an only daughter, Susanna.

Issue by first wife, Elizabeth (Gill?):

15. Gill Armistead<sup>6</sup>.

Issue by second wife, Susanna Meriwether:

16. John Armistead<sup>6</sup>.

17. William Armistead<sup>6</sup>, who was Major in 1772 and 1775, and a vestryman of Blissland Parish. (See vestry book.) Married Mary, widow of Baker, who kept ordinary at the Brick House for Bassett, the niece of James Nicholas, who left her £500 in event of the death of Abraham Nicholas, son of his brother Abraham Nicholas, as also a specific legacy of £1,000 (letter of

William Nelson, 1769; see the Nelson Letter Book at Episcopal Seminary). He had issue of one daughter:

18. Susanna Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married, first, Wm. Dandridge, son of Bartholomew Dandridge, the brother of Mrs. Washington; and, second (about 1805), David Dorrington.
15. Gill Armistead<sup>6</sup> (John<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), lived in Blissland Parish, New Kent; sheriff in 1757; colonel in 1758; d. 1762. (Vestry book.) On May 23, 1751, married Betty Allen (from her daughter's Bible), who married, second, John Lewis, of Williamsburg and had issue:
  19. Betty<sup>7</sup>, b. March 9, 1752; d. April, 1833. Married (March 27, 1774, at Mr. John Lewis's in Williamsburg) Miles Selden, Jr. (Selden Family Bible.) (See Chapter IV, Cary and Selden Families.)
  20. Susanna Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married Col. John Cary.
  21. Mary or Molly Armistead<sup>7</sup>, d. 1825. Married Thacker Burwell.
  22. Frances Arimstead<sup>7</sup>. Married Col. John Ambler. (See Volume I, Chapter IV.)
  23. Martha Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married Colonel Green and had issue:
    - I. Abraham Green<sup>8</sup>.
    - II. Elizabeth Green<sup>8</sup>.
  24. Gill Armistead<sup>7</sup>. (*Selden, et als. v. Armistead's Admr.*, 7 Grattan Reports, p. 264.)
16. John Armistead<sup>6</sup> (John<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), was a resident of St. Peter's Parish, New Kent, colonel of militia and State Senator from New Kent, in the first Senate of Virginia. Col. John Armistead departed this life May 2, 1779. (Register.)
 

Issue by first wife, Agnes:

  25. William Armistead<sup>7</sup>, b. June 5, 1754.

By his second wife, Mary Burbage, whose mother is said to have been a Dandridge, he had issue:

  26. Robert Burbage Armistead<sup>7</sup>, administrator of his mother, who died 1792.
  27. Luey B. Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married (Dec. 24, 1801) Aylett Waller; and removed to Tennessee. (See *Waller v. Armistead*, 2 Leigh's Reports.)

25. William Armistead<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, John<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. John Armistead<sup>6</sup>, of New Kent. "was agent of the State for providing arms, clothing, and other necessaries" during the revolution (Hening, XII, p. 420); d. June, 1793, leaving a son:

28. William Armistead<sup>8</sup>, living in 1813.

26. Robert Burbage Armistead<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, John<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of Col. John Armistead. Married Mary Semple, sister of Judge James Semple; d. 1811, leaving issue:

29. John Dandridge Armistead<sup>8</sup>, d. aged seventeen, while a student of William and Mary College.

30. William Armistead<sup>8</sup>.

30. William Armistead<sup>8</sup> (Robert B.<sup>7</sup>, John<sup>6</sup>, John<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of Robert Burbage Armistead and Mary Semple, his wife; b. New Kent in 1797; attended William and Mary College in 1816. Married Luey Boyd, and, with his family, removed to Alabama in 1833; d. 1856, leaving issue:

31. I. Robert Armistead<sup>9</sup>, educated at William and Mary College, where he studied law under Judge N. B. Tucker, major of the twenty-second Alabama regiment; killed at the battle of Shiloh. He has children living in Texas.

32. II. William B. Armistead<sup>9</sup>, student at William and Mary College. Married Mrs. Eliza Knox and had issue:

I. Elliott Knox Armistead.

II. George Knox Armistead.

33. III. Rosalie Virginia Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married Elmore G. Fitzpatrick; both dead, leaving issue.

34. IV. Mary Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married Philip Gayle, of Montgomery, Alabama, and has issue.

35. V. Lizzie Rowe Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married Paul Tucker Sayre, and had issue.

36. VI. Herbert Armistead<sup>9</sup>, lieutenant colonel of the twenty-second Alabama regiment, mortally wounded at the battle of Franklin, Tenn.

37. VII. Luey Boyd Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married Richard Goldthwaite, and had issue.

The following letter is a worthy tribute to the gallantry of Robert Armistead, major of the twenty-second Alabama regiment:

Near Corinth, Miss., April 11, 1862.

MY DEAR MRS. FITZPATRICK:—You have doubtless heard of your sad loss in the death of your brother, Major Armistead. I write to claim the privilege of a friend of his and yours: that of sharing in your sorrow. I was with him, after he was wounded, for some time, giving him all the attention in my power. He was struck by a grape shot in the right side, the shot passing through to the surface on the opposite side. He was conscious that his wound was mortal, but was calm and resigned. Feeling assured that he could survive but a short time, I asked him if he wished me to do anything for him. He said nothing except: "Tell my dear sisters how I loved them, and that my last hours are spent in thoughts of them. I know how they will suffer, when they hear this."

He frequently reverted to this, and it seemed to be the only thought that troubled him. When the surgeon came to him, he said: "Doctor, I have great confidence in your opinion. Examine my wound and give me a candid answer. I do not fear death. I know I must die, but I wish to know how long I have to live."

The surgeon examined the wound, but remained silent. Major Armistead understood him clearly, but no trepidation was visible, no alarm expressed. He remained calm, as if merely reclining to rest. He frequently spoke of the grief his sisters would feel. He said to me: "I have died in the right place, I hope at the right time, I know in the right cause." I am thus circumstantial, because I know every word and incident of his final hour will interest you. I did all I could to make him comfortable under the circumstances, while I remained with him.

Our cause has lost a noble and gallant defender, our State an intellectual man, society a chivalrous and polished gentleman, his friends a true and beloved companion, and his sisters a brother who loved them better than his own life, and grieved only for them in his death hour.

I never saw such calm heroism before, and desire to emulate him, should it be my fate to die, in defence of our country.

I was agitated while he was placid. I wept over his wounds, he sorrowed only for his sisters.

I hope you may find some consolation in the circumstances attending his end. He died for his country, and in the hour that tries men's souls gave the strongest proofs of the nobility of his own. Rest assured that I sympathize deeply with you and yours in the sad bereavement, and only regret that I can do nothing to palliate your sorrow. May God give you and your sisters the strength to bear your loss with resignation.

Accept my kindest regards and believe me your friend,

THOS W. OLIVER.

Mrs. E. G. Fitzpatrick,  
Montgomery, Ala.

William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. VI, No. 3, January, 1898, p. 164, has the following:

The attempted identification of 9, John<sup>5</sup> Armistead (William<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), of Gloucester County, with John Armistead, vestryman of Blissland Parish, New Kent (1722), father of Gill Armistead, is proved to be faulty by the ease in Barradall's Reports (see p. 99). It is there asserted that John<sup>6</sup> Armistead (not Gill Armistead) was "son and heir" of John<sup>5</sup> Armistead, of Gloucester County, a fact which the editor strangely overlooked, but which has been called to his attention by Col. Wilson Miles Cary, of Baltimore, who has given much attention to the Armistead pedigree. John Armistead, of New Kent, was, instead of being a son of William Armistead, of Eastmore River, Gloucester County, a son of Major William Armistead, of Elizabeth City County, who was son of Capt. Anthony Armistead, brother of Col. John Armistead, of the council.

The matter, therefore, should come in, in connection with the descendants of Captain Anthony Armistead, of Elizabeth City County.

The following statement as to the descendants of William Armistead, of Eastmore River, is believed to be correct:

John<sup>5</sup> Armistead (William<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of William<sup>4</sup>. Married probably twice, his first wife being, probably, the Elizabeth Armistead named in James Burwell's will. If this is correct, John had no issue by her. He married, second (Henning's Statutes), Susanna Meriweather, b. 1708, daughter of Thomas Meriweather, of Essex, and had issue:

15. John Armistead<sup>6</sup>, untraced.

16. William Armistead<sup>6</sup>, untraced.

17. Susanna Armistead<sup>6</sup>. Married (in or before 1753) Moore Fauntleroy.

13. Joyce<sup>5</sup> Armistead (William<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), daughter of William Armistead, of Eastmore River, was the wife of Mordecai Booth. A portrait of her is preserved in Gloucester County, in the family of Gen. William Booth Taliaferro, a descendant, whose line runs:

I. Thomas<sup>1</sup> Booth, of Lancaster County, England, b. 1666;  
d. in Ware Parish, Gloucester County, Va., Oct. 11,

1736 (tombstone). Married Mary Cooke, and had issue:

I. Mordecai<sup>2</sup> Booth. Married Joyce Armistead and had:

I. George Booth<sup>3</sup>. Married Mary Wythe Mason and had:

I. George Wythe Booth<sup>4</sup>. Married Lucy Jones and had issue:

I. Fanny Booth<sup>5</sup>. Married Warne T. Taliaferro, whose issue was:

I. Gen. William B. Taliaferro.

8. Henry Armistead<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), second son of Col. John Armistead, of the council. Married Martha Burwell (baptized, November 16, 1685), daughter of Major Lewis Burwell and Abigail Smith, his first wife. (William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. VI, No. 3, January, 1898, Burwell.)

He lived on the Pianketank, at a place called "Hesse." As William Armistead, son and heir of Col. John Armistead, lived on Eastmore River, the name Hesse probably originated with Henry Armistead. The brick house is still standing, though reduced in size and out of repair, when the editor visited it several years ago. His wife was the young lady with whom Gov. Francis Nicholson became so infatuated. In 1733 he was sworn county lieutenant of Caroline, and he died between July 7, 1739, and February 1, 1739-40, at which last date his son William succeeds him in the parish register as owner of slaves in Christ Church Parish, Middlesex County. Issue:

18. William Armistead<sup>5</sup>.

19. Lucy Armistead<sup>5</sup>. Married Thomas Nelson, secretary of the colony.

20. Martha Armistead<sup>5</sup>. Married Dudley Digges, of the Committee of Safety.

21. Robert Armistead<sup>5</sup>.

18. William Armistead<sup>5</sup> (Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), succeeded his father at "Hesse." In 1739 the *Virginia Gazette* mentions the marriage of "Mr. William Armistead, son of Col. Henry Armistead, of Gloucester County, to a daughter of James Bowles, deceased, one of the Council of Maryland, and granddaughter of Tobias Bowles, formerly a merchant in London in the Virginia trade." As shown in suit of *Ragland v. Price* (Chancery papers in Williamsburg), she was Mary Bowles, sister



of Eleanor Bowles; married, first, William Goode, son of Sir William Goode, governor of Virginia; and, second, Warner Lewis, of "Warner Hall," Gloucester County, Virginia. According to Keith's *Ancestry of Benjamin Harrison*, her father, James Bowles, of Maryland, married Rebecca, daughter of Thomas Addison, by his wife Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Tasker, treasurer of Maryland. This William Armistead made his will in 1755, leaving issue:

22. I. William Armistead<sup>6</sup>.
23. II. John Armistead<sup>6</sup>.
24. III. Bowles Armistead<sup>6</sup>.
25. IV. Henry Armistead<sup>6</sup>; died before 1773.

(Hening's *Statutes*, Vol. VIII, pp. 487, 667.) Mary (Bowles) Armistead survived her husband and married, second, Rev. Thomas Price.

22. William Armistead<sup>6</sup>, of "Hesse" (William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), studied at William and Mary College in 1755, when Secretary Nelson and Dudley Digges are named in the bursar's book as his guardians. Married (1765) Maria Carter, daughter of Charles Carter, of Cleve, and Anne Byrd, of Westover. (See *Carter Family*, Chapter VII.) Under his father's will he received all lands in Gloucester and Middlesex. Issue:

26. I. Mary A. Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married Thomas Taylor Byrd, of Westover, b. Jan. 17, 1752.
27. II. Luey B. Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married ——— Harvey.
28. III. Jane Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married William Coeke, of Bremono, and had issue:

- I. William Armistead<sup>8</sup> Coeke, of Oakland. Married Elizabeth Randolph Preston, daughter of Major Thomas Preston and Edmonia Randolph, daughter of Gov. Edmund Randolph. (See *Randolph Family*, Chapter V.) They had issue:

- I. William Fauntleroy Coeke<sup>9</sup>, killed at Gettysburg.
- II. Thomas L. Coeke<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Capt. Edmund R. Coeke<sup>9</sup>, prominent politician.
- IV. Preston Coeke<sup>9</sup>, prominent attorney-at-law, now of Richmond.

29. IV. William B. Armistead<sup>7</sup> (Master Billy), b. Oct. 26, 1769; d. before 1797, when his brother, Charles Carter Armistead, became "son and heir."

30. V. Anne Cleves Armistead<sup>7</sup>, b. Nov. 7, 1773. Married (March 14, 1793) John P. Pleasants, of Baltimore, and had issue:
  - I. J. Hall Pleasants<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Richard H. Pleasants<sup>8</sup>.
31. VI. Judith Carter Armistead<sup>7</sup>, b. Dec. 29, 1774. Married (April 16, 1797) Richard H. Moale, of Baltimore, b. Jan. 28, 1765; d. July 22, 1802. Issue:
  - I. William A. Moale<sup>8</sup>.
32. VII. Charles Carter Armistead<sup>7</sup>, d. *sine prole*, after 1797.
33. VIII. Sarah Armistead<sup>7</sup>, b. Feb. 22, 1776. Married Fairfax Washington.
34. IX. Eleanor B. Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married William McMechen, of Baltimore, and had:
  - I. Eleanor McMechen<sup>8</sup>. Married Robert S. Buchanan.

The case of *Ragland v. Price* involves a suit in the high court of chancery between "James Price, legatee and administrator of Mary Bowles, deceased, and her only child by her second husband, *Thomas Price, plaintiff, v. Charles Carter Armistead*, an infant by William Nelson and Maria Armistead, executors of William Armistead, son of William Armistead, deceased, defendant." A decree in 1797 orders the defendant to pay to the plaintiff £2,666, 13s, 4d, current money of Virginia, equal to £2,000 of lawful money of Great Britain, with interest from 1783, and in default to pay the same, such portion be sold as is necessary of 3,879 acres on the Pianketank River, described in an annexed survey, after a deduction therefrom of 1,200 acres, "whereof Henry Armistead, father of William Armistead, former husband of Mary Bowles, was seized," on which was the mansion house of said Henry. Major Charles Ragland, of King and Queen, bought the land for sale. A suit was begun against him by Rev. James Price, who declared that Ragland promised to act as his agent in the purchase and not in his own behalf. Rev. James Price married Catherine, daughter of his uncle, Robert Price, and had an only child:

- I. Catherine Price, who died *sine prole*.

23. John Armistead<sup>7</sup> (William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), was at William and Mary in 1755, when

Thomas Nelson and Dudley Digges are named in the bursar's book as "guardians." He received by his father's will all the land in Prince William and much stock in Culpeper and Caroline. He was executor of his brother Bowles Armistead in 1785. He married (March 17, 1764) Lucy Baylor, of New Market, Caroline County. He had issue:

35. I. John Baylor Armistead<sup>8</sup>.
36. II. William Armistead<sup>8</sup>.
37. III. Addison Bowles Armistead<sup>8</sup>.
38. IV. George Armistead<sup>8</sup>.
39. V. Lewis G. A. Armistead<sup>8</sup>.
40. VI. Walker Keith Armistead<sup>8</sup>.
41. VII. Mary Burwell Armistead<sup>8</sup>. Married Landon Carter, of Sabine Hall, Richmond County, and had issue:
  - I. Armistead Carter<sup>9</sup>. Married De Butts. Issue:
  - I. Landon De Butts<sup>19</sup>.
  - II. Mary Carter<sup>9</sup>. Married Capt. Eleason. Issue:
    - I. Talcott Eleason<sup>19</sup>.
  - II. Mary Eleason<sup>10</sup>. Married Dr. A. S. Mason, residing at Hagerstown, Md. (In Chapter VII, Carter Family, will be found pictures of Mr. and Mrs. Landon Carter, of Sabine Hall. Also see Mason Family, Chapter XVII: Jaquelin, Smith, Volume III, Chapters VI and VII.)
42. VIII. Frances Armistead<sup>8</sup>. Married Dr. Gillies, of Alexandria, Va., and has issue:
  - I. Dr. Thomas Gillies, of Philadelphia.
43. IX. Eleanor Bowles Armistead<sup>8</sup>, b. after her father's death. Married Capt. John Dangerfield, of Essex County, and had issue:
  - I. Henry W. Dangerfield<sup>9</sup>. Married Courtney Tucker Upshaw.
  - II. Emily Dangerfield<sup>9</sup>.
  - III. Armistead Dangerfield<sup>9</sup>.
  - IV. William Dangerfield<sup>9</sup>.
  - V. George Dangerfield<sup>9</sup>.
  - VI. Lucy Dangerfield<sup>9</sup>.
  - VII. Ann Dangerfield<sup>9</sup>.

(See Brock, in *Richmond Standard*, May 20, 1880; *Armistead et als. v. Dangerfield and wife*, Munford's Reports IV, p. 20, and *Chapman v. Munford*, Hening and Munford IV, p. 382.)

35. John B. Armistead<sup>8</sup> (John<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), captain U. S. Light Dragoons in 1799 and honourably discharged in 1800. Married Anne B. Carter, of Prince William County (see marriage articles in *Whiting v. Rust*, Grattan's Reports, 1844) and had issue:

44. I. Robert Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married Mary Carter.

45. II. John Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married Anne Harrison.

46. III. Louisa Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married ——— Taliaferro.

47. IV. Mary Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married ——— Kerfoot.

36. William Armistead<sup>8</sup> (John<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), of Prince William County, son of John<sup>7</sup> Armistead and Lucy Baylor, his wife. Married Anne Cary Norton and had issue:

48. I. Hebe Armistead<sup>9</sup>.

49. II. Wilson Cary Armistead<sup>9</sup>.

50. III. E. Randolph Armistead<sup>9</sup>.

51. IV. Mary Armistead<sup>9</sup>.

52. V. Willie Ann Armistead<sup>9</sup>.

53. VI. George Armistead<sup>9</sup>. (*Richmond Standard*.)

37. Addison Bowles Armistead<sup>8</sup> (John<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), of Prince William County, son of John<sup>7</sup> Armistead and Lucy Baylor, entered the United States Army and was made captain, September 30, 1806; d. February 10, 1813. Married (1808) Mary Howe Peyton, b. May 1, 1781; d. ———, daughter of John Peyton, of Winchester, Va., and Susanna Rutherford, daughter of Hon. Robert Rutherford. Member first U. S. Congress from Virginia 1793-1797. Issue:

54. I. Mary Armistead<sup>9</sup>.

55. II. Susan Peyton Armistead<sup>9</sup>, b. 1810. Married James Innis Randolph, son of Peyton and Anne (Innis) Randolph; he was dead in 1866, and she was at this time residing in Richmond, Va. (See Hayden, p. 530.) Issue:

I. Mary Randolph<sup>10</sup>. Married, first, Dr. Martin Johnson; second, Townshend Seaton.

- II. Elizabeth Randolph<sup>10</sup>.
- III. Anne Innis Randolph<sup>10</sup>. Married Wm. H. Hall, of New Jersey.
- IV. Peyton Randolph<sup>10</sup>, manager R. and D. R. R. Co., Va. Married Mary Fisher and had issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - II. Mary Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - III. Susan Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - IV. Anne Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - V. Susan A. Randolph<sup>10</sup>.
- VI. Major Innis Randolph<sup>10</sup>, C. S. A. Married Ann King and had issue:
  - I. Armistead Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - II. Harold Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - III. Clare Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - IV. Maud Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
- VII. John Randolph<sup>10</sup>. Married Milicent Payne and had issue:
  - I. Shirley Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - II. Wilton Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - III. Mary R. Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
- VIII. Armistead Randolph<sup>10</sup>.
- IX. Dr. Robert Randolph<sup>10</sup>. Married Mary Keene, of New York.
- X. Wilton Randolph<sup>10</sup>. Married Ida, daughter of Col. T. J. Evans, and had issue:
  - I. Peyton Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - II. Louise Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - III. Ida Randolph<sup>11</sup>.
  - XI. Marion Randolph<sup>10</sup>.
  - XII. Lucy Randolph<sup>10</sup>.
- XIII. Eva Randolph<sup>10</sup>.

(See Hayden's Genealogies, Peyton Family, p. 530.)

38. George Armistead<sup>8</sup> (John<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), was known as the "Hero of Fort McHenry," son of John<sup>7</sup> Armistead and Lucy Baylor, b. at New Market, Caroline County, Va., April 10, 1780; d. at Baltimore, Md., April 25, 1818; appointed second lieutenant United States

Army, January 8, 1799; eaptain, November 1, 1806; major third artillery, March 3, 1813; was distinguished at the capture of Fort George, upper Canada, May 18, 1813; and was brevetted Lieutenant Colonel for the defense of Fort McHenry, September 12, 1814. Married (October 26, 1810) Louise, sister of Christopher Hughes, of Baltimore, United States *Chargé d' affaires* in Denmark, the Netherlands, Norway and Sweden. George Armistead d. April 25, 1818. They had issue:

56. I. Margaret Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married ——— Howell.

57. II. Georgiana Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married William Sumner Appleton, of Boston, Mass.

58. III. Mary Armistead<sup>9</sup>. Married ——— Bradford.

59. IV. C. Hughes Armistead<sup>9</sup>, b. 1816; d. Feb. 14, 1876. Married Agnes Gordon, of Fredericksburg, Va. Issue:

60. I. J. R. Armistead<sup>10</sup>, who inherited the silver bowl and sword presented to his grandfather, George Armistead.

39. Lewis Gustavus Adolphus<sup>8</sup> Armistead (John<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of John Armistead and Lucy Baylor, his wife; was first lieutenant and captain of Riflemen and was killed September 17, 1814, in a sortie from Fort Erie, Canada, during the second war with Great Britain.

40. Walker Keith Armistead<sup>8</sup> (John<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of John Armistead and Lucy Baylor, his wife; b. 1785, graduated at West Point, March 5, 1803. Chief engineer in the United States Army in Canada in 1812; made lieutenant-colonel, July 31, 1812; colonel third artillery, June, 1821, and on November 12, 1828, brevetted brigadier-general for ten years' faithful service in one grade. He died October 13, 1845. Married Elizabeth Stanley, of North Carolina, and had nine children:

61. I. Gen. Lewis Addison Armistead<sup>9</sup>, b. at Newbern, N. C.; graduated at West Point; killed on the heights of Gettysburg, July 3, 1863, after he had penetrated, with heroic bravery, far into the lines of the Federal army. He entered the Sixth United



States Infantry in 1839, and in the Mexican War was brevetted captain and major for gallantry at Contreras, Churubusco, and Molina del Rey. At Chapultepec he was one of the storming party and was wounded. He was made captain, March 3, 1855. In 1859 he commanded a detachment against the Indians, defeating them. On the breaking out of the war in 1861 he resigned from the Federal army and was made colonel of the Fifty-seventh Virginia Infantry, and in the same month (April) made a brigadier-general in the Confederate States Army. Married Cecilia Lee Love Lord, and had a son:

- I. Walker Keith Armistead<sup>10</sup>, who was one of his father's staff, married Julia Appleton, of Boston, granddaughter of Daniel Webster.
62. II. Frank Stanley Armistead<sup>9</sup>, graduated at West Point; lieutenant in the U. S. Army and colonel C. S. Army.
63. III. Bowles E. Armistead<sup>9</sup>, captain Company A, 6th Va. Regiment Cavalry, C. S. A. Married, first, Susan Lewis Marshall, of Fauquier Co., Va., by whom no living issue; second, Elizabeth Lewis Marshall, daughter of Henry M. Marshall, by whom he had five sons and five daughters. (See Volume I, Chapter VII.) Issue:
  - I. Henry Marshall Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. Lewis Addison Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - III. Stanley Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - IV. John Baylor Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - V. Robert Morris Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - VI. Mary Morris Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - VII. Eleanor Bowles Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - VIII. Elizabeth Marshall Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - IX. Virginia Baylor Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - X. Courtenay Warner Selden Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
 (See Marshall Family, Chapter XIV.)
64. IV. Mary Landon Armistead<sup>9</sup>.
65. V. Lucy Baylor Armistead<sup>9</sup>.

- 66. VI. Bettie Frank Armistead<sup>0</sup>.
- 67. VII. Virginia Baylor Armistead<sup>0</sup>.
- 68. VIII. Cornelia Armistead<sup>0</sup>. Married Washington Irving Newton, of Norfolk, major U. S. Army. Left issue:

- I. Elizabeth Stanley Newton<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Cornelia Armistead Newton<sup>10</sup>.
- III. Armistead Newton<sup>10</sup>.

Of these, Elizabeth Stanley Newton<sup>10</sup> married Dr. Pedro M. Lusson, of Havana, Cuba, and had issue:

- I. Cornelia Armistead Lusson<sup>11</sup>.
- II. Adele M. Lusson<sup>11</sup>.
- III. George Newton Lusson<sup>11</sup>.

Of these, Cornelia A. Lusson married (April 10, 1890) Arthur Crux, of Kent, England.

24. Bowles Armistead<sup>7</sup> (William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of William Armistead and Mary Bowles, was a student of William and Mary College from 1763 to 1766. His will was proved in Culpeper County, July 21, 1785. He got all his father's land in Culpeper. Married Mary Fontaine, daughter of Peter and Elizabeth Winston Fontaine and had issue:

- 69. I. William Bowles Armistead<sup>8</sup>, d. unmarried.
- 70. II. Peter Fontaine Armistead<sup>8</sup>.
- 71. III. Mary Armistead<sup>8</sup>. Married, first, C. Alexander; second, W. C. Selden. (See Chapter IV, Cary and Selden Families.)
- 72. IV. Elizabeth Armistead<sup>8</sup>. Married Ludwell Lee. (See Chapter VIII, Lee Family.)
- 73. V. A daughter Armistead<sup>8</sup>. Married ——— Terrell. (Virginia Historical Collections, Vol. V, Huguenot Emigration, p. 146; Virginia Magazine; Hist. and Biog., Vol. III, p. 432; "St. Mark's Parish," by P. Slaughter.)

70. Peter Fontaine Armistead<sup>8</sup> (Bowles<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of Bowles Armistead<sup>7</sup> and Mary W. Fontaine, daughter of Isaac Winston, and had issue of twelve children. Nine of these were:

- I. William B. Armistead<sup>9</sup>.
- II. Peter Fontaine Armistead<sup>9</sup>.

- III. Patrick Henry Armistead<sup>o</sup>. Married Miss Clanton.
- IV. Isaac Coles Armistead<sup>o</sup>.
- V. Eliza Armistead<sup>o</sup>.
- VI. Virginia Armistead<sup>o</sup>. Married Lanier.
- VII. George Washington Armistead<sup>o</sup>.
- VIII. Mary Ann Armistead<sup>o</sup>.
- IX. Martha Armistead<sup>o</sup>.

Of whom there is now living (1898) Peter Fontaine Armistead, of Tuscumbia, Alabama, aged eighty years. His son Fontaine Armistead<sup>o</sup>, not living, married the daughter of a distant relative, George Graham Armistead, whose first wife was Alice V. Fontaine. George G. and Alice were married November 7, 1831, and moved later to Alabama. She was a daughter of Aliee Berkeley and ——— Fontaine, and granddaughter of Col. Edmund Berkeley, of "Barn Elms," Middlesex County.

19. Lucy Armistead<sup>5</sup> (Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Henry Armistead and Martha Burwell, his wife. Married (about 1745) Thomas Nelson, of Yorktown County, Virginia, secretary of the Colonial Council of Virginia, and hence known as Secretary Nelson, second son and third child of Thomas Nelson, known as Scotch Tom, of England and the same place, progenitor of the Nelson family in Virginia; and Margaret Reid, his first wife, was b. Yorktown, Va., 1716; d. there 1782, aged sixty-six. He is buried there, but no tombstone marks his grave. No portrait of him exists.

Secretary Nelson and Lucy Armistead, his wife, had no daughters, and only three surviving sons, all of whom were heroes in the Revolution, and became officers in the American army under Washington. They were all present at the siege of Yorktown, in October, 1781, and brought their father into the American lines under a flag of truce. They were as follows:

- I. Col. William Nelson<sup>6</sup>, of the American Army, eldest, was born at Yorktown, Va., June 17, 1746, and removed to "The Dorrill," Hanover Co., Va. Married (Nov. 24, 1770) Lucy Chiswell.
- II. Major John Nelson<sup>6</sup>, of the American Army, b. Yorktown, Va., about 1748 and removed to Oakhill, Mecklenburg Co., Va. Married (about 1772) Nancy Carter of Williamsburg, Va.

III. Capt. Thomas Nelson<sup>6</sup>, of the American Army, b. about 1750, Yorktown, York Co., Va., and removed to "Bear's Spring," Hanover Co., Va. Married (about 1775) Sally, daughter of Col. Wilson Cary, of Williamsburg, James City Co., Va. (See Page Family in Virginia, p. 168; also Chapter IV, Cary Family; Hayden's Va. Genealogies.

21. Robert Armistead<sup>5</sup> (Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of Henry Armistead and Martha Burwell, his wife; was clerk of King George County Court in 1727-57, and married (about 1750), first, Mrs. Elizabeth Ball, widow of Jeduthan Ball, and daughter of Charles Burgess, of England, and his wife, Frances Fox, daughter of Samuel Fox, son of Captain David and Hannah Fox, his wife. There is a deed in King George County, dated 1767, which shows that Burgess Ball and Burgess Smith were co-heirs of Charles Burgess as grandfather of Burgess Ball. We have seen that Charles Burgess had a daughter, Frances, who married Baldwin Mathews Smith, and Burgess Smith was his son.

Issue of Robert Armistead<sup>5</sup> and Elizabeth Burgess, his wife:

74. Henry Armistead<sup>6</sup>, of Fredericksburg, Va. Married Winifred Peachy, daughter of Col. William Peachy.

Henry's will was proved in Fredericksburg, Va., in 1787 and names daughters Elizabeth Burgess Armistead<sup>7</sup>, Alice Armistead<sup>7</sup>, brother, Burgess Ball (colonel in the Revolutionary army); my wife's father William Peachy, my wife Winifred, my brother Thomas Armistead, and friends Le Roy Peachy and Benjamin Dabney.

Robert Armistead<sup>5</sup>, married, second, Ann, sister of Rev. Thomas and Col. Gregory Smith, aunt of John Augustine Smith, president of William and Mary College. (See Volume III, Chapter III.) And had by this marriage:

75. I. Thomas Armistead<sup>6</sup>.

76. II. Martha Burwell Armistead<sup>6</sup>. Married Benjamin Dabney, of Gloucester Co., Va. Had issue of three daughters, of whom Ann married her cousin, Thomas Smith.

77. III. Richard Armistead<sup>6</sup>. Married ———, and is said to have had six children.

75. Thomas Armistead<sup>6</sup> (Robert<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>). Married Miss Merebant, of North Carolina. He was captain of the First Virginia State Regiment from April 6, 1778, to January, 1780, in the Revolution. Issue:

78. I. Martha Burwell Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married ——— Fowler, and lived in Baltimore.

79. II. Abiah Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married William Mitchell, and had issue:

I. Alfred Mitchell<sup>8</sup>, of Richmond.

II. Judge William Mitchell<sup>8</sup>, of Texas.

80. III. Anne Smith Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married ——— Barton and had issue:

I. Armistead Barton<sup>8</sup>, d. in New Orleans, La.

II. A daughter Barton<sup>8</sup>. Married ——— Hutchings, of Williamsburg, Va., and had issue:

I. A daughter Hutchings<sup>9</sup>. Married a West India planter.

II. A daughter Hutchings<sup>9</sup>. Married ——— Moody, of Williamsburg, Va.

81. IV. Catharine Armistead<sup>7</sup>, b. March 25, 1787. Married, first, William Pierce, of James City Co., Va. Issue:

I. ——— Pierce<sup>8</sup>.

II. Emily Pierce<sup>8</sup>. Married Robinson Arnold. Issue:

I. Catherine Armistead Arnold.

Catharine Armistead<sup>7</sup>, married, second, Everard Hall, a distinguished lawyer of Norfolk, Va. She died in Richmond, Va., June 2, 1864.

5. Anthony Armistead<sup>3</sup> (William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of the emigrant William<sup>2</sup>, resided in Elizabeth City County, Va. He was one of Sir William Berkeley's courts-martial in 1676 to try the Bacon insurgents; justice of the peace and captain of horse in 1680; burgess in 1693, 1696, 1699, and one of the committee in 1700 to report a revision of the laws which were approved by the General Assembly in 1705. Captain Armistead married Hannah, daughter of Dr. Robert Ellyson, of James City County, Va. This Robert Ellyson appears in the Maryland records as early as 1643 as "barber-chirurgion," and, after holding the office of sheriff of St. Mary's, emigrated to Virginia, where he was high

sheriff of James City County, Va., sergeant-at-arms of the House of Burgesses in 1657-58, and a leading burgess in 1656, 1659-60, 1660-61, 1663, with the rank of captain.

By a deed executed by his brother, Col. John Armistead, in 1695, Capt. Anthony was confirmed in the possession of the land in Elizabeth City County patented by his father, William. His wife survived him, her will being proved in Elizabeth City court in 1728. Issue:

82. I. William Armistead<sup>4</sup>.
83. II. Anthony Armistead<sup>4</sup>.
84. III. Robert Armistead<sup>4</sup>.
85. IV. Judah or Judith Armistead<sup>4</sup>. Married John West, of West Point, son of Major John West, who was son of Captain John West, brother of Lord Delaware. The license for their marriage was obtained in Elizabeth City Co., Oct. 15, 1698, and there is a deed dated July 18, 1698, of Capt. Anthony Armistead and Hannah, his wife, to their "son-in-law, John West," for 200 acres in New Kent (King William), given to said Hannah by her father, Mr. Robert Ellyson, of James City Co., deceased. She had by this marriage: Charles West, who inherited 4,000 acres in Pamunkey Neck, "adjoining Delaware, commonly called West Point." She married, second, Butts. (Hening's Statutes, V, 297; VII, 488.)
86. V. Hannah Armistead<sup>4</sup>. Married William Seldon as by license dated December 10, 1698. No issue. Seldon married, second, Katherine, daughter of Thomas Nutting, of New Pocoson Parish, York; but having no issue by either marriage, he left his property to William Shelden Sclater, son of James Sclater (who was son of Rev. James Sclater) and Elizabeth Sclater, daughter of Richard Sclater and Mary Nutting, another daughter of Capt. Thomas Nutting. Probably Dunn, whose inventory was recorded in Elizabeth City Co., in 1716.



82. William Armistead<sup>4</sup> (Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), was high sheriff of Elizabeth City County in 1695, burgess in 1693, 1702, and major in the militia. He married several times, viz.: before November 20, 1696, Hannah, b. July 1, 1673 (New Poceon Reg.), daughter of Thomas Hind or Hines and Hannah. his wife. Hines' widow married, secondly, John Powers, and thirdly, in 1694 or 1695, Paseo Dunn. Anthony Armistead and Margaret, his wife, of Warwick County, in 1737 sold lands to Edward Armistead "descended to him as heir to his mother, the daughter of Mr. Thomas Hine." (York County Records.)

In 1697 Hannah, "wyff of William Armistead," made a power of attorney to her father-in-law, Anthony Armistead.

Major Armistead married, lastly, Rebecca Moss, daughter of Edward Moss, of York County, whose will was proved in York County in 1716. (She married, second, John King, 1719 or 1720, and her will is dated February 13, 1755; proved, August 1, 1758.) Major Armistead's will, dated January 5, 1714 or 1715, and proved February 15, 1715 or 1716, shows that he had issue:

87. I. Anthony Armistead<sup>5</sup>.
88. II. William Armistead<sup>5</sup>.
89. III. John Armistead<sup>5</sup>.
90. IV. Hind Armistead<sup>5</sup>, d. *sine prole*. Married Hannah, widow of Mathew Watts.
91. V. Robert Armistead<sup>5</sup>. All probably by first marriage.
92. VI. Moss Armistead<sup>5</sup>, d. s. p.; his will, dated and proved in 1736, leaves to brother Robert "the land whereon I now live," legacies to nephew William Armistead, son of Robert Armistead; nephew James Armistead, and niece Mary Armistead, daughter of Robert Armistead; and legacies to Mrs. Martha Sweeny, and to Ann Sweeny, daughter of Mr. Samuel Sweeny. Brother Robert Armistead executor.
93. VII. Edward Armistead<sup>5</sup>.
94. VIII. "Infant my wife now bears." Hannah Armistead (as shown by other records), named in her grandmother Hannah Armistead's will, first wife of Miles Cary, of Pear-Tree Hall. Their issue as appearing in Judith Robinson's will:

- I. John Cary<sup>a</sup>, b. about 1745, named in grandmother's and aunt's will; d. 1795. Married, first, Sally Selater; second, Susanna, daughter of Gill Armistead, of New Kent.
- II. Robert Cary<sup>a</sup>, named in said will; d. in Buckingham, about 1763.
- III. Rebecca Cary<sup>a</sup>. Married Rev. Miles Selden, who d. 1785.
- IV. Elizabeth Cary<sup>a</sup>. Married Benjamin Watkins.
- 95. IX. Judith Armistead<sup>s</sup>, b. after her father's will, named in grandmother's will. Married John Robinson, Jr., and had issue:

- I. Starkey Robinson<sup>a</sup>, b. June 18, 1735.

Judith Robinson was administratrix on his estate, Feb. 21, 1736, and guardian to her son, Starkey, Sept. 19, 1737. (See Robinson Family, Hayden's Genealogies, p. 570.)

87. Anthony Armistead<sup>5</sup> (William<sup>4</sup>, Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>). He resided in Warwick County, and, in 1737, received a deed from his stepmother, Rebecca King, for one-half the plantation and orchard in Elizabeth City County, "as the same is given him by his late father, Major William Armistead." His will, dated December 29, 1737, proved February 13, 1737 or 1738, names a wife Margaret, and sons:

- 96. I. John Armistead<sup>a</sup>.
- 97. II. Anthony Armistead<sup>a</sup>.
- 98. III. Benit Armistead<sup>a</sup>.
- 99. IV. William Armistead<sup>a</sup>.

96. John Armistead<sup>a</sup> (Anthony<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of Anthony Armistead<sup>5</sup>; had issue.

- 100. Starkey Armistead<sup>7</sup>, eldest son, to whom in 1769 he gave 160 acres in Elizabeth City Co., being the land which William Armistead, by his will, dated Jan. 5, 1714, gave to his son, Hind Armistead, and, "in default of heirs of his body, then to the next surviving male heir, and which, upon his death, descended to me, John Armistead, Sr." John Armistead's will was proved in 1791, and names (Starkey then being dead):

101. John Armistead<sup>7</sup>, to whom he gave 1,000 acres in North Carolina.
102. Robert Armistead<sup>7</sup>, to whom he gave negroes that he is now in possession of in Northampton County.
103. Daughter Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married Thomas Smith. John Armistead, Sen., appears to have married twice: Anne ———, mentioned in a deed, and Elizabeth ———, named in his will. Of his children ———.
100. Starkey Armistead<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, Anthony<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>). Married Mary Tabb, of Matthews County, in 1773; but his will, proved in 1775, mentions no children, but names "brother Robert, father John Armistead, wife Mary, niece Mary Smith, mother Elizabeth Armistead, friends Thomas Smith and Robert Armistead, of this county."
101. John Armistead<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, Anthony<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), untraced. A John Armistead engaged in the fishing business in North Carolina at a place called the Sound Seine about 1816. In 1823 his administrator, Stark Armistead, instituted suit against John Crichlow, of Southampton County, Va., about some interest in the fisheries which John Armistead had sold to him. (*Armistead v. Briggs* MSS.)
102. Robert Armistead<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>, Anthony<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), another son of John Armistead, Sr., was perhaps "Robert Armistead, Sr.," whose will, made January 24, 1793, names children:
104. William, under age, to whom he devises all lands in Elizabeth City and York counties, and:
105. Elizabeth, for whose support he required all his stock of every kind and money due in North Carolina, to be devoted.
88. William Armistead<sup>5</sup> (William<sup>4</sup>, Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>, of Yorkshire, England), made his will February 15, 1724, and it was proved June 21, 1727. Names wife Judith (Hollier), and six children:
106. Dunn Armistead, whose will was presented in Warwick court, March 5, 1752, by Maurice Langhorne, executor. (Warwick County records.) His widow, Mary, married, secondly, Joshua Curle.
107. William<sup>6</sup> Armistead.

- 108. Anne Armistead.
- 109. Frances Armistead.
- 110. Simon Armistead.
- 111. Henry Armistead.

107. William Armistead<sup>6</sup> (William<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>). Married Elizabeth Moseley, daughter of Capt. William Moseley, of Princess Anne County, before 1734. (Petition of William Armistead, of Elizabeth City County, and Elizabeth, his wife, for her share of her father's (Capt. William Moseley) estate, October 2, 1834. Princess Anne County records.)

Issue:

- 112. I. Hannah Armistead<sup>7</sup>.
- 113. II. William Armistead<sup>7</sup>.
- 114. III. Anthony Armistead<sup>7</sup>.
- 115. IV. A child unbaptized at date of will, July 7, 1741, perhaps Moseley<sup>7</sup> Armistead. There is a petition in 1745 of *Dunn Armistead and Joseph Jeggetts v. George Barbee and Elizabeth, his wife*, executors of William Armistead, deceased.

113. William Armistead<sup>7</sup> (William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of William<sup>6</sup>; may have been the "William Armistead, Jr.," who married Constance ———. Will proved in 1772 and names:

- 116. I. Robert Armistead<sup>8</sup>.
- 117. II. William Armistead<sup>8</sup>.
- 118. III. Mary Armistead<sup>8</sup>, b. Dec. 22, 1765.
- 119. IV. Judith Armistead<sup>8</sup>, not named in will, but given in New Pocason Parish register as b. July 29, 1762.

115. Moseley Armistead<sup>7</sup> (William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, William<sup>4</sup>, Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), "carpenter," son of William<sup>6</sup> Armistead. Married (1766) Margaret, daughter of John Herbert and Judith Curle, his wife, daughter of Joshua Curle and Rosa, his wife, who married, second, Anthony Tucker. Issue, named in Judith Herbert's will, dated 1779:

- 120. I. Judith Curle Armistead<sup>8</sup>.
- 121. II. Elizabeth Moseley Armistead<sup>8</sup>.

William Armistead<sup>7</sup> married, second, Whiten Minson, daughter of Banister Minson. Issue named in Banister Minson's will dated 1777:

122. III. William Armistead<sup>8</sup> and issue, named in father's will, proved in 1781.

123. IV. Moseley Armistead<sup>8</sup>.

124. V. Anthony Armistead<sup>8</sup>.

89. John Armistead<sup>6</sup> (William<sup>4</sup>, Anthony<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>). This is the John Armistead who went to New Kent and was vestryman of Blissland Parish in 1722.

Col. Wilson Miles Cary writes:

"In 1868 I derived from Miss Sally Cary, of Gloucester (b. 1791), then seventy-seven years of age, of a most retentive memory, and a remarkably clear head for genealogy, the following account of her Armistead ancestry; and as she was the granddaughter of Col. Gill Armistead, who died in 1762, she would be presumed to know the facts from her mother, Susanna Armistead, who died in 1834, at the age of eighty-one (which would place her birth at 1753).

"According to Miss Cary, her immediate ancestor, William Armistead, of Elizabeth City, was a relative of Harry Armistead, of Hesse, in Matthews County. He had at least three children: 1. William, 2. John, who went to New Kent from Elizabeth City County and married Miss Gill, an heiress; and 3. Hannah, who married Miles Cary, of Warwick. Col. John Armistead, of New Kent, had four children: William, father of Mrs. Dandridge; John, father of William, Agnes and Susan; Mrs. Russell; and Gill, who married Betty Allen, of James City. Gill Armistead's children were:

I. William Armistead, who ran away at sixteen and served eight years in the Revolution. He married Elizabeth Armistead, daughter of Booth Armistead, of Elizabeth City, and had: Booth, Gill, Fanny, Contolas (named from a French officer in Revolutionary Army), Ella, Virginia and Catharine.

II. Elizabeth Armistead, b. 1750; d. April 9, 1834. Married Miles Selden, of Tree Hill, and left eleven children. (See Chapter IV, Cary and Selden Families.)

- III. Susannah Armistead, b. 1753; d. Oct. 10, 1834. Married her cousin, Col. John Cary, son of Miles Cary and Hannah Armistead, of Black River, Elizabeth County, and had eleven children.
  - IV. Fanny Armistead. Married Col. John Ambler, of Jamestown.
  - V. Patsy Armistead. Married Col. Green, of Amelia.
- Hence, to restate what has been imperfectly presented:

Col. John<sup>5</sup> Armistead, of New Kent, married Miss Gill, and had issue:

- I. Gill Armistead<sup>6</sup>.
- II. William Armistead<sup>6</sup>.
- III. John Armistead<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. ——— Armistead<sup>6</sup>. Married William Russell who had:
  - I. Armistead Russell. Married Elvira Clayton, b. Dec. 27, 1759, daughter of William Clayton, clerk of New Kent, and Elvira, his wife. (Will of William Clayton, dated June 10, 1797.) Issue: Elizabeth Armistead Russell.
  - 1. Gill<sup>6</sup> Armistead. Married (May 23, 1751) Betty Allen, who married, second, John Lewis, of Williamsburg, and had issue:
    - I. Betty Armistead<sup>7</sup>, b. March 9, 1752; d. April 1833. Married (March 27, 1774, at Mr. John Lewis's in Williamsburg) Miles Selden, Jr.
    - II. Susannah Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married Col. John Cary.
  - IIII. Mary or Molly Armistead<sup>7</sup>, d. 1825. Married Thacker Burwell.
  - IV. Frances Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married Col. John Ambler.
  - V. Martha Armistead<sup>7</sup>. Married Col. Green, and had:
    - I. Abraham Green<sup>8</sup>.
    - II. Elizabeth Green<sup>8</sup>.
  - VI. William Armistead<sup>7</sup>.

(See *Selden et als. v. Armistead's Administrator*, 7, Gratt. Rep., p. 264.)

59. Christopher Hughes Armistead<sup>9</sup> (George<sup>8</sup>, John<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of George Armistead and Louise Hughes, his wife, b. 1816; d. February 14, 1876. Married Agnes Campbell Gordon, of Kenmore, Fredericksburg, Va. Issue:



- I. Susan Gordon Armistead<sup>10</sup>. Married (1867) Cuthbert Powell Grady, who graduated as Master of Arts at the University of Virginia at 20 years of age; joined the Confederate army as a private; was promoted to the rank of colonel at the close of the war. He was appointed assistant professor of Latin at Washington and Lee College, Lexington, Va. Issue:
  - I. Susan Ryan Grady<sup>11</sup>. Married Henry Fay Green, of Baltimore.
  - II. Agnes Gordon Grady<sup>11</sup>. Married Edward Porter Alexander.
  - III. Jane Powell Grady<sup>11</sup>.
  - IV. Cuthbert Powell Grady<sup>11</sup>.
  - V. Ryan Armistead Grady<sup>11</sup>, b. 1896.
  - II. Louisa Hughes Armistead<sup>10</sup>, d. infant.
  - III. Agnes Gordon Armistead<sup>10</sup>. Married Alexander Gordon.
  - IV. George Armistead<sup>10</sup>, who inherited the silver bombshell presented to his grandfather, George Armistead, by the city of Baltimore, Md.; unmarried.
  - V. James Ryan Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - VI. Fanny Carter Armistead<sup>10</sup>.
  - VII. Minna Gordon Armistead<sup>10</sup>. Married Clarence Whiting.
  - VIII. Sam Gordon Armistead<sup>10</sup>. Married Ella Howell. Issue:
    - I. George Armistead.

Agnes Gordon Grady<sup>11</sup> married Edward Porter Alexander.

The Duluth papers of February 13, 1906, gives the following account of a little heroine:

#### LITTLE HEROINE SAVES PLAYMATE.

That bravery is hereditary and that the friendship of childhood will often withstand tests which would disqualify mature men and women was recently exemplified by the courageous rescue of Willie Broughton, by Agnes Gordon Alexander from drowning in the icy waters of Chester Creek, at the risk of her own life.

Agnes is a spirited little girl nine years old. She is the daughter of Mr. and Mrs. E. P. Alexander, Jr., 1211 East First Street. The warm blood of the South flows in her veins. Her grandfather, Gen'l E. P. Alexander, Sr., achieved distinction in the Civil War. He is a Confederate veteran, who as Chief of Artillery shared the fortunes of Gen'l Robert E. Lee.

Little Willie Broughton is only four. He is the son of Mr. and Mrs. P. Broughton, 1232 East First Street, and owes his life to his little playmate, Agnes.

When the mercury went below zero, the little friends started to play on Chester Creek, a short distance from home. The ice seemed solid, but a treacherous stretch yielded to their weight, and they sank in the cold water before they realized the danger. Agnes stood in water up to her neck. Beside her Willie clung desperately to the ragged edge of ice for support. Together they cried loudly for help, but no one was near to wrest them from impending death.

Then the fighting courage of her race came to Agnes in her peril. She stopped screaming, and placing her knee on Willie's head she drew herself to safety on the ice.

The air was freezing cold. Her wet garments were stiff in a moment. Willie struggled in vain to climb out of the water. His fingers were slowly freezing and his strength was ebbing rapidly. He cast an appealing look at Agnes, too exhausted to speak.

With rare presence of mind, Agnes encouraged him to hold fast to the ice, and lying flat beside her companion, she tugged with all her failing strength to drag him out to safety. Several times Willie was almost safe, but the most of his weight remained in the water. Each desperate pull brought him near the goal, only to fall again into the stream. Then Agnes tried again. Taking a firm hold on Willie's arm, she pulled with all her strength, and slowly drew him on to the solid ice.

The children's senses were numbed by exposure. Their ice-coated garments made walking difficult, but hand in hand they trudged homeward to loving ones, hot baths and warm blankets.

Agnes started home with Willie and did not leave him until they were on the street near his house, when a playmate relieved her of her charge.

The friendship of the children is remarkable.

A few months ago Mr. and Mrs. Broughton were in search of a residence in the neighborhood. Willie was with them and on First Street he first beheld Agnes, playing with companions. While Willie's parents inspected a house for rent he remained with the little girls in the street. He was well acquainted with Agnes when his mother called him to go home. His heart was won.

"Mamma, I've found a little girl I like best of all," he said. "She is nice to me and is going to be my girl. Her name is Agnes, and she's got fine eyes." A few mornings later Agnes was playing in the street, and was surprised by a cheery "hello" from a little boy in stocking cap, mackinaw and mittens, several houses up the street. Willie's parents had rented the house and become a fixture in the neighborhood.

"Say, I've got a penny; let's go and spend it," he continued. All the morning the little chums were together and henceforth they have preferred each other for playmates to the many children in the neighborhood. Since his rescue Willie's admiration for Agnes knows no bounds.

When a News Tribune representative asked Agnes questions at her home yesterday, which she answered with becoming candor and modesty, Willie bounded into the room to divide a popcorn ball with her.

But the course of true love, even for children, does not run smooth.

Agnes, her mother, and younger sister Susan, will leave Duluth Friday to visit for several months with Gen'l Alexander at his winter home, South Island, Georgetown, S. C. There the Alexander children each year listen eagerly to the thrilling stories of the war, told by their distinguished grandfather, and romp in the deep shaded grove, gaining health and escaping the unpleasant spring in Duluth.

Agnes Gordon Armistead<sup>10</sup> married Alexander Gordon. Issue:

I. Alexander Gordon<sup>11</sup>.

II. Margaret Gordon<sup>10</sup>.

James Ryan Armistead<sup>10</sup> inherited the sword presented to his grandfather by the State of Virginia. Married Susan Bird. Issue:

I. Hughes Armistead<sup>11</sup>.

Minna Gordon Armistead<sup>10</sup>. Married Clarence Whiting. Issue:

I. Clarence Whiting<sup>11</sup>, d. in his youth.

II. George Armistead Whiting<sup>11</sup>. Married Suzanne Butler.

Issue:

I. Eleanor Custis Whiting<sup>12</sup>.

II. Agnes Armistead<sup>11</sup>.

III. Norman Whiting<sup>11</sup>, d. early.

IV. Agnes Whiting<sup>11</sup>.

V. Mary Dulany Whiting<sup>11</sup>, d. infant.

VI. Marion Whiting<sup>11</sup>.

### THE GORDON FAMILY.

The Gordons were from Scotland. The first of whom we have ancestral record is Samuel Gordon, who married Margaret McKennelly. They lived at Stockerton, in the parish of Kirkcudbright, Scotland. He was the first of the name on Stockerton Farm, where he died April 15, 1732, aged 76; he was b. 1656.

He was related to the families Kenmuir and the Gordons of Greenlaw, and was visited by both families, especially by Sir William and Lady Gordon, of Greenlaw. Samuel Gordon had a son named John.

John Gordon<sup>2</sup> had a son named Samuel Gordon<sup>3</sup> the first of Lockdougan. Married Miss Nicholas Brown (daughter of John Brown, of Craigen Callie, and Margaret McClamrock, of Craigen Bay). Mrs. Nicholas Brown Gordon was from the Carsluth family; her grandfather and uncle were ministers in the Parish of Kirkinabrook. Samuel Gordon and his wife, Nicholas Brown Gordon, of Lockdougan, had a large family, many of whom were born at Stockerton before their removal to Lockdougan.

One daughter<sup>4</sup> married Mr. Hurren, of Kegton; d. leaving one son, John Hurren<sup>5</sup>. The other daughter married John Bell, of Gribdal; d. 1826.

Samuel Gordon died February 22, 1799; his wife died November 18, 1795, aged 71. Their oldest son, John Gordon<sup>4</sup>, married Miss Brown, and at his death inherited the two Lockdougans.

Two young sons, Samuel Gordon and Basil Gordon, came over to America and settled at Falmouth, Va., where they engaged in mercantile business and made large fortunes.

Samuel Gordon<sup>4</sup> married Susannah Knox.

Basil Gordon<sup>4</sup> married Annie Knox. These were sisters.

Agnes Campbell Gordon<sup>5</sup>, youngest daughter of Samuel Gordon and Susannah Knox, married Christopher Hughes Armistead.

Alexander Gordon<sup>4</sup> also came from Scotland. Married Agnes Knox, third sister, and later he came over and married Susan, his cousin, daughter of Samuel and Susan Knox Gordon. No issue.

#### PEDIGREE OF WM. POWELL, GENTLEMAN.

An incorporation of the second charter of Virginia, Loudoun County, paid £25 subscription.

He came to Virginia with Gates' third supply in 1611; was captain of James City, Va.; member of the first House of Burgesses, July 30, 1619. He was a man of influence in the colony. Pace first told him of the plot, revealed by chance, of murdering the colonists, March 21, 1622. He was one of the largest planters in the colony. He was afterwards employed in taking revenge on the Indians. (See Captain Smith's Adventures and Observations.)

"Master Wm. Powell was a gentleman of good means and great parentage and ever rests my faithful friend."

Col. Lewis Powell<sup>6</sup>, son of William<sup>5</sup>, son of William<sup>4</sup>, son of William<sup>3</sup>, of Cuthbert, son of William<sup>2</sup> (6th generation), was born in Prince William Co., Va., 1737. In 1763 he bought five hundred acres of land, on part of which Middleburg now stands. He owned large tracts of land in Kentucky and was one of the founders of Louisville. He proposed and was instrumental in building a turnpike from Washington to Louisville. Indignant at the attempt of the British government to reduce the colonies to a state of slavery, he became active in inspiring those around him to a determined resistance to any encroachments upon American rights. In July, 1777, he was appointed by General Washington Lieutenant-Colonel of the 16th Virginia Continentals. In 1788 he was a member of the Virginia Convention, appointed to ratify the Federal Constitution. In 1798 he was appointed to represent the Loudoun district in the Federal Congress, then meeting in Pennsylvania. General Washington was his warm friend, and on a very tempestuous day had out his riding horse to go across the country and "vote for his old friend and comrade."

His son, Cuthbert Powell, was in Congress in 1840, of whom Chief Justice Marshall said, "He is the most talented of that talented family."

Col. Lewis Powell<sup>6</sup> had two daughters:

Sally Powell<sup>7</sup>. Married William Chilton.

Emily Powell<sup>7</sup>, d. at the age of 17, unmarried.

William Powell<sup>7</sup>. Married Sarah Green, of Maryland.

Burr Powell<sup>7</sup>. Married (1792) Catherine Brooke.

Levin Powell<sup>7</sup>, Jr. Married Elizabeth Orr.

Cuthbert Powell<sup>7</sup>. Married Catherine Simms.

Alfred Powell<sup>7</sup>. Married, first, Sidney Thruston; second, Elisa Tidball; third, Nancy Kaen; fourth, Miss Harrison, of Brandon.

Cuthbert Powell<sup>7</sup> married Miss Simms; was a man of fine talents and irreproachable character. He represented the Loudoun district in the Federal Congress in 1842 as a member of the old Whig party. He died leaving issue:

I. Llewellyn Powell<sup>8</sup>

II. Charles Powell<sup>8</sup>.

III. Cuthbert Powell<sup>8</sup>.

IV. John Powell<sup>8</sup>.

- V. Levin Powell<sup>s</sup>.
- VI. Ann Powell<sup>s</sup>.
- VII. Mary Powell<sup>s</sup>.
- VIII. Ellen Powell<sup>s</sup>.
- IX. Jane Powell<sup>s</sup>.
- X. Fanny Powell<sup>s</sup>.

Jane Powell<sup>s</sup> married Dr. Frank Grady and had issue:

- I. Edward Grady<sup>o</sup>.
- II. Powell Grady<sup>o</sup>. Married Susan Gordon Armistead.

62. Frank Stanley Armistead<sup>o</sup> (Walker Keith<sup>s</sup>, John<sup>7</sup>, William<sup>6</sup>, William<sup>5</sup>, Henry<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, Anthony<sup>1</sup>), son of Walker Keith Armistead and Elizabeth Stanley; son of John Armistead and Luey Baylor, of New Market, Caroline Co., Va., a younger brother of General Lewis Armistead. He was a West Pointer and an officer in the old army; went with the South and rose to the rank of Brigadier-General.

After attending school in the neighborhood of his country home, the subject of this sketch, at the age of sixteen, was sent to the Virginia Military Institute, a school that furnished the Confederacy many distinguished officers. Here, for two years, it was his privilege to be under the instruction of Major T. J. Jackson, better known as "Stonewall," the great Christian genius of the Civil War. After graduating, young Armistead went west and was in the Rocky Mountains when the Civil War began. Although in feeble health, he made his way south, travelling over three thousand miles, a good part of the distance riding a mule, and walking for several hundred miles. He entered the army as a private; was soon promoted and continued in the service until the end of the struggle. After the war he settled at Fort Smith, Arkansas, and soon afterwards moved to Charleston, Arkansas, where he has since lived, engaged in farming and merchandising. In the Brooks-Baxter war he was made Brigadier-General of the Militia, and placed in command of all the troops in the western part of the State. In 1877-79 he represented his district in the State Senate. In 1884 he was sent to the convention at Chicago that nominated Mr. Cleveland; and in 1892 was elected Secretary of State, and was reelected in 1894, a position he now holds.



## CHAPTER XX

JOHNSTON, MOORE, STEPTOE, CALLAWAY AND THORNTON  
FAMILIES.



JOHNSTON COAT-OF-ARMS

Arms—Argent—Ordinary St. Andrew's Cross. Charge on chef—three bales.

Crest—A winged spur.

Motto—*Nunquam Non Paratus.*

JOHNSTON FAMILY.

The family of Johnston (as now written, Johnstone, Johnstonne and De Johnstonne) is of Scotch origin.

The first member of the family in Virginia is the emigrant, Peter Johnston, of Longwood, Prince Edward County, Va., who was of the Clan of Johnston, of Annandale, in Dumfriesshire, on the border.

The old seat in Scotland was Langwoode. The name has undergone some changes. At first it was De Johanstonne, showing

that they came over with William the Conqueror from Normandy in 1066. This seems to be essential to the high descent claimed by most families, and if they can show that they accompanied William Normandy, or came over, they overcome all scruples as to the lawfulness of his cause, or of their overrunning the lands of the Saxons. The first change of spelling in the history of the family is to Johanston, then to Johnstone, but Mr. ——— left off the final letter (e), which his descendants continue to do.

The Johnstones of Annandale were allied to the Scotts of Buccleugh, though I cannot now give the degree of relationship, which goes back many centuries. Sir Walter Scott alludes to it in his "Tales of a Grandfather," and I have met with it elsewhere. Tradition tells of a dreadful feud between the Johnstones and the Maxwells, a more numerous and powerful clan also on the border. The crest of the family refers to the old legend, that on one occasion a Laird of Johnston was imprisoned by a Maxwell, and that the wife of the latter implored her husband to grant the request that she might send him one more meal, on the night before his execution. The Maxwells consented, and after making all necessary arrangements for the Johnstone's escape, by furnishing horses and getting hold of the keys, she sent him, at midnight, a spur set with feathers, in a covered dish, to signify that he was to fly with his life. The prisoner changed clothes with the messenger and escaped.

Sir James Johnston had his house burned down in one of the Maxwell raids, when the latter sent him word he "had lighted a fire for the Lady Johnstone to put on her hood by."

The present possessor of the name and estates of Annandale, with the town of that name, is J. J. Hope Johnstone, of Wamfrey and Annandale, Dumfriesshire, Scotland.

Peter Johnstone<sup>1</sup> came to Virginia immediately from Glasgow in 1726-1727; b. Edinburgh, November 10, 1710. Married (March 19, 1761) Mrs. Martha Rogers, widow of Captain Thomas Rogers, of the British merchant service. The old sea chest of Captain Rogers is still in possession of the family, as well as several pieces of silver. Mrs. Rogers was the daughter of Mr. John Butler, of Osbornes, Prince George Co., Va. He was occupied in the mercantile business, accumulating property, and lived at "Cherry Grove," Prince Edward Co., Va., where he died December 6, 1786.

He was a man of marked character, was a great stickler for law and order and the dignity of authority wherever found; was a member of the Scotch Episcopal Church and vestryman of St. Patrick's Church for many years. The land, one hundred acres, on which Hampden-Sidney College was built, was given by Peter Johnstone. His sons were educated in that pioneer school of learning, and he was a liberal patron of all that pertained to the advancement of education at that day. He had issue:

I. Peter Johnston<sup>2</sup>. Married Mary Wood, daughter of Valentine Wood (see Wood family), and niece of Patrick Henry. (Henry and Winston families.) He served in the Revolutionary War with distinction as a captain in Lee's company. It is to be noticed that the sons of these two heroes of the Revolution, Joseph Eggleston Johnston<sup>3</sup> and Robert Edward Lee, were colleagues and peers in the war between the States in 1861.

Peter Johnston<sup>2</sup> was a member of the convention of 179—, and a very active and conspicuous member. He afterwards practiced law and became distinguished in that profession, being Judge of the Circuit Court for his district for many years. His children were nine sons and one daughter:

III. John Warfield Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Peter<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married Louisa Bowen. Issue:

I. John Warfield Johnston<sup>4</sup>, Jr. Married Miss Floyd.  
Issue:

I. Letitia Floyd Johnston<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.

II. Louisa Johnston<sup>5</sup>. Married Daniel Trigg. Issue:

I. Nannie Greenway Trigg<sup>6</sup>. Married Benjamin Franklin Bache, of Philadelphia. Several children, names unknown.

II. John J. Trigg<sup>6</sup>.

III. Daniel Trigg<sup>6</sup>, Jr.

IV. Benjamin J. Trigg<sup>6</sup>.

V. Evelyn Byrd Trigg<sup>6</sup>.

VI. Miriam Trigg<sup>6</sup>, d. young.

III. Sally Buchanan Johnston<sup>5</sup>, third child of John Warfield Johnston. Married Henry Lee. Issue:

I. Nannie Mason Lee<sup>6</sup>.

II. Johnston Lee<sup>6</sup>.

- III. Henry Lee<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Lavalette Johnston<sup>5</sup>. Married John McMullen, of Maryland. Issue:
  - I. Nichette McMullen<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. John J. McMullen<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Miriam J. McMullen<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Name unknown.
- V. and VI. Names unknown.
- V. George Benjamin Johnston<sup>5</sup>, of Richmond, Va. Married Miss Helen Rutherford. Issue:
  - I. Nichette Johnston<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. and III. Names unknown.
- VI. Joseph Beverley Johnston<sup>5</sup>, unmarried.
- VII. Coralie Johnston<sup>5</sup>, unmarried.
- III. Peter Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Peter<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>), d. unmarried.
- III. Charles Clement Johnston<sup>3</sup>. Married Eliza Preston, daughter of General John Preston, of Greenfield. Issue:
  - I. John Preston Johnston<sup>4</sup>, killed at the battle of Contreras, unmarried.
- III. Eliza Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Peter<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married Judge R. W. Hughes. Issue:
  - I. Robert M. Hughes<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Smith of Williamsburg. Issue:
    - I. Robert M. Hughes<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Sidney Smith Hughes<sup>5</sup>.
- II. John Floyd Hughes<sup>4</sup>. Married ———.
  - I. Floyd Hughes<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Broek. Issue: Names unknown.
- III. Edward William Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Peter<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married, first, Miss Da Costa, daughter of Mme. Villegrand. No issue; second, Mrs. Woolley. No issue. Edward Wm. Johnston<sup>3</sup> was the famous "II secretarie of the old *National Intelligencer*."
- III. Beverley Randolph Johnston<sup>3</sup>, d. unmarried.
- III. Joseph Eggleston Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Peter<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married Lydia McLean, of Baltimore. No issue. General in the Confederate Army, of peerless fame.
- III. Benjamin Johnston<sup>3</sup>, d. unmarried.
- III. Algernon Sidney Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Peter<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>), d. unmarried.
- III. Valentine Wood Johnston<sup>3</sup>, d. unmarried.

III. Jane Wood Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Peter<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married Harry Mitchell. Issue:

I. Louisa Mitchell<sup>4</sup>. Married ——— Buickley. Issue:

I. Willie Buickley<sup>5</sup>.

II. Wm. Buickley<sup>5</sup>.

II. William Mitchell<sup>4</sup>. Married ———. Issue.

III. Susan Mitchell<sup>4</sup>. Married William Taliaferro. Issue:

I. Lydia Johnston Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>. Married.

II. Bennet Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>. Married.

II. Edward Johnston<sup>2</sup> (Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married Miss Randolph; d. 1829, without issue.

II. Charles Johnston<sup>2</sup> (Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married, first, Letitia Pickett. (See Pickett Family, Volume I, Chapters V, VI, and VII.) Issue:

I. Charles Johnston<sup>3</sup>, d. 1850, unmarried.

II. Edward Johnston<sup>3</sup>. Married Anne Keith. Issue:

I. Caroline Johnston<sup>4</sup>, d. 1845, unmarried.

III. Lucy Johnston<sup>3</sup>. Married Thomas Marshall Ambler, of Morven. (See Volume I, Ambler, Marshall, Chapters V and VI; Chapters III and IV, this volume.) Issue Volume I.

II. Charles Johnston<sup>2</sup> (Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married, second, Elizabeth Steptoe. (See Steptoe and Callaway families.) Issue:

I. James Steptoe Johnston<sup>3</sup>, b. in Richmond, Va., Jan. 24, 1808. He came to Mississippi early in 1830. Married (June 4, 1834) Mrs. Louisa Clarissa Bridges Covington, née Newman. Issue:

I. Joseph Dunbar Johnston<sup>4</sup>, d. infancy.

II. Charles Johnston<sup>4</sup>, b. April 5, 1837, Jefferson Co., Miss. Married Eliza Jane Wood. No issue. Married, second, Mary Skinner, of La Tensas Parish. Issue:

I. James Steptoe Johnston<sup>5</sup>.

II. Louise Johnston<sup>5</sup>.

III. Douglas Johnston<sup>5</sup>.

IV. Joseph Eggleston Johnston<sup>5</sup>.

II. Olivia Magruda Johnston<sup>4</sup>, d. young, unmarried.

III. Rt. Rev. James Steptoe Johnston<sup>4</sup>, b. June 9, 1843, of Jefferson Co., Miss. Married Mary Green of Miss. Bishop of Western Texas. Issue:

I. Roberta T. Johnston<sup>5</sup>, b. Jefferson Co., Miss., unmarried.



CHARLES JOHNSTON OF VIRGINIA  
Father of Mrs. Thomas Ambler, of Fauquier Co., Va.



- II. Mereer Green Johnston<sup>5</sup>, b. Jefferson Co., Miss. Married Katherine Aubrey, of Va. He is a missionary in the Philippines.
- III. Marie Louise Johnston<sup>5</sup>, b. Port Gibson, Miss. Married John Mitchell, a lawyer, of Mobile, Ala. Issue:
  - I. Gladys Mitchell<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Dorothy Mitchell<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Olivia Fair Johnston<sup>5</sup>. Married George Bennett Taliaferro, lawyer San Antonio, Texas. No issue.
- V. Frederiek James Johnston<sup>5</sup>, b. Mt. Sterling, Ky. Married Anna Waelder, of San Antonio, Texas. Issue:
  - I. Ruth Waelder<sup>6</sup>.
- VI. Benjamin Charles Johnston<sup>5</sup>, b. Mt. Sterling, Ky.; d. in ehildhood.
- III. James Steptoe Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Charles<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married, second, Miss Wood of Mississippi. Issue:
  - VII. Rosa Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married D. D. Miller.
  - VIII. Mary Frances Johnston<sup>4</sup>, unmarried.
- III. Frederiek Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Charles<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>), third son of Charles Johnston<sup>2</sup> and Letitia Pickett, his wife, brother of Luey Johnston, who married Thomas Marshall Ambler (omitted above); d. April, 1893. Married Ann Carter Burwell. Issue:
  - I. Frances Royall Johnston<sup>4</sup>. (I have had several very interesting letters from Miss Johnston; she resides at Salem, Va.)
  - II. Luey Carter Johnston<sup>4</sup>, d. ———.
  - III. Martha Johnston<sup>4</sup>.
  - IV. Mary Dillon Johnston<sup>4</sup>, d. ———.
  - V. Julia Burwell Johnston<sup>4</sup>, d. ———.
  - VI. Charles Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Nannie Trent Thornton. Issue:
    - I. Frederiek Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
    - II. Marie Louise Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
    - III. Kate Courtenay Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - VII. Nathaniel Burwell Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary Sayre Maeon. (See Cary, Selden and Carter families.) Issue:
    - I. Charles Johnston<sup>5</sup>.

- II. James Markham Ambler Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
- III. Miles Cary Selden Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Nancy Burwell Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
- VIII. Lewis Burwell Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Pocahontas Dupuy.  
Issue:
  - I. Carter Dupuy Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Prentiss Dupuy Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Lewis Dupuy Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - IX. Elizabeth Prentiss Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Rev. Clarence Y. Cavitt. I met Rev. Mr. Cavitt and his wife in Natchez, fall 1905; they were visiting at Mrs. D. D. Miller's. Since then I have had several letters from Mrs. Cavitt, who resides at St. Joseph, La.
  - III. Frances Steptoe Johnston<sup>3</sup>. Married Dr. James T. Royall. No children.
  - III. Mary Morris Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Charles<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married, first, Dr. John G. Dillon. Issue:
    - I. Col. Edward Dillon<sup>4</sup>, C. S. A. Married Miss Polk. Issue:
      - I. James Royall Dillon<sup>5</sup>.
      - II. Edward Dillon<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Pendleton. (See Pendleton, Chapter X, Volume IV.) Issue:
        - I. Edward Dillon<sup>6</sup>.
        - II. Edmund Pendleton Dillon<sup>6</sup>.
    - Mrs. Mary Morris (Johnston) Dillon<sup>3</sup> married, second, Dr. John Atkinson Cunningham. Issue:
      - I. John A. Cunningham<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Eggleston. Issue:
        - I. Richard Cunningham<sup>5</sup>.
        - II. Martha Cunningham<sup>5</sup>.
        - III. Mary Johnston Cunningham<sup>5</sup>.
      - Mr. Cunningham's first wife was Miss Boyd, of Tennessee. Issue: Frances D. Cunningham.
      - III. Lucius Polk Dillon<sup>5</sup>, third son of Col. Edward Dillon and Miss Polk. Married Miss Morton. No issue.
      - IV. John C. Dillon<sup>5</sup>.
      - V. Eliza Polk Dillon<sup>5</sup>.
      - VI. Frances Polk Dillon<sup>5</sup>.
      - VII. Francis C. Dillon<sup>5</sup>.
      - III. Julius Dandridge Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Charles<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>). Married Miss Neville Christie, of St. Louis, Mo. Issue:

- I. Virginia Neville Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Gen. Beverly H. Robertson, C. S. A. Issue:
  - I. Samuel Churehill Robertson<sup>5</sup>.
- II. Julius J. Robertson<sup>5</sup>, dead.
- III. Henry W. Robertson<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. John C. Robertson<sup>5</sup>.
- II. Martha Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Flannagan. Issue:
  - I. Julius J. Flannagan<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Olivia Flannagan<sup>5</sup>.
- III. Frederiek Flannagan<sup>5</sup>. And others unknown.
- III. Franeis Duehouquet Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Charles<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>), d. unmarried.
- III. Martha Butler Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Charles<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>).
- II. Andrew Johnston<sup>2</sup> (Peter<sup>1</sup>), fourth child of Peter Johnston. Married Miss Nash. Issue:
  - I. John Nash Johnston<sup>3</sup>. Married Miss Bell. Issue:
    - I. Andrew Bell Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Barnes. Issue:
      - I. Lola Johnston<sup>5</sup>. Married ———. Issue two children.
    - II. Andrew Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Helen Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - IV. Nash Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
- II. John W. Johnston<sup>4</sup>, major C. S. A. Married Miss Alexander. Issue:
  - I. Mary Johnston<sup>5</sup>. Author of "Prisoners of Hope," "To Have and to Hold," "Audrey," and others.
- II. Annie Johnston<sup>5</sup>. Married her cousin T. Henry Johnston. Issue:
  - I. John W. Johnston<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Henry Johnston<sup>6</sup>.
  - III. James R. Johnston<sup>6</sup>.
  - III. Eloise Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - IV. John W. Johnston<sup>5</sup>, Jr.
  - V. Walter Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - VI. Elizabeth Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
- III. Helen Johnston<sup>4</sup>, third child of John N. Johnston. Married N. Hutton. Issue:

- I. William Hutton<sup>5</sup>.
- II. Walter Hutton<sup>5</sup>.
- III. Elizabeth Hutton<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. Walter Nash Johnston<sup>4</sup>, Jr., fourth child of John N. Johnston. Married Alice Boyd. Issue:
  - I. Alice Boyd Johnston<sup>5</sup>. Married Williams of New York. Issue: names unknown.
- V. Mariana Johnston<sup>4</sup>, d. unmarried.
- III. Judge Edward Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Andrew<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>), second child of Andrew Johnston. Married Miss Bowyer. Issue:
  - I. Thomas Henry Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Holladay. (See Waller, Minor and Lewis families.) Issue:
  - I. T. Henry Johnston<sup>5</sup>, Jr. Married his cousin Anne Johnston.
  - II. Leonora Johnston<sup>5</sup>. Married R. L. Preston, of Washington, D. C. Issue:
    - I. Leonore Preston<sup>6</sup>.
    - II. Henry Elliot Preston<sup>6</sup>.
  - III. Julia Holladay Johnston<sup>5</sup>. Married John Gernot. No issue:
  - III. Peter Butler Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Andrew<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>), son of Andrew Johnston (third son and child). Married, first, Miss Higginbotham. Issue:
    - I. James Andrew Johnston<sup>4</sup>, M. D.; an eminent physieian. Married Miss Bugle. No ehildren. Died 1882.
    - II. William Hopkins Johnston<sup>4</sup>, d. ———.
    - III. Edward Johnston<sup>4</sup>, d. ———.
    - IV. Eliza A. Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Owen. Issue:
      - I. James H. Owen<sup>5</sup>.
      - II. Thomas Owen<sup>5</sup>.
      - III. Charles Owen<sup>5</sup>.
      - IV. Mary Owen<sup>5</sup>.
      - V. Emma Owen<sup>5</sup>.
      - VI. Andrew Johnston Owen<sup>5</sup>.
      - VII. Henry Owen<sup>5</sup>.
      - V. Peter Johnston<sup>4</sup>, d. ———.
    - VI. John Henry Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Mrs. Rogan.

VII. Emeline Elizabeth Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married John T. Martin.  
Issue:

- I. Mary V. Martin<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. John Johnston Martin<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Emma E. Martin<sup>5</sup>.
- VIII. Dr. A. Nash Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Strange. Issue:
- I. Sallie Strange Johnston<sup>5</sup>.

Dr. A. N. Johnston married, second, Anna Arnold. Issue:

- II. Andrew Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Nash Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - IV. John Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - V. William Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
  - VI. Charles Peter Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
- VII. Anna Nash Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
- IX. Charles A. Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss D———. Issue:
- I. Helen Johnston<sup>5</sup>.
- X. Margaret Lang Johnston<sup>4</sup>. Married Eugene W. Stooe.  
Issue:

- I. Helen Johnston Stooe<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Eugenia Stooe<sup>5</sup>.
- III. Elizabeth Johnston<sup>3</sup> (Andrew<sup>2</sup>, Peter<sup>1</sup>), fourth child of Andrew Johnston. Married Rev. Thomas Brown. Issue:
- I. Thomas Brown<sup>4</sup>, Jr. Married Miss Peyton. Issue:
  - I. Baldwin Brown<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Peyton Brown<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Emmeline Brown<sup>4</sup>.
- III. William J. Brown<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Ewing. Issue:
- I. Susan Brown<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. William Brown<sup>5</sup>.
  - III. Ewing Brown<sup>5</sup>.

The following appeared in an Atlanta paper:

JOSEPH HABERSHAM CHAPTER, D. A. R., ATLANTA, GA.—I have read with interest several articles in your columns as to the Johnstones of Annandale. On 22nd instant, I note an extract: "From an old scrapbook," stating that Lord William Johnstone, of Annandale, after mortally wounding "Captain Roe, of Foot Guards," came to Virginia, married there "in 1722," and had "six sons and four daughters." In same column "Johnstone" very pertinently asks: "Why did not Lord William Johnstone (nor

any of his 'six sons') ever claim the titles and estates to which he should have succeeded in 1730?" The answer is: Lord William Johnstone died in 1721. In fact, there has never been a petition before Lords or Courts by any one claiming descent from any son of William Johnstone, first marquis of Annandale. The descendants of his daughter, Henrietta, Countess of Hopetown, obtained one-third of the estate, and since 1792 several of various branches have claimed title, but each was refused by lords because of descent through female line. The "heirs male" were in revolt in Scotland in 1689, 1715, 1745-46, and in America in 1776-1783. They were citizens of North Carolina in 1792.

The few facts "from an old scrapbook" are from a well-known work, but the extract also contains misstatements as to persons and events. In order to make this clear, I shall enlarge upon the XVI to XIX generations.

We are descended from Hon. John Johnstone, only brother of William Johnstone, first marquis of Annandale. The Lords and Courts have repeatedly held that the titles reverted to this branch upon the death of George Johnstone, third marquis, in 1792.

In answer to "E. E. J.," as to "Archibald Johnstone," he was not of the direct Annandale line, but perhaps I may be able to assist (by private correspondence) if "E. E. J." will send me name and address.

Charlotte, dowager marchioness of A—, married Col. John Johnstone, second son of Sir William Johnstone, of "Westerhall," who died at Barbadoes. Some of their descendants are in the United States. It is a well-known fact that in Scottish genealogies the oldest son only is noted, except in rare instances; also that lines are traced by land records, no other registers being kept. Consequently, junior sons were seldom noted where titles existed and estates entailed. In our own family there have been instances of men of historical note, and yet, because of this system of record, their exact connection cannot be defined. To-day this trouble is confronting Sir Frederick Johnstone, of "Westerhall," the lineal descendant of Mattheve de Johnstone (1455), the undoubted chief of the race in Scotland.

In the following sketch I only give enough to show the origin of the main branches of the family and make the connection clear. We have many of the details of each generation, but they are not necessary to this article. A skeleton sketch from our records and data is all I can give at this time.

Huga de Johnstone was laird in East Lothian, Scotland, in 1214. In 1275 his son, John de Johnstone, endowed the Monastery of Soltray with lands, as shown by the Chartulary of Soltray. Robert Bruce, in 1309, created John de Johnstone, "Chevalier of Drufries," and in same year gave to John's younger brother, Gilbert de Johnstone, lands in Lanarkshire.

John de Johnstone (IV in direct line) was made "Warden of Marches" by Robert II in 1360.

John de Johnstone (V) died in 1420. His second son, Gilbert, was "Master of Gretna."

Sir Adam de Johnstone's (VI) second son, Mattheve de Johnstone, defeated the Douglas at Arkinholm, May, 1455. Hugh Douglas, earl of



Ormond, was "wounded and captured by Matthewe's own hand." For this James II gave Matthewe de Johnstone charter to "Westerhall," and added "to arms of Johnstone a heart and crown," dated Nov. 19, 1455. Matthewe's younger brother, Gilbert de Johnstone, married Agnes, heiress of Elphinstone (1472), and was ancestor of "Johnstones of Elphinstone." The (X) Sir James de Johnstone was created "Lord Johnstone of Johnstone," under great seal by James IV in 1509. In 1549, by charter under great seal, Queen Mary (dowager) created James de Johnstone (second son of X Lord Johnstone), "Baron of Wamfray."

The XV in direct line was James Johnstone, to whom Charles I created "First Earle of Heartfell," etc., in 1643. He was with James Grahame (the Great Marquis-Montrose), at Philiphaugh (1646), was captured and condemned, but escaped. His estates were sequestrated. Charles II restored the estates to his son and changed his titles to (XVI) "James Johnstone, First Earl of Annandale and Hartfell, Viscount of Aunaud," etc., Feb. 1661, and a year later created him "Hereditary Constable of Lochmaben Castle."

The XVI James Johnstone, first earl of Annandale, married Henrietta (daughter of William, marquis of Douglas), and had two sons. 1st William, who succeeded in 1672 and was created first marquis of Annandale in 1701. (He died in 1721.) William Johnstone, first marquis, was twice married, first to Sophia Fairholm, who bore him three sons and one daughter—(a) James Johnstone, who succeeded him in January, 1721, and was second marquis. He died unmarried in 1729-30. (O. S.) (b) Lord William Johnstone, who was in parliament. In March, 1720, he fought a duel with Captain Poe (not Roe), of Foot Guard; was wounded and died from its effect Dec. 4, 1721, "and was buried at Westminster (London) unmarried." (c) Lord John Johnstone, who died unmarried in 1721, aged 32. (d) Lady Henrietta Johnstone, married Charles Hope, earl of Hoptown. Her living descendants are the present earl of Hoptown, governor general of Australia, and Hon. Captain John Hope-Johnstone, of Lochmaben castle.

The second wife of first marquis was Charlotte Venden Bempden. Issue was two sons. (a) George Johnstone, who succeeded his half-brother, James, in 1730, as third (and last) marquis. He died unmarried in 1792. (b) Lord John Johnstone, born June 1721 (posthumous) and named for his half-brother Lord John. The junior Lord John was in parliament before he was of age. He died unmarried in 1742. It was his death that caused George third marquis to employ David Hume, the historian, as companion. Upon death of George third marquis (1792), the "heirs male" of William Johnstone, first marquis, became extinct, the titles dormant.

The second son of XVI, James Johnstone (first earl of Annandale), was Hon. John Johnstone, who entered the army. "John Johnstone was one of the revolting captains in 1689," (after Killiecrankie), and with his maternal uncle, George Douglas (Earl of Dunbarton, colonel of Dunbarton regiment), and many other officers "left Scotland and entered the French service, where he served with distinction," "until the death of William

III" (1702). He returned to Scotland and died (1793), leaving four sons and one daughter. 1. John, whose only son, Thomas, died and his male line became extinct in 1769. 2. Gabriel, who was Governor of North Carolina, 1734-1752. He married, first, Penelope Phenev (née Garland), stepdaughter of Governor Charles Eden, who bore him one child, Penelope, who married Colonel John Dawson. Governor Gabriel married, second, Frances Button (née Johnstone), who bore him no children. She survived Governor Gabriel and married John Rutherford. She died (1767), leaving a son, who came to Georgia (1793). The third son, Gilbert Johnstone, left Scotland and went to Ireland (1715). He married there (1724). In 1745 Gilbert and his eldest son, Gilbert Johnstone, Jr., joined the chevalier Charles Edward Stuart and were at Culloden (1746), where the elder was wounded, but they escaped and with their family came to North Carolina (1746), exiles—outlaws.

Gilbert, senior, died at "Brompton," one of Governor Gabriel's estates, on Cape Fear, in 1775. In 1776 Gilbert Johnstone, Jr., and his eldest son, Hugo, raised and equipped a squadron of partisan light horse and led them, under Folsome in North Carolina, 1776 to 1780, and under Marion in South Carolina, 1780 to 1783, "without pay or bounty." Hugo (or Hugh) Johnstone married Susanna Barefield in North Carolina and had issue (a) Susanna, married Colonel Richard Holmes; (b) Gabriel, no issue living; (c) James, no male issue living; (d) Margaret, married John G. Ashley, of Alabama; (e) Jean, married Henry Stevens; (f) Huger Johnstone; (g) Samuel Johnstone, D. D.

Huger Johnstone married Anne Eliza Higdon, adopted daughter of Captain John Howell (See Howell, *Constitution*, October 13 ulto.) Issue: (a) William C. G. Johnstone, the writer's father; (b) Charles H. Johnstone; (c) Mrs. Susan M. Gwyn; (d) Robert A. Johnstone; (e) Henry L. Johnstone; (f) Mrs. Anne E. Greene; (g) James H. Johnstone.

Samuel Johnstone, D. D., settled in Alabama. His sons were (a) William J. Johnstone, M. D., Georgia; (b) J. Fletcher Johnstone, Alabama; (c) J. McKenzie Johnstone, M. D., Texas.

Henry Johnstone (second son of Gilbert Johnstone, the elder) married Katherine Knox (1752) and settled a large estate in Tryon (now Lincoln County), on Catawba, North Carolina. His only son, Colonel James Johnstone, of North Carolina line in the Revolution, married Margaret Ewart. Their son, William, married Miss Forney. The sons of this marriage living are (a) Captain James F. Johnstone, Asheville; (b) General Robert D. Johnstone, Birmingham; (c) ex-Governor Joseph F. Johnstone, of Alabama; (d) Bartlett S. Johnstone, Baltimore.

Elizabeth (sister of Gilbert Johnstone, Sr.) married Thomas Kenan in Ireland, came to North Carolina in 1735-6. Her sons were Colonel James Kenan, continental line, North Carolina, and Michael Johnstone Kenan, of Sapelo Island, Georgia. Her descendants are in North Carolina and Georgia.

Samuel Johnstone, of Chowan, N. C. (who was member of the continental congress, governor and first United States senator for North Caro-

lina), was the eldest son of "Samuel Johnstone, of Anslow County, N. C.," (the youngest son of Hon. John Johnstone and brother of Governor Gabriel and Gilbert, Sr.), Governor Samuel Johnstone's only brother, Hon. John Johnstone, of Bertie County, N. C., was captain of "Light Horse" in 1780. He died in 1790. His descendants are numerous in the United States and Canada.

"Samuel Johnstone, Sr., of Onslow," had several daughters, two of whom—Jean, who married George Blair, and Hannah, who married James Iredell, justice of the United States supreme court—left issue.

Another of the Johnstone clan, Archibald, settled at Salisbury, Conn. He was captain of the New York line in the Revolution and his grandson was general Albert Sydney Johnstone, of the Confederate States of America.

I have in my possession an original letter, written in 1790, by "Gilbert Johnstone, Gen'l," to his daughter Eucanna Johnstone, in which the family history is clearly given back to 1665. He made no claim, because for three generations his ancestors had opposed the house of Hanover. So far as the writer knows, his descendants have all been loyal to his faith and action.

At Idylwild we have the crested pistols used by the two Gilberts—father and son—in Scottish civil wars and in the American Revolution, together with their seal and other unique relics. Also many legal and other papers and books with "arms" and signatures dating back into the seventeenth century, with military papers signed by "Gilbert Johnstone" and "certified" by "Francis Marion" and "Judge Rutledge," 1777-1783.

The arms of Johnstone—Quarterly, 1st and 4th, Argent. A Saltire sable on a chief—gules. Three Cushions. Or. 2d and 3d—An anchor—in pale gules. Supporters—Dexter. A lion. Argent. Armed and langued, azure. Crowned with an imperial crown.—Or. Senister—A horse. Argent furnished—gules. Crest—A spur, erect, winged. Argent. Motto—*Nunquam non paratus!*

Gilbert Johnstone used the "winged spur" of Annandale, combined with the "armoured arm" of Armagh. His "seal"—with this "crest"—is at Idylwild.

Bespeaking your patience with the prolixity of this, I beg to remain,

Yours sincerely,

HUGER W. JOHNSTONE.

The following was taken from a church paper:

#### DEATH OF BISHOP JOHNSTON'S DAUGHTER.

Miss Roberta Johnston, eldest daughter of the Bishop of the Diocese, departed this life on October 26, at her former home, Mobile, Ala.

As this sad and most unexpected news was circulated through the Diocese last week, it produced the impression everywhere that the Church-people of West Texas had suffered a severe loss. Since the death of her mother, twenty-five years ago, Miss Johnstone has filled the place of helpmeet to her father; presiding over his household, caring for the younger children, and assisting in his work. For nearly twenty years she has been

mistress of the Episcopal residence and a leader in all forms of woman's work in the Diocese generally, and in this city particularly.

For a long time Miss Johnstone had been president of the Protestant Orphans' Home, in San Antonio, a position that brought her name continually before the public as that of a leader in the city's charities.

Her gracious and never-failing hospitality will long be remembered. Whether the occasion was a regular meeting of the Diocesan Council or Woman's Auxiliary, with their crowds of delegates, or the unexpected arrival in San Antonio of an individual clergyman or one of his people, always the doors of the Bishop's house stood open, and the Bishop's daughter was ready to extend every kindness. Naturally of a quiet and reserved disposition, she yet was possessed of an earnestness of mild and practical energy of life which won for her at an early age a position of influence which many women of riper years might have envied.

Upon receiving the news of Miss Johnston's death, the president of the Standing Committee at once notified the clergy of the Diocese, and (together with the rectors of the San Antonio churches) took order for a memorial service at St. Mark's for Sunday, October 28, in which all the city congregations joined. Similar services were held at the same time in other churches throughout the Diocese.

This grievous affliction comes to the Bishop at a time when he is absent in the Philippines and unable to reach home for many weeks. Besides her father, Miss Johnston is survived by two brothers and two sisters, the Rev. Mercer G. Johnston, of the Pro-Cathedral, Manila; Mrs. John Mitchell, of Mobile, Ala.; Mrs. Geo. B. Taliaferro and Fred J. Johnston, both of San Antonio.

#### MOORE FAMILY.



MOORE COAT-OF-ARMS.

(Arms of Moore of Chelsea, King William County, Va.; Moore, Lord Mayor of London, 1682.)

Arms—On a field ermine, three greyhounds sable, courant.

Crest—A lion regardant.

The following is taken from the *Baltimore Sun*:

MESSRS. EDITORS:—The following appeared in the *Sunday Sun* of June 3:

"MESSRS. EDITORS:—Gov. James Moore, the second Governor of South Carolina, had two brothers—Roger and Maurice—who moved to North Carolina. Can any of your contributors give the descendants of these two brothers?" "M."

If the writer had said Gov. James Moore, the second of that name, he would have been more accurate. The first Gov. James Moore (who married the daughter of Sir John Yeamans, first Governor of Carolina) was Governor in 1700-02 and his son James was Governor in 1719. Among the ten children of the first James, and therefore brothers of the second James, were Col. Maurice Moore, Roger (called "King Roger," from the State in which he lived) and Nathaniel, who removed to the Cape Fear River, in North Carolina, about 1725, and became the principal landed proprietor of that region. Col. Maurice Moore founded the old town of Brunswick, about eighteen miles below Wilmington, the only remains of which are the four walls of the parish Church of St. Philip, on which there is a tablet to his memory, placed there by the Colonial Dames of North Carolina. The three brothers, anticipating the modern apprehension about race suicide, each married twice and left descendants whose names are legion and who are scattered all over the South and Southwest.

Colonel Maurice Moore had two very distinguished sons—Judge Maurice Moore, one of the most cultivated gentlemen of his age, and Gen. James Moore, who commanded the Southern department during the Revolution. Judge Maurice Moore's son, Alfred Moore, was a justice of the United States Supreme Court, 1799-1805, and Judge Alfred's son Alfred was the most accomplished scholar and orator of his day. The only daughter of Judge Maurice married Gen. Francis Nash, who was killed at Germantown, Pa., October 4, 1777. "King Roger," proprietor of Orton plantation, near Brunswick, and Nathaniel both left a large posterity, but comparatively few are living in North Carolina, though the family record has been right well preserved up to a recent date. W.

The William and Mary Quarterly tells us that the Moore family in Virginia begins with John Moore, who patented two hundred and eighty-five acres of land in Elizabeth City County, in 1638. He came to Virginia in the *Bona Nova*, in 1620, at the age of thirty-six years. His wife, Elizabeth, came in the *Abigail*, in 1622. Capt. John Moore was Burgess for Isle of Wight County, formerly Warrosquiacke, in 1652-1654. In 1676 Augustine Moore, of the Old Paquoson (Elizabeth City) patented land formerly granted to his father, John Moore<sup>1</sup>. Augustine Moore<sup>2</sup> married twice, first, Anne, named in grant of land in 1652; and, second, Elizabeth, named in Elizabeth City County records. Augustine Moore died before 1688. He had issue:



- I. John Moore<sup>3</sup>.
- II. Elizabeth Moore<sup>3</sup>. Married Capt. John Goodwin.
- III. Capt. Augustine Moore<sup>3</sup>, one of the justices of Elizabeth City County, who probably married Mary Woolley, since his wife Mary, in a deed in 1667 in Lancaster County, calls George Woolley her brother.

Issue of Capt. Augustine Moore and Mary, his wife, were:

- I. John Moore<sup>4</sup>.
- II. Edward Moore<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Merritt Moore<sup>4</sup>.
- IV. Daniel Moore<sup>4</sup>.
- V. Martha Moore<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Dixon.
- VI. Ann Moore<sup>4</sup>.
- VII. William Moore<sup>4</sup>.
- VIII. Augustine Moore<sup>4</sup>.

Of these, Daniel Moore lived in York County and married three times: first, Elizabeth, daughter of James Selater; second, Mary, daughter of Anthony Watts and widow of John Llewellyn; third, Mary Kirby, widow of Anthony Robinson,\* Jr.

Daniel Moore and his wife, Mary, had issue:

- I. Augustine Moore<sup>5</sup>.
- II. Mary Moore<sup>5</sup>.

Issue of Anthony Robinson and Mary Kirby, his wife:

- I. Mary Robinson.
- II. Peter Robinson, b. March 10, 1733; d. July 6, 1835.
- III. Frances Robinson, b. April 26, 1735.
- IV. Anthony Robinson, b. June 15, 1737; d. — April, 1776.  
Married, first (December 1, 1757), Frances Read;  
second (December 23, 1762) Mary Philips. (Descendants, Hayden's Virginia Genealogies.)

Augustine Moore located on a large tract of land on the Mataponi, in King William. He was known as "Old Grub Moore," owing to his having cleared so much new land. It was Augustine

---

\*NOTE.—Anthony Robinson<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, Anthony<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), b. Sept. 9, 1711; d. April 7, 1737. Drowned near Egg Island; buried May 6, 1737. Married Mary Kirby, b. —; d. before 1775. Married, second, Daniel Moore. —Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, p. 572.



Moore who built Chelsea and named it for the home of the justly celebrated Sir Thomas More, Lord High Chancellor in the reign of Henry VIII. The tombstone of Augustine Moore and that of his wife, Mary, were to be seen in the Garden of Chelsea in 1850. There was also a portrait of him and of one of his wives preserved at Chelsea in 1868 and of his daughter, Lucy Moore, who married Speaker Robinson. Augustine Moore died July 28, 1743. He was a very rich man and left a large landed estate. Married, first, Mary ———; second, a widow Todd or Seaton. He had a wife named Elizabeth ———. By his will, dated January 10, 1743, he deeded extensive tracts of land lying in King William and Spottsylvania counties, to wife Elizabeth and children, bequeathing the former for life, the family seat "Chelsea," comprising eighteen hundred acres of land in St. John's Parish, King William County, entailing it, after her death, to his son Bernard Moore and the heirs of his body.

I. Augustine Moore<sup>5</sup>.

II. Bernard Moore<sup>5</sup>.

III. Thomas Moore<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.

IV. Elizabeth Moore<sup>5</sup>, wife of George Seton.

V. Lucy Moore<sup>5</sup>, wife of Speaker Robinson. (Speaker of the House of Burgesses of Virginia.)

V. Bernard Moore<sup>5</sup> (Augustine<sup>4</sup>, Capt. Augustine<sup>3</sup>, Augustine<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), second son of Augustine Moore and his wife, Elizabeth ———. He was of Chelsea. Married Ann Catherine, eldest daughter of Gov. Alexander Spotswood and his wife, Ann Butler Brayne, niece and ward of James Butler, Duke of Ormond. Bernard Moore was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1744. He was also one of the "Knights of the Golden Horseshoe," and accompanied Gov. Spotswood in 1716 in his discovery of a passage over the Blue Ridge Mountains. Robert Beverley in the preface to the second edition of his "History of Virginia," published at London in 1722, says: "I was with the present Governor [Spotswood] at the head of those rivers [the York and Rappahannock], and their foundations are in the highest ridge of the mountains." Having crossed the York River at the Brick House, they lodged that night at the seat of Austin Moore, now Chelsea, on the Mataponi River, a few miles above its junction with the Pamunkey. On the following night they were hospitably entertained by Robert Beverley, the historian, at his residence.

Bernard Moore and Ann Catherine Spottswood, his wife, had issue:

- I. Augustine Moore<sup>6</sup>. Married Sarah Rind.
- II. Thomas Moore<sup>6</sup>. Married ———.
- III. Bernard Moore<sup>6</sup>, Jr. Married Lucy Ann Heabard Leiper.
- IV. Elizabeth Moore<sup>6</sup>. Married John Walker, of Belvoir.
- V. Ann Butler Moore<sup>6</sup>. Married Charles Carter, of Shirley.
- VI. John Moore<sup>6</sup>. Married Anna Dandridge.
- VII. Lucy Moore<sup>6</sup>.
- VIII. Alexander Spottswood Moore<sup>6</sup>.

V. Elizabeth Moore<sup>6</sup> (Augustine<sup>4</sup>, Capt. Augustine<sup>3</sup>, Augustine<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Augustine Moore, of Chelsea, and Elizabeth ———, his wife. Married, first, perhaps Mr. Loyd, issue, one son; second, Col. James Macon (see Macon family); third, George Seton. (William and Mary Quarterly.)

Elizabeth Moore and Col. James Macon had issue:

- I. Mary Macon<sup>6</sup>. Married, first, William Aylett; second, Callowhill Minnis, member of Virginia convention, 1788. Issue:
  - I. Francis Minnis<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. Eliza Minnis<sup>7</sup>.
- II. A daughter Macon<sup>6</sup>. Married Bartholomew Dandridge. Issue:
  - I. One daughter<sup>7</sup>. Married Dandridge Claiborne. Besides other children Mrs. Dandridge Claiborne<sup>7</sup> had issue:
    - I. Anne Claiborne<sup>8</sup>. Married Mr. Langhorne.
    - II. Elizabeth Claiborne<sup>8</sup>. Married Burwell Bassett.
  - III. One daughter<sup>8</sup>. Married Mr. Brooke. Issue:
    - I. Humphrey Brooke<sup>9</sup>. Married Miss Page.
    - II. Son Brooke<sup>9</sup>. Married Miss Taliaferro. (Taliaferro Family, Chapter XXI.)
  - III. Son Brooke<sup>9</sup>. Married Miss Minnis. Issue:
    - I. Callowhill Brooke<sup>10</sup>.
    - II. Anderson Brooke<sup>10</sup>.
    - III. Robert Brooke<sup>10</sup>.
    - IV. Daughter Brooke<sup>10</sup>. Married Mr. Robinson.
- VI. Augustine Moore<sup>6</sup> (Bernard<sup>4</sup>, Augustine<sup>4</sup>, Capt. Augustine<sup>3</sup>, Augustine<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Bernard Moore and Ann Catherine Spottswood, his wife. Married Sarah Rind. Issue:

- I. Sarah Moore<sup>7</sup>. Married Carter Braxton. Issue:
    - I. Carter Moore Braxton<sup>8</sup>.
  - II. Thomas Corbin Braxton<sup>8</sup>.
  - III. Augustine Braxton<sup>8</sup>.
  - IV. Judith Braxton<sup>8</sup>. Married John Dangerfield. Issue:
    - I. Luey Dangerfield<sup>9</sup>. Married her cousin J. B. Henry.
  - V. Robert Carter Braxton<sup>8</sup>.
  - VI. George Braxton<sup>8</sup>.
  - VII. Elizabeth Braxton<sup>8</sup> was first wife of Col. James Hugh Henry, of Pleasant Hill, King and Queen County, former residence of Speaker John Robinson.
- VI. Thomas Moore<sup>6</sup> (Bernard<sup>5</sup>, Augustine<sup>4</sup>, Capt. Augustine<sup>3</sup>, Augustine<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Bernard Moore and Ann Catherine Spottswood, his wife. Married ———. Issue:
- I. Luey Moore<sup>7</sup>. Married Alexander Rose, of Westmoreland Co., Va. Issue:
    - I. Alexander Rose<sup>8</sup>.
    - II. Robert Rose<sup>8</sup>. Married Miss Parker, and left issue.
  - III. Henry M. Rose<sup>8</sup>. Married Miss Mason.
    - I. One daughter Rose<sup>9</sup>. Married Carolinus Turner. There were several others.
  - IV. John Rose<sup>8</sup>.
  - V. Charlotte Rose<sup>8</sup>. Married Lieut. Jameson, and left issue.
  - VI. Charlotte Rose<sup>8</sup>. Married Rev. Mr. Hargrove, a Presbyterian minister.
  - VII. Maria M. Rose<sup>8</sup>. Married Rev. Robert J. Taylor, of Alexandria. Issue:
    - I. Maria Taylor<sup>9</sup>. Married Alexander Marshall, of Warrenton, Va.
  - VIII. Marietta Rose<sup>8</sup>.
- VI. Bernard Moore<sup>6</sup> (Bernard<sup>5</sup>, Augustine<sup>4</sup>, Capt. Augustine<sup>3</sup>, Augustine<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Bernard Moore, Sr., and Ann Catherine Spottswood, his wife. Married Luey Ann Heabard Leiper, daughter of Dr. James H. and Luey Smallwood Leiper, daughter of Gov. Smallwood of Maryland (niece of Thomas Leiper, of Philadelphia, manufacturer of snuff, Market Street, who married Miss Thomas, of Maryland). Issue:

- I. Andrew Leiper Moore<sup>7</sup>. Married, first, Ann F., daughter of Robert Robinson, son of Speaker Robinson; second, Susan Nelson. Issue:
  - I. Robert Moore<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Lucy Heabard Moore<sup>8</sup>. Married Benjamin M. Robinson, of Beesville. (Robinsons of Hewick.) Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Moore Robinson<sup>9</sup>. Married Dr. Turner, of New Kent Co., Va.
  - II. Anne Leiper Robinson<sup>9</sup>.
- III. Martha Gabriella Robinson<sup>9</sup>.
- IV. Leiper Moore Robinson<sup>9</sup>.
  - V. Benjamin Needler Robinson<sup>9</sup>. Married a daughter of Major Taylor, of Richmond.
- VI. Mary Prosser Robinson<sup>9</sup>.
- VII. Kate Spottswood Robinson<sup>9</sup>.
- VIII. William Robinson<sup>9</sup>.

Elizabeth Moore Robinson<sup>9</sup> married Dr. Turner, of New Kent Co., Va., and had issue:

  - I. Lucy Heabard Turner<sup>10</sup>.
  - II. John Pendleton Turner<sup>10</sup>.
  - III. Louise Kemp Turner<sup>10</sup>.
  - IV. Robert Moore Turner<sup>10</sup>.
  - V. Benjamin Needler Turner<sup>10</sup>.
  - VI. Edmonia Pendleton Turner<sup>10</sup>.
  - VII. Nannie Leiper R. Turner<sup>10</sup>.
  - VIII. Mary Catherine Turner<sup>10</sup>.
- II. Thomas Moore<sup>7</sup>, second son of Bernard Moore and Lucy Ann Heabard Leiper, his wife. Married, first, Robinette Nelson, daughter of Robert Nelson, of Malvern Hill; children nine. Married, second, L. Anna Aylett, of Montrello. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Moore<sup>8</sup>. Married Mr. John Milton Dabney, of Mobile, Ala. (See Dabney family, in Volume IV, Chapter V.)
  - II. Anna Moore<sup>8</sup>. Married Gaston Gwathway, of Richmond, Va. Issue:
    - I. Elizabeth Gwathway<sup>9</sup>.
    - II. Frances Gwathway<sup>9</sup>.
    - III. Brooke Gwathway<sup>9</sup>.

- III. Elizabeth Moore<sup>7</sup>, the third child of Bernard Moore and Lucy Ann Heabard Leiper, his wife. Married William P. Taylor, of Hayfields, son of John Taylor, of Caroline, distinguished statesman, agriculturist and author.
- IV. Lucy Moore<sup>7</sup>, fourth child of Bernard Moore<sup>6</sup> and L. A. H. Leiper, his wife.
- VI. Elizabeth Moore<sup>6</sup> (Bernard<sup>5</sup>, Augustine<sup>4</sup>, Capt. Augustine<sup>3</sup>, Augustine<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Bernard Moore<sup>5</sup> and Ann Catherine Spottswood, his wife. Married John Walker, of "Belvoir," Albemarle Co., Va. Issue:
- I. Mildred Walker<sup>7</sup>. Married Francis Kenlock, M. C., of Kensington, South Carolina. Issue:
  - I. Eliza Kinlock<sup>8</sup>. Married Hon. Hugh Nelson, M. C., of Belvoir. Issue:
  - I. Mildred Nelson<sup>9</sup>. Married Thomas Nelson, of Fredericksburg, Va.
  - II. Francis Kinlock Nelson<sup>9</sup>. Married, first, Ann, daughter of Mann Page; second, Mrs. Merriwether.
  - III. Ann Carter Nelson<sup>9</sup>. Married Dr. Thomas Merriwether. Issue:
  - I. Douglas Merriwether<sup>10</sup> and five others.
  - IV. Thomas Hugh Nelson<sup>9</sup>. Married Miss Alexander, of Bedford Co., Va.
  - V. Charlotte Nelson<sup>9</sup>.
  - VI. Caroline Nelson<sup>9</sup>.
  - VII. Cleland Nelson<sup>9</sup>. Married Mary Marburg.
  - VIII. Keating Nelson<sup>9</sup>. Married Julia Rogers. Issue:
  - I. Bettie Nelson<sup>10</sup>. Married Beverly Mason, of Washington. Issue:
  - I. Julia Mason<sup>11</sup>.
  - II. Betty Mason<sup>11</sup> and others.
  - II. Cleland Kinlock Nelson<sup>10</sup>, D. D. Bishop of Georgia, 765 Peachtree St., Atlanta, Ga.
  - IX. Robert Nelson<sup>9</sup>. Married Virginia Nelson.
- VI. Ann Butler Moore<sup>6</sup> (Bernard<sup>5</sup>, Augustine<sup>4</sup>, Capt. Augustine<sup>3</sup>, Augustine<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Bernard Moore and Ann Catherine Spottswood, his wife. Married Charles Carter, of "Shirley." (See Carter Family, Chapter VII.)

- I. Mary Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married M. Nelson, of "Pampotyke," King William Co., Va.
- II. Ann Hill Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married (as his second wife) Gen. Henry Lee ("Light-Horse" Harry Lee); she was the mother of Gen. R. E. Lee. (Carter Family, Chapter VII; Lee Family, Chapter VIII.)
- III. Bernard Moore Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Lucy, daughter of Gen. Henry Lee.
- IV. Catherine Spottswood Moore<sup>7</sup>. Married Carter Berkeley. (Berkeley, Chapter XI.)
- V. William Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Charlotte, daughter of Dr. Foushee, of Richmond, Va.
- VI. Mildred Walker Carter<sup>7</sup>, d. young.
- VII. Lucy Carter<sup>7</sup>. Married Nathaniel Burwell, of Dropmore.
- VIII. F. Carter<sup>7</sup>, d. unmarried.
- VI. John Moore<sup>6</sup> (Bernard<sup>5</sup>, Augustine<sup>4</sup>, Capt. Augustine<sup>3</sup>, Augustine<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Bernard Moore and Ann Catherine Spottswood, his wife. Married Anna Dandridge. Issue:
  - I. Catherine Moore<sup>7</sup>. Married Mr. Pulham.
  - II. Dorothea Moore<sup>7</sup>. Married Mr. Stevens.
  - III. Eliza Moore<sup>7</sup>.
  - IV. Bernard Carter Moore<sup>7</sup>.
  - V. Robert Moore<sup>7</sup>. Married Miss Moseley.
  - VI. Nathaniel Moore<sup>7</sup>.
  - VII. John Spottswood Moore<sup>7</sup>. Married Miss Murray.
- III. Lucy Moore<sup>3</sup> (Bernard<sup>2</sup>, Augustine<sup>1</sup>), seventh child of Bernard Moore and Catherine Spottswood, his wife. Married (1774) Rev. Henry Skyren, b. 1729, Whitehaven, England. The exact time of his arrival in Virginia is not known, but his first field of ministry was in King and Queen and King William counties, preaching alternately in two or three of the churches and residing in the family of Colonel Corbin, of Laneville. Years afterward Rev. Mr. Skyren moved to Hampton, where after officiating for six years he died, universally beloved and lamented. His tomb is still to be seen.

The inscription reads as follows:

Sacred to the memory of Rev. Henry Skyren, rector of Elizabeth City parish; born in Whitehaven, England, A. D. 1729; died in Hampton, Va., A. D. 1795. This monument is erected by his surviving children, Elizabeth Temple and Col. John Spottswood Skyren.



Rev. Henry Skyren was an elegant scholar and accomplished gentleman, alike remarkable for his eloquence and piety, never participating in the worldly amusements so common to the clergy of that day. A reliable witness says, that when Mr. Skyren preached in the Old Acquinton Church, King William County, Va., the church was always so crowded that the people used to bring seats with them and fill up the aisles after the pews were filled. Rev. H. Skyren and Lucy Moore had three sons and three daughters. Sons never married. Col. John Spottswood Skyren was the last of the name.

- I. Robert Skyren<sup>4</sup>.
- II. Elizabeth Skyren<sup>4</sup>. Married Robert Temple, of Amptill, formerly the seat of Col. Archibald Cary. (See Cary Family, Chapter IV.) Issue:
  - I. Mary Brooke Temple<sup>5</sup>. Married Mr. Crouch, of Richmond.
  - II. Catharine Ann Temple<sup>5</sup>. Married Col. James Henry, of Pleasant Hill, King and Queen Co., Va.
- III. Benjamin Temple<sup>5</sup>. Married Lucy Robinson, of "Hewick."
- IV. Henry Temple<sup>5</sup>. Married Caroline Gilliam, of Southampton, Va.
- V. Lucy Moore Temple<sup>5</sup>, died single.
- VI. Elizabeth Temple<sup>5</sup>. Married Hon. Wm. Taylor, of Manchester, Va.
- VII. Maria Bernard Temple<sup>5</sup>. Married Thomas Robedeau Wolfe, of Clarke Co., Va.; now a lawyer of New Orleans, La.
- VIII. Charlotte Temple<sup>5</sup>.
- IX. Robertina Temple<sup>5</sup>, of Amptill. Married Robert A. Grcnnan, of Orange Co., Va.
- V. Mary Temple<sup>5</sup> (Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, Lucy<sup>3</sup>, Bernard<sup>2</sup>, Augustine<sup>1</sup>), daughter of Elizabeth Skyren and Robert Temple. Married Mr. Crouch. Issue:
  - I. Robert Crouch<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. John Crouch<sup>6</sup>.
  - III. Walter Crouch<sup>6</sup>.
  - IV. Bernard Crouch<sup>6</sup>.
  - V. Lucy Crouch<sup>6</sup>.
  - VI. Elizabeth Crouch<sup>6</sup>.

V. Catharine Ann Temple<sup>5</sup> (Elizabeth<sup>4</sup>, Lucy<sup>3</sup>, Bernard<sup>2</sup>, Augustine<sup>1</sup>), second child of Elizabeth and Robert Temple. Married Col. James Henry, of Pleasant Hill, King and Queen Co., Va. She was his second wife, a cousin of his first wife, Ann Elizabeth Braxton. Catherine, of Chesterfield, and Col. James Hugh Henry had issue:

- I. James Henry<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Samuel Henry<sup>6</sup>.
  - III. Robert Temple Henry<sup>6</sup>, d. young.
  - IV. Spottswood Henry<sup>6</sup>, d. young.
  - V. Edward Moore Henry<sup>6</sup>. Married Indiana Virginia Killey.
  - VI. Benjamin Temple Henry<sup>6</sup>, d. single.
  - VII. Dr. Patrick Wise Henry<sup>6</sup>. Married Eliza Ruth Lynch.
- (See Henry Family, Chapter XII.)

IV. Anne Skyren<sup>4</sup> (Lucy Moore<sup>3</sup>, Bernard<sup>2</sup>, Augustine<sup>1</sup>), third child of Lucy Moore and Rev. Henry Skyren. Married, first, Frazier; second, Lewis. Issue unknown.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Samuel Frazier<sup>5</sup>.
- II. Elizabeth Frazier<sup>5</sup>.
- IV. John Skyren<sup>4</sup>.
- IV. Maria Skyren<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Tebbs. Issue:
  - I. Dr. Robert Tebbs<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Tunstall.
  - IV. Bernard Skyren<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Alexander Spottswood Moore<sup>3</sup> (Bernard<sup>2</sup>, Augustine<sup>1</sup>), eighth child of Bernard Moore<sup>2</sup> and Ann Catherine Spottswood, his wife, of Mt. Nebo, near "Chelsea." Married (July 19, 1787) Elizabeth Aylett. Issue:

- I. Mildred Walker Moore<sup>4</sup>. Married John Wilson Campbell, of Roekbridge Co., Va. Issue:
- I. Charles Campbell<sup>5</sup>. Historian and educator, as genial, winning and as beloved as gentle "Elia," whom he greatly resembled in character. Author of "History of Virginia," a standard work of its kind. Born May 1, 1807; d. Sept. 7, 1876. Married, first, Elvira Callaway. (See Callaway Family.) Issue:

- I. Callaway Campbell<sup>6</sup>.

Charles Campbell<sup>5</sup> married, second, Anna Burdsall, of Rahway, New Jersey. Issue:

- I. Mary Spottswood Campbell<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Nannie Campbell<sup>6</sup>. Married Lieutenant Nathaniel G. Whitehead, U. S. A., of Trenton, New Jersey.
- III. Charles Campbell<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Fannie Burdsall Campbell<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Lavinia Moore Campbell<sup>6</sup>, daughter of Mildred Walker Moore and John Wilson Campbell. Married Rev. W. McPheeters. Issue:
  - I. Lavinia Moore McPheeters<sup>6</sup>. Married Jesse Brown, of Raleigh, N. C.
- III. Elizabeth Moore Campbell<sup>6</sup>. Married John Maben. Issue:
  - I. Jane Maben<sup>6</sup>. Married Dr. John S. Dorsey Cullen, medical director of Longstreet's Division, C. S. A.
  - II. Campbell Maben<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Mildred Maben<sup>6</sup>. Married John Ashen.
- IV. Willwood Maben<sup>6</sup>.
- V. Mary Morrison Maben<sup>6</sup>.
- VI. William Hobson Maben<sup>6</sup>.
- VI. Jane Maben<sup>6</sup> married Dr. John S. Dorsey Cullen. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Cullen<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. Olivia Cullen<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Mildred Cullen<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. Jane Cullen<sup>7</sup> and others.
- IV. Eliza Moore<sup>4</sup> (Alexander<sup>3</sup>, Bernard<sup>2</sup>, Augustine<sup>1</sup>), fourth child of Alexander Spottswood Moore<sup>3</sup> and Elizabeth Aylett, his wife. Married Col. James McDonald, of "Glencoe," Ala. Issue:
  - I. Ann Henrietta McDonald<sup>6</sup>. Married Sterling R. Coekrell, of Nashville, Tenn. Issue:
    - I. Emmett Coekrell<sup>6</sup>, captain C. S. A.
    - II. Elizabeth Harding Coekrell<sup>6</sup>. Married Dr. Neal. Issue:
      - I. Henry Neal<sup>7</sup>.
      - II. ——— Neal<sup>7</sup>.
  - III. Effie Coekrell<sup>6</sup>.
  - IV. Henrietta Coekrell<sup>6</sup>.
  - V. Amanthen Coekrell<sup>6</sup>.
  - VI. James McDonald Coekrell<sup>6</sup>, lieutenant artillery C. S. A.
  - VII. Valentine Coekrell<sup>6</sup>.
  - VIII. Sterling Coekrell<sup>6</sup>, Military Institute, Marietta, Ga.

III. Effie Lavinia McDonald<sup>5</sup>. Married Oakley Byrnum.  
Issue:

- I. Mary Byrnum<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Oakley Byrnum<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Effie Byrnum<sup>6</sup>.

IV. Mary Fairfax Moore<sup>4</sup> (Alexander<sup>3</sup>, Bernard<sup>2</sup>, Augustine<sup>1</sup>), fifth child of Alexander Spottswood Moore and Elizabeth Aylett, his wife. Married David Keller. Issue:

- I. Alexander Moore Keller<sup>5</sup>. Married Jane Sheegog. Issue:
- I. Ann S. Keller<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Mary Louisa Keller<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Jane Hood Keller<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. William Keller<sup>6</sup>.
- V. David Keller<sup>6</sup>.

II. Francis Foreman Keller<sup>5</sup>. Married Ann Crozier, of Knoxville, Tenn. Issue:

- I. Crozier Keller<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Mary Moore Keller<sup>6</sup>.
- III. David Deadrich Keller<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. William Swan Keller<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Margaret Keller<sup>5</sup>. Married Dr. Newsum. Issue:
- I. Mary Newsum<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Jane Carey Newsum<sup>6</sup>.
- III. William Otey Newsum<sup>6</sup>, d. of wounds in battle.
- IV. Henry Fairfax Newsum<sup>6</sup>, C. S. A., on Gen. Forest's Staff.
- V. Alexander Moore Newsum<sup>6</sup>.
- VI. Ann Margaret Newsum<sup>6</sup>.

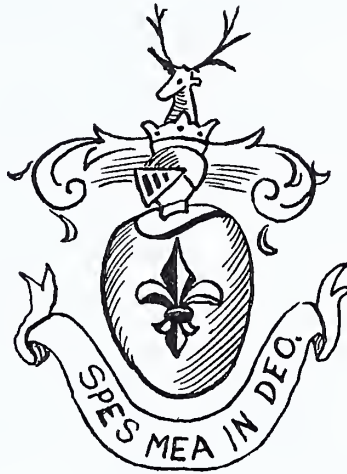
IV. Ann Evelina Moore<sup>4</sup> (Alexander<sup>3</sup>, Bernard<sup>2</sup>, Augustine<sup>1</sup>), sixth child of Alexander S. Moore and Elizabeth Aylett, his wife. Married Arthur Hazlerigg Henley, "Chota," Tenn. Issue:

- I. Sarah Hazlerigg Henley<sup>5</sup>. Married John R. Williamson.  
Issue:
- I. Robert Williamson<sup>6</sup>.
- II. Henley Williamson<sup>6</sup>.
- III. Eva Williamson<sup>6</sup>. Married Rev. Thomas Russell. Two children.
- IV. Thomas Williamson<sup>6</sup>, C. S. A.
- V. Samuel Williamson<sup>6</sup>, sergeant C. S. A.

- II. David Henley<sup>6</sup>. Married Susan Brown.
- III. Elizabeth Moore Henley<sup>5</sup>. Married Barelay McGehee, Tennessee. Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth McGehee<sup>6</sup>. Married ———.
- IV. Mary Keller Henley<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, Barelay McGehee (her brother-in-law). Issue:
  - I. Ann Evelina McGehee<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. Margaret White McGehee<sup>6</sup>.
  - III. John McGehee<sup>6</sup>.
  - IV. Lavinia Walker McGehee<sup>6</sup>.
  - V. Mary McGehee<sup>6</sup>, d. ———.
  - V. Alexander Spottswood Henley<sup>5</sup>. Married Elizabeth Henry. Issue:
    - I. Arthur Henley<sup>6</sup>.
    - II. ——— Henley<sup>6</sup>.
    - III. ——— Henley<sup>6</sup>.
    - VI. Mildred Walker Henley<sup>5</sup>.
  - VII. William Augustine Henley<sup>5</sup>. Married Margaret Suddath. Issue:
    - I. Arthur Henley<sup>6</sup>.
    - II. John Henley<sup>6</sup>.
    - III. Evelina Henley<sup>6</sup>.
    - IV. Mary Henley<sup>6</sup>, d. ———.
- IV. William Augustine Moore<sup>4</sup> (Alexander<sup>3</sup>, Bernard<sup>2</sup>, Augustine<sup>1</sup>), sixth child of Alexander S. Moore and Elizabeth Aylett, his wife. Married Jane Beek. Issue:
  - II. Lavinia Maria Moore<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, Mr. Davis, Miss.; second, Henry R. Alsobrook, of Alabama. Issue:
    - I. Aliee Alsobrook<sup>6</sup>. Married John L. Hobgood.
    - II. Robert Alsobrook<sup>6</sup>, Washington Artillery, C. S. A.
    - III. William Alsobrook<sup>6</sup>. Married Miss Conner.
  - V. Ann Evelina Henley<sup>5</sup> (A. E. Moore<sup>4</sup>, Alexander<sup>3</sup>, Bernard<sup>2</sup>, Augustine<sup>1</sup>), eighth child of Ann Evelina Moore and Arthur Hazlerigg Henley. Married Dr. John R. Pashall.
  - IX. Arthur Hazlerigg Henley<sup>5</sup>, killed by guerillas, 1864.
  - X. Thomas Henley<sup>5</sup>, C. S. A.
  - XI. Lavinia Walker Henley<sup>5</sup>. Married John O'Cannon. Issue:

- I. Nelson O'Cannon<sup>o</sup>.  
XII. Charles Fairfax Henley<sup>o</sup>, captain C. S. A. Imprisoned  
seven months at camp. He died ——.

## STEPTOE FAMILY.



STEPTOE COAT-OF-ARMS.

Arms—Argen. *Fleur-de-lys* for ordinary.

Crest—Knight's head helmeted, wearing a crown of Edward I surmounted by a stag's head.

Of the early history of this family, which seems to be an ancient one, I can find no trace after their emigration to Virginia, except the epitaph below.

The seat of the family, in Middlesex, was "Teddington." From the remains, as described in 1841, there was a very large and handsome building, with extensive grounds, and commanding a view of the river.

The epitaph from the old tombstone, lying in the garden, is as follows:

This tomb is sacred to the memory of the Hon. Philip Steptoe, Esq. In various employments of public trust, an example of loyalty to his King and affection to his country. In several relations of life, a pattern worthy of imitation. An equanimity which few are capable of, to whom



Fortune has been so auspicious, conducted him through the various scenes of life and contributed to the amount of a . . . . . ; the most exalted, not only with propriety, but . . . . .

Not imperious with advancement . . . . His rank and fortune make him extremely useful.

He was descended of an ancient family in England, which came to Virginia in an honourable character. He was born 1688, and on the 30th of May, 1748, his spirit returned to God, who gave it. His body reposes here in the sure and certain hope of a joyful resurrection.

Crest engraved on the tomb—Knight's head crowned.

The remaining history of the Steptoe family is connected with the County of Westmoreland in which was the seat of Dr. James Steptoe<sup>2</sup>, "Harmony Hall," in the curve of the river, at Bonum's Creek, near to Pecatone. The father of Dr. James Steptoe is supposed to have been Philip Steptoe<sup>2</sup>, of "Teddington," in Lancaster County, Va., as Dr. James Steptoe removed to Westmoreland from the county in 1738. The above is only a supposition, as the Steptoe family in Westmoreland County cannot certainly be traced in descent from Philip Steptoe of "Teddington," as above, and the account following is their descent from John Steptoe<sup>2</sup>, who was the son of Anthony Steptoe<sup>1</sup>, the emigrant to Virginia about the year 1690, as well as can be ascertained.

John Steptoe<sup>2</sup> married a rich widow, Mrs. Eustace.

Neither is it known, from all the research of several parties interested in the matter, who was the first wife of Dr. James Steptoe. In some quarters, it has been said positively to have been Miss Ashton—Hannah Ashton. But it probably belongs to the descendants of his two daughters of that marriage—Elizabeth T. Steptoe<sup>4</sup> and Ann Steptoe<sup>4</sup>—to settle the question of their mother's name, as this pedigree only takes up descendants of the second wife of James Steptoe.

Anne Steptoe<sup>3</sup>, daughter of Dr. James Steptoe<sup>2</sup>, as above, married Samuel Washington, the brother of General George Washington. His nephew, George Steptoe Washington, is mentioned in General Washington's will.

The second daughter of Dr. James Steptoe was Elizabeth. Married Phillip Ludwell Lee. (See Lee Family, Chapter VIII.) Issue:

- I. Matilda Lee<sup>4</sup>.
- II. Flora Lee<sup>4</sup>.

The former became the wife of Gen'l Henry Lee ("Light-Horse" Harry) and was the mother of Henry Lee<sup>5</sup>, author of "Lee's Notes on Jefferson."

Flora Lee<sup>4</sup> also married her cousin, Ludwell Lee.

Dr. James Steptoe married, second, Mrs. Elizabeth Aylett (née Eskridge), the widow of Col. William Aylett, of Westmoreland County, Va. There were in the family also two stepdaughters of Dr. James Steptoe<sup>2</sup>, Anne Aylette, and her sister Elizabeth Aylett<sup>4</sup>. The elder, Anne, married Thomas Ludwell Lee, brother of Philip Ludwell Lee, who had married her stepsister, Elizabeth Steptoe<sup>3</sup>, one of the daughters of Dr. James Steptoe's first marriage; the other of the first marriage of his wife, Mrs. Aylett. There was still another Lee marriage in this Steptoe-Aylett family, as Elizabeth Aylett<sup>4</sup> became the wife of the Hon. Richard Henry Lee, of "Chantilly," stepsister of two of the brothers' wives, and own sister of the other. (See Lee family of Stratford and Chantilly.)

By the second marriage of Dr. James Steptoe<sup>2</sup> with Mrs. Aylett, née Eskridge, there were issue:

- I. William Steptoe<sup>3</sup>. Married Elizabeth Robinson, of Hewick, daughter of Christopher Robinson and Elizabeth Wormeley. Issue:
  - I. Thomas Ludwell Lee Steptoe<sup>4</sup>.
  - II. James Robinson Steptoe<sup>4</sup>.
  - III. George N. Steptoe<sup>4</sup>.
  - IV. Walter J. Steptoe<sup>4</sup>.
  - V. Mary B. Steptoe<sup>4</sup>.
  - VI. Martha Grymes Steptoe<sup>4</sup>.
  - VII. Sally Steptoe<sup>4</sup>. Married Philip Grimes.
  - VIII. Elizabeth Steptoe<sup>4</sup>. Married Christian. Issue:
    - I. Judge Joseph\* Christian<sup>5</sup>.

---

\*NOTE.—Judge Joseph Christian<sup>5</sup>, born July 16, 1828, at "Hewick," the old seat of the Christians in Middlesex County, Va., near Urbanna. He was the son of Dr. William Allan Christian and Elizabeth Steptoe Christian. He won a wide reputation as a jurist of distinguished ability. Dr. William Allan Christian, of Middlesex, was a distinguished physician and became president of the Virginia Medical Society. Judge Christian left three children:

- I. Walter Christian<sup>6</sup>, Clerk of Hustings Court of Richmond, 1905.
- II. Gertrude Christian<sup>6</sup>. Married Todsick, a well known New York artist.
- III. Mrs. Andrew P. Montaigne, wife of Professor Montaigne, in Howard College, Alabama.

- II. Dr. William S. Christian<sup>5</sup>.
- III. ——— Christian<sup>5</sup>. Issue: George L. Christian<sup>6</sup>.
- The children of Dr. James Steptoe<sup>3</sup>, of "Harmony Hall," were:
  - I. William Steptoe<sup>4</sup>, already given, with marriage and children.
  - II. ——— Steptoe<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Brent.
  - III. George Steptoe<sup>4</sup>. Married ———.
  - IV. Martha Steptoe<sup>4</sup>.
  - V. Sarah Steptoe<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Grymes.
  - VI. James Steptoe<sup>4</sup>. Married Frances Callaway. (See Callaway.) Issue:
    - I. Elizabeth Prentiss Steptoe<sup>5</sup>. Married Charles Johnston as his second wife. (See Johnston Family, above.)
    - II. Frances Callaway Steptoe<sup>5</sup>. Married Henry Langhorne.
    - III. Sally Steptoe<sup>5</sup>. Married Thomas Massie. Issue: One child. Married ———. No issue.
    - IV. Lucy Steptoe<sup>5</sup>. Married ——— Penn. Issue:
      - I. Fanny Penn<sup>6</sup>. Married Gen. Rodes. Issue:
        - I. Lucy Rodes<sup>7</sup>. Married ———.
      - II. Fayette Rodes<sup>7</sup>. Married ———.
    - II. James Penn<sup>6</sup>. Married ———. His son<sup>7</sup> was Governor of Louisiana in 18—.
    - V. James C. Steptoe<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Mitchell. Issue:
      - I. Daughter Mitchell. Married Wm. M. Burwell.
  - VI. Dr. William Steptoe<sup>5</sup> married, first, Miss Brown. Issue:
    - I. Col. Edward Steptoe<sup>6</sup>, U. S. A.; distinguished in Mexican War. Married Miss Clayton. No issue.
- Dr. William Steptoe<sup>5</sup> married, second, Miss Dillon. Issue:
  - I. William Steptoe<sup>6</sup>. Married Miss Payne. No issue.
  - II. Mary Catherine Steptoe<sup>6</sup>, d. single.
- III. Nannie Brown Steptoe<sup>6</sup>. Married Major Eldridge. No issue.
- IV. Elizabeth Steptoe<sup>6</sup>. Married ———.
- V. Patrick Dillon Steptoe<sup>6</sup>. Married ———, and had issue:
  - II. One daughter<sup>7</sup>. Married ———, and had issue:
    - I. One daughter<sup>8</sup>, the only descendant of William Steptoe.
- VII. George Steptoe<sup>5</sup>, the seventh child of James Steptoe<sup>4</sup>, the famous clerk of Bedford Co., Va., for fifty-four years. Married Miss ———. Issue:

- I. John Steptoe<sup>6</sup>. Married Miss ———. Issue:
- I. Ella Steptoe<sup>7</sup>. Married Judd. Issue:
- I. Malsa Judd<sup>8</sup>.
- II. ——— Judd<sup>8</sup>.
- VIII. Robert Steptoe<sup>5</sup>, eighth son of James Steptoe<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Leftwich. Issue unknown.
- IX. Thomas Steptoe<sup>5</sup>, ninth son of James Steptoe. Married Miss Yancey. Issue:
  - I. Rev. Charles Steptoe<sup>6</sup>. Married Miss Nabe. Issue:
  - I. Philip N. Steptoe<sup>7</sup>, and others—names unknown.
  - II. Tudor Steptoe<sup>6</sup>. Married ———.
- III. Fanny Steptoe<sup>6</sup>. Married Col. Carleton Beadford. No issue.
- IV. Betty Steptoe<sup>6</sup>.

James Steptoe<sup>4</sup>, the old clerk of Bedford whom we have already mentioned, was held in affectionate remembrance for his generous and lovable qualities. He was especially beloved by his slaves, many of whom he set free after having had them taught different trades by which they could support themselves. Riding in his coach one day to Liberty (now Bedford City), and seeing a crowd assembled around a poor woman's house not far from the road, he ordered Ben, his coachman, to stop and find out the reason.

Ben soon returned, saying: "Master, de sheriff is selling out old Mrs. Caffree," whereupon the old gentleman got out of his carriage, went to the house, bought all the woman's possessions, gave them to her and continued his journey. A portrait of this old clerk of Bedford is now in possession of Mrs. John H. Lewis (née Langhorne), of Lynchburg, Va., one of the descendants. He is dressed in the olden style, with a cue. An old gentleman of Lynchburg once said to a descendant, "Your grandfather, James Steptoe, was always the best-dressed man I ever saw. He drove to the Clerk's office every morning dressed in a suit of white broadcloth, imported from London, black silk hose, silver knee-buckles, with usually a rose in his buttonhole."

It may be of interest to relate a hitherto unpublished incident in connection with Charles Johnston, who married Elizabeth Steptoe, daughter of James Steptoe, the old clerk. This article was sent to the *Richmond Dispatch*, November, 1905, by L. M. B., of Bedford City, Va.:

Soon after the Revolution Mr. Johnson was sent from Virginia to Ohio on some law business. The country was full of Indians, and near a place called Sandusky he was captured by the Indians and held a prisoner for a year. He told his children in after years that the Indians spared his life from day to day because he made them such good "pancakes." After having been a prisoner for a year he was tied to a tree to be burned. The fagots were lighted, when an old Frenchman, named Dr. Shuget, came up in his peddler's cart, and seeing what was going on, begged the Indians to release the man in exchange for some of his goods. After a little parley Mr. Johnston was released, and Dr. Shuget brought him back to Virginia. Soon after this Mr. Johnston was sent on government business to Paris. The ship in which he sailed also carried General Lafayette to France, after his visit to General Washington. While on the ship Mr. Johnston entertained General Lafayette and his staff with the narrative of his capture and imprisonment by the Indians, which so interested the General that he requested Mr. Johnston to write it out for the Paris papers, which he did. Years after this General Lafayette again visited Virginia. He inquired for Mr. Charles Johnston, and being told that he lived at Botetourt Springs, Va. (now Hollins Institute), and learning that his road to North Carolina, where he was going to visit General Nathaniel Green, would lead him near the County of Botetourt, he determined to stop and visit Mr. Johnston. Soon after this General Lafayette and his staff arrived at Mr. Johnston's house, and who should ride up most unexpectedly but the veritable Dr Shuget, who had rescued Mr. Johnston.

This was told the writer of the narrative (L. B. M., of Bedford City, Va.) by the daughter of Mr. Johnston, the late Mrs. Dr. Cunningham, of Richmond, Va., who was thirteen years old at the time of General Lafayette's visit, and remembered the conversation between these gentlemen. She said that General Lafayette remarked, "I do not believe that Marshal Ney ever came to America."

This Charles Johnston was the uncle of the distinguished Confederate General, Joseph E. Johnston. The descendants of Colonel James Steptoe, whose children and grandchildren intermarried with the Blackwells, Lees, Callaways, Langhorns, Burwells, Browns, Dillons, Paynes, Harrises, Massies, and many others, are among the most prominent families of Virginia.

#### CALLAWAY FAMILY.

Tradition asserts that the Callaway family is of Welsh descent. It is not known to the writer at what time its founder came to America. The first mention of the name bears date 1745, when

the Rev. William Stith, the historian, bought two hundred acres of Francis Callaway at Poplar Forest. Mr. Stith added to this tract until in 1749 it contained 6,000 acres. The founder of the family had three sons:

- I. Thomas Callaway<sup>2</sup>.
- II. Richard Callaway<sup>2</sup>.
- III. William Callaway<sup>2</sup>.

Thomas Callaway<sup>2</sup> was a vestryman in the year 1752, of Antoine parish, Halifax County; an ensign, then captain of militia from that county, in the French and Indian Wars prior to 1755. He probably emigrated to North Carolina.

Richard Callaway<sup>2</sup> was a sergeant, then a lieutenant, in the French and Indian War, from Bedford County, Virginia. He was trustee from the town of New London in 1761, and went to Kentucky, where he was with Daniel Boone in 1764. He was a member of the first Legislature of Kentucky, which met under a tree. He was one of the first Burgesses of Virginia, from the County of ———, in 1777. In October, 1779, Richard Callaway with Evan Shelby were commissioners of the Virginia House of Burgesses for opening and making the first public road over the Cumberland Mountains into Kentucky. He was killed by the Indians in 1780.

Richard Callaway's numerous descendants settled in Kentucky and Missouri.

William Callaway<sup>2</sup> remained in Virginia. He patented fifteen thousand acres of land in Lunenburg, Brunswick, Bedford and Halifax counties. In 1761 William Callaway<sup>2</sup>, Gent., made a free gift of one hundred acres of land to the County of Bedford to be settled with a town adjoining the court house of said county, to be called New London. Married Miss Crawley, and had issue:

- I. James Callaway<sup>3</sup>, d. 1809.
- II. John Callaway<sup>3</sup>, a gallant officer of the revolution, distinguished at Guilford Court House.
- III. William Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Miss Smith.
- IV. Charles Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Miss Early.
- V. Mary Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married William Anderson.
- VI. Eliza Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Capt. Thorpe, an English officer.
- VII. Catharine Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Mr. Price.



Col. James Callaway<sup>2</sup>, long a leading citizen of Bedford County, was a man of great wealth and influence. He was the friend of Washington, and was in the Revolutionary Army, as well as the French and Indian War. He was the pioneer of the iron interest in that part of Virginia, and built the first iron furnace south of James River in 1781. General Washington detailed Col. Callaway from active service in order to make iron for military use. Col. Callaway married, first, Miss Tate. Issue:

- I. Elizabeth Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Judge Henry James, of Kentucky.
  - II. Mary Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Dr. Henry Brown, of New York.
  - III. Frances Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married James Steptoe, the old clerk of Bedford Co., Va.  
The IV, V, VI, VII and VIII children all died young.
  - IX. James Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Miss Green.
  - X. Henry Callaway<sup>3</sup>, educated at William and Mary College. Married Miss Guerrant.
  - XI. Robert Callaway<sup>3</sup>, educated at William and Mary College.
  - XII. Sarah Callaway<sup>3</sup>, died ——.
  - Col. James Callaway<sup>2</sup> married, second, Elizabeth Early. Issue:
  - XIII. Jeremiah Callaway<sup>3</sup>, d. ——.
  - XIV. William Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Miss Crump, from whom the Bridges are descended.
  - XV. John Callaway<sup>3</sup>, died ——.
  - XVI. Edward Callaway<sup>3</sup>, died ——.
  - XVII. Dr. George Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Mary Eliza Cabell. Issue:
    - I. One daughter Callaway<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Brown; she was the mother of Mr. Alexander Brown, the distinguished antiquarian and genealogist; died 1890.
  - XVIII. Abner Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Miss Lewis, and moved to Missouri.
  - XIX. Rev. Thomas Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Miss Anderson, and moved to Missouri.
  - XX. Catherine Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married William Langhorne. Issue:
    - I. Mary Langhorne<sup>4</sup>. Married Geo. Plata Tayloe. Issue:
      - I. John William Tayloe<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Randolph, of Ala.
      - II. Henrietta Tayloe<sup>5</sup>. Married Gen. Thomas Munford.
- Issue:

- I. Geo. T. Munford<sup>6</sup>. Married Miss Orchard, of Atlanta.  
Issue:
  - I. Elizabeth Munford<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. George T. Munford<sup>7</sup>.
  - II. Emma Munford<sup>6</sup>. Married Rev. J. William Boyd. Three children.
- III. William Munford<sup>6</sup>, unmarried.
  - II. Nannie Tayloe<sup>5</sup>. Married John D. Langhorne; several children, names unknown.
- III. George Edward Tayloe<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Willis. Issue.
- IV. Lomax Tayloe<sup>5</sup>, killed in battle.
  - V. Mary Langhorne Tayloe<sup>5</sup>. Married William Gwathmay. Children's names unknown except Dr. Temple Gwathmay of Norfolk.
- VI. Rosa Tayloe<sup>5</sup>. Married Thornton Tayloe. Issue: Two daughters.
- VII. James Callaway Tayloe<sup>5</sup>, a gallant officer of the *Merrimac*; killed in the action 1862.
- VIII. Wharton Tayloe<sup>5</sup>.
  - IX. Virginia Tayloe<sup>5</sup>. Married Mortimer Rogers. Issue:
    - I. Mary Rogers<sup>6</sup>.
    - II. Virginia Rogers<sup>6</sup>.
    - III. Son Rogers<sup>6</sup>.
    - IV. Son Rogers<sup>6</sup>.
  - IV. Dr. John Miller Langhorne<sup>4</sup>, son of Catherine Callaway and William Langhorne. Married Lucy Lee. He is Dr. Langhorne, of Uniontown, Ala. Issue, but names unknown.
  - IV. George Langhorne<sup>4</sup>, son of Catherine Callaway and William Langhorne. Married Miss White. Issue:
    - I. Sarah Langhorne<sup>5</sup>. Married Dr. Johnson. Issue: Five children, names unknown.
    - II. James Callaway Langhorne<sup>5</sup>. Married Miss Taylor. Issue:
      - I. Lewis Langhorne<sup>6</sup>.
      - II. Annie Langhorne<sup>6</sup>.
    - III. Catharine Langhorne<sup>6</sup>. Married Col. Sperry. Issue:
      - I. James Sperry<sup>7</sup>.
    - IV. Mary Langhorne<sup>6</sup>. Married David Evans. Issue.
    - V. John Langhorne<sup>6</sup>, unmarried.

- VI. Edmund W. Langhorne<sup>6</sup>. Married Miss Churchill. Issue.
- VII. Virginia Langhorne<sup>6</sup>. Married Mr. Gilham.
- IV. Lavinia Langhorne<sup>4</sup>, the fourth child of Catharine Callaway<sup>3</sup> and William Langhorne. Married John Dabney. Issue:
  - I. William Dabney<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Maria Dabney<sup>5</sup>. Married Capt. Coyner; issue, one child. There were several other Dabney children.
- Col. James Callaway<sup>2</sup> married, third, Mrs. Mary Turpin (née Langhorne, uncle of Mr. William Langhorne, who married Catharine Callaway<sup>3</sup>). No issue.
- II. John Callaway<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>). Married Miss Ward. Issue:
  - I. Dr. Henry Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - II. David Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - III. James Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - IV. Mary Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - V. Matilda Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Mr. Hewitt. Issue:
    - I. David Wm. Hewitt<sup>4</sup>.
    - II. Catherine Callaway Hewitt<sup>4</sup>.
- II. William Callaway<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>), third son of William Callaway and Miss Crawley, his wife. Married Miss Smith. Issue:
  - I. Matilda Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Callahill Minnus, a distinguished lawyer of Bedford Co., Va. No issue.
  - II. Betsey Callaway<sup>3</sup>. Married Mr. Leftwich and was the mother of Mrs. Robert Steptoe. (See Steptoe Family.)
- II. Charles Callaway<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>), fourth son of William Callaway and Miss Crawley, his wife. Married Miss Early. Issue:
  - I. Joel Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - II. Achilles Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - III. James Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - IV. John Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - V. Frank Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - VI. Mary Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - VII. Julia Callaway<sup>3</sup>.
  - II. Mary Callaway<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>), the fifth child of William Callaway and Miss Crawley, his wife. Married Mr. Anderson. Issue:
    - I. Mrs. Blair<sup>3</sup>, of Roanoke, Va., who had issue of two sons and one daughter, Gertrude Blair.

II. Eliza Callaway<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>), sixth child of William Callaway and Miss Crawley, his wife. Married Capt. Thorpe. Issue:

I. Betsey Thorpe<sup>3</sup>. Married Mr. Gwatkin. Issue:

I. Charles Gwatkin<sup>4</sup>.

II. Richard Gwatkin<sup>4</sup>.

III. Elizabeth Gwatkin<sup>4</sup>. Married Edwin Royall. Issue:

I. Betty Royall<sup>5</sup>. Married Major Ellison.

II. Virginia Royall<sup>5</sup>. Married Gen'l Withers. Issue:

I. Seccessia Withers<sup>6</sup>. Married Mr. Carter; and is the mother of Rev. E. R. Carter and also of Janetta Carter, who married John Jaquelin Ambler of Glen Ambler, Amherst Co., Va. (Carter, Withers, Chapter VII.)

II. Sophia Thorpe<sup>3</sup>. Married Mr. Reid. Issue:

I. Dr. Frank Reid<sup>4</sup>.

II. James Reid<sup>4</sup>.

III. Patrick Reid<sup>4</sup>.

III. Theodosia Thorpe<sup>3</sup>. Married Mr. Harris. One of the sons:

I. Dr. Hector Harris<sup>4</sup>. Married Catharine Alexander. Issue:

I. Dr. Thomas Harris<sup>5</sup>. Married Fanny Reid, daughter of Dr. F. Reid.

II. Catherine Callaway<sup>2</sup> (William<sup>1</sup>) seventh child of William Callaway and Miss Crawley, his wife. Married Mr. Price. Issue:

I. Nancy Price<sup>3</sup>.

II. William Price<sup>3</sup>.

III. Celia Price<sup>3</sup>.

IV. James Price<sup>3</sup>.

V. Patrick Price<sup>3</sup>.

The following history of the Thornton family is an abridgment of quite a long article in the William and Mary Quarterly:

The first of the name of Thornton was William Thornton<sup>1</sup>, who came from Yorkshire, England, settled in Gloucester Co., Va., in 1646, and was vestryman of Petsworth Parish in 1677. It is not known whom he married, but he had three sons:

I. William Thornton<sup>2</sup>.

II. Francis Thornton<sup>2</sup>.

III. Rowland Thornton<sup>2</sup>.

Of these three, there is no account of any descendants, except of William Thornton<sup>2</sup>, b. March 27, 1649. He was also vestryman

of Petsworth Parish, and was married three times, though the names of none of his wives are known. There were ten daughters of William Thornton, and one son, who married Frances Thornton<sup>3</sup>, b. October 13, 1694, also vestryman of Petsworth. Married Alice, daughter of Captain Anthony Savage, and settled in Stafford Co., Va. Francis Thornton<sup>3</sup> was twice married, but no children by second marriage.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. Margaret Thornton<sup>4</sup>. Married William Strother.
- II. Sarah Thornton<sup>4</sup>. Married Lawrence Taliaferro. (See Taliaferro Family, Chapter XXI.)
- III. Francis Thornton<sup>4</sup>. Married ———. Issue:
  - I. William Thornton<sup>5</sup>.

Francis Thornton<sup>4</sup> was the founder of the "Fall Hill" family of Thorntons, though I cannot certainly identify his descendants, except his son:

- I. Francis Thornton<sup>5</sup>, of "Fall Hill." Married (1736) Frances, daughter of Mildred (Washington) Gregory, wife of Roger Gregory and aunt of Gen. Geo. Washington. Mrs. Thornton<sup>5</sup> had been married before to Col. Henry Willis. The children of Francis Thornton and Mildred Gregory were:
  - I. Francis Thornton<sup>6</sup>.
  - II. George Thornton<sup>6</sup>.
  - III. William Thornton<sup>6</sup>.
  - IV. John Thornton<sup>6</sup>.
  - V. Mildred Thornton<sup>6</sup>. Married C. Washington.
  - VI. Mary Thornton<sup>6</sup>. Married Wm. Champe.
  - VII. Reuben Thornton<sup>6</sup>.
  - VIII. Francis Thornton<sup>6</sup>.

V. Rowland Thornton<sup>5</sup>, son of Francis Thornton<sup>4</sup>, the founder of "Fall Hill." Married Miss Catlett. Issue:

- I. Alice Thornton<sup>6</sup>. Married John Fitzhugh of Bell Air, Stafford Co., Va. (See Chapter XVI.)
- V. Anthony Thornton<sup>5</sup>, fourth son of Francis Thornton<sup>4</sup>, b. 1695; d. 1757. Married Winifred, daughter of Col. Peter Presley, of "Northumberland House." Issue:

- I. Presley Thornton<sup>6</sup>. Married, first, Elizabeth ———. He inherited "Northumberland House," on the Potomac; was Burgess of Northumberland Co.; married, second, Charlotte Belson, adopted daughter of John Tayloe, of "Mt. Airy." Issue:

- I. Peter Presley Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Presley Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Elizabeth Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. Winifred Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- V. Charlotte Thornton<sup>7</sup>.

Presley Thornton<sup>6</sup> removed, just before the Revolution, to England. The following issue is given in different order:

- I. Elizabeth Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Peter Presley Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Winifred Thornton<sup>7</sup>. Married John Catesby Cocke.
- IV. Charlotte Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- V. Presley Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Charles Wade Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- VII. John Tayloe Thornton<sup>7</sup>.

VI. Francis Thornton<sup>6</sup>, second son of Anthony Thornton and Winifred Presley, his wife. Married Sarah Fitzhugh. Issue:

- I. Winifred Thornton<sup>7</sup>. Married Col. Dan McCarty.
- II. Elizabeth Thornton<sup>7</sup>. Married her cousin Presley Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Lucy Thornton<sup>7</sup>. Married John Brooke<sup>7</sup>, of Essex Co., Va.
- IV. Alice Thornton<sup>7</sup>. Married her cousin.
- VI. Peter Thornton<sup>6</sup>, third son of Anthony Thornton and Winifred Presley, his wife. Married Ellen Bankhead.

VI. Anthony Thornton<sup>6</sup>, fourth son of Anthony Thornton and Winifred Presley of "O———" This estate was presented to him in 1715, by his father. Married, first, Miss Taliaferro; second, Miss Fitzhugh.

Issue by second wife:

- I. Anthony Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Peter Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Charles Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. George Thornton<sup>7</sup>.



- V. Reuben Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- VI. Presley Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- VII. Judith Presley Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- VIII. Henry Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- IX. Thomas Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- X. John Thornton<sup>7</sup>.

Presley Thornton<sup>7</sup> married Miss McCulloch. Issue: Ten children.

VI. Francis Thornton<sup>6</sup>, son of Francis<sup>5</sup> Thornton, of "Fall Hall." Francis<sup>6</sup>, of "Fall Hall," married Ann, daughter of Rev. John Thompson, whose wife was Butler Bayne, widow of Gen'l Spottswood. Issue:

- I. Francis Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- II. Elizabeth Gregory Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- III. Mary Thompson Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- IV. Dorothea Thompson Thornton<sup>7</sup>.
- V. Mildred W. Thornton<sup>7</sup>. Married Maury.

VII. George Thornton<sup>7</sup>, fourth son of Anthony Thornton<sup>6</sup>.  
Married Mary Alexander. Issue:

- I. Lucy F. Thornton<sup>8</sup>.
- II. Reuben Thornton<sup>8</sup>.
- III. George Washington Thornton<sup>8</sup>.

Col. William Thornton<sup>5</sup>, son of Francis Thornton, founder of the "Fall Hall" family, is supposed to be the direct ancestor of the Johnstons, from whom Mrs. Charles Johnston (see Johnston Family), the Nannic Trent Johnston, is descended.

This I had from Judge James Thornton of the Supreme Court of California, the uncle of Professor Thornton of University of Virginia; though like so many Virginians of good birth, he took no more interest in such subjects than his nephew, Professor Thornton.

He could tell no more than that his father, Col. William Mynn Thornton, was a descendant from Francis Thornton<sup>4</sup>, of "Fall Hall," whose son William<sup>2</sup> was Col. William Thornton's direct ancestor. His mother was Miss Mynn of Virginia.

Col. William Mynn Thornton married Miss Anderson. Issue:

- I. Judge James Thornton, of the Supreme Bench of California. Marry Sally Innis Crittenden, fifth child of

Sally Innis Thornton. She was daughter of Francis H. Thornton and Sally Innis. (See Callaway.) Elizabeth Callaway married Judge Harry Innis, of Kentucky, 1750. Sally Innis married Francis Thornton of "Fall Hall," and had issue:

- I. Elizabeth Thornton. Married James H. Fitzgerald.
- II. Rev. Frank Thornton. Married, first, Jane Thornton; second, Susan Wormeley.
- III. Sally Thornton. Married Murry Forbes.
- IV. James Innis Thornton. Married Miss Smith, of Alabama.
- V. Judge Harry Innis Thornton. Married Lucy Crittenden, sister of Hon. J. J. Crittenden.
- VI. Robert Callaway Thornton.
- VII. Catharine Marshall Thornton. Married Thomas Marshall, of Happy Creek. (See Marshall, Chapter XIV.)
- VIII. Butler Bayne Thornton.

The children of Judge James Thornton and Miss Crittenden, his wife, are:

- I. Sally Thornton. Married Mr. Kinney, of California. Issue: Many children.
- II. Crittenden Thornton and others. They all live in California.

The second child and son of Col. William Mynn Thornton and Miss Anderson was Col. John Thornton, who commanded the third Virginia Cavalry, and was killed at the battle of Sharpsburg, September 17, 1862. Colonel John Thornton was the son of Captain William M. Thornton, of Cumberland Co., Va., and Capt. John Thornton of Hanover Co., Va. Married Sarah Thruston, a sister of Colonel Charles Wynn Thruston, who was an Episcopal minister and known during the Revolution as "Fighting Parson." Professor William Mynn Thornton and Rev. Byrd Thornton Turner are great-grandsons of Sarah Thruston, sister of the Rev. Thruston, consequently their fathers were first cousins.

Col. John Thornton, of Hanover Co., Va. and Sarah Thruston, his wife, had issue:

- I. Prof. Wm. Thornton, of University of Virginia. Married
- II. Frank Thornton.

- III. Harry Thornton, murdered by the Esquimaux in Alaska, 1892.
- IV. Catharine Thornton. Married George Turner, of Hanover Co., Va. He was b. April 19, 1775, at Moss Neck, Caroline Co., Va. Issue:
  - Turner, b. May 23, 1814, at Beech Creek, Hanover Co., Va. Married Ceciller Dabney Shelton. Issue:
    - Rev. Byrd Thornton Turner, of King George Co., Va. (Issue: Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.)
- V. Polly Thornton. Married William Kennon, of Norwood, Va.

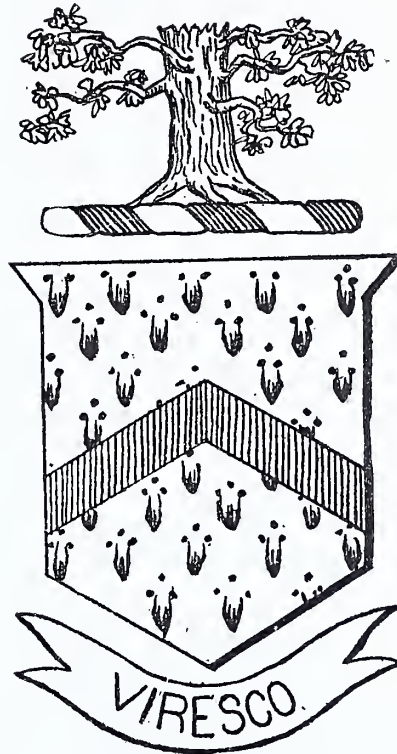
The third child of Col. Wm. Mynn Thornton was Mary Thornton. Married Mr. Gilliam.

Fourth child, Richard P. Thornton, married Maria Trent Moseby. Issue:

- I. William Mynn Thornton, single.
- II. Nannie Trent Thornton. Married Charles Johnston. (See Johnston Family.)
- III. John Thornton. Married ———.

## CHAPTER XXI

## THE TALIAFERRO FAMILY.



TALIAFERRO COAT-OF-ARMS.

Of all the old family legends and traditions which have come down to us as to the origin of our colonial ancestors in America, there is no story more interesting and certainly none more ancient than that of the origin of the Taliaferro family, for it carries us back to Julius Cæsar and his campaign in Gaul, in the year 58 B. C. The old tradition tells us that Julius Cæsar, while

inspecting his camp at twilight, was surrounded by Gallie barbarians, who would have killed him had it not been for the intervention of one of the barbarians, who so admired Cæsar for his bravery and courage in defending himself that he refused to let him be murdered. Cæsar, in return for this timely assistance made this man one of his personal attendants, and he was allowed to carry arms (a sword or dart), and thus the name of Taliaferro originated from the Latin *tutum* (a dart) and *ferro* (to bear). It was, of course, contrary to custom to allow a stranger or barbarian in the Roman camps to carry arms.

A branch of the family wandered to Normandy, and thence came to England with William the Conqueror, Baron Taliaferro being called "the hero of Hastings," who received large grants of land for his bravery in County Kent, which descended to his posterity, who became the Earls of Pinnington.

In Bulwer's novel, "Harold," we have the story of a troubadour named Taliaferro who was the personal friend of William the Conqueror. This Taliaferro died a gallant death at Hastings. In 804 a Taliaferro was created Duke of Angoulême by Charles the Bold of France, and in Hume's "History of England" we read that Isabel Taliaferro, daughter of the Count d'Angoulême, married King John of England, and from them descended a long line of kings and queens. They were also dukes of the Plantagenet line, thus linking them not only with the Norman kings, but also with the older line of English rulers, Edward the Confessor, and others.

After the revocation of the Edict of Nantes there came to America, from France, two brothers, James and John Taliaferro, leaving behind them a brother who was a Catholic priest, through whom they saved a large part of their estates in Europe.

John Taliaferro married a Miss Hay, descended from Lord Hay. James married a Miss Nicholson, who also belonged to the English nobility. The two brothers purchased a large estate on the James River extending forty miles. John Taliaferro, the ancestor of the Virginia family of Taliaferros, settled near Williamsburg, on the James River. He called his beautiful estate "Powhatan." "Hay" is the name of another of the old Taliaferro manors. It is in King George County. Originally this estate covered many acres. The bricks for building the house were brought from England.

The situation is an ideal one, commanding a view of the surrounding country. This estate is still in possession of the Taliaferros.

John Taliaferro<sup>1</sup> and his wife left issue:

- I. John Taliaferro<sup>2</sup>, who inherited "Powhatan," but removed to Petersburg, founding that branch of the family. Married Miss Hannon.
- II. William Taliaferro<sup>2</sup>, who settled in King George County, on the Rappahannock, calling his seat "Hagley."
- III. Philip Taliaferro<sup>2</sup>, who settled in King and Queen County, calling his seat "Hockley." Married Lucy Baytops, granddaughter of King Carter.

II. John Taliaferro<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), son of John Taliaferro, emigrant, and Miss Hay, his wife. Married Miss Hannon. Issue:

- I. John Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>.
- II. Richard Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>, who emigrated to Georgia and gave his name to a county there. He returned late in life to Virginia, but left sons and daughters in Georgia. One of his sons, Richard, accompanied him to Virginia and married Miss Baldwin, of Augusta County, and settled in Amherst County. They were the parents of Judge Norborne M. Taliaferro, of General Court of Virginia.
- III. A son Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>, removed to Ohio, and has descendants living in Cincinnati.
- IV. A daughter Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>, who married Chancellor Wythe. In Bishop Meade's "Old Churches of Virginia," it is said that George Wythe of Williamsburg married for his second wife Elizabeth, daughter of Richard and Eliza Taliaferro, of "Powhatan." They left no issue.
- II. William Taliaferro<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), second son of John Taliaferro and Miss Hay, his wife. Settled in King George County, Va., on the Rappahannock, calling his seat "Hagley." Married ——— and had issue:

- I. John Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>, of "Hay," who married Betty Garnett, of Elmwood, in Essex County.
- II. James Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>. Married the widow of Sir John Peyton, of Middlesex County.
- III. Francis Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>, of Epsom, b. 1700; d. 1757. Married Elizabeth Hay.



- IV. Hay Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>.
  - V. Lawrence Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>.
  - VI. Baldwin Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>.
  - VII. Elizabeth Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>. Married Mr. Brooke.
  - VIII. Lucie Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>. Married Colonel Daingerfield.
- III. John Taliaferro<sup>3</sup> (William<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of William Taliaferro<sup>2</sup>. Married Betty Garnett, of Elmwood, in Essex County. They had issue:

- I. James Garnett Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Wilhelmina Wishart, a descendant of the martyr George Wishart, who was burned at the stake at St. Andrew's, Scotland, and daughter of the Rev. John Wishart, of Scotland, who was sent by the Church of England to preach in the colony of Virginia, his charge county.
- II. John Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>, of "Hagley," b. 1768; d. 1853. Married Lucie Thornton Hooe. John Taliaferro was member of Congress from 1801-1803, 1811-1813, 1824-1831, 1835-1843. In 1805 and 1821 he was Presidential Elector, and for three years before his death he was librarian of the treasury department at Washington.
- III. Lucie Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Thornton Alexander, a multi-millionaire, for whom Alexandria, Va., was named.
- IV. James Garnett Taliaferro<sup>4</sup> (John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of Oakland, King George County, eldest son of John Taliaferro, of "Hay," and his wife, Betty Garnett Taliaferro. Married Wilhelmina Wishart Taliaferro, and had issue:

- I. John Wishart Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, who was a surgeon on the *Bon Homme Richard*, under John Paul Jones, during the War of 1776. John Wishart married Sarah Brooke, daughter of Dr. Lawrence Brooke. John W. Taliaferro and his wife, Sarah, had two daughters—Elizabeth Taliaferro and Frances Taliaferro. Both married gentlemen of the name of White.
- II. William F. Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, second son of James Garnett Taliaferro and his wife, Wilhelmina Taliaferro. Married Mary Turberville, of Pocatone, on the Potomac. The children of William F. and Mary Turberville Taliaferro were:

- I. Kate Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>. Married Dr. Gustavus Rose, of Stafford County.
- II. Fenton Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>. Married Dr. Brown.
- III. Mary Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>. Married Dr. Murphy.
- IV. Gavin Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>, who now resides in Baltimore.
- III. James Garnett Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>, third son of James Garnett Taliaferro, of Oakland. Married, first, Mary Brent, of Richmond; second, Anne Seymour Taliaferro, his first cousin, daughter of John Taliaferro, of "Hagley."

Issue by second marriage:

- I. James Garnett Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>.
- II. William Hunter Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>.
- III. John Seymour Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>.
- IV. Betty Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>.
- V. Sally Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>.
- V. Lawrence Taliaferro<sup>5</sup> (James Garnett<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), fourth son of James Garnett Taliaferro, of Oakland, was a major in the United States Army. He married Eliza Dillon. No issue.
- V. Hay Taliaferro<sup>5</sup> (James Garnett<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), fifth son of James Garnett Taliaferro, of Oakland. Married three times: first, Helen Tyler, niece of President Tyler; second, Mary Brent, of Prince William Co., Va.; third, Rebecca Seymour Hooe, great-granddaughter of George Mason, of Gunston Hall, Fairfax County, Virginia. Rebecca Hooe Taliaferro left one daughter, Mary Austin, who married her first cousin, Lawrence Taliaferro.

The children of Mary Brent Taliaferro, second wife of James Garnett Taliaferro, were Sarah Taliaferro (who married Thomas Goody Carter) and Edmonia Taliaferro.

Gustavus T. Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>, seventh son.

Muscoee Garnett Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>, eighth son.

Charles E. Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>, ninth son.

Elizabeth Fenton Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>.

V. James Monroe Taliaferro<sup>5</sup> (James Garnett<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), tenth son of James Garnett Taliaferro, of Oakland, was a godson of President Monroe and a classmate of Robert E. Lee, at West Point. James Monroe Taliaferro was born at "Oakland," the family estate; was senator for a number of years.

He married, first, Valeria O'Brien, of Philadelphia, by whom he had one daughter, Emily, who married Mr. Brown, a banker, of Philadelphia. James Monr c Taliaferro married, second, Marion L. Grymes, great-granddaughter of George Mason Taliaferro, who married E. M. McDowell, of Fredericksburg, and their only child, Marion Mason, married Mr. P. V. Daniel, of Fredericksburg, Va., a member of the prominent family of that name. Another daughter, Martha Carter Stuart Taliaferro, married Mr. Mason Throckmorton. James Monroe Taliaferro married the third time Annie Coleman, of Stafford County.

A great poet has told us we can find sermons in stones and good in everything if we only have eyes to see and ears to hear. Indeed, it is from the simple things in life we learn the fundamental principles which guide us, with this object in view, of learning what the stones can teach us. The Society for Historical Research, in which Governor Warfield and the colonial and patriotic societies are so much interested, have appointed certain members of the society to visit all the old churchyards in the State and copy the epitaphs and inscriptions on the tombstones. What sermons in stones these inscriptions will be to the descendants! If the little stone which lies in our pathway can teach us so much, what wonderful lessons, thrilling stories and even history could be found inscribed on the numerous tombstones scattered all over our land, carved by the hand of some patient artist long since passed away and set up to perpetuate the memory of our dead. If some industrious person would collect and compile for our reading epitaphs from all parts of the world, what an epitome of history it would make; from the magnificent mausoleums of Frederick the Great, and the Emperor Napoleon down to the lowliest tombstones in the quiet country churchyard, bearing to one and all its simple lesson—"*Hic jacet in pace.*"

The following inscriptions were copied from the tombstones in Hickory Neck churchyard in James City County, Virginia:

Here lies interred the body of Col. John Taliaferro, of Snow Creek, in the County of Spottsylvania, who departed this life on the third day of May, anno Domini 1744, in the fifty-seventh year of his age.

He left issue two sons and three daughters.

Here lies the body of Lawrence Taliaferro, son of Col. John Taliaferro, of Snow Creek, in Spottsylvania County, who departed this life the first

day of May, 1748, in the twenty-seventh year of his age. He married Susannah Power, of James City County, and left issue by her one daughter.

John Taliaferro, of Hagley, born 1768, died 1853; second son of John and Betty Garnett Taliaferro; member of Congress from 1811 to 1843. Married Lucie Thornton Howe Taliaferro; had issue, first, John Seymour, who married Lucie Barbour.

John Seymour Taliaferro married Lucie Barbour, daughter of Hon. John Barbour, at one time Governor of Virginia, and also Minister to the Court of St. James. (See Chapter XII.) Issue:

- I. Barbour Taliaferro.
- II. Lucy Taliaferro.
- III. Anne Burd Taliaferro.
- IV. Cornelia Taliaferro.
- V. Sarah Lindsay Taliaferro. Married William S. Waters, of Baltimore. Issue:

- I. John Seymour Waters. Married Mary Frances Donaldson, of Baltimore.
- II. Lucie Maria Waters. Married Charles F. Penniman. Issue:

- I. Son Penniman.
- II. Anne Scymour Penniman. Married, first, Major John A. Burd, United States Army; second, James Garnett Taliaferro.

III. Francis Taliaferro<sup>3</sup> (William<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), of Epsom, b. 1700; d. 1757, third son of William Taliaferro, of "Hagley." Married Elizabeth Hay. Issue:

- I. Col. Lawrence Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>, of "Rose Hill." Married Sarah Dade. Issue:

- I. Francis Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>. Married Henrietta Thornton. Issue:

- I. John Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>. Married Mary Cason. Issue:

- I. Edward Francis Taliaferro<sup>7</sup>. Married Eliza Dickenson, Baltimore.

III. James Taliaferro<sup>3</sup> (William<sup>2</sup>, (John<sup>1</sup>), son of William Taliaferro, of "Hagley." Married Mrs. Peyton, widow of Sir John Peyton, of Middlesex Co., Va. Issue:

- I. James Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>, d. unmarried.
- II. Francis Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Miss Willis, of "The Retreat," in Orange County.

III. Bettie Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Henry Brooke, of Spottsylvania Co., and was the mother of Gov. Robert Brooke, of Virginia and of Judge Francis Taliaferro Brooke, of the Supreme Court of Appeals, of Virginia. (See Chapter XI, Brooke Family.)

IV. Francis Taliaferro<sup>4</sup> (James<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of William Taliaferro and Mrs. Peyton, his wife, b. 1700; d. 1757. Married Miss Willis, of "The Retreat," in Orange Co., Va. Issue:

I. Benjamin F. Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, of "The Mount," a physician. Married Louisa Carter.

II. John P. Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, of Orange Co., Va. Married Miss Mallory.

III. Charles L. Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, an Episcopal clergyman. Married Miss Armistead.

IV. Eliza Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, d. unmarried.

V. James P. Taliaferro<sup>5</sup> (Senator), belongs to this branch of the family.

5. John P. Taliaferro<sup>5</sup> (Francis<sup>4</sup>, James<sup>3</sup>, William<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Francis Taliaferro and Mary Willis, his wife. Married Miss Mallory. Issue:

I. John Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>.

II. James Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>.

III. Mary Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>. Married Samuel Maxwell, of Culpeper Co., Va.

IV. Daughter Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>.

V. Daughter Taliaferro<sup>6</sup>.

2. Philip Taliaferro<sup>2</sup> (John<sup>1</sup>), son of John Taliaferro, emigrant and Miss Hay, his wife, settled in King and Queen Co., Va., calling his seat "Hoekley." Married Luey Baytops, granddaughter of King Carter. Issue:

I. Dr. William Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>. Married two sisters, named Throekmorton.

II. James Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>. Married, first, Katy Bootlee; second, Mrs. Thornton.

III. Rev. Philip Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>, of the Baptist Church. Married, first, Miss Oliver; second, Elizabeth Premont.

IV. Richard Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>, of "Hoekley." Married Betsy Wedburn.

V. Thomas Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>. Married Sarah Oliver.

- VI. George Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>. Married Louisa Dixon, of Matthews County.
- VII. Elizabeth Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>. Married Col. Lyne Shackelford.
- VIII. Mary Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>. Married, second, Matthew Kemp.
- III. Dr. William Taliaferro<sup>3</sup> (Philip<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), eldest son of Philip and Lucy Baytops Taliaferro. Married, first, Miss Throckmorton; second, Throckmorton. Issue:
  - I. Warner Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married, first, Fanny Boothe; second, Leah Seddon, of Fredericksburg.
  - II. Alexander Galt Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Agnes Marshall. (Issue Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.)
  - III. Dr. William Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>.
  - IV. Philip Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>.

#### ANCESTORS OF THE MISSES THROCKMORTON— SMITHS OF SHOOTER'S HILL.

Augustine Smith, of Shooter's Hill, b. June 16, 1689; d. ——. Married Sarah, daughter of Mr. Carver, b. April 25, 1694; d. March 12, 1726. Issue:

- I. Mary Smith, b. July 30, 1713; d. June 8, 1720.
  - II. John Smith, b. Nov. 13, 1715; d. ——. Married Mary Jaquelin, Nov. 17, 1737.
  - III. Sarah Smith, b. Sept. 8, 1717; d. ——. Married, first (Nov. 6, 1735), Mordecai Cooke, d. Jan. 1737; second, Major Robert Throckmorton.
  - IV. Mildred Smith, b. Sept. 22, 1719; d. ——. Married John Willis, Jan. 26, 1743.
  - V. Elizabeth Smith, b. May 8, 1722; d. ——. Married, first, Philip Aylett, March 16, 1749; second, Christopher Todd, of Toddsburg.
  - VI. Ann Smith, b. Feb. 10, 1724; d. June 2, 1724.
  - VII. Susannah Smith, b. April 27, 1725; d. ——. Married (about 1745) Col. William Langbourne.
  - VIII. Jane Smith, b. March 6, 1726; d. March 29, 1732.
- The third of the above, Sarah Smith, b. September 8, 1717, married, first, Mordecai Cooke, November 6, 1735. He was of Ware Parish, Gloucester Co., Va. Issue:

- I. Frances Mordecai Cooke, b. about 1737. Married Gabriel Throckmorton.



Major Robert Throckmorton, of Ware Parish, Gloucester Co., Va., married, first (August 14, 1735), Mary, daughter of John Lewis, also of Ware Parish; second, Sarah Smith, widow of Mordecai Cooke, of Ware Parish. Issue:

- I. Philip Throckmorton, of Church Hill, Gloucester Co., Va. Married Mary Langbourne, daughter of Col. William Langbourne and Susannah Smith, first cousin.

The seventh child, Susannah Smith, b. April 27, 1725, married Col. William Langbourne, b. 1723; was son of Robert Langbourne, of Fetter Lake, London, England, and Mary Dandridge, sister of Col. William Dandridge. Issue:

- I. William Langbourne, 6th Va., April 27, 1777.

By an act of October 6, 1786, it was "Resolved that whereas William Langbourne had served from the commencement of the war in the Army of the United States with equal disinterestedness and reputation, that a brevet commission as Lieutenant Colonel be given him."

He was aid-de-camp of Gen'l Lafayette, whom he visited at his home in "La Grange," in France, after the war. Married Miss Claiborne, of King William Co., Va., and his shattered tombstone on the Pamunkey marks his death in 1814. He left an only son, William, who died s. p. at the age of twenty-two, when the name Langbourne became extinct in Virginia.

Mary, second child of Col. William Langbourne and Susannah Smith, of Shooter's Hill, married Philip Throckmorton, of Church Hill, Gloucester Co., Va., son of Robert Throckmorton, of Ware Parish, Gloucester Co., and Sarah Smith, of Shooter's Hill.

Mary Langbourne and Philip Throckmorton had issue:

- I. A daughter. Married Dr. William Taliaferro.
- II. Another daughter. Married Dr. William Taliaferro. Ancestors of Susan Taliaferro, who married Judge Beverly R. Wellford.
- III. Another daughter. Married Judge W. T. Jones, Major Thomas S. Taliaferro and Gen'l William Booth Taliaferro.

IV. Warner Taliaferro<sup>4</sup> (William<sup>3</sup>, Philip<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), oldest son of Dr. William Taliaferro and Miss Throckmorton, his wife. Married, first, Fanny Boothe; second, Leah Seddon, of Fredericksburg, Va.

Issue by first marriage:

- I. William B. Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, Major General Confederate States Army. Married Sallie Vivison Lyons. (The record above says General William Boothe Taliaferro married a Miss Throckmorton; she may have been a second wife.)
  - II. Philip A. Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, M. D. Married Susan Byrd McCandlish, great-granddaughter of William Byrd, of Westover, on the James River.
  - III. Thomas Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>. Married Hattie Lee, daughter of Cassius Lee.
  - IV. Warner T. Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>. Married, first, Martha Paul; second, Fanny Hardy.
  - V. Edwin Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, Major Confederate States Army. Married Bland Tucker.
  - VI. Seddon Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, son of Warner Taliaferro and Miss Leah Seddon, second wife.
  - VII. Susan Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>. Married Judge Beverly R. Wellford, Richmond, Va.
3. James Taliaferro<sup>3</sup> (Philip<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Philip Taliaferro and Lucy Baytops, his wife. Married, first, Katy Boothe; second, Mrs. Thornton. Issue:
- I. Thomas B. Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary Sinclair, of Shabby Hall, now Gherwood on the Ware River.
  - III. Rev. Philip Taliaferro<sup>3</sup> (Philip<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Philip and Lucie Baytops Taliaferro; he was a Baptist minister. Married, first, Miss Oliver. Issue:
- I. James Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>.
  - II. Benjamin Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>.
  - III. Richard Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>.
  - III. Richard Taliaferro<sup>3</sup> (Philip<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Philip and Lucie Baytops Taliaferro, of "Hockley." Married Betsy Wedderburn. Issue:
- I. John Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>, of Toddsburg.
  - II. Andrew Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>, of King and Queen Co., Va.
  - III. Thomas Taliaferro<sup>3</sup> (Philip<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>), son of Philip and Lucie Baytops Taliaferro. Married Sally Oliver. Had issue:
- I. William Lewis Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>.

- II. Thomas Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>.
- III. Martha Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Mr. Fox.
- IV. Gabriella Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Colonel Davis, of King and Queen Co., Va.
- V. Lewis Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Catherine Doswell, of Hanover Co., Va. Issue:
- I. Lewis Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>, of Augusta Co.
- II. Susan Taliaferro<sup>5</sup>. Married Mr. Pendell, of Richmond, Va.

Zachary Taliaferro<sup>3</sup>, grandson of the emigrant, Robert Taliaferro, settled in Amherst Co., Va. Had issue:

- I. Benjamin Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>, soldier in the Revolution 1776. Married, first, Martha Merriwether; second Miss Cox.
- II. Zachary Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>, son of Zachary Taliaferro, Jr., removed to Kentucky.
- III. Sarah Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Daniel Harvie.
- IV. Richard Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>.
- V. Warner Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Mary M. Gilmer.
- VI. Burton Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married, first, Sarah Gilmer; second, Miss Carter.
- VII. Nancy Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Thompson Watkins.
- VIII. Frances Taliaferro<sup>4</sup>. Married Moses Penn.

#### JOHN BYRD.

John Byrd, of London, married Grace, daughter of Thomas Stegg, of London, who lived at various times in London and Virginia, and who was a member of the House of Burgesses for Charles City County, Va., and speaker in 1642-43, and was appointed by Parliament one of the commissioners to reduce Virginia, was lost at sea in 1651 while in an English frigate on his way to the Colony. (Strausburg Abstract.)

John and Grace (Stegg) Byrd had issue (besides other children, amongst whom were Thomas, Elizabeth, Sarah, Mary and Grace), a son, Col. William Byrd, b. 1652; d. December 4, 1704. He came to Virginia about 1674 to take possession of a large estate left him by his uncle, Thomas Stegg (who died unmarried), and first settled at "Belvidere," Henrico County, Va., within the present limits of Richmond, where there is a street bearing the name of

his residence and another of his family, a county of which he was long a justice and officer of militia and which he represented in the House of Burgesses in 1679, 1680, 1682 (Henrico records), and in the latter years was appointed member of the Council (Council Journal). He was appointed auditor general in 1687.

In April, 1679, the Assembly granted him a tract of land beginning at the south side of James River a mile and a half below the Falls, and extending up five miles and back one mile (all of which he accomplishes and presumes to be his own land), on condition that he should seat on said lands fifty armed men and other tithables not exceeding two hundred and fifty. (Hening, II, p. 448.) Col. Byrd and his descendants owned all the land here described as is shown by a volume of his land titles now in the possession of the Virginia Historical Society, and he also owned large landed estates elsewhere in Virginia and North Carolina. In 1688 he purchased and moved to "Westover," Charles City County. He married Maria, daughter of Warham Horsmander, of Charles City County, and formerly of Purleigh, Essex, England, to which he returned after the restoration, after having been a Burgess for Charles City County, 1657-58, and elected to the council during the session. Col. William Byrd is buried at "Westover," where his tomb remains and bears the following inscription:

The Byrd Family.

Hic Recondentur Cineres Galicomi

Byrd, Armigen Regii.

Hugus Provincial Quaestoris, Qui Hanc Vitam

Cum Eternitate Commutavit 4th Die

December, 1704, Post Quam Vixisset,

52 Annis.

His wife's tomb is also at "Westover":

Here Lyeth the Body of

MARY BYRD,

Late wife of William Byrd, Esq.,

and

Daughter of Warham Horsmander, Esq.,

Who died the Ninth Day of November, 1699

In the 47th year of Her Age.

Col. William Byrd and Mary (Horsmander) Byrd had issue: First, William (of whom hereafter); second, a son; third, Ursula, married Robert Beverly, of "Beverly Park," King and Queen County, Va. (the historian), and died 1699; fourth, Susan, married John Brayne, merchant, of London; fifth, a daughter.

Col. William Byrd, the eldest son, lived at "Westover," and was b. March 15, 1674; d. August 26, 1744; was county lieutenant of Henrico County and Charles City, 1715; a member of House of Burgesses, 1702; appointed receiver-general and member of the Council, 1705 (Council Journal); became president of that body and was sent three times to England as agent of the colony. Col. Byrd was a man of great sagacity and enterprise, and also besides collecting the largest private library in America (3,507 volumes), made several interesting and valuable contributions to literature which have been published under the title of "Westover Manuscripts." He married, first (in 1704), Lucy, daughter of Col. Daniel Parke, Jr. (who was a member of the Virginia Council, distinguished at Blenheim, and was sent with the first news of the victory to England, receiving as services the office of Governor of the Leeward Islands, where he was killed in a riot). The tomb of Col. William Byrd is at "Westover," bearing his arms and the following inscription:

Here lyeth the Hon. William Byrd, Esq.

Being born to one of the amplest fortunes in this country, he was sent early to England for his education, where, under the care and instruction of Sir Robert Southwell, and ever favored with his particular instruction, he made a happy proficiency in polite and various learning; by the means of the same noble friend, he was introduced to the acquaintance of many of the first persons of the age for knowledge, wit, virtue, birth or high station, and particularly contracted a most close and bosom friendship with the learned and illustrious Charles Boyle, Earl of Obery. He was called to the bar in the middle temple, studied for some time in the lower countries, visited the court of France, and was chosen Fellow of the Royal Society. Thus eminently fitted for the service and ornament of his country, he was made Receiver-General of his Majesty's revenues here, was thrice appointed public agent to the court and ministry of England, and being thirty-seven years a member, at last became President of the council of this colony. To all this was added a great elegance of taste and life, the well-bred gentleman and polite companion, the splendid economist and proudest father of a family with the constant enemy of all exorbitant power and hearty friend to the liberties of his country. Nat. March 28, 1674. Mort. August 26, 1744, aetat 70.

Issue by first marriage: First, Evelyn, b. July 16, 1707; d. unmarried, November 13, 1737. (Her portrait, a lovely face, is preserved.) Second, Parke, b. September 6, 1709; d. June 3, 1710; third, Phillips Williams, b. February 23; d. December 9, 1712; fourth, Wilhelmina, b. November 6, 1715, married Thomas Chamberlayne of King William County.

Issue by second marriage: Fifth, Ann, b. in London, February 5, 1725; d. September 11, 1757, married (in 1742) Charles Carter, of "Hampstead," afterwards of "Cleve"; sixth, Maria, b. January 6, 1727, d. November 29, 1744, married Landon Carter, of "Sabine Hall"; seventh, Jane, b. October 13, 1729, married John Page, of "North End"; eighth, Col. William, b. —; d. January 1, 1777, of "Westover"; was for several years a member of the House of Burgesses from Lunenburg County, and was appointed to the council in 1754 (Journal); was commissioned a colonel of the Second Virginia Regiment in 1758, and was in active service on the western frontier during the French and Indian War. He was a liberal supporter of the turf, owning some of the most celebrated horses of that day in Virginia, and is stated to have expended much of the great estate left him by his father. He married, first, Elizabeth Hill, daughter of John Carter, of "Corotoman," and "Shirley," and second, Mary, daughter of Charles Willing, of Philadelphia, Pa. He had children by both wives.

In *Virginia Gazette*, of March 28, 1771, is the following marriage notice:

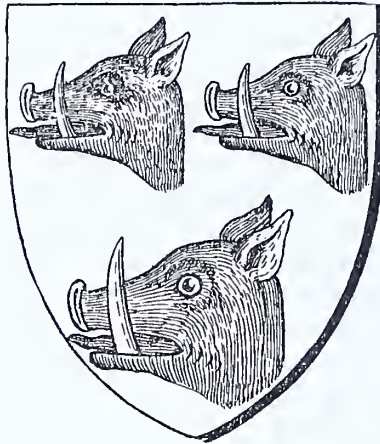
MARRIED.—James Parke Farley, Esq., to Miss Betty Byrd, eldest daughter of the Hon. William Byrd, Esq.

The Byrds are distinctly descended from Edward III, King of England, who had: John Duke of Lancaster, who had Joan, married Ralph, Earl of Westmoreland, and had: Sir Edward Lord Bergavenny, of Ulecombe, who had: Ursula, married Sir Worsham St. Ledger, and had: Sir Worsham St. Ledger, of Ulecombe, who had: Ursula, married Rev. Daniel Horsmander, and had: Worsham Horsmander, of Ulecombe, who had: Maria, married Col. William Byrd, of "Westover."—"Americans of Royal Descent"—Browning.



## CHAPTER XXII

## THE BARTON FAMILY.



THE BARTON ARMS.

Arms—Argent, three boars' heads. Couped gules for Barton of Barton.

“How lovely are the messengers who bring in the gospel of peace!” This exquisite versicle spoken so many thousands of years ago by the Psalmist is in one sense strangely, and in the way of prophecy, peculiarly applicable to the early history of America, for with the colonist came the priest and the preacher. We often speak of America as born grown up; or that, like Venus, she sprang beautifully adolescent from the foam of the sea. Yes, America was born grown up, but in no sense is this maturity more pronounced than in the deep and far-reaching sense of Christianity. At the time of the colonization of America Christianity had, we may say, reached a climax. Noble men and women were willing not only for a doctrine of their religion, but even for a mere dogma, the wearing or not wearing of a vestment, a black hat or a grey—to renounce forever home and country and friends, and take refuge in a savage-haunted wilderness, where they might worship

God according to their own consciences. But what a magnificent parentage of conviction, such unswerving devotion to principle! No wonder we were born grown up. One of the most noted of the Protestant divines of the eighteenth century was Rev. Thomas Barton, b. in 1730; d. in 1780, and who was sent to America by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel of Foreign Parts.

Rev. Thomas Barton was of English parentage. His ancestors were royalists and churchmen who, taking side with King Charles I in the rebellion, lost their estates for his cause. At the restoration of King Charles II, having received large grants of land in Ireland they settled in Mongan County.

Rev. Thomas Barton was graduated from the University of Dublin and later took orders in the Church of England and was subsequently sent to the Colony of America by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts.

Rev. Mr. Barton settled first in Philadelphia, and in 1758 was appointed chaplain in the expedition against Fort Duquesne. During this expedition Mr. Barton became the friend and intimate associate of the then Col. George Washington, Col. Hugh Mercer and Col. Boyd. From 1759 to 1777 Rev. Thomas Barton was rector of St. James, the Episcopal church at Lancaster, Pa. At the outbreak of the Revolution Rev. Mr. Barton, being a Tory in principle and unwilling to renounce the vows of allegiance to the King he had made at his ordination, resigned his rectorship, left Lancaster and went to New York, then in possession of the English.

Rev. Thomas Barton married (in 1753) Esther Rittenhouse, daughter of Matthias and sister of David Rittenhouse, the great American astronomer. In the "Biography of David Rittenhouse" we read:

In 1751 Rev. Thomas Barton, an alumnus of Trinity College, Dublin, who afterwards married the sister of Rittenhouse, became a professor in the University of Pennsylvania. Making the acquaintance of the young philosopher and clockmaker, they became warm friends.

Barton supplied him with books, from which he obtained a knowledge of the Latin and Greek languages, and two years later brought him from Europe a number of scientific works. Mr. Barton was also instrumental in calling the attention of learned men to the young philosopher, among whom were Dr. William Smith, provost of the university; John Lukens, Surveyor General, and Richard Peters, Provincial Secretary.

Esther Rittenhouse Barton, born 1737, died 1774, was a daughter of Matthias Rittenhouse, born 1702, who married Elizabeth Williams, of Wales, in 1727, and great-granddaughter of William Rittenhouse, who emigrated to America from Holland in 1688, and in 1690 established at Germantown, on the Wissahiekon Creek, the first paper mill built in America, after the death of his first wife, Esther Rittenhouse.

Mr. Barton married a second time, Mrs. Lee Normandie, whose maiden name was Braid, of New York City. Rev. Thomas Barton died in New York City on May 25, 1780, being only 50 years old, and was interred in the chancel of St. George's Chapel. The *Rivington's Royal Gazette* of May 30, 1780, contains a long obituary notice of him, in which it speaks of the love and devotion of his parishioners, who greatly respected him, and of his unshaken loyalty and attachment to the Constitution, which drew upon him the resentment of the rebels and exposed him to many hardships. After St. George's Church was destroyed by fire the bones of Rev. Thomas Barton were moved to the chancel of the new St. George's Church, New York.

The children of Rev. Thomas and Esther Rittenhouse Barton were:

- I. William Barton<sup>2</sup>.
- II. Esther Barton<sup>2</sup>.
- III. Benjamin Barton<sup>2</sup>.
- IV. Matthias Barton<sup>2</sup>.
- V. David Barton<sup>2</sup>.
- VI. Thomas Barton<sup>2</sup>.
- VII. Juliana Barton<sup>2</sup>.
- VIII. Richard Peter Barton<sup>2</sup>.

This last, the youngest child of Rev. Thomas and Esther Barton, Rittenhouse Barton, while still a young man moved to Virginia and settled in the Valley about six miles south of Winchester. Mr. Barton<sup>2</sup> married Miss Walker, daughter of Dr. Walker, of Kingston in Dinwiddie County, Virginia. The children of Richard Peters and Martha Walker Barton were:

- I. Richard Barton<sup>3</sup>.
- II. Robert Barton<sup>3</sup>.
- III. David Barton<sup>3</sup>.

Martha Walker Barton was the daughter of Dr. Robert Walker, of Kingston, Dinwiddie County, who married (in 1760) Elizabeth Stark, daughter of Capt. William Stark, who married (in 1727) Mary Bolling, eldest child of Col. Robert Bolling, Jr., son of Col. Robert Bolling, of Chellowe.

David Walker Barton<sup>4</sup>, son of Richard Peters<sup>2</sup> and Mary Walker Barton, was b. at Springdale the family estate of his father, in 1801. Mr. Barton was a graduate of Yale and was a scholar of no mean attainments. He was a forcible writer and contributed largely to the newspapers and literary periodicals of his day. Mr. Barton was a brilliant and successful lawyer. His professional life was spent at Winchester, Va., where he acquired a large fortune, which was lost during the Civil War. David Walker Barton<sup>2</sup> married (December 18, 1828) Miss Frances L. A. M. Jones, b. at "Vauchuse," the plantation of her father near Winchester, Va., October 15, 1808. Frances L. A. M. Jones was the daughter of William Strother Jones and the granddaughter of Col. Strother Jones of the continental army and great-granddaughter of Gabriel Jones known as the Valley lawyer, he being the first lawyer who practiced law in the Valley of Virginia. The children of David Walker Barton and his wife, Frances L. A. M. Jones, were:

- I. Lieut. William Strother Barton<sup>4</sup>, educated at the Episcopal High School, Alexandria, Va.; wounded at battle of Mine Run; d. at Springdale from effects of wounds.
- II. Charles Marshall Barton<sup>4</sup>, killed in Civil War, 1861.
- III. David Rittenhouse Barton<sup>4</sup>, killed at the battle of Fredericksburg, 1862.
- IV. Jane Cray Barton<sup>4</sup>, b. at "Vauchuse." Married Rev. C. H. Shield, D. D., of Staunton, Va. Issue:
  - I. Charles H. Shield<sup>5</sup>.
- V. Ann Maria Barton<sup>4</sup>, eldest daughter of David W. Barton. Married (Aug. 24, 1848) Col. Thomas Marshall, grandson of Chief Justice Marshall. Colonel Marshall was b. at Oakhill, Fauquier County, Virginia, Jan. 17, 1836; d. in battle Nov. 12, 1864. (Descendants Volume I, Chapters VI and VII.)
- VI. Martha Walker Barton<sup>4</sup>, b. at "Vauchuse," near Winchester, Va. Married (in 1856) D. J. M. Baldwin. Issue:
  - I. Maria Baldwin<sup>5</sup>.
  - II. Stewart Baldwin<sup>5</sup>.
- VII. Capt. Robert T. Barton<sup>4</sup>, of Winchester, Va., served in the Civil War in the Rockbridge Battery. At the close of the war Mr. Barton studied law and was elected a

member of the Virginia Legislature and served as chairman of the Committee on Courts of Justice. Mr. Barton is the author of Barton's "Law Praetice" and of Barton's "Chancery Praetice." These law books are standard authorities in Virginia. Mr. Barton married, first (Feb. 19, 1868), Miss Kate K. Knight; second, Miss Baker, of Winchester, June, 1890. Their children are:

- I. Robert T. Barton<sup>6</sup>, Jr.
- II. Gertrude Barton<sup>6</sup>.
- VIII. Randolph Barton<sup>4</sup>, b. at Springdale, was reared by his stepmother, Ann Cary Randolph. His course as a student at the Virginia Military Institute was interrupted by the breaking out of the Civil War, yet he was afterward granted a diploma. Mr. Barton entered the Confederate Army at the age of seventeen as sergeant major of the Thirty-third Virginia Infantry, Stonewall Brigade.

Captain Barton was wounded in the first battle of Manassas, was taken prisoner at the battle of Kernstown and confined in Fort Delaware until 1862. Mr. Barton on his release was appointed on the staff of Gen. Elisha Frank Paxton, of the Stonewall Brigade, with the rank of captain and was made assistant adjutant general. Captain Barton was severely wounded at the battle of Chancellorsville, in 1863, and was at the side of his commander, Gen. E. F. Paxton, when he fell mortally wounded at Chancellorsville and caught the dying hero in his arms. At the close of the Civil War Mr. Barton settled in Baltimore and began the study of law, of which he has made a pronounced success. The firm of Barton & Wilmer is widely known and respected.

Mr. Barton married Miss Agnes Kirkland, daughter of Mr. R. R. Kirkland, formerly member of the well-known firm of Kirkland, Chase & Co., of Baltimore. Mr. and Mrs. Randolph Barton, Sr., reside at "Vaueluse," Baltimore County. Their children are:

- I. Robert K. Barton<sup>5</sup>.
- II. Randolph Barton<sup>5</sup>, Jr. Married Miss Eleanor Morrison.
- III. Charles Marshall Barton<sup>5</sup>, of Wilmington. Married Miss Margretta Ferraby.
- IV. Agnes Barton<sup>6</sup>.

- V. Bolling Barton<sup>5</sup>.
- VI. Carlyle Barton<sup>5</sup>.
- VII. Katherine Barton<sup>5</sup>.
- VIII. David Barton<sup>5</sup>.
- IX. Alexander Barton<sup>5</sup>.

IX. Dr. Bolling Barton, son of David Walker Barton, married (in 1872) Miss Ellen J. Gibson, daughter of Dr. Gibson, of Newport, R. I. Mrs. Barton died in 1879 at the age of sixteen, Dr. Barton being then a student of the Virginia Military Institute. With a company of youths of his own age, in opposition to the wishes of the professors, they ran down, singing as they went, into the terrible and bloody battle of the Seven Days' fight before Richmond. More than one of these youths met the deaths of heroes. At the close of the war Dr. Barton went to Switzerland to study, and took his medical degree at Paris, France. Dr. Bolling Barton has been for years professor of botany and lecturer at the Johns Hopkins University. Dr. Barton's great uncle, Dr. Barton, son of Rev. Thomas Barton, was the first professor of botany in this country. Among the descendants of Rev. Thomas Barton may be mentioned: H. Hamilton, Mrs. William West of Philadelphia, Mr. Marshall Duer, Miss Susie Holt, Miss Madge Holt, Mr. Barton Marshall, Miss Helen Marshall, Mr. Adgate Duer, Mr. Douglas Duer, Mr. Bolling Barton, Mrs. Charles Holt of New York, Miss Gertrude Barton of Winchester, Mr. Robert S. Barton, Jr.



## CHAPTER XXIII

## THE FISHER HISTORY

The following extracts are taken from an old ancestor's journal, commencing with a voyage from London, May, 1750, for Yorktown in Virginia, and ending in August, 1755, on his return from Philadelphia on horseback for Williamsburg, Virginia:

Should this chance to come to your hands, it will, I presume, afford neither you nor good Mrs. Mosley any extraordinary satisfaction. I long ballanced with myself whether I should ever write a journal at all. It not being in my power if I wrote truly, to entertain you with any other than doleful instances of Anxiety, Disappointments, Misery, and Repentance.

But being no stranger to your Equanim and good sense, inflicting at the same time; That the consideration of the short duration of the accutist misions in this Life, must be some consolation to reasonable People, I determined on presenting you with a sketch of some of our sufferings.

Not that I have any great claim or Title to compassion: or reason to expect uneasy sensations in any of my English Friends for any injury I have endured; for I obstinately persisted in acting against all their sentiments and kind expostulations, and whatever Ills have happened are mainly the result of my own Vain conduct; and as to myself espeecially, I must entirely aequiesce that Providence is Just.

As I have the utmost reason to believe—may shed a tender Tear for my poor Wife and Family (who though involved in my Calamities, are innocent of the occasion) I ought perhaps to desist; for what right have I to create concern or uneasiness in him, or indeed, in the Beast [Breast] of any Friend: Yet fortified in my idea of her and your generous and extensive consideration, I will proceed in Confidence, that she as well as you can pardon Errors, you are incapable of committing. I shall I believe trouble you with much scribbling, and without method, yet upon the whole I hope to express myself so, as to make our melancholy adventure Intelligible; endeavouring to maintain a sincere attachment to Truth by expressing upon all occasions by own wrong headedness with the same vivacity and freedom as I shall remark or point out the mistakes or meannesses of those People:

When Persons in very needy or depressed circumstances are guilty of falsehood, Fraud, Injustice, or other meannesses, One may in some measure, account for, and in part excuse them; But when People of Affluence or large Fortunes, (superior one would think to all temptation), stoops to base and unworthy actions, the most generous and candid minds can hardly forbear writing their inward disdain in severe censures.

If I have not heretofore fully informed you of the Chief motives of this my undertaking you will now I trust indulge my writing it.

Being by the secret contrivance of two pretended "though false friends" stript of my employ, It conduced greatly to augment my opinion of the World's Treachery, and as I had been brought up to no particular trade or occupation, I considered the savings of our united Industry and Frugality, for more than Twenty years, might be soon wasted in a Land abounding in luxurious Temptations. I moreover reflected that Trade in general was less intricate (not requiring so much Art or Skill) in Virginia than in England; commodities being usually rated according to the Invoices at so much per cent. Besides, as I fancy you will recollect, contrary to your and the opinion of all my Friends, I possessed with the fond Idea That People here were more Innocent, Just, and Good, than on your side of the water: Unhappily the most vehemently infected with those strange Notions, I incessantly teased my poor reluctant wife to comply with my desires: and after several years struggling and controverting about this unhappy affair, I at length succeeded; what I believe did not a little contribute to vanquish my wife's prejudices (as I called them) was my assurance that her children would be removed from the infinite temptations, false Pleasures, Snares and Delusions, which every where abounded in Brittain, to a Land of Sober temperate regular Enjoyments, where Industry, Probity, and the Moral Virtues were only encouraged, cherished or regarded.

Alas! what shame and confusion must arise, in being compelled to own the falacy and absurdity of all these charming Dreams. But however what determined the dispute in my favour, was an old acquaintance of mine, who had just married much as he thought beneath himself, joining with me in support of my argument.

His pride could not bear the thoughts of the world reproaching him with this marriage, concluding he could no way so well conceal his indiscretion as by going with me to America, on which he was so very intent;—That being down at Gloucester some time before our setting out, and hearing that I was about to depart without him, he wrote me a most beseeching letter that I would wait the conclusion of his affairs. This ardour in Him for the Voyage, with the consideration of having a Female companion on Board, quite subdued my wife's Scruples, inducing her also to submit to the Voyage. Believing now I had no more to do than to obtain some worthy recommendation, I applied myself to Mr. Dowdswell and you. Mr. Dowdswell gained me several Interviews with Mr. Alderman Bethel, and I had all the reason in the world to conclude they were both sincere in their intentions of serving me. Mr. Bethel at my first seeing him informed me he had already mentioned my Case to one Mr. Hanbury, an Eminent Virginia Merchant of his acquaintance who was he said to do me all the service in His power, and desired I would call upon him; but as to either of the Mr. Nelsons whom I, so anxiously desired to be recommended to, He (Mr. Hanbury) had no kind of dealings with them: however, I was told his acquaintance in the Country was otherwise very large and extensive, and with People of the First Rank and Fashion there. but so unfortunately

infatuated was I, That I excused myself from waiting on Mr. Hanbury, acquainting Mr. Bethel that no other recommendation would content me, than the two Mr. Nelsons. My reason for this unhappy prejudice was, That I had in early Days lived in York, and had been acquainted with Old Mr. Nelson the Father of these Gentlemen. Mr. Bethel to do all that I could reasonably expect from him assured me he would endeavor to gratify my desire in finding out a Person who had some influence or acquaintance with the Mr. Nelsons, and accordingly in a few days he let me know he had met with such an One. He gave me also to understand, that my confining him thus to particular Persons had obliged him to make use of One with whom he was not at all acquainted, Yet he did not doubt of his procuring for me with those Gentlemen, Favour, continuance and Practition, which was all I craved, and indeed all I was ambitious of. The Person's name who thus undertook to recommend me was Hunt, a Virginia merchant also, tho' not so considerable as Mr. Hanbury. My Friend (Mr. Kiddle) procured me another kind Letter from Mr. Sydenham, another merchant, to his Father in law in Virginia (Mr. Jordan) which Letter given to me unsealed would I believe have been very serviceable to me, had I not on our arrival in Virginia taken it out to seal and laid it upon a shelf in the State Room where mine got at it and unhappily utterly defaced it.

The latter end of March, hearing that the Ship *Berry*, Capn. Beleher Master, was fitting out for Virginia, I went and viewed its conveniences, and then apply'd to the Captain for a Passage for my Family, and altho' besides paying for our Passage I offered him Twenty Guineas for the sole use of The Cabin, he hesitated about the matter pretending he had not conveniences for a Family, and that his Cabin was partly engaged. My Friend Mr. Sydenham observing the oddity of the Captain's behaviour, advised me to go directly to Alderman Whittaker who he said had chartered the Ship. I did so; and Whittaker at once assured me, the Cabin was wholly unengaged and that if he liked my proposal, he would treat with me for it. But when I intimated my inclination to agree with him for our passage only, and that tho' I would gladly engage the Cabin of him, Yet I should like to treat with the Captain about the Price, as I was desirous of pleasing a man I should be so long with, imagining it also to be a perquisite of his own. Herein the Alderman assured me I was mistaken, That the Captain was a mere Cypher, and could engage for nothing without his orders, and he himself was the only Person I could talk with to any purpose: where upon I made him the same offer for the Cabin I had done to the Captain,—viz—Twenty Guineas. He paused a little and then told me my offer was not amiss, and if I would call the next Day he would give me a positive answer. When I came at the time appointed, he assured me the affair was concluded: That I should have the Cabin entire and as I paid so well for it, he would take care my family should have the best of Treatment on Board. In paying Mr. Whittaker for our Passage (April 12th:) I freely opened to him that a week's time beyond the 27th: (the utmost time he had prescribed for the ship's

sailing) would be very valuable to me, as it would afford me an opportunity of selling off my goods etc. to greater advantage. But I soon perceived distress was a wrong argument to use with him, for he immediately called his Clerk to witness, that if I was not on Board by the time he had set, the money I had paid should be forfeited: May — he said I ought to pay the expense of the ship from the 23rd, for if I was on board that Day, the Ship would infallibly sail the Day after. This could admit of no reply; I concluded myself highly favoured, not supposing it possible that a Gentleman of so opulent a Fortune and an Alderman of London could be guilty of a calm and deliberate untruth.

Therefore I did not fail bringing my Family and Goods on Board on the morning of the 27th. But what was my disappointment and Vexation when on entering the Ship we found not the least preparation of a Vessel for the sea. Every kind of thing in litter and disorder. The Cabin in the utmost filth and nastiness. No cradels or Hammoeks for our Beds, or other conveniency for Lying down to Rest: My poor wife in the utmost agony, bitterly exclaiming that here was a true specimen of the misery she must expect to endure in this wretched undertaking. When I mentioned to the Mate the assurance Alderman Whitaker had given of the Ship's sailing, the day after I came on board, he with a peculiar sneer only said when you have known the Alderman longer, you will know him better. He is now seeking after Freight, and you will be well off if you sail this month. I had disposed of my House, and had now no other remedy but Patience. One day upon chance talking with our Captain a Person came up to Him with these words: Pray Captain Beleher, do you know any thing of the character of One Fisher, who goes Passenger with you to Virginia! Beleher knew I heard the question—replied—this is the man. This person proved to be Mr. Hunt, whom as yet I had never seen; but He and I seemed confounded, at I presume the absurdity of his behaviour, in applying to such a Fellow as Beleher, an utter stranger to me for a character, after having received one from such a man as Mr. Bethel. However, recovering himself, he accosted me civilly enough, but could find nothing more to say, than that his name was Hunt and the Person, who at Mr. Bethel's request had favored me with two Recommendatory letters to the Mess. Nelsons, nor had I any other reply for him than that I was his most humble Servant, and had both his Letters in my Pocket.

After standing some time silent, we separated with, "Your humble servant," and "Your humble servant," as silly as our meeting.

This incident, foolish as it is, a little mortified me, and if I do not mistake, I mentioned the same to you, when I took my leave, but never uttered the least syllable to Mr. Bethel; it being I thought too late: besides—I fancied it carried the appearance of meanness to betray any jealousy or suspicion. The letter you offered in my favor from Mr. Waller, and another in effect from Mr. John Walthoe, tho' subscribed by his nephews to their Brother Mr. Nath. Walthoe Clerk of the Council for this Colony, you will perceive the importance of hereafter.

It was the 15th of May 1750 in the afternoon, before we as the sailors term it broke ground, hove out, and with the Tide drove down the Black-wall where we came to an Anchor, and loitered away the next day. On the 17th, we moved again, but did not reach Gravesend till the Day after, when we came again to Anchor about nine in the morning. About Ten, the Captain and one Pincell a young Student in Physic of Ireland tho' he had been in France came on Board. On Saturday May 19th, about Eleven o'clock in the morning, just as we were getting under said a Gentleman came on Board and rushing a little hasty into the Cabin demanded to speak with one Mr. Sweeney, who he said was a Passenger in this Ship. We assured him, as we could very truly, that we had never seen or heard of any such Person and that, we were pretty certain no such was then in our Ship. The Gentleman not believing us affirmed he was sure Mr. Sweeney had taken his passage in that Vessel, and that the Canary Birds in the Cabin, pointing to some Cages of them which hung up there, did belong to the said Mr. Sweeney. This the Captain, who was also questioned, steadfastly denied; adding moreover that Mr. Sweeney was no passenger of his; was not on board his ship, nor did he know of any intention he had of going with Him. All this, in the Captain especially, was I doubt a mistake; For after we had got under Sail, and the Gentleman, reluctantly, had quitted the Ship [Here, unfortunately, a part of two leaves of the old Journal have been torn from the book—and the next leaf commences with]

68 Pounds, which he told us from the Captain was all our allowance of that kind for the voyage husband it how we would. As we were nine Persons, this was not quite Eight pounds each. We had seen yet no Flesh save Beef, which neither I nor any of my Family could taste; worse can hardly be conceived. One of the men said, to his knowledge, Whitaker had victualled the Ship with damaged Provisions from a Man-of-War, which had been in the West Indies a long time. This account was generally credited by the whole Ship's company, and when the men came to be served with Pork, that also appeared so bad that the crew to a man unanimously refused taking any other Provisions besides Bread and Flour and that too, bad enough. It was moreover observed by them, that the Pieces of Flesh for four men weighed no more than  $2\frac{1}{4}$  pounds, which as they said ought to have weighed 4 pounds, that had not the men proved uncommonly sober and orderly: (a strange wrong headed fellow of a mate ready at hand) a meeting must have ensued. However, the Captain affecting to concur in their Invectives against Whitaker, and the mate (honest Stephen) swearing horridly that on his return to England he would go immediately upon the Exchange with one of the Pieces of Meat in his hand, beat the same about Whitaker's Ears with these words—Here you R—ge, this is the Provision and allowance you laid in for your honest Seamen for a day.

The men made a Virtue of necessity, and shifted the best they could. We for our Parts never eat any of their meat in all the Voyage, unless my son did sometimes put in with Mr. Saunder and his wife, who having been accustomed to gross feeding could not so easily govern their appetites. But myself and the most of my family subsisted almost entirely on Coffee,



Tea and Chocolate, wherewith we were well provided; and now and then a starved Fowl boiled to pieces in a Sauce Pan. The latter part of our Voyage, My Wife and Children being almost at Death's door, were prevailed on by my Son to taste their nasty Pease Soup, which with a deal of dried mint rubbed in, that we also happened to be stocked with, they were soon reconciled to, and it is to their sipping a little of this greasy stuff hot, every other day, that I sincerely attribute the preservation of their Lives. As the Captain found he could distress us in nothing so much as water, he would not suffer a cask, as is usual it seems, in other ships not distressed, to be brought upon Deck imagining we could none of us go down into the hold and fetch it; and the Cabin Boy said he had strict orders to do nothing for us; but necessity pressing, my Son soon found the way, which the Captain no sooner perceived than he put himself in a great Passion, swearing he would Clap a Lock up on the Pump; the mate Stephen also never failed to insult him whenever he caught him with a Tea Kettle of Water, having no other convenient utensil to fetch it in. However, so long as our strong beer, wine and brandy lasted we did pretty well, for a bottle of beer, a glass or two of wine, or a Dram, would commonly engage the Carpenter, or one or other of the Sailors, by stealth to slip a Tea Kettle full now and then into the Cabin. At length our Liquor save a Bottle or two of Brandy being all gone, my son continually abused and insulted, I determined on throwing off tameness. Accordingly about a week before we reached the Land, I came upon Deck and in the Presence of all the Gentlemen and many of the ship's crew demanded an allowance of water: six quarts or rather than fail, Pints a day; that is a Pint for each Person I informed him should make us easy. The Captain tho' in awe of none save Mr. Randolph, was a good deal confounded at this public and unexpected attack; hardly knew what to say, but at length answered—He could not justify putting one part of the Ship's Company to an allowance, unless all; he said too he did not deny me water, but I offering to prove the contrary by many witnesses, he did not choose to put me to the trouble, but calling the Boy, ordered him in future to supply us with water whenever we required, and we did not want afterwards. But I must now return back to:

Tuesday May 29th. Mr. Sweeney's illness favoured the Small Pox in my and my Wife's opinion. A kindly sort; and altho' in the eruptions they appeared very thick, yet in general they were distinct, the Fever arising and the Postules filling very orderly, from whence we presumed to pronounce, there was no apparent danger. However—the Doctor and every other person who pretended to the least skill affirmed the Poek to be of a very bad sort, the confluent kind, and that the Gentleman was in a very dangerous Condition, and proposed bleeding and blistering as the only means of saving his Life. As the Doctor was regularly bid, I no further presumed to interfere, than by professing my ignorance in not perceiving more than ordinary danger; My wife too had happily conducted her four children (without any Doctor) thro' the same disorder, and was no more apprehensive than myself. Yet bleeding and blistering was attempted but



thro' the unrulyness of the Patient, or the badness of the Flies which even supplied by the mate, the operation in either case was not very successful. Whether it is that People in general are pleased with what flatters their wishes; or that Mr. Sweeney might imagine his putting himself under the Doctor's care would considerably affect his purse; or whatever other motive he might have, I cannot say; but he (most unfortunately for us) earnestly requested that I and my Family would take him entirely under our care. Mr. Sweeney was a young married man. His wife whom he left at Hampton in Virginia about seven or eight months past was said to be there sick, and now supposed to be impatiently expecting his return. These moving considerations induced my family cheerfully to comply with his request, doing that which they never did for any other Person, myself and children only excepted; and that he might be the better accommodated and attended, we proposed removing him into the Cabin to us; but to this Mr. Saunder objected, his child never having had the distemper. Nevertheless, notwithstanding the difficulty and their own indisposition, this did not hinder my wife and Daughter from visiting and attending him daily, so long as there was the least appearance of danger. My son also at Mr. Sweeney's earnest importunity, tho' a thing very disagreeable to me, constantly sat up with him every other night. And as we were luckily stored with Sago, Pearl Barley, Wine, Saffron, all kinds of Spices, Hartshorn, etc., with every kind of Drug or Herbs as could be wanted in his disorder, we broke open our Boxes containing the several requisites, and became both his cooks and nurses.

The weather was fine, moderately warm—we treated him with a cool regime, not too low. No salt meat, but now and then a chicken boiled to broth or soup. His water gruel, sago, or barley water, was generally encouraged with a glass of Wine and a little Saffron; he happening to say Rhinish was his most favorite wine; and there being none on board save what I had, and which was exceeding good, we sometimes refreshed him with a glass of that and a little sugar. And so by such sort of treatment as we gave him, notwithstanding the discouragement of his Companions, and his own too nervous and dreadful apprehension of his being always dying, and that he should never live to see his dear wife any more; he got thro' the distemper without so much as one unfavorable symptom. But to my Journal.

Saturday, June 2nd. The Blister Plaster was put on Mr. Sweeney by the Doctor, but tore off again by the Patient before it had taken any effect, greatly to the displeasure of the Doctor and Mr. Swaddle, who thereupon abandoned him to our treatment.

We caught two Bonettas (Fish) to Day, on which we all (Mr. Sweeney excepted) agreeably dined the next day, vizt.

Sunday June 3rd, upon the quarter Deck under the awning, we had also a quarter of fresh roast Pork. We all esteemed Bonetta a good fish, as its name indeed seems to imply, and thus we spent Whitsunday.

Monday the 4th. Weather still fine, we took six Turtles or Tortioses. Whether the fault may be in the cooking (an office which the mate under-

took) I cannot tell, but nobody liked the fashionable viand, it being strong and Oily, tho' these were of the Hacoks bill and Loggerhead, and it seems it is the Green Turtle only which forms the modern Elegant Entertainment, not but I have heard it insisted on a good Cook will make a good dish of either of the other, and at sea especially.

Tuesday, June 5th. At Two this afternoon we saw the Island of St. Morris (one of the Azores) braving W. by S., distant about 8 Leagues. As we did not keep to the Northward at the Azores or Western Islands, the Carpenter and Boatswain affirmed we ought to have run to the Southward for a trade wind.

The Winds in these Latitudes, Vizt, from 30° to near 40° between those Islands and the Coast of America, are generally westerly and subject to storms and calms, hinting often their suspicion of the Captain's design of prolonging the Voyage upon account of the ship being chartered. But no man seen could be so wicked. Yet certain they said it was, that Whitaker had chartered the Ship at so much a month of Belcher Bro: in law and the mate's own brother, Swaddle.

From the 10th to the 15th. Little winds, contrary or calm, and from thence to the end of the month. Contrary winds blowing hard with a great Western sea, Shipping much water, the men often pumping.

Saturday June 30—was 39°, 29", Long. 41, 15. I had been ill a few days, afflicted as was supposed at our frequent visits to Mr. Sweeney. On hearing that I was not well, the Dr. asked Mr. Saunder (it seems in scorn) why I being a Quack did I not cure myself; this spoke upon the Quarter Deck, being heard by my Daughter who was sitting by my bed side near the Cabin door. She acquainted her Mother, and that Mr. Saunder far from resenting the Doctor's indecent behaviour seemed to concur in the Fun of the Company. My wife in a day or two after instanced this to Mr. Saunder as a piece of unkindness, or breach of Friendship in him; upon which hot words arose. I however entirely concurred with Mr. Saunder that he was under no obligation to enter into any dispute with Dr. Purcell upon the subject, or to disclose to us the subject of their conversation, till Mr. Saunder on being accused of joining in the ridicule began to use very foul expressions; as it is a "Lie Madam," and let me tell you once more it is a "Lye."

This behaviour quite silenced me, and I said, not one word more on either side. A great reservedness ensued, in so much that we ceased to eat or drink together. Yet still this was private and among ourselves, till Sunday July the 8th, when one of the men who used to procure us water informed us that he overheard Mr. Saunders relating the cause of our difference to the Doctor and the rest of the Company in the Steerage, adding more over his Mr. Saunder's opinion that our intelligence could come from no other Person than my son, for which reason he advised them to forbid his approach to the Steerage. The Captain and honest Stephen it seems readily closed in this advice, but the Gentlemen would not agree to it. Not only the unjust charge upon my Boy, but the malicious manner of betraying our hitherto private conversation, exasper-

ated me to that degree that I could not forbear going immediately upon the Deck, and in the presence of all the Gentlemen and sailors too reproach him with the unworthiness of his behaviour; the consequence of which was an irreconcilable difference.

Doctor Purcell on this discovery came up to me, made a very civil and handsome apology for the words he had used, which I readily accepted, so he and I became and continued quite Friends. A melancholy accident happened on Board Sunday July the 1st, about Six in the Evening, wind at S. by E. a brisk Gale. Two men being sent up to hand the Fore Top Gallant Sail, the mast being rotten broke, and the two men who were aloft fell with it. One of them, Abram Bosdet, into the sea and was never seen more; the other Wm. Waterfield a Virginian born, was saved by a man (James Delridge, The Tailor) catching him in his fall on the Gun-wall of the Ship. He was much bruised, but soon came to himself, and appeared in his business the next day. Poor Abram was a native of the Island Jersey, esteemed an honest, useful, sober, inoffensive man. He left a wife and family behind him at London. The Ship at this time went more than six miles an hour, Yet honest Stephen like one frantic ran backwards and forwards in the Ship and upon the Poop, calling out Abram! Abram! using some obscure expressions that as there was a man lost some enquiry should be made or somebody called to account:

But nobody heeded him. There were no mutinous spirits in the Ship, unless one Passenger was such, and he was a Person of no greater Consequence than Stephen. The Carpenter indeed who was a sober thinking man said he had frequently even while the Ship lay in the River complained of the rottenness of the masts, but was never regarded, and that (in anything of a Gale) if he had been ordered aloft, he would not have gone, and would have given the obvious reason of his refusal.

On Monday July the 2nd we set now about those kind of repairs, which considerably retarded our Sailing for some Days.

The 9th we had 24 hours a fair Gale at N. and N. E. but then came about again to the old quarter S. W. Took a small Dolphin. Lat.  $37^{\circ} 57''$  Long.  $51^{\circ} 22''$ . All our ginger bread is now gone, and no white biscuit left but what is seen extremely mouldy and full of Maggots.

July 20th had a fine Easterly wind for about 30 hours, when it returned to the old point till the 24th. Lat.  $39^{\circ} 29''$ ; Long.  $63^{\circ} 31''$ . Caught a small shark, about 7 foot long. Small breeze at W. E. till the 28th, when we caught Three fine Dolphins. We all dined together again upon the Quarter Deck, except my wife and children who excused themselves; Yet Mr. Randolph sent his servant with some Fish to them into the Cabin. This Fish was generally liked by all the Company, tho' some said they preferred Bonetta, of which number, I was one. Our Biscuit is now entirely expended, but we procure some of the Seamen's bread by the same means we used to get a supply of water. Mr. Saunder, his wife and Child, Since they left us, are acquainted with more of our distresses, they being upon very cordial terms with the Captain and Stephen. If this was the poor man's view in breaking with us, I could almost excuse him.

July 29th we spoke with a scow of White Haven, who left Virginia 5 Days ago. They told us Cape Henry was distant about 77 Leagues.

Wednesday August 1st: at 12 last night, we found ourselves in Soundings—Twenty Fathom water, and about Two o'clock this afternoon, saw the Land about Twelve Leagues distant, and as was judged about 70 or 80 miles to the Southward of Cape Henry. Dark weather, wind Easterly, blowing hard with much rain. We ran along the shore at the distance of ten or twelve leagues, hoping to make Cape Henry before night, but failing therein we stood off as well as we could all night, having enough to do to claw off the shore, the wind hlowing very hard and setting right in.

Thursday, August 2nd, having weathered the Coast last night, we at Daylight found ourselves about the same distance from the Land: Rains still very hard but wind abated; discovered Cape Henry 15 or 20 miles to the Northward. About dawn this morning we entered the Bay of Chesapeake, soon after which a Pilot came along side to offer himself; but our Captain, declined taking in or so much as speaking to him, but taking the advantage of a fine, fresh gale, and all our sails set and full, rushed by and soon left the Pilot a good way astern. The Pilot however still attended us as near as he was able, till we were terribly alarmed with the apprehension of our destruction, finding ourselves in less than Three Fathoms water. Mr. Sweeney assured the Captain all along that he was running up on a shoal called Willoughby's Point; but the Captain superior to all caution, was as confident we were passed it. However, now in the utmost terror and confusion, backed all sails and looked out Astern exploring the Pilot's assistance, who still followed us and seeing our danger good naturedly kept waving his hat (being out of hearing) to bear off to the Northward. We did so and he soon came up with us, himself came on board and put all things to rights. Thus through the avarice of the Captain in aiming to save about Forty Shillings (tho' nobody doubts but he would have charged it to the voyage) the Ship, a large cargo and all or most of our lives were upon the brink of being cast away, even in sight of our Port. Mr. Whitaker assured me when I engaged with him that the Ship was bound directly to York River. But as it appears, he afterwards Contracted to take the goods for Norfolk, a town upon Elizabeth river, which empties itself into James River. So having no remedy, we passed by Hampton when Mr. Randolph, Mr. Sweeney, Mr. Saunder, Doctor Purcell and John Thorpe went ashore with the Captain in the Pilot Boat, and about two in the afternoon came to an anchor off Sewill's or Sowles Point, at the mouth of Elizabeth River, where we continued nine days.

Friday, August 3rd—The boat going this morning with the Captain to Norfolk, I and my Daughter Molly took the opportunity of going also to procure some provisions and refreshments. We were very civilly entertained at dinner at one Captain Trigs, to whom I brought a letter from a Person at home, who fancied himself related to him, but it did not prove so. In the Evening we returned on board with Bread, Poultry, Fruits, Wine, etc. We now live very well with our Fresh Stores; and our worthy Captain wears a softer Countenance, condescending to mess with us very

cordially, as does also poor Mr. Saunders. A boat came off the next day from Hampton, for Mr. Sweeney's things, and he intending an entertainment on the Sunday. Mrs. Saunder was ordered by her Husband in a letter to come on shore by that opportunity. Mrs. Saunder who cannot write herself, or will read writing, shews me the letter (for we were grown quite friendly) in the postscript; there was added, you may tell Fisher if he had a mind to come on shore, he may come in Mr. Sweeney's Boat; but not a word to me of any entertainment or any mention of my being civilly invited to it.

One of the sailors who used to help us to Bread and Water one day informed us that Mr. Saunder since our difference had acquainted the Gentlemen by way of reproach to me, that it was entirely owing to my persuasions that he ever engaged in the Voyage, and that I owed him a large sum of money, for which he had no security. Mr. Sweeney too, I might have observed, when the danger of the small Pox was over, and he quite recovered, in a transport of Joy told us all at Sea how gloriously he would entertain us when he arrived at Hampton. Tho' the acceptance of his favor was one of the remotest things in my thought, yet I was much more offended at Mr. Sweeney's rudeness, than Mr. Saunder, and I determined upon letting him know it. I must further take notice that when Mr. Sweeney quitted the Ship, he took no kind of leave of any of us; not so much as calling at the Cabin door to bid one of my family farewell. Now besides the utmost kindness and care, my wife son and Daughter constantly manifested in his distress, even while his most intimate companions when the Pock was turning used to damn his stinking carcass, and wish it was thrown overboard, and his receiving nothing but the greatest Civility from all of us, ever since my Daughter Molly all the time we were at Sea had the sole care and trouble of feeding and nursing his Five Canary Birds, which otherwise must have perished, they being utterly abandoned by every other Person; nor did he after his recovering name the least care of them.

Now what excuse or pretense Mr. Sweeney could have for affronting me, I could not conceive. If it was the concisest, it was not I am sure the handsomest way of dropping an acquaintance with one who showed not the least ambition or inclination of keeping any up. So I wrote to him, that if (as it was probable) Mr. Saunder (whose difference with me he was no stranger to) was authorized by him to give me that rude intimation that I might come a shore in his Boat, if I thought fit, his behaviour therein was so offensive and ungentle, as his quitting the ship without so much as saying farewell to me or any of my family. Yet if he could recollect a single instance tho' ever so slender that we had any of us failed in point of civility to him, I should esteem him entirely justified. As to what was reported of Mr. Saunder's saying he thro' my persuasion engaged in this undertaking, I would, with Mr. Saunder have proved the contrary under his own hand.

On Wednesday August 8th Mr. Sweeney and Mr. Saunder came on board full of resentment; Mr. Sweeney denied his giving Mr. Saunder any



authority for saying I might come on shore in his boat, and made very senseless apologies for his manner of quitting the Ship, which, however, I accepted, to avoid further disputes with him, and matters between us were easily and seemingly very well accommodated, for we shook hands and he paid great thanks to me and my family for what we had done for him, saying he should be glad to see any of us at his House if we ever came to Hampton. These extraited compliments I received as he delivered them with great Civility; resolving inwardly at the same time never to give him any trouble. Mr. Saunder (poor man) could hardly speak for rage. He demanded £120 which he said I owed him, and he insisted should he paid him in a month at farthest; denyed his being under any agreement with me as to sharing any part of my goods, or anything else; and that nothing but money should content him. He further urged, that by my own Rule, it would be unjust in me to expose a private literary correspondence which had been carried on in Friendship. In this last, I concurred entirely, assuring him I would produce no Letter nor part of a Letter without His leave, tho' I insisted in the presence of Mr. Sweeney, and two other Gentlemen who were with him (strangers to me) that he should acquit me of being the cause of his coming to America, any farther than (as I said willing to suppose) the Company of one with whom he had been so long acquainted might be an inducement. To this he readily assented. The paragraph which I proposed to have produced, was no more than this, taken from the last letter I ever received from him, dated Gloucester, March 20th, 1749, "I cannot give you the least Idea how discontented I am least I should be prevented going with you, but I should hope, you will not go without me; tho' I should not have it in my power to come up time enough in April." (I having acquainted him that April was the farthest time limited by Whitaker for the Ship sailing.) I also referred to my own letter to which this was an answer, for my having vehemently therein urged him to acquit his mother and sister (with whom he was then) with his circumstances and motives to this undertaking, and to take their opinion and advice therein; but this, as he afterwards confessed to me, he never did.

To obviate this money affair between us, I must observe that on our determination upon this Voyage he actually did put the sum he mentions (£120) into my hands, desiring I would lay it out in Goods most proper for Virginia. I here upon showed him my Bills of Banks of all the goods I had already purchased, signifying likewise that I should gladly take over a large quantity of Tea which I had bought; also, of any part of which Goods, if he pleased, he should be a sharer so far as his money would extend, or indeed of the whole, allowing me Common interest only for so much money as I should employ more than him. This he gladly accepted, calling it an instance of Friendship and great kindness. But to all this we had no articles drawn, no witnesses, our friendship, as we both then vainly imagined, being superior to all forms.

Shocked and surprised as I was at this demand of Mr. Saunder's, and as sensible as he or any of his advisers could be of the distresses I must



inevitably be exposed to, I promised to exert my uttermost endeavors to satisfy his ungenerous, unreasonable demands. But previous to this we came to an immediate settlement before Mr. Sweeney and his friends wherein we quickly concurred there was a balance of £117 due Mr. Saunder, for which I gave my note payable in a month.

Some of Mr. Saunder's best things, as his wife's best clothes, Linen, Plate, etc., being either for convenience or safety at his request put into some of our best Packages, he immediately demanded them, tho' York was the Port we and our Goods were shipped for. I submitted to his unreasonable demand, had the Ship's hold rummaged, and the required packages brought upon the Deck, uncased and opened before all the Ship's Crew. In thus tumbling them about, my Two best Chests of Drawing (of mahogany) in particular, tho' well matted, even grievously broke and injured by a Villanous and careless mate. And all this I endured because Mr. Saunder should not have the shadow of a pretence to reproach me. This affair over:

On Saturday August 11th at six in the morning we weighed Anchor and again passed by Hampton: (Solis Point, the place where we lay, I should have noted, was just in the mid way between Hampton and Norfolk, twelve miles from each, The Ferry Boats constantly passing by our Ship all the time we lay there) with a southerly wind, we again turned into the Bay of Chesapeake, and lay that night off a shoal called the Horse Shoe.

Next Morning Sunday the 12th, by the assistance of the Tide and a Small breeze at East, we got into York River. A little after noon the Captain and I went off into the boat leaving the Ship under sail about a League below York, where (it being little wind) we arrived before her.

I called first at the Eldest of the Mr. Nelsons, who was not in town, nor expected home till the middle of the ensuing week. From hence I went to Captain Reynolds, whose wife I was formerly acquainted with, being the daughter of a Mr. Wm. Rogers, a particular Friend and intimate Companion of mine about Thirty years ago. She knew me at first sight. Here I dined. After dinner I waited on the Secretary the Honourable Thomas Nelson Esq., and delivered Mr. Hunt's letter of recommendation. He spoke civilly, but said he must confer with his Brother before he could talk particularly to me. This was the first and indeed the last time of my having the honor of a Conference with this Gentleman. In the Evening I returned on Board.

Monday the 13th I again went on shore, delivered the certificate for my Tea to the Custom house Officer, Richard Ambler Esq. who remembered me perfectly, as I did him. He staid me to dinner, and at his Lady's request promised to accommodate me with a Home, tho' he could not conveniently spare it; the favour was the greater as there was none other to be had. [This Richard Ambler married Elizabeth Jaquelin.]

Returned again on Board. The two next days, I likewise came on shore and visited several male old acquaintances, all of the other six, Mr. Ambler excepted, being dead.

Thursday 16th, employed in getting my family and goods on shore; but through the mate's drunkenness and laziness, it was far into the afternoon

before we could get quit of the Ship; however it happened several of our packages were broke open, one large chest all to pieces and many things lost, and a large Box containing sheets and Table Linen never came to hand at all; yet all things considered we were glad of our escape, and thankful to Providence that we came off even so well. In a day or Two after we had landed, I called again at the Honourable Wm. Nelson Esquires now returned, and delivered my other letter from Mr. Hunt. This Gentleman I thought received me with a conscious Dignity and great reserve blamed my enterprise, admitting that any one could be so weak as to prefer living in Virginia to Brittain, insinuating at the same time that without peculiar circumstances or reasons few Persons of sense would ever make the exchange, and the best advice he could give me was to repair my oversight by returning again to London, which if I was inclined to do, there was he said a ship of Mr. Hunt's in the River that would sail in a few days (a fortnight's time). This (greatly mortified as I was) I could not yet bear to think of, but said in case of receiving no encouragement here, I should rather Choose to try my Fortune in some other Colony upon the Continent; mentioning Pennsylvania.

To this he replied pretty eagerly if I would go thither he would give me a letter of recommendation to one Mr. Allin, a considerable Person of his acquaintance in Philadelphia. But even this I desired to suspend. I then mentioned my having two recommendatory letters to Mr. Walthoe, to which he replied very coldly, "Perhaps now Mr. Walthoe may have it in his power to serve you."

"(By the emphasis he placed upon the word now! I should imagine he meant to insinuate there was a time when Mr. Walthoe had it not so much in his power to serve me, but surely the observation was no more just or generous than for another to have remarked; That a time was when this great man's Father thought to bring a Boatswain to a Merchant Ship, no mean Preferment."). You will easily conceive with what a heavy heart, I departed from this great Person to meet the reproaches of my poor wife, tho' in truth my affliction was unutterable. My wife perceiving my grief and dejection, determined upon trying her success in obtaining at least his Honor's advice or opinion in this anxious state of our affairs.

She was received with very great complaisance, both by his Honor and his Lady, but no council or advice, save that of returning again to Brittain, my wrong headedness in coming hither being the general topic of their discourse. On his saying he heartily wished himself and Family in England, my wife presumed to inquire whether he was sincere in that assertion. He assured her upon his word that if he could get out of business here, and had his substance in his own hands, he would remove to England with the utmost expedition.

When I brought my family on shore, there stood upon the wharf an ancient grey headed Gentleman who called me by my name, took me by the hand, welcomed me into the country again. Told me he remembered me perfectly when I was Clerk in the office of Mr. Lightfoot; tho' I could

not so well recollect him, I acknowledged his civility. This Person wears the name of Captain Gooding. (G.)

As I wanted some silver to distribute among the sailors who brought my family ashore he obliged me in Changing a Guinea. In about a fortnight after this, as I was attending Mr. Nelson's store till he was at leisure to be spoke to, this same Captain G. happening to be there assumed a quite different behaviour to what he had manifested by the water side, for with a malicious sneer he began thus: I remember you Mr. Fisher ever since Coln. S. paid you the Ten Pounds that you recovered against him for his striking you. The widow and sons of the Coln. Smith (S.) being now living attached to and intimate with, if not allied to the Nelsons Family, I was extremely confounded to be thus accosted, and a difference revived which had been cemented Thirty years ago; and what augmented my confusion (if capable of being augmented) was a Pragmatical store keeper of Mr. Nelsons catching the opportunity with the highest Glee of demanding a relation of the story by Cox Comically saying, "Aye do Mr. Fisher, tell us how that affair was." I had hardly Spirits to bring out, that Col. (S.) and I were very good Friends long before I left the Colony, and that in the suit I brought against him no more than sixpence damage was given, and not one farthing of either Costs or damage was ever levied or taken of the Col. Captain G. in a most insolent overbearing tone replied: "Nay, but you must not tell me! I remember the payment of the money myself as well as if it was but yesterday, and that it was absolutely Ten Pounds." This so astonished me, that I could not utter a word for some time; at length recollecting myself a little, I beseeched the Captain would reflect this matter might easily be decided; for as I humbly presumed the Record of the Court were still in being, it would thereby appear whether he or I was in the right, without any further contest about the matter. Upon my mentioning the Record, the change in these two persons countenances was very extraordinary, and whether they ever looked into the Record or not, I cannot tell—but neither the storekeeper nor the honest Captain, tho' I have frequently met them since in various places, would never know or speak to me any more, yet this is all that I ever did to offend them.

If the honest Captain did not conceive by this extraordinary piece of evidence he might some how recommend himself to some body or other, I am unable to account for the difference of his behaviour at the Wharf, and in Mr. Nelson's Store; for the rest, I am at no difficulty. Nothing is more common than for the injured to forgive; but that is not so frequently the case with him, who does or but attempts to do the injury.

Indulge me with Patience, and I'll give the foundation of this Story concerning Col. Smith.

"When I was in the country before (about the year 1722) Deputy Clerk of the Court to Mr. Lightfoot, Col. Smith was a Justice of the Peace and a Representative in the House of Burgesses, for the said County of York. This gentleman who was drinking at a Public house just by my office on Saturday evening sent for me and required I would forthwith issue a

writ against some Person he then named, and made it returnable to the next Court, which was the ensuing Monday. This I told him very civilly could not be, as the Law required Three Days between the issuing of a Writ and the return thereof. He said I might date the writ the day before, for he would have it done, alleging that such things had been done by my Betters. This last I said I would not presume to dispute, but that the dating of a writ backwards never had yet, nor never would be done by me; whereupon he struck me with his cane, but I then being a younger man than he took hold of his collar with one hand and his cane with the other, laid him on the floor and his cane by him, and departed. And tho' it was said he broke Two of his ribs in falling on the Hilt of his sword, I was for several reasons prevailed upon to bring an action: One was that as it was more scandalous in a Magistrate than an indifferent person to break the Peace, it was but just to expose him in his own Court. The action was brought and Six pence damage given, which, nor the Costs were never levied. My Master Mr. Lightfoot said I was quite right in all I did."

And if I have any remembrance of this said Capt. Gooding (G) it seems to me to be by his being one of the Jury for conversation once on Shipboard in our passage and John Randolph in speaking of the disposition of the Virginian, very freely cautioned us against disobliging or offending any person of note in the Colony we were going to; for says he, either by blood or marriage, we are almost all related, or so connected in our interests, that whoever of a Stranger presumes to offend any one of us will infallibly find an enemy of the whole nor right nor wrong, do we ever forsake him, till by one means or other, his ruin is accomplished. I refused then to acquire use in these sentiments, and I wish I could truly say I had no reason to do it now: yet I never offered the least injury to any of them, nor can I hitherto have offended either of the Mr. Nelsons, unless my unfortunately obtaining a recommendation to them from Mr. Hunt can justly be termed an offense. In the midst of these discouragements and heaviness at heart, I determined however on seeing Mr. Walthoe, and accordingly went over to Williamsburg, (about 12 miles) delivered my two letters from his Brother Mr. Walthoe and his nephew Mr. Hart. He received me very civilly, but used very few words. I found him at breakfast or Tea and at his invitation drank two dishes with him. He said if I inclined to settle in Williamsburg or elsewhere, I might expect any friendly offices in his power. Seeing me afterwards in the Town, he called to me and recommended me as his Friend to some of his acquaintance who were there with him. They all welcomed me to Virginia, and I dined with them at a Tavern where he treated me. In the evening I returned home more easy than I had been any time since my arrival. I don't know how it was; but I was too much dejected and dismayed by my reception at York to say anything to Mr. Walthoe concerning my difficulties with Mr. Saunder: a great unhappiness that I omitted it.

Three weeks of Mr. Saunder's month were now gone, and what to do I could not tell. At last, I resolved to set forth my case clearly by letter

to the great man. This I did by informing him of our agreement, and our differences, with all the circumstances, together with Mr. Saunder's demand, earnestly imploring his aid in the most suppliant abject terms that I had ever used to any Mortal in my life. Assuring him he should have my Tea or any other of my goods made over to him to double or treble the value of what would be necessary to enable me to get quit of Mr. Saunder. That I should request the loan of the Money for six months only, for which with greatest thanks and gratitude, I would pay any interest. Having sent this letter, I waited Three Days with the utmost anxiety for an answer, which not then coming I assumed the resolution of going myself to his house, to learn if possible his pleasure; but what was my anguish on enquiring for him when I was told by a servant his Master had set out yesterday (the day before this) on a journey to an Estate a great way up the Country, and would not return in less than three weeks, and that he had left no kind of word or message concerning me. The humanity of an answer tho' a peremptory refusal, I thought, I might reasonably have expected. Mr. Saunder who remained at Hampton 25 miles below York came up with a deal of Fury demanding his money with great threats. I had sent him an account of the steps I had taken and now showed him a copy of the beseeching letter I had wrote to Mr. Nelson; but this availed nothing. If I did not make over my goods, he said, directly to him, enabling him to sell them immediately for what they would fetch, he would without further ceremony throw me into jail.

Exasperated with such various distresses, and these additional insults, I calmly bid him do his worse, for I would endure any kind of misery sooner than persist any longer in craving his compassion, or even so much as changing another word with him. This, how strange so ever, had a better effect on him than all my submissions and entreaties. He became cool at once, declared his distressing of me would afford him no pleasure, and that he would readily acquiesce in my proposal of receiving my supplication to Mr. Nelson on his return and would wait the event.

He staid with me two days, grew friendly, open and communicative: said he had an inveterate dislike to the People;—the best of those whom he had met with being malicious, subtil, treacherous, Said he was determined on returning to England; advised me to sell off all, and do so too; for that in the end he was sure I would find Mr. Nelson advising my immediate return would be the best I should ever receive from him. However, if we must part, let it be amicably, and that the least mention of our unhappy animosities might not be made hereafter to any of our English Friends.

I declined all engagements save this, that he might rely upon my never aiming to do him the least prejudice either at home or abroad. As to himself, he was at his own liberty to relate as little or as much of our adventures as he pleased. He moreover assured me Mr. Sweeney entertained a deal of secret malice to me, on the account of what I had insinuated of his ingratitude in my letter to him, having sworn that he would do me all the mischief he could: that he had already began to prosecute those



aims in exposing my letter (as a very insolent one) among all his relations and friends, particularly in Coln. Cary's family, whom he had endeavoured to prejudice and inflame with the most rancorous representations.

To put what he said beyond all doubt, he drew out of his pocket book, the very letter I had wrote to Mr. Sweeney avowing that having done me all the injury with it, he was capable of, he Mr. Sweeney had delivered it to him for the declared purpose of doing me what mischief he possibly could in England. But Mr. Saunder said, disdaining the Villany, he took the letter with no other view than to return it to me again, in case I would restore two or three letters which he Mr. Saunders had wrote to me before we left England. But in this I begged to be excused, repeating my assurance, that I did not detain them with any view of doing him the least injury. And as to that letter of Sweeney's, I believed he was very sensible; so far as it concerned me, it might be very freely communicated to the whole world.

After two days stay with me, Mr. Saunder set out for Hampton. He shed tears at parting, assuring me now that his threatenings were assumed with great difficulty, that sooner than he would so distress me any more; if I could raise a sufficiency to pay his expenses back to Britain he would have the rest to be remitted at a convenient opportunity. As soon as ever I heard of the great man's return, I received my supplication, and if possible in more prostrate, abject terms that I had done before, exaggerating the obligation above life or any other enjoyment the preservation of my poor family only expected. This letter went early in the morning, but I had no answer all the day.

The next morning between Ten and Eleven, his Lady came on a Seeming visit to my wife. She was no sooner seated than with a very distant air she informed me, if I had any thing to say to Mr. Nelson, he was now at leisure. I went instantly and acquainted him with Mr. Saunder's threats and demands of instantly selling my goods for what they would bring. He coolly replied, he did not see anything amiss in what Mr. Saunder required, but rather wondered I should refuse to comply with his demand—and as to what I urged about the cruelty of taking advantages of the distressed, or how much I should be a gainer could I but obtain a little time to dispose of my Things myself, it made no impression on him. But I still continued to beseech his assistance, assuring him he should not run the least risque as I would actually make over and put into his possession much more than the Value of what he should advance for me.

He at length said, he should not think of assisting me until he had first spoke with Mr. Saunder. I hereupon informed his Honor that Mr. Saunder had made one journey already at considerable expense, and if he would have the goodness to remit the money to him at Hampton by an order upon some merchant there, or by any other method he thought proper, it would be an additional act of goodness in him, and I should always return it a great augmentation of his favor; adding moreover, if there was any charge accruing thereby, I would most thankfully pay it. To all which he very abruptly answered, I will do no otherwise than I have said. So I



wrote forthwith to Mr. Saunder, and he accordingly came up again. He was obliged to continue at York two nights more, before we could have the happiness of being admitted to Mr. Nelson's presence, he being either at breakfast or Dinner engaged with Company, walked out or otherwise busied. But the morning after the second night informed us we might attend him at his store on our approach. He only asked Mr. Saunder whether he had any share or claim to any part of the Tea I was possessed of: who answered No—Nothing else of consequence passed between them. From whoever it seems the apprehension of his being some how overwatched or imposed on by me in the property of the Tea was the most apparent reason of giving Mr. Saunder this trouble—for immediately upon his saying No, his honor handed me a written Instrument with these words—There Sir!—Sir if you like that! Too terrified to make objection, had I discovered any cause, I just cast my eye on the writing, which I returned again with an humble cringe, signifying my assent by saying; "Yes Sir, exceedingly well." He said, he must have Two of the Chests of Tea put into his possession, for by a calculation he had made, they would not amount to much more than the money he should advance. I replied it was far from me to desire or expect any other. The Deed expressed, that in consideration of his Honors lending me the said money amounting to £117—Sterling, if the said principal sum with lawful interest was not repaid in Four months from the date thereof, the said Tea deposited as a security for the said sum should become forfeited to the said Honourable Mr. Nelson, and liable to be sold for the payment of the said Principal and Interest. As to my urging anything concerning the six months, the time I requested of his Honor, I judged it neither prudent nor safe.

Mr. Saunder received the money, and we came to my house very joyfully, and after refreshing himself with such poor fare as we had with a glass or two of Wine, we took, a cordial leave of each other, wishing mutual health and happiness; and he then set out for Hampton. The saddle bags he brought with him being ancient broke with the weight of silver (a considerable part of the Cash being in that Specie). I lent him a stronger pair which he promised to return, and I doubt not of his delivering them for that purpose to some unfaithful hand; but I never could see or hear of them any more. He soon after departed for Bristol, where he safely arrived, Went to Gloucester, and since settled in Bristol, where it is said being seduced into a Partnership with one Baker, a Paper Maker, he was defrauded of the greatest part of a Thousand pounds upon which (as was also suggested to me) he used some indirect means (what I was not told) of putting himself out of the world.

While we lay in the river Thames, we received an account of the death of his first Wife's sister, by which he said £300 was devolved on him. He wished several times that his Goods were there on shore again and his passage not paid; upon which account I had<sup>d</sup> reason to think, he then regretted the undertaking, and this I am apt to conceive might be one motive to his quick return, notwithstanding his ascribing it to the Climate and People of this Country. Mr. Saunder's motive for resolving to come to

America I may since his death be allowed to declare was entirely to be attributed to his second marriage; he having in his own and his Friends opinion matched a good deal beneath himself, a circumstance which he could not bear the thought of being reproached with. And it was merely upon this account that we discouraged the visits of our friend, while we lay so long in the river on board the Ship. And Mr. Winden and another of my wife's near relations, who came upwards of a hundred miles to take their leave of us, must doubtless be surprised and justly offended at a reserve and shyness so different from what they before had ever experienced; nor can they perhaps easily concur the pain and grief it occasioned to my poor wife in particular in acting a Part so opposite to our real inclinations. In this, our condition truly deserved Commiseration.

While we were at sea, the first part of the Voyage especially, Mr. Saunder's sufferings (for aught I know), might be greater than ours; for he poor man, at some particular seasons had a voracious and most ungovernable appetite; of this his Relations are not insensible. And it (not unlikely) may be, this appetite not able to endure the abstinence and restraints we were subject to was the Chief if not the only motive to his forsaking us in the Cabin; for till those distresses, I never did perceive in him any thing that ever wore the appearance of falsehood, treachery or insincerity. And had he not been so distressed for Provisions and had we not both of us met with such an acquaintance as one especially who was on board, Virginia had been the best place Mr. Saunder could have come to—and after we had a little armed ourselves against the current Arts and subtilities of the natives, we should have lived happily in spite of them, quiet and independent.

For whatever instance of Vulgar Craft or Villany I shall be obliged to exhibit, I shall still stubbornly insist upon it, there are even among the Natives, people of Sense, probity and honor.

Mr. Saunder's misfortunes as well as his faults have I believe been very considerable. His weakness I pitied, and had he sought it in time, would have forgiven, as I in general believed him to be a person of upright intentions. This affair of the Money being thus finished and perceiving clearly, I should have no willing aid or advice from the Mr. Nelsons, I went again to the Walthoes at Williamsburg, and by his kind aid took a house there. After I had left York, with the two first loads of Goods, my Wife wrote me word, that the Honourable Mr. Nelson had acquainted her he believed he could help me to a person who would treat with me for one of my Chests of Tea, but as I considered our retailing of it, would not only be a kind of employment, but attended with considerable more profit, I advised her to say nothing upon the subject, and I would endeavor to keep out of his way. But in less than a fortnight, my wife also being come away with the rest of our things, he chanced to see me in the street in Williamsburg. He spoke to me very Courteously and taking me a little aside acquainted me he would give five S. a pound for one of my Chests of Tea which is just 4 S. Sterling, wanting (at the least) Five per cent. I was afraid of refusing, for fear of his pressing me for the money before I could raise it,

therefore told his honor, he was welcome to take which Chest he pleased. The Tea cost me 3-6 in the India House, exclusive of the charges of Brokerage, Bonding, repackage, Insurance, etc., and it was now safe arrived in good order, and the common price here by the pound was 7-6 or six Shillings Sterling. So that for want of my retailing of it (upwards of three hundred weight) I lost not much less than Forty Pounds this currency. It was indeed a considerable consolation that I had diminished my Debt a good deal more than one half, and I indulged in the hope of having obliged a person capable of being a powerful friend. During our stay at York, (about 5 weeks) we had neither encouragement or spirit to open any of our Goods; so that the little Cash we brought with us being consumed, we had broke in upon the Queen Ann Crowns, half crowns etc, etc, which my Daughter Molly had been many years collecting, when very luckily, Mrs. Reynolds having tasted some of our Green Tea requested we would spare her half a dozen pounds (at the price we proposed selling it, vizt, 14 S. a pound) before we removed to Williamsburg. This we readily complied with, a Cannister of the same being very handy to come at, and she sent the money, upwards of four pounds, immediately. This treasure enabled us to remove and to purchase Bread and fuel for some time after we came there. But it being the time of year that People here usually lay in their Winter's Stock of Provisions, such as Corn, Beef, Pork, Butter, Firing etc, etc in quantities, we were again reduced to difficulties wherein, as we could think of no other remedy, I sent my son with a note to Mr. Walthoe, requesting he would favor me with the lent of Five Pistoles. My son who returned directly agreeably surprised us with the Sight of Two Doubloons, or Eight Pistoles. I went that moment to give my Note for the Money, but he rejected it as a thing extremely trivial, and urged me to make up of his purse upon all occasions.

A treatment like this, so different from what we had hitherto experienced obliged me to turn my back upon him sooner than I otherwise should have done, and when I came home to relate the reception I met with to my Wife and Daughter, their sense of it immediately gushed out at their eyes.

In about two days after, Mr. Walthoe came to see us, enquiring kindly how we all did, and whether it was in his power to assist us in any shape; and tho' we assured him he had amply supplied our wants, he gave us handsel for our Tea, and did not depart till in one thing or other he laid out about Ten Pistoles with us. In vain we entreated him to discount the Two Doubloons we had borrowed; he insisted on paying the Cash, again repeating that he should take it unkindly, if we did not use his friendship.

We now went on pretty well, and our little business increased; But Three of the Four Months being gone, our hearts began to ache, for fear of Mr. Nelson, for we had not more than Thirty pounds in the house to pay him upwards of Sixty. Upon which consideration, I ventured to write to his Honor imparting, that if it accorded with his pleasure or convenience to suffer the money to remain in my hands (agreeable to my first request) till the General Court, I should ever regard it as a most signal instance, and augmentation of his favor and great goodness. But if it

was disagreeable to him, I would whatever I suffered take care in providing his money against the time appointed. The letter I know was delivered to him safely, yet the time was just upon expiring without his vouchsafing any answer. I even ventured to address myself again to Mr. Walthoe, exhibiting to his view the whole of Mr. Saunder's affair and the obligation I was under to Mr. Nelson, circumstances which I hitherto entirely concealed. Mr. Walthoe attended to me with great patience and silence, and when I had done, asked me how much money would serve my purpose. I told him about Thirty Pistoles. He walked to his *escritoir* and counted me out Forty—asking if that was sufficient? I said it was too much, and offered to intrust Ten of them, which he would not admit, alleging, I should not be distressed, nor was it proper for me to be quite unfurnished of Cash at home, so obliged me to take the whole, adding he was very sorry I had not informed him of this business when I first arrived. I now wrote forthwith again to Mr. Nelson, returning him great thanks for his kind favour, acquainting him I had procured his money and would either pay it into the hands of any merchant of his appointing in this place, or, (I not being then well) my wife should wait on him with it in York. To this letter I received an immediate answer, that I need give myself no trouble, for if he had the money at the General Court, it would suit him as well as now. However as I was possessed of the Cash, and had provided a chais, I sent my wife down with it to York and redeemed my Tea. In settling the amount with my wife, his Honor assumed an air of generosity refusing the four months interest, tho' by the calculation of the weight of the Tea under his own hand, it appears he was as great a gainer by one weight, only as would more than have paid the interest due. (But there's a Vanity and Subtilty in the generality of Virginians, not unobvious to persons to Common penetration who have been at all accustomed to a more genuine generous way of acting or thinking). The little acting of little people that have fell in my way and which are in truth innumerable, I shall pass by unheeded; they are indeed as much the objects of pity as contempt. But such as who may be justly be esteemed the Fountains of baseness, the leaders of the Fashion or promoters of mean and vicious habits among the opulent, or as they are fond of styling themselves—Persons of Note,—

These me thinks have a just claim to distinction; and in truth they should have it so far as they come within my reach or the compass of my observation. In less than a year after we came to Williamsburg, a large house near the Capitol became vacant known by the name of the English Coffee House, and that which we lived in lying much out of the way for any kind of business, we were advised to take this, tho' the rent was larger. I thereupon consulted my good friend Mr. Walthoe, who showed no aversion to the thing, but said if we came into the proposal, he would not only do us all the service in his power, but apply himself to Mr. Wetherburn (the Person who had the letting of it) in our behalf. At our request he did so and Mr. Weatherburn and I in his presence came to the following agreement.

I to take a Lease of the House for Three years, certain at the Rent of Forty pounds a year, for which Mr. Walthoe to become bound; He to put and keep the House in good repair, and in case it answered my purpose, and suited my farther inclination, I to have the liberty (upon the same terms) of taking a further Lease either of Three, Six or Seven years more, just at my option.

Mr. Wetherburn to induce me to come up to this Rent, assured me moreover I should have the use of a Billiard Table, the best he said in the Country; upon my promise only of leaving it in as good a Condition as I found it, which being but reasonable I readily complied with. But notwithstanding this agreement to which Mr. Walthoe was the only witness, within two days, one Coln. Bird happening to come to Town, he sold the Table to him for Thirty Five pounds. Mr. Walthoe, however, desired me to pass over this matter. I had been a month in the House when Mr. Wetherburn came with the Leases to be executed. He brought with him Mr. Walthoe as my security. One Mr. Swan who drew the Lease, and one Mr. Thomas Carter to be the Witnesses. The Lease at my request was read; whereupon I took notice that the article concerning Repairs, and that also for granting me a further Lease, was omitted. Mr. Wetherburn very readily acknowledged our agreement, and declared the omissions were not made by his direction. Mr. Swan took the fault entirely upon himself. said it was owing to inapprehension or forgetfulness; observed however, that what related to repairs was quite superfluous and unnecessary, as the Laws and Customs of the Country if not otherwise particularly stipulated, always obliged Landlords to keep Houses in proper Repair; Appealing to Mr. Walthoe for the truth of what he asserted: who said he believed what Mr. Swan had affirmed might be true. As to the further grant of a Lease, he said Mr. Wetherburn's worth and honor were so well known, that no body who had any themselves would scruple taking his word for anything of much greater consequence; and hoped I would not give the trouble of drawing fresh Leases, and the Company that of another meeting upon so unnecessary an occasion. But I still persisted in not subscribing without the last mentioned alteration at least; Mr. Swan expressed great amazement in this exclamation, What! do you distrust or do you doubt of Mr. Wetherburn's honor? adding that no person, right himself, could ever entertain any such jealousy or suspicion. And Mr. Walthoe, uneasy, I believe, to see me so reflected on, and conscious of his own sincerity and honour, with his accustomed candour and calmness saying, I dare say Mr. Fisher you may rely safely on Mr. Wetherburn's word; and he desired all persons to bear witness. Mr. Wetherburn now making a formal and solemn declaration of both the conditions to which I signed directly without any further hesitation.

Being soon tired of this Public Business to which I had made great and many objections, I with my Good Friends consent, quitted it, and stuck to my dealing in Coffee, Tea, Chocolate, Arrack, Claret, Madeira and other Wines, English Beer, French Brandy, Rum, and several other articles, both from Europe, New York, Philadelphia, and the West Indies, proposing too



as my house was large and in front particularly, to divide and let it out into several distinct Tenements. I entered on my House the 29th September 1751; and I made this alteration about the Christmas following; vizt. Four months after. I had not entered upon executing this last Resolution above a Fortnight or Three weeks before a strange Mortal stalked into my house, in the garb or habit of one of our Common Soldiers (a thing then rarely to be met with, tho' extremely it seems affected by this singular Person whom I had then not the least knowledge of) and demanded to see some of my rooms, which he was informed I proposed to let. He had no servant with him, but an arrogant, haughty carriage, which in the opinion of most men is a necessary or inseparable accomplishment in what they call a Person of Note, would at once indicate to you that in his own thoughts he was a Person of no mean Rank or Dignity. The pride of sometimes putting on mean clothes or going unattended, I had seen before, but none to appear to me so ridiculously as now. However, I showed him my rooms, and treated him with the same deference and respect as even in his own sentiments he had a right to expect, supposing also I had known him. We had some talk about the price of several apartments, but he soon let me understand that his design was upon my whole House, he modestly proposing that I should resign the Lease I had taken of it to him, and take off from his hands another house in Town which he had hired, but did not like, tho' to evince his great kindness and condescension in the matter, he assured me the house, which he proposed to favor me with, was a much better one than mine, would come at less rent and would likewise suit my intended business better—and he named the house to me—vizt. that which Dr. Dixon lately quitted, As to which house was the best, I assured him it was a matter that I would not presume to dispute; but humbly craved his leave to be of a different opinion as to the convincing of dividing it into various departments. Its vicinity also to the Capitol, as I likewise craved leave to inform him, gave it the preference in humble apprehension, as its situation for business, in which I said I chiefly depended; besides—as I ventured to observe, the roominess of mine when Mr. Wetherburn had repaired it would enable me to let out so much thereof as would absolutely pay the whole of my rent, reserving what would be quite sufficient to carry on my own business. To this he replied I was under a great mistake, and delusion if I preferred to think Mr. Wetherburn would ever repair the House while I continued in it, or would grant me any further Lease when the Three Years was expired; that he would not have me flatter myself with the vain idea of reaping any of the benefits I had proposed; for I should only deceive myself therein. The best thing I could do was to take his generous offer, and that if I did not, I should surely repent it. To all which I only entreated he would allow me to suspend my thinking Mr. Wetherburn had any intention of acting so dishonourably by me; and that I must at least experience somewhat of what he was pleased to assure me should happen, before it was in my power to believe it possible. Upon my saying this, he turned immediately out of the house seemingly very much offended. However in



less than an hour, he sent his servant who informed me it was his master's order that I should attend him immediately at Mr. Wetherburn's, and on my inquiring of the servant who his master was, he seemed surprised at my not knowing that it was Col: Lee, eldest Son and heir to the late President of the Council. On my arrival at Mr. Wetherburn's the noble Col: with a haughtiness peculiar to himself (as being in the superlative degree to any I had ever beheld, even in this Country) informed me that since I refused to credit him on the affair we had been talking about, he had sent for me to receive satisfaction upon the subject from Mr. Wetherburn himself, and closing the whole of his genteel behaviour with observing, if I still persisted in my obstinacy in refusing him my house I might have time to repent of it. He turned from me with an air of what they call a Gentleman.

Mr. Wetherburn did not however think proper to disown his promise of a further Lease, but denied his being under any engagement to repair the House, swearing by his Maker that if I would not part with it to Col. Lee, the house should not be repaired by him. This occasioned some words between us, but I quickly came away, and repaired directly to one Mr. Benja. Walker, an Atty of great practice, showed him my Lease, and acquainted him with the whole agreement. One of the witnesses to the Lease (Mr. Thos. Carter) chanced to be his own Clerk (tho' as I have since found a dependent on Wetherburn, being in his debt) and he being now present, when I made the relation to his master, Mr. Walker turning to him, said,—“I see Tom you are one of the witnesses to this agreement, pray tell me what you know of it.” His clerk showed an unwillingness to talk at all upon the subject, and when urged, declared he remembered but little of the matter. He admitted, I for some time was Serupulous, and refused to sign, but upon what particuilar occasion would not undertake to say, or what verbal promises Mr. Wetherburn had made. Mr. Waller, before we parted, gave me for Law that a verbal promise attested by two witnesses, would be binding: said it would be advisable for me, (in case of death or other accident) to get under the witnesses hands what they knew of the affair. Carter I found either would or could remember nothing. Swan who drew the Deeds, and argued so strenuously for my relying on Mr. Wetherburn, however, lived now a great distance off. So I wrote to him the whole state of the case, conjuring in the name and for the sake of Justice and Truth, to favor me with what he knew of the affair under his hand, acquainting him at the time with Mr. Waller's opinion of the necessity of my taking this step. But he would never vouchsafe me any answer: and two Persons of my acquaintance who had an opportunity of seeing and mentioning the thing particularly to him, assure me Mr. Swan's memory is no better than Mr. Carter's and that he is very averse towards recollecting any matters that may prove disagreeable to Mr. Wetherburn.

On My application to Mr. Walthoe, the other witness who it may be presumed had never been bought by Mr. Wetherburn, but on account of his being my security for the Rent, the worthy gentleman with his accustomed

clearness and generosity wrote thus: "I very well remember Mr. Wetherburn promised to put the House into good Repairs and to grant a further Lease when required and shall be ready at any time when called upon to attest the same upon Oath. N. Walthoe."

Whether this disingenuous behaviour in Mr. Wetherburn was the result of his own mind, or that he was prompted thereto by Col. Lee, is not in my power to determine: but certain it is this last gentleman was far from being pleased when we parted and it was not long before I had a further confirmation of it. A friend of mine at Richmond in Surry (anxious for our welfare) by the means of a Brother of Lord Chief Baron Clive, obtained a recommendatory letter from Sir William Gooch our late Governor, to the late President Col. Lee the Father of this said Gentleman the present Col. Lee. But my friend had no sooner obtained this letter, and was looking out for the first ship to send it by, when he saw in the Public Papers an account of Col. Lee's death. However, he sent me the letter with an account of Sir William Gooch's death also. My friend had likewise enclosed Sir William's letter to Mr. Clive, wherein I and my family were mentioned with peculiar tenderness and affection. Sir William in this letter assures Mr. Clive of what he had so earnestly solicited of him in my behalf, Countenance, Favour and Protection in Virginia,—adding he wished his friend would have waited till he Sir William came to London, as he should then have bettered the recommendations of Mr. Adair, who it seems (and I wish I had known it before I left London) is the real secretary of this Colony; Mr. Nelson being no other than his Deputy. These letters which arrived soon after this Mr. Lee and I had posted as above, I delivered to him the next time he came to my door, and he stopped my passage to read them which when he had done he very gravely returned me that of Sir William's to Mr. Clive, saying: That I suppose belongs to you, and putting the other into his pocket stalked off without uttering another word. As Sir William Gooch was dead as well as his Father, I should not have been startled at this cool neglect, had I never offended him by not quitting my house; for I am experimentally convinced they are utterly void of all sensations, unconnected with their mean pleasures, interests or revenge. This I am now obliged to acknowledge is in general their just character, tho' I would even yet fain persuade myself there are some few exceptions. Tho' while I am writing this I am informed this same Col. Philip Lee has obtained the title of Honourable by being appointed one of the Council. I hope never to have any more to do with him, being fully persuaded no further knowledge or acquaintance with me can ever be to my advantage.

Notwithstanding the menaces of this worthy mortal, that I should repent my not letting have my Lease, we went on extremely well, and as I had foreseen, I let out into Tenements as much as amounted to Forty-Six pounds a year, receiving also much the better and larger part for my own use. I had too as much business as we really wished for and my stock, the very considerable my own; and besides a number of debts due to me in Trade I could and did frequently assist others on an emergency

with Twenty or Thirty Pistoles at a time; but this flourishing situation unhappily attracted the envy and rancour of many people besides my Landlord. But the enemy of greatest consequence which yet appeared openly was one Mr. John Holt a merchant and the then Mayor of this City. This man was a friend and a known dependent of the honourable William Nelson Esq., but it was utterly unaccountable what could induce him to become my enemy. I never did nor aimed to do him the least injury in my Life, tho' he maintained an intimacy with my Son, a Boy of 17 years of age, very disadvantageous to me. He was obliged to me for laying out large sums of money with him frequently for Goods, for which he was always duly paid in Cash, a thing here not extremely common, he never dealing with me, except once for two dozens of Maderia Wine when for goodness, there was none such elsewhere to be had.

This smooth . . . fellow, one day to my great surprise lodged a complaint against me in the Court where he was Mayor for selling Rum to Negroes contrary to Law. In my defence, I told the Court I craved no other favour than strict and impartial Justice, desiring Mr. Holt might produce his evidence in support of his information. Upon which he took notice of the great difficulty he was under in that case, as the Law did not admit a Negro to be an evidence against a white person. But to blow off his . . . , I acquainted the Court, that I made not the least objection to the Negro evidence, and if Mr. Holt would produce but one such of a reputable character, as a Negro, who would only say, I had ever let a Negro have any spirituous liquors without the leave or order of the Master or Mistress, or any person whatever in less quantity than a Pint, I should esteem it a just reason for a restraining my selling; that no Negro had ever been served with Rum by my family, I would not presume to say, but I would undertake to affirm that not one merchant in the Town who sold Rum at all was so cautious of letting any Negro be supplied with rum, without a written or Verbal leave as myself. That it was very well known my family had been frequently ridiculed for being scrupulous in this matter, and I was ready to prove, if they would give me leave, by indisputable evidence, that my family had turned away two Negroes in one day, for the want of such authority, who went directly from my house to Mr. Holt's, and was then served without the least scruple whatever. This put the Court in a flame, and I was openly ordered to be silent. But one of the Magistrates, Mr. John Blair, a gentleman whom I had not the least acquaintance with, stood up, and said he thought I had as just a right to accuse Mr. Holt—tho' one of that Bench—of an offence, as he had accused me, Justice being no respecter of Persons. However, Mr. Holt saying he had no other ground for his information, save Common Fame, and I telling, tho' not of the Court they were as well acquainted with common fame as Mr. Holt could be, they inclined to drop the affair.

But one Mr. John Greenhow another merchant in Town (infamously remarkable for trafficking with Negroes in wine, or any other commodity, Sunday not excepted) requesting to have his Lease extended another year. Mr. Holt stood up again, and in a sanctified speech, informed the Court

that he never heard of Mr. Greenhow being guilty of the practice of selling liquor to Negroes—whereupon addressing myself to the bystanders, as well as the Court, I desired all present to take notice what an arrant strumpet this same Common Fame was, who had informed this worthy Gentleman Mr. Holt of my being guilty of this vile practice; and of Mr. Greenhow's innocence of the Fact; this put the Court again in a hubbub, and I was again called to order; one of the Justices, Mr. Prentis, telling me they desired some of my compassions. Yet all this was done so publicly in the face of the whole town, it was thought proper to allow me the liberty of selling as usual and to refuse Mr. Greenhow. Nevertheless, I was since informed by Mr. Holt's or some greater influence Mr. Greenhow had the liberty granted the next Court Day. This affair happened I think in March 1754.

Tho' Mr. Holt failed here in executing his own (or I know not whose) malice, Providence was very soon pleased to put in his power to glut the most rancorous disposition; and he did not neglect the opportunity; for on Saturday the 24th of April 1754, about 8 in the Evening, I being just got to bed my Daughter alarmed me with the cry of Fire at a neighbor's house, one Mr. Palmer, an Atty; there was our good friend Mr. Walthoe's house only between which and us; the apartment where the fire began was a back room or counting house joining to a store next Mr. Walthoe's, which was let to a merchant (Mr. Asborn) who was gone to England to fetch over his Family, and by the neglect of his Brother-in Law who kept the Store in his absence, in leaving a fire too carelessly in the said room, while he staid longer than he intended at a Public House, the floor first caught and then the window curtains. With any tolerable management, the fire might easily been extinguished, but nothing was sure for a great while but uproar, confusion and disorder. Some person, whether with a good or bad intention, was never known, gave the word that there was a large quantity of Gun Powder in the store, which struck a general terror for a considerable time, and the rope to my well, the nearest and only water within a good way, was broke or cut after drawing the first or second bucket. Mr. Palmer's well indeed was close by the room where the fire kindled, but the Cry of the Gun Powder hindered that from being used till it grew too hot to stand at all in that place. The running off with the goods was the chief thing minded, tho' the great bugbear the Gun Powder was neglected, till at the last a Negro of Mr. Walthoe it is said, got up (it being kept just over the store or shop) and tumbled one of the barrels into the street, but the flames having then burst into that room also, the man was obliged to jump down himself to save his life. This was a little less than an hour after the fire was discovered. When the Powder Caught, the whole roof, (covered with shingles, indeed we have no other) was in a blaze. Between the East end of Mr. Walthoe's house and this in flames, was a void space of about Thirty foot, and the wind directly at west, a strong Gale, so that but from the effects of the Gun Powder, there was no great danger, or had his house been covered with Tile slate or any other material not combustible, it had nevertheless remained safe. But

the explosion of the Gun Powder, (the roof then all in a blaze) scattered the firebrands upon Mr. Walthoe's house, already heated or dyed like tinder by the adjacent flames, set his house also instantly in a blaze. Had his house been covered with wet bags or blankets, that would have preserved it, but for more than an hour not a ladder (or other useful implement) could hardly be met with. My Pails, Buckets, Tubs, Axes, Spades etc. etc. were indeed delivered immediately, but except the well bucket which was secured at the bottom of the well, I never received one thing any more. The Capitol tho' more than 200 feet distant was by its eastern situation in great danger of being burnt a second time, the shingles catching several times. But that being better attended and supplied with water etc, etc, it was preserved, tho' at a considerable expense, the assistants there being well paid: whereas, save what Mr. Walthoe gave out of his own Pocket to Persons who pretended to have aided at Mr. Palmer's and his own house, the recompence of the helpers in general, consisted in what they ran away with, of the substance of the sufferers. Between the West end of Mr. Walthoe's and the East end of my house, was a void space of no more than about four foot. Yet as the explosion was over, without affecting me, and the wind continued to blow still strong at West, I would not suffer any of my goods to be removed out of my house, which was then beset by great numbers of lazy negroes, calmly viewing the Bon Fire. I spoke to a knot of those, exhorting them very civilly to assist in drawing or fetching water, etc, but received a surly reply with an Oath of who will pay us? But my good friend, Mr. John Holt, the Chief Magistrate, countenanced and supported by many others no better affected to me than himself, at this instant authorized and commanded these Black Spectators to level or pull down my house to the ground, under the pretence of its being for the Public good by preventing the flames spreading farther into the Town. Several of these worthy Patriots too insisting that it was the property of Fire to run against the wind. This Righteous order was no sooner issued, than these Lazy fellows became the most active industrious people in the world. For in a moment my doors which I had locked or barred, were all broke open, and every part of my house filled with Negroes innumerable, and under the pretence of assisting in my distress, ran away with whatever of my substance they thought fit. My Cellar in particular being so crowded, that they could hardly stand one by another. Every room of my house was also very full, breaking open all my chests of Drawers, Trunks, Boxes, Desks, etc., throwing my goods loose out of the windows into the street. Nor in the Scene of Confusion and destruction. was a single person, (white or black) directed to superintend or take the least care of my being robbed or plundered but on the contrary such things as Plate, Glass, China, etc, etc, was without exception, thus tossed out of the windows, into the streets, even in the view of those whose proper business it was to have protected me from such violence. And altho' this night was remarkably cold and piercing, not a single soul had the humanity in these afflicting circumstances to point out a barn or Stable to Shelter (I dont say my wife and Daughter) but my two young Children.



It is not possible for me to compute the damages I sustained in this unparalled depredation on my goods and every commodity I dealt in as well as Liquors. Of Plate only, I lost seven table and Five or Six tea Spoons and a silver hilted sword; a Silver Mug. These thrown out of a Chamber Window were luckily secured by one Mr. Taspley of this place, the moment it was picked up by another person; and another large handsome Sword brass mounted with a Silver gripor was carried off, tho' recovered Six months afterwards by the peculiarity of its make as described in the publick Paper. This had been a time in the possession of the before mentioned Mr. Greenhow, who it seems received it of his Mayor. An exploit like this, one would think, must have fully satisfied the vengeance of not only Col. Lee, Mr. Holt, and Mr. Wetherburn, but of every other envious or malicious mortal, but it was far otherwise. Before I quit this extraordinary piece of business, it is necessary that I should observe that just as all the injury that could well be done to me was completed, and that part of our substance, carried into the garden, (the fences of which being all thrown down) and My Wife and Children as a guard shivering around it. At this time a Gentleman (Mr. Benjm. Grymes) arrived and seeing the mob so busy in pulling down the house, desired to know the meaning of the shocking violence which had been committed; he put an immediate stop to their outrage, intimating that they might easily make themselves sensible of the absurdity of the inhuman order, by turning their faces to the wind, and stepping up himself upon the East end of my house next the flames with the aid of three or four such hands, stopped entirely the spreading of the Fire without any further devastation.

"My circumstances being now so reduced, I turned my mind toward my former plan of going to Philadelphia in search of employment. In a kind letter from Mr. Nelson Dated — he said to me, if you think of any thing in which I can really serve you, you may freely apply to me."

The young Man whose name was Armstrong, brother-in-law to Mr. Osborne with whom the case of the store was intrusted, and to whose neglect the breaking of the fire is attributed, soon after his Brother's arrival, took a large dose of sublimate, which with great torture put an end to his days. This extraordinary act of power was I think the last that ever Mr. Holt was concerned in, in this country, for in less than a month he quitted the place, leaving many of his creditors in the lurch, such especially who were not in the premeditated scheme of breaking. He is gone it seems to New York and some of his cronies dont scruple to say, he will still become a greater man than ever. This honest man's goods and effects, being to be sold off June 11th at Public out cry, the honourable Wm. Nelson and John Robinson Esqrs., being the Trustees, and Mr. John Palmer an Attorney at Law, being the Chief Actor or Clerk to this Trust, I among many others attended this sale; and it unhappily falling out, that one Col. Bolling, a descendant from the famous Emperor Powhatan, tho' a person quite unknown to me, had a mind for the two things which I had bid for, instead of Civilly desiring me to desist, both times insulted me very coarsely. Mr. Wetherburn also happening to be there, took the



opportunity of doing the same, telling Col. Bolling he should have the pleasure of joining with him in turning me out of the house I lived in, swearing moreover, it should never be repaired or enclosed any more, so long as I continued in it. Is not this strange treatment of a Person who had never given the least cause of offence to one single creature in the Colony?

One of the articles, I had bought and about which I had been insulted was a Tea-Table, and the next day I sent for it; but my servant returned without it, saying Mrs. Holt the wife of the Bankrupt bid her tell me, that I should not have it, for that it was, bought by her. I then sent my Daughter, who was acquainted a little in the family with my compliments to Mrs. Holt, that if there was any thing I had purchased which she had an inclination to, I should be very ready to oblige her with; but begged I might not be treated with rudeness or contempt. To this, she as rudely replied, she would be under no obligation in the matter, for the Table she had bought and would Keep. Whereupon, I waited upon Mrs. Holt myself, setting the whole affair in a clear light before her, as that it was upon my purchasing his very utensil that Col. Bolling the most insulted me; that Mr. Palmer the Clerk in particular was by, and a witness to my purchase; which however, as I had offered before, I was willing to relinquish to oblige her; but that I should not willingly submit to the scandals of claiming a thing as my property, which was another's. She still maintained her ridiculous haughty obstinacy in saying she would keep the Table without being obliged to me; for that Mr. Norton had bought it for her, and Mr. Palmer was a witness to it. Upon this I asked her whether she was willing that Mr. Palmer should determine the dispute? She said she was. This if I mistake not was on a Saturday, and the Monday after, meeting Mr. Palmer at the Court of Hustings, I called him aside acquainting him with the whole affair, informed him too, Mrs. Holt and I had agreed to make him our Lord Chancellor, requesting he would upon honor declare which of us bought the Mahogany Tea Table in dispute? He without the least hesitation replied, "Mrs. Holt." I asked him again, if he was sure, being he would recollect himself: but with the utmost steadfastness, he persisted in affirming he was sure it was Mrs. Holt. Whereupon I said no more than,—By my own agreement, it was now Mrs. Holt's right. Some day after, Mr. Palmer called upon me to give bond for the payment of what I had bought (on six months credit.) I informed him, I should give him the money but as I was not thoroughly satisfied about the Tea Table, I first expected a sight of his original paper, wherein he entered the Persons names, who bought the goods as they were cryed out. This a little and but a little confounded him, for soon recollecting himself, he confessed that my name had been first originally entered upon the paper to the article in dispute, but had been afterwards cancelled, and Mr. Norton's inserted thereof. On my asking by whom this change or alteration was made, he said he did not know, it was not done by him; and on my saying it was what he ought to have known, he replied Mr. Price kept the paper sometimes as well as him. Having however thus

acquired a thorough insight into this dexterous piece of Legerdemain I paid my money without any more words.

Had Mr. Palmer, who (tho' a neighbor) was a very stranger to me, or any other person, but said to me upon this occasion. "Mr. Fisher upon the presumption of your being a good natured man, I have taken the liberty of obliging Mrs. Holt with a piece of furniture which you bought and she has a mind to: I should have thanked him and esteemed his open manner of doing it, as an instance of his favour and good opinion of me. But to do it in the above forging, clandestine way like a Thief or a Pick Pocket (setting aside the scandal which he aimed to throw upon me) is a piece of low, dirty drudgery, which Jonathan Wild would have scrupled giving his assent to, unless he had been very well paid for it. Mr. Palmer became now a very busy agent for Mr. Wetherburn against me, and beginning now to perceive or experimentally feel the Truth of what Mr. Randolph had affirmed in our Passage, tho' neither I or any of my family had given any mortal any just cause of offence, unless our being overcautious of offending may be counted criminal. I determined on representing my case to Mr. Nelson in order to acquit my mind of some jealousy concerning his favoring the injurious assaults I had met with, and at the worst hoping to obtain from him that recommendation to Philadelphia he once proffered me. Accordingly reciting few only, of the injuries and oppressions I laboured under the Lees and Wetherburns and my treatment at the fire, I was particular in, I concluded, (without a view of redress) that I was inclined to accept of the generous offer he once made me; of a recommendation to Philadelphia. In answer to my very humble representation, I received a letter from him dated June 18, 1754, full of haughty sneers and illnatured unkind taunts (too much the wit of this Country). He affects to receive the particular instances of cruelty and injustice I had exhibited, as a general charge against the whole Country; who (he affectedly says) I think have not been remarkable for their inhumanity. The particular reasons you may have for such a charge, I am a stranger to; nor do I care to enter into their defence, nor to say that a part may be owing to the uneasiness of our own disposition: But since you have represented yourself as a Just and Innocent man, injuriously used, give me leave to say, that if you have followed the practice of retailing Liquors to Servants and Slaves as is generally reported, and believed (the very words of Mr. Holt) you have not been that inoffensive harmless member of society you would seem to be; however I shall not dispute with you about it. He however closed this benevolent epistle by telling me if I have a mind to try a more hospitable Climate, he will give me such a letter as he thinks can answer. I had (foolishly enough) enclosed one of yours and one of Mr. W. D. Doswell's letters with the vain view of persuading him, that I was once in the esteem of worthy men of no mean figure but this only procured me a disdainful taunt in a Postscript in these words: "I return the enclosed, as they may afford some pleasure to you, tho' none to me." Convinced as I was by this letter that his Honor bore me no good will and however persuaded by the

similitude of expressions, that what Mr. Holt had attempted against me at the Court of Hustings at least was Comfortable to the sentiments of Mr. Nelson, besides no person, (they two excepted) having made the least mention, or even a jealousy of any such matter; and having moreover received a number of other injuries and insults from the friends or dependents of Mr. Nelson. I determined on showing my resentment in a letter to him, tho' I shall first observe, my poor wife, struck with the Idea of his greatness, and the dread of consequence, in my contending with so potent an adversary, came to such a difference with me upon what I expressed on my reception of the above mentioned letter of June 18th that she separated bed and board from me. It is likewise to be noted that by Mr. Wetherburn's rancorous proceedings in not allowing the ruined part of my house to be repaired or the Pailing made good, whereby I lay open and exposed to many injuries. My habitation was broke open the ensuing winter no less than five times and I robbed of things of considerable value. Two of these times the Thieves were taken and my goods found upon them. First, a woman taken up at Norfolk, about 60 miles from this place who had robbed us of all my wife and Daughters best linen etc, which had escaped the plunderers at the fire such as Headcloaths, Fine Aprons, Handkerchiefs, etc, etc, great part of which she was possessed of when taken. This woman being conveyed from One Parish Officer to another till she arrived at Williamsburg, in order to be secured in the Publick Gaol; happening at last to fall into the hands of Mr. John Palmer, the officer of this Parish, the dexterous and ingenious Gentleman concerned in transferring the Tea Table before mentioned, from me to Mrs. Holt. He no sooner viewed the Warrant and perceived the Woman was in Custody for robbing of me only, than he threw the warrant upon the ground with the utmost contempt, bidding the woman go about her business, for he would have no concern in stopping of her. This honest Gentleman as well as Parish Officer is an Attorney too, and cannot pretend to say, he is ignorant of the importance of these matters to the Publick. The Thief, however escaped, and I lost all my Goods. The first time after this that I saw Mr. Palmer, I asked him very civilly, whether I or any of my Family had at any time ever offended him or his family, or attempted to prejudice or injure any of them. He with a down, lowering look, habitual to him, doggedly replied, No— They never had offended him or his. My reason for asking him the question, I told him, was, his favouring the woman's escape that Robbed me. Without offering at any sort of reason for his Conduct, he only in the same manner repeated his same words, No— we had never any of us offended him or his. The next Burglary detected, was about a Fortnight after: a man on whom was found The Silver Mug which had so miraculously escaped at the Fire, and a Silver Sause Pan; the man confessed the Fact, was committed to Jail. One of the Magistrates, who was present at the examination and commitment of this man (Benjn. Waller Esqr, by name, an intimate friend of both the Mr. Nelsons) and had not then heard of what manner the woman was let go, but expecting to have fastened the crime upon me, observed to my Daughter

who then attended, I not being very well; that he hoped her Father was not concerned in letting the Thief escape. But when she set forth the real State of the case, letting his worship know that Mr. Palmer had the sole merit of that transaction, The offence vanished, nor was it then necessary to say one syllable more of the matter; and what was as extraordinary as the rest, in about a fortnight more, this very fellow was released out of Prison, without Judge or Jury or any kind of Tryal whatever. Exasperated by such varieties of base injuries, I drew up a long remonstrance of Eight Folios of paper Containing an account of most of the sufferings by unworthy treatment, we had endured from the time of our landing at York to that Day, Vizt: Feby 4th, 1755, observing likewise, that I had received more foul actions, or behaviour from People who were known to be his Honours Friends or Dependants, and sometimes under his immediate Eye; than from any other. As you will probably have an opportunity of seeing both it and the answer, I shall not particularly transcribe either, here. I gave vent to some of the bitterness of Spirit, which I had felt, and I did not sometimes refrain imitating his honours taunting way of writing, not but I could have been better pleased with myself, could I still have subdued my spirit. His honor's answer to mine of Feby 14th, is dated, York, Feby 15th and contains 12 Folios. The two first of which (sneers excepted) is taken up in vainly labouring to reconcile his behaviour in regard to the Tea, to generosity, Friendship and good nature. He cavils at my saying the Tea deposited as Security became forfeited if the Principal and Interest of the money borrowed thereon was not discharged in Four months. This he affirms being no part of our agreement, and to this I can only appeal to the Instrument in his possession. The money was lent me he says in September, which I believe is very true—"and no good price (continues he) for the Tea," offering in some time, it was (I think) "in Feby, following that which we came to a bargain for a Chest of it, the rest of the Tea was sent to you at Williamsburg to make the most of, and no security left with me for the ballance of £70. 6. 1. which was paid me by Mrs. Fisher in April following." He triumphantly goes on—"Does not this prove etc?" To all which, I could have replied; No—it proves nothing but that his honor is utterly mistaken. For the agreement, he says we made for a Chest of Tea in Feby was in the October Court before, and I should presume his own books and book-keeper will attest that the Chest of Tea was opened and a good deal of it sold long before February. It was indeed in Feby: and not before, that in honour in answer to mine informing him that his money was ready to his order; tells me I need not give myself the trouble, for the General Court would be time enough. So the money was not paid till March, nor was the Tea removed from his House till after the money was paid. And as to my embarking my whole family in the same bottom with my goods, being a reason for my not Claiming the Insurance in my account, appears to me too weak for an answer. But if this money was lent me at my first motion, as his honour positively affirms, I have then doubtless most egregiously wronged him. What is said about Gooding setting aside the

Sneers, is of very little consequence, and the argument about the Fire is too abstruse for my comprehension; and as to what is said of Holt's dependency, his honor puts it entirely out of dispute, His Honor and Mr. Holt being the only Person that to my knowledge had ever Charged me, and in the same Phrase almost; with selling Liquors illegally. The ones expression being on "Common Fame" the other "Reports and Beliefs," and I having defied both to produce a single instance of the Fact; was, I confess, what chiefly induced me to fancy they had previously talked of the matter. But upon this head, I had, it seems recommended to his honors consideration the words of our Saviour upon the Woman taken in Adultery, when I assure him, that tho' it was not in his power to Convict me of dealing unlawfully with slaves. Yet it was in my power to convict him of doing so. That I myself (who had never been Five times in his Store in my life.) had seen a Negro change a Pistole and lay out Sixteen Shillings of it in his store in the veriest baubles in the world, where in too he was encouraged and allured by the store-keeper. His honour's arguments being extreme nice and judicious, I will transcribe. "As to dealing with servants and slaves, the Legislature were obliged to forbid everything of the sort, as it was not possible to preserve a distinction between such traffick (if they allowed any) as might be innocent; and that which would be injurious to them and their Master's service. Yet doubtless a principal cause of the prohibition was to prevent their being supplied with Spirituous Liquors which deprives them of their small share of reason and make them untractable and unfit for their servitude; and if they (the Legislature) could have enforced such a distinction I presume they would not have been so Cruel as to prohibit their furnishing themselves with such necessities or trifles as they may incline to buy with the produce of that small portion of labour those unhappy creatures are allowed to devote to their own purposes. But (adds his Honor) "I agree with you that the whole is illegal, and therefore not defensible as I do etc, I think (says his Honor, in a paragraph preceding this last) "That the only part of my conduct towards you that can furnish a pretence of suspecting me of ill will or resentment against you, is my Letter in which I touched upon the Practice of selling Liquors to Servants and Slaves, and the reason of my doing it was not so much to Convince you that you were not an inoffensive man to Society; as in hopes to give a check to that unprofitable and disagreeable correspondence you had opened with me etc. As this last wears the face of openness and Truth, I allow it some sort of merit, but surely it would have been more genteel and less severe to have forbid a disagreeable correspondence with the utmost austerity and ill nature, without assigning any reason, rather than to seek for an excuse in ungrounded scandal and defamation (too much the mode of this country) to the ruin of a person's Character, when perhaps it is the only support or comfort he has in the world. There is a sincerity which I don't wholly dislike in his honours regarding recommendations as a modern custom only of Shifting from Friend, as it in a great measure accounts for his behaviour towards one, and for aught I know there may be



too much Truth in the observation. Yet I am sure there are some exceptions, and whereas He demands what I expected he should say or do to Bolling, Holt, Palmer, Wetherburn, and others who have injured me, I can only repeat what has already been hinted to him. That had any of these people known or believed me to have been in the least degree of favor with his honor, or at all under his protection, not a single soul of them would ever have dared to have wronged or insulted me.

Favour, Countenance, and Protection in what was Legal, Just and right, (only) being all I ever craved, hoped or expected. By this (my good Friend) and much more which you will clearly perceive might have been justly urged had I been at all ambitious of a dispute or Controversy with this great man: you will be satisfied I indulged no such appetite (supposing I had any such) for quitting all the advantages that Truth and his weak cavils afforded me; I kept my mind almost entirely on the last Paragraph of his Letter, which was this "Yet if you think of any thing, in which I can really serve you." You may freely apply, and laying aside any Resentment; you at least may have raised in my breast; I will endeavor to show you how far a gloomy and suspicious temper of mind may lead a man astray, in forming his Judgment of anothers conduct towards him. I am etc.

Instead I say, of imitating by controverting of Facts some few expected relating to the judgment or opinion he had formed on my conduct or character, founded on conjecture or suspicion only: but this with all the delicacy and caution, in my Power: My endeavors were Chiefly employed in using such arguments as might tend to Mitigate or extinguish the Resentment, he seemed, himself so generously inclined to subdue: intimating, at last my determination of proceeding to Brittain early in the approaching summer (if my circumstances, or ability would allow me to do so.) This I sent to him the close of March, or very early in April; and in a letter dated York, April 7, 1755. He returned me a kind and very friendly answer; assuring me of his desire of doing any thing in his power to change the face of our affairs, inviting me for that End to some Conversation with him in Williamsburg, that week on the subject, proposing in the mean time, to my consideration, my taking a trip to Philadelphia this Spring; it being (as he said) more than probable by the help of a letter which he should give me to a leading man there, I should get into some agreeable Business. That of 8 or 10 Pistoles were wanting to defray the charge, they were at my command. Yet after all (he adds) if that hope should fail, and I should still desire to embark for England, I will endeavor to make your voyage as easy and of as little expense to you as I can. Tho many perhaps at my time of Life would have made some difficulty in undertaking such a Journey, I entertained the proposal with the utmost alacrity and satisfaction, and the affair was soon settled and concluded on between us. Tho' I declined taking any money of Mr. Nelson, in order to arm against the worst that might happen, I accepted of a draught of Twelve Pistoles on Mr. Allin, the Person I was recommended to; not purposing to produce it unless I was distressed.



Mr. Nelson's letter which he gave me open, was in the Kindest and warmest terms that can be conceived; saying also much more in my behalf, than I could either have desired or hoped for. Mr. Walthoe who neither aimed to retard or encourage this Business; when he found it resolved on, resolved within himself it should not fail for want of his aid, so he furnishe me with money, obliging me to take a Doubloon more, after I had received what I had declared fully sufficient; which indeed enabled me to purchase the Horse I was to Ride, that otherwise I should only have hired. My wife, as I was informed (for we never conversed since the falling out with Mr. Nelson) had no good opinion of the adventure, but compared it with that of our coming to Virginia; so I set out without taking any leave of her, or in Truth, of any one of my Family; not as they were unacquainted with the supply I had of Mr. Walthoe, I believe they imagined it was utterly out of my power to have procured. My Horse etc, etc, being overnight prepared at Mr. Lyons, I set out on my Journey on Monday Morning May 12th, 1755, about 4 o'clock, just as Day was breaking. As I lay in a separate Building, detached from the rest of our Habitation and alone; It was easy for me to remove without disturbing any Part of my Family. On Monday May the 12th, 1755 at Day Break, about half an hour after Four in the morning, I left Williamsburg to proceed by God's permission to Philadelphia. My Horse tho' of a tolerable size, extremely poor and weak, having in appearance been greatly abused, About Eight o'clock; by a slow Pace, I arrived at Chiswell's Ordinary. Two Planters in the Room, I went into were at Cards (all Fours) but on my arrival, retired into an inner Room. A letter directed to John Palmer Esqr, at Williamsburg lay upon a Table, which several Persons who were going thither viewed, but neither of them took the trouble of conveying it as directed; a common neglect, it seems, unless it happens to be an acquaintance, or the Person has a mind to see the Inside of the Letter, a Practice often Complained on. I breakfasted on Tea, and gave my Horse some oats, there being no corn, Hay or other Fodder to be had. Set out a little after Nine, past Ashleys, something after Ten, where was a number of Planters at Nine Pins; and came to Claibornes about Twelve. Was an hour in passing here; by making a long slant up the River, upon the account of large marshes. This River is called Pamunkey, being the South branch of York River. After feeding my Horse, I set out again about Two: past Mills Ordinary at Three, where were likewise a great Number of People at Nine Pins, and arrived at "Trapier's Ferry" at half an hour after Three; I had ordered my Horse in to the Boat with the View of Passing over, but being informed there was no Publick House on the other Side, I took up my Residence for the night here. This River called Mattapony is the North Branch of York River at this place, a mile over. This House is kept by one Mrs. Trapier (a widow) and her Son a youth of about (Sixteen) neat and obliging People. For Eating according to my general custom, I would have taken anything that was ready in the House, declining to accept some green Peas, which the good Woman offered me, as I presumed them to be, yet, a rarity; but she taking me

into the Garden in order to convince me of her having plenty of such as even wanted gathering, I consented to her motion, and she provided me with an excellent supper. My Horse and Self were extremely well taken care of; and agreeable to her promise, I was put over the River by Four next morning. He records his 1st. Days travel the 12th of May, as 36 miles—his Living 6 Shillings and 7 pence and Ferrys 2 shillings. 13th —Got over the water this morning soon after Five; and to Mann's between Eight and Nine, tho' at first setting out, I lost my way, and came to the House of one Mr. George Brooke, within view of Mr. George Braxtons. Mr. Brooke behaved very cautiously, pressed me to alight, and breakfast with him, from both which, I excused himself; but accepted a small Dram. He took great pains in describing the different turnings I should meet with, in putting me into my right Road; but perceiving the many crossings and turnings too much for my memory, he stepped into the House, and in two minutes, returned, with the true ways I was to take, so well delineated upon Paper, the distances of remarkable Places, in my ways from each other; forked Roads especially laid down with a discontinuance of that which I should avoid; that before Eight a clock, I found myself at Mann's, without going a step out of my way to ask a single question. I fed my horse with Hominy Corn, which is Indian corn. pounded in a mortar to take off the the husks in order to be boiled in Water for making a kind of food resembling Wheat when prepared for making Turnity. The People of the House, plain honest countenances, baked me what they called an English Hoe Cake, or a Cake made of Wheat Flour. with some good Butter, and as I was provided with Tea and Sugar, with which and Coffee, they hapened to be unfurnished, I made an excellent repast. I left Mann's soon after nine, and got to R———a little after Twelve. This Ordinary belongs, it seems, to one Major R——n a Person of influence in these Parts who obtains a Lysence at the County Court whereof he is himself a Member, and puts into it some Lazy Person or other, at a Salary, or so much per. cent, as is likely to pint off the greatest quantities of Liquors for him. This is a common practice in the Country, by which means, tho' the Proprietor (by the Courtesy) avoids the Reproach of being deemed an Ordinary keeper, and the scandal of what is then transacted; yet he reaps the greatest share of the Profits. The present Deputy of this Mansion, is a bold young Fellow Named D——. The House has a mean look, standing naked upon a common, without any inclosure (not so much as a Garden) about it. Podder and Oats I enquired for in Vain; but as he said he had Indian Corn, I was obliged to put up on account of my poor Horse who travelled now very faintly, and I was fearful of getting him no further this Day. My Host whom I by no means liked, had another very impudent Fellow along with him; who on coming in presented me with a part of Glass of Cyder, the relique of a bottle they had been drinking, assuring me it was right English. I declined the favour by telling them, I drank no Cyder; but desired somewhat to eat; and my Land Lord demanding what I would have; I named a Chicken, Eggs, Milk, or such things which I presumed few Houses in

the Country could well do without, but nothing of this could be had; my only choice was a picce of a broiled rusty Bacon and an Indian Hoe Cake. I desired the Hoe Cake might be got directly, without the Bacon, and in the mean time called for a Bottle of English Beer: a Bottle of which and a large Glass being brought, I drank to my Host, who filling for himself and his Companion left a little only in the bottom of the Bottle, (tho' enough for me) which however I proposed to reserve till the Hoe Cake came. Just at this Instant; a young man well behaved Gentleman (whose misfortune it was to have been in these Fellows Company before) alighted, and came in, him they helped off with a bottle of Cyder in the same manner they had done me with my Beer, a deal of low, foul obscenity, they used to this young man, who seemed mortified and much ashamed of his acquaintance (the Common consequence of being ever familiar with such wretches.). As the Gentleman found he was going Nine Miles of my Road, he courteously offered me his Company; and upon my signifying my dread that my Horse would not keep up with his, or indeed go any further that Day, He assured me he would go my pace, adding by way of encouragement; he had often known Horses, seemingly tired, go on briskly upon joining Company. This was doing me a great favor, for I really thought my staying here not safe. So, the Hoe Cake now appearing, I drank up my Beer, paid my reckoning, and set out with the Gentleman, determining to try the utmost my Horse could do, rather than tarry in this place. This absurd Pride, so frequent here for a Justice of Peace or other person of rank, putting a loose Lazy fellow into his Ordinary, with the view of avoiding the reproach of his being himself the Keeper, which in Fact he is; cannot be sufficiently exploded and continued. For in my humble sense of the matter, the disorders and irregularities committed at such houses, are often time the Consequence of very needy circumstances in the Deputy of which the real Landlord takes a base advantage. But the Landlord himself, be he as skulking as he will, betrays herein his real principles, and in the Eye of common sense is accountable for every thing that is done.

As my Companion conjectured, my Horse went better than he had done any time on my journey; and tho' it was near Two when we set out, I was at Southern's Ferry, on the South side of Rappahannock River soon after Four. I was so pleased with the Country and good nature of this young man, that in our travelling together, I inquired his name: He said it was Hill a half Brother to a young man now with Mr. Hornsby in Williamsburg, whose name is Fry; his mother as I have been since informed, marrying with the late Col. Fry, the author of a very large Map of this part of the Continent.

In coming from Mills's Ordinary, by Trapins, to Southern Ferry; I forceive, by common computation, confirmed also by my watch, there is 18 or 20 miles saved, by avoiding the Road, by Todds as laid down in the Almanacks; tho' the whole distance does not exceed Forty Miles. I was resolved in my own mind to have rested this night at Southern's, but on my approach to the House, it was no more than a mere Hut, full of

rude, mean people, and tho' some of their countenances were not quite so unpromising as those I left at Roans, they were attended with this additional discouragement to me, that they were every one, as well as the Land lord, inflamed with Liquor and exceeding turbulent and noisy; So taking a feed of Corn with me into the Boat, which my Horse eat in his passage, I crossed the River Rappahannoeks not so much as knowing or inquiring who was the real Proprietor of this last disorderly place of entertainment. In going over the River about Two miles wide, I could see Leids Town on the other side Two or Three miles up the River, the Place I now intended to rest this night in; but thro' vile direction of the Negroes who put me over the water and would not go up the Bank to set me in the right path; I was very like to have lain in the woods or marshes all the night; and must have done so, but for Two Negroes whom I luckily met with, going home from their work, who put me into a path leading to the Road that way to Leids when I did not arrive till Seven o'clock; and as near as I can guess, after 7 or 8 miles Riding I put up at one Mr. T—ts, esteemed the best Ordinary in Town, and indeed the House and Furniture, has as elegant an appearance, as any I have seen in the country. Mr. Finneys or Withbarnes in Williamsburg not excepted. The chairs Tables &c of the Room I was conducted into was all of Mahogany, and so stuff with fine large glaized Copper Plate Prints: That I almost fancied myself in Jeffriess' or some other elegant Print Shop. I had the happiness, at my first Coming in of my Landlords Company: who understanding I came from the Metropolis (and the assembly now sitting) gaped after news; he either was or affected to be troubled with the gout, for he came limping in upon a stick; When I had answered all his interrogatories, and he had picked what intelligence out of me he was able, and I calling at First for half a Pint of wine only, he vanished and I could see him no more; tho' I sent twice, (at supper and afterwards) to request the favor of his Company, in hopes naming in my turn, some useful directions, in the ensuing Days January. His excuse was, first indisposition, and afterwards that he was gone to Bed; tho' the Boy who lighted me to mine, assured me he was then sitting with his House keeper, and that not one Person had been in the House since my arrival. By what I could hear and perceive myself of this Landlord who bears the name of honest Mr. T——; he like most of his Trade, proportions his regard, to their extravagance, in which respect, I was doubtless, too contemptible for his notice. The Host: he could tell me nothing of Rout I was to take, so that I was now quite destitute of intelligence. This House stands pleasantly upon the North side of the River, and a tolerable garden, seemed to be in as decent order, as most I have seen in America. The method of Single men having House keepers, is esteemed here very reputable and genteel. In the morning while my Breakfast and Horse were getting ready, I sought after some instructions for journey; and as it happened, I found a Person up that kept a store, who gave me such another draught of the road to Foes Ferry on Potomack River, as Mr. Brooke has favoured me with: Tho' I have been since informed,

my true Route was from Southern on this Rappahanoeke River to Lovels Ferry on Potomack River, It being not only a better Road, but I should have said, at least Ten or Twelve miles, in the Riding of Thirty, the only objection being, That at Foes the River is not more than five miles wide; but at Lovels to Cedar Point (in Maryland) it is Eight or Ten, Consequently in windy weather, the passage more difficult, and unsafe: but at this time of the year, no great danger was to be apprehended. The Gentleman's name who delineated the Road for me to Hoes Ferry is Thompson.

Col. Fendals—Maryland. May 14th, 3d Days ride 24 miles, food four shillings and Ferry 7½d. Wednesday—It was after six this morning before I left Leeds Town, and I did not reach Hoes' till Two o'clock. This was a Dreary Day's Journey, tho but 24 miles, and I found my poor Beast quite tired; The way between Little Ferry and Hoes was very Hilly and uneven. Hoes Ferry is so called from the Person who keeps it. One Major Hoe. He asked me at first for a Pass and seemed scrupulous of putting me over for want of one, but on catichising me a little and giving him an aceount of the principal in and about Williamsburg, he took my four shillings and called his man to get ready the Boat. We were almost two hours in the passage. I landed in Maryland about four in the afternoon, and my horse already observed being greatly fatigued, I led him in my hand to one Col. F——s of whom, there being no Public House in many miles, I craved a Nights intertainment. We had a deal of chat, among others, we mentioned as a grievance the power and influences the Roman Catholicks possess in this Colony; from whence I concluded he is not one himself. He ordered some cold meat and small beer to be set before me, of which I fed heartily, having tasted nothing since I left Leeds Town: but he did not invite me to sup with his Family about 3 hours after, who retired into another room, when I observed several Dishes were privately ushered in; particularly a fine Basin of Strawberries, some of which with a little milk, I should have been very well pleased with; however I went to Bed. This closed my 4th Days ride being 30 miles—cost of food 10.01. Ferry 1½d. In the morning Thursday May 15th agreeable to his Promise: I found the Col. up endeavoring to draw me such a sketch of the Road as Mr. Brooks and Mr. Thompson had done, but it was a task he was not equal to; Geography I perceived was not his talent, He recommended me to put a piece a of Bread and Cheese in my Pocket, but when I craved corn for my Horse. he hesitated saying Corn began to grow Scant; however he bid the Boy give me Two or Three Ears, who gave me Four. I set out a little after five oclock, but had not traveled two miles before I lost my way thro' the wrong direction of an old Post and hand on which Annapolis was wrote, that led me into a watery unfrequented Path. I came at length to a very poor Cot in the midst of a small Field of Indian Corn, out of which came a miserable poor, sick woman, with two young children almost naked, but they could give me no directions the woman having never heard of such places as I enquired for. She bid the eldest of the children (a little girl) let me out of the Field the way which she



said would lead me to a Path; So I gave the Child Col. Pendar's Bread and Cheese, and bent my course as near as I could guess to the North East and had not traveled thus above a mile, before I perceived a Road before me go up a pretty high Hill, to which I made, and was pleased to find it lay in the course which I aimed to have. So I jogged on pretty briskly for three hours, without seeing one mortal, White or Black, till meeting with a poor man, he, to my Comfort informed me I was within 4 miles of Bryan Town, and in my right Road, observing about two hundred yards on my left hand, a tolerable House for this country, I asked the poor man what Person was the owner of it; he told me his name, but advised me not to go out of my way, for tho' he was a man of Substance, he was a very unhospitable Person. So I kept on to Bryan Town which is within more nor less than one poor Public House, the names of which I must change now from Ordinarys to Taverns. Here I found a good many people. Some drinking, others playing at Billiards, there being a very poor Table of that sort here. Two young Fellows came to me one after the other to inquire what I would please to drink; but departed instantly upon my declaring for Tea. I had then a youngish light woman attended me whom I took for the Land Lady; but she soon let me know she was only the House keeper, or servant to one of the men I had seen, and that he also was no more than a servant to the other who did not live in the Tavern, tho' he came every Day to watch the taking of the money. The Girl informed me too her native Country was Ireland. She provided me some good cake and butter, and with my own Tea, very well. I left this place (Bryan Town) about twelve, and about Three got to Patuxent Ferry, the River here about a mile broad, where I crossed Lawn Marlbro. I came this road at the request of my Friend Mr. Andrew Whyte who engaged me to call upon his Uncle [Mr. John Waxdrop] who lived here. Some part of this days ride tho' lonesome, was pretty good traveling, but in some places between Bryan Town and lawn Marlbro' I should think it difficult for wheel carriages to get along. Mr. Wardrop was not at home, As the Negro winch some what churlishly informed me, but just as she had directed me to a Tavern in the Town. I happening to tell her I had a letter from Mr. Whyte to her Master, she desired me to leave my Horse, which she said would be well cared for, and when I had reported myself at the Tavern, She invited me also to come back again and take a Lodging. The Fellow who took my Horse, discovered, at my alighting, that one side of his Belly was sadly galled with the girth, so I gladly embraced the Winches offer of awaiting Mr. Wardrop's coming home till tomorrow. His House is pleasantly situated on the East N East side of the River, with a good garden, and a large fine Common or Plain, behind it, adjoining to a useful Marsh. Some Woods at a distance afforded an agreeable view from whence morning and Evening I was entertained with the agreeable tho' mournful voice, of what they call the Turtle Dove, and I should incline to think the same that is mentioned in Scripture; for hardly anything can be imagined more tenderly mournful. The Tavern as it is here styled, had but indifferent



accommodations. Mr. Wardrop did not return the next Day till Five in the Evening, in Company with Two Ship Captains. He received me very kindly, inviting me to stay a few Days with him; and one of the Captains assured me, if I would stay till Sunday he would conduct me more than 20 miles on my Road to Annapolis. I consented to wait for him a Day longer. My poor horses' hurt making me not the less yielding. Various Wines, Beer and Punch, with my good Eatables, we had here in great Plenty. On Saturday Evening I importuned my Captain Judd to augment his favor of bearing me Company, by being very early on Horse Back; but he seemed dead to my importunity, saying only, he'd warrant we should be time enough; and as to my notion of avoiding the heat of the Day, he said I seemed not to understand the pleasure of sweating in this Country, which he assured me was very health; and he would I doubt not if it suited his humor have said the same of a Calendar or burning Fire. 4th Day travel 33 miles—living 7.4—Ferry. 13 s. In the morning about Eight of Sunday May 18th with much ado I got the Captain on Horse Back having taken leave of our old infirm but kind entertainer Mr. Wardrop. The Captain notwithstanding his promise of riding My Pace, betrayed more than once an inclination to leave me, he being well mounted on a large able Horse: however with much ado, I kept up until we parted beyond Rawlin's. We came to Rawlin's in little more than Three Hours and tarried there until after One o'clock. London Town, (a great name) where I arrived about Three, stands upon the S W side of South River; is composed of a few Houses only. After Crossing this small river not more than half a mile in breadth, Two great Fellows in getting my Horse out of their (Browns) Boat, threw him upon his back in the water; and tho' he lay at least a minute on his side in the water, the Boat beating on him, he received no damage. I came to Annapolis about Four in the Afternoon and as the Ferry Boat was just then setting out to cross the Bay, (a 12 mile passage) I had no time to observe this metropolis of Maryland which notwithstanding its seeming advantageous situation on the Bay: does not appear to me even so large as Williamsburg, nor has the Publick Buildings so good a look. We had a fair but very gentle gale over the Bay, which took us up more than Three Hours, yet it seemed a good passage; for tho' it is said a passage has been made here in an hour and a half, it as frequently happens, that a Day or Two or more is spent in crossing or waiting. On our arrival at Hutchings, in Kent Island, on the Eastern Shore, for want of convenience (a smaller flat for Instance) and it being near low water, we could not approach the firm Land, but being set upon a Marsh, within about a furlong or less, of Hutchings House, was obliged to go round upwards of Three miles, before we could come at the House. And in Crossing a small muddy gully between the Marsh and the firm ground, the Person's Horse who was with me, was very near being mired; being got out with great difficulty. My horse likewise had several bad plunges and hard struggles. This way my 6th Day travel of 36 miles cost of living 6.9—and Ferry 1—6 pence. Monday Morning May 10th about Five, I left Hutchins—passed the Little Ferry and Queen Town (a small place of Three or Four Houses)

and came to Dockrays about Nine O'clock where I refreshed myself and Horse near two Hours. I had as yet received no paper money, and the Land Lady here in charge of a pistole, gave me a Five Shilling bill much mangled and defaced, I a little scrupled it; and while the Land Lady was assuring me that it would currently pass, a Person dressed like a Gentleman in Company with others came up and took it out of my hand, and after viewing it, returned it very gravely, affirming, he had had that very Bill himself a long time, having offered it to more than Twenty People, who all rejected it, tho' at length he luckily got rid of it; upon which I renews my request to have other money in lieu of the Bill. But a sensible young woman of the House compassionating my ignorance of the Polite world took notice that she perceived I was a stranger who did not understand the wit of the Country, for, she assured me the Gentleman was only upon the Hum Bug, and had never seen the Bill before in his life. Tho' I credited the young woman and took the Bill this treatment made me angry, and with a visible contempt, I replied; If that was the case, it was well enough, as it convinced me the Fellow was a Fool, for a Gentleman would disdain a Lie at any time, now especially as it could serve no other End or purpose than to abuse or mislead a stranger. The Buck who was in sight in the next Room and heard what I uttered, came out and swelled, but for reasons best known to himself, proceeded no further, but returned again quietly to his Company, and I set out on my journey. I dined at Hamors, a Tavern adjacent to a Church, in Company of a very Civil Person named Catts who said he lived at the Head of Elk River, and desired me to make his house in my way on my return from Philadelphia. Finding the gravel in some places a little troublesome to my Horses feet, who was as yet without shoes, I called at a Smiths shop about a mile or two beyond Hamors by the Road Side in order to get two shoes set on his four Feet. I staid here more than an hour, while the Smith pretended to be preparing the Shoes: but in talking with the Servant while the masters back was turned, he informed me that his Master who only married a Smiths Widow, knew nothing of the business, and that he himself the servant (a poor Irishman) had worked with an Anchor Smith at Woolwich, and had never set a Shoe in his Life; that tho' his Master had sent two miles for shoes (not having one of his own) to get my money, he would oblige him to put them on, tho' it was a hundred to one he should spoil my Horse. So giving the poor fellow a great Bill with thanks for his kind intelligence; on the Masters return, without acquainting him with my reasons, I demanded the money I had paid (half a crown) insisting I would wait no longer. But this he refused to comply with, talking very big tho' I threatened to go to a Magistrate; till he saw me get upon my Horse, and turn back towards Hamors. He then rather than expose himself, returned my money, and I pursued my Journey to Kingston. A Town of a tollerable appearance on the South Side of Chester River, not less I should think, than three quarters of a mile over, the Town consisting of 30 or 40 Houses, several not badly built, but it being early in the afternoon, I crossed the River to Newtown, which is

seated just opposite on the north side of this River where I lay all night. This Town is larger than Kingston, and for number and neatness of Buildings, I esteem it a little, if any thing inferior to the Metropolis. I inquired for a Smith here, but it being Whitson Monday and Servants mostly drunk, none could be had. The Tavern I was at, the best in Town. had a very good appearance, yet on my calling for Madeira wine and English Rum, I was told they had none. Nor had I any other choice than Brumbo (*vizt.* Rum Water and Sugar) or English Cyder, so I chose the latter. The Host in here assumed very high airs, pretending to have been a Groom to his Grace the Duke of Bolton, and that several Gentlemen of Note, of whom he mentioned one or two, would give any money for him, but that his Master, who knew his value, would part with him upon no Consideration. This I mentioned to the Master, who said he was a most impudent Rascal, and was all a Lie, and he appeared indeed to me in every respect a very deceitful, Superficial Fellow. 7th Days travel, 30 mile. living 6-8—Ferry 6d.

May 20th: Set out as usual about Five—Georgetown on the South and Frederickstown on the North side of Sassafras River, about half a mile over, which as well as the last, runs into Chesapeake Bay. Each of these Towns are composed of a pretty many Stragling Houses, and by the appearance of vessels in the River, Sloops, Schooners &c, it may be supposed a tolerable trade is carried on here, as well as at Newtown. I breakfasted at Frederick, and passed Warwick about Two, a Town of Two or Three Houses only, and came to Witherspoons before Threc; which is about a mile within the Province of Pennsylvania. Hereabouts, from, a landing on a branch of Chesapeake, to another, which runs into Delaware Bay, is not more than 8 miles, and that is said an exceeding good road. Here I lodged, tho' I met with poor entertainment. The owner of the House is a Justice of the Peace, but puts a poor Fellow into a part of the House which is kept as a Tavern, in the manner some of our great men do in Virginia. Here is a small bricked building close by the Road, which is called his Worship's Office, and as the poor Landlord of the Inn said, brings him in a Pretty Penny. How I dined with one Captain Swain of Philadelphia, A Person remarkable a few years since for making an unsuccessful attempt to discover the North West Passage. This was my 8th days journey of 26 miles—living 6-4 and Ferry 4d. May 21st: Just as I set out this morning at Five I was joined by a Person who said he was going to New Castle, and as that seemed to be my Course, proposed keeping me Company, to which I had no objection; but the apprehension of my Beast not being able to keep up with his; but this he civilly amended, by assuring me he would go my Pace. So we jogged on together very sociably. In our conversation on the Road, he informed me his name was John Crenet, living near David Wetherspoon Esqr. in St. George Hundred, tho' he said he was best known by the name of the French Doctor, desired if I came back that way, I would make his House my Home. His House, he said was conveniently situated between the two landings, on the branches or Creeks which fell into Delaware and Chesapeake Bay; about 4 miles from

each; and as he understood I lived at Williamsburg, he seemed to fancy an advantageous correspondence might be settled between us to our mutual benefit.

He was taken Prisoner at the close of the last war, but finding the Country agreeable, and being pleased with his situation, he chose to continue and has found he says very good encouragement; tho' he is generally obliged with goods instead of money. We baited at the Red Lyon Tavern, a House tho' of newer appearance, where we were well entertained with extraordinary good house hold bread, excellent Butter and good Tea, as well as good Oats for our Horses. The people too were Quakers. Here a morning's Bait for myself and Horse cost me 11d. only; in my other place 1s-4 at the least. The entertainment here too was, by much the best. It is very remarkable, that men in the high Roads, thro' Maryland, there is an infinite number of gates standing in the way, which renders it very inconvenient and troublesome to a Traveller, as one is obliged to alight to open many of them from this ill contrivance, or dragging hard on the ground; whereas when one enters the Province of Pennsylvania; it is as rare to meet with one, tho' all sorts of improvements are far Superior to anything to be met with in Maryland or Virginia. In Pennsylvania where the Roads are not entirely open, it is generally left wide and Straight between the Fences, and when uneven levelled with a Plough; but no interruption of gates: and on each hand of Such Roads, it is very common to See Fruit and other Trees in Orchards and Fields, as regularly planted and kept in order, as in any part of Herfordshire. There was two other Persons, natives of Maryland, at dinner with Mr. Swain and I at Weatherspoons.

When I mentioned this Publick grievance of blocking up the Kings Highway with Gates, Mr. Swain readily owned it was Scandalous and insufferable; but the Marylander agreed that it was very hard a Person who had Lands on each side a Road should be put to the charge of a double Franc; and that the trouble of opening a few gates was inconsiderable, compared with the benefit which accrued to the owners of the lands thro' which such Roads lay; and the mentioning of the Right of Property which every Traveller has to claim a free Passage on the Kings Road; and the unreasonableness of Publick advantages or Benefits giving way to private Interest, appeared mere nonsense to them; even not to be convinced. To do Virginia Justice, They Cannot be justly accused of this great and very unreasonable Trespass upon the Peoples Liberties, or rather Right and Property. Tho' the Ferries, both in Virginia and Maryland, are in very great disorder, attended, not only with difficulty, but great danger, in Horses getting in and out of Boats; Whereas, herein, the greatest order and regularity is observed in the Province of Pennsylvania. The reason if any can be given, I take to be there are considerable Ferrys and usually engrossed by some great man or other in the neighborhood; who has the greatest interest in the respective Courts, and whatever mischiefs or disappointments may happen thro' bad Boats, bad attendance, or the want of truckles, or other proper conveniences for taking Horses in or out; it



would be esteemed the utmost arrogance, and presumption to suppose a Coln. Major, or a Captain; who keeps the Ferry, Should be obliged to keep any other Conveniences, than what he himself is inclined to. But Ferrys in Pennsylvania are generally rented of the Publick who take care that every thing is done in order.

We got to New Castle about Eleven. It being Court time there was a good deal of company in Town. I was obliged to wait here till Five, to get my Horse shoed, which was not done but by great entreaty; and I was at last obliged myself to attend the doing it. This Town, on the South Side the River or Bay of Delaware, covers a good deal of ground but the Houses in general are very straggling. One street leading from the Court House to the Water-side, is more uniform and closer built; about a furlong in Length. We dined at a Tavern kept by one Mrs. Brag, a widow, where we were entertained with as good, and as Fine Beef, Veal, mutton and Poultry as I would ever wish to see; not I think in general to be exceeded in any Market in London. Good Wine, Beer and Punch was in plenty before, at, and after Dinner; and tho' our Company at Table was numerous; yet none was incommoded; and after all I was surprised to see the whole expence, ordinary and extraordinary, amounted to no more than Two shillings and six pence, that currency, or Twenty Pence Sterling.

Observing to my friend the French-Man, that I conceived the People of the House must be considerable Sufferers by us; he replied, Provisions were cheap here, as well as good, however, he confessed, there was a emulation between the Two principal Taverns in Town who should give the best and cheapest entertainment. When I was about to depart, my Great Coat was missing, lost I presume, or rather Stolen thro' the carelessness of a drunken Hostler who had Charge of it. He swore hastily he delivered it to his Mistress, who as he also avoud, put it among many others. They were all produced and every one disowned by me. Yet the Hostler offering to depose, and the Mistress concurring in opinion that a particular one, which they fixed upon tho' of a quite different colour, was mine, I chose to take that rather than none, nor as mine as well as this, was an old one, did I think myself much injured and the mistress was inclined to make me entire satisfaction. I set out hence between Four and Five, and crossing Christen Creek or River, turned half a mile out of my way to lodge at a pretty considerable Town on the left. Called Wilmington, tho' I might I believe have been better accommodated at the Ferry House. Wilmington—upon the North Side of Christen Creek tho' tollerably large, with two Small Market Houses, and many other Houses built with Brick, makes none but a desolate appearance. The people say some time since they enjoyed a very brisk Trade, but a stop in a great measure being put to the illicit trade with the French, upon which they chiefly depended, the Town of late has been upon the decline. Travel for this 9th Day was 32 miles—Cost 3.9— and Ferry 5d.

May 22nd. Left Wilmington about five; came to Chester about 8 where I breakfasted extremely well; and my Horse as well refreshed with good

Hay and Oats. Just as I had ordered my Horse to be brought to the door, a Gentleman to my great surprise Saluted me by my name, and he seemed no less amazed, that I could not recollect his, tho' he quickly relieved my perplexity by letting me know that he was my old neighbor, Mr. Osborn the merchant who (as well as I) had been so great a sufferer by the Fire at Williamsburg. He left Williamsburg on the 14th, two days after me; and when he crossed the Bay of York and came all the way up the Eastern Shore of Virginia (esteemed the shortest and I believe the best road,) I marvelled he had got no further; for excluding the two days I rested at Mr. Wardrops, he had spent as many days in Traveling as I. But this he said was owing to his Boy, who alighting upon some necessary occasion, and mistaking a turning, occasioned his riding at least 40 miles before he could meet with him again; all which time he said, his anxiety unspeakable, his Boy having in the mortmain behind him in Cash and Bills, upwards of £500. I offered to wait an hour or two for Mr. Osborn's Company; but he saying it was his choice, not to enter Philadelphia till the dusk of Evening, I proceeded alone, dined at Darby and arrived at Philadelphia about Three in the afternoon. He was he said going to Philadelphia with the view of settling there.

I arrived at Philadelphia in the afternoon of May 22nd 1755—the 10th day on horse back from Williamsburg Virginia. I put up at the "Indian King" in the Market Street, kept by one Mr. John Biddle, a very Civil Courteous Quaker. This person and his Wife not one jot behind him in rational benevolence, or what may be very properly esteemed true politeness, Confirmed in me the favorable opinion I had long entertained this peaceable inoffensive Society. For tho' this House is one of the greatest business in its way, in the whole City: Yet everything is transacted with the utmost regularity and decorum. There is a regular ordinary every Day, of the very best provisions and well dressed a 12d a head; that is Eight pence Sterling, the best of liquors proportionably moderate; and the best use taken of horses. Yet there is one odd custom attends this House, which tho' agreeable to me, may not perhaps be so to all people. For whoever remains here after eleven of the Clock in the Evening is very Civilly acquainted with the time by a Servant, and that after that hour, it is the invariable Custom of the house to serve no more liquor that night to any Body; and this custom I am told never is infringed, And this I think is a true specimen of what every House of entertainment should be. Having been ten days at this house, my Courteous Host placing himself in a chair by me, desired I would walk into the next room and drink a dish of Tea with his Wife; but first, says he, thou appearest to us a Stranger; and what is very agreeable to us a sober one; for which reason we are apprehensive it may not be so pleasing to thee to Continue in a Publick House, so hurried as ours sometimes is, tho' we do believe ours is not the worst of the sort. If it is so, pray be free and let us know, for my Wife in that Case, will very easily enquire out a private lodging for thee in some reputable sober family in the neighborhood, thee will be pleased to take notice, the desire of making things most easy and agreeable



to thee, is the occasion of this motion; and if thee should like best to continue still with us, or to dine only at the ordinary, thee will be welcome; but before thee determinest, thee will consider thereupon. I immediately replied, the thing required no consideration; for tho' his was the most agreeable Publick House I had ever lived in, a private one, such as he proposed, would be more to my satisfaction; that I had myself, tho' without effect, made such enquiry, but should now be thankful if Mrs. Biddle would take the trouble upon her; which she cheerfully accepted; recommending only to a very worthy Family. As my stay in Philadelphia was 11 weeks and my observation of what passed at the time somewhat particular, it was once my intention to have made them Publick as they would be in my humble apprehension have tended towards a manifestation of the Quakers integrity while they were a part of the Legislature; and by a recapitulation of a number of clear and incontestable Facts, have also exploded the malicious calumnious falsehoods and absurdities contained in two invidious Pamphlets, instituted "A brief State and a brief view of Pennsylvania published in the years 1755 and 1756," but I shall suspend this design for the present; as I am given to hope this task will be more effectually executed in long, by a far abler hand.

Friday May 23d—about 8 in the morning I walked down to Mr. Allins, who was not yet arrived from his Country House about eight miles out of Town, where it seems he generally is all the summer time. I called again at Ten, when I met with and delivered him my Letter from the Honourable Mr. Nelson, which when he had looked over, He turned to me and said he had a very great regard for the Gentleman who wrote that Letter; but did not perceive he had it in his power to do any thing for me; as to the Sugar Works, and Distillery, they were now in other hands, and he had little or no Interest in them, or indeed in any thing else. He advised me to look about myself, and if I found any one inclined to employ me in any shape, on my applying to him, he would inform them of the character Mr. Nelson had given me. This I own was a reception, I was not prepared for; Yet Mortified and confounded as I was; I begged he would reflect, I was an utter Stranger in the place; to which I observed, he was Sensible, I had travelled merely at the instance and advice of the Honourable Mr. Nelson. That I was even so destitute of acquaintance, that I did not know where or to whom to apply for a private Lodging for want of which advantage, I shall be obliged, both Horse and Self, at a large expense, to continue at a Publick Inn. But this instead of exciting in him any feeling of my distress or anxiety, only increased his impatience to get rid of me, Keeping me Standing, and moving divers times towards the Door, as if he apprehended, that I did not know the way; however, at the 3rd or 4th motion, I took the hint walking out of the Room into the passage, he very civilly keeping me company, to the Street Door; but before we parted, I interested to know whether I might have the liberty of waiting on him again, when he had considered my Case: and I might have the happiness of finding him more at leisure. As to that, he said he might generally be spoke with about 9 in the morning. I went to my

Inn very melancholy, but sat down in the afternoon and on paper stated my misfortunes and unhappy circumstances, with my view in taking this fatiguing journey, and the next morning sent it to Mr. Allen to consider on til Monday when I proposed waiting on him again.

Saturday May 24th being the Chief Market Day, (Wednesday is the other) I took a view of it, good part of the Town I had seen yesterday evening. There seems to be a good supply of most kinds of Provisions and a vast concourse of People, Buyers as well as Sellers. Meat in the Shambles (some at least) of each sort very good and might even vie with the best in Leader Hall Market. Fish and Poultry, the market don't seem over well supplied with, tho' in cool weather, a Fine sort of large Sea Perch of about six pounds called the Sheeps Head, from its teeth resembling those of a sheep, are frequently brought from the Sea Coast quite through the Province of New Jersey, not less than 70 miles land carriage; and are sold for 18d each; Butter in great plenty and very good, at about 8d per pound. Vegetables plenty enough tho' not so many good or handsome Gardens about Philadelphia as one might expect, and with all my enquiry I could not find a Plant deserving the name of Cauliflower, nor did I ever see or hear of a good one within Virginia or Maryland; and the best at either of those places, are raised in Autumn, even so late as November. As there are such fine Rivers in Pennsylvania as well as in the other Provinces; their Markets not abounding in Fish, I should attribute to their want of skill than want of Fish; but sometimes, I have seen a good many Fish in the Market. Sturgeon in the Spring abound in every River I have seen in America, and Ten or Twenty miles above Philadelphia, in the Delaware, the Curing of Sturgeon is become a Manufacture. The first green Peas seen in this Market, was the 24th of May, and they sold very dear. In Virginia, as before observed I had them in plenty at Trapiers Ferry on the 12th, and at Williamsburg I heard of their being at tables a fortnight at the least before that. Good milk at a penny a pint (or an English half Penny) as in London is brought Morning and Evening to Peoples doors; and it generally stands all Day to be sold in the Market place. But to go on with my Journal. Sunday May 25th Mr. Osborne leaving word he would call on me at Eleven this morning, I staid at home till three, then went to the Lutheran Church, a neat Brick Building where there is a good organ to which I heard them sing Psalms, agreeably enough, tho' I was a stranger to the Language, (High Dutch).) Then I walked about Two miles out of Town to the Proprietor's Garden but viewed first that of the late Governor, James Hamilton Esqr. I made half a mile short of the other. Mr. Hamilton's was much the largest, but not disposed with judgment, not that I could find, did it contain any thing that was curious, unless what is by some gazed at and spoke of may be esteemed so, a few very ordinary statues. A shady walk of high Trees leading from the farther end of the Garden, looked well enough; by the Grass above knee high there and spoiling for the want of the Seythe, rendered it too troublesome to walk to the top. The Proprietor's tho' much smaller, was laid out with more Judgment, tho'

it seems to have been pretty much neglected, a pretty pleasure garden the trees of which now hardly visible, a small Wilderness, and other shades, shows that the contrivor was not without Judgment; but what to me surpassed every thing of the kind I had seen in America, was a pretty bricked Green House, out of which was disposed (now) very properly in the Pleasure Garden, a good many Orange, Lemon and Citron Trees, in great profusion loaded with abundance of Fruit and some of each sort seemingly then ripe. The House here is but small built of Brick with a small kitchen &c justly contrived rather for a small than a numerous Family. It is pleasantly situated on an eminence with a gradual descent over a small Valley, to a handsome level Road cut through a wood, affording an agreeable Vista of near Two miles; on the left hand the slope, descending from the House is a neat little Park tho' I am told there are no Deer in it. In coming home, I went into a Tavern called the "Centre House," as being seated in the very midst of the original Plan of the first intended City; tho' at present, this House is half a Mile or more from the nearest Building in the City. Here is a Bowling Green, and a neat People seem to keep the House, but a Strange Brute of a Land Lord. In the morning early, I should have observed, I walked to the Platform, the very farthest part of the City on the South East, or down the River Delaware. The Platform by being uncovered, appears much decayed and out of order. There are upwards of Fifty Guns lying about there, the carriages entirely ruined; the bores of some of the largest Guns are 7 or 8 inches in Diameter, but there is only Twenty Five Ports. The Channel seems there to lye on the further side of the River. So that it is imagined a Ship cannot come within a mile of the Fort. Monday May 26. I went again this morning to wait on Mr. Allin as I had intimated in my Letter I proposed to do; but he not coming to Town that Day, and the Servants behaving somewhat churlishly, answering me very shortly. when I Civilly enquired when their Master was expected, that they did not know; and having asked one among several whom I saw come from Mr. Allin's Door whether he was then come to Town, he Civilly said the Servants had informed him Mr. Allin would not be in Town that Day, but was expected on Wednesday morning; from whence I concluded that was a secret I was not to be let into, yet I was determined on seeing him. I took my Horse after dinner, and rode over to what is called his Country Seat, which I found about 8 or 9 miles distant on the top of a Hill at the further end of a Village two Miles in length, called German Town, from the number of German Weavers and others settled there. The House but small, built of Stone, as most of the Houses thereabouts are; stands close to a large much frequented Road, which often occasions the Dust to be very troublesome. The spot doubtless from its elevated situation, must be as healthy as any thereabouts, but to me, it appears very naked; much exposed to the Sun and to bleak winds; a small Portico facing the South East, where I had my residence is a good Contrivance, and to my thinking, the very best about the House. My reception here was more gracious than I expected, for he took me by the hand, and invited me to seat myself

in the Portico and asked me what I chosed to drink; I preferred small Beer, being almost choked with the Dust raised by Wagons &c I met on the Road, and a large Tankard of very good was brought me, after which he quietly let me know it was not in his Power to do any thing for me; but informed me of Mr. Osborn's being in Town, and recommended my return with him again to Williamsburg, saying it would be a fine opportunity. I desired to Continue Somewhat longer, hoping he would not be offended at my Calling on him Sometimes to enquire whether something might not intervene in my favor; to which, he politely replied he should be always glad to see me. He afterwards walked me into his Garden, Consisting of Edibles only, which seemed well manured and in as good order as a Garden upon a Hill could be. He pointed to a Field of clover adjoining to the Garden, of as I should guess about eight Acres, which He and so did I too considered as a fine improvement; tho' I should doubt its long Continuance in the Scorching heats, and so high a situation; he staid me to drink Tea with his Lady, a Daughter of the late Governor Mr. Hamilton which I did not know till I unluckily in relating (at their asking) my observations of what I had seen, gave the preference to the "Proprietor's Garden," which I could see was not over pleasing, tho' they no other-wise manifested their dislike, than (after informing of that circumstance) by saying that the generality of People who were Judges thought Mr. Hamilton's Garden greatly Superior to the Proprietor's. After Tea I set out for Philadelphia, but perceiving my horse was ready bridled when called for, and looked extremely thin and faint, I stop'd at an Inn in German Town to feed him, and came to Philadelphia before it was dark. Wednesday 28th of May I attended Mr. Allin again this morning, and was with him in his Parlour about 15 minutes. He again enquired if I did not propose returning with Mr. Osborn. I assured him I should not, tho' I observed it was my intention to write by him to Mr. Nelson, and begged to know whether I might give him any hopes of my appointment. I waited on Mr. Allin again about Eleven, tho' to my apprehension my presence was far from being grateful to him. He enquired whether I had sent home my horse. I said no and then silence ensued, till a Person relieved him who I presume might have business with him, so in compassion to his visible uneasiness, I moved to depart, at which he seemed pleased, walking with me to the door, I let him know at parting, I would not trouble him again till the ensuing Wednesday, to which as usual with his wonted politeness and Sincerity, he replied He should be always glad to see me. These two last days in May were I think the Coldest for the Season that I ever felt in my life, the young shoots of the common bushes in the Fields being cut off. People Say too it is the dryest time that they ever remember. June 1st and 2nd; I spent very Melancholy hearing nothing from Col. Hunter whom I was cautious of teasing, till on the 3d. I was informed he that morning set out to Virginia. So whether he had any talk with Mr. Allin convinced was I never. The circumstances, in a kind of despair, entered my romantic head to communicate my unhappy condition to Mr. Franklin, a Gentleman in good

esteem here and well known to the Philadelphical world. I without reserve laid the whole of my affairs before him, requesting his aid if such a thing might be without inconvenience to Himself. This in writing I sent to him June 4th. Early in the Morning, about The same Day I received a note by a Servant under a wafer in these words, "Mr. Franklin Compliments to Mr. Fisher and desire the favor of his Company to drink Tea at five O'clock this afternoon." I went at the time; and in my imagination met with a humane, kind reception. He expressed a concern for my affliction, and promised to assist me into some business provided it was in his power. In returning from Mr. Franklins, a Silver Smith in the neighborhood to Mr. Franklins, Secing me come out that Gentleman House, Spoke to me as I was passing his door, and invited me to sit down. This man's name was Soumien. I had been several times in his Company at My Inn, and Considered him as a very inquisitive Person, Craving a knowledge of other Peoples affairs, tho' no ways concerning himself I accepted his offer of sitting at his door, and he soon began to fish for my business with Mr. Franklin by asking whether I had any previous knowledge or acquaintance with him; not obtaining a thorough information of all he wanted to know, and knowing I wanted a private Lodging, he made me an offer of his, which I gladly accepted. We agreed at Twelve shillings a week, and I came thither the same Evening. The Family consisted of, himself, his Wife, and a daughter of hers, a Young Woman about 13 years of age, a Negro Man, and two Negro Wenches. I was very well pleased to observe that this Family seemed to be acquainted with Mr. Franklins'.

June 5th: Thursday—As I was coming down from my chamber this afternoon, a Gentlewoman was sitting upon one of the lowest Stairs which was but narrow, and there not being room enough to pass, She arose up and threw herself immediately upon the Floor and sat there. Mr. Soumien and his Wife greatly entreated her to arise and take a Chair, but in vain; She would keep her Seat, and kept it I think the longer for their entreaty. This Gentlewoman whom (tho' I had seen before) I did not know, appeared to be Mrs. Franklin. She assumed the Airs of extraordinary Freedom, and great humility. Lamented heartily the misfortune of those who were unhappily infected with a too tender or benevolent disposition, said she believed all the world claimed a privilege of troubling her Pappey (So she usually Calls Mr. Franklin) with their Calamities and distresses, giving us a general history of many Such wretches and their impertinent applications to him.

Mr. Franklin's moral character is good, and he and Mrs. Franklin live irreproachably as Man and Wife.

Friday June 6th: I kept my Chamber, being very ill with my old disorder the cholic but was relieved by taking some drops of Castor and laudanum the next morning. The first rain fell last night that had been since a long time, which greatly refreshed the Earth.

Received an invitation from Mr. Franklin to dine with him to morrow.



Sunday June 8th about half an hour after nine this morning, I went to the Quakers' meeting on Society Hill. It proved a Silent one, except one old Man in the Gallery, who spoke about two minutes. What he said was not very edifying, nor had he the approbation of the Friends themselves. Some of them in my hearing, esteeming him a Babbler.

I dined to day with Mr. Franklin and went afterwards to the Dutch Churches.

The Lutheran Church has an Organ and a good Performer. The Calvinist Church has an Organ and a good Performer, both 9th and 10th Employed in writing Letters to my Wife and Mr. Walthoe.

Wednesday 11th so very cold for this two nights past, that many People required Fires in their Parlours as in Winter. -

Thursday the 12th This morning about Nine Mr. Franklin sent for me to copy a pretty long Letter from General Braddock, acknowledging the care of the Pennsylvanians in sending Provisions &c to the Forces. Mr. Franklin in particuar; and complaining of the neglect of the Governments of Virginia and Maryland especially; in speaking of which the Colonies, he says, They have promised everything and had performed nothing; and of the Pennsylvanian, he said They had promised nothing, and had performed everything. That even the small supply she had received from the first two Colonys even in general so decayed or damaged, as to be of no use, and in a letter before this, of which I only saw a Copy, the General acknowledges she had been greatly imposed on in the character given him of the People of Pennsylvania; but that he would in long take an opportunity of doing ample Justice, to the Ministry at Home. When I finished several hasty Copies for which the Post then waited, he desired I would breakfast with him the next morning, and he would then give me more work. June 13th and 14th I was closely employed in several Cops of a Manuscript Treatise entitled the "Observations concerning the Increase of Mankind, Peopling of Countries, &c."

From June 15th to July 10th employed generally in writing or Sorting of Papers at the Printing office. On July 11th I wrote long Letters to my Wife and Mr. Walthoe giving them an exact account of my Situation. I should have observed that on St. John the Baptist Day (June 24th) There was the Greatest Procession of Free Masons to the Church and their Lodge in Second Street, that was ever seen in America. No less than 160 being in the Procession in Gloves, Aprons &c. attended by a band of music. Mr. Allin the Grand Master honouring them with his Company, as did the Deputy Grand Master Mr. Benjamin Franklin, and his Son Mr. Wm. Franklin who walked as the next Chief Officer—a sword Bearer with a naked sword drawn, headed the Procession. They dined together elegantly, as it is said at their Hall upon Turtle &c. Perceiving I had nothing ever to hope or expect from Mr. Allin I rarely went near him unless twice for a supply of money; Mr. Nelson in case of need, having given me a Bill of credit for Twelve Pistoles.

Friday July 18th This afternoon about Three O'clock we were terribly alarmed by an Express by way of Maryland from Coln. Innis, dated at



Wills Creek or Port Cumberland July 11th giving an account that the Forces under Gen'l Braddock were entirely defeated by the French on the 9th on the River Monongahela. The General, St. John St. Clair and a number of the Officers killed, and all our fine artillery taken. The Consternation that this City upon the occasion is hardly to be expressed. The next day we received other accounts less terrible, but none very authentic or particular, and on the 20th Some Indian Traders from the upper parts of the country, tho' not from the Camp brought still more flattering accounts, and Reports were various till Wednesday July 23rd when about noon arrived the following Paragraph by the Lancaster Post Dated Carlisle 21st July 1755—"It is now reduced to a certainty; that our Army under General Braddock is defeated; The General and St. John St. Clair dangerously wounded—about a Thousand men lost, with the Train of Artillery and Baggage. The remaining part of the Army Under Col. Dunbar have destroyed all their Baggage except two six. Pounders and Provision necessary for their retreat to Wills Creek, where I expect they are by this time." This account was credited and afterward more particularly Confirmed by Mr. Orme Aid a Camp to the Gen'l. The Mob here upon this occasion, were very unruly; assembling in great numbers with an intention of demolishing the Mass House belonging to the Roman Catholics, wherein they were underhand excited and encouraged by some People of a Higher Rank. But the peaceable Quakers insisting that the Catholics as well as Christians of other denominations, were settled upon the faith of the Constitution, or Wm. Penn's Charter, and that the Government were bound to protect them, so long at least, as they remained inoffensive and paid a dutiful regard to the establishment. The Magistrates met, and with a good deal of difficulty, prevailed with the Mob to desist. Having as yet made no settled agreement with Mr. Franklin, and being not certain that he had any real occasion for my Services, having several Days together nothing for me to do, I happened to have a very slender acquaintance with one Captain Coultas, who lived at the upper Ferry on the River Schuilkil, and who it was generally believed would be elected Sheriff of Philadelphia at the ensuing Election. A Person of Sense and Character, and to my apprehension, of no less generosity and good nature. To this Gentleman I wrote a few lines, imparting, that if the business he was entering upon required any such aid as it was in my power to administer, I should be very glad to serve him; I apprehending the frequent auctions or Sales which a Sheriff was necessarily concerned in might, require Some Such assistance. In a Day or Two after this, meeting with Capt. Coultas at "Indian King," he called me aside, acknowledged the receipt of my Letter, Said that it would not have a decent look to dispose of my part of an office which he was not then possessed of; not but he said, from the assurance of his Friends, he believed could depend on it; But this he would assure me, if it so happened, I might rely upon any Act of Friendship or kindness in his power to Serve me. Extremely pleased with the humanly rational generosity of this Sensible man, I immediately flew to my Friend Mr. Franklin with the news, that he might participate

in my Satisfaction, but was some what surprised that he did not consider what I had done, in the same view with myself. He allowed Capn. Coultas was a very worthy man, and would Sincerely perform everything I was encouraged to expect or hope for; but could not apprehend that any thing he could do for me would be worthy my acceptance. That he had himself thought of several ways of serving me, and has rejected them only, because he esteemed them too mean. Particularly he said, He could immediately put me into the Academy, in the Capacity of English School Master, a Place of 60 a year, with some other advantages; but refrained mentioning it to me in hopes of having it soon in his power of doing better for me. I assured him with the utmost gratitude, the employ did not appear in so mean a light to me; and the only reason I had for declining the favour, was the diffidence of my ability in doing Justice to his recommendation, a thing which he said, he was not in the least apprehensive of. However, presuming it gave him no offence, I craved his leave to decline the kind offer, and he declared himself very well satisfied.

Having informed him that I should prefer Serving him as a Clerk provided he had any occasion for me; On Monday Morning July 28th I received the following Letter from him.

Monday morning July 28th Sir till our building is finished which I hope will be in 2 or 3 weeks, I have no more to accommodate a Clerk. But it is my intention to have one, tho' my business is so small that I cannot afford to give more than I have always given Vizt, Diet at my own Table, with Lodging and washing and 25 per annum. I could never think this worth offering to you, but if you think fit to accept of it, till something better shall fall in the way, you shall be very welcome to it, &c E B Franklin P. S. I may commence from the time you first began to write for me, in which case, I discharge your Board &c at Mr. Soumien's; or from the present time, and then I pay for the writing done, or if you choose it, I will get you into the Charity School as I mentioned before."

Without the least hesitation I gave the preference to his service, and he let me know that it should not hinder his endeavours of Serving me further.

Mr. Soumien had often informed me of great uneasiness and dissatisfactions in Mr. Franklin's family in a manner no way pleasing to me, and which in truth I was unwilling to Credit; but as Mrs. Franklin and I, of late, began to be very Friendly and Sociable, I discerned great grounds, for Mr. Soumien's Reflections, arising solely from jealousy of her disposition; She suspecting Mr. Franklin for having too great an esteem for his Son in prejudice of herself and Daughter, a young woman of about 12 or 13 years of age, for whom it was visible Mr. Franklin had no less esteem than for his Son. In this situation I was, when on August the 7th I received a most kind letter from Mr. Walthoe informing me that Mr. Mitchelson, the Person who rented his store was become a Bankrupt, and that as it was unlikely I should ever remain in quiet under Mr. Wether-

burn, If I thought his House would be of service to me, I should have the preference to any Person whatever, and that I might rest assured of any other friendly aid in his Power; My Family too he assured me, had now manifested an entire conformity to my will, either to embrace the opportunity and trying here for our Friends at York would assist us, or if I was better pleased with the prospect that Philadelphia afforded, they would remove thither upon the first notice. The uncertainty of my situation together with reflecting upon what might be the consequence of General Braddock's defeat brought me to a resolution of Seeing my Family and Mr. Walthoe at Williamsburg before I came to any Certain determination of a settlement; Yet I showed Mr. Franklin my letter, and craved his opinion, who very readily came into mine, assuring me also he would wait a considerable space for the result of our Conferences before he supplied himself with a Clerk or the School with a Master. So I fixed upon Sunday the 10th for setting out on my journey to Williamsburg. Being not determined which Road I should take (there being several) Mr. Franklin said, if I went the upper, he would get me to take an order for a small matter of Money on Mr. Mercer in Virginia, with whom he had had no settlement for Nine years, upon which I told him, I did not regard a few miles of riding to serve him, and he might depend upon my making Mr. Mercers in my way. He gave me also Six Pistols, asking if that was sufficient for the trouble he had given me. I told him it was. The evening (Saturday) before I set out, I was with him till after eleven o'clock, when he pressed me to accept of Two Guineas more, which I refused and I said that in case of accidents, from my horse failing, or any other misfortune, I had a Gold Watch in my pocket which would give me some Credit. It was near Twelve when we parted with mutual good wishes.

Sunday, August 10th 1755 at Five in the morning, I left Philadelphia to return to Williamsburg, arrived at Chester about light, and at Christen Bridge about Five in the afternoon. This last place lay somewhat out of my way, but I came to it for the convenience of Lodging, there being none good at Ogle Town, which it seems in the direct road from New Port. would have been as near as where I put up. From Wilmington to New Port (a struggling village) it is a stony or rather a Rocky road. Christen Bridge consists of two small Inns and three or four other houses. The two first miles, Hilly and Stony. Ogle Town only two or three poor houses. About 8 I came to the Head of Elk river (in Maryland) called upon Captain Catto, the gentleman with whom I dined at Hamors on May the 19th. He engaged me to stay and Breakfast, ordering my horse to be well fed. Here breakfasted with us one Captain Dagworthy of a Company of Maryland Independent who was with Dunbar when General Braddock was defeated. Came to Charles Town about noon. This place situated at the very head of Chesapenke Bay, just without the mouth of the Long River Susquehannah, on the Eastern Side, Consists of a pretty many (perhaps Twenty or more) very scattered houses, on a wide sandy Common very naked and exposed, tho' in time it may doubtless become a convenient situation for trade. At the Mouth of this Fine River, there is a Bar of

Sand which the Inhabitants hereabouts complain of, as a great impediment to the navigation; tho where I crossed at the Ferry about 3 or 4 miles above the mouth, I saw a pretty handsome Ship of about 200 Tons, built in this river within the Bar; tho some imagined she could not be got out when loaded, but with great difficulty or at Spring Tides. Passed this Ferry about 3, and arrived at Robinson, before Four. This Tavern though small is kept by very Civil people, and both myself and horse found better than at more promising places. Bush Town Aug. 12th. Came here about 8—The White Horse about noon and to Baltimore about Four. Great part of the way to Gun Powder River, was very uneven and Stony. Iron Stone in particular. The Falls of Gun Powder River, now fordable were full of large rocky Stones, and the current very rapid, but the water being now transparent, the danger was the less; besides I luckily met here with a Person just going over who was my Guide, and kept me company all the way to Baltimore.

Baltimore County is esteemed the largest, and least fertile of any in Maryland, tho' it abounds in Iron Stone and many parts of it in Wood, but no great plenty of such as deserve the name of Timber. My Inn at Baltimore, tho' a more flattering outside, did not accommodate me nor my horse, near so well as Robinsons. There were Several Persons in the House of whom I enquired my road to Mr. Mercers. A modest young Gentleman named Watkins I think, related to Mr. Pendleton in Va; tho' he appeared a little different aimed to give me the best introduction in his power, but he was in a great measure overborne by one Captain North, a Conceited, noisy, prattling Fellow, who tho' he promised to furnish me with a draught of the road I was to take, did not do it, and to Speak the Truth, I verily think it was beyond his Capacity. I met here with nothing but confusion, almost every man in the house, being of a different opinion as to the way I should pursue. One, and I believe he was right, insisted I ought to pass through Ann Arundel County, towards Piscatqua, but the majority being against this route I unhappily rejected it. Baltimore Town on Patapsco river, covers a great deal of ground, but the houses very scattered and remote from one another, tho' the Situation of the place is very agreeable. Wednesday August 13th. By Captain North's mistake in directing me to be sure of taking a right instead of a left road, I lost my way this morning, before I had rode two miles, leaving Baltimore works, my true road and which (tho' I put down the distance) I never saw, greatly on the left; I met an ignorant Person who aimed at giving me an obscure direction through a Wood towards the head of Patapsco. It being to my comfort early in the Day, and the Sun shining to assist my idea of the Course I was to take, I entered the wood by a small path which quickly lost but found another that brought me to the house of one Oliver Cromwell, when my path ended. From hence (a poor plantation) I was directed to force my way through a part of the wood without a path, towards a place the man pointed to, where he said he would meet and give me further directions. Accordingly he put me into another, if possible more obscure path, still in the wood, but instructed

me so well in the several turnings I was to take, that I found the way to a very small Cot, where he told me I must inquire further. In this wretched habitation, seemingly void of every necessary, except Faring, I saw only a young woman in appearance as wretched as the place she lived in. She I dare say gave me the best directions she was capable of; tho it was near two hours troublesome riding, before I got out of the woods, when perceiving a small plantation, a little out of the road I was got into, I went up to it. The door being open, I saw two men in the house, but two bold youngish women only came out to me. Of them I begged to be informed of my right road to the head of Patapseo. One of them with rude speech and careless or rather ehurlish behaviour, pointed to the road I came from, bidding me keep straight forward. They both went in and shut the door. I pursued the road I should have taken without their direction, but found myself often at a loss by different turnings, and tho' I set out at Five in the morning, it was nine o'clock when I found myself at the head of Patapseo, and but nine miles from Baltimore. My horse being greatly fatigued I called at the first plantation I could see, both to find out where I was and to beg a handful of Corn for my horse. A negro came out, who on my Craving or desiring him to sell me a little Corn, assured me it was a thing he dared not do, for should his Master who he said was the cruelest man alive catch him at such a thing, he would whip him to death. He said his Master's name was Edward Norwood. The poor fellow however showed me a path which led down to the Ferry, where he said I must hollow for a boat, for there was no other house on this side the River. When I came to the river which tho' deep, was not very wide, I called for more than half an hour, without being regarded, tho' I could both see and hear the people on the other side distinctly. At length a little Negro Boy came over with a very small boat, which gave me great apprehension of danger; but the Boy seeming very confident I got my horse into the Boat, tho' there was hardly room for him to stand. In aiming to put off so ticklish a thing, She was nearly overset, which being what the People on the other shore every moment expected—they were laughing and rejoicing in our distress. The weather being hot, and knowing I could swim very well, I was the less terrified, but the poor Boy entreating me to take my horse out of the Boat, ingeniously confessed that he had never known a horse brought over in that boat in his life, but his Master he said, one Jacob Holland was a very bad man. On the Boy's importunity I got out again, but what to do I could not tell. My horse almost jaded, and to go around the river head was many miles out of my way. No house to call at save the unhospitable one Edward Norwood's. So I left the Boy with a heavy heart, but I had not walked with my horse in my hand above two or three hundred yards, before I saw a boat crossing the river from the side I was on with two men and two horses, towards the further side. Going opposite to the landing place, I called, and was answered, a very good boat and a gray headed old man returned for me, and I got over before the other two passengers had mounted their horses. The old man who had seen me get in Holland boat, assured me



if I had been put off into deep water, I should inevitably have been drowned. The Gentleman too on hearing the case, Confirmed the Same, adding that this Holland was an infamous Fellow and that it was scandalous in the Magistrates to tolerate his keeping a Ferry or a Public house, which it was well known to all the neighborhood, his was a common receptacle of the most abandoned villians in the country. These gentlemen telling me they were going my way towards, Hammon, Tavern, and and that by going with them I should save two miles. I without staying to bait (and which I could not do but at Holland's) gladly took the opportunity of their company, and tho' they did not go quite through with me they put me so well in the way, that I arrived at Hamons before noon, where I rested my horse and self two hours. About 4 I came to Mr. Snowden's, a Gentleman who has very large Iron work. My horse being tired, and having 12 long miles to the next place (Bladensburg) tho' Mr. Snowden himself was not at home, I craved a Night's Lodging of his Lady, Who granted my request and entertained myself and horse very well. Thursday August 14th. The road from Mr. Snowden's (which I left about 6) is through an almost continued wood. I observed but one habitation in all the way, and that was at a great distance on a Hill on the left hand the road, where there was an opening of pretty large fields planted with Corn and Tobacco, about 7 miles as I guess from Mr. Snowden's. Mr. Watkins the Civil young Gentleman (related to Mr. Pendleton) whom I saw at Baltimore, recommended me if I came this road, to call up a Gentleman of Bladensburg, one Dr. Ross, to learn from him whether it was my best way to proceed by Mrs. Addison's Ferry in Maryland over Potomac River to Alexandria alias Belhaven in Virginia, or to go higher up by Rock Creek; the road dividing just before I entered Bladensburg. At this fork of the road, I perceived a man on horseback as if he was waiting for somebody; of him I enquired the way to Dr. Ross; he directed me and then turned into that part of Town where there was two small Publick houses, or what are still termed Taverns. I called at Dr. Ross, but he being out of Town I went off to one of the Taverns where I met with the person whom I saw attending at the Towns Inn. My horse going a little lame, and I enquiring for a Picker, this same person cautiously assisted me with a mohock at the back of a knife. There were two other persons in the house; and of the whole Company I enquired the nearest way to Mr. Mercer's in Virginia. They in general agreed I ought to Cross Potomac at Mrs. Addison, to Alexandria; another very Civil person in the Company gave me in writing the description of the Road to Addison Ferry. The Company went out of the house before me, for I breakfasted and rested my horse two hours or more.

Bladensburg may be called a pretty large Scattered place; perhaps 30 or 40 houses, a few tolerably handsome. It stands upon a part of Potomac River Called the Eastern Branch. At the Town Inn I passed by the Person who lent me the mohock at the Tavern. He was on foot with his horse in his hand, close to some (I think two) covered country wagons, to which I conjectured he belonged. The very last house in the Town was



a very handsome brick building, standing upon an eminence, and Seeing a workman in the yard, I stopped to enquire who it was, and I had no sooner parted with the man who had gratified my Curiosity, than the man who stood by the wagon rode up, and informed me he was going 4 or 5 miles of my road, and should be glad of my company, and I expressing myself no less pleased with his, we rode together very sociably. The right hand Side of the Road, on which at some distance was the Branch or River, was pretty open, and we had generally a good prospect of it for Four miles or more; but we had not gone a mile beyond a house where my Companion informed me one Merehant Scott lived, Before the Road forked or divided, the gentlemen at the inn had directed me to take all right hand Roads except such as led to the River, and my Companion Saying he fancied this was only such a road, we here Concurred, in taking that which seemed to lye the straightest in our way, and the plainest, rejectting that which seemed to run on the right towards the River. The Road &c. See next Book. [The next book I have *never* found—as I did this after my father's death in 1857.—G. F., July 13, 1886.]

END OF VOLUME II.







